



LEGENDARY MOONLIGHT SCULPTOR

4TH COMPILATION

Nam Heesung

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Legendary Moonlight Sculptor

(달빛 조각사)

by

NAM Heesung
(火星引力)

Synopsis

The man forsaken by the world, the man a slave to money and the man known as the legendary God of War in the highly popular MMORPG Continent of Magic. With the coming of age, he decides to say goodbye, but the feeble attempt to earn a little something for his time and effort ripples into an effect none could ever have imagined.

Through a series of coincidences, his legendary avatar is sold for 3.1 billion won, bringing great joy to him, only to plunge him into despair at losing almost all of it to vicious loan sharks. With revelation of money through gaming, he rises from the abyss with new found resolve and steps forward into the new age of games led by the first ever Virtual Reality MMORPG, Royal Road.

This is the legend of Lee Hyun on his path to becoming Emperor with only his family loving heart, his boundless desire for money, his unexpected mind, his diligently forged body and the talent of hard work backing him.

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rainbow Turtle @ [Rainbow Turtle Translations](#)

Translation Checker by Sunova @ [Rainbow Turtle Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Book 31: Life Of A Hummingbird

Chapter 1: New Secret Sculpting Technique

Weed had finished his 16th Master Quest. This was the last request and the only thing left was to form a master skill and be recognized.

“I’ve done a lot of work in the meantime.”

He remembered all the quests he had suffered through.

“Raising my sculpting proficiency while doing the master quests was also tough.”

After going through countless hardships, he was close to becoming the first Class Master on the continent but he wasn’t happy about it. While Weed went through so much effort for the quests, Bardray was experiencing great success.

The Hermes Guild had gained the impetus and was invading the Britten Alliance Kingdom after Lasalle Kingdom. Weed had frequented many cities while adventuring through the Britten Alliance Kingdom. Many famous cities with commercial freedom and adventures were developed on the continent.

“If the Hermes Guild expands to the Britten Alliance Kingdom then their tax income will increase tremendously.”

If the Britten Alliance Kingdom fell to the Hermes Guild then the area where he couldn't escape their influence would increase even further. The hero of the Arpen Empire Bahamorg was now Weed's subordinate but his happiness decreased after hearing the news.

"Anyway, I now have Bahamorg so I need to make him work completely."

Weed met with the Ellyons in order to complete the quest.

"I brought the barbarian hero here directly."

Even though a long time had passed, Bahamorg and the Ellyons recognized each other with just one glance.

-Bahamorg!

"You seem to be doing well."

-Yes. I was worried... Thank goodness you're safe.

"I gained a new life from this person who followed the Arpen Emperor's sculpting."

-That's right. I'm happy that I could meet you.

Ddiring!

-Hero Bahamorg has been completed.

The hero Bahamorg of the Arpen Empire has been reborn and gained a new life.

The Ellyons will forever offer their loyalty to the sculptor Weed.

-Fame has increased by 1,380.

-The sculptural lifeform Bahamorg has become your subordinate.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-Leadership has increased by 5.

“Huhuhu.”

Weed warmly watched the encounter between the Ellyons and Bahamorg. He knew how useful something like blind obedience would be in the future.

“Choosing to use Sculpture Life Bestowal for this quest was really the correct judgement.”

He now had the Ellyon’s eternal loyalty because of Bahamorg. If he only returned without giving life to Bahamorg then Weed

would've missed this opportunity.

‘If a person challenges the Sculpting Master Quest after me then they'll probably get a different sculptural lifeform.’

There were many obscure sculptural lifeform races living on the continent without leaving a mark. This seemed to be the unknown legacy left behind by Emperor Geihar. The Arpen Empire had unified the continent so the sculptural lifeforms had scattered all over the place. Thus it would be possible to obtain a good sculptural lifeform when completing the Master Quest early. Of course, this would only happen once the culmination of labour reached the peak.

‘I really have to make them work to the fullest from now on. 24 hours a day, all day long. They would be forever working in my mines and fields. Bahamorg, I will meet you in a dungeon in the future.’

“Do you know the whereabouts of any other sculptural lifeform races?”

Weed asked the Ellyons. He wanted to obtain more subordinates from his Class Master Quest. If he had the knowledge then he would snatch them right away!

-We don't know any others. Unfortunately everyone is scattered too far....

“Well, it is like that.”

It was a shame but he had to give up so he could complete the last process in the Sculpting Master Quest.

“Is there anything else I can do for the freedom and justice of art?”

Naturally his ultimate goal was to make money.

-Please go to a religious society. The next step will be told once you go to any religious society.

“I understand. I won’t play and will work diligently.”

Weed chose the Freya Church and moved there. In the meantime a close relationship had developed so he felt more comfortable with this religion. He visited the Freya Cathedral in the northern part of Morata. Weed walked up the stairs of the northern Cathedral.

Sculptures of knights and priests were lining both sides of the staircase. There were 48 stairs to the entrance of the Cathedral. The main entrance was decorated with white gold. Couples and users were relaxing in the sunlight or conversing with each other on the stairs.

“The cost for building something like this far exceeded the budget.”

The Cathedral was a Grand Building so it could be classified as a work of art. It also had value as a cultural heritage and played a role in spreading the culture of the Arpen Kingdom.

“I’d like to meet High Priest-nim.”

“Your Majesty has come. I understand. I will guide you.”

Weed received the invitation of the guards and priests and headed to the High Priest’s room. An annex for the High Priest had been placed in the Cathedral.

“The Freya Church welcomes His Majesty who has done a lot for the continent.

“You are praising me too much. I just wanted to spread the Freya Church a little bit.”

Weed and the High Priest exchanged small words. Anyway, it was good that he had influence with a NPC like this. Weed also became the king so the High Priest’s attitude was very polite. He also returned Helain’s Cup as a novice adventurer so he received different treatment from the Freya Church.

He didn’t need to kneel down to greet them. This was the power of fame! Weed’s achievements with each religion was so vast that he would receive the same treatment everywhere else.

“I’ve been waiting for Your Majesty to visit the Freya Church. There are many undisclosed villages in the north that are having trouble because of monsters. Some things only Your Majesty can do.”

Weed received a new request from the High Priest. Normally quests like this would expand the Arpen Kingdom’s territory or treasury but unfortunately this one had a different purpose.

“The reason I came to the Freya Church is to find my way as a sculptor.”

“It is like that. Some time ago, a god descended and passed a message to a priest. The Goddess will appear once sculpting becomes part of the continent. I know that Your Majesty is the only one who can accomplish this.”

“Kuheom.”

Weed became uncomfortable as he listened. He had a strange feeling that he needed to spend money or accept a difficult request.

“Your Majesty has given so many things to our Freya Church. I know how difficult it is to walk along the path of art. Now I will give Your Majesty this item that has been kept by our church.”

The High Priest took out a wooden box. Weed always trembled in moments like this, just like when a boss monster’s health dropped to the bottom.

‘I wonder what it is.’

His interest was completely focused on the wooden box. The first thing he thought of was a priceless treasure. He would be extremely happy if the wooden box was filled with treasures.

-You have acquired the box kept in the Freya Church.

An ordinary piece of wood was inside the box when Weed opened it. Energy flowed from the pattern clearly carved in it. It was clearly made with the best wooden material. A faint but warm and comforting mysterious power could be felt from the wood.

“What is this?”

“Weed has already left a lot of artwork on the continent. If your work is shown then everyone would admire it. Goddess Freya has personally given Weed-nim her blessings as you walk along the path of a sculptor.”

Ddirring!

-Sculpting a New Miracle

There is no one who doesn't know about Sculptor Weed. Weed has succeeded in myriad heroic adventures and became famous for his sculpting. Sculpting can be used to accomplish a miracle.

Freya has given you the power to create a new secret sculpting technique. It is like giving life to a sculpture already acquired.

This will lead to the last step in the Sculpting Master Quest.

Level of Difficulty: Sculpting Master Quest

Quest Restrictions: Level 9 Advanced Sculpting

-A secret sculpting technique can be created through this quest.

The new technique will depend on the sculpture produced.

It was a quest but the compensation would be beyond anything he got before. A new secret technique would be established due to the Class Master Quest.

‘It is somewhat expected but....’

Zahab, Geihar Von Arpen, Daycram, Belsos and Darone. Each Sculpting Master had created their own technique. Weed was now able to reach such heights by himself. It felt like he was a true Master leaving footsteps behind. Weed went to a corner of the room that people hardly used. A deep emotion he never felt since starting Royal Road now rose inside him.

“In the meantime, it has become really serious. I will be reborn as

a sculptor. Inspect!”

-Wood Block: Durability 1/1

No scratches on the piece of wood.

Freya has imbued it with divine power and you can create a new technique from it.

“There are many techniques that I want to make. A sculpture that can ruin the continent? No. I have invested too much money in the Arpen Kingdom to do that. A sculpture to make the value of land soar? It would be nice if I could turn wood into good or stones into jewels.”

Weed was engrossed in his serious worries.



Tailor Drago.

He challenged his Class Master Quest and was required to sew 100,000 doll eyes.

“Huhuhuk!”

It was to the extent that it felt like he was surrounded by eyes.

But he didn't give up and succeeded at last.

“Now I have to distribute the dolls to the children.”

Drago went out onto Morata's streets and gave the dolls to children.

“Thank you very much. Mister.”

-Fame has increased by 1.

He felt a complicated feeling every time he parted with a doll. Still, the sight of the children relieved a little of his mental fatigue.

“I'm thankful you gave such a present to my child, Tailor-nim.”

A tailor giving dolls as presents. Morata's children and their parents believed that he was a good man. Good people could receive more commissions. But doubt could have an adverse effect.

-100,000 Dolls' Eyes has been completed.

The children all rejoiced in getting a doll. They were able to change between playing with a toy or a ball.

“Huhu, I finally finished.”

He met with the instructor for the next part in the Tailor's Master Quest.

“You’ve done a good job. Thank you. Next....”

Drago swallowed his saliva. Broadcasts often showed other people doing wonderful adventures for their Master Quest. He hoped for a request that wasn't too hard.

“Next, I request that you stitch buttons.”

“Kehek!”

“I would appreciate it if you sew 100,000 buttons onto clothes and distribute it in the shanty town.”

Drago fell into despair. He blamed the world for giving him such an ordeal.

But there was someone else who experienced similar circumstances when challenging the Class Master Quest. A childlike feeling still hadn't disappeared from the man's face. In the past, Weed had met a boy growing food ingredients when participating in the punitive force to Baran.

He travelled around the continent studying delicious dishes and acquiring the recipes of different regions. His dishes were enough to earn a job as a royal cook but he roamed the continent instead.

“There are limits to how many dishes can develop if I stay in one place.”

If he met a monster when travelling then he would run away. The cook Elkukun was popular on the continent. Rumours of the dishes he created spread. He then came to Morata to avoid the war on the Central Continent.

“Delicious food can develop in a peaceful place with artwork. I have to make the best dish that everyone can’t resist.”

Elkukun challenged the Cooking Master Quest! And he shed garlic tears for 3 weeks.

Combat professions only needed to fight and it was either victory or defeat. Production or art professions also depended on success or failure. A lot of effort was required for the production or art professions in order to fail or succeed.



Despite having Sword-Cloning and Radiant Sword, the Geomchis didn’t forget about their basic Sword Mastery.

“Weed said. It is easy if he follows the texture when carving a sculpture.....”

It was sufficient if they continuously struck the weak point while hunting. But the Geomchis were in a never ending battle to develop new sword techniques. That's why they always fought against intimidating or strong monsters. The instructors and practitioners really felt a thrill when facing monsters that could kill them. The dungeons near Vargo Fortress had already been explored so they wanted to test the limits of their sword.

“The texture... It doesn't apply to monsters or living people. But it is easy in regards to a tree or rock.”

The Geomchis didn't worry about the difficulty. This was training for the instructors and practitioners.

“It is difficult to cut the texture of things.”

Geomchi₂ and Geomchi₃ immediately started thinking. They realized something when watching Weed live his life. It wasn't flattery but they realized that their strong bodies were an inconvenience.

“Our training has been lacking, Teacher-nim!”

“I will learn train my body to cut along the texture and report back. Teacher-nim!”

The instructors and students started to cut rocks. It was a mixture of hard and soft so controlling their power was needed to cut it accordingly. The right amount of power would reveal a

smooth cut along the texture. The sword experts naturally realized it when practicing with trees.

Royal Road had skills and stats so they could exert a significantly lower power than in reality. Sometimes the trees or rocks would shatter and break. This was one of the fun parts about raising their level! If their characters grew then they could feel like Superman.

If a swordsman or warrior wore thick armour then they could move with a larger force. If agility was raised then they could match the speed of a horse when running!

Despite the failure rate, a magician would have their desires come true when succeeding in a wide area magic against a mob of monsters. It was why flying or magic items were sold for such an expensive price.

The physical abilities of the students was second to none so they could break the trees with just a light cut. If a tree didn't break in Royal Road then the person was a beginner. Despite being level 200, it wasn't easy to cut along the texture.

Kwa kwa kwa kwa!

“It doesn't seem to be like this.”

He couldn't control his strength and the rock in front of Geomchi300 was broken.

Kwaaaang!

Geomchi500 struck at a large rock with his sword.

“The durability of my sword keeps on falling. Fuu.”

They searched their body for a response. They needed to somehow resolve this in order to become stronger. The instructors and students wanted to easily break a rock using a small amount of force.

“Ah, I did it!”

Geomchi2 succeeded first.

“Sahyung, how did you do it?”

“Your weight is connected to your centre then attack with suitable power and speed. If you attack one spot then won’t you cut it precisely? It is difficult to explain in words but there will be a moment when you will experience it too.”

“I’ll work hard. Sahyung.”

Afterwards Geomchi3 and Geomchi4 succeeded as well. After countless effort and attempts, they finally learnt the way to cut the rock correctly!

“Kyahaha, this is exciting.”

“This really relieves my stress, Sahyung!”

The students smashed the rocks and passed. There were consecutive sounds of rocks breaking! A feeling of delight and pleasure could be felt when swinging the sword and smashing the surrounding rock. If they found the right texture then they could break a rock 10 times large while using a relatively small amount of force.

Ddirring!

-You have acquired the Rock Destruction technique.

This technique can be utilized to break a strong object.

-The skill proficiency of Weapons Mastery has improved.

-Stats related to combat ability and martial arts has increased by 2.

The only thing they thought about all day long was smashing the rocks.

‘It is no use separate like this. Because there are no textures in a shield or armour.’

‘Even if there is a texture, it will be very small and difficult to distinguish in battle.’

‘Ah, how fascinating.....’

A free life! Nothing learnt was useless. But there was no point in breaking a large rock if it couldn’t be used in battle. Geomchi3 thought deeply about the Rock Destruction technique.

‘Hrmm, there must be a way to utilize it somehow. It wouldn’t be possible for humanoid monsters. Then if we meet something big like the Bone Dragon....!’

The Bone Dragon had great defensive power so this would be very useful in weakening it. It would be very dangerous since it required a close range but they had to make an attempt in order to become strong. They practiced using the Rock Destruction technique against a real monster.

Grrrrrr!

“So weak....”

Kaeng!

“It was very strong this time.”

It was difficult to find a useful monster. They found that the best

hunting method was to aim at the vital spot continuously. In fact, at higher levels most users relied on skill. Even if their Sword Mastery skill was high, an attack skill was stronger than the basic skill despite consuming mana. However the skill wouldn't allow adjustment of power.

Of course, a combination of strong and weak skills would be used depending on the situation. But few people would deliberately search for the weak point and keep on attacking it. If the attack wasn't possible then it would become a one-sided beating. But the Geomchis were tenacious and kept on trying. Even against a monster of the same level, their health, resilience, skills and equipment were completely different. It was impossible to quantify. Even if they checked the monster with magic, the details of the situation wouldn't appear. The only way to know was to fight directly.

The monster's resistance would disappear if attacked with the correct power, mana and speed.

-Your attack has succeeded in penetrating the monster's defense.

A monster's defense power either depended on armour or hard skin. High ranking monsters possessed skin stronger than steel. But if they succeeded in the attack then it ignored basic defense!

Ddiring!

-The continuous attacks were successful.

The monster was cut!

-The skill proficiency of Weapons Mastery has increased rapidly.

“Kyah!”

A high attack inevitably emerged. And the hands were the basis of all sports and martial arts.

“Exhilarating.”

Interest sprang up as they fought against monsters. Even if they attacked a vital spot, the monster’s defense couldn’t be ignored so they searched for the perfect texture. Their entire strength and damage exploded.

Weed’s Sculpting Blade was capable of ignoring the physical defense of the opposite party. But the mana loss was very intense so the direct striking power itself was weak. Even if Sculpting Blade attacked two or three times, the attack power meant it was weaker than a normal sword.

“Kuoooooh!”

Once the weak point was found, the monsters retreated and fell into a state of fear. If they succeeded in continuous attacks then they would overwhelm the monsters. Their aggressive attacks meant their Weapons Mastery climbed freely without wasting a lot of mana.

“This is weird. It is to the extent that I don’t have to intentionally look for it. If I see a gap then I can control my mana and power in order to fight the monster.”

The students mastered the attack under the threat of death.

“Um, is that so.”

“But this is a really difficult sword technique, Sahyung. It is difficult to make the body move even if my head is telling it to.”

It was hard to successful complete the technique 100 times. However their bodies slowly grasped the abilities of the monsters over time. If they knew the spot beforehand then they could make preparations to attack. Naturally the monsters didn’t just sit down politely to receive it. High level monsters had various skills to resist. The body might understand but it was difficult to put into action.

“Teacher-nim, I’ve found the texture part.”

Geomchi² reported it to Geomchi. Then Geomchi suddenly received a whisper from a female shaman. They had met on the edge of the Yurokina Mountains. He had lived his whole life as a single man but now he received a final hope to meet a woman.

-Did you come yesterday? Many days have passed since you promised to come.

-I'm sorry. My work caused some delay.... I'll return soon.

-Where are you now? Can you tell me?

Geomchi found it difficult to answer. It wasn't that he disliked the idea of her coming to Vargo Fortress so that they could hunt together. But he wanted to be calm and elegant in front of her so he couldn't nag anyone.

'Well we did hunt together in the Yurokina Mountains.'

He decided to answer honestly. A woman usually wouldn't notice if the time of suffering was short. Zephyr also gave advice that it was better to answer honestly. Or he would be buried in a grave once caught.

-You probably don't know it but right now I'm at a fortress located in the north.....

-The Arpen Kingdom?

-That's right. Tomorrow I will head to the Yurokina Mountains.

The female shaman's voice wasn't angry. It was actually filled with curiosity.

-Why are you in such a distant place?

-I'm teaching some children in a place called Morata. And one of my students is the king here....

-Weed the God of War?

-Yes.

-Kyaah! It is really the great Weed-nim? Weed-nim... Weed-nim is really your student?

Weed was also popular with women in their 30s! Geomchi was jealous but wise enough to take advantage of Weed's celebrity status.

-It is almost like I raised him. Because I taught him how to use the sword.

-If I go Morata will I get to see Weed-nim?

-Just follow me and we can meet. You don't have to do anything.

-Then I will head to Morata with my younger sister and niece. Thank you. And love....you.

-Me too.

She decided to take a passenger ship towards the north. Geomchi who had handled a big crisis and didn't have to head to the Yurokina Mountains looked manly as he held his sword and said.

“Hmm, tell me where it is.”

“It is different for every monster. We have to attack the part depending on the monster's health, defense and skills. This requires exact strength, speed and mana.”

Usually most users had no idea about hitting properly. It was common sense that hitting harder would cause more damage. That's why most people chose an elaborate attack. By accurately attacking along the texture at the monster's weak point, it was possible to bypass the monster's health and defense.

“This is fascinating. I was just becoming bored with fighting.”

Geomchi immediately applied it to the monster. The power and speed had to be different when considering the defense and abilities of the monsters. He finally managed to succeed after hunting the seventh monster.

Kuweeek!

The monster suffered from just one cut. It was thrown into chaos from the continuous attacks at its vital spots. It was an attack that completely ignored the opponent's defense!

“It seems surprisingly simple.”

Geomchi tested the technique while dealing with the monster. He understood the special nature of a monster’s body. Geomchi fought instinctively like a calculator.

Kuwawak!

He even used strong monsters as his partner.

Kwaaek!

He also found the texture when dealing with weak monsters.

“This is cutting along the grain.”

He avoided a weak monster and lightly wielded his sword.

Suksak!

It showed the greatest effect for a minimal expenditure of energy. This was the type of sword mastery that came from swinging, stabbing and cutting with a sword tens of thousands of times. The core part of mastering a sword was power, speed and accuracy. They could double the attack power in a fight. This technique would be hard in a confusing fight and could only be used during a one on one battle. It was the best technique to show off basic swordplay.

Geomchi was able to find the texture and cut the monster with his sword straight away. Countless bodies fell to the ground like the land was being cultivated! Geomchi resolutely attacked and succeeded in five consecutive hits. Despite the monster's resilience, it soon staggered and collapsed.

“This is a pretty difficult sword technique. It won't be easy during a difficult and urgent battle.”

Ddirring!

-A new sword technique has been produced.

It is possible to name the sword technique.

You possess the high achievement of producing the first sword technique, causing the skill proficiency to start at Intermediate Level 2.

-The skill proficiency of Weapons Mastery has improved.

-Fame has increased by 3,196 due to the wonderful swordplay.

Geomchi received an unexpected result after hunting monsters in a row.

“I'll call it Texture Sword Technique.”

Geomchi had no interest so his naming sense was exactly like his student Weed.

“Now I have to teach my students this sword technique.”

It was difficult and demanding but a sword technique that wasn't inferior was produced.

Chapter 2: Bahamorg's Power

“Ah, art is art. I need to earn money.”

It really was difficult trying to devise a secret sculpting technique.

“I need something that makes it easy to earn money during a hunt as well as be useful during a quest.”

The reason was his endless greed!

“A sculpture can't be reversed once it is created....”

It was like deciding between jajangmyeong (black bean noodles) or jjampong (spicy seafood stew) when asked what food he would want to eat forever. Of course, a skill with deep artistry would be produced.

He thought regretfully about the standards of the sculpture he created so far. It was a sculpture so there was restrictions places on the subject and construction. A painting could draw the sky and the ocean but a sculpture couldn't do that. A picture just needed to be elegantly painted while every part of the sculpture needed to be individually created.

They were both artists but one had the job of a manual labourer! Creating a skill that raised awareness about the lack of expression

available to a sculptor would help the development of novice sculptors.

“If I do that then I will regret it forever. I will also grow old and die. The stress might shorten my life expectancy.”

It was an important decision so it became difficult the more he thought about it.

“I’ll think about it after raising my Sculpting skill. Anyway, I still have to master the skill in order to completely bring the Class Quest to an end.”

His choice was to suspend it for the moment! Weed sent a whisper to Pale.

-Where are you?

-I’m playing at Wyvern Square. Surka has come and we’re going to do a quest to collect colourful, patterned snake skin.

This was a quest popular with the high level users in Morata. If they caught a snake with very strong poison and brought the skin then it could be sold for an expensive price. It was a quest only given to trusted people so many users tried to raise their intimacy to receive it.

-I’m currently at Light Square so I will head there.

Weed spent some time clearing a simple quest with Pale's party. Of course, his mind was still full of thoughts about making wealth from his secret sculpting technique.

"There is the cave of some thieves nearby. Those guys have gathered together some wealth. They should be quickly subdued... If you give me a bottle of sake then I will tell you their location."

"There is no drink for you. Tell me where it is."

"Your Majesty!"

He forcefully acquired the quests from Morata residents that gave good rewards.

"Here are the things you requested."

"Thank you for your kindness, Your Majesty. Looking after a lowly person like me...."

"Your words are too long. Quickly give me the money you promised."

"I'm grateful for Your Majesty's favour. Here, it is lacking but this is what I can give you."

Weed was the king so he got 50% more than the average reward.

It was to the extent that he could even take the cloaks off a mother and child if he wanted.

“There is a reason why people desire power.”

The other spectators enviously watched Weed receive the quests.

“He isn’t receiving the quest because he is a trustworthy person. It is only because he is the king.”

“Even if he wasn’t the king, he is Weed-nim so it would be easy for him to receive the quests. He had fame and credibility.”

“Kya. I’d like to have a growth like that.”

Someone possessing fame and power would naturally receive the envy of others. Surka found it strange so she asked.

“Isn’t such simple quests boring for Weed-nim? We just need to go to the place, catch the monster and return.”

The party seemed to have the misleading idea that he was always going on big adventures. Weed liked the simple but tasty requests the most. Sometimes it was more efficiency to hunt quickly then to go to an excessively dangerous place.

“The last person who went there was an experienced adventurer. However they died so you need to prepare thoroughly.....”

“Give me this request.”

“Yes Your Majesty!”

He received a quest to clean out a dungeon in the Arpen Kingdom from the residents. Right now there were many high level users in the north. After the guilds that wielded power in the Central Continent collapsed, the general users would take their friends and colleagues to the north.

Now it was common to see level 300s recruiting at the squares and rarely some level 400s. It still wasn't easy to see level 400s even in the Central Continent. But users with the best force were gathering in Morata, the Arpen Kingdom's capital so sometimes it was possible to see them.

Beginners were jealous of those high level users. They showed off their wealth to the people living in shacks and the houses by the river.

Of course, Weed wasn't worried about this large wealth gap. He preferred it because the tax income would increase aggressively.

Adventurers and explorers moved to the north but they still failed to clear all the dungeons. There were places where party members were killed or it was too dangerous so they left in the middle. Weed accepted a quest for one of those places.

“Bahamorg.”

“You called.”

“You are the former protector of the Arpen Empire so your sword and shield skills must be incredible.”

“I can fight a little bit.”

“But while you were dead, many strong monsters came to the continent before you were revived with my great sacrifice. No matter what you say now... Hmm!”

“Kuooh, where is that location!”

Weed had a level 548 barbarian warrior to back him. Bahamorg naturally strode in front as they entered the dungeon. Maylon asked with concern.

“Can we leave it to him?”

“Of course. We’ll be fine. He was the guardian of the Arpen Empire.”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Kwa kwang, kwang, kwaaang!

“Intruders.”

“We can’t let them steal the treasure so trigger the traps!”

The dungeon’s trap and magic attacks hit Bahamorg’s body!

“Kurehah!”

Bahamorg cried out as he fought. It was a warrior’s cry that temporarily boosted the morale, health and defense of all allies.

Surka screamed with glee after confirming her state.

“Kkyak! Totally amazing! My health seems to have doubled.”

“I am a magician and it grew by 3 times.”

Romuna was a magician and her health rose dramatically so there was no need to mention Maylon, Zephyr who was a fisherman and Pale who was an archer. Weed had very low health yet in this battle it increased by 70,000.

‘For a warrior like this to vanish and die....’

A warrior was indispensable when hunting in a party for a reason. If they lacked ability when entering a dungeon then it

could be really dangerous. Their defense might weaken because the durability of their armour fell or they couldn't block the attacks with their shield. Furthermore, their vitality quickly reduced and a knight had the weakness of not being able to move quickly in a battle.

There were numerous advantages and disadvantages for the knight class but this weakness made many users uncomfortable. A knight could increase their speed on horseback or using charging skills but that was restricted in forests, dungeons and on mountains. The knight had various complicated aspects while a warrior was like an iron wall in battle. They had solid defense to fight monsters, could handle all types of weapons and were agile.

Bahamorg overwhelmed the monsters in front of him so much that it was like taking candy from a baby, taking school fees away, stealing milk to eat, snatching shoes or taking away toys.

“Radiant Sword!”

Weed, Maylon and Pale focused on ranged attacks. The skill level had increased so the previous sparrows had changed. Now an eagle opened its wings and attacked! It was fast like an arrow and displayed exquisite acrobatics when encountering an obstacle in the air. The range also increase so it was an effective and brilliant technique for hunting from a distance.

He wore the Goddess' Knight, Baharan's Bracelet and Seulroeo's Ring for their mana recovery options so he didn't need to worry about saving mana.

“If electricity and gas was like this then the cities would be really happy!”

If he stopped the magic or arrow attacks from the opponent then he could use Moonlight Sculpting Blade to counterattack. Radiant Sword was different from Moonlight Sculpting and used brilliant light to attack and defend at the same time from a distance.

Bahamorg was at the front and he also utilized the prominent abilities of his faithful subordinates, Van Hawk and Torido. It wasn't even necessary to use the other sculptural lifeforms.

“Ummoooooooo. I'm happy.”

“A surplus seems to be occurring in my life, gol gol gol!”

Goldman and Yellowy liked it at first but they soon missed Weed.

“I can do some work. Ummoooooooo.”

“Master, I would like to go with you. Gol gol gol!”

The wyverns, Bingryong and Phoenix were subordinates that he mainly used to fight outside. However Goldman and Yellowy after went together with him so they were more attached.

“I would love to go with you too but... The meal expenses are

valuable so I will call when you are needed.”

Weed abandoned his subordinates that he used cruelly in the past! He had the news of the Hermes Guild occupying the Central but Weed just continued doing quests with his colleagues. They exterminated every type of monster in the dungeons!

In addition to the area around Vargo Fortress, the Arpen Kingdom’s territory had expanded so it was worth exploring the dungeons.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“The japtem from the monsters doesn’t lie!”

Weed gained 3 more levels to reach 418 and his sculpting skill proficiency increased by 3.2%. He repeated hunting and sculpting from morning to evening so this outcome was an accumulation of his hard work. The loot he obtained from the dungeons could be reworked with his blacksmith, sewing and sculpting skills. A shabby object passing through Weed’s hands could be sold for a high price!

“I need a priest.”

“The religious societies have been waiting for Weed-nim’s request. Priests will gladly follow you.”

Weed was hunting with Pale’s party and Seo-yoon so he also

hired priests to help. He had a lot of contributions with the Freya Church but he wanted to save it for the future and not waste it on priests. He had formed many friendly relations and achievements with other religious societies after creating the Garden of the Gods.

In addition to the well-known Freya Church and Church of Lugh, there were many followers for the other sculptures. The religious societies followed and built a platform in Morata. Once the religious societies came to Morata, Weed's achievements would rise periodically every month because he ruled the place. Therefore he didn't need to worry about achievements and could continue mobilizing 1~2 priests.

There were the donations from users to the Garden of the Gods so the Freya Cathedral earned huge amounts of money! Weed didn't hand out any money but the religious societies were able to rapidly grow due to these donations. Cathedrals sprang up and recruited knights.

Even if Morata's military wasn't mobilized, monsters wouldn't dare come near the city thanks to the paladins. It was to the extent that beginners had to go to distant places to hunt dangerous animals and monsters. As Vargo Fortress subdued more monsters, their territory spread and the living area of the residents widened.

After the construction of the Grand Buildings and the Garden of the Gods, the taxes piled up and the Arpen Kingdom had abundant finances again. Apart from maintaining Morata and Vargo Fortress, it was also used to defend the granaries and mines away from the cities.

The scale of the army needed to triple in order to defend the expand territory from the invasion of monsters as well as defend the mines.

“Texture Sword Technique. Teacher-nim really is great.”

He also used the sword technique he learnt from Geomchi in battle.

Geomchi showed the secret to dealing with certain and their weaknesses according to the habit or skill of the monsters. Weed spend one day learning Texture Sword Technique and the skill was formed. It was a really difficult technique but it felt fantastic when it exploded.

-The skill proficiency of Sword Mastery has improved.

You have become slightly familiar with the Texture Sword Technique.

He was able to hold out against any type of monster thanks to the Goddess' Knight Armour and the priests' healing. His party was fully equipped with the resources needed to hunt. Weed's hunting efficiency had no choice but to be astonishing.

“Oh, this dungeon took a total of 3 hours and 40 minutes to break through.”

“That is 7 minutes faster than yesterday.”

“The record for other parties is 5 hours and 57 minutes but we.....”

“He truly is the master of hunting.”

Even Pale’s party couldn’t believe the hunting speed so it a video was posted on the bulletin boards then people would doubt it. Weed, Seo-yoon and Bahamorg swept through the dungeons with the help of a male priest.

Pale, Maylon, Romuna, Irene, Surka, Hwaryeong and Bellot also provided a combination of various professions. But if he was talking about necessary skills, Seo-yoon’s combat ability was always great. Weed’s hunting speed started to ramp up even more once she demonstrated the berserker’s abilities.

This crazy hunting allowed him to identify the skills, vitality and health of his colleagues. Once Weed had an excellent grasp on the situation then he could dominate the battlefield. The cooperation between his colleagues meant their speed and force increased.

“This is good after the loneliness of hunting.”

Weed was enjoying the sensation of growth.

“There should be some room for this as well.”

He carved sculptures during the break. He had many adventures in the meantime so his stats and skills grew much faster than users of a similar level. Usually once someone reached level 400, the experience when catching monsters wouldn't stack up that well so the growth became slow. Weed had suffered in the beginning but he didn't think it was that difficult to raise his level thanks to his sculptural lifeforms and skills.

“It is already difficult.”

Bardray and even Seo-yoon were competitors that had been running ahead of him for a long time. He had lived a long time by himself. Weed noticed that Seo-yoon fought aggressively to catch even one more monster.

The accumulated experience and loot overflowed. The fat stomach of the merchant Mapan wobbled as he made himself useful.

“A secret sculpting technique useful for hunting would be perfect.”

Weed was still postponing his decision about the secret sculpting technique. He already knew that the other secret sculpting techniques had limitations. Sculptural Life Bestowal caused his level and art stat to fall while Sculpting Blade wasn't invincible.

Sculpting Blade had the enormous effect of ignoring the opponent's damage but the attack damage wasn't high and the limits were revealed when fighting Bardray.

Moonlight Sculpting Blade used light to attack and defend but the mana consumption was too serious. The mana consumption was three times higher than Sculpting Blade and he didn't have the Goddess' Knight Armour then. He couldn't use it excessively when surrounded by enemies.

Sculpture Transformation used the features of other races but was based on his original ability while he could die with Great Disaster Nature Sculpting if he made the slightest mistake. The Elemental Creation Skill from King Belsos could create elementals but that was no use to Weed. He could make more money from selling items he acquired!

“One of the skills is defective.”

It would be good if he could develop a technique that he could take advantage of during a hunt. The number of times he could use the technique depended on the sculpture created. Weed really wanted to give birth to a skill he wouldn't regret.



Oh Dong-min slept in for a long time on Sunday.

“Hahhh! The ice cream in the house is all wiped out. Are there any interesting television programmes?”

In Royal Road he was Pale who took pride in hitting 100 arrows in

100 arrows but in reality he was an ordinary college student.

He appeared on television during Weed's adventures and was indirectly a celebrity as well. His phone started being active with calls from old friends that he could barely remember anymore.

"Today I don't have to go anywhere and can rest in my house. I can leisurely read the book <Pork and Espresso>."

He had recently spent so much time hunting that he wanted one day to relax. Oh Dong-man sat on the couch reading a book and dozing off while his mother cut an apple for him.

"Was my son sleeping?"

"Ah... It was only for a short time."

"What are you doing in the evening? Is there anything you would like to eat?"

"Mom I want pork spine soup."

"Then I will visit the mart later. By the way Son, you're not connecting today?"

"I'm going to rest at home."

“Then can you buy Mom the merchant exclusive apron?”

“I’ll buy it next time.”

Oh Dong-man had to eat two boiled potatoes that night.



“You’re injured. Please be careful.”

Irene was carrying out charitable activities near Morata’s south gates. She treated the beginners injured while hunting deer and wolves!

“Wah, my health only has 200 health left yet it has been cured! Priest-nim, thank you.”

“No. That’s okay. If you get hurt then come again.”

The beginners praised her actions like she was an angel.

‘The south gate’s priestess.’

‘She has a gentle character.’

‘If I’m hurt then I should go to the woman in the green hat.’

Irene also gave blessings to the warriors. Treating people who came into the city was ideal for increasing the skill proficiency.

“Angelic.”

“I should marry someone like that as my wife.....”

A lot of men also showed interest in her. There was a reason why gentle women were popular through the generations. However Irene didn't permit any of the men to approach.

“I'm sorry.”

“Perhaps if you don't have a boyfriend.....”

“I don't want to meet a man right now.”

“I see. If you change your mind later then look for Romomo.”

“Yes. I'll do that.”

Irene intended to meet only one man in her life. Date one man and then marriage!

Sometimes Irene also had stress accumulate. Normally the priest profession was so boring that some would doze off in battle. When

hunting at night, many priests could relax and even sleep for a brief moment. The priest class was long and boring because they only gave treatment. They could even go for walks with their cats or dogs.

A priest was necessary during hunting so they received preferential treatment but it was a class that required being able to withstand boredom. It was a class for someone with a relaxed, comfortable and quiet nature!

Yet Irene was extremely busy once the whirl of fighting started. Weed hunted roughly so his damage from monsters was higher. He had the habit of moving away from Pale and the other members to more difficult places. Therefore Irene was breathless trying to support them.

“Ah, how painful.”

Irene laughed like an angel while giving treatment at the gate. She was waiting for Hwaryeong and Bellot. The method to relieve stress was shopping. Evening was the time to wander around Morata’s leather stores for discounts. They had the hobby of going to the night market at dawn in search of pretty accessories.

“A dedicated priest unit these days.....”



The Cloud Guild controlled more than 90% of the Britten

Alliance Kingdom. They had conquered a kingdom so their pride was very large. But after the Hermes Guild invaded, a huge gap was revealed as they were defeated.

“The death toll is 48,000. Fort Langbot has been taken.”

“What about the military fortress Yabollis?”

“It is surrounded by enemies.”

“But the defense power isn’t ordinary so it should be able to hold up for 3 months.”

“Although there are problems with supplies, the food amount is good enough. Meals will be supplied in the fortress.”

“What should we do?”

“We’re lacking in extra consumables like arrows, armour and weapons. We will run out after a few battles.”

The Cloud Guild was having a serious meeting in their conference room.

They hadn’t thought their power was that far behind the Hermes Guild. The Hermes Guild had superior in terms of fame and military power but they thought their overall power was similar. There were many strong principalities with a prosperous economy

in the Britten Alliance Kingdom so they thought they could overcome the power gap.

They were proud because they managed to secure a kingdom every time they fought. But the power of the Hermes Guild was beyond what people expected. Their knights had a very high level and expensive equipment.

After the Kallamore Kingdom became incorporated into Haven, they had 100,000 commanders experienced in battle! The Cloud Guild had 50,000 commanders but they failed to respond properly. They couldn't pass judgement quickly against the enemy and became overwhelmed.

In actual combat, there was such a large gap that it was an embarrassing defeat. The Cloud Guild was pushed by the quality of the commanders and knights.

“It isn't necessary to go out and fight a short term competition.”

“If we endure for a little bit then it is possible to gather the army in order to counterattack. We also have to give more training to the soldiers who will fight in the war.”

They could use the siege time in order to hire mercenaries for the Britten Alliance Kingdom but the other cities would be vulnerable. The free cities don't have high walls and their defences were fragile. To make matters worse, the military fortress didn't have the proper supplies prepared. The Cloud Guild didn't replenish the supplies every time they used it.

The Cloud Guild was a guild that grew up in the Britten Alliance Kingdom. They had never suffered a civil war between countries so there was no experience with a siege. The castle lords only posted archers and wizards on the walls to withstand a siege. But the weak walls wouldn't be able to hold out against the Haven Kingdom's army.

“If we stop Bardray then there should be some chances.....”

“How is the situation with the mercenary support? If they join the war then increase their pay.”

“Almost no users have come out. It is because they are afraid of repeated defeats against the Hermes Guild.”

Users in the Britten Alliance Kingdom could form mercenary contracts to fight with the Cloud Guild. Of course, the Cloud Guild didn't have a good external image. But mercenaries received money so many users participated.

Despite the pay for the mercenaries tripling this time, the recruitment wasn't going well due to the disadvantageous situation. It was because they would suffer more if they were repeatedly slain by the Hermes Guild.

“Even if it is expensive, shouldn't we hire some Dark Gamers?”

“The Dark Gamers liaison office is closed and they declared that

they're not participating in the war.”

“If this continues then we'll be defeated. We are becoming increasingly disadvantageous on all sides.”

“We have many troops that haven't been sent yet. Let's give them military training just in case.”

“The biggest problem right now is that we're lacking in time and preparations. The enemy's offensive is staggered in waves. It is possible to try a prolonged war with Fort Odin and Sisley but if these areas collapse then surrender is only a matter of time. We have to protect these areas. Collect our power and have a strong counterattack.”

The Haven Kingdom and the Britten Alliance Kingdom. But behind that was a war between the Hermes Guild and the Cloud Guild. There was a plains between the kingdoms so the users were worried but they also went there to see a cool battle.

Outwardly it seemed like the Cloud Guild was on a losing streak. But they were one of the prestigious guilds on the continent so there were hidden challenges up their sleeves. The Cloud Guild had suffered damage but only 10% of the Britten Alliance land had been taken away.

Only the borders had collapsed so the war was starting now.

Chapter 3: Seo-yoon's Smile

Weed hunted until he gained 3 more levels.

It was impossible to concentrate on hunting thanks to the war on the Central Continent. In order to purchase seasoning and other goods, the Arpen Kingdom needed to expand but the territory had only reached the Yusellin village.

“Hermes Guild.....”

“The Cloud Guild also isn't ordinary. They quickly organized a large army.”

Users and residents were talking about the war in the square. Weed was King of the Arpen Kingdom so there was a relation with the war.

“No. Don't pay any regard to it. I will just need to take medicine for a headache if I think about it.”

It was a role that could cause chronic constipation! In modern times, the political arena was full of turmoil due to problems with corruption, crime and economics. A cool city man would survive on alcohol, coffee and headache medicine.

“I just need to think about eating and living well. Watch television and forget all the bad things. This world is full of thieves

anyway.”

The war in the Central Continent would become a really big crisis soon. Whether the winner was the Haven Kingdom or the Britten Alliance Kingdom, the winners would lead to a big empire. The northern economy was currently developing so the timing was fortunate. But worrying about it wouldn't settle the problem.

Weed stayed faithful to hunting and carving sculptures. Continuous dungeon hunting was boring and tiring so Pale's party headed towards Morata.

“Hunting for 18 hours a day... Tsk tsk!”

They hunted for 18 hours out of 24 hours in reality. The time in Royal Road was 4 times that. After a few days, they started to lose the will to even look at monsters. This was a fast movement and high speed hunt so Weed's colleagues took refuge in Morata.

He continued hunting to some degree with Bahamorg and Seo-yoon. The priests always became tired and fell down so he had to go to the city to exchange them. Weed carved in his spare time and succeeded in making fantastic sculptures.

Some sculptures could be used for later. Having a variety of experiences and travelling to many places was indispensable. He had travelled urgently through various parts of the continent.

“In the meantime I made too much. And now I need to do make a

piece.....”

There was the best model nearby. The sun, sea, wind and clouds. Sometimes he would base it off the spectacular nature around him but that wasn't necessary right now.

Weed was about to start sculpting when Seo-yoon sat near him. Weed spoke casually.

“Excuse me, can I carve a small sculpture?”

“Huh?”

“You will be the target.”

“.....”

He felt like Seo-yoon would naturally decline. That's because she wouldn't even show her face to other people. Furthermore, she had the habit of killing others mercilessly. But unexpectedly, Seo-yoon looked embarrassed and gave a small nod to agree.

“Hmm hmm, I'll make it beautifully.”

Weed carved a sculpture with her as the model. His heart trembled for some reason as he looked at her face while carving. He thought Seo-yoon's face was beautiful every time he saw it but it seemed to shine further today. He naturally became serious as he

carved the sculpture. Weed carefully looked at Seo-yoon and felt both happy and ashamed.

“Excuse me, can you hold your sword?”

“So?”

He made various sculptures while changing her posture.

“You don’t have any other clothes? Armour is good but it would also be nice to look at casual wear.”

Time passed very quickly as sculptures of her were made. They were sculptures that restored health, mana and vitality. When carving the sculpture like that, the beauty of the sculpture easily came out.

A divine female beauty. It was a beauty that would make even Goddess Freya jealous. A sculpture with the golden ratio.

Fine pieces and Masterpieces emerged. He made so many sculptures of Seo-yoon but there was no expiry date on her beauty. It was a face he would never become bored of even if he saw it for the rest of his life.

“Um... There is no change in expression so every sculpture seems monotonous.”

Weed said while carving a sculpture of Seo-yoon. The atmosphere of each person would change depending on their expression or gesture. He wanted to make sculptures with various other forms. This was his desire as a man and a sculptor!

“Drink a little wine and make a sweet expression.”

Seo-yoon drank wine and smiled awkwardly. Trying to make a facial expression wasn't going well. Weed thought about how to get the expression he wanted.

“Sweet seems difficult so let's start with a peaceful expression. So... Being able to sleep after hunting. Make that expression.”

“.....?”

Seo-yoon didn't know what to do. If hunting finished then she was just tired and took a rest.

“You rest next to the fountain in the square.”

“.....”

“No, I just lie back on Wy-3.”

“Ah!”

Then a peaceful expression emerged on Seo-yoon's face. She felt the most peaceful when riding on Wy-3 through the cloud layer and basking in the sun. Weed left her expression on the sculpture.

“This time I’m going to make a joke about Silver Bird and Golden Bird.”

“A joke?”

“Choose a feather from Silver Bird.....”

“Isn’t that annoying?”

He couldn’t explain it in words so he summoned Silver Bird and Golden Bird. The two birds fought and play around while rubbing and biting at each other’s wings intimately. Seo-yoon unknowingly smiled happily.

‘Uh, pretty.’

Weed also left that scene on the sculpture. The time he spent with Seo-yoon passed really quickly. He used his powers of observation to make accurate and detailed sculptures. He completed the sculpture and showed it to Seo-yoon.

“How is it, is it okay?”

“.....”

Seo-yoon didn't say anything but nodded. The person who made the sculpture was Weed so she felt good about it.

“This is expressed by you but... Can I have it?”

Weed's words to Seo-yoon were even sweeter than the words of a main male character in a drama.

“Ye....s.”

She was happy despite being embarrassed. Weed was a little dim but now he seemed to have shown a bit of his heart. Weed smiled complacently.

‘That's great.’

The Ice Beauty based on Seo-yoon was unearthed near Morata. Previously he was terrified of Seo-yoon and left it unattended after giving life to Bingryong. The users were extremely shocked when the Ice Beauty sculpture was unearthed.

“Ah... I heard a report but it is so beautiful that I'm trembling.”

“A face like this really can't exist. Weed's sculpting skill really soars in the sky if he can imagine this.”

“Huhuk, this really is a present for me who couldn't get a

girlfriend for 29 years.”

“I can’t possible leave Morata without seeing it one more time!”

The users felt extreme regret towards the Ice Beauty. It was to the extent that the Grass Porridge Cult classified it as the number 1 treasured sculpture in Morata. They liked Weed’s adventures of course but the users expected more from his sculptures.

-I would like to see more sculptures related to the Ice Beauty.

-This sculpture has completely taken my heart. Now I’m having dreams about the Ice Beauty.

-I went to adventure in other areas on horseback. And then returned on the next day. I want to see the Ice Beauty.

The users were truly frightening. It was more popular than other Magnum Opus pieces with fantastic options. Weed’s expression became glazed as he imagined what would happen if he exhibited the smiling Seo-yoon sculpture in the Art Centre.

‘There would be a daily crowd of people. The admission fee.....’

It was like ripping off visitors to inspect a house that would be sold only for the company to put up a plaque saying it wouldn’t be sold.

In the past Weed hadn't been quite satisfied with the sculptures of Seo-yoon that he made. But now her eyes seemed warm like the morning sun. Seo-yoon's facial expression didn't have stiffness anymore so naturally Weed expressed it. No matter how good the other sculptor's skill was, Weed was the only one who could make such precious sculptures.

'I have to really consider the Arts Centre exhibition. Maybe it isn't a good idea.'

Weed decided not to display Seo-yoon's sculpture to make money in the short term.

'I should wait and I might be able to get a valuable price later on.'

He didn't have any qualms about postponing it. Weed hunted with Seo-yoon, Bahamorg, Van Hawk and Torido. It was like a family going to wipe out a dungeon!

"The most unpleasant thing for a noble vampire like me is to smell the sweat of a barbarian."

Van Hawk was a loyal Dark Knight but Torido had a tendency to not listen to some words. Then Torido was caught and beaten by Bahamorg to make him behave.

Bahamorg really liked fighting. His nature itself meant that he was strong. After Weed gave him new life, he was weaker but even more enthusiastic about fighting. It was to the extent that Weed

and Seo-yoon just had to follow behind Bahamorg. And he still didn't completely believe in Weed yet.

“The only emperor I will follow is Geihar Von Arpen.”

Bahamorg didn't want to show loyalty to Weed who was a warrior weaker than himself. He only went together with him as repayment for his new life. In addition, he had no interest in fighting.

“They are too weak.”

Weed and Seo-yoon were warriors gifted enough to face the dungeon boss alone. But Bahamorg had a serious expression after seeing Weed carve the sculpture of Seo-yoon.

Geihar Von Arpen.

Watching Weed made him remember the form of Emperor Geihar Von Arpen so he helped Weed gain levels and complete quests.



Weed had perfect concentration during the long hunt!

They received requests from the residents in the Arpen Kingdom to clear dungeons and caves. He listened closely when receiving

requests from the residents.

“It isn’t necessary to worry about the future of the Arpen Kingdom. His Majesty is protecting us from the monsters.”

“This is the first time warriors have cleared the Holden Dungeon. I’m not surprised. Among them is our king, His Majesty! It is glorious.”

“The old man at the village entrance has been looking for their lost goods. Many people have tried but all failed. He finally found the goods for the old man. His Majesty King Weed is the one who accomplished it!”

Weed’s hunts and quests caused rumours among the residents. The dungeons were also unspoiled so quite a few treasures were kept there. In the past, monsters had plundered the Niflheim Empire so the riches were there for the first explorers to enjoy.

Weed’s sculpting proficiency slowly but steadily rose from advanced level 9.

After finishing his sculptures of Seo-yoon, the targets changed to Pale, Hwaryeong, Bellot, Irene and Romuna.

“There is no end to a women’s jealousy. When creating a sculpture, you need to praise even small and insignificant parts as pretty and charming.”

This was the philosophy of life that he naturally realized while living.

Bahamorg's breakthrough power in battle wasn't ordinary. Bahamorg's slashing technology was enough for him to even break through a boss class monster. The barbarian warrior Bahamorg! He had a knack for catching the attention of monsters with special presences. Sometimes monsters would attack just because they looked at him and felt threatened.

“My resilience and perseverance is soaring.”

Weed's level wasn't a problem. His skills and stats needed to grow evenly if he didn't want to run into a wall later.

“Bahamorg, I'm going to the front. Don't pay any regard to any monsters that attack me.”

“If that is what you want.”

Weed was attacked by a monster.

“The taste of hunting is good.”

His previously lukewarm feeling started heating up! Weed concentrated more on attack than defense. Before he didn't have any priests so he had to be careful about his health dropping to the floor in battle with monsters. But now he attacked intensely and slit the belly.

Bahamorg acted like he was only interested in his own battle but he shouted to attract monsters when Weed was at risk. This made it possible for the priests to treat him.

And Seulroeo's wedding ring! When his life was at stake, the ring could transfer health from his spouse. Of course, the wedding ring wouldn't work against really strong monsters but it was good when hunting became slightly dangerous.

Weed could also actively use the skills of a berserker. In the past he didn't fight this roughly because of Bahamorg. Weed originally liked battles like this.

He fought against the monsters desperately! This was to raise his stats and the proficiency of several skills.

“The King is great.”

The advantage of quests was that he could choose his rewards without needing a high intimacy. He was a person who explored the Jigolaths and defeated the Immortal Legion. But now he could meet many beginners while adventuring through the Arpen Kingdom.

There was a party of tense beginners walking on the plains. Weed gave them a warning.

“If you go forward then there is a group of starving hyenas.

Approximately 32 metres from here.”

He didn't say the exact number and Weed classified it by its leather, not the animal species. The hyena's leather could only be sold for a cheap price and they ran away really quickly which is why it didn't suit his tastes.

“Thank you. Would we be able to handle it?”

“If your level exceeds 65... They are in the early 60s.”

“Heok, not exactly....”

“I can understand just by looking at your equipment. One person is wearing chain armour and the others are wearing leather armour. Does the leather armour have an option to raise defense against a monster's teeth?”

The party he surprised was made up of 5 people. The party also agree with his assessment.

“If you go carefully then it is possible to hunt them. Just aim well and pay attention.”

“Thank you very much. You kindly informed us about this.”

“No. Everyone should help each other when living.”

Weed had ample reason for this. If they died then taxes would reduce so it was better for them to survive.

All the sculpting while hunting raised his proficiency to 61.5%. His Handicraft skill also reached 63.7% of advanced level 9. Cooking was 99% intermediate level 9, Blacksmithing advanced level 1 and Sewing reached intermediate level 7.

Even apart from his combat skills, his production skill was top notch.

“Is it necessary to raise sculpting proficiency to create the secret technique....”

Weed still hadn't decided despite all the hunting. He had a lot of greedy thoughts. His proficiency increased quickly from his sculptures of Seo-yoon so he needed to make a choice quickly. He needed a sculpting technique that would help with hunting.

While he was thinking about it, Weed realized that Seo-yoon hadn't declined any of his requests.

‘There have been many times when I received health from the wedding ring.’

As a berserker she could catch more monsters than Weed. But she didn't go ahead like Bahamorg. She watched and stayed still for a long time while Weed made the sculptures. Seo-yoon just watched his actions with bright eyes.

Weed was hoping for something so he asked her.

“I have a question.”

“.....?”

“If I took a loan would you be my guarantor?”

“.....”

This was a question that could definitely check her heart. In these days, you could tell the friends and brothers by whether they were willing to be guarantors.

‘She absolutely won’t accept.’

Seo-yoon nodded.

“You are willing to be a guarantor?”

“Yes. I can do that.”

“Um... Then what if I was in danger while hunting. Would you die instead of me?”

Seo-yoon nodded again. Her eyes answered like it was natural.

‘She also willingly died against Kubichya in the Jigolaths.’

Weed thought of an even greater sacrifice.

“What if I fall into a pyramid scheme?”

“I’ll buy you things.”

“If I need money for gambling?”

“I’ll give an account transfer.”

This was the ultimate form of affection in today’s society! Weed remembered an even more serious situation.

‘This one will be difficult to swallow.’

He paid attention to the answer that would emerge from her mouth.

“I’m in a lot of pain. I need a transplant... Would you give it?”

“.....”

A liver transplant wasn't a small operation. There was the transplant and recovery time required.

"I would."

"A bone marrow transplantation?"

"I'll give it to you."

Weed now knew the meaning of Seo-yoon's words.

"Although I won't always be there, a home for Bingryong, the wyverns and Yellowy.

"....."

Chapter 4: Battle Of Sisley Castle

While Weed was concentrating on hunting, time passed and the war between the Hermes Guild and Cloud Guild expanded.

It was a struggle that mobilized the full capacity of both guilds! The Hermes Guild contained the largest number of users and there were more high level users than the Cloud Guild. The soldiers of the Haven Kingdom were better trained than the Britten Alliance Kingdom and they had attacked violently in the early stages.

However many soldiers were needed to control an occupied area.

The current prosperity the Cloud Guild enjoyed wasn't just due to luck. They hired powerful mercenaries and guilds into an alliance with them to counterattack!

The Hermes Guild recorded their first defeat and the war became increasingly more intense. Grain fields were trampled by cavalry and villages were reduced to ashes.

The Hermes Guild and Cloud Guild fought on a large and small scale every day for pieces of land. The military of both sides was going to gather at Sisley Castle, an important place for military affairs and traffic in the Britten Alliance Kingdom.

If the Hermes Guild managed to make it surrender then 3 free cities would become their property. The Cloud Guild needed to use everything in their power to maintain it. The Hermes Guild

concentrated their troops here in order to make a decisive move. Victory or defeat could be decided by Sisley Castle so the broadcasting stations decided to do a live relay. It would decide the fate of the two kingdoms so the users of Royal Road had a lot of interest.

Weed also heard information about it from Pale's party.

The balance of power on the Versailles Continent would change on this day.

"Shall we drink a beer in a Morata tavern and watch Weed-nim?"

Pale asked him that the other day.

"Let's play together, yes?"

So far Weed had been busy in the dungeons while the Hermes Guild was waging their war. It wasn't strange for him to spend a whole day at a dungeon.

Weed asked Pale.

"Is the one who won Sisley Castle likely to win the whole war?"

"Yes. Maylon says that the scale of this battle is too large for the side that loses to recover. If the Cloud Guild wins then they will recover their lost territory and can increase their influence in the

Lasalle Kingdom.”

“If the Hermes Guild wins?”

“There is a high possibility that the Hermes Guild will win and then it will only be a matter of time until they eat the Britten Alliance Kingdom. That’s why the Cloud Guild has rallied all their troops. This is the key for victory so it is rather significant.”

A user would revive again one day after they died. But many of the high level users would lose a lot so they had a large fear of death. If a guild was defeated in a battle then they needed to psychologically recover in order to fight back.

Users could revive but the NPC troops would be wiped out. A lot of time and money was needed in order to purchase recruitment and training for wars. If the soldiers and knights died at the battle for Sisley Castle then it would be impossible to restore the damage short term.

Hwaryeong quietly showed her charm.

“Weed-nim, I’ll see you at the tavern. I’ll be bringing a fried chicken.”

Watching a crystal ball while having fried chicken and beer was the best feeling. People always gathered at taverns on days where important broadcasts about Royal Road were shown.

Weed shook his head.

“I don’t think the taverns are available.”

“Hyu.....”

Hwaryeong was disappointed. She regretted not being able to get a good night’s sleep!

One of the pleasures of Royal Road was to watch a battle in a city like Morata. In particular, many people liked relieving stress by cursing or saying bad things about the Hermes Guild.

Weed had a different plan.

“Many people will be gathered in the vicinity of Sisley Castle... Let’s go there and sell roasted chicken and squid.”

“Really!”

Hwaryeong’s eyes flashed at his words.

The facial expressions of Pale, Surka, Zephyr, Romuna and Bellot also changed. It was better to see the battle from a close place than through a crystal ball. They could ride the wyverns but it was convenient to use Yurin’s Picture Teleportation skill.



Besides the beautiful Luka River, a battle was occurring at Sisley Castle.

The Hermes Guild marched with a surprisingly large number of 310,000 troops.

Sisley Castle was a core military hub of the Britten Alliance Kingdom so many war preparations revolved around it.

There were broad plains for fighting in front of Sisley Castle but the Cloud Guild had firmly closed the gates. They decided to wait for the support army from Bermer to arrive. If the relief army arrived in the middle of the siege then it was possible to pincer attack the Hermes Guild.

“Selling peanuts.”

“I have squids. Merchant Yanson absolutely won’t lie about the quantity.”

“Cool drinks, wine and beer for sale! The quantity is limited so hurry.”

Spectators were on the hill overlooking Sisley Castle. This was a safe place to watch the war and they wouldn’t become involved if it spread to other areas of the Britten Alliance Kingdom. It was like people rushing to watch when a house caught on fire.

Weed's competitors had also come to engage in business.

“There is still room for trading.”

Weed had prepared carriages full of squid, peanuts, popcorn, whole chicken, beer and alcohol. He received a delivery directly from Mapan in the Britten Alliance Kingdom. There were enough ingredients to fill three carriages!

It was possible for him to earn money and to raise his cooking skill proficiency.

“Now, look at this torn chicken leg. I won't speak for a long time. 9 gold!”

This was an expensive strategy to differentiate himself from the surrounding people! He chose to sell delicious food at a more expensive price than other people in order to get a larger benefit. The high price would raise people's expectations and curiosity to eat it.

“Where is this smell coming from?”

“It is being sold over there. Shall we buy it to try?”

Weed waited for the war while engaged in business. There was an explosive atmosphere inside Sisley Castle's walls. It was an

atmosphere like arrows could go flying at any time!

“Weed-nim.”

“We’ve arrived!”

Hwaryeong, Bellot and Surka also arrived. They had come to the area in advance and set a time to connect.

“Kyah... How interesting.”

“I think it is rare to see a battle like this.”

“Yes. I don’t know when the next time will come again.”

They tried to do some war sightseeing but Weed rallied them to help with his cooking.

“Well I would appreciate the help. Here is an apron.”

Weed had even prepared the correct number of aprons beforehand. It was often difficult for cooks to engage in business in front of the battlefield.

“Really delicious.”

“Mister, when will the chicken wings be ready?”

Guests continuously made a line in front of Weed.

“Chicken wings are now 11 gold.”

“Why did you increase the price?”

“It is selling well. If you don’t like it then go somewhere else!”

“Completely despicable.”

“Thank you for the compliment.”

This was the face of a vicious merchant! He engaged in a brisk business as the war continued. There were many people who came to see the war between kingdoms so the high food price wasn’t a big problem.

Weed roasted fried chicken and recycled the oil. A procedure was needed because some customers were looking. He used the strategy of pouring another oil while quickly gathering the old oil!

Weed’s cooking skill was so high that everyone was too busy eating to notice his secret.

‘I will use it even if it is oil made last year.’

Pure animal lard. He was recycling it but there were no problems with his dishes.

Of course, his skill proficiency wouldn't grow that much just making fried chicken. If Weed cooked for himself then he wouldn't use the bad oil. While feeding families the minimum of good food, a restaurant business couldn't worry about their conscience!

“Come come! This is lightly roasted chicken and is also good for your health. The ingredients will soon run out so please order quickly!”

Weed was engaged in business while the suitable place to see Sisley Castle was overflowing with spectators.

The Hermes Guild were oppressive in other areas but they were generous about battle sightseeing. It was a strategy to induce fear by allowing people to watch their army.

“How wonderful.”

“I never get tired of watching the Hermes Guild fight. They really have an extravagant military.”

“Ah, there is the giant Knight Boemong.”

Knight Boemong symbolized the armed forces of the Hermes Guild. He was a member of Bardray's Royal Guards and his items indicated that he was over level 440. He was a barbarian so his

body was superior to other knights. He was much bigger than other knights so he easily stood out in a suit of armour.

Weed sold water to customers while nodding.

“He definitely looks strong. His equipment is also the best. I should quietly dispose of him if I meet him in a back alley.”

The Hermes Guild split their power and advanced towards Sisley Castle from two directions. Bardray commanded the troops that would cross the Luka River to intercept the relief army from the Cloud Guild.

Beomong took the mission of using siege weapons to capture Sisley Castle. He was a knight who didn't know how to wait patiently.

“Attack, all knights! Destroy the enemy who is resisting the Haven Kingdom's unification of the continent!”

The Hermes Guild launched an all-out attack!

“Wah, the war is starting.”

“Already?”

“It is getting exciting.”

Wheeled siege weapons moved forward as magic attacks flew towards them. There was black smoke coming from the tail of a fireball, ice spears, earth in the shape of a monster etc.

The Hermes Guild was expecting this so their magicians used protection magic around the siege weapons. Barriers made of wind, water or air were placed in front of the siege weapons.

The head-on collision of attack and defense magic! Fireworks unfolded in the sky as the land shook and there was a deafening roar. Some protective barriers were shattered and the siege weapons smashed apart.

The grandeur of a magic battle!

Taking into account the damage, the Hermes Guild still had 220 siege weapons mobilized. They had brought all the siege weapons that hadn't been used when attacking the Lasalle Kingdom here. It was essential to break the castle walls quickly so that the magic attacks would stop.

“Completely destroy the castle. Launch!”

“Shoot!”

The siege weapons fired large steel arrows towards Sisley Castle. In this situation, the magic defense was unable to intercept it and Sisley Castle's guard towers and castle walls were struck. As time passed, the beautiful scenery of Sisley Castle and Luka River

turned tragic as the walls crumbled from the siege weapons.

Weed's business also worsened because the spectators were distracted by the battle. The siege continued for 30 minutes then 1 hour until the flow of time was forgotten. But although the siege weapons' destructive power was strong, their durability was weak. The siege weapons started to break down after being used a few times.

“Advance!”

There was the long sound of a horn. The military of Haven Kingdom moved forward. The sky was covered with arrows as Sisley Castle fired. The Hermes Guild marched towards the gates while destroying monsters along the way.

“Wahhhh!”

“Let's go! Kill everyone!”

“For the glory of the Haven Kingdom!”

“Fight against the enemy of His Majesty King Bardray!”

The Haven Kingdom ran to the walls despite suffering arrow damage. They used a rope ladder to try and climb the walls. The high defensive walls meant the defense could fight in an advantageous position. The Hermes Guild chose the straightforward strategy of overwhelming with numbers despite

taking significant damage.

The Hermes Guild users earnestly attacked and magic flew relentlessly. There were level 300s and 400s on the battlefield so there were many deaths as users duelled.

“There are many dying.”

Weed was satisfied watching the battlefield after the customers became sparse.

Users that were the people’s icon in rural villages were behind the walls but unfortunately they also died from the siege weapons. In the past, users who were performers really struggled but there was now a large popularity among the population due to Morata. These days users were recognized as the powerhouses on the Versailles Continent. Weed could now see these users dying in this war.

“This is a good thing.”

They were bleeding each other in this war. It was okay for the winning side but the losing side would perish.

“Kyaah! Did you see that magic just now?”

“Yes. Hundreds of people were swallowed by a whirlwind of fire.”

“This is really a jackpot.”

“The big dust on the other side.....”

“There is something over there.”

The people watching from the hill could feel the excitement of the battlefield. A war wasn't good from the position of the general users but there was something about the sight that made their chests pound.

The Haven Kingdom army marched across the plains through arrows and magic attacks. A battle spread underneath Sisley Castle as soldiers crept up the castle wall.

“Put out the fire!”

“Fight against the enemies. Don't permit anyone to escape.”

Fire occurred due to magic and elementals but the Haven Kingdom put out the flames so violently that they never spread.

“It would be nice if everyone dies.....”

While Weed eagerly watched the fight, the Haven Kingdom blew the horn. The troops that were flocking towards the walls stopped in place. The battle on the walls was still going on but the

reinforcements suddenly stopped.

“Eh.”

“Why are they doing this when they’re having trouble capturing the walls?”

The onlookers couldn’t help but find it strange. The walls of Sisley Castle were high and thick so it was impossible to easily capture it. However the Haven Kingdom army was too strong to give up so easily.

“There is something.”

Weed sensed that something wasn’t ordinary.

Then a person wearing a black robe from the Hermes Guild walked forward.

“Krobidyun!”

The necromancer that assisted Bardray at Melbourne Mine! Presently Krobidyun could even summon the difficult Doom Knight. The Hermes Guild helped by giving unusual items and excellent hunting grounds. Krobidyun rose from the middle place to a high rank thanks to his skill as a necromancer. He put quite a lot of effort into changing classes from a magician to a necromancer.

Krobidyun's eerie voice spread through the battlefield.

“Rise. Come back to the land you used to live in. This is a dark place. It is a black and corrupt land. Help spread the laws of darkness. Undead Rise!”

A battle had spread in front of Sisley Castle. The corpses of the high level users stiffened and they become the undead. Quite a few skeletons rose. The quality of the corpses was good so a crowd of zombies walked forward with a crowd of flies around them.

“Kill everything!”

The undead marched underneath Sisley Castle.

Meanwhile the Hermes Guild who had been repairing their siege weapons started firing them again.

The undead were hit by Sisley Castle's defences but kept on attacking. The power of the undead was that they could bear through any attack without collapsing in order to take the walls.

Weed felt his blood boil.

“If I was there... How unfortunate.”

Hermes and Cloud Guild!

They were prestigious guilds on the continent and users would flock to both sides after only hearing the names. There were many main characters of adventures mixed in among the fighting. But Weed was able to calmly grasp their abilities.

“If I was fighting there....”

Sculpture Transformation would be indispensable. A chaos warrior would be strong but a necromancer would also be good. If he wore Barkhan’s full set then he could raise an unlimited number of corpses! The dark aura would also strengthen the undead. This would wreak absolute havoc in a war.

The Copper Plate of Eternal Rest would strengthen the undead but it only had 1 durability left. He had also gained a lot of battle experience as a necromancer while participating in the Barkhan Immortal Legion quest. Sculpture Transformation and the Power to Reject Death meant there wasn’t a necromancer stronger than Weed on the continent.

“This really stirs my interest.”

He wouldn’t be hurt no matter how many regular soldiers were present. Priests who could use holy power or mithril weapons would be a problem but he could tell Bahamorg to protect him. Then a true necromancer’s battle would occur.

While Weed had an intense look, the users watching the Sisley Castle battle became enthusiastic.

“I have to sell chicken legs.”

It was inconvenient but he couldn't leave for the battlefield. His hands and feet became itchy as he watched the fight.

As Krobidyun endlessly summoned undead without anyone restricting him, they continued repairing and launching the siege weapons!

Sisley Castle was forced to waste their arrows that were precious resources and the magicians and priests consumed their mana.

Krobidyun was a great magician that reached level 449.

“Mana Drain.”

“Noble Sacrifice!”

He absorbed the health and mana of wounded soldiers. Many undead were destroyed due to the defense striking back. But there were many bodies strewn on the ground.

The Haven Kingdom had no doubt that the defenders would eventually become tired. The siege weapons targeting Sisley Castle was the large problem for the Cloud Guild. There was also Krobidyun who demonstrated the terrible power of a necromancer.

“This reminds me of when Weed-nim fought against the Bone Dragon.”

“It seems so. It was also brought to an end like this.”

The crowd was having similar thoughts. It was the battle where Weed played an active role as a necromancer.

Finally the gates were opened and troops rushed out in order to break the siege weapons. The knights were at the front with the infantry in the rear.

“Let’s go. We will defend the Britten Alliance Kingdom.”

“We will break the Haven Kingdom’s ambition here. We can’t afford to hand them even one bit of land!”

The infantry marched in unison but they already seemed that they were on the verge of defeat. It was because they hadn’t done any damage to the Haven Kingdom so far. The various battles were too easy from the viewpoint of the Hermes Guild. They hadn’t even moved their knight corps.

“Change the goal and beat them!”

The defense army charged towards the siege weapons firing at Sisley Castle.

“Now smash the siege weapons!”

The knights had been kept back at the expense of the infantry so the Hermes Guild had obviously expected this tactic.

Many preparations had been arranged before the attack on Sisley Castle. Right now the enemy's response was within the Hermes Guild's expectations.

The waiting magic and attack from the Hermes Guild harmed the advancing knights. While the defense line broke through by force and destroyed half the siege weapons, their retreat was blocked off and the knights defeated!

A considerable portion of the troops and walls were destroyed before a white flag was flown from Sisley Castle. A famous fortress on the continent was occupied in only one day.

The Hermes Guild used a brutal approach to any opposition within the territory. After the gates were destroyed and the military entered, the defenders and any residents who didn't give up were killed. Even general users were stabbed to death!

Rumours of the Hermes Guild's cruelty went around and the residents' morale and loyalty became extremely low. The Hermes Guild was infamous so there would be many adverse problems with internal affairs in occupied areas. But there was a profitable area to the war process.

“We should leave Sisley Castle before evening.”

“It will take a long time for the entire Haven Kingdom army to enter.”

“Look at the land that is near the collapsed walls. That is a really reckless attack power.”

“The rich really are different. Bringing that many expensive siege weapons.....”

The spectators watching the battle were simultaneously admiring and aghast. The potential of the Hermes Guild was once again recognized.

“There is news that Bardray’s troops have destroyed the Cloud Guild’s reinforcements.”

“What, already?”

“Doing so much damage to the Cloud Guild is really amazing.”

The Hermes Guild occupied Sisley Castle and received the 3 free cities.

A free city was the base of trade and production so it possessed a vast population. The influence of the Cloud Guild in the Britten

Alliance Kingdom reduced and the Hermes Guild took their spot.



The Hermes Guild made a proclamation a few days later.

The Haven Kingdom, Kallamore Kingdom, Lasalle Kingdom and the Britten Alliance Kingdom would be the start of the Haven Empire. The territory, population, economic power and external influence were sufficient to call it an empire. The Haven Kingdom would act as the centre under the lead of the Hermes Guild.

“Ah, I really don’t like it.”

“Bad luck is dripping.”

“The chewed meat doesn’t taste good.”

There were many who didn’t like the news from the Hermes Guild. The entire continent was becoming overrun by the Haven Kingdom. They were also jealous that an empire had appeared.

In addition, the guild leader Lafaye had announced that they would be stopping the war.

The peace-loving Hermes Guild has the Lasalle Kingdom threatened by the Embinyu Church so the future is unknown.

We have made the difficult decision to stop the conflict and stabilize the Lasalle Kingdom. When looking closely, there are many users in the Lasalle Kingdom who have gone through much suffering.

We also needed to correct the large number of evil deeds the Cloud Guild committed in the Britten Alliance Kingdom.

But the Hermes Guild halting the war just increased insecurity and discomfort. The Hermes Guild didn't make a promise that they would stop trying to secure territory.

And the Haven Empire would aggressively act to prevent confusion from spreading in the Lasalle Kingdom. The free cities and castles in the Britten Alliance Kingdom were occupied so managing them would cause further prosperity.

It was an unexpected victory declaration!

Even the Cloud Guild was puzzled about the reason. They had a relationship that could be expressed as enemies. The Hermes Guild had only won 1/3rd of the Britten Alliance Kingdom yet they stopped their war.

Anyway, now peace had come so many users in the Britten Alliance Kingdom welcomed it.



Yoo Byung-jin drank hot chocolate and watched the Hermes Guild's announcement on the monitor. And he really admired Lafaye.

“The Lasalle Kingdom and Britten Alliance Kingdom are prey that is too large to eat. They are bound to over-eat. Even if they achieve victory, it won't be easy to exert control over it.”

Their scheme was to take a delicious bite of the Britten Alliance Kingdom! If they occupied everything then the Hermes Guild's territory would become too wide. Rebel and resistance armies would run wild and internal affairs would become difficult. The declaration and unexpected end to the aggressive war made other powers feel a sense of crisis and they would prepare sensitive measures.

Of course, there were simple people who believed the Hermes Guild's announcement but many more doubted it. They wouldn't end the war of aggression because of the Embinyu Church or other excuses.

The competitors were cautious of the Hermes Guild's ability. But it was effective on them.

A huge guild tried to stomp out the fire and ended up disappearing in vain. They needed to make sacrifices in order to prevent the Hermes Guild from expanding its empire.

Meanwhile the Hermes Guild would use the time to strengthen and train their armed forces in the Lasalle Kingdom and the free

cities. They also secretly expanded their conquest war in the Tullen Kingdom through the Beden Guild. The Hermes Guild already had one foot in the Britten Alliance Kingdom so their influence would gradually spread.

Not only did the war bring in territory, it also brought quite a few high level users. The Cloud Guild lost massive amounts of territory so they couldn't be one of the prestigious guilds anymore. It was possible for the Hermes Guild to absorb some users from the weakened guild.

The Hermes Guild had a large greed so they really collected many things in a short amount of time.

“That person is very smart. He knew it wouldn't be easy to control so he backed down. He really is greedy.”

The military in the Haven and Kallamore Kingdoms were still continuing their training. If the present situation and preparations were examined, it was clear they planned to expand to the whole continent. When they were ready then they would declare war and no one would be able to stop the Hermes Guild.

Yoo Byung-jin remembered Weed every time he drank hot chocolate.

The God of War. He was a legend in Royal Road and the people's hero. But the situation around Weed was rapidly deteriorating. The Hermes Guild's powerful army of well trained and high level users was going to take over the entire continent.

An astronomical amount of power would be given to the first emperor who unified the entire continent. This was a promise from Unicorn Corporation and what Bardray and the Hermes Guild were aiming for.

Yoo Byung-jin played a large role in the continent being devastated by war.

“How far can they go? They will either climb up the cliff or be forced to quit. The Hermes Guild and the Embinyu Church is becoming increasingly bigger. The continent’s history will change depending on who wins.”

Chapter 5: Dark Gamer's Fate

Aren Castle of the Haven Empire.

A vast amount of construction work was being done on the grounds of Emperor's Palace. Bardray had decided to build a luxurious palace instead of granaries.

“Gather the artists and architects.”

In the meantime, the Hermes Guild had been stingy towards the arts.

After Weed had started sculpting, many sculptors had been strategically raised in the guild. However the sculptures they produced were just like the ancient art excavated. The support for painters and sculptors disappeared and the artists increasingly left the Haven Kingdom.

But their presence was necessary for the Emperor's Palace.

“The Imperial Palace will compulsorily raise the residents' loyalty so we can increase taxes by 2%.”

“Send all the soldiers that surrendered in the war to the mines.”

Lafaye had a leadership meeting to discuss various ideas intended

to squeeze the inhabitants of the Empire.

A war victory commemoration tax.

Imperial Palace construction tax.

Special tax for the maintenance of facilities for Aren Castle.

Tax for the military marching through the city.

Special tax for territory expansion.

If Weed heard this then he would be beating his knees with admiration.

“Quite a few dwarves live in the Lasalle Kingdom. We should catch them and make them work as slaves.”

“There are riots in some of the occupied areas. Suppressing it won’t be a problem but security will lower and the Embinyu Church will spread.”

The Haven Empire had received damage and the Embinyu Church was spreading like wildfire. But the top level leaders in the Hermes Guild wasn’t worried about that.

The people converted to the Embinyu Church were poor and the

Hermes Guild was confident they could defeat them if the Embinyu Church declared war. Of course, new taxes would be necessary for a war with the Embinyu Church.

The Hermes Guild intended to completely conquer the continent so they needed to maintain a strict military.



“Those bad guys.”

Weed instinctively cursed after hearing that the Hermes Guild intended to stop the war. He instantly sensed something strange.

“They have an ulterior motive. Anyway, they are bad guys so there is no way to believe them.”

One philosopher’s theory was that human nature was fundamentally evil!

Weed continued to grow while fighting with Bahamorg and Seo-yoon. He made luxurious dishes from ingredients obtained in dungeons and his cooking skill finally reached advanced.

-Your intermediate cooking skill has reached level 10 and changed to advanced.

It is possible to minimize the side effects when dealing with

tricky ingredients, pickled food and fermented food.

You can dramatically increase the shelf life of the food.

Professional cooking can be produced.

All stats will increase by 20 points.

He could now be called a cook. It was possible for him to live even if he only toasted bread in some cities. All the work in the early stages was now worth it. But Weed still had misgivings about his future.

“I don’t have a full pension or one of the 4 major insurances. If I quit my job then I won’t get a severance pay.”

He was earning money now but the future was unknown. He wasn’t insecure like many other freelancers.

There was a post written on the Dark Gamers bulletin board that had the viewpoint echo with him.

Title: I will try to get married.

I have been associated with a woman I love for 3 years.

Yesterday I greeted my father in law. And now I’m crying. My

girlfriend is fine but the one I can't bear is myself. I want to share a short story between my father in law and I.

“Yes, you are doing something now.”

“Yes, fathers in law. Do you know something call Royal Road?”

“I know it! Every day the newspaper and television is talking about the hottest company called the Unicorn Corporation. Don't they earn enormous profit every year? I can't imagine the welfare benefits received by the employees of Unicorn Corporation. My Hyo-sun has met a man like that.”

“No. I'm not an employee but someone who finds items in Royal Road and sell them for money.”

“.....Yes, have you gathered a little money?”

“A little.”

“How much?”

“If I dispose of the equipment I'm currently wearing then I can get enough for a house deposit. That's because the price for this set has been recently rising in the auction.”

“.....”

“.....”

“You won’t bring Hyo-sun any suffering?”

“Yes. I will eagerly enter the Royal Road capsule for 18 hours every day.”

“.....”

I didn’t go beyond high school. Do you know this sorrow?

He couldn’t help empathizing with the Dark Gamer’s story. It was a service industry but it was too early to reveal it to the world. There was no job stability, fixed income or welfare benefits.

Furthermore, the Hermes Guild’s expansion was a huge threat. There were other users that felt burdened by the Hermes Guild but the pressure towards Weed as King of the Arpen Kingdom was larger.

Even if Weed became the Master Sculptor first, it wouldn’t be significant if Bardray and the Hermes Guild unified the Central Continent. The troops of the Haven Empire would come to the north for the Arpen Kingdom. The buildings that Weed had invested large amounts of money in would be taken over by the Hermes Guild.

Weed had to put that to one side in his mind.

“The resentment would be enough to make me go to hospital.”

If he became the first class master then there would be a lot of attention from the broadcasting stations. Weed wasn't in a situation where he could worry about that.

“Arpen Kingdom is my rice bowl.”

Weed had an attachment to his particular rice bowl. He couldn't let some neighbourhood dogs eat his rice bowl!

“I need to find a way to protect my rice bowl.”

He needed to protect the Arpen Kingdom from every type of threat.

“I need to ask Teacher-nim and the Sa-hyungs.”

Originally he wanted to give the difficult tasks to people he was close to. They would do it if he offered them cooked meat and alcohol. But no matter how strong the Geomchis were, they would be limited in large scale wars with intense magic attacks. They were lacking a lot.

“If I collect the sculptural lifeforms races then I can make them work.”

He intended to overcome the situation with exploitation.

Weed wanted to win but he couldn't face the Hermes Guild at this moment. It would take a considerable amount of time to meet the sculptural lifeforms and to build intimacy and achievements.

If they weren't a race related to battle then they wouldn't be useful. They would be useful to the growth of the Arpen Kingdom in the long run but there was a threat in the short term.

"I need to train the army to protect the kingdom. But they are fighting monsters at this level... Even if I invest time and money, it won't be enough to thwart the Haven Empire."

He couldn't find a way to deal with the Haven Empire despite thinking of several possibilities. That's because conquering the cities already developed in the Central Continent was faster than gradually developing one.

"When looking at it calmly, I'm not better than them in any areas. My kingdom's population and development can't compare to them, let alone my military. If a war spreads then I won't win."

When considering the future, it was a reasonable judgement to give up on the Arpen Kingdom now. There was no other forces on the Central Continent that could keep up with the Hermes Guild. The population and military power was so large then it would be hard for the 5 large guilds to oppose them.

“I need to make something to win.....”

Weed looked back at the things he had.

He had the abilities of Bingryong, Yellowy, Phoenix and the other sculptural lifeforms from the Jigolaths. They would have amazing power if they continued growing for 2~3 years but that didn't mean the war would be won. The problem wouldn't be resolved even if Goldman offered bribery.

“There is still a chance to do something with sculpting. I haven't created my own skills. And there is the final secret sculpting technique from the legend.”

After learning Sculptural Life Bestowal, Sculpture Transformation, Sculpting Blade, Disaster Sculpting and Elemental Creation then Weed could learn the final secret sculpting technique.

He dreamt many times about an extravagant skill while sleeping at night.

“Perhaps the last secret technique can make a sculpture that will curse a target or... Something that can express the beauty of a sculpture... Or something that can raise the abilities of my sculptural lifeforms.”

He had a variety of concerns and expectations. He couldn't guess what the sculpting technique could possibly be despite looking at

the past. The secret sculpting technique could make his fighting abilities rise but it might not. Anyway, the situation on the continent was unstable so Weed had to make a decision.

“I just need to raise my skill proficiency and the Class Master Quest will be over. I don’t know whether to learn the skill or create sculptures to complete the quest. If I challenge the last secret technique then.....”

If he found the last sculpture then Weed could challenge the secret technique.

“If I learn the last secret technique later then it might be too late.”

He decided to hope on finding the last sculpture. The future could change depending on what type of technique would emerge.

“If a skill that transcends imagination emerges then I can fight the Hermes Guild. Maybe other people will fight against them as well. And if the skill isn’t that much.....”

It was the final secret sculpting technique.

“I’ll kneel down and surrender right away.”

Weed decided not to postpone the final secret sculpting technique. He would continue raising his skill proficiency while hunting but acquiring the final secret technique was the priority.

“I don’t know how difficult it will be so I need to adapt to the situation.”

He was betting the game on the final secret technique. Weed decided to challenge it despite the uneasy situation on the continent.

“Someday I might regret this decision.”

His fate was to repeatedly go on large adventures despite his desire to live a long life.



Weed had made a large number of sculptures on the continent. They were sold to people or pieces carved on walls and rocks.

“This is... A piece of work.”

It was of a birdman with its tail split in two! Weed discovered a sculpture he left behind while travelling.

“It is a good sculpture. The skill is worth being called an excellent sculptor.”

He thought of something before talking again.

“We’ll meet again.”

It wasn’t just the birdman.

In the meantime he had carved many great sculptures. He had spread his mark throughout the continent.

Other than those carved in rocks and trees, a significant amount had been spread through sales. The sculptures were continuously traded between users and scattered everywhere. If there weren’t any special options then they would give it to the residents to increase intimacy. Some also lost sculptures if they died in a dungeon hunt and they would be left there.

Such sculptures were marks of Weed.

“My skills are still lacking.”

“I’ve managed to obtain a piece from Weed.”

Some sculptural lifeforms in distant places found works made from Weed. These sculptural lifeforms decided to retire after the Arpen Empire collapsed. They would rather live with each other than humans.

And quite a few sculptural lifeforms had become extinct. The remaining lifeforms either became angry monsters or hid

themselves. Some would remain sleeping unless a sculptor woke them up directly.

Even if Weed explored many places on the continent, the sculptural lifeforms were hidden in deep places. He didn't even find any sculptural lifeforms deep in the Jigolaths volcanoes.

“A sculptor came here not long ago.”

“What is this? I want to meet the sculptor.”

“He also gave me life.”

The 8th generation head of the Sculptor's Guild had created a magnum opus. It had lived a quiet life at the tower in the Jigolaths until granted life by Weed. The sculptural lifeforms would talk about Weed whenever they encountered others. Many of Weed's sculptures were scattered across the whole continent.

“I want to know the personality of the sculptor.”

“I didn't meet him for a long time but he seemed stingy.”



Bardray made time for hunting even when the wall was ongoing. He could hunt more efficiently with the support of the guild and he missed the Haven Empire's victory celebration banquet to go

hunting.

“The attack skills are fairly good.”

Bardray was currently at a place with many monsters. They were mole like monsters with thorns on their body that would pop up from the ground of the dungeon.

Monsters up to level 500! Their health was high and the skin as hard as steel so he suffered damage from the thorns every time they popped up. Bardray utilized the one point attack Weed showed while hunting with the Royal Guards.

“He is becoming increasingly stronger.”

“As expected from the Bardray-nim.”

The one point attack method surpassed the high defense of the monsters. Bardray was very successful in using in using this new attack method. He was astounded by the destructive force of the one point attack.

Bardray spent a lot of time hunting with others and didn't even take a break to wait for the monsters.

If it was Weed then he would carve sculptures and recover health while waiting for monsters to appear. But Bardray didn't know any art or sculpting skills and could only grow in battle.

Instead he slept in the middle of every hunt. Sleep would make health and vitality recover faster than usual. Even though the battle might last longer, sleeping in the middle of every hunt actually reduced the time required for him to sleep.



“They’re all collapsed.”

Bardray stood alone at the base of a mountain.

They continued pushing to unify the empire and the Haven Empire fell to pieces. Bardray couldn’t match up to Weed’s glory. He could hardly imitate Weed’s command style and combat method.

“Huhuhu, I’m relieved. This is something that I’ve been pushing towards.”

Bardray felt a light feeling. For a long time he had been faithful to the Hermes Guild and everything ended up in the hands of the greedy guild.

That was the regret. A man needed to have a goal to challenge. And that dream was broken so now his shoulders felt lighter.

He could start from the ground up again.

“I have to adventure and do requests.”

Bardray wanted to travel the continent and quietly enjoy his life. He could fully enjoy the taste of the Versailles Continent after disbanding the Hermes Guild.

There was a person slowly walking towards Bardray.

Weed the God of War. Currently he had tremendous power and appeared as the new ruler of the Versailles Continent. The Death Knight Van Hawk and Vampire Lord Torido that he often saw in Weed's vicinity were there as well.

“Where will you go?”

Weed said in a low, threatening voice. The atmosphere made him feel like an existence impossible to despise.

“I will now live quietly. I admit my defeat.”

Bardray confessed with a clean spirit. No matter how much effort he made, it was impossible to catch up with Weed. The Hermes Guild had been crushed so they weren't even opponents any more.

Weed shook his head.

“I can't let you go.”

“Then.....”

Bardray already had those expectations. He had the ability to take control of the continent. Weed and his colleagues wouldn't let him get that chance.

‘That chance can occur again. And if I raise the power.....’

Ambition kindled inside him. But Weed trampled on his imagination.

“The equipment you're wearing is pretty good.”

“Then.....”

“I will snatch it after I kill you.”

Sururung.

Weed drew his sword.



“Heeok.”

Bardray opened his eyes. The bodies of the Royal Guards were resting in front of him.

‘It was a dream.’

Bardray arranged his spirit while breathing deeply. Even if they were the Royal Guards that he spent a lot of time with, he didn’t want to tell them his nightmare. He always needed to look strong in front of them.

It wasn’t just today but he had similar dreams many times.

‘Haven’t I dreamt of defeating him since my time in Continent of Magic?’

It had affected him psychologically. Weed hadn’t even remembered him. But he couldn’t think about the past right now.

‘My competitors in Royal Road.....’

There was the Roam Guild, Lion Star Guild and Black Sword Mercenaries. They were weaker than the Hermes Guild in every area.

Bardray felt like he could win even if he fought with their leaders personally. Bardray’s level, combat skills and tricks were much stronger than them. If the continent occupation plan went as planned then he would meet them.

There wasn't much time left.

'Weed is incomprehensible.....'

Weed was always mysterious to him.

He never heard that name in the early days of Royal Road. Yet he was suddenly chased by a brilliant figure at a scary speed. Weed had completed impossible quests without the support of any other forces. He had the qualities of a great adventurer but the Bardray ruled the Hermes Guild so there was no need for him to worry.

There was a considerable amount of lords on the continent with no room for Weed. However he had managed to set up a kingdom in the north where hardly anyone lived.

His combat abilities also couldn't be ignored. His level was low in the early days but Weed was able to compete with him in the Melbourne Mine.

Weed was definitely different from other people. Just like a weed, he seemed to become more terrifying over time.

He was a target that Bardray had to win over!

'Obviously I will meet him again.'

Bardray was waiting for that moment. He had used the one point attack method Weed utilized in order to complement his weak point.

‘Maybe that dream.....’

Bardray decided to accept this minor fear. The path to conquer the Versailles Continent is fun. So far it was progressing as planned.

‘I will thoroughly stomp on him when I meet him next time. I won’t let him run amok.....’

Chapter 6: Hummingbird's Journey

Weed met with the sculptural lifeforms that became annoyed with him during the time he hunted with Bahamorg.

Goldman was drawing graffiti on the ground while Yellowy was ploughing the field. The wound on their heart was big so they wouldn't commit any actions. The wyverns, Silver Bird, Golden Bird and Bingryong were exploring the sights.

“Cough, you were suffering so I gave you a holiday. Haven't you rested a lot in the meantime?”

“Gol gol gol. I don't want to talk.”

“Ummooooooooo.”

Yellowy didn't even turn his head. He had been hurt by Weed in the meantime. He couldn't compare to Bahamorg's fighting skill and had been given the tedious and demeaning task of working in the field.

More than anything else, the sculptural lifeforms were hurt that they had been discarded by their master. His visit and pampering behaviour meant that Weed wanted to make them work soon!

Weed nodded as if he knew everything.

“I’ll give you something to eat.”

“Gol gol gol, I won’t move for food.”

“Ummoooooooo. Absolutely not.”

The wyverns, Bingryong and Phoenix didn’t just look from a distance. It was decided in advance that Goldman and Yellowy would be talking to Weed. The sculptures given life in the Jigolaths hadn’t become bored enough for complaints.

Weed spoke softly like he was hurt.

“I can’t believe you would think that I deserted you. Goldman, don’t you know what type of heart I have to give life to you twice? I always thought of you the moment we parted.”

“Gol gol gol.....”

“Yellowy, I will fix the barn of your calves.”

“Ummoooooooo!”

He was able to recover their relationship with past memories and promises of housing. Bingryong and the wyverns also received a generous bundle of food.

“This family atmosphere.”

And Weed was able to show the final result to Bahamorg.



“A radiant beauty. I need to go to Rhodium the City of Artists in order to receive the quest for the final secret technique.”

Weed also visited the city of beggars! It was a paradise for those of the production classes like sculptors, artists and architects.

Rhodium also had a long history associated with sculpting. In the past it was a village where the sunset was so beautiful that painters and sculptors gathered to live there. The works of art they created were sold to the entire continent.

The spot where the stone sculptures were created in the early days became the glory of Rhodium! This was just behind the Sculptor’s Guild.

“I can’t fail....”

Weed was uneasy so he decided to bring Bahamorg and Seo-yoon. He also gave the order for the other sculpture lifeforms to come as quickly as possible.

“Then the arrival spot is Rhodium Square.”

Yurin came and painted a picture for teleportation.

Fortunately Rhodium was safe from the Central Continent war and suffered no damage. None of the prestigious guilds or lords valued the arts. The tax income was small and a lot of money was needed to maintain the peace. There was no point in occupying the city and the armies even avoided it on purpose.



“Aigoo... Please come here.”

“Just a little penny.....”

“Hey, you’re in a similar situation to us!”

As expected, they were welcomed by users begging in Rhodium Square! That’s why Weed had changed to his dirty beginners clothes. Bahamorg and Seo-yoon also wore common deer leather so they could sneak away.

“The people here seem to have decreased.”

Weed felt like the number of users had decreased since they last time he came.

At that time sculpting had been in the midst of its popularity. It

had been the golden age for sculpting after the pyramid construction! But it was difficult, the money wasn't a lot and it was tedious so the number of users selecting sculpting as a job decreased.

Many also left Rhodium to gain art inspiration from Morata. Originally users would prepare basic materials in Rhodium before moving around the continent to work.

“I'm going to the Sculptor's Guild.”

Weed felt uneasy. He really hoped that the final sculpting technique wasn't useless.

‘If it is something like Sculpture Transformation or Great Disaster Nature Sculpting... It would be good.’

There was also a high possibility that it would be something like King Belsos' Elemental Creation. Sculpting Blade was something that even a weak sculptor could raise well.

He worried that the final technique would be something purely related to art. It was the reason why he didn't feel comfortable coming to Rhodium.

‘I need to firm up my heart. Even if the city gas charges increased, I could withstand the warm winter by firming up my mind.’

Weed opened the door of the Sculptor’s Guild and entered inside.



“It would be good if I could slash a tree and eat the tree worms.”

“The trees near the beach are good.”

The Sculptor’s Guild was filled with novices. They were discussing methods to obtain materials for sculpting.

‘Tsk tsk, you should just pick anything up and use it....’

Sculptors inevitably became sensitive about the ingredients they used for their work. Yet it wasn’t possible to make sculptures if they questioned their material too closely. This was the secret to how Weed managed to sell an excessive amount of sculptures as a beginner!

Weed walked past the other sculptors in the guild. Seo-yoon and Bahamorg came along with him. He didn’t need to meet a sculpting instructor so there was no need for him to explore the guild.

At the back door behind the Sculptor’s Guild! This was a place with historical significance to Rhodium so it had guards blocking the door.

“What do you want?”

“I’m trying to enter there.”

“...You are qualified enough. You can enter.”

The guards stepped aside. In order to enter the glorious place, an artist needed to reach advanced sculpting or be recognized by nobles. Otherwise the price of admission was 200 gold!

Weed was allowed to enter for free.

The door opened and brightly shining stone sculptures could be seen.

-You have appreciated Rhodium’s sculpture, Stellar Tear.

This is a work where the sculptor expressed the beauty of the night sky.

Art stat has increased by 13.

Your skill proficiency has risen slightly from observing an excellent sculptor.

He heard the rumours but it was a really beautiful place. It was a place made from a piece of meteor that fell and decorated by Rhodium sculptors. More than thousands of sculptures glowed at night to form a night sky.

Weed wasn't a normal sculptor so he could immediately see the greatness of this work despite it being daytime.

“The amount of labour involved in this!”

While others would purely see the art, he could see the spirit that dwelled inside it. He knew how hard it would be to make thousands of stars from sculptures. If the work was seen in the day then it would just be a pile of stones. The architects even built the tower to clearly show 13 constellations.

It was a landmark in Royal Road that couples were always eager to visit! Dozens of users spend money to eat lunch here. At night a bunch of people would gather to chat and watch the stars.

Weed walked to the centre of the Stellar Tear.

It wasn't night time yet the Stellar Tear started to shine with light. The light spread over Weed everywhere it walked like it was welcoming him.

“It is similar to the neighbourhood taverns.”

It was an extremely realistic feeling! There was an old person in the centre of the Stellar Tear with so many wrinkles on their face that it was difficult to tell their age.

“Come quickly. Since the Stellar Tear is welcoming you, a person who knows Moonlight Sculpting has come.”

“I want to know a way to express radiant beauty.”

“Rhodium has existed for hundreds of years and I finally found someone to speak to about radiant beauty.”

Tears dripped from his eyes as the old man looked at Weed. The step to get the last secret sculpting technique started as an encounter with the old man.

Two of the stars around him emitted an absolutely brilliant light. The couples there were confused about the sudden incident. They didn't realize that this was the moment the secret technique storyline started.

The old man only had one simple request. His talk was easy to understand but it was so slow that a yawn would come out.

“Do you want to hear the story about radiant beauty?”

“Of course.”

“I want to go back to when I heard about the radiant beauty. Can I do that?”

Ddiring!

-This is the 'Radiant Beauty' quest that will lead to the final sculpting secret technique and cannot be cancelled in the middle.

And if you fail in the process then you won't get this chance again forever.

Nevertheless, do you want to continue?

"I would like to hear about the radiant beauty."

-You are moving forward on the final secret sculpting technique quest.

The request related to the radiant beauty is classified as separate from any existing quests.

This will have no effect on the quest restriction limit.

-Fame has increased by 3,500.

"This is talk I heard a long time ago. This is a legend about sculpting passed down through the mouths of the people. I don't know about the feasibility. Almost no one believed the story."

Weed started to feel uneasy.

“I would still like to hear it.”

“Long ago, there was a lot of discussion among the sculptors of the continent. Then I’ll tell you the subject of the discussion. What is needed to make a truly beautiful sculpture?”

“.....”

Was the final secret technique really purely related to the arts? Weed shuddered at the thought. He would only be able to cover the Versailles Continent in pure works of art. The Hermes Guild would wreck everything.

“Over the hundreds of years, sculptors had pondered about the idea of beauty. That’s how I came to a conclusion about how to create the most beautiful sculpture on the continent. I think that exploring many places will allow a proper insight.”

“It seems so.”

Travel would broaden a person’s horizons. It was quite a good experience to travel before doing any work.

“There are places that human feet can’t reach on the continent. There are dangerous places that can even trap the wind.”

Ddirring!

-You have acquired information about the Endless Nijel Caves.

There seeme to be some big secret there that no one else knows. It isn't possible for the wind to come back or even curious fairies that entered to return.

“You won't be able to enter a place that even traps wind. No matter how curious you are, you wouldn't be able to go there. Anyway, you'll need fast feet to see many places on this continent. And you should use your sculptor's gift to become safe from dangerous monsters. I came to the conclusion that a hummingbird is the best method for travelling the continent.”

Fortunately he obtained information about the Endless Nijel Caves and about the quest. Weed continued listening.

“A hummingbird can fly to many places on the continent that a horse wouldn't be able to reach in dozens of days. Neither hills or clouds would become an obstacle. Of course, such a thing is impossible but if you carve a sculpture... If I see you within the next few weeks then I will continue talking about radiant beauty.”

The hummingbird was the smallest of birds. But it was a mysterious bird. If it flapped its wings quickly then it could stall in the air. The pointy beak could take nectar from flowers like butterflies and it had shiny feathers. The hummingbird could travel long distances at a speed that transcended imagination and was a symbol of good luck among travellers.

Ddiring!

-Hummingbird's Journey

Become a hummingbird and travel the continent for 12 days looking for the best beauty.

Explore a wide range of places before returning.

You can gain experience and skill proficiency as you travel to many places and extract pollen.

If you finish the hummingbird's journey and return then the next quest will start.

Level of Difficulty: Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: Sculpture Transformation is required.

Sculpture Transformation cannot be turned off in the middle of the quest.

The quest will fail if you die.

A hummingbird was small and very quick but vulnerable to bites. Weed had used Sculpture Transformation to turn into an orc, troll and lich but this was an entirely different species.

“Hummingbird... It sounds like a really good experience.”

-You have accepted the quest.

“Taking a trip as a hummingbird.....”

He couldn't get help from Bahamorg, Seo-yoon and the other sculptural lifeforms on this quest. It was impossible for the wyverns to chase after the hummingbird's quick speed.

“I can't waste time here. Come on.”

Weed left the Sculptor's Guild and entered one of Rhodium's alleys. There were small alleys with few people to see him. He urgently began carving a piece right in front of Bahamorg and Seo-yoon. His sculpting was outstanding but it wasn't easy to carve a small hummingbird made of wood.

It was close to the difficulty of jewel sculpting.

‘I need to go for 12 days....’

Weed therefore had to make the hummingbird accurate. He didn't know much about other animals so he waste precious time finding the appearance of a hummingbird.

Ddirring!

-A hummingbird has been completed.

A hummingbird brings good luck.

This is an excellent work that expresses the realistic appearance.

The work of the genius sculptor Weed.

Artistic Value: 760

Special Options: Movement speed increased by 10%.

Luck +4

The effect doesn't overlap with other sculptures.

A work that was faithful to the original appearance of a hummingbird could be seen! He didn't make an intimidating appearance like the orc Karichwi.

“Sculpture Transformation!”

-Sculpture Transformation has been used.

The infinite affection for sculpting has made the sculptor and sculpture resemble each other!

Weed's body suddenly decreased. Feathers stuck out from his skin and his mouth changed to a beak.

-Your body shape has changed so a number of equipment can't be worn.

New equipment is needed depending on the species.

-Agility, Endurance and Perseverance has increased under the influence of Sculpture Transformation.

Strength, Wisdom, Intelligence, Charisma, Faith, Dignity and Honour had fallen to the minimum amount.

Vitality has increased substantially.

The race essential skill 'Swift Flight' has been acquired.

Vitality will be consumed less than other species while flying.

There are many movements so hunger will decrease rapidly.

This will last until Sculpture Transformation is released.

Weed successfully transformed. Seo-yoon approached while he was practicing a few flight manoeuvres.

‘Ik....’

His body was much smaller so Weed was fearful when Seo-yoon stretched out her hand.

Seo-yoon lifted Weed’s hummingbird body and lightly stroked his wings. He was so cute that she couldn’t help it! No one would have expected him to change into this cute hummingbird.

Weed stayed for a moment in her hand before opening his wings and flying up powerfully.

Chapter 7: Life Of A Hummingbird

Weed decided his direction while in the sky. The hummingbird had to fly in an area so wide that it transcended imagination.

‘I don’t have a specific destination so let’s just go where the wind blows.’

Weed started flapping his wings and flew with the wind.

‘Compared to the times when I was on Wy-3.....’

There was the efficiency, performance and romance of the free flight of the bird!

‘I have to fly to a really faraway place.’

He flew so fast that the wind crashed forcefully against his face. A hummingbird could fly 100 km/hr and could flap its wings nearly 100 times per second.

-Your sense of satiety has fallen to 24%.

When he started flying, Weed confirmed that he had 70% satiety. He only flapped his wings quickly for a short time and it had already fallen by this much.

‘I need to find a suitable place to eat. Pollen should be extracted.’

He continued flying with the breeze without stopping.

-Your sense of satiety has fallen to 10%.

Your strength and vitality has been affected by your hunger and has been reduced to 82%.

He couldn't ignore the falling satiety. Weed hurriedly descended to the ground in order to find food. He searched the forest for flowers and sucked up honey with his long beak. A hummingbird was really small so it was possible to fill his stomach with honey.

‘The honey straight from nature is as fresh as expected.’

-Your sense of satiety has risen.

Vitality has recovered.

Health has risen by 15%.

You have drank nutritious honey and became full.

Weed flew back up vigorously after filling his body with pollen. He decided to go to other cities near Rhodium for the time being. He found a river where people were having fun dating.

‘The quest for the final sculpting technique should be very difficult but it is also romantic.’

-Your sense of satiety has fallen to 60%.

You have become a little hungry.

Hummingbird’s journey!

This was a war over whether he lived or died of starvation. If a hummingbird didn’t eat for 3 hours then it would starve and die. Others saw a hummingbird as mysterious and beautiful but its life wasn’t that simple.

The tremendous momentum meant that he needed to constantly eat. When Weed was hungry, he would go down to the ground to drink honey or swallow insects.

At first he felt a little reluctance against insects.

‘I hate insects but.....’

He ate it with a hasty heart and found it wasn’t that bad.

Ttututuru.

The sound of bugs crying out was peaceful. But once a hummingbird passed, he could only hear the wind through the grass. A hummingbird with a full stomach flying in the air!



The Arpen Kingdom liked art and culture so flowers had bloomed from an early time. Artists and architects were active professions.

“Huhu. I should make my work here.”

“I really wanted this place.”

Artists polished their skills in Morata. Their names weren’t known on the continent but their skills have increasingly developed from when they started. Painters mixed their own colours to draw a landscape and sculptors carved rocks without caring about their size.

Many failures were experienced during this trial and error process but it was a valuable asset in art. Success couldn’t be the only thing in art. Frustration was necessary in order to proceed to the next step.

Morata’s artist went to other villages in the Arpen Kingdom and expanded the role of culture even further. Architects who accumulated experience in Morata would expand their horizons outside.

“A Grand Building should probably be here. A minimum of 3 million gold would be needed....”

The architect Pavo put a notice on Morata’s east gate.

Pavo is making a Grand Building in Armang.

There is a large granary, vineyards and mines so a place like this is highly likely to develop into a great city like Morata.

Therefore we are looking for people to be involved in the expansion of art and the mines.

The cost of construction is 4.5 million gold.

Users donating to a Grand Building! Other cities and kingdoms would call that crazy behaviour. There was no one who would donate to architects.

“Can I donate 1 gold here?”

“Here. I found 54 silver yesterday.”

“I can take out 3 gold from my money.”

“I will go hunt for several minutes. I want to donate to the Grand Building!”

If they donated money to a Grand Building then they could gain achievements and fame in that city. They believed that the Armang village was become very big later on so the users in the Arpen Kingdom generously paid.

Pavo was able to collect 4.5 million gold in not even 2 days.



The architects also made a Grand Building in Yusellin village.

Alkazar’s Bridge!

The construction of the large bridge at Peshil River meant that users could cross back and forth for hunting or adventures. The expected cost of construction was beyond 5 million gold. It was a difficult task and there might be more construction costs.

Donations to the Arpen Kingdom could be paid to offices in Morata and Yusellin village.



A tower was built near the sea where people lived.

It was a tower featuring the best view! There was a staggering 6 Grand Buildings built throughout the Arpen Kingdom. There was a

reason why this didn't occur in any kingdoms other than the Arpen Kingdom.

The architects had experience with Grand Buildings and the other users enjoyed the convenience the Grand Buildings added to their lives. That's why people who migrated to the Arpen Kingdom wouldn't leave.

“I’m going to the Brent Kingdom.”

“Hey, what are you going there to do?”

“I’m going to collect my mum and family.”

There were many trading opportunities and blue collar jobs so the Arpen Kingdom was like heaven to merchants. They could get their orders on time and it was easy to obtain desired materials. Iron, copper, minerals and jewels were lacking in the beginning but they were able to get it through commissions and mining.



Fire Bear Guild!

They were a guild that migrated to the north and developed Taren village. They weren't a small guild and had experiencing ruling a castle on the Central Continent. Despite that, it wasn't easy to develop Taren village and it didn't reach the expected state.

The guild master Fire Bear connected to Royal Road after 1 month.

“Ugh, I finally came back here.”

He had been hospitalized due to an unexpected traffic accident.

The guild came running back to the village after hearing that he connected. The guild members' faces were tanned by the sun.

“Offer our loyalty to the Arpen Kingdom quickly.”

“What?”

“Join the Arpen Kingdom. Fire Bear hyung hasn't come for a while but there have been rebels trying to migrate to the Arpen Kingdom.”

Taren village was just a small village with only a few soldiers but a rebellion was still possible at this level. Fire Bear was puzzled because he thought of the guild members like younger siblings.

“Why?”

“You haven't been watching television?”

“Yes. That would make me want to connect more.....”

“I don’t want to say it. Visit the Arpen Kingdom and take a look.”

Fire Bear rode a horse towards Morata. But there was no need to go there. He passed through the middle of Yusellin and it was completely different from when he last graduated.

“That place was a potato field.....”

Various buildings had replaced what used to be potato fields. He even saw evidence that the number of beginner users in Yusellin had increased. The shacks that had become the symbol of prosperity were built closely near the hill.

Fire Bear saw two more villages before deciding.

“I have to enter the Arpen Kingdom!”

He could retain the lordship even if he became a subordinate. Of course, he still needed to pay a portion of the taxes and needed to follow the decisions made by the nobles of the kingdom. But even with that entire burden, it was possible to receive compensation if he joined the Arpen Kingdom.

And many guilds developing the north had already submitted to the Arpen Kingdom. If Weed returned and agreed then his territory would increase intensively.



The hummingbird with a full stomach flew over the sky of the Haven Empire. He had an idea about surveying the place while on the road. He sometimes came down in order to eat honey and pollen.

‘Um. The farmland is well arranged.’

People talked a lot about the aggressiveness of the Hermes Guild. But they managed to secure their territory pretty well and poured a considerable amount of power into domestic administration.

There were waterways to pull water from the rivers as well as systematic farmlands where grains were sowed. The peaceful and beautiful sight of the Haven Empire stretched out before him.

Weed descended onto a rice paddy and ate heartily.

‘Mmm, delicious. Rice from the Hermes Guild seems to have a better flavour.’

The hummingbird that filled his stomach! Weed looked around as he ate.

Quite a few residents lived in the cities and villages of the Haven Empire. The financial power had developed from an early stage so

there were many nobles and middle class. Brick houses were common in the cities.

There weren't many beginners hunting near the gates due to the fact that many had been driven to the north.

The residents had to pay heavy taxes and despite their loyalty not being high, peace was kept through the strong military.

"I'm going hunting in Rusopon Dungeon. I have a permit for the 2nd underground floor. The tax I have to pay is 22%. I'm joining to help someone."

"You are a new member of the best hunting party. The fastest level up is secured. The condition is that you don't assert any rights over items and japtem acquired."

Weed sometimes felt so frustrated it was hard to talk. Money was needed for hunting as well as trade and production. Of course, the Haven Empire had many stable hunting grounds where crowds gathered but it was still tedious. People weren't adventuring and just focused on growth. Their levels might grow faster than others but their combat power was weaker.

'Like a scarecrow.'

Weed watched a square for a while before heading elsewhere.

"A small bird!"

A few residents discovered the hummingbird but most didn't care.

“Eik!”

Sometimes there were young children who threw stones! Weed flew quickly so there was no fear but a chance hit could mean an unnatural death. This was also a predicament of a hummingbird.

Weed relieved his thirst at a small stream and ate a few small insects before leaving the Haven Empire. He had to explore a larger area than other hummingbirds so his body was busy.



An area occupied by the Embinyu Church. The ground was scorched and villages destroyed.

Weed flew down close to the ground. The apple trees and grains were burnt. Screams seemed to soar into the sky and it had a hell like atmosphere!

‘Really... It is a very serious place.’

Quite a few areas on the Central Continent were under the Embinyu Church. The kingdoms and prestigious guilds engaged in disputes, causing devastation and allowing the Embinyu Church to

take over.

There were many dangerous and inconvenient points about an Embinyu occupied area so the users sneaked out from that area. The destruction by the Embinyu Church weakened a prosperous continent. It wasn't impossible for monsters to run rampant and destroy civilizations.

Weed moved along rivers and mountains and also visited famous tourist spots on the Central Continent.

Ddirring!

-You have appreciated the Miturit Waterfall.

Art stat has increased by 1.

Many people flocked to this tourist spot. If their health was high then they could experience the waterfall.

Weed started to fly up again. He once again moved with the wind before flying downwards with all his strength.

-You have acquired 1 silver.

He picked up the silver coin before flapping his wings and climbing up into the sky.

‘Now where to go.....’

The Central Continent was a wide place to travel.

‘I can’t go to the south.

The south was a desert environment so it wasn’t a suitable environment for hummingbirds. He needed an easy place to find honey and insects.

‘Let’s go to the familiar east.’

Weed crossed the Rosenheim Kingdom and headed beyond the Yurokina Mountains. A repetitive day and night journey!

The middle of the Rosenheim Kingdom had been destroyed by the Embinyu Church.

‘I became familiar with a lot of residents here.....’

The pyramid was still present but the surrounding terrain had been changed into a swamp due to the flooding. It was the effect of the disaster that Weed caused.

Weed also suffered trying to obtain food around here.

‘Nature should indeed be protected.’

He was making noise about nature conservation!

He tried to look for the Sphinx he gave life to but couldn't find it. At that time, Weed had left on the wyverns but he knew that the Embinyu Church destroyed it through the broadcast. The shattered fragments were probably lost in the river or scattered over the ground so it was impossible to find.

The Rosenheim Kingdom had to rebuild the capital around the Serabourg Castle but the area in the clutched of the Embinyu Church was a mess.

Fortunately Weed passed safely through the areas under the Embinyu Church's influence and reached the Yurokina Mountains. The dark elves and orcs were separated due to the gods they believed in.

“Chwik, the glaive is the only thing I believe in.”

The orcs were very simple. Their numbers were larger in the past and the orc users were also active in pioneering. Weed taught sculpting to the orcs so some crude sculptures were set up in villages. He sat down on the shoulder of a sculpture to relax for a bit while picking at his feather.

The keen eyes of an orc child discovered Weed.

“Chwi chwi chwit, there is food there.”

“I’ll still be hungry after eating that, chwit!”

“I should go somewhere else.”

He had flown a great distance over four days. However it was necessary to fly further for a perfect success in the quest.

‘Shall I go to the end of the east?’

At the end of the East.

Pioneering didn’t reach there so it was completely clogged with monsters. It would be a great help if he came back here to hunt after the quest. The body of a hummingbird was optimized for long distance travel but it endlessly needed to eat and had no combat ability.

The natural environment was intact and there were many beasts as he headed east. There were other flying creatures and wriggling snakes that tried to eat Weed. A frog hiding in the bushes was more fearful than a level 400 monster.

‘Let’s go someplace else. The quest is a priority rather than dangerous adventures.’

He calculated the flight distance and changed his direction.

‘I have to arrive at the north beach in the Brent Kingdom and cross the archipelago islands before arriving in Morata. And then I will head to Rhodium again.’

He watched people and monsters as a hummingbird and mingled with other birds. He had many romantic thoughts while travelling around the continent for 12 days as a hummingbird.



Kiruk kiruk.

The edge of a beach in the Brent Kingdom. Weed travelled with the seagulls. His body was small as a hummingbird so most birds ignored him.

Caw!

Weed especially used his body to bully the black crows. The crows tried to chase after Weed but he would use his body to avoid them. It wasn't dangerous due to the quick speed of a hummingbird but there were quite a few of them. He also ate nectar from the flowers blooming on the edge of the beach and spread pollen!

-You have sown the Mandragora seeds on the Hill of Wind.

This land is rough and dry so it isn't easy for flowers like the cosmos to grow. But the viability of the Mandragora means it is

able to grow and will someday form a strong community.

Affinity to Nature has increased by 4.

Art stat has increase by 7 due to the natural beauty.

Your sculpting proficiency will increase once the plant matures.

Weed scattered pollen with the range of a hummingbird. Because Affinity to Nature was essential to produce a great disaster!

‘It will be good for creating a disaster larger than a canyon collapse.’

It would be good if a greater disaster was caused. If the plants grew and spread then he would also gain sculpting proficiency later on. The hummingbird’s daily routine seemed to just be eating but it actually played an important role in nature.

Weed crossed the ocean. A hummingbird had extremely good vision and the seagulls also gave him directions.

He found a bunch of other migratory birds and followed them to an island rich in flowers, fruits and nuts.

The trip with birds was fun in its own way. Mixing between and looking at thousands of birds was infinitely peaceful. The hummingbird’s speed was quicker than any other birds but the

problem was that it couldn't fly great distances without getting hungry. Still, if he ate until his body was bursting then he could get to an island safely.

-You have obtained the rare seeds and pollen of a Snowdrop.

It is a white flower that blooms in winter when it snows.

-You have obtained the rare guava seeds.

You have collected tasty fruits.

If he spread the precious seeds then Weed could gain more stats and sculpting proficiency. He wasn't just making wood or stone sculptures but turning the whole continent beautiful.

“Spread the main sails!”

Ships belonging to merchants and adventurers drifted on the ocean.

“Turn to the port side and follow the ocean current!”

Weed loitered near such ships.

-The appearance of a hummingbird has increased your luck.

A hummingbird that is difficult to meet at sea has appeared.

The probability of damage from a natural disaster has decreased and unexpected good fortune can occur during the voyage.

There were intense winds and storms at sea but there weren't many monsters wandering like on land. Sometimes dangerous marine creatures like sharks could be seen but often it was tedious. The fishing skill was indispensable during those times!

The sails were adjusted according to the wind while the navigator set the direction. Weed settled down lightly on the shoulder of someone fishing.

“Pretty Bird, where did you come from?”

A hummingbird was considered lucky so he was welcomed.

“Hummingbird. This is the first time I've seen a hummingbird on the ocean.”

“Today is completely lucky. Are you hungry?”

The women especially responded well to him and fed him tasty sardines. It was difficult to catch fish in the ocean but the hummingbird was able to generously fill his stomach.

“I caught this so let's eat it.”

“Apply fermented soybean paste!”

Of course there were users aiming for his life. Their levels were below 200 so it wasn't very high. Battles didn't frequently happen at sea so their levels and skills were low. Weed flew away without any regrets while listening to their threats.

Kokokokokok!

Of course he mercilessly pecked at their sails before leaving. He had four days left as a hummingbird when he arrived on the northern continent. He scattered the many unusual seeds he found on the islands. A big part of living as a hummingbird was discovering how to eat well.

He planned to drop some unusual seeds in Morata before heading back to Rhodium.

Of course he had to fly during the day and dark night. He wasn't an owl but he became accustomed to flying with the stars in the night sky. The hummingbird's 12 day journey was almost over. And if he was tired then he would land on top of other birds or on the mast of a ship.

Chapter 8: Disaster Three Times

Weed arrived at the coast of the Arpen Kingdom. Amazing changes had occurred in the meantime. Morata's cultural influence had spread and merchants often arrived at the white sandy beach by ships.

Merchants could bring over more goods by sea. Other areas had shallow waters or reefs so most of the ships gathered at Varna Coast. It was the place where the 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Nin landed with the orcs.

Morata's artists and architects came to this place.

"We need to make a harbour for ships to dock."

"A breakwater needs to be constructed to stop the waves."

There were huge social investments in the infrastructure of the Arpen Kingdom! Aside from roads, village expansions and building construction, tax money was also invested in the construction of a harbour. Architects and engineers worked on the harbour for 1 month.

Then beginners who started in Morata flocked here.

"Sea... It can be called a man's romance."

“I’d like to experience adventures on the sea like Weed-nim.”

“Kyaa! The scales of the marlin swimming on the surface of the water is gleaming in the sun.”

Beginners didn’t have any prejudices when adventuring on land.

The Embinyu Church was causing confusion on the Central Continent so the sea path was being actively developed.

Other famous harbours on the continent contained luxury yachts and large sailing ships with 10 sails. The elegance that couldn’t be covered up with rafts was a source of great pride.

People took rafts and rowed out to a nearby sea.

“Right now I really don’t have a penny. Should I earn some money by adventuring at sea?”

“You won’t be able to go out to the open sea in a raft. What will you do if a storm occurs?”

There were no basic facilities like a shipyard, shipping exchange or stores at the harbour so the users fell into a painful situation. Sailing knowledge was something the Arpen Kingdom never had so it was impossible to set up related buildings.

The users of Morata found the answer to this difficult problem

themselves. Architects and blacksmiths participated in creating ships. They used skills mastered in the Central Continent to create the ships. In some cases, there were those who went to the Central Continent specially to learn shipbuilding skills.

“Selling a boat that will leak water when the waves hit it. I even went to the Brent Kingdom with this ship. It is possible to feel drowsiness from the sea.”

“I’ve got this boat with broken sails. There are only a few holes in the bottom but it can be used again. Just be careful of sharks.”

The experience of the people manufacturing ships increase and a shipyard was created. As they gained experience, their speed increased and they could build larger ships.

“The problem is the money for the ship but that will be solved with a fishing rod.”

“That’s fine.”

Beginners preparing to buy a cheap ship would sit down at the beach with a bamboo fishing rod. More than 1,000 people fishing! Some people even sat on rocks where even placing one foot wrong would be dangerous.

“A big fish!”

“It is a horse mackerel. Yes! It is hard to buy 1 horse mackerel

even if I hunt for 3 hours!”

Those who learned fishing wanted to go adventuring at sea. They were the people who liked the smell of salt and listening to the sound of waves.

“This fishing place is good.”

“I seem to catch a lot at dawn and in the morning. I should find a better bait.”

The biggest power in the north, the Grass Porridge Cult had large expectations for Varna Harbour.

“If there is fresh fish.....”

“It will be possible to make porridge.”

“I also need to challenge cockle porridge, seaweed porridge and green laver porridge.”

The internet community for the Grass Porridge Cult had more than 1 million daily visitors. Someone made a list of porridges that could be made from sea ingredients and it kept on growing.

There were many beginners who would take their rafts into the emerald sea and start fishing.

“Save me!”

“Please help. I’ve been drifting back for the last 6 days. I’m tired of sharks chasing me!”

Varna Harbour was a familiar landscape. Fearless beginners fished in order to gain money and become familiar with the sea.

There was a village next to the harbour where residents lived and local specialties like salted fish and whale oil were born. There was even a trading market for merchants.

It was difficult to get seafood in the northern continent so the harbour town in the Arpen Kingdom quickly grew.

The Arpen Kingdom had a solid economic power so it was soon able to build the required facilities. A Maritime Adventurers Guild was constructed to deal with sea quests.

“If we follow the ocean currents then we will arrive at the Kareatas Archipelago where we can catch a lot of saury. Let’s go!”

“I just received a quest to retrieve a stone state!”

“A quest to recover relics from a sinking ship! We have to sail for 3 days towards the east. I think it will fail but do you still want to go?”

It was hard to sail in the constantly changing north ocean. The beginners' small ships pioneered new routes. If they found villages on islands that weren't on maps then they could obtain new quests and complete trades.

Merchants in the Arpen Kingdom who discovered it would bring their fleets to the island to start expanding trade. It was possible to see many users sailing on rafts at Varna Harbour.



Weed dropped in at Morata and scattered the seeds before heading back to Rhodium with the pollen of some wild flowers.

-You have moved the seeds of the Bripa wildflowers.

Flowers that don't grow in Rhodium! You have brought the seeds of a rare flower on the continent. The bees and butterflies will probably be glad to travel to such marvellous flowers.

Affinity to Nature has increased by 21.

Art stat has increase by 9 due to the natural beauty.

Your sculpting proficiency will increase once the plant matures.

Weed brought wildflowers from the north. In Morata, flower festivals would sometimes occur to make the people happy. If the

flower festival spread to Rhodium and people became happy then it wouldn't be a bad thing. The success of his quest would raise the positive influence in Rhodium.

Weed released Sculpture Transformation and returned to the old man.

“The hummingbird is really mysterious. Life wasn't boring at all while I was travelling.”

-Hummingbird's Journey

You have travelled as a hummingbird and returned.

During the trip you have spread a wide variety of pollen to distant places.

-Fame has increased by 3400.

-Your level has risen.

-Sculpting skill proficiency has increased by 3.4%.

-Your successful adventure has increased all stats by 3.

-Your successful adventure has increased all stats by 3.

-Affinity to Nature has increased by 41 after finishing the hummingbird's journey

.If Weed reported the natural discoveries while travelling as a hummingbird then he could gain additional compensation. He was the King of the Arpen Kingdom so he would have to report to other lords or nobles in order to receive the compensation.

The old man nodded without any spirit.

“I haven't seen a hummingbird for a long time. I want to see a hummingbird again before I die..... Then the next story involves sculpting. A story was passed down about a sculptor who caused a great disaster. As humans, it is natural to be afraid but there was something beautiful in the terrible destruction.”

Weed gave a response.

“A big disaster is sometimes really wonderful.”

It was the best sensation when used against his enemies.

“That's right. New life can also grow after a sweeping natural disaster. There is currently a large problem occurring on this continent..... The Embinyu Church is constantly destroying every day. If a disaster happens to them then I will tell you a bit more about radiant beauty.”

-Cleanse the Chaos on the Continent with Disasters

The Embinyu Church is currently endangering the continent. They commit evil and don't hesitate to destroy the beauty of artworks.

Inflict damage to the army of the Embinyu Church through sculpting! This is to help the continent recover so you can gain the best honours.

During the quest, Affinity to Nature will temporarily increase by 35%.

If you cause 3 disasters and return safely then you will continue with the next quest.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: Great Disaster Nature Sculpting is required.

You have to safely survive the quest. The quest will fail if you die.

A quest requiring him to use Disaster Sculpting!

“Uhh!”

Weed thought it wasn't easy this time. He had faced the Embinyu Church in the past and they weren't inferior to the Hermes Guild!

In those days, the Embinyu Church was weak because they hadn't advanced into the continent yet. The present Embinyu Church controlled a wide territory after the Hermes Guild and their military power was great due to incessant wars.

That wasn't the only difficult part.

“The Affinity to Nature is too high.”

This had a large influence on the destructive power of the disaster. He was always raising his Perseverance and Resilience stats on a regular basis but it would still be hard for Weed to resist the disaster.

“Escape 3 disasters alive... And the opponent is the Embinyu Church.”

It seemed like an impossible request but he could select the disaster and the target inside the Embinyu Church. He could see some possibilities.

“Since I have to produce it, I should do it coolly.”

He might become famous for being a destroyer on the continent.



Fort Odin in the Britten Alliance Kingdom!

Recently the Hermes Guild occupied a large piece of land but they didn't pass the large military fortress. The Cloud Guild risked life and death to maintain this location but now the Embinyu Church led an army to invade it.

“Death to heretics.”

“Smashing them according to the command of God Embinyu!”

The Embinyu army consisted of 60,000 Dark Knights, demons and fanatics! The fanatics kept on scaling the walls despite the strong defense. But now a High Priest was leading another 26,000 troops towards the main army.

Fort Odin was meeting its biggest enemy since it was built.

“Defend the Britten Alliance Kingdom.”

“This is the last fort protecting the free cities. We will fight!”

The Cloud Guild tried to get the support of users in the free cities but the plan didn't go smoothly. Users avoided fighting against the military of the Embinyu Church.

Participating in a large scale war could gain many achievements but there were many painful things about facing the Embinyu

Church's curses. They chose not to participate in a religion's expedition against the Embinyu Church or the siege.

However the Cloud Guild was still powerful and had many users spread out through the Britten Alliance Kingdom. There were also mercenaries participating in Fort Odin's protection for the compensation and quests.

“Drop the oil here!”

“There should also be some arrow support.”

Fort Odin was busy competing with the Embinyu Church. It was risky for the Cloud Guild to have anything else taken away so they definitely had to defend Fort Odin. They organized a defense army but the Embinyu Church's early offensive wasn't easy. The crazy thrust by the fanatics was different from a normal siege and couldn't help causing fear.

“War! The Embinyu Church is invading Fort Odin.”

“Is it possible for them to take over the impregnable Fort Odin?”

“Right now that is just the advance party of the Embinyu Church.”

The audience ratings were so high that three stations were doing live broadcasts. While the advance party was attacking for 4 hours, the Embinyu Church's main army filled the plains. A mammoth

was also rallied to break the walls.

“Damn. This won’t be easy.”

“Fight until your sword is broken!”

The users in Fort Odin became tense as they headed out to the field. Defending the walls during a siege seemed comfortable but it wasn’t like that. The advance of a large force meant they could be stuck in the fort for days. There was also the fear of being killed.

“We have to fight until the end.”

“I’ve been prepared for death since I started defending Fort Odin.”

The Cloud Guild poured a majority of power into this but morale wasn’t high after their recent defeat.

Suddenly the ground started to shake. A natural disaster like an earthquake rarely occurred on the Versailles Continent. But a quake had never occurred at Fort Odin. There was also no mention of earthquakes in the history books. Yet the ground was shaking so violently it was hard to stand up. This earthquake was fearful from a beginner or ordinary user’s point of view.

Kugugugugung.

A mountain started emerging in the centre of the Embinyu Church's main army. The demons and fanatics fell down, leaving the walls of Fort Odin naked. Some of them died but the crowd couldn't cheer.

A 400 metre rocky mountain had emerged in dozens of seconds. This alone was a strange magic! A 400 metre high mountain had appeared on a flat plain so it wasn't something small. There was even a natural lake on top of the mountain.

“What the hell?”

“Why did a mountain like that appear in the heart of the Embinyu's army?”

“It is really lucky.”

Kwarururururung!

The land around the rocky mountain started shaking again. This shaking was quite intense and caused the users and soldiers of Fort Odin to sit on the ground. The atmosphere seemed like something could explode at any moment.

“W-what?”

“I just don't think it is just an earthquake.”

“Smoke is showing from the top of the mountain. Isn’t the shaking also coming from there?”

“Huck! If this is a volcano.....”

And after a while, the mountain really exploded. Smoke was emitted before a colossal pillar of fire soared in to the sky with a roar.

A volcanic eruption.

Rock debris and lava flew all over the place. A volcanic eruption common in the Jigolaths had occurred in the Britten Alliance Kingdom!

“Kyaaaak!”

“Get down!”

People instinctively screamed.

“It will unconditionally splash everywhere!”

And there were people whose judgement was ahead of the situation. Many users watching were fearful and amazed. This sight was difficult to see no matter how much money they paid.

Yet a volcanic eruption happened to occur in the middle of the Embinyu Church's army. Lava and stones fell down and struck the army. The hot heat could be felt from Fort Odin and the sky turned black due to the volcanic ash.

It was a small mountain compared to others but there was an excessive amount of lava flowing out. The lava and hot gases hit the ground near the volcano. Demons ran back and forth but they were burnt whole and turned into grey ash. Even the knights and cavalry troops with tremendous combat ability couldn't avoid the disaster.

The speech of the broadcasters became faster as this situation occurred out of the blue.

"Ah, the Embinyu troops attacking Fort Odin has received large damage. What is this volcanic eruption that suddenly took place?"

"It is possible to guess a little bit. The Cloud Guild must have prepared it."

"Then couldn't they have done it earlier with the Hermes Guild? Maybe they recently acquired a relic with the magic... It is too enormous."

"How astonishing! That just shook the sky and the land."

"I have well informed sources within the Cloud Guild but I never heard of such preparations. It wasn't going to be used against other

players so why would they conceal it?”

“As you can see on the broadcast, even the members from the Cloud Guild are stunned to see the eruption.”

“Then who is a person who can cause a volcano to erupt?”

The sky was dark due to volcanic ash. The lava flew up high. Wings spread open and a wyvern appeared with a person on it. This person was the one who most players wanted to meet in Royal Road, Weed the God of War.

Weed held his Daemon Sword while approaching on Wy-3.

“Weed! I knew it was Weed.”

The studios made a fuss.

Appearing between the flowing lava on a wyvern. A more attractive appearance couldn't be made.

“Kuwaaaaaah!”

“The God of War is helping us!”

A dramatic victory atmosphere appeared in Fort Odin as they cried out. Of course their situation was different from Weed

because they were observing from a distant place.

“Ya! Left, the left! Lava is going to emerge there.”

“Keeeeek!”

“This time fold back your wings. Lava will be breaking out from those crevasses. Be careful near there!”

They narrowly avoided the lava gushing out from the volcano.

Wy-3 released urgent movements while shrieking with a pale face. What sin did it do to meet an owner like this?

“The wyvern is awesome.”

“Too cool.”

“The shrieking really sounds gruesome and terrifying.”



Yurin always heard rumours about Weed when travelling with Picture Movement. She heard talk about Weed even when she didn’t go to any villages or cities. Whole cities were noisy about a big battle between prestigious guilds but there was an almost manic atmosphere around Weed’s adventures.

Whether they were guests inside taverns or users going hunting and adventuring. Many users had high levels worth bragging about but Weed was a hero to them.

‘I wonder what Oppa is doing today.’

Yurin went to a river flowing through a city and took out her fishing rod. Every time she tried to enjoy the fishing skill that Zephyr taught her but it was boring. She wore a wide, yellow hat and paint splattered clothing to go fishing!

‘Oppa is doing well.’

Yurin didn’t worry about Weed. He was a person who would like being alone on a desert island because everything was free! The flora and fauna on the island would become pitiful.

She was curious about the type of women Weed would meet. Because that person might become her elder sister.

‘Hwaryeong unni is good.’

The first candidate was Hwaryeong who was often in his party. She was very attractive and didn’t hide that she had a crush on Weed. Yurin once asked Hwaryeong why she liked Weed.

“Weed-nim is domestic. He does laundry, cleans and also makes

good rice. The flavour of the steam crab the other day was perfect!”

Of course, liking his domestic side wasn't the entire reason but it was a huge portion of it for Hwaryeong.

Yurin also had a woman's intuition about Seo-yoon. Rumours spread at university about Seo-yoon and it was confirmed after she moved next door. Yurin rarely felt like she was lacking in appearance but it was like a god made Seo-yoon's beauty.

‘That face is really... She can meet foreign actors and even royalty with it.’

She wondered why Seo-yoon was so interested in Weed that she would even make boxed lunches.

‘I heard rumours about blackmail.’

Even his little sister doubted the relationship between the two of them. When Yurin met them in Morata, her brother looked very plain next to Seo-yoon. Then Seo-yoon spoke in a clear voice.

“I'm not living off a man's looks.”

However it still didn't make sense to Yurin. Objectively it wasn't just his appearance but other parts as well. Seo-yoon had a higher level than him in Royal Road. Seo-yoon wasn't inferior in any areas.

“What if you get married later but Oppa can’t get a job and just plays at home?”

“Money? I will earn it.”

“Things that require strength.”

“A woman can also do that.”

“Even giving birth to children?”

“I have to bring them up well.”

“.....”

Yurin could only nod. She had so many things to say but nothing came out. She felt like Seo-yoon was too pitiful.



“Here is the amount promised.”

“Huhu, I had no doubt.”

Weed meet a messenger from the guild to receive payment for a

contract. It wasn't worth inflicting Great Disaster Nature Sculpting on the Embinyu Church for free. He made contact with the guild suffering from the Embinyu Church and the Cloud Guild quickly accept his offer.

His task at Fort Odin had been completed successfully. The Embinyu Church's army suffered huge damage from the eruption and their moral was shattered. The Cloud Guild didn't miss this opportunity and left the gate to destroy the Embinyu Church's troops.

Weed also killed 100 Dark Knights while riding Wy-3. The morale of the soldiers increased every time the wyvern appeared above the battlefield. The Embinyu Church's army became incoherent and scattered so the Britten Alliance Kingdom didn't have to worry about them for the moment. The great victory was broadcasted and the Cloud Guild could regain its confidence.

Weed's cloak fluttered as he got on Wy-3.

“Huhuhu, then next.....”

“Excuse me, please wait a moment.”

“Huh?”

“There is a mountain in front of Fort Odin. I hope you get rid of it before you go.”

The former 400 metre mountain had increased to 890 metres after the explosion. Lava still simmered and smoke rose so it looked dangerous.

“The mountain is good for your health. People should live close to a mountain.”

“What are you saying now....”

“Wy-3, let’s go. Hiyah!”

“.....”

Chapter 9: Embinyu Church's Suffering

Lee Hyun searched for a suitable place for the next disaster.

“Places where the Embinyu Church is playing an active role....”

It was convenient to check the bulletin boards. There were posts talking about places where the Embinyu Church had mobilized a huge army to invade. Even the home pages of the broadcasting stations showed dangerous areas where the Embinyu Church was located.

“There doesn't seem to be many places that the Embinyu Church is controlling.”

He could ride Wy-3 to penetrate into enemy territory. There were already some righteous people who believed in their own level and encountered a useless death. Lee Hyun couldn't act recklessly because he had his own burdens.

It would be dangerous to become surrounded by the army of the Embinyu Church and the Great Disaster Nature Sculpting.

“I need to fight back in the safest spot.”

Lee Hyun searched for such a place. The terrain and natural environment needed to have the proper conditions for the disaster.

Bernerd Castle in the Aidern Kingdom! The army of the Embinyu Church is advancing towards it and a siege was expected. The place was close to the sea with intense winds.

“It is suitable. Yet this isn’t a perfect plains area so the users would have no choice but to be approached in the disaster.”

Lee Hyun couldn’t control the disaster or adjust the strength at will. He took the destructive power of the volcano into consideration and placed it in a distant place but other disasters were uncontrollable.

“I should write a sentence.”

Lee Hyun logged into his own account on the home page of Royal Road. Thousands of messages had arrived in his mail.

Naturally he didn’t read the contents but skimmed their titles. There were advertisement contracts and product sponsorships. Messages that fans sent were like spam mail but he still had the habit of reading the subject.

Hyun-woo entered the bulletin boards.

“I have to write it simply.”

Title: I am Weed. This is a request.

I'm planning to fight the Embinyu Church at Bernerd Castle in the Aidern Kingdom.

Please warn the users there that a disaster similar to Fort Odin will occur.

They should be careful and not leave the safety of the castle tomorrow.

As soon as Lee Hyun wrote the post, the number of replied surpassed 2,000 in no time.

-I am first.

-Boarding.

-I hitched a ride as well.

-Look at the information not the comments.

-Is it really Weed?

-I'm also Sun Hwi Gwon.

-I thought it was a trick but the ID is really the God of War.

-Weed-nim wouldn't write a sentence here, fools.

-My name is Weed. Kya kya kyak.

-Eh? It really is Weed.

-The person who wrote this is really Weed the God of War.

-I don't know who is a fool. But this is amazing.

Lee Hyun's post increased by hundreds of views in a very short time. It quickly moved to other bulletin boards and communities and became a topic. It spread to the extent that the news reached the broadcasters.

-I'm currently in the Tullen Kingdom. Can I arrive at Bernerd Castle by tomorrow if I ride my horse all night?

-I'm in the Aberdeen Kingdom. I am looking for people to go to Bernerd Castle. Riding skills beginner level 6 or intermediate carriage control skill is necessary.

-I'd like to fight like Weed-nim. Let's go.

-I'll go too. I can't miss a great opportunity to see a disaster.

-Asa, I'm in the Aidern Kingdom. There isn't anything to lose. I have to see the disaster!

The users saw Lee Hyun’s words and gathered at Bernerd Castle.



Bernerd Castle.

The Embinyu Church was scheduled to attack it so the users moved to other areas. However, Weed caused users to teleport or travel from other kingdoms towards Aidern Kingdom.

Bernerd Castle has the atmosphere of a festival as users gathered. Tourists arrived at the castle through the main gates.

“Come in quickly. The Embinyu Church is coming closer.”

“The disaster?”

“Nothing yet.”

“We’ve just arrived!”

Users who walked or rode a horse from distant places barely entered the castle walls. If the users’ power was combined together then Bernerd Castle’s defense had increased by 10 times.

“Embinyu Church!”

“The army is approaching from the south!”

Users felt a sense of expectation in their chest despite seeing the demons and fanatics in the Embinyu Church’s army.

“What will Weed-nim use to smash them? It will be completely wonderful.”

“Kyaa, I really wish they would all be swept away.”

It was difficult to experience a thrilling moment like this in Royal Road without risking their lives.

The Embinyu Church began advancing towards Bernerd Castle. The distinctive shrieks and voices chanting strange hymns to the Embinyu God rang out.

Kill for God Embinyu

We willingly sacrifice our bodies.

The word of God Embinyu tells us to destroy this corrupt world.

A complete cleanse.

Demon slaves were pulling large siege weapons.

“When is Weed-nim coming? These guys will arrive in less than 30 minutes.”

“Isn’t he a genius? Look at what he did in the previous broadcast.”

“Being a little late is different from not coming at all.”

“Maybe it is in between? He often makes a surprise appearance.”

Users prepared for the siege along with the soldiers. They were in Bernerd Castle so they had to fight the Embinyu Church if they wanted to survive. The Embinyu Church’s army was getting closer. They had marched a long distance but the High Priest’s power meant they weren’t fatigued.

“How long until he comes? If he doesn’t then we’ll have died for nothing.”

“He will come. If he doesn’t then I will curse him for the rest of my life.”

Their anxiety grew larger. And then something appeared on the open sea. It was rapidly advancing over the water.

“What is that?”

“F-fabulous!”

The users gathered on the walls. The reason was that they could see 12 whirlwinds approaching land from the sea. If the users died at that moment they would've been satisfied just seeing the whirlwinds!

In front of the whirlwinds was Weed aboard Bingryong. Bingryong roared his regret.

“Master, why is it me this time?”

“Wy-3 ran away!”

Wy-3 hadn't met him at the scheduled place so Weed was delayed.

Bingryong flew with all his strength as the whirlwinds violently whirled behind them. The 12 whirlwinds moved and mixed temporarily, sometimes becoming so big that the size couldn't be imagined. It was to the extent that the sea floor was revealed. The power of that whirlwind would be enough to tear Bingryong to shreds.

“Master, I'm happy because I could be together with you in the meantime. Please give me proper funeral proceedings when I die.”

The frightened Bingryong flew with all his might while leaving behind a will. The whirlwinds were too scary. Weed also thought

back about the long time he had spent with Bingryong.

“Don’t worry. I will prepare red beans.”

“Why would you bring red beans?”

“I can’t send you off with nothing. I have to separate the useful parts and sell them.”

Weed wanted to engage in business with patbingsoo (shave ice and red bean).

“Kuowoooooh!”

Weed and Bingryong finally arrived with the whirlwinds.

“Kyak, the best!”

“Weed-nim, I’ve been waiting!”

“Ah! It was worth coming here.”

100 people were on a hill of stones near the coast. They didn’t leave even when the Embinyu Church nears and just waited for Weed to come. They were relatively high levelled but set aside their most important equipment. These users wanted to try the cool experience of dying from a disaster.

“My body is floating!”

“Kyaaaah, how cool!”

“Grass porridge. Grass porridge!”

The fearful wind suck up the users and struck the army of the Embinyu Church.

Kuweeeek!

Demons shrieked as they flew into the air. The whirlwinds passed over land and uprooted large trees. Even demons planting their feet in the ground and trying to hold on were drawn in by the wind. The 12 whirlwinds advanced through the army of the Embinyu Church and left a complete wreck behind.

Bbuuuuung!

A huge rhinoceros flew into the sky. It then fell to the ground and crushed the fanatics, Dark Knights and priests.

The twisters that intersected and mixed together increased the destructive power to a truly terrifying level.

The siege weapons were smashed or ripped apart and some were dropped into the sea. The steel shields had no effect in stopping the

wind as the fanatics were sucked into the whirlwind.

The players who came to Bernerd for the spectacle had goose bumps.

“This isn’t a joke.”

“Ah, it is really scary.”

“It is like something from a dream.”

It was the electrifying sight of Weed passing over the Embinyu army on Bingryong with the whirlwinds following him. It was a charisma that made even high level users humble.

“Only the highest levelled user in Royal Road would possess this degree of capability.”

“It’s not completely a legend? I’ve never seen something like this.”

“It is really difficult for a magician specializing in wind magic to raise their skill to this extent.”

The users cheered on Weed’s destructive power.

“Bingryong, if this continues then we’re going to die. Fly faster!”

“The best... I’m doing my best.”

Bingryong was big and couldn’t help being affected by the whirlwinds. Despite squeezing all his power to fly quickly, the whirlwinds were overwhelming. The power of the whirlwinds was so strong that the users on Bernerd Castle were pushed back by the winds.

Weed turned his head and looked back at the whirlwinds.

“Bingryong.”

“Speak Master.”

“I have good news and bad news. Tell me what you want to hear first.”

“The good news.”

“The whirlwinds have decreased to 8.”

“I’m glad.”

“And the bad news is that they’ve become stronger.”

“That isn’t so good after all.”

“But you felt comfortable for a bit after hearing the good news.”

“.....”

4 whirlwinds had integrated with the others and the power was doubled. 4 large and 4 small whirlwinds were left.

The Embinyu Church's army formation completely disappeared because of the wind. Battling in such intense winds was impossible. The Embinyu Church became offerings for the whirlwinds.

The demons, fanatics and Dark Knights were also flying in the air with Bingryong. They were thrown all over the place by the whirlwinds. They fell from a high place so almost all of their health drained out at a dreadful speed.

The even more fearful thing was being caught in the middle of the whirlwinds. The distance between the whirlwinds was wide so many things were caught up by them. There were wood, stones, trees, water etc. along with the Dark Knight, demons and fanatics.

“We're going to get caught. Can't you go faster?”

“This is the maximum speed that I can go.”

“It can't be.”

The power of Great Disaster Nature Sculpting meant he couldn't get caught. Disasters like a landslide or cliff collapse was somewhat predictable but the suction power of a whirlwind was different. It was to the extent that solid wooden buildings disappeared without a trace. A large rock hanging in the air was crushed into tiny pebbles by the wind pressure.

“The disaster shouldn't last that longer. Bingryong, prepare to turn back!”

Bingryong obeyed Weed's words and slowed his speed. His instinct was to fly forward but Bingryong took a breath and slowed his speed while turning around.

He believed in Weed after the relationship they formed. As soon as he slowed, Bingryong felt the suction power of the whirlwinds.

“Wait a minute. And... Now. Blow!”

Ice Breath was emitted from Bingryong's mouth and struck the whirlwinds. The whirlwinds were temporarily weakened but that only lasted for 10 seconds. The whirlwinds spinning and scattering the chunks of ice was a spectacular sight.

It was more like an ice storm than a whirlwind. And the movement stopped until the remaining whirlwinds were merged together. Bingryong's eyes were filled with resentment as he looked at the whirlwind. The whirlwinds mixed with each other started to unravel.

“Bingryong, fly!”

Bingryong was happy to accept that command. Weed and Bingryong escaped from the tangled whirlwinds and flew to the remnants of the Embinyu Church’s army.

The whirlwinds had really wreaked havoc as corpses and shattered fragments were scattered in front of Bernerd Castle. And the moment the whirlwinds disappeared.

The Embinyu Church’s army had fallen from the sky.

Kuwoooooh!

“Em...bingyu... Praise God....”

The demons and fanatics were scattered all over the place. The Embinyu Church’s army had suffered a loss of more than 20%. Almost all the Dark Knights and priests caught in the whirlwind had died. The demons and fanatics didn’t suffer a huge loss but their morale had fallen to the lowest possible level.

The Embinyu Church’s High Priest had immediately retreated with some dark knights when the disaster had approached. The Embinyu Church didn’t have that spirit of sacrifice like the Royal Knights.

The highest rank of the army was safe but the damage received by the army caused the command system to collapse. Morale played an important role in battle and their commanding officers had just fled the battlefield.

Weed flew towards Bernerd Castle on Bingryong. And he let loose his Lion's Roar!

“Let's go! We will win this fight!”

Bernerd Castle was owned by a NPC lord. Weed wasn't a king on the Central Continent so he had no authority but he had showed off his power and leadership.

“Open the gate!”

The gates opened at the lord's command. And users came out to fight the Embinyu Church. It was possible to fight while protecting the castle wall but the enemy wasn't responding properly so it was more profitable to go and attack directly.

There was the High Priest and Dark Knights but it became a one sided battle once Weed, Phoenix, Golden Bird, Silver Bird and Bahamorg appeared.

“Kuaaak.”

Wy-3 belatedly flew down from the sky.



The Embinyu Church’s army had suffered considerable damage but the main power, the High Priest and Dark Knights had been unharmed due to their retreat. The fanatics and demons tried to fight against Weed, his sculptural lifeforms and the users of Bernerd Castle but they had lost their will.

The main force retreated as soon as the situation wasn’t good. Nevertheless, it was a big battle so the people involved could gain fame, loot, stats and achievements.

“Weed-nim, thank you very much.”

“I’m really grateful.”

Weed got back on Bingryong and disappeared into the distance. The users couldn’t forget the memory of Bingryong’s magnificent wings spreading.

The third Great Disaster Nature Sculpting was used in Rosenheim Kingdom.

Many areas in the Rosenheim Kingdom were under the rule of the Embinyu Church. While searching for a suitable place, he found a fortress that the Embinyu Church had built!

A colossal amount of food and weapons for war were gathered.

“There are at least 70,000 troops. And siege weapons are also being manufactured.”

It could be seen as an important bridgehead for the Embinyu Church to secure the Rosenheim Kingdom.

Weed decided to ruin this place. And Wy-3 was trembling in fear.

“I’ve done many bad things but this isn’t dangerous.”

He had created quite a few disasters. This time safety was the most important fact so Weed prepared something suitable.

“Great Disaster Nature Sculpting!”

A sculpture of a Red King Ant was destroyed! After a while, the Embinyu Church’s fortress was covered with red king ants.

“It looks as beautiful as expected.”

Weed flew over the fortress on Wy-3. It was going to be broadcasted on KMC Media and CTS Media so a suitable atmosphere was required.

“We need to use his popularity.”

The broadcasting stations wanted a song. The reason was that many viewers were interested but Weed declined. He couldn't properly sing if the stage wasn't a large battle.

"I won't recklessly sing my important songs."

The king ants could eat wood and even stones and iron. The demons and fanatics in the fortress tried to resist by fighting. Several buildings collapsed and flames soared up.

However, the number of red king ants crawling from the ground and through gaps in doors was frightening. They had small wings but could only fly 4~5 metres at a time. On a broad plains area, wide area fire magic could be used but the fortress was a shut environment so it was more advantageous to the red king ants.

Monsters crawled out of every opening and holes in the buildings. Meanwhile the red king ants ate the food gathered and made it impossible to use the weapons. The buildings were severely damaged and many fanatics died.

Even more cruelly, it didn't end with just one disaster. So far Weed had created disasters related to the natural environment. But this time the disaster was related to a creature.

The red king ants cut holes in the ceilings and laid many eggs. The baby ants would be born and the disaster repeated.

“Even the house I lived in before had trouble with ants.”

Weed remembered the house he had rented back in his junior high days.

It would become infested with ants if he spilled even one drop of a drink. It was to the extent that leaving an open bottle of coke would have the ants swarming. The cockroaches and mice were nothing next to ants. If the ants bred properly then it was really difficult to get rid of them. The ground was covered in a blanket of ants

“The ants aren’t as strong as humans. But if didn’t leave any food in the house then they would try to tear my flesh.”

The disaster reminded Weed of bad memories in his past.

The power of experience!

The Allesa Fortress became permanently unusable.

Ddirring!

-You have continuously dealt important blows to the Embinyu Church.

The Embinyu Church that covers the continent in evil!

The damage suffered from these attacks can't be predicted but they will be difficult to recover from.

You have protected the peace of the continent and the various religions and kingdoms are full of admiration for the heroic actions of a sculptor.

-Fame has increased by 4,160.

-Charisma has increased by 3.

-Fighting Spirit has increased by 4.

-Art stat has increased by 11.

-Achievements for all religions and kingdoms who declared war on the Embinyu Church has increased by 2,190.

-Title! Hero who Saved the Continent has been acquired.

This title is given to the person who has the largest achievements on the Versailles Continent.

You can recruit subordinates to fight the Embinyu Church. The Royal Knights, free knights and paladins will answer your righteous call.

This is the first time the title Hero who Saved the Continent has been given. If another person builds up a larger achievement then the title will be lost.

While the title is maintained, all residents will pay attention to your existence.

You can get respect from the residents.

The effect of Leadership and Charisma in a fight will increase by 27%.

The highest honour has been granted.

Luck has increased by 45.

Weed gained a huge profit from the disaster related quest.

“I need to go back and report the quest. Wy-3, let’s go.”



While the Imperial Palace was being constructed, the Hermes Guild worked on domestic administration for the areas they occupied. Lords were appointed, roads built to connect to other areas of the Empire, farmlands were expanded and urban development and mining was accomplished.

But more than anything else, it was important for them to expand their military power. Knights were selected and commanders led soldiers out to subdue monsters.

Only a small number of top level leaders knew the Hermes Guild's war plans.

“We have to hurry and conquer the continent. There will be no truces now.”

“The training of the archers has been completed quickly. The magic soldiers unit is the problem.....”

“Didn't Krobidyun agree to prepare them?”

“More time is necessary to raise the ability of the residents. Despite that, the magic soldiers unit right now is wonderful.”

The Hermes Guild strategically built magician related facilities and learning facilities in various cities. It was expensive but necessary to raise the ability of the guild. The Hermes Guild also invested in research and development. They taught smart residents and formed a magic soldiers unit.

The Hermes Guild raised the Haven Empire and prepared to conquer various kingdoms. They didn't want to stop the continent conquest war once started so they systematically prepared their forces for it.

“Weed is showing a prominent figure these days.”

The residents of the Haven Empire were talking about Weed every day. Merchants trading at a market or workers in a tavern spread stories about Weed’s adventures against the Embinyu Church. Weed was being called a hero of the continent so the Hermes Guild wasn’t pleased at all.

“He seems to be doing the Sculptor’s Master Quest. Bardray-nim, do you have anything to say about that?”

“I have nothing to say. It isn’t necessary to deal with him right now.”

“He has the precedent of causing trouble for our guild. It might not be a good idea to leave him alone.”

Quite a few top level leaders wanted to take strong measures against Weed. Weed had damaged the Hermes Guild’s pride many times. They wanted to restore their honour now that the Haven Kingdom had grown into an empire.

Bardray had already got revenge on Weed in the Melbourne Mine so Lafaye considered him as minor compared to the other noteworthy guilds on the continent.

“Stop. The Hermes Guild can’t care about Weed now. Class Master Quest? There is no need to be interested in that. If Weed succeeds first then it might distract people. Our goal is to complete

the conquest of the continent and we should focus on that.”

“Understood.”

Lafaye made preparations for war with the entire continent. It was decided to ignore Weed for the moment.



Weed arrived at the Stellar Tear in Rhodium to report the quest.

“You have come back safely.”

“Yes. I restored justice on the continent as a sculptor and returned.”

“It must have been difficult and dangerous.”

“No. I was just doing what my heart felt was worthwhile. It is my mission to help the people persecuted by the Embinyu Church.”

Ddiring!

-Cleanse the Chaos on the Continent with Disasters has been completed.

The Embinyu Church at Fort Odin and Bernerd Castle. The third

disaster struck Allesa Fortress.

The inhabitants of the continent will know about the sculptor Weed's justice. The Embinyu Church that recruits people with lies and fear has received a big impediment.

-Your level has risen.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-Fame has increased by 1,618.

-The success of the spread of the Embinyu Church has decreased by 32%.

"I will tell you more about how to express a radiant beauty."

"I will listen."

"There are several avenues for research so sculptors often find their opinions conflict while drinking alcohol."

"....."

And he heard miscellaneous stories for a long time. Some sculptors didn't have a good nature, others weren't happy drinkers etc. Weed remembered all the information he heard with no

exception. Something might be a clue when facing a difficult quest.

‘Drinking alcohol and fighting, being popular with women, selling sculptures to pay off debts..... Different types of sculptors tried to sculpt a radiant beauty.’

Weed was then informed about what he had to do.

“You must not give in when trying to express a radiant beauty. You should move forward despite any disruption that might occur on the continent. It will help if you learn to bend with the wind and the waves. And the years....”

“Huh?”

“It takes a really long time to be able to carve the nature in the world. The sweat incurred from the long labour can be represented in the sculptor’s words.”

Even the open grain of a dead tree cut down was beautiful and over time it could grow branches again. Rainwater would flow and gather in ravines and after a long time become a waterfall.

It was the magnificent beauty of nature that even a sculptor couldn’t challenge.

“Something created over a long period of time can be called a miracle. The sculptor had to go through hardships in order to express that beauty. Are you familiar with the free spirited

Fairies?”

“A little.... Our relationship isn’t bad.”

He had a quest related to healing the Fairy Queen Teneidon’s wings that were cursed by a dragon. However, the quest difficulty was high and it wasn’t an urgent quest so he could do it without rushing. He had saved Teneidon by killing Barkhan so the fairies were still thankful to him. They also sometimes appeared when he cooked in dungeons. Weed was satisfied eating delicious dishes and the fairies would go away when he tore off barley bread for them.

“Even if you are the aware of the miracle of nature, the sculpture will take a long time to form. The fairies can help with that.”

Ddiring!

-Sword of Light that Splits Everything

The sculpting master Zahab has left behind Sculpting Blade. It is a sword technique that uses moonlight to defeat wicked enemies! You have developed Sculpting Blade and even learnt Radiant Sword.

Raise the skill proficiency of Radiant Sword by watching the wind and waves. The more intensely the wind and waves are, the quicker the experience will rise.

Your current standard is Beginner level 6. Reach Advanced level

2 in 110 days.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: Sculpting Blade and Radiant Sword is required.

The quest will fail if you fall into the water and die.

It was a very unexpected quest but Weed was used to this type of thing after training with the Geomchis. And it wasn't just one quest.

-Sculpting that has been Shaped over a Long Time

Many of the beauty in the world isn't completed in a short time period.

Complete a sculpture of nature.

If completed, the fairies will gather to live there and give you a gift.

Due to the nature of sculpting and the fairies, the terrain can't be completely changed.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: Nature Sculpting is required.

A close relationship with the Fairies.

The quest will fail if you die.

He already had the quest from the Fairy Queen Teneidon but fortunately his quest to create a secret technique didn't affect his quest limit. If he hadn't settled that then he wouldn't be able to get the final secret technique.

“First the most urgent... I need to reach Advanced level 2 in 110 days.

The proficiency of an offensive skill grows quicker than a basic sword skill. But it isn't an easy thing to suddenly raise a skill.

“If my Radiant Sword level was already high then I don't know how much I would've had to raise it. Anyway, if I use it repeatedly then I can raise the proficiency level.”

Weed's mind was already heading towards the beach. This wasn't an ordinary sea. The beaches on the northeast of the northern continent had fierce winds that hit the waves.



Merchant users often visited Vent Castle and Arpen Kingdom became more widely known.

“This is a specialty of the Arpen Kingdom! A really good product. Many people are looking forward to it so I’ve brought a lot.”

“In the days of the Niflheim Empire, there was no need to worry about monsters like we do now.”

“I’m thankful for the King of the Arpen Kingdom for beating back the north. But our knights are loyal to the Niflheim Empire until the day we die.”

“The food from Morata is really fresh and tasty. Wasn’t it a place known for its sewing skills in the past? It seems to have a wonderful lord.”

The residents and hunters marvelled while trading with the Arpen Kingdom users. The merchants were satisfied with the trade route and went around the north even more eagerly.

Merchants would ride horse drawn carriages to look for new villages. They created northern trade routes.

Morata’s Merchants Association!

Merchants who found a village and traded there could gain experience and money. They invested a huge amount of money into the Arpen Kingdom and the merchants like the benefits of

proprietary trading.

But that changed after Gamong opened the way to Vent Castle.

‘I can’t eat that much alone despite my monopoly ending when other merchants come.’

‘It will be okay if the village develops.’

‘There are many places in the north that have been closed off with their development stagnant. If merchants come there then development will quickly increase.’

The scale of the trade depended on the size of the village and the number of residents.

“I came here with some food so do you want to trade?”

“Of course. You brought such important food..... But as you can see, our village is old and there might not be enough to exchange. Will you take the fangs of a monster or animal leather as payment?”

“Yes!”

Ddirring!

-A festival has occurred in Tallun village!

The food has been imported through trade with a merchant. The empty grain warehouses have been filled and residents can feel a sense of relief.

The productivity of the residents has increased by 300% for 1 month. The village's culture and technology will advance quickly in that period of time.

If there is a stable supply of food then the village's birth-rate will increase.

The residents' alignment has changed to active.

Guests can participate in the festival and enjoy themselves.

Rice snacks and wheat that were the Arpen Kingdom's specialities could be sold at the festival. The advances in productivity, the technology developed and the birth-rate increase were highly appreciated.

Many villages in the far north and the mountains have existed since the time of the Niflheim Empire. If the population increased then the merchant could trade in larger quantities. If the village grew into cities then the list of luxury goods would grow.

Villages isolated in the mountains of the north that weren't destroyed by monsters were developed by the merchants. While

Weed had a grasp of the circumstances in Morata and the Arpen Kingdom, he didn't know about the changed in Vent Castle and the north.

Many of the northern villages were destroyed by monsters so only a small number of people lived there. Users weren't interested in such places. The population didn't exceed 300 people maximum in those places.

It was just a momentary place to rest while exploring the continent. But the villages grew due to the merchants visiting and the influence of the Arpen Kingdom spread.

And it spread.

-The inhabitants of Risil Castle are impressed by the Arpen Kingdom's food production, technology development and cultural prosperity and wish to be ruled by it.

They had a village meeting and decided to belong to the Arpen Kingdom.

Specialties: None

Population: 1,491

Monthly Tax Revenue: 732 gold.

Villages steadily joined the Arpen Kingdom.

“Isn’t it true that King Weed doesn’t begrudge spending money on his residents, agriculture, technology and art development? I heard it from travellers. Many people are talking about the intelligent king of the north.”

“I heard that the Arpen Kingdom is a place that people can really live in. Of course it would be wonderful with a hero ruling it.”

“We can trust in the honourable King Weed. I will take my wife and children to Arpen Kingdom.”

Weed was known for his adventures, sculpting, Morata and the founding of the Arpen Kingdom so he had a significant impact on the residents of the north.

For the moment, the land was scarcely populated and of no use but if they got rid of the monsters then mine development could be accomplished. There were also specialities from the Niflheim Empire so if investments were made then they could reappear.

The territory of the Arpen Kingdom widened and the merchants obtained more profit from trading with the villages.

Merchants affiliated with a kingdom could have easy and comfortable dealings when making domestic trades. Normally only a few merchants would go to closed off villages but there was no such restrictions in the Arpen Kingdom. In addition, it was

possible to enhance their fame and contribution to the kingdom by making large profits in trades.

If there was a good village then merchants would buy farmland or abandoned mining areas. If they threw mercenaries at their investments to eradicate the monsters then they could make a steady profit. They also didn't forget to build stores and smithies. They could buy more goods in a village they had influence in.

Merchants didn't have a very good impression on the Versailles Continent.

- A miser who won't get rid of even 1 coin.

- A talkative person who spends time in the squares and talks nonsense.

- A profession with no combat power, can't adventure and has no goals other than making money.

Merchants had no merit other than making money according to other people. Most merchants were active on the Central Continent were the economic power and development was stable. Of course, merchants enjoyed themselves but other users didn't approve of their profession.

But the north was a paradise. Development speed increased depending on the activities of merchants riding on carriages. Beginners were absorbed by the Arpen Kingdom and spread in the

north. From the users' perspective, the villages they were active in became large and the quality of the goods sold improved.

The north was polished off by Mapan and Gamong!

Other combat professions respected them for their ability to develop a village.

-The merchants are raising the kingdom.

-Merchants are the flower of trade.

There was a re-evaluation of merchants. And some residents who were scholars said.

“The King of the Arpen Kingdom has a link to the Niflheim Empire.”

“What does that mean?”

“He is the only person that can bring the Niflheim Empire back.”

Weed had gone to Jigolaths and succeeded in a S rank quest.

The founding of the Niflheim Empire! The quest was just lingering and waiting for the conditions to be met. Weed had the title of Heir to the Niflheim Empire and this had a great effect on

the culture of the Arpen Kingdom.

Even the users and lords in the Arpen Kingdom were swayed by it. The villages in the north including Vent Castle started to show respect for Weed and their interest in the Arpen Kingdom increased.

Chapter 10: Talk Of Heroes

“Radiant Sword!”

Weed faced the waves and used the skill. The eagles shot out and separated the waves before disappearing.

-The proficiency of Radiant Sword has increased.

The daily training in a windy sea has increased the regeneration of all items that add mana and any priests that accompanied you. The place had rough rainfall and sharp winds blowing throughout the day. To the north of Varna Harbour was a beach where hardly any navigators sailed.

“This place is suitable to raise my skill proficiency.”

Weed's greatest asset was his concentration. He didn't go fishing but wielded his sword while standing on the rocks. The waves were so dangerous that it would cover the rocks if he glanced away.

He had to cut it precisely every time the waves swept towards him and he had to push back his instinctive fear when there was a huge storm.

It was a dark place without a separate day or night but marine creatures would appear in the evening.

“They are snacks.”

Weed used Radiant Sword against the sea and hunted monsters. It wasn't as high as a dungeon but his experience steadily climbed. The sea creatures tried to attack in groups but Seo-yoon, Bahamorg and Eltin.

“It is a bit risky but this is a quest I have to overcome.”

Weed didn't take a short break even when his mana or vitality ran out.

“Even if the monsters are too strong or I can't find the required quest items, I can't fail this quest!”

Grinding was about pride! Dozens of days passed and his skill proficiency increased so much that 5 eagles were flying out from Weed's sword towards the crashing storm waves.

The mana consumption rose but the destructive power and range also increased. Radiant Sword was now Intermediate level 1.

“The power of the sword technique has risen so I can go to a more dangerous place.”

Weed took a raft out to sea.

Sailing on a sailboat in a severe storm was impossible, let alone

riding the turbulent sea on a raft of woven logs. However, he had a certain amount of sailing skill so he was determined.

The storm became increasingly severe and the wind was raging. Weed balanced on the raft and swung his sword. When he was about to fall into the sea, Weed would use his past sculpture Light Wings to leave his seat quickly.

He desperately fought against the turbulent waves and rain that made his previous dungeon hunts seemed easy.



Seo-yoon came over to his house while Lee Hyun was in the capsule. She had been visiting day and night since moving in next door.

Bark bark bark!

Dogmeat acted even friendlier then he did towards Lee Hyun as he barked and wagged his tail.

“Have you been waiting? Eat a lot.”

Seo-yoon generously poured food into Dogmeat’s bowl and generously gave him snacks. Dogmeat ate all the snacks and bone broth while Seo-yoon brushed off the fur on her.

Cackle!

The chickens welcomed Seo-yoon when they saw her. Even the yellow chicks waddled around her. The rabbits lay in a pile of grass and stared at her with large, shining eyes. The ducks came along like they belonged with her.

“Ducks should be raised in a puddle....”

The ducks and chickens locked up looked pitiful. Seo-yoon made a large pond when building her house for the ducks.

“I’ll take the ducks.”

“Why?”

“Don’t they smell and make a lot of noise?”

“Sometimes.”

“I’m going to train them at my house. I’ll also give them rice.”

“Take care of it.”

The ducks were plopped down in a pond that was large enough for a person to swim in. Seo-yoon already controlled the hearts of all the animals in this house.



Weed risked his life!

The outcome was that his Radiant Sword skill proficiency kept on rising. Weed's mood was high when a lightning bolt suddenly struck the sea. Luckily he had items with lightning resistance and managed to avoid the lightning storm or he wouldn't have survived.

Weed was a hot topic once his training was shown on the broadcast.

"I really should rethink becoming a sculptor. He already had several large battles as part of his quests and now he has to endure that?"

"It is said that the Sculptor's Master Quest is one of the most difficult among all Class Master Quests. It is unknown what stage he is even up to anymore."

People saw Weed's behaviour and mistakenly thought of it as part of his Master Quest. If they knew it was for a secret sculpting technique then everyone would be astonished but that could never be disclosed. He wouldn't tell them even after acquiring the skill.

However, many beginner sculptors changed to other professions like a Painter. If the Master Quest was too hard then it would be

better to give up early and change to another profession.



Geomchi5 decided to proceed on the Martial Artist Master Quest first.

“I heard that you cleaned up the monsters. Recently there is a group of bandits that have become a threat.....”

“Should I kill them?”

“The martial arts they are using isn’t ordinary. Only someone who knows martial arts can get rid of those people.”

Geomchi5 beat the quest using his sword fighting skills. The quests for a martial artist fit Geomchi5’s inclination perfectly. He could fight against his enemies to get stronger skills.

Wielding a sword was good but Geomchi5 was completely immersed in the effects of the skills. The skills were useful in special situations and the person using it looked quite flashy. Looking cool in a fight was very important.

“These days the soldiers are too weak. At this rate I don’t know if peace can be defended. Please teach the soldiers some martial arts.....”

“I will teach them until they feel like dying.”

Geomchi5 smoothly proceeded through his quests. There weren't any difficult quests. But then he bumped into an obstacle on one of the quests!

“I heard that you help people in trouble. Please rescue our daughter.”

A farmer said while clinging to him.

“They dragged my daughter to the Rui Thieves' Lair. Who knows what they will do to my poor child..... Rob those bad guys until they have nothing left.”

Geomchi5 nodded his head.

“Well, I have to accept your request after hearing that.”

Some martial artist quests didn't give compensation but fame and intimacy with the residents rose instead.

“This is a picture of my daughter that a painter drew.”

Ddirring!

-You have obtained a picture of the farmer's wife and daughter.

“Looking at this will be helpful.”

Geomchi5 unfolded the picture without any expectations.

“Heeok.”

A beautiful girl with long, straight hair and a bright smile!

“Father-in-law, did you say the Rui Thieves’ Lair? I will go help immediately.”

He entered the Rui Thieves’ Lair as soon as he accepted the quest. He managed to rescue her but it was too late and she was already dying.

It was his Class Master Quest so even if he failed, another chance came again a few days later. This time a merchant asked him to rescue his daughter.

-You have obtained a picture of a young lady on the streets of Rase.

“Father-in-law!”

This time he went to rescue her but failed to bring the daughter out safely. His skill in Weapons Mastery and judgement in battle was superior but he was limited on a fundamental level.

“I am too weak.”

A martial artist frequently had combat quests so his level was essential! Geomchi5 felt powerless so he desperately hunted before making another attempt and succeeded.

“Thank you for bringing back my daughter safely.”

“It’s nothing, Sir. A man should be able to do this much.”

“It is shabby but this is an old map. I don’t know what you can find....”

“No. I didn’t do this because I was hoping for anything in return.”

“I’m so grateful! My daughter is back so now she can have a wedding ceremony with her fiance.”

“Kuheuhuk.”



-Sailing skill has increased to Intermediate level 1.

Acceleration of the ship will increase by 2% and the probability of

the ship being overturned by rough conditions has decreased by 6%.

Damage to the hull when there is a storm will be reduced. When cannons are used, the shaking of the ship will reduce.

The effect of all skills related to the skill related to the sea has increased.

- Perseverance stat has increased by 15.

- Health has increased by 500.

- Skilful navigation has increased all stats by 3.

His Sailing skill increased while on the raft. This wasn't a relaxing sail on a boat without any wind. Weed rode the raft and fought against a storm every day. Dark clouds filled the sky and it was constantly raining.

Kurururung!

Fearful lightning struck the sea! He desperately struggled to stop the raft from being overturned by waves.

- You have been struck by rain for a long time so Vitality has been reduced by 21%.

“Today is a crisis.”

To be honest, Weed was having fun. His desire to challenge tough things burned inside him as he fought against the heavy waves. He needed to concentrate or he would die if he fell into the water.

He found a wild side while cutting apart the waves. He could live as a free man without worrying about morals or discipline. That's why many people lived on the sea.

If Weed ran out of vitality then he would come to land and carve the rocks.

A swordsman against the sea!

He sailed on the raft and carved sculptures while fighting against powerful sharks.

“I'm somewhat lonely.”

He made a sculpture of a Blue Marin while observing the features of any sea monsters he discovered.

The sea storms also forced out huge and strong marine creatures. But they didn't come anywhere without a fast flowing water current. While Weed was training on the raft, they were waiting with open mouths under the water.

Amid the wind and rain, the water turned a little darker due to the marine creatures.

“It has been a little over 1 month since I started this quest.”

Thanks to the dangerous training, Radiant Sword reached Intermediate level 4.

“This is enough to achieve the quest.”

It was the 37th day. A more severe storm than usual blew in. The ropes tying Weed's raft together couldn't resist the power of the waves and broke apart.

Plop!

Weed was concentrating on Radiant Sword and his reaction was a second too late. In the end he fell into the sea.

‘The prey has come.’

‘It was worth waiting.’

The marine creatures shook their fins and approached. There was even a kraken whose body exceeded dozens of metres. The marine monsters gathered in order to eat Weed.

‘A rare nutritious food.’

‘A strong human.’

Monsters liked strong enemies. If they won the fight then they could grow and learn skills. There were many battles between races on the Versailles Continent and it was common for the winning forces to become stronger.

A human that fell into the water was normally weaker than the sea creatures. They usually couldn't exert their combat power. Moreover, their ability to resist a severe storm would fall.

“Kkururuk!”

Weed struggled but drifted away due to the rapid sea currents. Waves 8~9 metres washed over him. Suddenly there was an immense wave of water 40~50 metres big.

-You are having trouble breathing.

Water has entered your mouth.

The abilities of your body has fallen.

Wakjak!

The kraken's tentacles struck the place where Weed was. The logs remaining from the raft were shattered. Other marine creatures tried to swallow him but they just drank water in vain. The sea currents didn't flow in one direction but surged in complicated patterns.

Weed spiritlessly floated around on the waves.

-Fatigue has reached 85%.

Maximum vitality has decrease and it can cause major problems when using skills.

Although his fatigue was high, the increase in Concentration stat meant that his skill proficiency could grow quickly. However, the bad situation meant he was worried about dying immediately.

In the middle of his desperate crisis, Weed pulled a rope that was tied to his ankle. It was a rope connected to an empty barrel. He grabbed the floating wooden barrel and managed to catch his breath.

He couldn't support his body because of the waves so he had no choice but to swallow seawater. If he drank the water without breathing then he would lose consciousness.

That's why grabbing the wooden barrel was a great help.

"It really seems like I'm going to die. I have a lot of savings...."

They weren't visible but the sea creatures were coming from underwater to eat him. When he was on the raft, he would use his Light Wings so they had been aiming for a chance when he couldn't escape. They crowded all over the place once he fell into the sea. It was the horror of being eaten by sea monsters!

“Light Wings!”

Radiant wings unrolled behind Weed's back and he flew into the air.

Peseseok!

At that moment, the wooden barrel was crushed by the big mouth of a monster.

The broken pieces of the raft or any piece of land couldn't be seen. It was difficult to determine a direction due to the high waves, rain and dark clouds.

“I have to get out of here quickly. But which way should I go?”

The severe storms and winds made abnormal sea currents and waves. His vitality and mana fell from the rough wind and thick rain. If he fell into the water then he wouldn't be able to swim due to the weight of his armour. Moreover, the water was filled with sea creatures waiting with open mouths.

“There are a few other ways but.....”

Causing a disaster here would be a double sided edge. A disaster falling in this stormy place would just kill him.

“There may be a way to survive the sea.”

Before using such an extreme way, he could also use Sculpture Transformation to turn into a sea creature. Rebirth as a large fish or a squid monster! Training without any precautions in a storm was reckless.

“Well let’s go somewhere else first.”

Weed opened his Light Wings and flew up high. The wind was intense and lightning also struck high in the sky.

“It doesn’t seem to be in this direction. There is no visible signs of land. Let’s go to the right.”

The storm became increasingly intense.

“Not here either. Then once again to the right.....”

He quickly swerved the thick intense and intense, frightful waves.

“Not this side either. This seems to be the centre of the storm.”

Weed took threats to his life seriously. Although the storm was intense, he couldn't afford to enter the sea.

Then a pure white shell rose up in the sea!

“That is.....”

He had given life to many sculptures in the Jigolaths. The nature of several species that lived in the sea meant they escaped from Weed's grasp.

Among them was the Malleins Eunoto Turtle! A huge turtle that lived in the depths of the ocean, Surka had often played with it.

“Turtle. Turtle.”

It was Turtle crying out to Weed.

Weed had a great understanding of life.

“Living a good life will give blessings. Reading the contents of a child's storybook wasn't a waste.”

“Turtle. Turtle.”

“Let’s go Turtle!”

Weed landed on Turtle’s back. The Malleins Eunoto Turtle was originally an extinct species but was given life using Sculpture Life Bestowal. It had unusual markings on the flat shell and many oysters stuck to it.

“I can do the rest of the training on this shell.”

He was going to use Turtle until the end of his quest.



Time passed as Weed concentrated on training in the stormy sea. A period of more than 100 days wasn’t a short amount of time.

“Hahahaha, I finally found the treasure!”

The Adventurer Chase found a royal treasure while completing his Class Quest!

“Have you heard about the adventurer called Chase? He just became tremendously rich.”

“He became an Earl in the Brent Kingdom and bought a plot of land. He is now building a house that could be called a palace.”

The story about Chase spread through Royal Road. The dungeon scene where he unearthed the treasure was so popular it continued being played as reruns during the late night hours.

Warrior Python swung his sword in the Averian Forest, one of the continent's 10 forbidden zones. His Class Master Quest required him to hunt a boss monster here. It was possible to hire soldiers and receive the help of others but he chose to fight alone. Python had the wild charm of a wolf so many users cheered him on.

Farmer Miretas developed new crops and greeted a year with abundant harvests. The great crop yields rapidly increased the birth rate of the city. It was a large topic that Miretas had settled down in the Arpen Kingdom for his Master Quest.

“There is good climate, an abundance of blessings from the Freya Church, a wide fertile land and irrigation from rivers and lakes so the Arpen Kingdom is really good for farming.”

Miretas was a farmer who loved peace. He had lands in the Dale Kingdom but he had to offer half of his grain crops as tax. The Arpen Kingdom had low taxes and the warehouse storage fees were cheap. This was a lot of benefit to farmers so he couldn't help admiring that point. Weed was a king with consideration and support for each profession so they could feel at ease.

“There is only one set of these clothes on the continent.”

Drago advanced to his eighth quest. He went to a village on the

edge of the Arpen Kingdom and made clothes for the children. He cut the fabric, sewed buttons and watched children running around in clothes he made. They were NPCs but it felt like he was a parent giving clothes to his children. This was something that only someone who made clothes could feel.

“The form is good with fine lines and it fits well..... The feeling also matches the clothes.”

The residents who put on the clothes became happy. If the residents wore clothes made for specific tasks then their results would be much better. The users on the Chef Class Master Quest went to places on the continent suffering from war, plagues or disasters.

“The ingredients found here... I have to cook everything that can satisfy hunger.”

Food was prepared for the weak and starving. Residents would gather once they heard a chef had arrived and the chef's fame spread.

Heroes were born from the Class Master Quests.

Of course, there were also quests for bad classes from warlocks, thieves and assassins. The Master Quest could make a hero or a villain.

A person who first chose an assassin for quick hunting decided to

do the Master Quest.

Ddiring!

-Choice in the Shadows

You are someone who lives in the darkness. It is possible for you to snatch someone's precious life.

If you want to enjoy prosperity then assassinate 10 rich merchants in the city.

And if you want to maintain your honour and pride then assassinate 30 people committing wicked acts on the continent.

The wicked person has to be at a higher level than you.

Level of Difficulty: Assassin Master Quest

Quest Restrictions: Assassination skill Advanced level 7.

You can't allow yourself to be detected while doing the quest.

"Assassinating wicked people...."

The continent's top assassin. The unknown man was drinking beer at a tavern alone. He had many achievements on the

Versailles Continent and hunting secretly.

An assassin was a profession that didn't need to hunt in a party. Even so, their damage was the absolute best about combat professions. Traps could confuse strong monsters or surprise attacks meant an assassin could gain experience and skill proficiency quite quickly.

Of course, they also needed to be prepared for more danger.

“The difficult one will be more fun.”

The assassin left the tavern and his cloak fluttered as he disappeared into the crowd.

Since that day, vicious lords and high ranking members of the Embinyu Church suddenly lost their lives. The residents of the Versailles Continent cheered but it wasn't clear that it was the actions of an assassin. His every movement was so covert that no one knew his name.



The continent was no different from the Warring States period. The boundaries of the kingdoms built in the early days of Royal Road changed as the conquest war continued.

The Kallamore and Lasalle Kingdoms had disappeared and rumours about heroes spread quickly. The peace of the kingdoms

deteriorated so the residents became dependent on heroes.

“There will be a magnificent coronation five days from now.”

The Black Sword Mercenaries won the civil war and inherited the king's seat for Gradian Kingdom. It was to win the hearts of the public through the ceremony. The Gradian Kingdom would now start a war of conquest under the control of the Black Sword Mercenaries.

“The status of the knights?”

“Very good.”

“Then the next area to capture.....”

They invaded the villages at the border of the kingdoms controlled by the Roam Guild. The United Supremacy Guild had broken so they couldn't miss this opportunity.

“We have to grab many villages from the weak guys.”

“We have the precedent of the Hermes Guild so it is okay.”

Anyway, they didn't believe in anything like an eternal alliance. In the end they needed to accumulate a large power if they wanted to conquer the continent. Only the Cloud Guild and Hermes Guild were completely silent but their circumstances were completely

different.

The Cloud Guild have been deprived of territory and their grip on the Britten Alliance Kingdom was weakening. It was like a sun who had shone for a while and was now gradually darkening.

They had experienced a large defeat to the Hermes Guild and was slowly collapsing. That's because users left the losing guild. If they stayed together then they could continue fighting against the Hermes Guild.

Even with the disadvantageous situation, the economic power and population of the Britten Alliance Kingdom meant they could have a dramatic come behind victory. However, many users left the Cloud Guild after suffering a crushing defeat and feeling intimidated by the Hermes Guild. The Cloud Guild belatedly took steps but they were unable to change the situation.

Meanwhile the Hermes Guild was rapidly expanding their military power while taking care of domestic administration. Now the Cloud Guild didn't have the ability to declare war. The Hermes Guild wasn't taking action now but everyone knew they would be advancing at a terrifying speed when they did.

Haven Empire!

It had the economic and military power of an empire so the other guilds paid attention to them.

The Central Continent was also suffering from the Embinyu Church. Many high level users died and became weakened in the wars, residents lost their lives and people closed their stores. There were many thriving cities that turned to ashes.

Despite the overwhelming military and economic power of the Versailles Continent, the users were gradually losing the assets they accumulated.

The situation in the east, west and south continents was a little different. Even if a kingdom was small, peace was high so the Embinyu Church couldn't take root easily.

In the east, Brent Kingdom and the Rosenheim Kingdom decided to settle their rivalry to fight against the Embinyu Church together.

The tribal kingdoms and barbarians aggressively resisted the Embinyu Church.

And the north was changing rapidly.

Chapter 11: Sea Turtle

“Life is what it is... I started to understand this as I grew older.”

Bart could understand why his daughter Seo-yoon and other people were excited about Royal Road.

Reality wasn't warm like a fairy tale and the relationship with other people was cold. Too many people mechanically lived their lives floating through school and work.

People became lonely as time passed and they aged. They drank, found hobbies and travelled but recognized that they were lonely. However they weren't alone in Royal Road.

“I heard that the chef Jeiren developed a unique grass porridge. It is free to eat until the sun rises.”

“Going to conquer the dungeon filled with grey wolves! We've already been wiped out 9 times. This time we will definitely succeed. A thrilling quest for people less than level 60.”

“Selling steel belts. To be honest, it is very heavy and rusty so the defense has lowered. So I'll be selling it cheaply. Selling urgently! If I sell this then I can buy a hat for my mother.”

The square was overflowing with people shouting. Of course, there was also a lot of people in real life department stores,

subways and parks. But they were bleak and there was no emotion regarding relationships.

In Royal Road, everyone spoke regarding hunting or trading so it was easy to become friends. It didn't take a long time to become familiar with someone.

“The Hermes Guild isn't bad.”

“There is no need to bring it up.”

They helped on difficult tasks and attacked together. People could go on exciting adventures with those they got along with so it was no wonder Royal Road was popular.

‘I now understand why Cha Eun-hee showed Royal Road to Seoyoon.’

Living in a different world. And this was a world where the pleasure of meeting important friends could be experienced. In reality, a familiar routine was repeated every day while there were dramatic incidents on the Versailles Continent. It was a fun world because it was dangerous!

And he heard talk about Weed almost every day.

“Did you see Weed-nim's adventure?”

“Yes, it completely thrilled me. He sailed a raft into a storm.”

“The residents were just talking about him.”

“Yes. I heard.”

The residents spoke about how Weed fell into the sea.

“They’re talking about the King of the Arpen Kingdom.”

“Weed? A sailor said he fell into the sea so he might’ve been eaten by a shark now.”

“What will happen to our kingdom from now on?”

“His Majesty is a person who thinks about honour more than a knight. More righteous than anyone else. If he is experiencing a storm then he has a reason. If you think about disparaging him then get out of my store.”

The users and residents of the Arpen Kingdom praised Weed.

“I seem to have mistaken him.”

In the past, Weed was getting close to Seo-yoon so Bard didn’t have a good impression of him. He handed over an envelope of money but Weed didn’t accept it.

“He has the ability to rule a kingdom. He might be worthless regarding money but he seems to be a solid youth.”

Bard’s evaluation of Weed turned more positive as he spend time in the Arpen Kingdom.

“Weed looks really stupid. He was also stepped on by Bardray.”

“I want to travel all around the continent on adventures. Don’t jinx it.”

“What is the Grass Porridge Cult? There should be tonkatsu grass porridge and pizza grass porridge. Ggol ggol ggol!”

Some male users were drinking beer at a tavern and blaming Weed. They were acting boldly while drunk and made a mistake.

Bang!

It hadn’t even been 3 minutes since leaving the tavern before they were killed. Users quietly drinking in a corner followed them and attacked. The users knew that they could live comfortably in the north because Weed reclaimed it.

Bard had to admit that Weed’s presence in Royal Road was like the sky.

“Mister, over here!”

“We’ve been waiting for 20 minutes. Why were you so slow?”

Bart was managing a company so he didn’t have a lot of time. His judgement in battle was also inferior to others. He reached level 32 but he still found the kobolds scary. Frankly, it was normal for him to cause trouble for his party.

He was thankful that his colleagues didn’t abandon him and kept hunting with him. This was the hunting party he was introduced to after joining the Grass Porridge Cult

“I’m sorry. I was looking around while selling....”

“Have you prepared everything?”

“Appreciated an artwork?”

“Ah, I forgot....”

It was a basic part of living in Morata to appreciate an artwork before hunting.

“It’s okay. We’re going far away today so we’re going to visit the Garden of the Gods.”

The party appreciated Weed’s sculptures and went hunting.



When there was 7 days left on his quest deadline, Weed’s Radiant Sword reached Advanced level 2.

Ddirring!

-Radiant Sword has reached Advanced level 2.

You can utilize a special type of bird.

The range of the attack has increased.

-The skill level necessary for the quest has been achieved.

Goal accomplished. In the meantime his Sword Mastery had also reached Advanced level 4. It was the effect of training on the back of Turtle.

The mana consumption of Radiant Sword was low compared to its increase in damage. So far he could utilize multiple attack skills like Heriam Fencing and Moonlight Sculpting Blade but Radiant Sword was overwhelming. The attack range was wider than ordinary users so he could use the skill to overwhelm them.

A group of eagles would appear to attack the enemy. 10 thick eagles made of light destroyed the high waves with terrible power.

Furthermore, Radiant Sword reached advanced level so it was possible to call a thunderbird. A thunderbird had the capacity to make monsters tremble and emit thunder around it.

“This is a secret technique for a reason.”

Weed was very satisfied.

The thunderbird consumed 15,000 mana for a ranged attack. It was more memorable when the thunderbird would fly through a crowd of monsters while striking them with thunderbolts. Usually a wide area skill that targeted 1~2 targets like this would level up quickly.

“I’m sad for some reason.”

Normally in a fight, Weed would attack all opponents directly with his sword. Long distance attacks were possible with Sculpting Blade but the attack damage wasn’t worth the mana consumption. It was normally used when the opponent was weakened or the level was lower.

“An easy technique like this....”

It was like when Weed bought a washing machine after normally hand washing his laundry.

“It is that feeling of buying a vacuum cleaner after wiping with a rag. I can really relax as it sucks up every bit of dust and hair.”

Weed had an attachment to household goods. It was to the point that he didn't know why there wasn't a Nobel prize for appliances.

And swinging his sword also raised his Sword Mastery skill to advanced level.

“Let's go someplace else.”

Turtle obediently followed Weed's command. The large shell moved on the surface while it swam on all fours. Turtle persisted through pounding storms that it would've normally avoided.

“I gave you life... Please do this for me.”

Turtle swam with its full strength. It thought Weed was returning to land so it was happy.

‘It listens to me well. Is there a way to make it work more?’

Weed passed through various stormy areas with Turtle's help.

Ddiring!

-You have found a shellfish attached to a reef.

A shellfish grows in a sea environment and can be found attached to reefs.

If you tell a marine guild then you can gain fame as the discoverer.

-Fame has increased by 190 due to the surprising discovery.

-Art stat has increased by 2.

-Affinity to Nature has increased by 9.

Sometimes he would get close to unknown reefs in a storm. A ship could become caught in a sea current and crash on the reefs. Weed had discovered one such reef.

“Things can be found in nature!”

-You have picked a Heyeop Shellfish.

It could be eaten fresh with chilli paste or honey. It could also be boiled or used to make other foods.

Sometimes dangerous things would appear when searching for ingredients. Those with skill in Herbalism could safeguard against

it however he had practice while brewing drinks for the Geomchis.

-Superb view!

The graveyard of a whale has been found.

A small island made of stone. A whale approaching the end of its life came here to greet death.

-Fame has increased by 760 due to the surprising discovery.

-Art stat has increased by 3.

-Health has increased by 750.

-Affinity to Nature has increased by 11.

The island was filled with the bones of a whale.

“Perhaps there is some leather remaining....”

Weed searched everywhere and acquired the leather of a mink whale.

“Inspect!”

-Mink Whale Leather: Durability 43/45

Item related to the Sewing production skill.

The ultimate clothing material. The skin of a whale that lives in the deep ocean.

It is the toughest leather and barely rips apart.

Contains the characteristics of water.

It isn't light.

Intermediate Sewing skill is required to cut the Mink Whale Leather.

1st grade sewing item.

Options: Grants the special characteristic of water.

A fisherman that obtained whale meat and leather wouldn't lack for tailors wanting to buy it. It wasn't leather for light clothes or armour but could be used for summoners and magicians. The characteristic of water would increase water magic so they would put up with the weight.

“Later I can get profit from this.”

Turtle guided Weed to other places it knew. Weed was able to pick up coral and pearls during his travels.

“Finally I can see land!”

Weed arrived at a coast with 3 days left in his deadline.

Even if it couldn't see anything, Turtle lived in the sea so it was the best navigator that couldn't get lost.

The beautiful milky skin of the Malleins Eunoto Turtle showed off its charm. The solid shell wasn't easily broken so it could live in the depths of the sea without worrying about other tough creatures. When Turtle appeared, its appearance was so majestic that other creatures would be intimidated.

“Kkukkuuk.”

But now it was panting like it was dying and could barely raise its neck.

Normally it swam calmly in the sea so its four feet was now tired. It had to carry Weed while he was training and swim in dangerous places.

“That was a really good place. It was difficult to visit because of the intense whirlpool.”

“Let’s go.”

“It is possible to see seaweeds if you dive under the sea. The seaweed dances when the water flow changes and the schools of fish is really wonderful.”

“What, you’re not diving?”

Weed appreciated nature from Turtle’s shell. After completing his sword training, he would catch fish, sea cucumber, abalone, crab and oysters to eat.

“This one... It is good for you to eat.”

Turtle felt thankful to Weed in the early stages so it naturally accepted the food.

“Shall we eat grilled Spanish Mackerel today?”

“The freshness is falling!”

“Hey, I’m hungry! Are you trying to kill me with starvation? You are going too slow.”

“Stick with it. I will return to land a little later.....”

The gentle Turtle didn't complain despite all this. In the meantime it was overworked and couldn't get any proper nutrients so its skin became old and vitality wasn't as good as before.

In contrast, Weed's face was so incredibly smooth it was difficult to believe he trained in a storm. This appearance showed how well he ate at sea. His clothes also dried once rain stopped falling because he was on the turtle's back.

Weed's feet finally touched land.

Ddirring!

-Your long voyage has finished.

The extinct Malleins Eunoto Turtle has returned you to land.

You didn't move great distances but exploring a stormy area is a large adventure for a sailor.

-The degree of proficiency of the Sailing skill has increased.

-Fame has increased by 610.

- Perseverance has increased by 7.

"It has been approximately 60 days since I've seen the

continent.”

It had also been a long time since he climbed on a small island. Turtle hurriedly turned back towards the sea as soon as Weed descended. Only a sculptural lifeform would know this feeling of finally being washed after being dirty.

“Turtle, this is our destiny.... Do you want to live together on land?”

“.....”

Turtle had no desire to answer. Weed granted it life but Turtle had suffered so that intimacy had already decreased.

Weed watched Turtle disappear before nodding.

“It is shy. It is a good one... I’ll come to play with it once summer comes to the Versailles Continent.”



A Royal Road expo held by the Unicorn Corporation!

It was held every year for 5 days at a convention centre so the interest of the world gravitated here. Apart from South Korea, there was an enormous amount of users from other countries. The perfect translator system meant that foreigners could be unleashed

in Royal Road.

A Royal Road expo could truly be described as a festival of the world.

“The event for my class is starting at 3 o’clock.”

“Then let’s go there. I think that is about orcs.”

“We have to wait 1 hour in line before it is our turn.”

Hundreds of thousands of visitors came daily.

Royal Road was a worldwide hit so many people from the business world came as well. Unicorn Corporation’s net profit was an astronomical amount. There was also a growing momentum as its income had doubled in 6 months. The money gained from Royal Road was invested into new businesses.

Businesses like developing new materials, chemistry, robotics, environmentally friendly technology, etc. The banks that fell into a temporary financial difficult were also taken over. They encountered criticism for their octopus like expansion but the success in every business meant that Unicorn Corporation’s assets were explosively expanding.

The public knew of it as the creator of the first virtual reality but the financial and political world feared Unicorn Corporation.



“It was also sent this year.”

This morning Lee Hyun pulled out an invitation to the expo from his mail. The gold envelope was indicative of a VIP invitation!

Lee Hyun-nim is invited to see the vision that turned dream into reality.

The name tag included in the envelop had a sensor recognition and can be attached to his clothes. The gold name tag that symbolized a VIP!

“There are no free gifts like souvenirs or rice so I won’t go.”

Unicorn Corporation’s public relations team considered for a few days before sending a separate invitation. The number of invitations to the expo was limited but they were clamouring to get Lee Hyun. That was because they did a thorough identification before sending the invitation.



Yoo Byung-jin watched the expo from a screen in his laboratory.

“There are a lot of people this year. Even more than last year.”

-There are no seats and the number of people exceeds 2 million.

Even motor shows and game exhibitions in Korea could easily gather 1 million people. They liked seeing new things.

Visitors who received a special invitation from Unicorn Corporation came from all over the world. It was to the extent that separate police were assigned and news about foreign politicians and business people were shown every day.

“Did Lee Hyun come?”

-He hasn't come yet.

Today is the last day so he probably isn't showing. Users from the Hermes Guild and other prestigious guilds also received invitations. Bardray came, did some media interviews and explored a little bit before leaving.

“He didn't come once.”

Yoo Byung-jin created Royal Road and enjoyed it every time it was a topic of conversation. But he felt strange watching this.

‘Is that fun and makes you feel happy?’

Reality and virtual reality. It was possible to feel a wide range of

emotions when living in another world.

Since Royal Road was released and became popular, there had been an endless philosophical debate. How far does the scope of life go and what about the choices of humans in reality and virtual reality?

Articles and best-selling books were released about it. There were religious and philosophical controversy but many users had already joined Royal Road.

It could be said that human desire was very large. If they obtained one thing then they would wish for another.

A famous saying. You want to eat if you're hungry and lie down when full.

Modern society offered many conveniences to humans but didn't satisfy their destructive nature. And they were subjected to the stress of the workplace. The technology used to develop Royal Road was like a paradise to them. Anyone who made such a space would become popular worldwide.

‘The reaction is different from what I thought.’

Yoo Byung-jin couldn't feel any delight in his success. He wanted to make the virtual reality space show the bitterness of reality even more.

‘See how absurd the world you live in is. This reality is nothing. I made this virtual space.’

Yoo Byung-jin’s legacy of a huge amount of Unicorn Corporation’s stocks was something that anyone would desire. He wanted someone to conquer Royal Road so he could laugh at the world.

But people really liked Royal Road and experienced euphoria in it. They preferred it over the hard life in reality.

This wasn’t what Yoo Byung-jin intended.

If there was a fun and happy place then people’s minds would become peaceful. They weren’t feeling negatively like Yoo Byung-jin thought. The world of Royal Road was fascinating and they became faithful to it over time.

It made them feel better and they started to use this feeling in their workplace and lives. Humans weren’t as simple and weak as some thought. Sometimes they could overcome problems with time and hard work. A place to relieve that pressure also helped.

“They like it so much that I feel ill.”

Yoo Byung-jin said as he surveyed the expo through the monitor.

It really had a festival like atmosphere. The bright form of a family holding a child could be seen.

Yu Byeong-Joon asked the artificial intelligence.

“Can you cut off the power supply to the expo?”

-It is possible. It will soon switch to the emergency power system but that can be destroyed.

Many parts were controlled by the artificial intelligence Versailles. This building was powered with green energy so it wouldn't be difficult to cut it off.

Yoo Byung-jin watched the people on the monitor with bloodshot eyes.

A woman holding a child. He spend a lifetime experimenting with machines so it was difficult to understand their feelings.

‘Why are they laughing like that? Many things in life are difficult.’

Owner of Unicorn Corporation. Creator of Royal Road. The world's richest. A person with a behind the scene influence in business circles.

He was able to watch everything happening in Royal Road. He had accomplished more than others but his heart was weak.

Other people were giving birth, establishing a home and living their lives. Yoo Byung-jin felt strange whenever he observed such sights.

“Versailles.”

-Yes, please give a command.

“This should be answered according to your judgement, not instructions. Am I a normal person?”

The artificial intelligence replied without hesitation.

-Of course.

Yoo Byung-jin realized something after watching all the people.

‘It seems like I was a bit wrong.’

Book 32: Demon Slayer

Chapter 1: Expansion Of The Arpen Kingdom

Weed was advancing through the quests for the final secret sculpting technique. Sword of Light that Splits Everything Radiant Sword reached Advanced level 2 after training on the stormy sea. Now he needed to make a nature sculpture for his connected quest. It was a quest that he had to pass as a sculptor!

“If I became a merchant then I would receive quests that will enable me to make profit from trading. Nature Sculpting is extremely difficult...it is natural to be worried.”

A technique that could carve nature! It was a type of miracle that could use clouds, water, wind, wood and even dirt as a material. A red tinged sunset, coloured leaves, the coast and snow covered mountains. Anything could be expressed using Nature Sculpting. Weed started to look for land that he could fill with a nature sculpture.

“I have to make the sculpture in the north. I won't be comfortable creating it in any place other than the north.”

Land speculation was important when creating the sculpture. The land of the Arpen Kingdom in the north was constantly widening. The kingdom's fame and influence in neighbouring regions was high and that also benefited users. When users from the Arpen Kingdom visited other villages, the residents would run out aggressively.

“I have been waiting for someone from the Arpen Kingdom to come!”

“Ah, hello.”

“There is something I want to ask of you Adventurer. Did you bring any wonderful artwork from the Arpen Kingdom?”

Ddirring!

-Arpen's Art

Sculptors, painters, ceramists etc. are producing many works in Morata of the Arpen Kingdom. Residents in the north who couldn't see the rumoured artwork are envious.

They want you to bring them a piece of art. The residents will react favourably to strangers if you complete this kindness for them.

Level of Difficulty: E

Quest Restrictions: Visitor to the village.

The visitor must belong to the Arpen Kingdom.

It wasn't difficult so users happily accepted the quest. They had collected many sculptures and paintings from their time in Morata. Therefore they were able to complete the quest as soon as they received it.

The residents wanted to hear stories about dangerous adventures to unknown lands and traded with merchants. The users who completed the quest, helped restore peace and did commercial transactions opened the hearts of the residents to the Arpen Kingdom.

-The residents of Carmel River look up to the Arpen Kingdom.

They are a small community that obtain food through fishing. They build houses high on the river in order to avoid the threat of monsters.

The fishermen who have knowledge of the species in the river complex have their eyes opened to culture thanks to the Arpen Kingdom. It is only a small community but they are eager to belong to the Arpen Kingdom.

Small and deserted villages will welcome migrants.

Specialties: 17 species of freshwater fish.

Population: 63

Monthly Tax Revenue: 3 gold.

-The residents of Niasan village look up to the Arpen Kingdom.

Residents can obtain income through logging and gathering mushrooms in the forest. In the meantime a trade route has been established and there are frequent exchanges with merchants.

The residents are in need of good and wish to trade with the Arpen Kingdom. The village has respect for the King of the Arpen Kingdom and wished to be ruled by him.

Specialties: Wood, mushrooms

Population: 319

Monthly Tax Revenue: 536 gold

The territory of the Arpen Kingdom was steadily expanding. Small villages that didn't belong to anyone after the fall of the Niflheim Empire was actively absorbed by the Arpen Kingdom's influence. Furthermore, the users were also very excited.

“In the old days, no visitors were allowed into the village and now I am receiving the utmost welcome.”

“If I speak then they will answer right away.”

“Hey, yesterday the neighbourhood child picked flowers for me

as a gift.”

The influence of the Arpen Kingdom was favourable to the users. There was a boom in development and trade expansion in the north.

“I have to offer my loyalty to the Arpen Kingdom’s King who did so much for the north.”

“He is a king who knows devotion and honour.”

NPC lords and nobles also came to join the Arpen Kingdom. Although the territory was widening, the economic profit from the residents was small.

Weed was very sensitive about taxes and the amount paid to lords had already decreased. If the village was small then the tax would only be 30 gold, 70 gold and 1,000 gold at most. But it was a tremendous opportunity for farmers, miners and merchants.

“Which village are you going to?”

“I’m going towards the east.”

“That place is a wasteland.”

“I’ll have to clear it. I’m going to make it my land.”

“Well, I’m going to the large mountains to the northwest to look for iron ore.”

“If the ground is weak then you’ll be in danger.”

“There is no need to worry since we’ve gathered 100 miners. I’ll work until my pickaxe breaks.”

The area that Morata users spent time in gradually widened. The birth-rate of the entire North Continent increased and production was expanding. Soldiers secured the peace for settles and villages in good locations rapidly developed.

Morata was the capital of the Arpen Kingdom and now many medium sized villages were showing up. Luxury shops, housing and production facilities were built to increase the infrastructure of the kingdom’s capital city. Beautiful buildings were created and gave the city a more romantic and glamorous appearance.

The entire north was welcoming the Arpen Kingdom. The impact of Weed’s influence was that residents would obey if he ever gave orders in the villages. Weed was satisfied with the Arpen Kingdom.

“Land speculation...I need to create a nature sculpture that is comfortable for Morata and Vargo Fortress.”

He flew on Wy-3 in the sky and searched for a suitable location.

“Land not being used for anything else. Location is everything.”

The magnificent mountain terrain was too high and the wide rivers were likely to become flooded.

Broken remnants of the Niflheim Empire was scattered around the north. Trees grew in the forgotten cities that have become ruins. There were many ruins that hadn't felt the touch of a human in ages so they were in a natural state.

“If I make a nature sculpture...Then I need to consider the cities that can grow in the vicinity.”

He also considered transportation development, residential areas and hunting when making a decision about the location. The place Weed decided on had a clean and clear river to the east and a wide, fertile plain to the north where a big city could develop. There were no obstacles preventing him from making the nature sculpture he wanted.

“A group of monsters roaming nearby is a problem but...I'll subjugate them sometime.”

The Arpen Kingdom's military power was expanding far quicker than most people expected. It was because many users who were knights commanded soldiers while fighting on the plains. NPC free knights came from the Central Continent. Among them were knights from the Kallamore Kingdom. The levels of these free knights were somewhat higher.

Users who completed quests and gained achievements could rent

free knights. The Knight Corps of the Arpen Kingdom had 1,000 people but they weren't resting. They subdued monsters, helped move settlers and constructed cities in the Arpen Kingdom.

“I need to make a natural environment where people can rest. Until now, the Arpen Kingdom had only been surviving.”

It was inevitable since it was a new kingdom. Everything started from Morata and those living there were being worn out. If users exchanged money for hunting and trade then they would also be searching for a place to relax. Thus he had already prepared construction work for a city of recreation and tourism.



Birds sang vigorously as the day began. A small golden bird opened its wings and flew somewhere.

Kukukuku!

Tweet tweet.

Jjorororong.

Golden Bird was flying around unusually large birds. Unlike common birds, the sparrows were the size of chickens and there were owls wandering in the morning. The beak and claws were strong enough to penetrate iron. Golden Bird was heading towards Lavias, the island in the sky.

“Our fellow kin is coming.”

“That sparkling crown on his head...”

“It is him.”

A bird with good eyesight reported that Golden Bird was coming. Dozens then hundreds of birds from Lavias came out to meet Golden Bird. It received the best treatment from the birds.

The size, type and colour of Golden Bird compared to others was truly magnificent. Golden Bird circled around the island before landing on the ground. It perched on a branch after landing on Lavias.

“It has been a long time, children.”

The avians nodded their heads. Unfortunately their memory was bad so after a while they wouldn't even know their parents or siblings. But they didn't forget about Golden Bird. The first bird created by Emperor Geihar Von Arpen.

Sculptures and paintings celebrating Golden Bird still remained in Lavias. In the past when Weed came to Lavias, he hadn't climbed up its nest. Some users climbed up and discovered the existence of Golden Bird. This legendary existence had finally visited Lavias.

“I came here because it is time that we moved.”

The avians flew around at Golden Bird’s words. The avians simultaneously flapped their wings while spinning in the sky. It was difficult to guess the population of the avian clan. Houses were built in the centre of the island and stores engaged in business but some birds barely left their nests.

More than 100 birds had the hobby of living in trees and chirping! Fierce birds also had wild and tough battles in the dungeon and hunting ground of Lavias. Additionally, there were the eggs that haven’t hatched yet. Many avians walking around didn’t even know English.

Piyak?

Paek paek paek paek!

The birds on Lavias ran around flapping their wings and making a lot of noise. The birds on the ground also flapped their wings in an uproar. Baran village on the ground had no idea about what was happening in the sky. Ever since Baran village fell into the hands of the Embinyu Church, very few users stayed there.

“What is this?”

“Shh, an event seems to be happening.”

“Then what is it? We can’t go near that area.”

The birds filled the streets, trees and fences of Lavias. Users were unable to come near this area and were forced to watch from a distance. Golden Bird allowed them to calm down before saying.

“The continent has fallen into disorder. Humans are moaning in pain so our noble group can’t just watch.”

Normally when hearing such a speech, humans would clap and cheer.

Tweet tweet.

Piyak piyak.

Kkwae kwae kwaeek!

The small and young birds opened their wings and cried out in agreement.

“These days humans in the Rosenheim Kingdom aren’t farming properly.”

“It is becoming increasingly difficult to obtain nutritious rice.”

“I don’t like eating worms...”

The avians were used to luxurious tastes. They also experienced difficulties when humans went to war. Golden Bird was a leader that could affect the fate of the entire race.

“We will go to the North.”

“What is there?”

A small and cute-looking yellow bird asked.

“There is fine grain there and you can eat as much as you want.”

The avians decided to move due to these words! The avians didn’t just pack their belongings and fly to the north. Such a method was possible but it wasn’t necessary. That afternoon, Laviasthe sky island started to move.

The whole island was moving through the sky towards the north. All the dungeons, hunting grounds and shops were moved.



“It isn’t possible to do this alone. I have to bring Yellowy!”

He was reminded of Yellowy’s existence whenever hard work was required. Weed decided to report the success of the Radiant Sword quest in Rhodium first.

“I’ve developed my sculpting in order to protect the Versailles Continent.”

It was instinctual to make attempts to raise his intimacy.

-Sword of Light that Splits Everything has been completed.

The highly acclaimed sculptor Weed has proven that he is also a genius with the sword.

Radiant Sword.

His swordplay is enough to travel the continent and kill wicked people.

-Fame has increased by 850.

-Your level has risen.

-Strength has increased by 6.

-Agility has increased by 5.

-You have overcome the harsh storm and succeeded in your sword training.

All stats have increased by 3.

The eyes of the old man in Rhodium changed. At first Weed was just a general user but now he was treated as a genius sculptor.

“You have done a lot. How fantastic. With this degree, it won’t be impossible for you to express a radiant beauty. Then the other sculpture.....”

“I’m still in the process of making it.”

“I’ll believe in you and wait. If you finish this successfully then I can entrust you with an important task. Please continue to work hard on sculpting.”

“Of course.”

Weed often made sculptures so he was confident about his skill. He didn’t find training in a storm that difficult. Forget strength and fatigue. The wellspring of his imagination was money!



Weed returned to the north with Yellowy to make his nature sculpture.

“I don’t have to think too big. All I need to think about is including the sky, earth and flowers.”

He made clouds out of river water for his nature sculpture. It was time consuming but it was nothing compared to the first one he made. But it was a large piece of land so making the sculpture wasn't easy.

“It is lacking in several parts...it can't be a true nature sculpture without excessive intervention.”

Nature is more beautiful when left intact. The goal of the quest was to achieve natural beauty after time passed. Weed's present sculpture needed to express beauty even after a long time passed so that made it more difficult.

“A natural beauty needs to be vibrant.”

A rich source of health. And a wonderful landscape that can ease all the worries in a person's heart.

“This place...”

Weed clearly decided on the subject of the nature sculpture. The form of a sun setting or an aurora was naturally beautiful. He had some unforgettable memories at twilight. But there was a part missing when trying to feel the vitality of nature.

“There is a scene that I want to see at least once.”

He didn't need to imagine it as a sculptor. It was a profession that could express anything he visualized in his mind! ‘A large number

of sculptor's skills were meant for this purpose.”

“Nature....”

Weed decided not to think like a human. He decided to use his previous experience as a hummingbird, a wandering wolf or a jumping kangaroo as examples.

Sculpture Transformation allowed him to change his body and look at the world from the viewpoint of that species. Humans tried to change everything to suit their own comfort but animals adapted to live in nature.

“If I live here...”

A swamp from the point of view of a salamander. A large river crossed here but the flow of water was really quick and the river area high. There wasn't likely to be many floods so it wasn't an appropriate place for farming from a human's point of view. Now only large weeds grew and animals didn't come to this wide land.

“I should create a wet and damp swamp where the shallow part of the river crosses the ground.

Weed rushed into his work.

“Great Disaster Nature Sculpting!”

He used a natural disaster.

Kugugugugung!

The sinking land could be used to pull down a city or granary. It was an immensely large disaster that could destroy the ground.

“Kuhuhuk, my precious land.”

It was painful work even if Weed was just watching. A crack occurred and the shallow river flowed into it, causing a pond to be built. If this was the only big change then the once peaceful and beautiful landscape looked ruined.

“Time will resolve this. Broken nature will heal over time. As I progress, there will be many variables so I have to manage every detail.”

There was no choice but to rely on his senses. In the meantime Weed had travelled to many places and seen different types of animals.

“If there is a swamp then many animals and plants can live there. A reed field will naturally form...and it would be nice to have a thick forest.”

Weed made Yellowy plough the land while he scattered seeds and fruit. But unlike the past, he gave Yellowy specially cooked food and also stroked his head. There was a reason for his particularly

affectionate behaviour.

“Umoooo. Isn’t this the seed of the man-eating vines from the forest of the elves, Master?”

“I don’t know. I somehow got it. Just plant it for the time being.”

“The elves said it will grow to more than 70 meters in height... umoooo.”

“Just pour it on the ground!”

Strong, rooted trees would grow up well.

“The animals living here, the rain and wind will do the rest.”

Weed worked in a wide area but there was still a lot of land remaining. If he composed it well then it could turn into a great agricultural area for Morata. Currently farmers couldn’t enter here due to the roaming monsters. He couldn’t help sighing impatiently while creating the swamp and forest.

“What else could I make from this?”

This time it was from the view of a land owner!

“I really shouldn’t have...”

Icecap, forests, sandy deserts and flowing glaciers. They were tolerable places for people. But their presence meant it was impossible for people to live there and the land value would never rise.

“It is a problem yet I am still purposefully creating the sculpture.”

It didn't fit in with the surrounding environment. A swamp couldn't be placed next to a desert or a snowy area. Nature had to exist in harmony with its surroundings.

“If this wasn't such an extreme case...there isn't one land owner that would like it.”

Once the land subsidence was accomplished, he placed rocks to direct the flow of the water.

“Dirtman!”

“You called.”

Dirtman emerged from the ground.

The elemental didn't have full strength with Weed gave birth to it so it was like an immature son. But Weed often summoned it to reinforce his ability. Dirtman could use magic related to the earth

and its movements became faster as it matured. The curved back gradually straightened but its old appearance didn't change.

“Place the stones here.”

“Tell me the size and number that you want.”

“Bigger would be better. Approximately 30,000 of them? And the colour should be red or brown.”

Weed was its master so the elemental calmly did its job.

“Understood, Master.”

The strong point about an elemental was its obedience. The summoned Dirtman could do the work of 60 people. Stones buried deep under the ground or were far away was pulled over with magic.

Of course, Dirtman had to borrow his mana to work the earth. Weed's mana flowed out like the tide. Eventually Dirtman borrowed less mana from Weed.

Rocks were rising from the centre of the future swamp.

“Is this size sufficient?”

Weed's heart didn't admire the rocks moved by Dirtman. When considering the size of this area, it was pebble sized at best. He needed to make a landscape that would be admired!

"No. Much larger. The rocks should come from the mountains. Is that possible?"

"It isn't possible to bring those big rocks with my ability."

"I guess so."

Placing the rocks consumed an enormous amount of mana.

"But rocks can be made of sand."

"I'll bring it immediately."

Red sandstone mainly formed in a desert area! Dirtman worked tirelessly to form red sandstones in this area. Meanwhile Weed carved his sculpture.

"I should end this properly. Nature Sculpting!"

Only shallow water was running into the planned swamp site. He used Nature Sculpting to make fog from water and clogged water channels.

“It won’t be possible to farm here again.”

The fog gradually spread due to the effect of Nature Sculpting!

“Ummooooooooo.”

Yellowy quivered his tail and cried out.

“This seems insufficient...”

Weed wasn’t satisfied with the sculpture. But the terrain of this place was completely changed so he had to leave the rest to time.

“The basic part is to call over the fairies. It needs to be something good.”

Cooking something with honey was necessary to lure out the fairies for the quest. Honey ribs and honey pork belly! People eating it thought it was a strange taste but meat and honey was the perfect complement for fairies.

“This bottle was worth every penny.”

Weed added honey to matured whiskey. The so-called honey distilled spirits!

The fairies wouldn’t show up in front of a wicked person. It was

difficult to find them. But once they liked someone, they would sometimes come out to play tricks.

-Sniff sniff, what is that smell?

One fairy was already sitting down on Weed's shoulder. A fairy sleeping in his hair emerged while sniffing. The fairy was smaller than a fly. Usually fairies were small but there were also large ones the size of a finger. Although they were small, they had the best sense of smell and clear, transparent wings.

-Sniff, for me?

"And your friends."

-I want to eat it alone.

"I won't give it."

-I'll bring them!

"As many as possible."

The fairy opened a spatial tear and disappeared before returning 10 seconds later. Its friends were dragged along.

-What is this enchanting smell?

-Something that we can eat.

The fairies attached themselves to the food that Weed prepared. The fairies ate luxury dishes made with advanced cooking skills.

-Any fish? I like fish.

This was also a restaurant where the fairies could set orders. Weed made a sardine stir fry with honey spread on it.

-Wah, fish that lives in the sea.

-So sweet.

The fairies quickly ate 1 sardine each. Once their stomachs were full, the fairies showed interest in their surroundings.

-Where are we?

-It is completely different from when I came here last time.

-It changed strangely.

-Is this a place where we can play?

-How complex and exciting!

The fairies swam in the water and played tag among the sandstones.

-This has become the Fairies' Playground.

The natural power of the fairies are maximized.

The terrain is changing.

Chapter 2: Wet Land

The wind was blowing everywhere. The river shook and flooded. Water overflowed and made the ground even wetter.

Shwaaaaah!

Showers of rain fell from the clouds.

“Now I’ve called them so I just need to wait and see what changes.”

Weed waited with Yellowy as rain fell. In Royal Road it was very refreshing and fun to run around in the pouring rain. It was common to see hunting parties move soaking wet from the rain.

Taverns and restaurants were crowded on rainy days but there were still beginners hunting in the vicinity of the gates. The rain falling on people engaged in business at the market or conversing around the fountain gave the city a romantic aura.

-How fascinating, fascinating.

– Shall we stop and go back?

-No, let’s continue to play here. There is also delicious food.

Various species of plants and grass grew and spread through the swamp as the fairies played. The trees absorbed a lot of moisture through their roots and shot upwards. The shade of many trees caused lengthy shadows to stretch out.

The spirits played on the dry land while water creatures swam calmly. Reed fields formed and unknown flowers bloomed. Leaves on lush, overgrown trees turned red and fell to the ground. And snowflakes began falling from the sky.

“Winter has already come here.”

By the time the snow finished falling, sprouts started to rise from the land. Once again the hot sun shone, leaves fell and it snowed. The sun, rain, snow and leaves turned into a scrambled mess! Strange things like this often occurred around the fairies.

A long time was required for a swamp to form naturally but this period was reduced due to the fairies’ magic. There were at least 200 changing of the seasons. It quickly became impossible to fathom how many lives the plants in the swamp had lived.

“Ummoooooooo.”

A swamp deep enough to reach Weed and Yellowy’s waist then they were standing on the rocks was formed. The appearance of the flowers blooming in the swamp was beautiful.

“The vitality of nature is showing so this seems to be a fairly

decent work.”

The wide land had changed into a swamp but it wasn't that bad after seeing the animals and plants living there. Numerous small life forms that he didn't know the name of sat on leaves and swam in the water. A small water channel ran through the swamp that had fish skipping in it.

Birds cried out in the clear sky over the swamp. The surrounding birds flocked as the swamp was formed. The land in the whole vicinity shook. The rocks mobilized by Dirtman quickly formed layers of sandstone. The sandstone layers spread in all directions and completely changed the terrain of this place.

Hills formed the boundaries of the swamp. Weed marked a place where he would grow grapes later. The sandstone mountain area around the river and swamp didn't stop there. Water flowed from the sandstone mountains and flowers and grass grew. The water fell from a high place and created a pool of water.

“This has become a completely useless piece of land.”

Weed thought it was a waste despite the land not belonging to the Arpen Kingdom. The sandstone gave an view that was like art but the problem was that he couldn't collect taxes from it.

The changes caused by the fairies continued. Animals like crocodiles, aquatic insects and birds roamed. Beautiful yellow butterflies flew around the flowers blooming in the swamp. Wind blew through the leaves and birds and animals cried out. The

music of nature flowed through this land.

-Please set the name of the new sculpture.

“This is....Land filled with Despair, Lamentation and Regret.”

-Land filled with Despair, Lamentation and Regret is correct?

This name seemed too transparent.

‘A little....something simple and not so poetic should be fine.’

He decided to change the name of the nature sculpture.

“No. I’ve already committed so there is no choice. The name will be Wet Land.”

-Wet Land is correct?

“That’s right.”

Ddiring!

-Nature’s Magnum Opus!

Wet Land has been completed. A work where the sculptor took a

century to form the nature sculpting!

A swamp filled with life. A sandstone area has been carved.

The sculptor knows how to use the power of nature to grow difficult and unusual trees from the fairies and the elves. The number of animal and plant species living here is at the scale of a continent.

This is a precious gift that the sculptor has returned to nature.

Artistic Value: 8,142

Special Options: Wet Land has given birth to new species of plants and animals.

Those who visit here will have their health and mana increased by 50% for one week.

All stats increased by 19.

Resistance to infectious diseases and poison has permanently increased by 1%.

The growth rate of animals in the surrounding area has been sped up.

All nature in the surrounding area will be purified.

Current number of Nature Magnum Opus created: 1

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-The skill proficiency of Handicraft has improved.

-Fame has increased by 4,093.

-Art stat has increased by 19.

-Wisdom has increased by 7.

-Intelligence has increased by 9.

-Courage has increased by 3.

-Affinity to Nature has increased by 49.

-All stats will gain an additional 3 points for making a Magnum Opus sculpture.

-Elves and Fairies will become friendlier.

He could feel the joy of being a sculptor every time a Magnum

Opus was created. Weed had stacked up a lot of stats but the 1~2 points he got for every sculpture made a difference in battle.

“A sculpture offered to the land...”

Nevertheless, Weed felt regret about the loss of money.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“I created a sculpture in the north with the help of the fairies.”

“It was a success. Nothing seems impossible for a sculptor like you.”

“Miracles can be created with the hands of a sculptor. I only thought about art when creating a natural ecosystem.”

Weed reported the quest in Rhodium.

Ddirring!

-Sculpting that has been Shaped over a Long Time has been completed.

The great sculptor Weed has revealed his genius in many areas. His works serve to defend justice and sometimes even represents an area.

-Fame has increased by 1,600.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-Your evaluation in the Sculptor's Guild has improved.

“Huhu.”

Weed had a light smile on his face.

‘If I continue succeeding like this then I will obtain the final sculpting technique and a large sum of money. One day I will stop counting every bit of money that comes in and will be able to spend it...’

“Uweeeeek.”

He couldn't repress a rotten smile at the thought. The old man smiled brightly.

“If you have this degree of proficiency then I can talk about it. All the requests up to now was to test your qualifications. How well do you know the history of the Versailles Continent?”

“A little....I know.”

“Numerous adventurers have attempted to clear the continent’s 8th labyrinth...”

“Are you talking about the crazy Roderick’s Labyrinth where demons live?”

“You know what I’m talking about. As expected from a genius sculptor, you know about the history of the continent.”

Weed had no choice but to be aware of it.

‘The continent’s 8th labyrinth. A place I absolutely can’t go to.’

It was a completely dangerous place. The 8th labyrinth had been famous since the early days of Royal Road.

-Entering means death.

-Instantly.

-Maximum 1 minute.

All residents and people passing by the 8th labyrinth would shake their heads. The requests related to it didn’t turn out well.

“My son entered Roderick’s Labyrinth...my son was a Royal Knight of the Norton Kingdom. I haven’t seen him after that day.”

The user asked.

“Do you want me to find your son?”

“Hyu, what? My son’s life ended there. Well, I just gave up.”

The residents were resigned about anything related to the 8th labyrinth. However the users couldn’t help their curiosity.

“I’ll go. A party of this standard isn’t common on the continent.”

When not much time had passed since Royal Road opened, a famous party of level 200 users entered Roderick’s Labyrinth. They had already cleared other dangerous and high level dungeons. But they couldn’t help feeling greed at getting their names know for this challenging and highly difficult adventure. Each user had a certain amount of ability and was filled with confidence.

And the result was extermination!

-Failed. We all died in the vicinity of the 1st underground floor.

The standard of users continued to rise as time passed and parties kept on challenging it. Level 300 and even level 400 parties died. The scary thing was that once they entered the labyrinth, it wasn’t easy to get out alive.

Not only did the 8th labyrinth have an large number of traps, the monsters in Roderick's Labyrinth were abnormally high levelled. Furthermore, last time Roderick's Guild had been challenged by a mid-sized guild called Morningstar.

A staggering 600 people entered and were all killed! The Morningstar guild failed the challenge, had internal conflicts and lost the city they ruled.

“Roderick's Labyrinth seems to be too difficult for me.”

“No. So far you've accomplished all your task perfectly so I believe in you.”

-It isn't possible to postpone or give up requests related to radiant beauty in the middle. Continue.

“The magician Roderick was an unusual person. He had the hobby of collecting different types of things and also really liked art.”

Weed thought it was too unreasonable but he still listened intently to the valuable information about Roderick's Labyrinth.

“Roderick was a very strong magician and had a lot of curiosity. He was a genius who developed new spells and combined various types of magic. He was also interested in the sculptor's research on how to express radiant beauty.”

The old gave a long explanation.

Roderick drank alcohol with sculptors and listened to their worries. There was significant progress on the research to express radiant beauty. Of course, the contents of that information was secret and only known to the participants and Roderick.

“The sculptors studied out to express radiant beauty for a long time. Now there isn’t anybody left who knows the results of that study. Roderick was full of curiosity and lost control of something he summoned...it was very unfortunate.”

Originally Weed was very similar. He became arrogant and proud and walked the path to ruin.

‘I made the worst choice when buying the 200 won more expensive salt.’

The old gave took a deep sigh.

“He summoned a devil to study its power but a fight spread.”

“D-devil...”

“Roderick who studied magic realized he couldn’t win and closed off the dungeon to the outside. People could enter but it isn’t possible for them to leave...”

A video was shown in front of Weed.



An old magician and devil fighting.

A terrible magic exploded from the staff every time the magician chanted a spell. The devil was frozen and burned with hellfire. Its body had a long tail and black devil wings. Despite being attacked by terrible high ranking magic, it didn't receive any large wounds.

The magician Roderick had a lot of human knights guarding him. A battle occurred and they greeted death as devil children were summoned. The odds gradually tilted until Roderick activated defence magic installed beforehand.

“With the force of the great mana gathered here, rearrange this distorted space. Make this devil unable to forever enter the human world or go back to hell.”

“It can't be. Kueeeek!”

Roderick lost his life to the devil.

And the space in the dungeon distorted due to his spell. If someone walked down a straight path then they would go to the wrong place. Countless number of side roads would appear and some would suddenly go down to the 2nd floor.

No one could find a door that led out of the dungeon. Once inside the labyrinth, it wasn't possible to find a way out and people would die from the demons or traps. From that day onwards, anyone who entered the labyrinth wouldn't be able to find the way out.

Roderick's Labyrinth was made with unique magic, making it huge and flashy. Roderick had originally built it underneath a ruined royal palace.



Weed remembered the broadcast he watched of the Morningstar Guild fighting in the labyrinth.

‘The video of them fighting with the demons was beautiful. The ratings were also quite high.’

To be exact, it showed the Morningstar Guild dying against a cool backdrop. Furthermore, there was Roderick's welcome! The labyrinth was full of all sorts of monsters and challenges.

The reason for their presence was to reduce health. And there was a huge problem even when they disappeared after being killed.

‘They don't drop any items....it really is the worst type of monster.’

The mutated monsters that Roderick studied were also freed and they had special magic to protect themselves.

It was a wide and endless labyrinth of despair and death! He got that feeling just from watching the video of Roderick’s Labyrinth. Even if someone managed to conquer the labyrinth, the biggest problem was coming outside.

If Weed died then his skill proficiency would fall and he would fail the final secret technique quest. If he brought the sculptural lifeforms then it would mean complete death.

He could revive them again but it was the end if he couldn’t get out. Weed’s sculptural lifeforms could be permanently lost.



Weed frowned.

“Is it necessary to study Roderick’s research records in order to express radiant beauty?”

“Understand this. You have to look at the records in order to know what the sculptors have pursued. And keep this in mind. You shouldn’t leave it too late. If someone else finds the research records first then there is a possibility they could escape the labyrinth with it.”

Ddiring!

-Roderick's Labyrinth

The lower devil Montus and his subordinates have been trapped in the labyrinth. They are eager to exit into the world and it is inevitable to encounter them if you enter the labyrinth.

Reading Roderick's research records will lead to the next quest.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: The quest will fail if you die.

Be the first to conquer Roderick's Labyrinth.

“Although I wish to achieve the sculptors' desires....”

Before Weed could finish talking...

“It will be dangerous but please come back safely.

-The quest has been given.

“.....”

The quest was forcibly given to him! Weed was full of thoughts as

he went out to the streets of Rhodium.

‘I had expected that this request would be difficult to some degree.’

He had travelled a great distance and trained Radiant Sword for the final secret sculpting technique.

‘It was all to make me stronger.’

So far the quests hadn’t been that bad. Even though the quest to cause disasters was risky, there was still a high chance of survival. Furthermore, he could select and prepare the type of disaster.

Travelling as a hummingbird just required sightseeing while the Radiant Sword quest could be overcome with effort. There was a fixed date but Weed had raised Radiant Sword to the required level with one week left.

He had persisted so much that he even reduced the number of times he went to the toilet in a day. Working hard was Weed’s speciality but Roderick’s Labyrinth quest was too risky.

‘This time there is a really high chance that I will fail and lose everything.’

Weed’s chest was tight with tension. In recent times, he hadn’t completed a really difficult quest. The Class Master Quest was for sculptors so he could just go with the flow.

‘I expected that I would be successful before I started most of them. And even if I failed, I would’ve been able to try again.’

Weed had become a legend from his time in Continent of Magic. It was because he achieved miracle like adventures that seemed impossible. However, the difficult of this final secret sculpting technique quest was ridiculously high. Weed’s thoughts went in various directions before he nodded.

“If I don’t prepare properly then I really will fail this quest. I also can’t postpone it too long.”

For the moment, other users hadn’t been able to conquer Roderick’s Labyrinth. The labyrinth was known as a deadly place so many adventurers were willing to go there. But if someone cleared Roderick’s Labyrinth then the final secret sculpting technique quest would disappear.

“Obtain the last secret technique before the devil Montus runs away and the Central Continent war reaches the north.”

The work he had to do in the future was boundless. He might feel more at ease if he managed to get the final secret technique. Either despair or pleasure would be at the end of the tunnel. It was true that you reap what you sow in life, but effort also played a large role.

“Indeed, I’m not the son of a rich family.”

Weed headed towards the Freya Church in Somren Liberty City. He needed to bring the maximum number of troops into the labyrinth.

“If our contribution increases a bit more then we can invite a paladin.”

“Then it will be possible to go to the thief’s lair?”

“Of course. That’s why we’ve been doing quests involved with the Freya Church. We can obtain the necessary equipment from hunting.”

The headquarters of the Freya Church in Somren Liberty City was crowded with players. This place hadn’t received much damage from the war in the Britten Alliance Kingdom.

“Please guide me to the High Priest.”

“You have come a long way. I’ll guide you immediately.”

The guards and priests protected the entrance recognized Weed. And they immediately showed him to the High Priest.

Chapter 3: Gathering Of Paladins

“Oh, it is the benefactor of the Freya Church!”

“I came to meet High Priest-nim.”

Weed didn't talk with arrogance despite his status as King of the Arpen Kingdom. There was a time when he would've bowed but now he didn't need to lower himself.

“The Freya Church is waging a fierce war with the Embinyu Church everywhere. It is thanks to the Helain's Cup and Crown of Prosperity you gave us that we could push back the Embinyu Church.”

Every religious society on the continent was fighting against the Embinyu Church. The existences of the kingdoms were at stake so paladins would often show up to save residents of the villages. The relics recovered by the Freya Church and the Church of Lugh played a large role in the war against the Embinyu Church.

Weed knew there was a time to be modest and a time to boast.

“That's right. It is all thanks to me. But would it be possible for me to accomplish such a thing if High Priest-nim wasn't guiding me?”

“All believers of the Freya Church has praised your adventures

and they feel comfortable since you are committed to defeating evil. I've also heard a lot of talk from residents who live in the north."

"I'm also pleased that the followers of the Freya Church is increasing in the Arpen Kingdom."

"The construction of the Cathedral in the north is indeed a wonderful thing."

"I'm happy to be working for the Freya Church."

Weed felt a bit of regret every time he remembered the construction costs.

"Let's slowly talk while drinking tea. I'd like to hear about your many adventures."

His degree of intimacy and fame was high so he could talk easily with the High Priest. He could obtain information from the Freya Church and even eat here for free. However Weed didn't have time for that.

"I have an important mission that urgently requires the Freya Church's aid."

"What is it?"

“I’m hoping you can send me strong paladins and priests blessed by the god. I think I can overcome any type of adversity if they fight with me.”

The High Priest nodded at Weed’s request.

“The Freya Church is willing to offer our swords and prayers. Many people are currently fighting against the Embinyu Church so we can’t withdraw that many troops but how much do you need?”

“I hope that you can mobilize all that you can.”

Weed wanted to pull out the pillars of the Freya Church.

“It is possible with your achievements. But like I said, we’re fighting against the Embinyu Church right now...it is possible to dispatch 240 paladins and 120 priests from here and the North Cathedral.”

“They will be a great help when trying to do the right thing.”

“But you might incur Freya’s wrath if they all lost their lives.”

“I’ll keep this in mind. I will protect them like they are my body.”

It wasn’t possible to take everything from the Freya Church like he had thought. The war with the Embinyu Church was damaging Weed. Nevertheless, the paladins were in the mid-300s.

In the past, they had been much weaker but gained experience from fighting the vampires. The priests were slightly lower and had an average level of 310. He wanted to use his contribution to take all the paladins and priests. It was possible to go hunting without paladins but priests were essential in difficult dungeons.

‘I struggled to find their holy relics while suffering like a slave and I also built a Cathedral for them...’

Weed asked again.

“You can’t send me more troops?”

“This is your request so the paladins and priests guarding this place can be included. I can send 40 more paladins and 135 apprentice priest.

An apprentice priest had an average level of 200. The role of a priest was very helpful in battle but they also required protection. If a priest lost their lives then his relationship with the related religion would decrease.

‘I have to leave a root. Anyway, there is no guarantee that the quest will succeed...’

“I am thankful for the paladins. I’ll struggle fiercely from now on...no, I will defend the continent’s peace with them. However the apprentice priests aren’t required.”

“I’m sorry that we can’t support you more due to the battle with the Embinyu Church.”

“No. This much power is great.”

It was possible to gather this many paladins and priests because he was Weed. Not many paladins were available due to the war with the Embinyu Church.

‘If the quest in Roderick’s Labyrinth fails and everyone dies then my friendship with the Freya Church will end.’

Weed gave a deep sigh as he recruited paladins and priests from the Freya Church. The dignified paladins had the crest of the Freya Church on their chest. And the beautiful priests and priestesses.

There was a chance they might all be harmed. Weed also recruited the priest Alveron who had adventured with him before.

“I don’t know what the trouble is but anything Weed-nim does is absolutely necessary for the peace of the continent and the Freya Church.”

“.....”

Alveron believed in him despite Weed going to the labyrinth for his own personal reasons.

“I’m thankful that we can travel together again.”

Weed patted Alveron’s shoulder in thanks while thinking.

‘I can’t allow the things I raised to die like this.’

This was a harsh world and people who behaved recklessly would die. Weed went to the Church of Lugh to borrow some troops.

“The knights of Lugh are meant to stop darkness from spreading...”

The Church of Lugh decided to dispatch 400 paladins! His contribution was lower compared to the Freya Church but he used it to request paladins instead of priests. The special point was Lugh’s Sword that had been thrust into Barkhan’s chest.

After Weed returned the sword, an expedition headed towards Argoldia and restored its power. The owner of the sword was the paladin Derian. He was considered the best paladin in the Church of Lugh and decided to go along with Weed while carrying the sword.

“I’ve heard rumours about how Weed-nim fought against the Embinyu Church. I will comply with Lugh’s will as a loyal knight. The fight against the Embinyu Church is important but I think that helping Weed-nim is no less significant.”

Weed wasn't exactly pleased about it. The scale had suddenly become larger!



“Whew, the leaves are already falling.”

Lee Hyun came out to the yard to clean up. He had an old habit of carefully cleaning his house. His level was at the standard where he wouldn't easily die in Royal Road so he exited the capsule to clean his house. Weed's cheapest hobby was cleaning, washing the dishes and doing the laundry.

“It is more quiet than usual.”

Lee Hyun came out to organize the things in his yard and sweep up the fallen leaves. He felt somewhat lonely while doing that. It wasn't time for his sister to come back to school yet.

“Perhaps this quiet...no! The dog is gone.”

The charming Dogmeat who would lie flat on the ground and shake its tail was missing.

“No. I still have a lot of fermented soybean paste remaining at home.”

In fact, he ate the ducks and chickens but was reluctant to catch

the dog. Catching a dog for its meat was barbaric and cruel.

“The Animal Protection Association might come with complaints.”

The fear of a fine! Moreover, he barely had Dogmeat for 6 months so it wasn't fully grown. The Dogmeat he gave to Seo-yoon a while ago would be worth 20,000 won at a market. That Dogmeat was 2 years old!

The 1 year old Dogmeat was a wandering dog that Lee Hyun had caught. He raised it from a puppy so Dogmeat followed him obediently.

“I need to find it quickly...”

Lee Hyun went to search for the 20,000 won that went missing. He didn't find Dogmeat inside the house.

“The gate is definitely locked...I wouldn't have been so careless if I knew this would happen.”

Lee Hyun decided to go Seo-yoon's house just in case. Both houses had a low wooden fence so they could comfortably associate with each other.

“This house is good. There is that feeling of stepping on turf.”

Having a lawn was a symbol of wealth in South Korea! There were fruit trees in the garden and ducks swimming in a pond.

Quack quack!

The weather was hot so there was no signs of the ducks leaving the water at all. Lee Hyun found Dogmeat near the shore of the lake. Seo-yoon was giving Dogmeat a bath with the hose to water the garden.

“Your white fur, you have to wash it beautifully. Do you like the bath?”

Seo-yoon wore short sleeves and shorts to wash the dog in the sunshine. Every time Dogmeat shook its body, water would hit her but she was still beautiful. Looking at Seo-yoon felt like a pleasant dream. It was because her beauty was so unrealistic.

‘Dogmeat follows her more than me.’

Seo-yoon was playing host to all the animals in his house. She fed them, played with them and even let them sleep at her house. Even the rabbits would hop towards Seo-yoon’s house when they were untied and would eat the grass there.

Growl!

The 1 year old Dogmeat growled as it saw Lee Hyun. He had quietly entered the boundary of Seo-yoon’s house.

Lee Hyun thought it was strange.

“You dare treat your master who feeds you fermented soybean paste like this...sit down.”

The 1 year old Dogmeat planted its butt on the ground.

“Lie down.”

Balladang!

“Breathe.”

Pant pant pant pant!

Lee Hyun had trained obedience deep into his head! Seo-yoon dried the dog's body with a towel.

“It was eager to have a bath.”

“The rain could easily settle that....”

Lee Hyun didn't nag anymore.

“Are the dogs getting along with each other?”

“They are playing every day.”

The 1 year old Dogmeat was a female and the 2 year old was a male. They weren't related so he encouraged them to spend time together. In the future there might be puppies.

“Hrmm, steaming a puppy soup with cooked vegetables...”

“Huh?”

“Yes? It is nothing.”

Lee Hyun sat down on a chair and watched the pair of Dogmeats having a bath. This felt like a happy and peaceful dream right now.

‘In fact, I’ve actually accomplished a lot.’

He had become a celebrity in Royal Road so he could live on the generous proceeds of the broadcasts. His heart cried out for money, money, money every day but his poor life was over.

‘Grandmother is in a nursing home and no long requires a lot of money while there is already a separate savings for my sister’s tuition cost.’

He had saved a lot from selling items and the broadcast fees so he had a colossal amount of wealth. It was to the extent that he

already collected the money for Lee Hye-yeon's wedding and funeral costs. In the past he had experienced a lot of grief because he didn't have money but now his heart could relax.

‘In the worst case scenario, if Arpen Kingdom is destroyed by the Hermes Guild then at least I still have money for my family.’

Lee Hyun could sell quilts at the market or even open a fried chicken store. A few years ago, he dream was to spend his life toasting bread and frying chicken. Of course, there would be drunken guests order friend chicken legs and wings but he wouldn't deny them!

‘I like a challenge. There is still plenty for me to do.’

Lee Hyun's heart was peaceful. Royal Road was his job but it was also a place where he could sail in fair winds and relax. Despite how much more difficult this was, Weed was the God of War and he would jump into any dangerous situation without hesitation. He had a history of conquering every danger he faced. He would keep on accomplishing things as he lived on.

‘Don't worry about it. I can build up my achievements with the Freya and Lugh Churches using my fame and sculpting. The burden that I have to carry is different.’

He couldn't be afraid of failure. The future wasn't determined so he didn't need to feel anxious. Lee Hyun would focus more intensely in a disadvantageous situation and would find a countermeasure. He had the confidence to adventure in places

others wouldn't go and succeed. He would shake off his heavy burden and display his ability.

'I really wanted that. That exhilarating moment...the last secret sculpting technique quest will give me that.'

A sound then came from his stomach.

Ggoruruk.

"Um. As expected, I shouldn't think too deeply. It is my destiny to live with difficulty."

"Huh?"

"Are you hungry?"

"A little. What are you doing?"

"Seafood kalguksu (TL: Korean noodle dish). Today I am cooking it."

Right now he was on a leave of absence but he had eaten her boxed lunches every day at school. Now he wanted to repay the favour by cooking.

While Lee Hyun was kneading the dough for the noodles, Seo-

yoona was making kimchi pancake. The clean Dogmeats were leisurely running around outside.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed entered a shabby tavern in a back alley of Morata.

“Kkeok, take it.”

“The alcohol tastes good today. Two more glasses of beer over here!”

Drinkers camped here even during the daytime. The drinks were cheap so it had a lot of customers despite being located in the back alleys. Half of them were users while the NPCs occupied the remaining seats.

Morata was in the process of becoming a great city so many people flocked here. Hunters, mercenaries and warriors spent time at the tavern when they weren’t hunting.

‘He should be here at this hour...’

Weed looked around the tables and saw a grey haired man with empty glasses stacked in front of him.

‘There.’

Weed walked up and sat in another chair.

“I have a request.”

“A request?”

The old man asked with a red nose. The most famous NPC thief in the north, Jeidun! He had retired after becoming old but he still told thieves and assassins who visited him tricks to dismantle traps.

Weed had cleared many dungeons in the meantime. There were many monsters and traps in the dungeons. Normally he would just endure the traps with his body or use Van Hawk to lead the way.

The Roderick's Labyrinth he was going to this time wasn't that easy. It was to the extent that any traps activated would lead to death. He wouldn't be safe even if the traps were dismantled.

The weakest demons wandering around were level 400 and some even reached a staggering level 500. And he estimated that the boss Montus would be at least level 600! Weed came to visit Jeidun so that at least the traps would be dismantled.

“I want to form a contract with you to accompany me and get rid of some traps.”

“A mercenary contract...it has been a long time since I did field work.”

Normally mercenaries would be hired from mercenary guilds but it was possible to employ a NPC directly. Of course, he would need to pay less if there was a high degree of intimacy.

“Well, you came all this way so I will agree if you give me 5,000 gold a day.”

-Do you want to make a mercenary agreement with Jeidun?

5,000 gold should be paid a day and you need to provide the salary for 10 days in advance.

Jeidun was a master at dismantling traps and lock picking so his employment cost was very high. However 5,000 gold per day was too excessive. But Jeidun possessed the most excellent trap removing skills in the north. He wanted to hire the best thieves in the Central Continent but the speed of his situation meant that he couldn't meet them.

Weed regretfully pulled out a bottle of alcohol.

“I'll give you this.”

“Ugh, this has a good fragrance...”

“I have more alcohol.”

“If you give alcohol every day then I will do it for 4,200 gold.”

“I’ll make sure that you can drink alcohol for the rest of your life.”

“If that is so...then 3,900 gold is possible.”

It was still an impossible amount for employment.

“I want to tell you something Jeidun. This is for the peace of the north. As a thief, didn’t you work your entire life for the sake of peace?”

“Your Majesty!”

Weed revealed his identity. All of the NPCs in the tavern kneeled down before Weed. It was a special privilege given to the King of the Arpen Kingdom!

“I will work for the sake of Your Majesty.”

“The employment cost will be 2 gold a day.”

“That is the value of beef jerky....”

“Would you like to be executed?”

“It is an honour to follow Your Majesty who is a hero of the north.”

He used the king’s authority to hire Jeidun. The side effect was that the residents’ loyalty would fall and the relationship with mercenaries could worsen. But he had so much fame he didn’t need to worry about that.

“Now that Jeidun is taking care of the traps, what sculptural lifeforms should I bring?”

The likelihood of not returning was too high. Bingryong, Phoenix etc. were too big so they couldn’t enter while he didn’t want to bring Goldman and Yellowy into such a dangerous place. Goldman was versatile and Yellowy had good physique and power but both fell behind in combat power.

“Bahamorg, this is an opportunity to fight and shatter some bones.”

“Anywhere is good.”

He decided to bring only Bahamorg. He possessed better fighting skills than Weed and could raise other people’s health and vitality. He was worth bringing into a dangerous dungeon.

“The staff organization for the labyrinth is over.”



“Can you buy me weapons and supplies necessary for survival?”

He requested a supply of goods from Mapan. Charcoal stones, herbs and antidotes were all supplies necessary for a labyrinth. He spend 70,000 gold purchasing supplies!

There were also spare armour and swords prepared. The Blacksmith skill meant he could make repairs but there were items that could break in battle.

“It has already exceeded 20 carriages. This is enough for a war... do you really need this much?”

Mapan whispered him a few times questioning the amount but Weed's answers were the same.

-Please save as much as possible by buying cheap and good quality goods.

In the end, Mapan moved with 22 carriages to the destination. The designated meeting place was a place just north of the Central Continent.

“Peace isn't secured here so I am anxious about such places...”

Mapan decided to hire mercenaries. The resurrected Embinyu Church led armies of demons to destroy cities. Humans scattered

and lived in the mountains along with the monsters.

Bandits were seen everywhere and there was also surprise raids by monsters in broad daylight. A merchant transporting goods would want to avoid these areas as much as possible. It was to the extent that merchants travelling between the Central Continent and the north would utilize many methods other than a land trip.

“We’ve safely reached the destination!”

Mapan arrived at the place he agreed to meet Weed. Apart from Weed, there was a huge gathering of paladins and priests. This was the first time Mapan had seen so many paladins in one place.

They were standing on the hot plains and the sunlight glared off their armour. The priests were standing quietly but they would show their ability once a battle started.

“Thanks for the trouble. The goods?”

“I collected them and brought them. I checked the quantity and quality three times. By the way Weed-nim, why are there so many paladins here?”

“They are helping me with my quest.”

“Sculpting Master Quest?”

“That’s not it. It is a connected quest that is one step higher.”

Weed accepted the transfer of battle supplies and turned around. Mapan observed the armoured paladins and was surprised to see Alveron and Derian among them. They were NPCs famous even to users. Alveron was a priest of the Freya Church and Derian was a paladin and hero of the Church of Lugh.

Anyway, their fame could be compared to the leader of a prestigious guild!

Alveron also wore Fargo’s Crown of Prosperity that belonged to the Freya Church. Derian was also carrying Lugh’s Sword and had colourful support troops. Weed used his contributions from founding a kingdom and adventuring to mobilize the might power to two religious orders.

Weed yelled using Lion’s Roar.

“We have come to Roderick’s Labyrinth to protect the peace of the continent!”

“Waaaaaah!”

The priests and paladins raised their weapons and cried out.

“Heeok!”

The blood drained from Mapan's face.

Roderick's Labyrinth! The story had been popular among merchants but there was no outcome from it so they moved on. Merchants needed to have a firm grasp of the habitat and monsters in the area that might interfere with a trade. It was rare for a merchant to go hunting in a dungeon.

'That is Roderick's Labyrinth.'

It was located at a very old palace. The magician Roderick operated at the palace. And most magical studies were underground. The entrance to the labyrinth was the stairs heading underground.

'But hasn't no one come back alive from it?'

Weed finished his short speech. It was important to maintain the moral of the paladins but he only commissioned them for a short time so it wasn't needed.

"God will look after us no matter what difficulty we face. Let's go! Then Mapan-nim, I'll see you later in Morata."

"Eh?"

Weed said farewell to Mapan and moved towards Roderick's Labyrinth. The stairs heading underground was grown over with lush bushes. Some stone stairs were broken and there was the

corpses of bats all over the place.

The palace where Roderick lived gave an eerie feeling that caused chills! The atmosphere felt like the place had been cursed.

“It is like going to the bank in the summer.”

Weed didn't hesitate now that he had come here and headed down the stairs.

Chapter 4: Roderick's Labyrinth

“Kuu, delicious humans have come after a long time. It is possible to finally eat human meat.”

Common flying demons were waiting on the 1st floor of Roderick's Labyrinth. Weed had been prepared for battle from the moment he came down the stairs so he instantly used a skill.

“Radiant Sword!”

7 eagles flew out and hit the demon soldier's body!

-The demon henchman Tropiko's might defence means that only 240 damage is caused.

-The demon henchman Tropiko has been hit in the side. Health has decreased by 267.

-Your sword has hit the demon henchman Tropiko's wing.

Due to the special protection, health has only been reduced by 37.

The first demon soldier he met had incredible resilience.

“Only this degree...”

It was said that originally intermediate demons existed on the Versailles Continent. The demons were weakened under the influence of the gods and destroyed. That's why they looked for contractors and took over the body of warlocks. The demons exerted a powerful influence over the land if they were underground and were difficult to subdue.

‘I raised Radiant Sword to this degree and it didn't even make a scratch.’

The demon soldier wielded a thorn-studded whip.

“This much is ridiculous!”

Weed rolled and avoided the whip. The whip shot out and opened a deep gap in the ground. The demon wielded the whip quickly and the range was also wide so it was fairly difficult to avoid.

There was a sharp, scorpion like sting at the end of the whip and had embedded monster teeth. It had a paralysing ability when hit directly.

-Collateral damage has been received.

Damage has been reduced due to your high perseverance.

Health has decreased by 532.

-A spirit has contaminated your body.

It can cause a disease.

Your body's ability to heal itself is reduced.

The whip attacked from a distance and shaved away at Weed's health and combat power.

“You can't continue to run away like a rat.”

“We'll see soon.”

“All humans are similar. They have no sense.”

Weed didn't both talking about the distant future. The paladins from the Freya and Lugh Churches have finally descended the stairs.

“Evil that defies the will of the Gods!”

“Catch it!”

The brave paladins received the priests' blessings and jumped forward.

“The troublesome believers have come!”

Nevertheless, the momentum was still with the demon soldier. It wasn't possible to deal a blow to the demon with ordinary weapons. Holy power was a demon's natural enemy but it was level 500 so the soldier wouldn't die that easily. It alone could be a boss class monster!

Even the attacks from the paladins were weakened so the demon soldier received significantly reduced damage.

“Deny the god you believe in. Holy Corruption!”

The demon soldier used a magic to reduce the ability of the paladins. It didn't weaken the paladin's physical power but their holy magic. A paladin with weak faith would have lower skills and eventually there was a risk of betrayal.

“Hand of Oppression!”

The demon brandished the whip in its right hand and grabbed the air with its left. And a paladin floated in the air like he was caught by a giant hand.

Kwadududuk.

The paladin's shield and armour was crushed by a strong

pressure!

“Dirty Soul Fragment!”

An explosion occurred in front of the demon soldier and spread all over the place. The wide area attack skill made it difficult for the paladins.

“This body has returned to the Goddess.”

“Kneeling due to evil...”

2 paladins from the Freya Church had already been killed. The paladins systematically fought in a formation but the magic and whip attack from the demon was very intense. Furthermore, it was difficult for them to even concentrate on attacking.

“I should’ve expected it to be like this from the beginning. Not many paladins and priests have entered yet. Van Hawk, Torido!”

Weed called his subordinates. He had wanted to avoid summoning a Death Knight and Vampire Lord if possible. If the paladins and priests saw them then their morale would weaken. They were worse enemies so an adverse effect would occur despite Weed’s high leadership. But defeating the demon right now was more pressing.

“Go fight!”

“Understood, Master.”

Van Hawk rushed to the front as soon as he appeared. The Death Knight had the same attribute as the enemy. And the demon was a strong monster but it couldn't be compared to Barkhan. Van Hawk also grew as his battle experience accumulated.

“That is a demon soldier. Master...beautiful girls coming to a place like this.”

Torido mumbled and quickly headed to the side of the demon.

A vampire's battle style was to dazzle the enemy! The priests used this break to heal paladins injured or suffering under a curse. The many priests meant that the wounded soldiers could recover their combat ability quickly. If they didn't die then combat power could be restored.

The paladins holding their shields and swords continued coming down the stairs until eventually Alveron and Derian arrived. Bahamorg was the last one to enter Roderick's Labyrinth.

Weed's plan was to come in first to clear any demons at the entrance. Bahamorg was instructed to enter last in case Weed needed saving.

The priests' holy magic supported the paladin's pincer movement and the demon received a cruel blow. The whole place

was filled with a holy power as the demon was wrapped in a holy light.

Torido and Van Hawk had played active role in reversing the situation. Now the situation didn't require them any longer. Weed wanted to raise his two subordinates but he had to give that up due to the priests and paladins entering the labyrinth.

He had to sacrifice something in order to pretend to be good.

“Humans. Disgusting humans have come here!”

The demon swung its whip despite suffering from the paladins and the priests' holy magic. But it couldn't last longer once Bahamorg joined and turned grey as its life was lost.

-The demon soldier Tropiko has been destroyed.

Fame has increased by 140 for all those who participated in the battle.

“We finally won.”

Ultimately 3 paladins were sacrificed. It was their first time dealing with a demon and they entered Roderick's Labyrinth via a narrow staircase so they received quite a bit of damage. It was far more advantageous to gather the priests and paladins together and have them use long ranged holy magic.

But once they entered deeper into the labyrinth, at least 10 or 12 demon soldiers would appear at the same time. Even the Morningstar Guild couldn't last against 13 demons and were wiped out. And nobody had continued deeper so there was no telling what dangerous places there were.

"I knew there was going to be trouble...it can't be avoided."

Weed repaired the armour and sword of the paladins while they were resting. Having the Blacksmith skill in an expedition was essential to maintaining their power.

"Thank you very much. Your Majesty."

"It is a honour to have you sharpen my sword directly..."

"You have learned skills to punish the wicked and establish justice. I have to do everything I can since you are fighting the demons."

Weed was able to slightly raise his intimacy with the paladins. Of course, that would only come in handy if the paladins lived.

"Healing Hands."

"Freya's Barrier."

“Protection of Faith!”

Weed led the paladins and started carefully hunting in the labyrinth. It wasn't difficult to deal with the mutated monsters made by the magician Roderick.

“Bahamorg, lure them.”

“Understood.”

There were many powerful monsters with levels in the late 400s. Even if the personal power of the paladins and priests were weak, their combat power as a group was outstanding. Recovery magic was available so it was possible to do a quick first aid in a long battle.

There weren't any monsters that could threaten the group's lives but they were decent to hunt. The strengthening auras on the paladins also had a significant effect. The Freya Church had a bright purple aura while the Church of Lugh had a white aura. The paladins fought spectacularly while radiating an aura according to their faith.

“Kuwaaaaab!”

-You have heard the cry of a fighting spirit.

Energy has awoken in a deep place in your body. Stats will be activated according to the body's latent potential.

Maximum health has increased.

Mana has greatly increased.

The damage to the enemy will become stronger with every successful attack.

When facing a stronger enemy in a frontal attack, fighting spirit will activate and resilience will improve.

There were many undisclosed places on the continent with high ranking monsters that wasn't possible to enter. But it wasn't unusual when this much power was gathered.

“2 people died this time.”

Every time a demon soldier emerged, Weed carefully commanded the paladins but those that showed even a little gap were sacrificed. The level difference between the demons and paladins was too serious.

His brain worked quickly as he tried to find a way to fight against the demons. The weak paladins who judged that they couldn't avoid death were determined to drag the enemies down with them into hell. Despite fighting defensively, 11 paladins had already died in the labyrinth.

“I need to make sure the paladins don’t decrease...if I can’t find a way to navigate the labyrinth then the damage will only worsen.”

The morale of the paladins had yet to fall. They had confidence in the hero who saved the continent and Weed also had high achievements with the Freya and Lugh Churches.

But once they entered the labyrinth a little deeper, 5~6 demons would emerge. The labyrinth was complicated and difficult to grasp their location. Whenever Weed encountered a crossroad, he would unconditionally select the left path.

“I feel like I should go to the right...but that is unlucky so let’s go to the left.”

Monsters and demons kept on showing up. But there were many times when he returned to a place they had been. The entire labyrinth was filled with spatial distortions, spatial expansions and magic so it was difficult to find a path.

Weed didn’t know where the group was but they seemed to be circling around the labyrinth. As they reached the centre of the labyrinth, there were many crossroads and spatial distortions. They endlessly fought in Roderick’s Labyrinth as they ran out of food and were killed by the monsters and demons.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Yoo Byung-jin watched the monitor with satisfaction.

“It is really severe this time.”

The Versailles Continent was suffering from the wars between prestigious guilds. The Hermes Guild temporarily stopped their war but everyone knew it would resume again once preparations were finished. And that time was fast approaching.

In order to compete with the Hermes Guild, other guilds were attempting to occupy more territory. In the meantime, the Embinyu Church was also devastating the continent. Yoo Byung-jin enjoyed Weed's adventure more than the war.

“If he doesn't succeed then he'll be wiped out. And the current probability of success is 0.2% at most.”

The artificial intelligence calculated the odds of Bahamorg, the paladins and priests making it through Roderick's Labyrinth. Weed was the variable here. Weed's pure combat ability would slightly increase those odds to 0.23%.

“Final secret sculpting technique quest. It is very difficult and tricky.”

It was a quest that required all of a person's power. The mobilization of sculptural lifeforms was necessary and Weed should've even created more sculptural lifeforms. Even if he did this, the calculated probability of success was approximately 5%.

Yet Weed didn't many the sculptural lifeforms into Roderick's Labyrinth for some reason. Yoo Byung-jin thought this plan was reckless and stupid.

"No one has broken through Roderick's Labyrinth so the true degree of difficulty couldn't be determined. Sometimes there is no choice but to fail even when every effort is made...anyway, the final secret sculpting technique will die here. There have already been a few other profession related skills buried."

There were secret techniques for knights, warriors and magicians. The quests for the secret techniques were so difficult that people would go hunting in order to become stronger. They became too caught up in increasing their level.

The quests for the secret techniques of other professions were delayed too long and faded away. There was a large number of secrets on the Versailles Continent but people also played a role.

"Tsk tsk, 3 paladins died this time."

Yoo Byung-jin was watching a battle against 2 demons on the monitor and 3 paladins had already been killed.

Once the fight started, it was inevitable they would die against the demons' fierce aggressiveness. It was interesting for Yoo Byung-jin to watch Weed's forces gradually weaken but it became tedious.

“It should be fascination once half a dozen emerges at once. Many will die then.”

If Weed couldn't obtain the final secret sculpting technique then he wouldn't be able to resist the Hermes Guild and would disappear. Even if that happened, Yoo Byung-jin was still having fun. He wanted to see Weed struggle and fight until the end. It was interesting as Weed was driven into an increasingly more extreme situation. The number of enemies increased as they wandered through the Roderick Labyrinth. Even if they found the path, they were likely to be wiped out while wandering around.

It was a situation where there was a deficient of information on how to find the correct path through the labyrinth. It was close to impossible to reach the room where Roderick studied magic.

-Based on Weed's character and judgement, I've calculated his chances of success in this quest.

Yoo Byung-jin sipped his lemon tea and asked comfortably.

“How much is it this time?”

He calculated that the probability of success while commanding Bahamorg and the paladins was approximately 0.2%. This was after a comprehensive analysis of Weed's judgement, leadership and abilities demonstrated in every adventure so far.

-The probability of Weed suppressing Roderick's Labyrinth is

46.7%.

“What did you say? Isn’t your calculation incorrect?”

-That is the average number that repeats after calculating it 316,820 times.

“Why is the success probability so high? It is impossible to find a path through the labyrinth.

-After a review of the existing data, Weed can find a way.

“The power of the paladins is too weak to conquer the labyrinth.”

-They will be able to demonstrate more strength under Weed’s leadership. The damage will be minimized and they will gradually expand more power.

“There are a lot of dangerous traps in Roderick’s Labyrinth. Isn’t it possible that they will fall into a trap?”

-Whatever crisis Weed gets into, he will make an unpredictable choice.

Yoo Byung-jin’s mood sharply fell.



“Ohh, demon henchmen!”

Bahamorg twisted a huge sword. Bahamorg was the only one who could fight against a demon soldier one on one. That wasn't even possible for Weed unless he used Sculpture Transformation or Sculptural Destruction. The demons could use many types of black magic and curses.

“You are just trash from hell and I will cut your body.”

Bahamorg's taunt skill!

“A barbarian like you...”

“I won't kill you smoothly. You will struggle in eternal torment.”

The angry demons brandished their whips towards Bahamorg. Once their magic and curses were concentrated on Bahamorg, they were easier to take care of. The priests showered Bahamorg with healing and blessings so there was no need to worry about the curses.

Bahamorg had a super hard body that deflected attacks and wore the best armour given by Emperor Geihar. He couldn't receive the concentrated attacks of 2~3 without worry.

Meanwhile the paladins and priests cast holy magic and used

their swords as support.

“It can’t be. The other humans...”

“Slaughter them. I have to kill more humans.”

The demons tried to provoke the paladins but Bahamorg persistently interfered.

“You think you can escape from me? Look at the funny sight of you running away with your tail between your leg!”

Bahamorg caught and firmly held 1 demon soldier. The paladins raised their shields and the defence formation meant that their survival rate increased.

“You will be complete annihilated according to Lugh’s will!”

Lugh’s Sword wielded by Derian!

While Bahamorg was defending, Derian would attack. The holy power of the restored Lugh’s Sword made even the demons shy away. They were so busy trying to escape and couldn’t counter-attack against Derian. Weed hadn’t confirmed it but Derian was at least in the mid-500s.

‘If I raise him well then he can play more of a role than Alveron.’

Derian had quick sword skills but most of his strength was based on holy power. He could deal with 2~3 demons by himself but the problem was that the demons avoided Derian.

The blessing magic from Alveron was the best. He sometimes used wide range healing magic. It was dangerous if he cast a holy spell against the demons but he was protected by the paladins.

‘I taught him properly. Nevertheless, a lecture is needed for training.’

Weed understood the characteristics of the paladins and made a formation while utilizing Derian and Alveron. The paladins and priests wouldn’t fight well without leadership. If a priest didn’t cast treatment magic at the appropriate timing then it could be dangerous to the paladins.

But that changed once Weed commanded them.

“Unit 1 will step back after attacking twice and Unit 2 will fill their place. Units 3 and 4 will use a crossbow attack while Unit 5 should be ready with spears to create distractions! Derian will use Lugh’s Sword to disturb the demon soldiers.”

The health and vitality of the demons were gradually shaved under the paladins’ offensive. He commanded the troops against the demons like he was conducting an orchestra. His ability to control the flow of combat like it was music! He thoroughly grasped the characteristics of his subordinates and made them work.

“Unit 7 priests, use holy magic on the right arm of the demon holding the whip!”

The demons possessed high health and excellent defence so it didn't die in a short amount of time. But their ability to recovery was low compared to their level and aggression so hell wasn't well populated with them.

However, they exerted merciless power when weakened so the paladins couldn't relax until they were dead. Weed predicted the movement of the demons and commanded the paladins.

“There are indeed many good points about fighting in a group.”

Weed liked the feeling of leading a massive number of troops and continuously hunting boss class monsters. The demons were strong but they couldn't face a horde of people. The thing that exerted the maximum force over the demons was holy magic and numerical advantage!

“We have to fight these cunning fellows. Maintain our numerical dominance and isolate them. Paladins, stab your sword in from behind!”

The demons were too intimidating so it was natural for some paladins to become damaged. When the demon was about to die, it would give up its life and recklessly attack. This would kill a few paladins who couldn't survive even with healing magic. If he didn't prepare and command the troops properly then the

formation would collapse and more people would die.

“30 paladins have already been killed.”

Weed sighed. The demons were very high level and the death of each paladin would cause his contribution to the related religion to fall.

“I’m going to have to prepare a bit more.”

He had prepared basic goods before the paladins entered Roderick’s Labyrinth.

Torches, extra swords, minimal food etc.

He brought enough supplies to endure for 1 month and 10 days. The colossal amount of supplies Weed prepared through Mapan was enough to fill 22 carriages. He didn’t want the group members to die from lack of food or materials. He had to solve Roderick’s Labyrinth and exit before the supplies ran out.

“I have to move more slowly.”

Weed only moved once the paladins and priests had perfect health and vitality. Of course, he still hadn’t found a way to navigate the labyrinth. Even when he returned to a previous place, he still stuck to the left.

‘There are still too many demon soldiers. We need to get used to them.’

There was two methods to get through Roderick’s Labyrinth. One was to quickly visit the centre. The problem was that he didn’t know the path but he could conserve his troops. Weed decided to go around.

‘I have to fight as much as possible. There are too many unknown things about the labyrinth to recklessly rush forward. There must be a clue somewhere so I have to look through every last corner of the labyrinth.’

Jeidun moved extremely slowly and disabled the traps. At every break, the paladins would switch between sleeping or sentry duty.

The carriages Mapan gave him was baggage in the rear. From the beginning he had prepared for living in Roderick’s Labyrinth.



“Looking for a part to go hunting at Ullenba Lair. I am a level 230 axe warrior and have already hunted there a few times.”

“Does anyone have purple stones? I’m looking for 15 of them. It is essential for the success of enchanting magic.”

“The monsters are dangerous so I’m looking for people to travel with to Rasuru village.

Time passed on the Versailles Continent while Weed wasn't seen. The Arpen Kingdom's territory widened and new buildings rose due to technological development. The ambitious architects challenged themselves to complete one building after another as festivals took place throughout the kingdom.

“Hooray the Arpen Kingdom!”

“The performance to commemorate the completion of the clock tower is starting now.”

“Grass porridge! Grass porridge!”

The Grand Buildings were used to promote the development of the Arpen Kingdom. It was required for users who went hunting or adventuring for a long time to return to the village.

“Is this place the Yusellin village? I think I made a mistake...”

“The walls have widened and there are many people here. How did this village change to a city in a few months?”

“Ah, that is the Alkazar Bridge! They were making it when I left but it seems to be completed already.”

“We can now cross the river using that bridge. Aren't there many lights on the other side?”

“It is evening so you can’t see it well but a city is being built there.”

Users sometimes stood in the middle of the street with dumb surprise.

“Where do I go if I want to reach the market?”

“What do you want to buy?”

“A leather trimming tool for my bag.”

“Oh, there is a leather specialist store in the South Square. The larger shopping centre is in the east but it will be difficult to find simple things there.”

“Thank you very much.”

The development speed was just as quick as Morata in the past as the entire Arpen Kingdom changed. If the kingdom developed then the capital Morata would prosper even more. It was an obvious choice for beginners to start in the north.

“The King of the Arpen Kingdom defends our pride and honour. King Weed is the only one who can bring back the glory of the Niflheim Empire.”

“It is an honour for the Imperial Knights to follow a charismatic and honourable new king.”

-Ddiring!

The Vent Castle Knights have sworn loyalty to King Weed of the Arpen Kingdom.

Praise for King Weed has spread through the Northern Continent. At first the remaining knights of the Niflheim Empire didn't believe such rumours. However the merchants talked while visiting and the knights gradually opened their hearts. The knights of the Niflheim Empire believe that King Weed of the Arpen Kingdom will lead them to glory.

Vent Castle now belongs to the Arpen Kingdom.

Residents of the Arpen Kingdom will visit Vent Castle and trading and migration is possible. All buildings and land owned by the Vent Castle has become the property of the Arpen Kingdom.

The influence of the Arpen Kingdom in this area has become very high.

“Aha! A new trade route has opened.”

“Merchants, quickly go to Vent Castle.”

“What local specialties will sell well?”

“That place does have enough goods so everything from Morata is popular.”

Beginner merchants riding carriages and others from the Arpen Kingdom flocked towards Vent Castle. Adventurers and knights also headed there.

“What kind of adventures will be here?”

“Go faster. We have to complete the first quests and dungeons.”

“Miller-nim, don’t you have to go work today?”

“I took a one week vacation so I can access the game. The adventure will start today!”

Vent Castle remained intact even after the fall of the Niflheim Empire. It was natural for there to be many rare quests among the residents.

“Sir Knight, your method of handling a horse is still immature.”

“I came to learn.”

“I’ll teach you the Niflheim Empire’s methods of fighting on a

horse.”

“Heok, that is an advanced technique....! I am prepared to die in order to learn it.”

Knights were able to acquire new techniques at the castle.

Many beginners who started in Morata chose a knight profession. Knights steadily rose horses, defended justice and was loyal to the kingdom. They also had high defence that could withstand strong monsters so it was a popular profession. But knights that didn't belong to a village couldn't gain honour and dignity. Those knights were the most pleased about the founding of the Arpen Kingdom.

“Now we can be openly called knights of the Arpen Kingdom!”

“Kya kya kya, I'm going to show off to my friends.”

Knights had influence in the kingdom and could receive better treatment from residents even if they had low fame. Of course, if there was a battle for the kingdom then they were obliged to go out and restore peace. But knights willing to do their duty could obtain a portion of the kingdom's profit.

“Is there something coming from the sky?”

“Isn't it a cloud?”

“It seems to be a piece of land...”

Lavias the sky island had arrived in the Arpen Kingdom. The island where the avians lived!

“The Arpen Kingdom is no joke. Something exciting is always happening.”

“The pace that the Arpen Kingdom is developing at is hard to match. I’m a little behind so I’ll have to hunt eagerly.”

“CTS Media has a program related to the Arpen Kingdom every week. And the rumours in the taverns can’t be missed.”

Lavias the sky island neared Morata. The users were able to fly to Lavias through items purchased from the stores or quests.

The Grass Porridge Cult had an urgent meeting.

“Our Grass Porridge shouldn’t be undeveloped.”

“I agree. We need to spread the excellent taste of grass porridge to all continents.”

“If they taste the grass porridge then they will join.”

“I want to see a newly born bird pecking at bread.”

The avians joined the Grass Porridge Cult! And there were also discussions about why Weed hadn't shown up for a long time. He succeeded in his hummingbird's journey and training Radiant Sword in a storm.

“He rallied the priests and paladins of the Freya and Lugh Churches to go somewhere...I don't know anything but it is bad if we haven't heard any news.”

“Do you think his adventure will succeed?”

“Of course, he is Weed-nim!”



The Hermes Guild didn't pass the time doing nothing.

“The integration for the occupied areas of the Kallamore Kingdom, Lasalle Kingdom and Britten Alliance Kingdom is almost complete.

“The Tullen Kingdom?”

“There are still some things to arrange there. We have the Beden Guild cleaning up the last remaining forces of the Black Lion Guild.”

They made progress against the Cloud Guild of the Britten Alliance Kingdom. They had absorbed key members and slowly dismantling the guild.

The Kallamore Kingdom, Lasalle Kingdom, Britten Kingdom and the Tullen Kingdom had been perfectly devoured by the Haven Empire. The Hermes Guild knew that they wouldn't be able to stop once they started expanding their territory again.

“Pay attention to mine development, secure blacksmiths and open a supplies road.”

“We've established a plan for conquest.”

They would alienate other guilds while spreading and paying attention to the rear would weaken them. Lafaye prepared a conquest plan that would allow them to proceed without a hitch.

“The construction of the Imperial Palace?”

“The construction site is enormous so the completion rate is 83% despite hurrying.”

“Don't worry about the budget and commit to it.”

“There are no problems. But many decorations and artworks are required for the Imperial Palace. That's why there is a delay.”

Sculptures and artworks were indispensable for the elegance of a palace. The Imperial Palace increased the authority of the Emperor and maximized his grip on the entire Empire.

Normally architects and artists were commissioned by the guild. It was normal for them to complete buildings destroyed by wars. However, most architects with great workmanship moved to the north and they were forced to deal with roadside artists.

The north was taking the lead in cultural development.

They were lacking artists so the construction of the Imperial Palace was behind schedule.

“The Hermes Guild will begin their war of conquest once the Imperial Palace is completed.”

They didn't have any moral justification to conquer the continent. They just wanted to become the strongest force on the continent!

Their military would advance in 3 directions towards the Gadian, Ritten and Aidern Kingdoms.

“Is there any news about Weed's situation?”

Rather than the other competing guilds, Lafaye cared more about Weed. Whenever he was quiet, he would suddenly show up and cause a big incident!

“According to an analysis from our intelligence network, Weed has entered Roderick’s Labyrinth.

“Is that reliable information?”

“Someone in Somren City witnessed him hiring the paladins and priests from the Freya and Lugh Churches. And the only place that would require that much power nearby...”

“Roderick’s Labyrinth. But going there is suicide.”

Lafaye thought it was outrageous for a moment.

‘Is he crazy? That is too hard if it is for his Sculpting Master Quest.’

He was surprised since no one had conquered Roderick’s Labyrinth.

‘It will take some time to finish the class quest. If nothing unusual happens then Weed would finish the Class Master Quest first. But if he dies in the labyrinth then his sculpting skill would fall.’

Losing skill proficiency at this moment was serious. The damage was so large that it was likely Weed’s other production skills would fall as well.

‘I just don’t get it. Roderick’s Labyrinth at this point...can he clear Roderick’s Labyrinth?’

Lafaye shook his head.

So far, famous parties had challenged Roderick’s Labyrinth. They all failed to defeat it. The monsters were a problem but so was finding the correct path. The standard of the traps, monsters and maze was high enough to wipe out the whole Morningstar Guild.

“Roderick’s Labyrinth will be Weed’s destruction.”

That was the sobering analysis of the Hermes Guild.

“In the end, it seems to be that way.”

Lafaye nodded but wasn’t entirely convinced.

Something similar had occurred in Continent of Magic. Weed succeeded in all adventures that no one else could accomplish.

Chapter 5: Sacrifice Of Paladins

Weed's lifestyle was suffering but he was glad about it.

“This is finally the taste of living.”

It was rough but he was just grateful the priests, paladins and Bahamorg were still alive. They had been fighting the demon soldiers for 2 days and 54 paladins had already been sacrificed.

When they entered Roderick's Labyrinth, there had been 680 people but that number was quickly reducing. The paladins were getting damaged but they hadn't reached the centre of the labyrinth yet and were just wandering around the outer edges.

In the meantime, the cooperation and tactics of the priests and paladins had changed. They practiced healing or using with holy magic while being violently attacked by the demons and were able to reduce the damage.

“The energy pill is good for the body. Use all of it. It isn't any use now but it will come in handy later in the dangerous moments.”

Weed had come prepared with many supplies. Most things were procured with the labyrinth in mind. Monster meat and leather, herbs to stop bleeding and other materials were obtained for the expedition.

“This is quite salty!”

Some supplies that could be used for level 200s were old so they were bitter. They were goods left behind from the early days of Royal Road where many people challenged Roderick's Labyrinth.

“Maybe other people didn't take them because they were considered useless.”

Of course Weed packed all those goods. Sometimes valuable items were abandoned but this was a labyrinth so people couldn't go looking for it.

“I definitely have to get out alive.”

Weed wasn't wearing flashy armour. If he wore Baharan's Bracelet and the Goddess' Knight Armour, then they were highly likely to drop if he died. Although he was worried about the Goddess' Knight Armour, he had to wear it because it increased resistance against black magic and curses.

The extra leadership over paladins and priests was also required right now. Weed's charisma and leadership was at a very high level but there was a chance morale would fall in the very dangerous labyrinth.

“Take this, hiccup!”

So far Jeidun hadn't made any mistakes while disarming the

traps. Weed promised to pay him in alcohol so he was drunk but it was better than the alternative.

“Ah...no. We shouldn't have come here. We'll die. Aaaack!”

“Now, have a cup of this...”

“Kyah, I like the taste of this alcohol. Ggol ggol ggol!”

So far the priests and paladins were still good.

“This is where the demon soldiers...”

“We have to punish everything.”

In Bahamorg's case, he didn't have to worry about anything at all. He could take care of the enemy's offensive by himself even if 2~3 demons appeared.

Bahamorg and the paladins' levels slightly increased by facing the demon soldiers. The priests' treatment skill improved a bit but it wasn't a large difference.

Weed took one step and reached level 429.

The level of the demons was difficult to hunt every day. Outside the labyrinth they would be classified as boss class monsters. A

party hunting level 500 monsters every day didn't exist. The paladins were sacrificed but those remaining could get quite a lot of experience and skill proficiency.

“I can use the demons to raise the level of Radiant Sword!”

Weed piled up experience by continuously using Radiant Sword. The only downside was that his contribution to the Freya and Lugh's Churches would decrease and the group's combat power weakened. He was anxious about conquering Roderick's Labyrinth and getting out alive.

“I have to keep looking for a way through the labyrinth.”

As he proceeded with searching through the labyrinth, 3~4 demon soldiers would appear.

“Concentrate the healing magic. This will be a prolonged battle. Even if the paladins on the front lines aren't injured, the priests should continue using healing magic. And Alveron.”

“Yes, Weed-nim.”

“Please use protection magic when those guys are chanting a spell. No one else can block it except you.”

“I understand.”

Commanding the troops was more difficult as a large number of demons showed up. The risk factor increase with the number of demon soldiers. The troops carried out a thorough defence formation but facing the demons wasn't easy.

“The humans who came here are moderately proficient.”

“Let's all go to hell together!”

The demons' wide area magic exploded! Although the lead paladin was holding a shield, he turned grey and disappeared.

“Alveron, obscure their eyes!”

“Holy Buster!”

Alveron's holy magic caused an intense burst of light so painful that the demons temporarily couldn't open their eyes.

“Lugh's Miracle.”

Derian used the power of Lugh's miracle to raise the ability of the paladins. Everyone used their maximum ability to interrupt the demon soldiers.

“The number of demons will start increasing and the defence formation will be limited in a prolonged war.”

If it wasn't for his Blacksmithing and Cooking skills then more paladins would've died by now. Weed thoroughly screened the skills that the demon soldiers used. While the paladins could withstand a few physical attacks by the demons, it was important to hinder or stop their magic attacks.

“The troops have to move perfectly...in order to get rid of those guys.”

The combination of priests, paladins and Bahamorg needed to be perfect in order to fight back. Many more demons would emerge deeper in the labyrinth and the standard of the mutated monsters would rise as well.

“It can't be like this. It will become dangerous if more demons emerge.”

Currently the battles against the demons were smooth but it would become rougher as more troops were killed. The demon soldiers were cunning and didn't fight in a similar manner. If the paladins stayed in one place then an attack would be concentrated there and the iron defence would collapse. Failure to escape would be a quick death!

Although Weed carefully watched over them, so far 71 paladins had died.

‘I can't put them to work anymore.’

It was a shame that the casualties couldn't be resurrected with a necromancer's abilities. At least none of the priests had died yet due to the paladins' thorough protection. If there weren't any priests in a place where demons were running rampant then there would be devastating results.

“Bahamorg.”

“Speak.”

“I'm grateful that you're fighting with me.”

“I came here because I believed in you. It is also possible to fight against an enemy that isn't boring. I will fight like a barbarian warrior.”

Bahamorg was the most reliable person in Roderick's Labyrinth in Weed's view.

‘I was afraid the other sculptural lifeforms would die so I didn't bring them. If I did, they would indeed die early.’

Bahamorg was able to endure against the demons' evil magic with the support of the priests. His race was meant to be warriors so he wouldn't die easily. He would probably hold out until the end and succumb after all his colleagues died.

Bahamorg was also at a similar level to the demon soldiers. Anything dangerous could be entrusted to him. Of course, there

was no need to think about it until Bahamorg died.

“Bahamorg, keep advancing.”

“I’m going. Jump at me, turiyaaa!”

-You have listened to the call of the wild.

Physical combat ability will improve by an overwhelming amount.

Attack skills will greatly increase.

Complicated skills that require thinking can’t be used.

A warrior’s roaring skill!

The wall, ceiling, broken table and candlestick that Bahamorg was moving towards melted and 7 demon soldiers flew out. Their muscular bodies were hovering in the air due to their wings and they were gripping axes in both hands.

“I heard news that humans had arrived. I didn’t think they would reach here...”

“Catch them all!”

“Grant their death wishes.”

“They will be chopped up by demons.”

He had expected the number to grow but this was 7 at once! It was possible for demons to set up a secret ambush. The demons couldn't underestimate humans because many of them seemed to be priests.

“As expected from my destiny...but I am glad.”

Weed never believed that everything could be solved easily due to good luck. He never entered the lottery or took minor prizes. He would write a review every time he purchased a product. If 3~4 demons steadily appeared then he would actually feel more suspicious!

“Step back and form a defence formation! Paladins should fire as soon as crossbows are loaded. That is the target. And start attacking with holy magic! Shower them with holy magic so that the demons can't approach!”

A large number of demons emerged so Weed's numbers would reduce unless they focused quickly. There were more of them so the damage would increase. Bahamorg tried to impede them but the demons scattered around.

It was the worst situation but the difficult part was ensuring the priests' mana didn't run out. The paladins attacked by the demons

could receive healing. If the priests ran out of mana then it would be catastrophic.

If a large number of paladins died then the Roderick's Labyrinth quest would fail. Once the priests started to receive damage, it would be hard not to be wiped out by the labyrinth.



“One point attack!”

Weed continuously attacked one point on a demon's chest as holy magic exploded around him. He tried to use Texture Sword to destroy the opponent but unfortunately it didn't work.

Understanding the opponent's health and defence was required for Texture Sword. Pinpointing the health of a high level boss monster was hard. Even if he used his highest attack, the demon's defence was so high it was impossible to use Texture Sword.

‘The damage to the paladins is too large.’

He could see paladins facing the demons and losing their lives.

‘If it wasn't for Bahamorg then we wouldn't be able to hold out.’

Weed struck the demon soldier and pulled out a sculpture.

“Sculptural Destruction! Everything into strength.”

-You have used Sculptural Destruction.

The pain of destroying a Fine sculpture! The grief!

5 Art stats have permanently disappeared. Fame has decreased by 100.

The Art stat has been converted to Strength for one day.

Your Art stat is too high. Strength stat is too low so the conversion won't be completed all at once.

800 Strength has been changed to the level 8 advanced skill 'Severe Blow.'

When hitting enemies with the exact amount of power, enemies will be blown away. Probability of causing paralysis and confusion has increased.

980 Strength has been changed to the level 7 advanced skill 'Piercing Spear.'

The opponent's shield and armour will be smashed by the powerful attack.

1,430 Strength has been changed to the level 9 advanced skill ‘Momentary Herculean Strength.’

Power will triple for a short amount of time. Enormous vitality is required.

1,598 Strength has been changed to the level 3 advanced skill ‘Skilled Attacker.’

Increases damage of attack skills.

Weed immediately struck the demon’s weapon.

-The collision has exceeded the limits of the sword and the durability of the Daemon Sword has decreased.

Durability would be restored with repairing.

“I’ll do it. Now is the time to run wild!”

The demon’s chest was full of gaps. The level was high so originally the demon was very powerful. So far Weed had been pushed by the power of the demon. His health reduced due to the damage despite the Goddess’ Knight Armour.

However, he was overflowing with strength after Sculptural Destruction.

“Heriam Fencing!”

Weed’s sword moved freely in his hand like a toy as he continuously attacked the demon soldiers.

“Kuhek, a great human!”

The angle and speed of the sword was like magic as it left an afterimage while cutting the demon. The demons mainly used long and heavy weapons that were slow so they had no choice but to receive damage.

His mind wanted to face many demons at once but fighting against 1 was the best. The paladins and priests had to take on 4 demon soldiers. Alveron and Derian played an active part as they poured all their holy power into catching the demon troopers.

“Goddess Freya, I will go to your loving arms.”

“I’ll raise my sword with courage.”

The paladins devoted their lives and eventually put away the 4 demon soldiers. Weed’s hunt was also a success with the support of the priests. Meanwhile Bahamorg had been safely holding up against 2 demon soldiers.

‘Now there are only two left.’

Every one wasn't in a normal state but there was no place to avoid it. A lot of paladins had already died or received severe injuries but there were demons left so it would be dangerous if their morale fell.

“We will win. Now we just need to get rid of 2 more!”

-Skill: Lion's Roar has been used.

The morale of all allies within the influence of Lion's Roar has increased by 200%.

All confused states are released.

Your Leadership will increase by 300% for 5 minutes.

“For the Goddess!”

“Drive out the devil with Lugh's light!”

The paladins and priests recovered their morale and continued fighting fiercely against the demons. Bahamorg's treatment continued so his body had recovered close to its normal state.

“Kurot...it has become troublesome.”

“I want to slaughter even more.”

The 2 remaining demon soldiers sneaked from Bahamorg's range and assaulted the paladins! Once the demons escaped the provocation, they chose to kill as many as possible rather than face Weed or Derian. And they didn't care about their lives so the maximum damage was shown.

-All demon soldiers have been removed.

The sacrifice of all the paladins will be known once the labyrinth is exited.

"Kuuuk!"

"It was a terrible battle."

Once the battle was finished and the damage confirmed, a staggering 22 paladins had died. There were many critical moments against the demon soldiers but the paladins held on with their indomitable spirit or else a lot more would've died. Alveron had at least 10 paladins die near him.

The paladins were able to achieve a miraculous victory due to their faith and Weed's leadership.

"Too many people died in this one battle."

The problem was that this fight would be repeated hundreds of

times as he wandered through Roderick’s Labyrinth. Weed’s eyes grew darker.



No matter how optimistic a person was when entering Roderick’s Labyrinth, they would eventually think of failure. Countless demons, monsters and magic! There were infinitely complicated paths that led to traps.

Derian, Alveron, the paladins, priests, Jeidun for finding traps and Bahamorg was the optimal configuration for this place. When a priest was drawn pulled into a drawn out fight, they would benefit from the paladins’ defence.

The troops Weed led had a good balance of attack, defence and recovery. Taking that into consideration, borrowing Royal Knights from other kingdoms would be the best choice despite the high contribution required. They were only able to hold up in Roderick’s Labyrinth that long due to Weed’s cooking and production skills.

But the paladins paid a high cost as they kept on dying. 163 paladins had died since they entered Roderick’s Labyrinth.

“At this rate, it is just extermination.”

Weed looked at the injured paladins lying around. A severe fight with 9 demon soldiers had finished just now and exhausted priests

with low mana were lying down on the ground. A considerable number of paladins had been reduced since they first entered the labyrinth but they didn't give up.

Bahamorg's combat spirit was strong and he would fight until the end. The priests had a lot of faith and their willpower didn't fall easily. Another factor that maintained morale was Weed's tasty dishes. If morale ever fell then recovery speed would slow down and they might not be able to fight properly in battle.

He had thought about hiring mercenaries from the mercenary guilds but their morale would rapidly drop. They could also rebel and leave the group so it wasn't worth bringing them to a dangerous place.

"However the mercenaries could lure them. Even if it costs more money..."

Weed's face was earnest and serious unlike before. The paladins were becoming fewer and he still hadn't found a clue to navigate the labyrinth. More demons would emerge deeper into the maze so this was rather dangerous. If they continued walking in circles then they would be wiped out by the demons.

'Is this an impossible quest to succeed? No, it is not over yet. Just like bloated noodles, it is still too early to give up. I can't try again if I fail so I need to give everything in order to not regret it later.'

It was impossible to run away anyway. It wasn't possible to find an exit in the labyrinth and Yurin's Picture Movement skill

couldn't penetrate the spatial distortions. He had to fight and find a way to overcome being trapped.

‘This labyrinth is related to the secret sculpting technique. Of course, professions related to sculpting could overcome the maze.’

If they didn't have to worry about the path and just killed the demons then Bardray and the Royal Guards could overpower them. But they would receive considerable damage from the demons.

‘Did I receive a clue from the sculpting quests that I've done so far?’

Weed thought about the secret sculpting technique quests that he had done so far. No matter how positively he thought about it, with his current power he would fail. He had to examine everything from the beginning in case he missed a clue. Then a quest related to Zahab suddenly rose up.

Weed took out a small hand mirror.

“I obtained this item....Inspect!”

-Truth Showing Hand Mirror.

Made of special materials, holy power is flowing through it. Reveals falsehoods and visions, leads one back to the way of truth.

Can be used in a particular place.

Restrictions: Can't be used by murderers or evil people.

When dancers, bards or priests equip this item, the effect of this item doubles.

Options: Intelligence, Wisdom + 7.

Charm +23.

Maximum mana has increased by 11%.

Faith has increased by 38.

It will lead the way in a specific place.

A hand mirror belonging to Queen Evane who loved Zahab. It was normally used to verify his appearance after he used Sculpture Transformation.

-Additional information about the item has been revealed.

“Inspect!”

-Truth Showing Hand Mirror: Durability 14/25

A hand mirror kept by the Saint Manderia. It was a gift given to him by the King of Gradian.

Manderia tried to sell the hand mirror to help the poor but no jewellery merchant was willing to buy something given by a king.

But after Manderia died in a back alley, the hand mirror was imbued with the holy magic 'Path of Truth.'

It reveals falsehoods and visions, leads one back to the way of truth. But it can only be used as long as Manderia's holy power remains.

Restrictions: Can't be used by murderers or evil people.

When dancers, bards or priests equip this item, the effect of this item doubles.

Once Manderia's holy magic is depleted, the effects of the hand mirror will disappear.

Options: Magic Resistance +9%

Rare magic can be restored.

Intelligence, Wisdom + 24.

Charm +45.

Maximum mana has increased by 17%.

Faith has increased by 38.

It is possible to find the path in a labyrinth flowing with evil energy.

2 users remaining. When everything is used up, it will return to an ordinary hand mirror.

“A difficult to obtain item can only be used twice...I was too late for the quest connect to Zahab but this isn't bad. Path of Truth!”

Weed immediately used the hand mirror.

Paaaaat!

Light poured out of his hand and pointed to one of many paths.

“That is the right path.”

Weed had turned on the light of hope. If he walked forward then many demons would emerge from now on. The probability of

Bahamorg, the paladins and priests holding on until they reached the destination was low.

Even so, there was a satisfied smile on Weed’s face.

“There is still one use left in the item. It can still be sold at the auction even with one use remaining.”



Ding dong!

A great number of black sedans were lined up in front of Lee Hyun’s house.

“CTS Media’s audience rating is quite high these days... congratulations, Director Hyeon.”

“Haha, what are you saying? These days there are many fresh programs being broadcasted. The audience reactions are quite good...well, it is popular but that might fall in a few weeks.”

“LK will make a broadcast contract with Weed the God of War. The contents of the contract are so surprising that everyone has made a wasted trip. But I didn’t think the director of Digital Media would come directly.”

“The office was stuffy...I decided to take a trip outside.”

Those gathered before the gates didn't believe those words. People with a heavy responsibility for each broadcasting station visited Lee Hyun's house directly.

Lee Hyun had been concentrating on his Master Quest for a while so the broadcasting stations were thirsty for a special program. It was important to regularly raise the quality of the various programs and increase the fixed audience. The Royal Road viewers were increasing and the broadcasting stations gained a large profit from advertisements.

Selling the programs produced to foreign broadcasting companies also reaped an astronomical amount of profit. It was natural for foreign countries to connect and spend time in Royal Road. Royal Road related goods were sold in cities like Paris, London, Shanghai, Venice and Barcelona.

They all knew about Weed the God of War despite not knowing the South Korean president. If a broadcasting company produced a special program on Weed then their names would be known. The overall ratings would rise so the broadcasting stations couldn't miss the chance.

Once information that Weed was entering Roderick's Labyrinth spread, they immediately visited his house.

Ding dong, ding dong, ding dong.

"Hrmm, nothing is happening when I pressed the bell so he

might be sleeping or playing Royal Road.”

“He isn’t picking up his phone so he might’ve gone outside.”

“Should we wait out here...”

“If you have an emergency then feel free to leave.”

“Director Hyeon, time will pass quickly while talking.”

The people in charge of the broadcasting stations waiting endlessly in front of Lee Hyun’s house. Lee Hyun was inside his house.

“The bean paste soup tastes very good today.”

He relaxed while eating rice and visited the home page of the Dark Gamers. He knew the people from the broadcasting stations were outside but he made them wait intentionally. It was common sense to gain the upper hand in negotiations. It was necessary to make them wait.

“Rururu...money will come in again.”

Lee Hyun hummed as he washed the dishes and slightly opened the window to let out the smell of bean paste soup. After a long time, he finally opened the door and went outside.

“What suddenly brings you here?”

“Haha, I just stopped by for a greeting.”

Naturally the people from the broadcasting stations didn't come empty handed. Rumours had spread about Lee Hyun so they were each holding thick shopping bags.

‘Free gifts.’

‘He likes free things.’

They brought various things like cow ribs, red ginseng, chinaware, whisky, power tool set etc. The power tool set was specifically bought by KMC Media due to something Lee Hyun previously said.

-I often make improvements on my house. Having power tools would make it comfortable. I considered it but money is valuable but....it is absolutely necessary. If there is only 1 power tool then it would be a problem if it breaks down.

Director Kang brought a whole bag full of the latest power tools. It wasn't a pure gift but a neat extortion by Lee Hyun.

‘This present speaks to my heart.’

There was no need for him to refuse the gifts from the

broadcasting stations.

“Everyone...you brought these things for me. They are things that I need. Rib set, I’d like to have it. Please come in.”

Lee Hyun invited the broadcasting station officials into his house. Flashy presents were received so he should welcome them a little bit.

“Would you like any cold or hot drinks?”

“Something cool...”

“I’d like a warm beverage please.”

Lee Hyun took out some coffee mixes. Iced coffee mixture and general mocha coffee mixture! CHN Broadcast brought green tea as a present but he would save that for his sister to drink. The broadcasting station officials were used to eating expensive dishes at good restaurants. Lee Hyun knew this so he asked a question as he handed out coffee.

“By the way, what is the reason for visiting my house?”

“That....recently there are rumours that you took a company of paladins and entered Roderick’s Labyrinth.

“Hahaha, it isn’t important but the director wanted to greet

you...”

Of course it was important that he entered Roderick’s Labyrinth. Weed the God of War challenging the continent’s 8th labyrinth was a great issue. If he conquered Roderick’s Labyrinth then it was another event that would rewrite the continent’s history.

“I am indeed currently inside Roderick’s Labyrinth.”

“Heeok!”

“Then....this is a contract for a broadcast appearance.”

“This is definitely a good contract that is better than the other broadcasting stations.”

They came to give Lee Hyun the broadcast appearance contracts! The special appearance fee was enough to raise an orphan.

‘I’ve grabbed hold of more assets.’

If he signed an exclusive contract with a broadcasting station then there was the contract signing money and appearance fees. But Lee Hyun decided to form an agreement with all the broadcasting stations at a relatively high price. Eating at many places was better than just one place.

“If you agree to show Roderick’s Labyrinth...incentives are also

prepared. How about a luxury car if you sign an exclusive contract with us?”

CTS Media offered money and a foreign car. Weed shook his head.

“I will not take the car.”

For the most part, men were interested in cars. However insurance money, taxes, oil changes and tire changes were required every year. A car unnecessarily consumed money so Lee Hyun refused it.

“If it is cash then I will consider it positively.”

“....”

Chapter 6: Landlord's Appearance

Weed wasn't going to succeed just because he found the path through the labyrinth.

"This time there are various branches."

Sometimes the light from the mirror would split into two or three directions at a crossroads. The space was distorted which meant that either path would allow him to reach the destination. Of course he didn't know which side was a shortcut. Moreover, the power of the demons increased as they went deeper so it was riskier.

"It is still difficult like this. It seems I need to use Sculpture Transformation."

The chaos warrior Kubichya that could use the dragon sword Red Star!

"Let's go!"

Weed used Sculpture Transformation and moved along the path revealed by the mirror with Bahamorg, the paladins and the priests. There were 9 demons waiting for them. It was solid evidence that they were reaching the centre of the labyrinth.

"Grrrr, weak humans have come."

“Do you have faith in the Gods? The Gods won’t be able to save you.”

The demon soldiers struck first.

“Bahamorg, charge!”

“Understood.”

Weed was prepared for the difficult quest and brought boots and armour for a chaos warrior. He had nothing to fear with the protective equipment.

“Blink!”

He popped behind a demon and swung the Red Star.

“Keet!”

“It is fire, fire!”

Radiant Sword was effective against demons because it contained the light attribute, the next effective attribute after holy power. But the Red Star’s flames could burn away evil so it boasted overwhelming damage against the demons.

“Kueeeek!”

“Hell! It is like I’m being burnt by the flames of hell!”

The demons wrapped in the flames of Red Star were in great pain. They had resistance to fire but these flames weren’t easily quenched. Weed’s combat power changed now that transformed and could use the Red Star.

“Persevere!”

Weed received the attacks of 2~3 demons. His health and resilience increased after becoming a chaos warrior but his body couldn’t take attacks like Bahamorg. He attacked with the Red Star and used Blink the moment the demons got close. A chaos warrior was a combat species so they had an advantage over humans.

“I will definitely bite and eat him.”

“The sword that human has. It is giving off the scent of dragon.”

The demon soldiers chased after Weed. It became easier for Bahamorg, Derian and the paladins to hunt. Thanks to Weed’s efficiency in luring the demons, they were able to win with only 23 paladins dying.

The deaths of the paladins couldn’t be helped when looking at their strength and the number of demons. Bahamorg approached Weed.

“Are you okay?”

“This degree...isn't enough to blink at.”

“I admire your resilience. Your patience isn't ordinary.”

“It is natural since I am protecting my colleagues.”

Weed didn't miss this opportunity increase his favour with Bahamorg.

The battle was so dangerous that he only had 25,000 health left when it finished. It was a considerably high number but his health had reached 150,000 when he changed to a chaos warrior. The demons were so strong that he had a lot of anxiety once it reached 20,000.

He often had to Blink when facing the demons so the priests couldn't treat him. He was able to withstand the demons' attacks thanks to the power of the Red Star.

“Anyway, this danger will be nothing compared to when we keep advancing.”

They encountered 3 more battle after that. Weed ensured the safety of the paladins by playing the role of bait. He would attack the demons from behind and then lure them aggressively.

“Everyone jump at me!”

Weed yelled using Lion’s Roar.

After their victory, Weed would be so injured it was like he was dead. But he was willing to bear such a burden to reduce the damage on the paladins.

“That bastard!”

“Get rid of his sword.”

“Chew on his raw flesh!”

All the demon soldiers chased after Weed.

-You have been hit by the demon soldier’s whip.

-The sword of the demon soldier Krobirub has hit your shoulder.

It is a severe injury and your left shoulder can’t be used.

It was common for the demons’ attacks to land on the ground. However, he could only teleport a short distance and 5~6 demons were chasing after him.

‘Let’s aim behind that demon over there. I can’t stop moving. And the one in the front is the strongest.

He used all his combat experience to dodge the demons. His health fell to the bottom just as Bahamorg took some demons off him. The wild and perilous battle brimming with so much intensity it was difficult to catch his breath!

“Ugh, we won this time. I really thought I was going to die.”

He managed to survive the battle due to Seo-yoon’s health being transferred through Seulroeo’s wedding ring. This time he had deliberately made the sculpture of Kubichya with thin fingers so the wedding ring could be worn.

Weed’s body received intense injuries so the priests gathered around to treat him. However a hopeless incident that he couldn’t predict occurred.

“Hiccup, kyaah! The alcohol is good today.”

Jeidun came out to dismantle a trap. The degree of difficulty for the traps also went up as the maze became deeper.

“Uh, should I touch the red line or the yellow line? Hiccup. Perhaps it is the red line?”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

A pile of stones fell from the ceiling and killed Jeidun!

“No! I have to make you work more...”

He knew the path to the destination but that didn't matter. It wouldn't be possible to dismantle the traps from now on.

“At this rate we really will be completely trapped here.”

Weed was stunned and stood at that spot for a while. Roderick's Labyrinth was completely isolated. He knew the way but now he would receive damage from the traps even before fighting the demons. The lives of Bahamorg and the paladins weighed heavily on his shoulders.

“We will have to fight against Montus at the end of this path.”

Unfortunately, he felt a bad premonition. He knew where Montus was located so Weed could avoid him. Unfortunately Weed couldn't avoid any places because he was looking for the research records. The possibility was high that he would have to go through that room or that it was located there.

“In the future there will be more demon soldiers, traps and monsters....like this, the odds aren't in our favour.”

Weed finally admitted to his failure. He only took paladins and

priests into Roderick's Labyrinth and the amount killed was great. Regular soldiers and mercenaries were difficult to lead well but their levels and combat power were higher than the paladins. If they entered the labyrinth as well then Weed might've succeeded after a long struggle. Now he felt despair as the faint light of hope disappeared. Weed needed to prepare something quickly.

“A disaster would be difficult. It can't be used every time the demons emerge and the weak priests would receive significant damage.”

Elemental Sculpting also wasn't suitable. The elementals were effective in various fields but the ability of a newly created elemental was weak. Dirtman and Fiery Pebble could be used in battle but the demons were too high level.

“There is a slightly better way. Something I didn't want to use....”

Sculpture Life Bestowal! It was a useful skill that could create a strong ally. The labyrinth was unstable so it wasn't possible to use Yurin's Picture Movement or summon the other sculptural lifeforms.

“I need to give life to a minimum of 5 in order for them to be useful. Creating more than 10.....and many of them will probably die against the demons and Montus.”

Not only would his level significantly reduce when he used the skill, only sculptures at the Masterpiece standard or higher would

be able to survive. He had made many of those sculptures to date but he hadn't brought them into Roderick's Labyrinth.

Even if the number of subordinates increased by giving life to sculptures, it wasn't easy for them to become stronger inside the maze. It was more likely that they would die against the demon soldiers.

“If I die and then use my fame to bring more free knights...even if I regret it later, it is too late to find a way with traditional sculpting. Then...”

Weed released Sculpture Transformation and took out a wooden block received from the Freya Church.

“Now I need to urgently create a skill that will be the most useful...”

He decided to create a sculpting technique now that he was cornered. It was also possible to change the frustrating situation with a suitable skill. He had to produce a skill that could reverse the situation and be used repeatedly in the future.



Sakak sakak sakak.

Weed shaved the wooden block with Zahab's Sculpting Knife. His hands sincerely filled in the small details! The sculpture of the

secret technique was important so he had to concentrate perfectly.

‘This tension is like when I put down the deposit to buy a house.’

It was a skill that would become his companion from now on!

Something like Radiant Sword to fight against enemies was needed or similar to Sculpture Life Bestowal would be good. Creating a disaster or unforeseen changes like Sculpture Transformation would be useless. If he used sculpting to create an elemental then the utilization would rise even more. A skill that could change the current situation!

‘If I create too good a skill then the penalty will be severe. Anyway, there should be more wrinkles on the face.’

Weed was making a sculpture of an old grandfather. There was great wisdom in the deep eyes and a large amount of wrinkles. He wore magician’s robes and a wide brimmed hat.

‘The magic staff...there wasn’t a cloak.’

Right now he was sculpting a figure of Magician Roderick. He was sculpting the Roderick that he saw in the video fighting against Montus. The advantage of a sculptor was that he could reproduce the exact target that he saw.

Weed spent 7 hours making the sculpture.

-With the help of Freya's holy power, it is possible to create a new sculpting skill.

Please set the name of the new sculpture skill.

“Sculpture Resurrection.”

-Sculpture Resurrection is correct?

“That's correct.”

-Please define the sculpting skill.

Weed said in a heavy voice.

“In this land, there lived as many heroes as stars in the night sky. Emperor Geihar Von Arpen, Kolderim, the Great Magician Roderick and wise King Theodarren of the Rosenheim Kingdom.”

Theodarren was a little less heroic compared to the others but he put it in specifically because of the pyramid he built. It was the sponsorship that was common in movies or dramas.

“It is a skill that can resurrect dead historical people.”

-Due to the nature of the skill, a high penalty will be given.

Do you still want to proceed?

“I’ve already decided.”

Even if the penalty was intense and he couldn’t frequently use the skill, he had no choice.

-The sculpting skill has been completed.

Goddess Freya doesn’t want you to violate the law of causality.

There will be a fixed price every time the sculpting skill is used.

-Wooden Statue: Durability 1/1

A wooden statue that contains Weed’s skills.

Allows you to acquire the skill to raise a dead historical person. However, Advanced Sculpting needs to be reached first.

-Sculpture Resurrection 1 (0%): It is possible to make a sculpture that will raise a great person not currently living.

Advanced Sculpting is required.

However, Art stat will decrease by 45 every time it is used. Faith is decreased by 10. 3 levels will fall.

The sculpture must accurately look like the target when they were alive and the length of resurrection depends on the skill level.

Presently 21 hours.

The current skill level can only raise 1 person at a time.

Only humans and similar races will respond to the call. Monsters are not possible.

The resurrected person shall possess their memories and abilities from when they were alive. They won't follow your commands and will act according to their own will. Sometimes they won't help and there is a possibility they will only do harm.

Goddess Freya won't agree to raising the same person twice.

The skill can be reused after 1 month.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-Fame has increased by 2,430 due to the creating of a new secret sculpting technique.

Weed gave birth to the most valuable skill!

“It is a shame about the reduction in 3 levels.”

Even though he called a great hero, that person was only active for 1 day.

“I have to pay expensive rent for something that isn’t limitless!”

The drop in art, faith and his level was rent for 1 day’s work.

“I have to use it anyway. Sculpture Resurrection!”

Weed immediately used the skill. He had been determined to revive someone from the beginning.

Great Magician Roderick! The labyrinth was his home and laboratory.

-Sculpture Resurrection has been used.

The Great Magician Roderick has received the call and returned to this land.

45 Art stats have permanently disappeared.

Faith stat has been permanently reduced by 10.

Level has fallen by 3.

18,000 health and mana is consumed.

The person revived by Sculpture Resurrection will retain their knowledge and ability.

It is only a fixed short time but they are thankful for being able to move in this world again.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpture Resurrection has improved.

It was completely different from summoning the undead. The person actually existed again.

Weed's location was filled with a white light. The light gradually disappeared and a person showed up.

Great Magician Roderick!

He looked exactly like the image Weed had seen of Roderick before entering the labyrinth. Roderick muttered while looking around at the surroundings.

“I....apparently I fought against the devil Montus and died. And this is my home.”

He was a great magician and judged the situation quickly.

Weed approached him.

“Greetings to the Great Magician Roderick. I am honoured to meet you in a place like this.”

“Who are you?”

“I’m am Weed. My profession is a sculptor.”

“I’ve never heard of you.”

“Of course not.”

Weed wasn’t famous during the time that Roderick lived. He was recognized as a great sculptor and king of the Arpen Kingdom but Roderick didn’t treat him like that.

That was the power of fame. If Roderick travelled to villages or cities then he would quickly hear about Weed. But this was a separate place. Even if he could go outside, it was possible he might not approve of an employer like Weed.

“I heard about how Great Magician Roderick-nim trapped the devil Montus in here and was deeply impressed.”

“It was to make sure the peace of the continent didn’t break due to my mistake. It would be serious if Montus managed to get outside.”

“Of course. The continent was able to stay calm thanks to Roderick-nim.”

Weed responded. It was a society where everyone flattered each other.

“What do you wish from me?”

“Nothing. I was just worried that the trapped Montus would somehow get out one day.”

“I will eliminate Montus.”

“Is that so? Then can I help Roderick-nim from the side?”

“I alone am sufficient.”

Roderick slammed his magic staff into the ground. There wasn’t a large sound or anything terrifying happening but Weed’s eyes were drawn to the staff.

‘The price for a staff used by a great magician....kkul keok!’

There was a large diamond embedded that scattered light. Roderick was a great magician overflowing with confidence in his own ability. It was an attitude appropriate for a magician who understood the laws that the world was composed of and the power of mana.

‘Judge, lawyer, prosecutor and doctor.’

All professional occupations!

“It would be a huge honour if I could fight with Roderick-nim against the devil.”

“It will be dangerous.”

“My power is marginal but I will fight against this devil. I think the most valuable thing in my life is coming here. So I will stay near Roderick-nim and respectfully learn from you.”

“Wait here.”

“I would like to observe Roderick-nim as a sculptor so I can make a fine piece people will remember.”

“Then come along. But don’t become a hassle for me.”

“Of course.”

Roderick eventually agreed to let Weed come along.

‘Now I can just follow behind Roderick and reap the benefits. It cost me 3 levels so I should properly utilize him.’



Roderick had installed the traps so he knew where they were all located. That’s because this was his home, not someplace else.

“This place is fairly distant from my laboratory. The demons will move through the spatial distortions so we will have to fight along the way.”

“Yes, I will be ready.”

Weed had once again used Sculpture Transformation into Kubichya. Bahamorg, the paladins and the priests were also following behind Roderick.

9 demon soldiers were waiting for them.

“Kyahat, humans have come here...”

“They are the prey. Eh! I’ve seen that old man somewhere.”

“All those making a mess of my house, disappear. Body Explosion!”

The air compressed near the demons due to Roderick’s magic and it exploded, causing huge damage. The demons didn’t immediately die but suffered from minor and severe injuries. But that degree of magic wasn’t the reason why a great magician was feared.

“Flame Pillar.”

A large column of flames shot up where the demons were. The wide area magic that had an effect on the whole region! The demons continued receiving damage until the magic ended.

Great magicians were able to use magic in a row without a great delay between spells. The Flame Pillar was just intermediate level magic.

“Hell’s Fire. Rock Strike. Soul Impact!”

Roderick drove the demons away with ruthless attacks. Weed’s eyes flashed as he sensed a chance.

“Can I help you?”

“You will get in the way while I’m chanting a spell. Just watch the view.”

“Roderick-nim doesn’t need to kill all the demon soldiers. Isn’t it more important to reach Montus? Even my small power can help a little bit.”

“Then do what you want.”

“The paladins will stay in a defence formation and the priests will attack the demons directly with holy magic.”

Weed lined up paladins with shields on both sides of Roderick to protect him. The fully repaired armour and shield gleamed and light flashed off it. The priests intensively used holy magic on the demons.

“Kyahaak!”

“We have to kill that human.”

2 demon soldiers ran out.

“You are my share.”

“I will kill you according to Lugh’s will.”

Bahamorg and Derian took on those demons. So far they had struggled against 8~9 so 2 demons were simple enough.

“Kuwaaaak!”

And the demon Roderick was concentrating on caught on fire.

“Blink!”

Weed showed up next to the demon and wielded the Red Star.

-The demon soldier Tabias has been destroyed.

Fame has increased by 191 for all those who participated in the battle.

-You have acquired a little experience.

His right hand held the Red Star while his left hand moved quickly.

Suksak!

-Tabias' Whip of Fear has been acquired.

-The belt of a demon soldier has been acquired.

-A black alchemy reagent has been acquired.

Next was the demon soldier that looked very weak.

-The demon soldier Rochyus has been destroyed.

Fame has increased by 171 for all those who participated in the battle.

-You have acquired a little experience.

-Agility has increased by 1 for hunting demon soldiers continuously.

Sususuk!

-Rochyus' Broken Shoulder Blades has been acquired.

-Fragments of Hatred have been acquired.

“I will kill you for the justice of the continent.”

Weed chose demons that didn't have a lot of health left and dealt the final blow. Usually he was conceded the experience in a battle to his subordinates. But the paladins and priests weren't his subordinates and Roderick would disappear after 1 day.

A persistent battle for profit!

“There is no time. We must go faster.”

“Yes, Great Magician Roderick-nim.”

Roderick could only exist in this world for a limited time so he wasn't interested in experience.

“Bahamorg, fight quicker. Don't hesitate for other people.”

“I will do so.”

“The paladins and priests should also focus on speed.”

“Yes! We understand.”

Weed was the commander of the paladins and priests. He had shown hard work and dedication in the labyrinth and was rewarded for it.

‘Roderick can only remain for another 20 hours. We must achieve the goal in this labyrinth during that time.’

Chapter 7: Demon Slayer

Weed managed to restore the experience lost when he used Sculpture Resurrection. The demon soldiers had high levels so he gained a lot of experience after he dealt the last strike. It wasn't to the extent that he gained 3 levels but his experience bar was quickly filling.

Ddiring!

-The demon soldier Teipe has been destroyed by your seven continuous attacks.

-The skill proficiency of Sword Mastery has improved.

-You have gained the title Demon Slayer.

When hunting demon soldiers, the effectiveness of your attacks will improve.

The effect of the title will help your subordinates overcome fear.

You will receive more respect from the religious societies on the continent.

When hunting weak monsters in a dungeon, there is a chance of dealing a deadly blow.

The probability of acquiring an item from a demon soldier has improved.

Resistance to black magic and curses has increased by 2%.

When owning an item associated with demons, it is possible to extract a higher power.

Restrictions: Only those who had hunted 200 demon soldiers will be given the title.

A title he got from fighting!

As Weed created sculptures and accumulated stats, he surpassed his limits and became a stronger warrior. He gained fame, stats and special skills. The Geomchis weren't interested in production skills which was why they were so strong. However, it wasn't easy to exceed their limits during battle and there were many cases where they died. Focusing on a safe hunt would prevent the development of his abilities.

‘This will be useful when using the Daemon Sword.’

Right now he was wearing the Red Star but the Daemon Sword was very useful in everyday hunting.

“Now there are 12 more fights....Montus will be waiting.”

“I see.”

Weed responded politely to Roderick.

His magic was full of endless surprises. The magician's mana consumption was very serious. It was common sense that they would have to mediate for a short time to recover their power. Yet Roderick didn't need to take such breaks.

“Fever, Blind, Lightning Circle!”

Despite the fact that he recklessly used 3 magic spells in a row and repeated it in battle, he never showed any signs of running out of mana. He only knew Roderick for a short amount of time but Weed boldly asked him a question.

“What is the secret behind your mana not running out?”

“Isn't that too simple?”

“Huh?”

“It is what the world is made of. The world is filled with mana.”

Everything in Royal Road was composed of mana.

“That’s right.”

“My body can drag in mana from the world in order to have an infinite source of mana.”

“Oh, then it is possible to use magic even if the body doesn’t contain mana.”

“A situation like pulling in mana doesn’t occur that often. But I use advanced magic that consumes too much mana.”

Weed was completely envious of magicians.

‘How good would it be if I mastered magic instead of sculpting.’

It was inevitable that sculptors would be jealous of other professions. Roderick could pull a large amount of mana from his surroundings into his body. A break wasn’t necessary so he could be called the perfect battle magician.

Weed went to the place where Roderick devastated the demons with his magic and picked up the items.

“You seem to be lacking in power. Memorize the power of giants.”

“Thank you very much.”

Roderick chanted a spell that gave Weed, Bahamorg, the paladins and priests the power of the giants.

-The Grand Magician Roderick has used the spell 'Power of Giants.'

Latent power will be awakened and increased to 300%.

The duration is 2 hours and 50 minutes.

The magician also mastered secondary magic. The ratio of power that the lower levelled people in the group received was higher. The blessings that priests could overlap so it was very useful. Even if their power was stronger, the paladins were still suffering from the attacks from the demons.

"You couldn't avoid that?"

"We're too weak..."

"I'll chant a spell for swiftness."

"You don't need to do something like that."

"Too noisy."

-The Grand Magician Roderick has used 'Spell of Quickness.'

Movement speed has become faster.

The delay time in skills has decreased.

The duration is 2 hours and 59 minutes.

Roderick was an arrogant and stubborn old man. He took the lead in battle and the others had to follow his movements. But their trust in him grew the more Weed, Bahamorg and the paladins fought together. Roderick could only exist in this world for another 9 hours and 40 minutes.

‘The path to the destination is going smoothly.’

All the traps were dismantled as they moved along the shortest path. But Weed was seriously strained when 12 demon soldiers appeared. These were demons who hadn’t seen any humans so far.

The intermediate demon commander Bulko!

“Summon Fire Golem!”

Roderick called out his guardian the Fire Golem. No matter how strong the demon was, it couldn’t stand against the huge Fire Golem! Only a high ranking magician could summon golems. The Fire Golem, Bahamorg and Roderick struck at the enemies.

“Grrr, split up and attack the humans.”

The clever demons spread out and attacked. So far, 200 paladins and 32 priests had died after meeting the demons. But the number of demons they killed in the labyrinth was tremendous so it wasn't an insignificant sacrifice. None of the monsters mutated by Roderick's research dared jump them.

After he finished eating and resting, Weed approached Roderick.

“We will soon reach the place where Montus is.”

“That's right. I will send him back to hell.”

“Of course. By the way, I was just wondering something.”

“What is it?”

“I heard that you studied radiant beauty along with other sculptors.”

“It was very rewarding. And even I made no progress in it.”

“Can I ask what type of research you did?”

Weed was so nervous his heart was thumping.

“For the sake of research...there were dozens of attempts. I experienced a myriad of failures and there were impossible challenges. It is because we have to surpass the laws and limits of this world to express radiant beauty.”

“What was specifically involved?”

Weed held his breath as he waited for Roderick’s answer.

“How annoying. You won’t believe it even if I say it...you’ll see when you go to my laboratory.”

“Yes...”

“Go over there.”

There was a fall in intimacy! Roderick played an active role in the battle against the demons. He used ultimate combat magic!

“Sinner’s Bridle.”

A thick iron block formed around the foot of a demon soldier. It was a magic spell that decreased agility and movement speed.

“Flame Cannon, Hand of Evil!”

There was a fire attack strong enough to shake the labyrinth and

a blackened hand emerged from the ground to grab a demon's leg.

“Kyaat! No, I don't want to be dragged!”

The ground closed over as 5 demons were pulled underneath. It was the end for the demon soldiers caught.

Weed was quick and used his accurate judgement to build up achievements in battle. The paladins and priests also fought the demons wandering around. Roderick was attentive to some extent but was mainly interested in getting rid of the demons.

“My magic isn't the same as before. If I had a reagent and auxiliary item then I would be able to show a stronger power.”

Roderick already had fearsome magic so his words were absurd.

‘Stronger than right now...I wonder if he was more powerful than Barkhan in the past?’

The decorations on the walls before flashier as Weed moved further into the labyrinth. There was a thick crust of dust but the hallways were filled with sculptures and artwork of knights. Of course, they had received serious damage over time so he couldn't get an increase in stats or sculpting proficiency unless they were restored.

‘It is valuable. If only there was enough time...’

Weed had found some work. Restoration of all the art in Roderick's Labyrinth! If he cleaned it perfectly then it would be a wonderful palace. While he was lost in his thoughts, they arrived in front of the large doors leading to Montus.

Despite the many long journeys through the labyrinth, this was the first time someone arrived in front of these doors. Weed wanted to know the place before the battle started so he asked Roderick about the room.

“What is beyond those doors?”

“It is a spacious room where visiting kings used to stay. I used it for my magic research and Montus is probably in there.”

Gulp.

Weed swallowed his saliva. No one on the Versailles Continent had arrived at this place in Roderick's Labyrinth but it was difficult to imagine fighting against even a lower devil.

‘If this is a dream then it is definitely a nightmare...’

Despite that, excitement and tension rose. He would die if he lost but it was exhilarating to think about fighting against a lower devil. This might be the last battle so there was a long break this time. Bahamorg, the paladins and the priests' equipment was repaired like they were new.

“Let’s meet again alive.”

“We can definitely win.”

They exchanged words and had a generous meal. He used more than half of the remaining supplies Mapan had provided. He had been prepared for a long and risky fight against the demons from the beginning.

‘If I die then I won’t be able to take these goods out.’

He used his advanced cooking skills to create first class food. It even impressed Roderick who had eaten with kings on the continent.

“I haven’t eaten for a long time.’

Roderick didn’t need to recover mana and had a perfect physical body.

“I’m going.”

8 paladins pushed open the doors.

“It is starting now.”

Weed changed his body to Kubichya and equipped the Red Star. The doors were fully opened and the devil Montus was waiting for them.



Myeongdong's bond market was necessary for South Korea's economic development. Corporate bonds, corporate loans, discounted bills, etc. were all involved. Of course, there wasn't just the positive side of the process. The high rate of interest meant that politicians or criminals could take advantage of it.

Vicious loan sharks occupied a deep position.

“When are you collecting the funds from SA Construction?”

“One week later. The president asked for an extension, Hyung-nim.”

“Collect the full amount.”

“They won't be able to repay, Hyung-nim.”

“I heard that President Park bought land in the metropolitan area under the company's name and is developing it.”

“I understand what you mean. I will definitely handle it.”

The loan shark deliberately devoured the assets of businesses. There were many cases of people who borrowed money from loan sharks in order to urgently fund a building or factory.

This was a rising market in Myeongdong over the past 3~4 years. In the past, the high interest rates were aimed to the general public but now the targets were companies.

Of course, loans to the general public was still an important business. The financial sector was rapidly evolving and loan sharks were the target. Thanks to the cultural development of over-consumption of goods, the loan shark businesses had bright prospects.

Han Jin-sup meticulously combed through his ledger.

“The earnings for this month is good. Any news?”

“The store at Dongdaedum seems bad. The initial loan was around 4,000 and the interest has increased it to 9,000. Even if we clean out the store, only 2,000 would be recovered.”

“The family?”

“One daughter and two sons. One son is still in junior high school.”

“2 people should be able to pay it off.”

The system of money lending had changed a lot from the past. If the loan amount was large, the women would be handed over to bars. It was effective to squeeze a debtor but it was a crime so the company would be dissolved if caught. The funds were hidden in different organizations in advance but the risk was still considerable.

Thus they changed it into a legitimate business.

Over time, Royal Road had become the trend!

They rented a warehouse and gathered items before giving people jobs to repay their debt. The room and board wasn't free and there was even a fee to use the game capsule so their debt didn't decrease. It was a place that they couldn't leave once they entered. It was a business that could get employees without paying a monthly salary.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Geomchi's Weapons Mastery reached 50% of advanced level 9.

"Now I feel like I've become a little stronger."

"The trainees have reached beyond advanced level 8."

They went hunting without the instructors around the clock.

The trainees quickly trained their Weapons Mastery skill. They were familiar with a sword but they tested all sorts of weapons in combat like bows, spears, axes, hammers and maces.

Their proficiency in various weapons also increased Weapons Mastery. Even though their basic weapon was still a sword, they also carried a bow and had a small hand axe stuck at their waist.

Geomchi-100 liked looking at his reflection in the sword.

“I look like a valiant warrior.”

Geomchi-150 was looking down like he was sleeping. A large axe was in both hands.

“It is the same for me, Sa-hyung. I have confidence in every type of battle.”

The beginners who were crossing Peshil River using Alkazar Bridge were startled to see them.

“Bandits!”

“Not monsters?”

“I’ll give you everything I have so please spare me. This is 3 gold!”

Their appearance was enough to not need a job for the rest of their lives!

Geomchi gathered the instructors and trainees together. A soft and warm smile was on his face because his girlfriend arrived in the north not long ago. He had shown her around the north on dates so there was a slight smile on his face.

‘The last time he smiled like that, he punished us all night...’

‘He made us go into the mountains for survival training for 10 days.’

A murderous smile that was even worse than Weed’s rotten one! Geomchi spoke in a soft, gentle tone.

“Hey everyone.”

“Yes! Teacher-nim!”

The answer promptly came out like they were in the army.

“We will now challenge the Master Quest.”

“Yes! Teacher-nim’s words are the truth.”

They replied without any objections.

“Where are Geomchi-3 and Geomchi-5?”

“They are up to the 13th quest. We have to catch up with them.”

“So far there haven’t been any difficult points?”

“They managed to kill everything. There are some tricky martial arts to learn but if we fail then we can attempt it a few times.”

Despite the degree of difficulty, it was simple for people who lived their lives wielding the sword. It wasn’t possible to import their real bodies but their mentality and judgement was the same.

But they didn’t always use these strong points as they didn’t like calculation or memorization. That’s why sometimes several attempts were needed for a simple quest.

“Then let’s start the quest.”

“Yes, Teacher-nim.”

Geomchi moved with the gathered instructors and trainees. They were able to use all types of weapons due to Weapons Mastery. They took the weapons of the ogres, orcs and trolls after fighting them. They became even more ignorant when united.



“Montus!”

“Roderick! I spent hundreds of years trapped here because of you.”

“Shut up. I will fix my mistake today.”

“I’ll chew up your heart just like in the past.”

Weed didn’t care about the dramatic reunion between Roderick and Montus. His priority was to check for other enemies.

‘Uhh, this won’t be easy.’

There were 30 demon soldiers! There were also a few medium sized monsters that normally lived in hell. They weren’t as high levelled as the demon soldiers but had strong resilience.

The walls, ceiling and floors looked different from previous images he had seen of the labyrinth. A liquid was flowing from eggs that hung everywhere. The eggs would hatch into an unknown creature.

“That is probably the eggs of a Talloss.”

There were many travellers who became writers. There were many old books stored since the early days of Royal Road and NPCs

also wrote some.

Later the area that users explored widened and they wrote down stories. The users could also obtain special hints from adventurer’s notes. A traveller who went to hell drew pictures of eggs similar to this on their notes.

“They are born fast and harder than steel.”

They resembled spiders with 12~16 legs and could move quickly on the ground while attacking. They were troublesome even in hell. A very long time was needed before the eggs hatched. And they would wake up hungry so they would eat the closest prey.

Pasasasak!

The odds were against them if the Talloss eggs hatched! There were many Talloss eggs around this place.

“If they all awaken...and there are also 30 demon soldiers.

Prepare for combat!

This is a fight where we’ll have to risk out lives.”



“3 seconds before we go live!”

Today was a special day at the broadcasting station.

Since the broadcasting stations started showing Royal Road, the number of viewers increased every day. Funds were invested into the broadcasting stations and they greatly expanded to their current form. They broadcasted for 24 hours and even simultaneously sent it to foreign countries with subtitles.

The PDs and technical teams were done for the day but they were on emergency standby. Today was the day that Weed's adventures in Roderick's Labyrinth was going to be shown.

God of War, conquering Roderick's Labyrinth.

Weed's song part 1, part 2 and part 3.

Weed the Demon Slayer.

Weed's adventures in Roderick's Labyrinth up to the current point was shown on Sunday and continuously got high ratings. The individual stations could only compete in video quality, narration and music. They received the video in advance so it obviously went through some edits.

“Mom, I want to watch a cartoon.”

A young child tried to touch the remote.

“Eun-bi, please be quiet. If you keep doing this then I won’t help with your homework.”

“Che...Mom, aren’t you supposed to pick up the table?”

The daughter’s grumbling didn’t move her mother.

“I had the man deliver it. Mother doesn’t want to go anywhere today. Go read a book. Tell me when the delivery man arrives.”

The live broadcast of Roderick’s Labyrinth started in the morning and went all the way into the evening.

The roasted chicken stores were also busier than public holidays.

Phone ringing!

“Apartment in Cheongdamdong, semi-seasoned and half fried...”

“There are no more chickens!”

If there wasn’t a chicken store then it was a Chinese restaurant.

“Sichuan sweet and sour pork?”

“If you order now then you’ll be waiting 3 hours.”

A boom in the delivery industry! There were more people watching Royal Road than dramas and movies. Needless to say, the ratings were very high in other foreign countries apart from South Korea.

Chapter 8: Large Bloody Battle

“I’ll make you experience the pains of hell!”

“I won’t make the same mistake as last time. Storm Blizzard!”

Black magic poured out of Montus’s body. Roderick created many layers of protection magic around his body before also using magic. The collision of magic that made the labyrinth shake wildly! The greatest and flashiest magic battle was developing.

Rather than the 30 demon soldiers, the most urgent thing for Weed was stopping the Talloss eggs from hatching.

“Bahamorg.”

“You called.”

“I’m sorry for bringing you here. You finally found life again but you can’t even live it peace and relaxation.”

“I’m satisfied at being able to fight. A battle like this is exactly what I wanted.”

Fortunately there wasn’t any problems regarding his intimacy with Bahamorg.

‘If he survives the last battle then I can continue to make him work.’

The wandering demon soldiers decided to tackle the paladins. Bahamorg and Weed were in front but the paladins with their holy power was considered more of a threat by the demons.

“Carry out a thorough defence formation! Bahamorg, go in front and endure as much as possible. I will fight separately. Blink!”

Weed moved next to a Talloss egg and wielded the Red Star.

Peseseok!

-The Talloss egg has been broken.

“I need to break them before they hatch.”

Weed used a skill contained in the Red Star. At this rate, he felt anxious that the dragon might come for the Red Star but it couldn't be helped.

“Summon Fire Hydra!”

The Red Star's magic was used and Fire Hydras appeared everywhere.

“Cook everything!”

The Fire Hydras spewed fire at the Talloss eggs. The fire even reached the eggs hanging from the ceiling and walls. Weed’s mana rapidly recovered thanks to the influence of the Red Star. It is sufficient to use a powerful skill.

“Radiant Sword!”

It wasn’t the ordinary Radiant Sword but the one that called a thunderbird. Weed swung his sword dozens of times.

The skill to call the thunderbird takes some time to kick in. Every time the sword moved, a thread of energy from the sword was pulled to slowly form the appearance of a thunderbird. And when the thunderbird’s appearance was completely formed.

-Kuweeeek!

The thunderbird cried out and flew forward.

Kwarung! Kwarururung!

Kwaaaaaaah!

Thunderbolts struck everywhere as the thunderbird flew around. Not only that, the flames swirled and rose higher. The Red Star’s attack skill was enhanced. The thunderbird drove thunderbolts

and flames away from it by elegantly flapping its wings.

-Experience has been acquired.

-Experience has been acquired.

-Your level has risen.

Weed utilized his wide area skill in a location with many Talloss eggs. The Talloss eggs cracked and were destroyed by the fire or thunderbolt strikes. The thunderbird continued shooting thunderbolts as it gradually disappeared.

But there are still eggs that weren't destroyed. This was an old palace so there were many eggs that lay in the ground or in cracks in the numerous pillars. They were starting to wake up from the surrounding turmoil. The battle with the demon soldiers was a problem but it would become more dangerous if the Talloss woke up.

“Paladin Unit 1, come forward. Break all the eggs not cooked by the fire!”

The paladins were fighting heavily against the demons but Weed couldn't destroy all the eggs alone and was forced to mobilize some.

“Under Lugh's name.”

“Demons weren’t born evil so I hope you go to a better place.”

Dozens of paladins struck the eggs with their swords. There was a minimum of 2,000 eggs so it would be a big deal if they all hatched. The Talloss that had already woken up headed to the paladins and spewed out a blue liquid.

“I have to make a really quick judgement.”

He only saw the environment once but it was replaying endlessly in his head.

Roderick and Montus. The two of them were using all types of advanced magic against each other. Roderick used the Haste spell in order to increase his movement speed. He was able to show movement that made a chase difficult while showing the terrible power of a magician. Roderick also summoned the Fire Golem to help him deal with Montus.

Every time the magic crashed against Montus, there was a repulsion force that would cause a shockwave.

“Roderick needs to win in as short a time as possible....”

The demons soldiers were showing superior attack power despite the paladins’ defence. The number of Talloss hatching and walking on the ground was piling up.

They even ate the corpses of the colleagues who had died. Roderick was too busy trying not to die, let alone help the paladins and priests. It would be good if Roderick could defeat Montus quickly but that didn't happen.

‘He was also defeated in the past so there is no guarantee he will win this time.’

It didn't matter what tactics Weed used as the demon soldiers were too strong. A battle against strong enemies was occurring in a limited space so the defence formation of the paladins couldn't retreat.

Bahamorg was being circled by 5 demons. He had strong defence so he didn't fall down immediately. However, he wouldn't be able to endure for long. Everyone was being assaulted by the demon soldiers while made it difficult to attempt to reverse the situation.

Weed was worried about this. It was impossible to manage the troops and subordinates properly in a melee fight on the Versailles Continent. He just thought it was fortunate that he could survive on the front lines. It wasn't easy to take care of his body as well as command.

“I have to suffer. There is no end to my unlucky fate.”

Although the Talloss were a problem, he needed to take care of the demon soldiers to prevent being wiped out. Weed used Blink to appear next to a demon soldier attacking Bahamorg.

“Heriam Fencing!”

The flaming Red Star continuously cut the demon soldiers. Weed had changed into a chaos warrior and received various blessings so his strength and physique became larger. The change in weight from his larger body could make his attack stronger.

Weed pressed back the demon soldiers using Heriam Fencing. It was important to attack quickly and to hit the enemy's weak point with a critical blow.

-The demon soldier Rukresia has gained additional fire damage.

-The defence of the Rukresia has been ignored!

-The demon soldier Rukresia has been continuously hit in its left shoulder.

Strength and sense of balance has decreased.

-The body of the demon soldier Rukresia has been completely covered by the flames of the Red Star.

3,890 damage will be dealt every second.

Weed pushed back the demon soldier with Heriam Fencing.

“Fire Explosion!”

The demon soldier's body exploded into flames like a fireball hit it.

-The demon soldier Rukresia couldn't survive the concentrated attacks and has been destroyed.

More than half of its health remained but the continuous strong attacks have killed it. The Red Star showed overwhelming combat ability once he transformed into a chaos warrior.

Suksak.

-The Havana Leaf with a special quality has been acquired.

-A high purity Mithril Helmet has been acquired.

“There are 29 left.”

There was a smile on Weed's face despite the disadvantageous situation.

High purity Mithril Helmet. It was a helmet that a level 400 knight belonging to the Morningstar Guild had worn. It was made by a dwarven blacksmith so it had exception defence and options to enhance the effect of combat skills.

The demon soldiers wandered all around Roderick's Labyrinth and probably ended up here. Once Weed was done with his appraisal, he moved on to another demon soldier. 3 demon soldiers were trying to trample the priests beyond the paladin's barrier. A demon soldier was in front of Alveron who absolutely had to be protected.

“Blink!”

Weed hurled attacks towards the 3 demons using the Red Star. He couldn't fully succeed in a surprise attack like before. The demons had very high intelligence and began to take precautions as soon as their colleagues died.

“He....”

“Kyaaat! Hot.”

The 3 demon soldiers easily blocked Weed's attacks and struck back.

A melee fight!

Weed couldn't leave the paladins to die. The 10 paladins who went out to break the Talloss eggs were killed by the demon soldiers.

“The eggs are waking up!”

“We have to stop the Talloss eggs from approaching.”

Weed stopped the demon soldiers’ offensive while surveying the situation. The paladins and priests were holding out against the demon soldiers.

“Kueok!”

“Goddess Freya, please receive the feeble me who has succumbed to these evil presences.”

The paladins couldn’t endure the enemy’s attacks anymore and were dying. The Talloss were growing bigger as time passed. Their body was the length of an adult and the legs were several metres thick. The large Talloss broke through the paladin’s defence formation, causing many of them to die.

“We finally came here but at this rate, we’ll be wiped out.”



20 minutes passed and only 200 paladins were left. Around one third of the priests were sacrificed but the more serious problem was the mana consumed. If they ran out of mana then they wouldn’t be able to use holy magic to fight or treat injuries.

Weed desperately struggled against the demon soldiers with his

entire body injured. At least 3~4 demon soldiers were attacking him. If it wasn't for the Red Star's power and the priests' emergency healing then he would've died already. If the priests' mana was depleted then he would need to fight without any healing.

“Everyone jump at me!”

Weed yelled using Lion's Roar. It was necessary to shout in order to raise the morale of the paladins.

“I won't kill you easily. I'll let you taste a long and painful torment.”

“Kukuku. No one will get out of here alive.”

Weed fought back against the demon soldiers. The demons had superior physiques and power so Weed had no choice but to be in a crisis. The demons recognized that Weed was a threat so they always jumped him in groups.

“It won't be.”

Weed turned around and ran away.

“Heheheheh.”

“There is no way to escape hell.”

The demon soldiers flapped their wings and fiercely chased after him. He lured the demon soldiers into the dangerous place where Roderick was using his magic.

“Completely burn down!”

A top ranked fire magic!

Hwarururuk!

Montus avoided the magic attack that Roderick unleashed. But the 5 demon soldiers chasing Weed in the area were hit by the magic. Unfortunately, 3 of them survived but were frozen. It was only a short time but he completely understood how to fight with Roderick.

“Sword-cloning!”

Weed formed 10 clones. And they cruelly attacked the frozen demon soldiers.

-The demon soldier Jenpian has been destroyed.

Fame has increased by 97 for all those who participated in the battle.

-The demon soldier Kruni has been destroyed.

Fame has increased by 142 for all those who participated in the battle.

-The demon soldier Malelus has been destroyed.

Fame has increased by 198 for all those who participated in the battle.

-You have fought bravely against the demon soldiers.

Fighting spirit and strength increased by 1.

“There are still demons to take care of.”

The paladins and priests died but they still dealt damage to the demons. They reduced the demons by 13 but their health and vitality were tired. Weed had used the chance to take care of 8 demons with Roderick's magic. The paladins lured the demons deeply and took care of them.

“Bahamorg is there so the paladins and priests can endure for a while.”

The recovery ability of the demon soldiers was very slow. Even if their health remained, their combat capability would decrease due to the lack of mana. The paladins and priests had rapid recovery so they fight against the demons. The problem was the Talloss eggs

awakening.

Kuwek!

Wakjak!

The hatched Talloss didn't care about who won between the demons and the paladins. They just ate the demons or paladins closest to them. They also grew the more they ate.

“Ah, no! Goddess Freya, don't forsake your faithful servant!”

“If Lugh's Sword breaks in a place like this...”

Despite Weed's leadership, the morale of the paladins and priests was rapidly falling. Their colleagues were dying and the devil Montus was spreading a dark influence.

“Buried Breath.”

“Deep Pipe!”

The priests used blessings while the devil cast insidious dark magic.

“How could I fall...?”

“Kikilkil! Why has Goddess Freya abandoned me?”

The paladins and priests were organized but it was clear that the situation wasn't positive.

“At this rate, everyone is going to die. Even if we win against the demons, how many will be able to survive...and if Montus wins then no one will survive.. I didn't go to so much trouble to get here just to die.”

He was concerned about the battle between Roderick and Montus. Montus' overwhelming magic meant that Roderick was constantly running and evading. If this situation continued with the Talloss joining then the paladins would unconditionally be wiped out. It was the same for Weed, Bahamorg and the priests.

“I need to gamble...strike at Montus. I need to do it immediately.”

Weed decided to make a gamble.

“Alveron!”

“Yes, Weed-nim.”

Alveron was wearing a white robe and treating the paladins. If it wasn't for him and Derian then the paladin's defence wall would've already collapsed. Bahamorg faced several demon troopers at once but fortunately he could endure it.

“I want you to keep an eye on me and heal me when needed. I need to stay alive if we all want to live.”

“I understand.”

Alveron's power was a great help to the priests yet Weed specified to only heal him.

“Blink!”

Weed used his movement skill to show up near Montus. Montus' backside had a tail but it was still on the safe side.

“One point attack!”

He concentrated on cutting Montus' right wing.

-The third wing on the lower devil Montus' right side has been cut.

151 damage has been dealt due to his physical defence.

The Red Star adds 344 flame damage.

-The third wing on the lower devil Montus' right side has been cut.

213 damage has been dealt due to his physical defence.

The Red Star adds 358 flame damage.

-You have dealt a critical blow.

9% damage has been added.

The Red Star adds 698 flame damage.

-You have dealt a critical blow.

11% damage has been added.

The Red Star adds 745 flame damage.

-You have dealt a critical blow.

14% damage has been added.

The Red Star adds 916 flame damage.

It was unexpectedly huge damage! The attack damage was quite high despite the defence. But the wings were one of the most fragile parts of Montus so the effect of the repeated attacks

showed. The 3rd wing on Montus' right side was wrapped in flames.

“Kuaah! This human dares touch me.”

Montus was furious at being attacked with fire. More than the health lost, his honour and pride had been hurt. He threw the fireball in his hand that had been intended for Roderick towards Weed.

“Blink!”

Weed showed up on the opposite side of Montus. And continued to damage the other wings.

“Feel the pain!”

Montus twisted and swung his tail at Weed. He also flapped the damaged wings. The melee combat using Blink!

Weed's body was quite large as a chaos warrior. But Montus was triple his size. It was to the extent that just spreading out the wings made the space seem small. It was a miracle that he managed to avoid the devil's attack. Montus slammed his foot into the ground and caused a shockwave.

“Frozen Field!”

Then Roderick's voice chanting a spell was heard.

“Don't tell me...”

-You have entered the sphere of influence of Frozen Field.

Your body tried to resist but it is frozen.

Health has decreased by 32,985.

Movement is slowed.

White particles of ice touched the area Weed and Montus were in and froze them. He wasn't a species with a special resistance but the flames of the Red Star meant his body wasn't completely hardened.

“Goddess Freya, this person respects your will so make sure he doesn't yield to the enemy. Divine Recovery!”

Alveron quickly filled up his health and raised his tolerance to the cold. Weed sneaked out of the frozen field and neared Montus again.

Roderick had cast an intense magic attack despite Weed being in the area. Montus had to avoid Roderick's magic attack as well as Weed's strikes to his wings. Montus used magic while striking the ground with his tail and walked forward.

“Chukarulla’s Teeth!”

Roderick wasn’t aiming for an attack magic. Large fangs rose from the ground around Montus and shot into the air.

It was a magic aimed at destroying all lifeforms in the area. Weed used Blink to narrowly avoid a fang. Of course, there was a limit to how many times Blink could be used because it consumed quite a bit of mana. Therefore he couldn’t use any other attack skills and had to depend on the Red Star’s power.

“Let’s see this through to the end!”

Once the effect of the magic disappeared, Weed appeared again to cut Montus’ wings. Montus mainly used magic but his physical damage was strong enough to crush the pillars and walls. His tails and arms moved in order to stop the attacks on his wings. Weed didn’t realize that he had already been targeted by Montus.

-Your body has been stabbed by a wind spear.

Health has decreased by 28,193.

-The Sudden Strike magic is following you.

Weed was chased after by a tracking spell. Dozens of attack magic followed like a comet as he used Blink.

“This really isn’t easy!”

He moved his body as he hit the magic with the Red Star. Alveron treated any injuries received from not being able to dodge. Weed looked at Montus while pretending to fight the demon soldiers.

‘Obviously he is aiming for me.’

Montus’ wings were still on fire.

‘It is impossible for him to stand it.’

Weed had already grasped his personality. Devils were proud of their wings.

“Stigma of Sacrifice.”

Not surprisingly, Montus unleashed a magic attack. Letters made of gold light flew towards Weed. Weed was fighting against the demons when he suddenly used a skill.

“Blink!”

Montus’ stigma hit the demons.

“Kuwaaaaak!”

The stigma was stamped upon 3 demons. The demons aged rapidly as they lost health. The demons who received the magic damage died. It was a strategy that risked his life in order to use Montus to kill the demons.

“More people will survive as the number of demons are reduced.”

Weed used his combat experience while facing the boss monster Montus to clean up the demons. If he made one small mistake and failed to escape from the magic then he would be dead.

‘I can’t deal significant damage to Montus even when I pour all my power into it.’

The wings had weak defence but Montus wouldn’t die from that. When Montus’ body was attacked, the Red Star’s damage was only enough to give scratches. Of course, there was fire damage but that fire would go out.

His attacks weren’t a special help but it annoyed Montus and drew his attention away from Roderick. Roderick was able to prepare attack magic against Montus without any interference thanks to Weed. Weed had the most dangerous role.

“Spatial Cut!”

Roderick was able to recite a long incantation for a large magic spell.

“I have to suffer so other people can feel comfortable. It is consistent with my destiny!”

Weed was hit by Montus in order to allow Roderick to cast his large magic. Weed persistently cut the devil's wings while Roderick prepared his spell. Montus opened his blazing wings and roared violently.

“These trash! A honourable warrior shouldn't just run away. A fair fight!”

Weed wasn't hurt by Montus' accusations.

“I'm going to take that as a compliment.”

It was evidence of how he lived his life that he could get a devil to say bad things about him.

“I have to live a long life so I can collect my pensions!”

Montus' wings were damaged by the wings while he also suffered under Roderick's devastating spell. Of course, Montus' health was high so it wasn't to the extent that he would die. Montus had high magic resistance so he still had half his health left.

The devil Montus had high resilience that could endure advanced magic! The only hope was that his recovery power was low.

“I need to help Roderick. I have to use everything available. Blink!”

Weed lured Montus into the area with the Talloss before attacking. Montus was a lower devil but the Talloss still tried to eat him. There was no reason behind the Talloss’ actions. They just wanted to eat everything.

Kyakyakyat!

Montus tried to step on them.

“Kuwaaaaaah.”

Then Montus became angry and gave a loud shriek.

-You have heard Montus’ scream that started from the bottom of hell.

Morale has decreased by 89%.

You have resisted an abnormal state.

You have resisted an abnormal state.

You have resisted an abnormal state.

The probability of skills succeeding has decreased.

You have resisted an abnormal state.

“Kuaaak.”

“N-no.”

“Goddess Freya, give us faith and strength.”

“Lugh, please create a miracle!”

Weed was okay but the paladins and priests were a mess. Their protection skills, holy aura's and treatment magic failed.

“Keook!”

Some of the priests with low health collapsed and changed into a grey light as they died. Health and mana was consumed due to Montus' scream!

Weed rushed to use Lion's Roar. He needed to take command of the situation even without the treatment effects.

“Go to the corner and maintain a thorough defence situation! Defend each other until the curse is cancelled!”

The major effects of Montus' scream made the paladins and priests vulnerable. They had a religious occupation so there was some resistance. Ordinary knights and soldiers would've been wiped out at once. Only Bahamorg who had a high fighting spirit wasn't affected.

"These people are like worms. They are trash. You aren't necessary. Everyone should die."

Montus stayed in one place and didn't aim at Weed or Roderick. He attacked all visible living things, including the demon soldiers. The demonic aura around Montus' spread further and the power of his magic spell increased by 1.5 times. It was the so called berserk condition.

Weed took a rest as he protected the priests and paladins in the corner along with Bahamorg. While the paladins and priests were praying in an effort to cancel the curse, Weed anxiously watched Montus running out of control.

Roderick was also close by.

"I'm sorry to drag you into this difficult fight."

"Can you defeat Montus?"

"It is difficult."

“That...didn’t you say you had confidence to fight by yourself?”

“He has become stronger than me. The devil has stayed here for a long time so he built up his abilities. In the past he wasn’t this strong...”

“I need to study your sculpting research!”

“It is in my laboratory through that hallway.”

All the Talloss eggs were in between.

“Are there demon soldiers there as well?”

“It seems so. And Montus is going to finish with those guys soon. Montus is so filled with anger that he won’t stop before killing everyone here. Especially since he dislikes you so much.”

Even if Weed managed to escape the labyrinth, the quest would be a failure if he didn’t obtain the research records. The demon soldiers were seized by Montus and died in vain. The demon soldiers’ magic couldn’t deal any special damage to Montus.

The fire burning his wings still hadn’t gone out as Montus massacred those around him. His intentions were obvious once he starting breaking the Talloss eggs. He wanted to get rid of everyone else first before dealing with Weed and Roderick.

The impatient nature of a devil!

“If I fail then the next person might be able to hunt him down.”

Weed had to consider this. The current battle was behind relayed to the entire world through various broadcasting stations. The next person who came here could analyse the magic Montus used, his health and mana and how to kill him.

They also learnt that quickly breaking the eggs would increase the prospect of success. Of course, there weren't a lot of guilds that could form an expedition of this level. If they didn't have courage then they couldn't enter Roderick's Labyrinth.

A person like Weed who had a unfortunate destiny and needed to enter for a quest was rare.

Chapter 9: Great Achievement

“This isn’t good.”

Weed placed a bandage around Roderick’s injury.

“There’s no need. My body will disappear soon...”

“No. We are comrades who are fighting together.”

It was a warm comradery that made it feel like dirt was in his eyes!

“Fellow comrade...I’m a lone magician. That’s how I ended up like I did last time.”

The arrogant Roderick couldn’t hide his melancholy.

“It’s not too late. Now is an opportunity to correct that mistake.”

“Montus is stronger than me.”

“If we combine forces then there will be a way.”

“You won’t be much help.”

Magicians had really different personalities. Rather than friendship, loyalty or dedication, they judged a situation with calmness. It was good when a battle could be won but lacking when it was a disadvantageous situation.

“Roderick-nim can only exist in this world for another hour. Why don’t you fight enthusiastically while being prepared to risk your life?”

“Prepared to die....I’m already dead.”

“You will regret not doing your best for the sake of the world.”

“I understand what you’re talking about.”

Roderick began meditating to gather mana. The paladins and priests were praying piously to cancel the curse.

Weed took a break as he watched Montus running wild. Meanwhile, the Red Star’s flames fully restored his health and mana.

Ddirring!

-Your body is in the best condition.

The demon soldiers and Talloss were being smashed by Montus.

Currently the Talloss were belatedly waking up from their eggs and Montus was taking out his anger towards Roderick and Weed on them.

Bahamorg's body returned to normal after using bandages and eating boiled potatoes. He had the resilience appropriate for a hero of the Arpen Empire.

Weed spoke to Roderick.

"I have a request."

"What is it?"

"We have to join forces now."

"I will fight my own way. I don't fight like a warrior."

Roderick was an existence difficult to handle. He was a legendary magician so it was hard to ask for cooperation.

"I know. But I'd like it if you only use fire type magic when I'm around Montus."

"I am well versed in fire magic so I can accept your request. If you buy some time then I can use a higher ranking magic..."

“Thank you. If we beat Montus then it is all due to Roderick-nim.”

It didn't cost a lot so Roderick willingly agreed. And Weed also spoke to the paladins.

“We cannot allow this devil who goes against the Gods' will to cause chaos on the Versailles Continent.”

“We are ready to fight at any time.”

Derian who was acting as the representative replied. However, there were still half of the paladins who hadn't shaken off Montus' curse. They weren't fit for battle yet and needed to rest. If they fought a boss monster like Montus in such a condition then they would die.

“You will be swept away if you gather in groups. Give long distance support using crossbows and holy magic.”

“Will that be enough?”

“Let's just see.”

Weed wanted to save as much paladins as possible. He couldn't recover the contribution if they didn't return to the religious societies. Besides, the aspect of this battle changed now that it was near the end.

‘Quickly.’

Montus only had 2 wings remaining. He was filled with fury and wanted to kill everything, including Weed and Roderick. Of course, he was like that from the beginning but it was risky now that he was crazily attacking.

Weed had no option but to survive. And the monster was raising both arms while murmuring something.

“Blink!”

Weed started to move at that moment.

“Fire leaking from the land, large flames falling from the sky.”

Roderick cast a magic spell.

-The aura of fire has been absorbed.

Maximum health, mana and vitality will increase.

Your strength will continue to grow.

Weed was a chaos warrior so this spell was better than any blessing. The flames attacked the devil. Weed jumped towards the

strongest existence he had ever fought to date.

“Seal of Oppression!”

As expected, Montus didn't pay any attention to defence. He just received Weed and Roderick's attacks while casting spells. And a chain explosion occurred.

The moment the spell was fired, Weed quickly avoided it while Roderick protected himself. The priests and paladins were scattered so damage was reduced, but those that couldn't avoid it groaned with pain.

“Keohuhuhuk.”

“Merciful Goddess Freya, please save me.”

The priests were killed!

“Daemon of Ice.”

Montus continuously attacked with magic. But he was in the midst of madness so he didn't avoid any attacks. The flames burning Montus' body hadn't gone out yet.

“Continue attacking! Paladins keep on firing your crossbows. Even if there doesn't seem to be any changes on the surface, he is still receiving a little damage. Priests concentrate more on

attacking than healing. Holy magic attacks! The only way to reduce sacrifices is to get rid of him quickly.”

Weed directed an all-out attack. Even if the priests and paladins were low levelled, their holy magic would deal damage to demons and undead monsters.

Montus alternated between attacking Roderick and Weed but didn't get any results. Roderick recovered with meditation while Weed cleverly used evasion manoeuvres.

Weed drew Montus' attention which allowed the group to attack him. This wasn't a formal fight so he was free to use his subordinates.

“Hammer of Balker!”

This time Montus aimed for the priests. A hammer consisting of lightning fell onto the area where female priests were gathered. The hammer shot lightning all over the place as it touched the ground.

“Kyaah!”

The priests couldn't endure the attacks and were killed. Weed saw the signs and attacked but he couldn't obstruct Montus' magic.

“Bahamorg, you have to intercept the next time the priests

receive an attack.”

“Understood.”

Bahamorg was a hero who could block enemy attacks. It was questionable if he could interrupt Montus’ magic but he had to give the command.

‘As time passes, the probability of winning will increase. Montus can only stay in this berserk state for a short time.’

Weed saw a glimmer of hope. The paladins and priests used the power of their faith to fight fiercely. It was fortunate that he brought them into the labyrinth. The abilities of his subordinates had gradually grown.

“You hurt those who did nothing wrong....you will pay the price by receiving a great pain.”

Roderick suddenly shouted after the priests died. He was a legendary magician with a proud nature. But he wasn’t a bad person fundamentally. He couldn’t stand it anymore after seeing Montus injure the priests who were followers of the Gods.

“Montus, I’m going to destroy you. All the mana in my body, burn without stopping. Mana Burn!”

It was a technique that burned all the mana in a magician’s body for an attack. Roderick couldn’t stomach Montus’ behaviour and

used his strongest technique. When Mana Burn was used, a large explosion would occur on the opponent's body.

Roderick's mana was so intense that it shone brilliantly like a sun. It was concentrated on one spot and a tremendous explosion occurred.

“Kuooh!”

After Mana Burn disappeared, Montus had a huge wound. Part of his upper body, including the left shoulder had disappeared.

“Keoheoheok!”

Roderick coughed up blood and collapsed. Once Mana Burn was used, the magician would have no magic left and would fall into a state of lethargy. Even Roderick was experience mana reflux symptoms. Now almost all the mana in his body had dried up and was flowing backwards so it was difficult for Roderick to participate in the battle anymore.

“Blink!”

Weed moved to the area near Montus. He couldn't attack after Roderick's spell.

“This is the last stretch. All paladins divide into 3 and charge! Bahamorg, you too!”

He shouted as he slashed the Red Star towards Montus. Montus was incapable to blocking due to the Mana Burn.

“Heriam Fencing!”

Weed combined the one-point attack with Heriam Fencing.

-The chest of the lower devil has been struck.

Defence is weakened and 296 damage dealt.

The Red Star adds 489 flame damage.

-The chest of the lower devil has been struck with all your might.

457 has been dealt by hitting the injured area.

Red Star adds 869 flame damage inside the body.

-The chest of the lower devil has been struck and became cracked.

Defence has collapsed so 799 damage has been inflicted.

Red Star spread 1,129 flame damage inside the body.

-You have dealt a critical blow!

12% damage has been added.

The Red Star adds 1,643 flame damage.

-You have dealt a critical blow!

19% damage has been added.

The Red Star adds 1,939 flame damage.

-You have dealt a critical blow!

24% damage has been added.

The Red Star adds 2,402 flame damage.

Montus' defence fell so he could inflict a lot of injuries. The Red Star set Montus ablaze every time Weed attacked. The paladins struck as they raced past while Bahamorg wielded his weapon at a short distance.

“Summon Spirit.”

The priests' holy magic washed over Montus. If it ended like this then Montus would be the first devil killed on the Versailles Continent. Weed had no interest in a glory like this. He just wanted to eat well and live easily.

“Flame Blaster.”

Kwa kwang!

Montus used a magic and Bahamorg and the paladins fell from the explosion. Bahamorg wasn't injured but a large number of paladins died.

Roderick didn't have any mana so he couldn't resist and lost his life. He was a legendary magician but couldn't get rid of Montus and disappeared.

And Weed was left.

-The aura of fire has been absorbed.

Strength has increased by 14%.

Fire magic was just like a blessing to Weed.

“Radiant Sword! Now there is nowhere for you to go!”

“Kuwek!”

Montus stumbled as blood dripped from his body. He was damaged by the Talloss while on his rampage. Damage from Roderick’s magic had steadily accumulated, holy magic hit him and there was also Weed’s strikes. Despite that, he was still hanging on and fighting.

“All paladins, fire your crossbows at his injured areas! Priests should continue to use holy magic to harm him! Bahamorg, wait a moment and rest!”

Montus couldn’t use magic in a row like he did earlier. His injuries made the power of his magic weaker. Derian and Alveron aimed all their power at Montus.

“All of you should die with me. D...estroyer!”

Ddirring!

-The lower devil Montus has used the large spell Destroyer.

This spell will offer his soul to destroy all life forms in the area. The power is akin to the magician’s spell Ultimate Destruction.

There is 6 minutes left until the large spell Destroyer is completed.

Roderick didn't use the Ultimate Destruction spell in the labyrinth. The reason was because it required a vast amount of mana and a long chanting time. Ultimate Destruction was a spell that could blow up a whole castle.

Montus used up all his mana and offered his soul in order to destroy Weed.

Weed felt like tipping over a table.

“Indiscriminately attack!”

If he couldn't kill Montus within 6 minutes then the whole labyrinth would blow up. It would be the end of the sculptors' research records. The secret sculpting technique would also completely disappear.

“Radiant Sword!”

Light and fire emerged from the Red Star at the same time.

“This bastard! Just die.”

All of Weed's attacks were aimed at Montus' heart. The devil wouldn't die even with his limbs broken. Weed had to aim at the head or the heart. As Montus' spell progressed, the labyrinth started shaking like there was an earthquake. The pillars tilted and collapsed while stone sculptures fell from the ceiling.

The paladins ran around but their bodies were still affected by the curse and they received intense injuries. The Talloss that belatedly woke up were looking for food again. The priest and paladins caught off guard lost their health as they were eaten.

Weed couldn't go rescue them. Montus had already turned into a solid mass of fire thanks to Weed's continuous offensives with the Red Star. Montus' health was constantly shrinking.

‘I can't beat him like this.’

Montus' health was rapidly decreasing but he had a high fire resistance. Weed was able to exert the best damage after turning into a chaos warrior and using the Red Star. But it was insufficient.

‘Right now I need more damage...I am lacking in attack power as a sculptor. It is why Bardray won.’

Even if he combined one point attack with Heriam Fencing, he wouldn't be able to eliminate Montus in time. Then an idea flashed in Weed's mind like lightning.

“Derian, toss me Lugh's Sword!”

Derian was protecting the priests from the Talloss. But he turned around and threw the sword without hesitation at Weed's scream.

“We definitely need to finish off the devil.”

It was the sword belonging to the god Lugh!

“Sculpture Transformation release.”

Weed put away the Red Star and changed back into a human. And he caught Lugh’s Sword. It was the sword that he returned to the Church of Lugh after defeating Barkhan. It was a sword with the divine power fully recovered.

Once Sculpture Transformation was released, his health was so low that one proper hit would kill him. But this was the only way.

-You have grasped Lugh’s Sword that fell to this land.

You have been recognized by the Church of Lugh and am qualified to handle the sword.

Faith will triple.

You can borrow the power of the sun to attack the enemies.

It is possible to cause a miracle due to your Faith.

Dark mana will be restrained.

Monsters below intermediate level will yield.

The body's recovery ability will double.

“Sculptural Destruction! Everything into strength!”

Weed broke a Fine sculpture of a ‘Lion Lying Down.’

-You have used Sculptural Destruction.

The pain of destroying a Fine sculpture! The grief!

5 Art stats have permanently disappeared. Fame has decreased by 100.

The Art stat has been converted to Strength for one day.

Your Art stat is too high. Strength stat is too low so the conversion won't be completed all at once.

890 Strength has been changed to the level 8 advanced skill ‘Severe Blow.’

When hitting enemies with the exact amount of power, enemies will be blown away.

Probability of causing paralysis and confusion has increased.

980 Strength has been changed to the level 7 advanced skill 'Piercing Spear.'

The opponent's shield and armour will be smashed by the powerful attack.

1,430 Strength has been changed to the level 9 advanced skill 'Momentary Herculean Strength.'

Power will triple for a short amount of time. Enormous vitality is required.

850 Strength is utilized to maximize the sword's base damage.

The durability will decrease quickly but the sword's offense will increase by 35%.

Weed cut Montus with Lugh's Sword. The Red Star's formidable attack had wounded Montus but Lugh's Sword tore through his body.

-The lower devil Montus has been cut.

1,469 damage has been dealt by the severe power.

The holy power has restrained the darkness.

The holy power has dealt 3,921 damage to the devil Montus.

Lugh's Sword cut Montus several times and weakened him. Derian couldn't avoid Montus' attacks so he hadn't been able to approach to use the sword's power. Now that Weed used Sculpture Destruction, his offensive power was enough to make Montus miserable.

“Lugh's Miracle!”

Energy sprang out of Weed's body.

-Lugh's Miracle has manifested.

A miracle has occurred due to your high Faith.

You will be protected by holy power when fighting against evil forces.

Movement speed has become faster.

Destructive power has become larger.

Montus was still engulfed by the flames of Red Star. Weed's offensive continued to push him back. His wings were also unable to endure the flames and melted. Montus' body was rapidly rotting as he lost health.

The time remaining for the Destroyer spell was 1 minute!

“Now to finish this!”

Weed drove his sword through Montus’ chest. It accurately hit the heart!

“Kuwaaaaaah!”

Montus disappeared with a flash of light that made it impossible for Weed to open his eyes. It was an attack that completely reduced all of the devil’s health.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-The lower devil Montus trapped in Roderick’s Labyrinth has been destroyed.

-Fame has increased by 4,190 due to the great achievement.

-Charisma has increased by 8.

-Fighting Spirit has increased by 9.

-Strength has increased by 4.

The skill 'Severe Blow' has been learnt during the battle.

-Agility has increased by 7 and the skill 'Precise Attack' has been learnt.

-All stats have increased by 3 for those who participated in the battle.

-You have fought against the devil Montus and won.

The most outstanding combat victory on the Versailles Continent has been achieved. Not even the knight Ron Daiku can accomplish such a great and holy victory.

As a combat commander, your leadership over soldiers will improve.

Knights will be honoured to follow your command.

You will be hailed by all the inhabitants of the continent.

All bards on the Versailles Continent will write songs about you. Every time your song spreads, your fame will rise and infamy decrease.

Dignity has increased by 51.

Your adventure in Roderick's Labyrinth has succeeded. You will become the idol of all adventurers.

Knights who believe in the gods will trust you.

His level rose and he also gained battle skills!

The shaking in the area stopped as Montus disappeared. After Barkhan, Lugh's Sword killed the devil Montus as well.

Weed's hand moved forward.

-A Devil's Helmet has been acquired.

-A Blood Soaked Whip has been acquired.

-A huge diamond has been acquired.

-A Stone of Hell has been acquired.

The items were dropped by the devil Montus so he had high

expectations.

“Inspect!”

-Devil's Helmet: Durability 290/290. Defence 161.

A helmet left by the lower devil Montus.

Only those with absolute strength can wear it.

It is imbued with evil forces, making it dangerous for those with low Faith. When a person lacking in faith wears it, a curse will decrease their vitality and stats.

Restrictions: Level 640.

Strength 1,700.

Faith 800.

Options: Endless defence.

Enemy will be quickly engulfed in fear.

Combat skills will be reinforced when injured.

Enhanced resistance to black magic and hell magic.

Wisdom + 98.

Knowledge + 115.

Intermediate level black magic will consume less mana.

Magic incantation time is reduced.

The power of all combat skill + 12%.

Can't be lost.

Battle Fame + 8,000

Weed was quite satisfied with it.

The Devil's Helmet possessed great options.

-The Blood Soaked Whip has rejected you.

You are pushed by the devil's power and lost 3,696 health.

His Blacksmithing skill reduced the wearer restrictions. Despite that, he still couldn't touch the Blood Soaked Whip. Weed put the

whip into his backpack for safekeeping.

The paladins and priests were still fighting.

“This is disgusting. Let’s go to Roderick’s room.”

He moved towards the priests and paladins. They fought the Talloss that had woken up. Although the boss monster Montus had been defeated, the Talloss were still formidable opponents. They destroyed the Talloss and Talloss eggs.

Weed looked on from the other side of Roderick’s Labyrinth as he ate barley bread. Weed, the paladins, the priests and Bahamorg were finally able to rest. He had prepared the best dinner before fighting against Montus but now hard bread was thrown.

“You all worked really hard. Many paladins entered this labyrinth and lost their lives but Montus, the threat to the continent’s peace has been extinguished!”

Of course, Weed was responsible for them entering the labyrinth but there was no need to mention that.

“Oh, merciful Goddess Freya...”

“We have managed to maintain Lugh’s brightness!”

“Their sacrifices weren’t in vain as we finished the fight.”

Weed had taken a break and recovered so now it was time to find Roderick's research records. Now that Montus was dead, the few demon soldiers that emerged weren't a threat. He had crossed the largest mountain and now his destination was close.

"I have opened my eyes to suffering. I will spread Lugh's brightness."

"Goddess Freya, please guide us."

Paaaah!

A faint light extended from the priests and paladins. Weed had gained skills while they were promoted to a senior position.

The so-called secondary advancement!

Their levels had surpassed 400 once entering Roderick's Labyrinth.

"Well, I used almost all my contribution...I have to make them work next time."

Weed made a serious effect but only 150 paladins and priests remained. It showed how dangerous and tough the battles in the labyrinth were.

“Humans coming to this place...it will be where you die.”

“Kuhuhuhut, I’ll eat all of you.”

“You’ll taste pain.”

There were 10 demon soldiers located where Roderick’s research records were. So far they had fought many battles with demons so it wasn’t hard to clean up this place. The personnel had been reduced but their strength rose so they could easily hit the demon soldiers.

-The demons in Roderick’s laboratory has been overpowered.

“I finally reached here.”

Weed felt a deep emotion.

All sorts of items were kept in Roderick’s laboratory. Many items that other users would be shocked to see were covered with a thick layer of dust. Magic books, research records, reagents, jewellery with magic sealed in them, mana stones etc. were collected.

The books contained valuable high ranking magic. Magicians didn’t like to show others their magic. They tended to gain special knowledge and wisdom in one type of magic.

In Romuna’s case, she became known as ‘magician who can cause

a river of fire.’ It was possible to hear her being called that in the taverns. It was a great source of pride for Romuna when store owners or workers would call her that.

Ddiring!

-An underground map of the labyrinth has been acquired.

There was also a map that showed the correct path through Roderick’s Labyrinth.

“I’ll never come back here again but I should consider other people. I can sell it for a better price.”

He thought of other people suffering too! In the meantime, the carriages that had contained the supplies were brought into the room. Weed sat down at the desk Roderick used. He confirmed the delicate grains and stamped marks.

“This desk, it isn’t made out of an ordinary wood. The material is glossy and a good quality. Bahamorg, collect it!”

He didn’t leave one piece of furniture behind as he quickly swept up all the desks, chairs and bookshelves.

Ddiring!

-The research records related to the history of sculpting has been

acquired.

He had obtained the necessary item for the ‘Roderick’s Labyrinth’ quest.

Roderick’s laboratory was cleaned out by the movers!

“I won’t visit a place like this often so I have to gather every bit of profit. And now the problem is to exit...”

Weed opened the underground map and examined it.

“If we fight 16 more times then we can exit.”

There was no need to go back the way they came due to spatial distortion. But there were still traps and demons so the paladins would keep dying. However, his mind was relaxed because he had just achieved a really important mission.

“And let’s see, this picture here...”

A complex pattern of runes was carved on the ground of the laboratory.

“A magic movement circle.”

A teleport that would quickly move him outside! Weed had

previously used it during an adventure related to the Freya Church.

“Let’s do this.”

He embedded mana stones on the ground and mana flowed along the pattern.

Pasususuk!

It amplified and gradually climbed upwards.

“Let’s go.”

Weed, the paladins, the priests, Bahamorg and the carriages entered the circle.

-Roderick’s Labyrinth has been conquered.



After a while, Weed arrived on a windy hill near Roderick’s Labyrinth. Everyone had escaped unharmed.

“First I need to confirm how to proceed with the quest.”

Weed pulled out the sculpting research records. They had exited

the labyrinth and this place was safe. If he lingered here then users would visit but he wouldn't stay that long.

Ddirring!

-The research records related to the final secret sculpting technique has been read.

【Roderick's Notes.

The perspective of beauty is bound to be different for each person. Going beyond the limitations and constraints of a sculpture to express beauty.

Many were scared of challenges it but sculptors had great ambitions. They might seem weak, causing the artists to laugh at them but they conquer many hardships with their imagination and new creations.

Sculptors began studying the formation of a sculpture that is the most beautiful in the world.

And one sculptor made an improbable claim.

“I thought a tremendous sculpture would express radiant beauty.

But it was the small beauties that passed by that led me to the path of sculpting.”

“A trivial thing has large meanings.”】

“I feel uneasy for some reason.

Weed felt a tremendous resentment towards the sculptors as he read up to here. He went through incredible danger in Roderick’s Labyrinth to obtain this, only to be told that small beauties held the clue.

However, it was too early to be disappointed so Weed continued reading the research records.

Chapter 10: Roderick's Research Records

【 “There is beauty in the little things around us. We just don't recognize it properly. ”

“I saw the sunlight shining on the sea. Since then, I questioned the beautiful sculptures I created.”

“True beauty isn't something that can be seen when moving too quickly. It will just become the reminder of a faint memory.”

“How beautiful are the raindrops falling from dark clouds? The raindrops falling on flowers, trees and leaves are really beautiful. We are surrounded by such beauty every day but we just walk past it.”

“It is the same for sunlight on a sunny day. That light becomes a basis for sculpting. How much do we know about that light? The warm light shining on objects causes pleasure...”

“Wouldn't it be nice to express the beauty of quiet and calm moments?”

“I sympathize with the method to express radiant beauty.”

“Everyone has these memories. When I saw the most beautiful thing...there was an illusion that everything became still.”

“Beauty doesn't wait for anyone. If the world stops then

representing beauty would become much easier.”

Sculptors who spoke about the little beauties wanted to stop the world. They indeed had whimsical imaginations.

If time was stopped, it would be possible to enjoy the beauty of the passing water and wind. The beauty of the world could be expressed if the sculptors carefully observed the world.

The sculptors decided how to represent radiant beauty at the end of their discussion. If everything in the world stopped moving then they could contemplate the beauty of the moment.

Time Sculpting!

I am Roderick and I decided on this goal with the other sculptors.
】

A terrible goal!

“Keheok!”

Weed truly appreciated the sculptors.

“A sculptor should be born with this much ambition. If they only sold sculptures every day then they wouldn’t be able to live. Everyone is dead! If this quest succeeds then I can take the foundation they built.”



While the battle with Montus was taking place, all of Morata was quiet.

“Ah...”

“It can’t be...”

“Kyah, how? He was injured again rescuing the paladins.”

“Avoid it! If he can’t escape then it won’t be possible to win...”

Only voices filled with regret were occasionally heard from the taverns. Even those drinking beer were quiet. Unlike the past, those who chose to start in the Arpen Kingdom could choose the avian species.

In addition to developing similar physical abilities, they could spread their wings and fly in the sky. Those who became archers or warriors were very helpful during battles on the plains so they often joined hunting parties. It was popular to see newly created characters sitting on tree branches and flapping their wings.

Humans, orcs, elves, dwarves, barbarians and various species sat together silently as Weed’s battle continued.

The moment Weed conquered Roderick's Labyrinth, silence simultaneously occurred in Morata's taverns and squares.

"Hooray!"

"Eat as much fried chicken as you want! Eat at Sandra's!"

"I am the owner of the Wind Garden tavern. A chef with beginner's level 6 cooking skill. There will be unlimited free beer for today!"

"1,200 servings of grass porridge are being boiled at the square. Let's go quickly!"

"Special discount! As commemoration for the completion of King Weed's quest, we are buying all japtem for an extra 14%."

"Sale on long swords! There will be a small margin only for today. I will also provide 3 whetstones. Don't miss this opportunity."

"Low price gratitude event! All items will be sold for 3 gold or less."

The entire Arpen Kingdom was cheerful. And a Kingdom Quest appeared for users that belonged to it.

Ddirring!

-Arpen Kingdom's Palace

The Arpen Kingdom is conquering the Northern Continent.

The emerging Arpen Kingdom is rapidly expanding its territory. The barbarians, elves, dwarves, orcs and residents of the Niflheim Empire are included in the vast territory.

New cities are springing up as peace is secured. King Weed has established a nation built on courage and spirit.

Construct a palace that will become the symbol of the Arpen Kingdom's reign.

Level of Difficulty: Kingdom Quest.

Compensation: Kingdom Contribution.

Quest Restrictions: Limited to those belonging to the Arpen Kingdom.

Weed's fame and the residents' loyalty in him caused a Kingdom Quest to occur. When construction of palaces in other kingdoms started, taxes were raised and various allowances made. The Arpen Kingdom had an astronomical surplus of internal funds accumulated.

Weed's goal was to gain 2 million gold that he could embezzle! The palace construction quest started on the basis of that money.

"T-there was something like this."

"Am I going to work again starting from today?"

"We need to decide on a construction site for the Royal Palace.

And there needs to be a road to the quarry to carry the materials."

The users of the Arpen Kingdom were familiar with large constructions. They had built a Grand Building in each region.

"I am burning with the desire to create artwork. There will be no shortage of decorations in the palace."

"Armour for knights...I won't sell them and will deliver them to the Royal Hall to be exhibited."

The artists and blacksmiths were prepared. Even the ceramists and sculptors were happy to work.

"I have to bake the mud."

"I'm going to split apart stones while eating rice every day."

The architect users were gathered separately.

“Really luxurious...”

“A worthy Royal Palace is needed.”

“The current estimated budget is 2 million gold but...”

“The construction costs is always increasing.”

“Where should the location be?”

The location was a critical requirement.

The Royal Palace was the centre of the government.

The loyalty of the residents living close to the Royal Palace would be maintained and not fall. It would also spread its influence in the local politics. Currently the northern kingdom was filled with vacant land and villages so political influence was very important. The Royal Palace played a role in promoting economic growth so there were many opinions in Morata.

“The capital city is Morata.”

“Morata needs to be known as a great city throughout the entire

continent. It will become even greater once the Royal Palace is built.”

“A road to easily transport materials is required. The necessary workmen need to be obtained as well. That will shorten the construction period.”

“But there isn’t anywhere wide enough to construct a palace in Morata.

“If the shanty village is knocked down...”

“That isn’t going to happen!”

As Morata expanded, intermediate level and luxury homes were built. But the shacks still stayed as a specialty. The shanty village grew and artwork and sculptures filled the back alleys. Flowers bloomed in the streets as art and culture expanded.

“So where do you recommend?”

“We need a broader view.”

Adventurers, merchants and Grass Porridge members were part of the committee to construct the palace. A map of the northern continent was opened in order to select a palace construction site.

“The beach seems to be inadequate.”

“Wouldn’t it be better for a harbour development?”

“Although the problem can be settled step by step, right now there are many places inland that can’t be developed.”

“The north is waking up but there are many places buried.”

The northern villages had been harassed by the cold and monsters. Once the Arpen Kingdom was founded, its territory was increasing rapidly but some villages were completely wiped out by monsters.

A large number of records and adventures would disappear when a village was destroyed. If a new village was constructed there in the future then trial and errors will need to be experienced when adventuring around the area.

“There is a high probability that commerce will develop in the future.”

“It would be good to consult the history books of the Niflheim Empire.”

“There shouldn’t be any nearby villages.”

“A flat place with a river flowing would be good.”

This issue was just as important as picking the capital city.

“How about the area between Vargo Fortress and the Garden of the Gods?”

“Isn’t that the centre of the north?”

“This will become a central place in the future. It is a fair distance to the Garden of the Gods and Vargo Fortress and there is plenty of empty land.”

“Roads can also be opened up.”

“The problem is that the plains with a river isn’t that wide...the Royal Palace needs a vast area or the residential estates and business district as well.”

The users were familiar with the vast plains in the north. The vacant land between the Garden of the Gods and Vargo Fortress was a very large place according to Morata’s standards.

But looking at Morata’s rapid development, they had experience with how quickly the Arpen Kingdom could grow in other areas. Therefore they needed to find the perfect place for the Royal Palace where a city could thrive.

“It isn’t necessary to make the Royal Palace on a plains area.”

“Then...”

“I’ve been to these mountains and they are magnificent. The mountains are steep and rugged like Vargo Fortress. We can build the palace across the mountains.”

“A colourful and lavish Royal Palace built along with nature...”

“A structure overlooking a city.”

“Building the palace in a high place won’t an easy or cheap task.”

“But it could be the best building. There is no need to consider cost reduction.”

The Royal Palace that symbolized the dignity of the Arpen Kingdom would be built on top of the mountains. Guild buildings and commercial areas would be established along the mountain while housing would be built on the plains. If the Royal Palace was built well then it would become a featured place to visit.

If Weed built a large sculpture near the palace then it would catch even more attention. A Royal Palace that represented the dignity of the Arpen Kingdom and the north was going to be born.

“There are several suitable candidates but they will take a while to be ready.”

“The people will start protesting. They want to start quickly.”

“Let’s design it quickly.”

“We will start night shifts from today.

“I wouldn’t do it even with my company paying overtime...I am happy to stay up all night if it is for the Arpen Kingdom.”



The Hermes Guild raised a large army. They weren’t satisfied with being the strongest guild on the Versailles Continent. They trained an invincible army in order to conquer the continent.

“The weapons produced by the dwarves?”

“The dwarf blacksmiths have created them without a problem.”

“The troops?”

“Their morale and training is the best.”

The troops in the Hermes Guild has been trained for a long time and were recruiting as well. An astronomical amount of income from the Haven, Kallamore, Lasalle and Britten Alliance Kingdom was invested into training their military. The elite soldiers were

trained more than general soldiers. No matter how much money they had, there was a limit to the number of residents that could be conscripted.

-A village has been wiped out by the Embinyu Church.

-The Rahest area has been devastated.

They spread rumours of the Embinyu Church as an excuse to conscript soldiers to a training camp. An enormous amount of money was consumed by the supplies and conscription so the burden on the Haven Empire was huge.

Lafaye held a meeting that 100 of the military commanders and top knights attended.

“This war is a crusade. And the Haven Empire’s march won’t stop until it unifies the entire continent.”

“When is the starting date?”

The border of the Haven Empire was touching several kingdoms. The empire was too big that not one kingdom could face them. Once the Haven Empire declared war, it was natural for other kingdoms to form an alliance against them. They would simultaneously invade at the borders.

When an alliance was formed, a considerable amount of time was required for them to gather their power. Their plan to win the war

and prevent the alliance from taking action was a blitz attack. Once they gained the momentum, they believed there would be no one who could stop them.

“Everyone is excited by the success of Weed’s adventure so this is our chance.”

All the high level users knew that Weed was the first one to clear Roderick’s Labyrinth. The prestigious guilds failed even with the help of NPCs yet he accomplished it personally. He led the NPCs and pulled out their full ability so Weed’s leadership was praised even more.

Even the residents of rural villages on the Versailles Continent were talking about it as well as the broadcasting stations. It was to the extent that programs about Weed were shown dozens of times. He was the person the users in Royal Road respected most so Weed’s popularity was absolutely overwhelming.

“The people are interested in Weed right now. The attack will begin in 10 days as the army simultaneously moves to the border.”

The war plans for dealing with each kingdom were organized in advance. The elite troops prepared by the Hermes Guild reached a shocking 4 million. Troops from guilds they were secretly aligned with were also mixed in.



Time Sculpting!

The name gave off the feeling that he absolutely couldn't miss this secret sculpting technique.

“If the time in the world is stopped...”

He didn't know what would be triggered but he could imagine it. If he became worried then he could stop the world and move in it alone. A sculptor would carve radiant beauty based on their endless imagination.

“I would clear out a bank. No, first I would go to a department store and clear out the money and precious metals. Cash and gold would fill up the house so much that I'll never go hungry.”

If he had gold then he could laugh brightly even if he became injured. Weed kept reading Roderick's research records. It was good if Time Sculpting emerged but he was sensitive about the possible penalties involved.

【 I tried to complete Time Sculpting but a wall blocked me.

I didn't know how to stop the flow of time in the world. I came to the conclusion that there is no way to accomplish it. So Time Sculpting was given up for growing plants.

A plant that grew up to spread a luxurious aroma was also beautiful. It wasn't a sculpture but beautiful plants grew. 】

“No!”

Weed screamed. It was like suddenly ending up in a rice paddy.

【 Cultivating plants became a big art.

Plants would take root in barren land and give comfort to the people of the continent. Even in ravaged areas of the continent, the plants were able to be deeply rooted and grow.

Then a sculptor said.

“But what about once it becomes a flower?”

“Isn’t a flower beautiful even after it wilts?”

“Even farmers can cultivate plants...”

“We are exploring the aesthetics. Art will be created based on the plants.”

The debate about flowers and trees continued for 2 days. And someone said.

“Flowers will wither after only blooming for a few days. Isn’t Time Sculpting even more necessary so we won’t miss the beauty

around us?”

“That is true.”

“But the difficulty...”

“Art and beauty isn’t just made. Everything has a cost.”

“Let’s go back to Time Sculpting.”

The sculptors had a considerable amount of knowledge and ability that were suitable for other fields. There were those well versed in geography, history, architecture, swords, magic etc. Versatile geniuses were gathered as they continued to study time magic.

And 10 years passed. The sculptors were obstinate and didn’t give up. They browsed through records of adventures, history books and magic theories. Passion of this degree was necessary to give birth to art. They were already the best sculptors. I asked them why they were so immersed in this research.

“There is nothing impossible in sculpting.”

“Throughout history...the art of sculpting has been steadily declining. Aristocrats prefer paintings over sculptures so one day I want to pass on to junior sculptors the way to express radiant beauty.”

We studied Time Sculpting but failed. But the various species including humans, elves and dwarves looked through all the recorded writings and finally found a clue.

Nodulle and Hilderun. The tale of lovers who tried to escape the limits of time so they could be together eternally.】

Roderick's research records ended there.

Ddiring!

-Lovers of Borota Island.

Roderick's research records mentioned a fact that is hard to believe.

Nodulle and Hilderun. Investigate the lovers who tried to escape the limits of time.

Roderick left several clues for this purpose.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: The quest will fail if you die.

Weed took several items out of the box that contained the

research records.

Scroll to summon a giant fire golem.

Scroll to summon a meteor.

Borota Island map.

Story of stars in the night sky #73.

A compass that had stopped.

Keys to a residence on Borota Island.

Sands of time.

“Keheok!”

It was the magic scroll that caught Weed’s eye first. All he needed to do to make the magic scroll work was to rip it. Right now, there wasn’t a single user who could summon a fire golem.

Roderick had used it when he was resurrected and its combat power wasn’t inferior to Bahamorg’s.

“And a scroll to summon a meteor...I didn’t think it was possible. I can’t expect too much. It might be an animal or monster raised by

an elf that is called that name. Inspect!”

Weed checked the scroll to summon a meteor.

-The Grand Magician Roderick has sealed his best magic ‘Meteor Summon’ in this scroll.

There were numerous failures when creating this scroll and it is a one of a kind Meteor Summon scroll.

Once the scroll is torn, a meteor will be summoned to hit the ground.

Precautions when Using: Once the magic is activated, it is impossible to cancel it in the middle.

Accuracy is very low.

Will devastate an extensive area.

“This is real.”

It was a genuine scroll and not a fake!

“I can summon it to destroy a castle.”

Weed could imagine what would happen if the Meteor Summon

scroll was used in Morata. A red meteor with a long tail would streak across the sky to devastate a city. The buildings would collapse instantly and the people involved would die. Everything including the squares would be so destroyed that they couldn't be recognized.

“I have to investigate these clues to obtain Time Sculpting.”

Weed heard the story from the inhabitants of Versailles Continent.

“The most beloved sweethearts? Nodulle and Hilderun.”

“They stayed together for eternity despite the opposition from their families.”

“The girl next door recently fell in love. It would be good if she met a gentle man like Nodulle.

The residents suddenly started talking about Nodulle, Hilderun and Borota Island. Adventurers were interested but they didn't know the location of Borota Island that the lovers disappeared to.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Very interesting.”

Yoo Byung-jin was on the edge of his seat while watching Weed's

adventure. He created Royal Road but didn't play it directly. He just felt satisfaction from watching the people in the world he produced.

“Would I feel sharper if I played Royal Road directly?”

The artificial intelligence showed Weed's movements through multiple screens and he observed closely. Surprisingly, Weed managed to survive most situations despite the location.

-The demon soldier Pioko is on the verge of death. 1,439 health remaining. Weed is attacking.

Text from the AI appeared as fast as lightning wherever Weed was. The teleportation itself wasn't a problem but Blink meant he might miss a demon soldier dying.

“Showing the best combat power...while directing the troops.”

It would be difficult for the paladins and priests to endure. There were a lot of demon soldiers and the Talloss waking up. Even if Montus and Roderick were fighting each other, it was a miracle the paladins could defend against the wave of attacks from the demon soldiers.

Of course, they had gained experience in the labyrinth but the intelligence and power of the paladins could be seen. Their cooperation with the priests, various blessings and their faith meant they could fight the demon soldiers.

But the most important thing was their iron wall formation and the fact that it didn't collapse. The demon soldiers struck at a wall made of 3 layers of defence and the priests' healing and protection spells. Even the weak troops knew how to deal with the enemies.

The demon soldiers were strong but they attacked individually and were wiped out by the formation. The situation wasn't reversed through great tactics but excellent troops management and their defence ability.

The AI viewed the formation and organization of troops but judged there was little chance of failure.

“The paladins and priests are decreasing but they are handling the demons by fighting together.”

Weed was talented but the daring judgement and combat capabilities belonged to themselves. Weed had gained several skills, succeeded in adventures and accumulated fame so it was no wonder people were wowed by him.

“I don't even need to see the reactions on the continent to understand.”

Yoo Byung-jin only checked Astello Square. The first conqueror of the 8th labyrinth and the hero who slayed a devil!

“Ah, Adventurer Weed and Sculptor Weed, this continent sure is

lucky.”

“It doesn’t matter if the Embinyu Church runs wild since Weed will later teach them a lesson.”

“Roderick’s Labyrinth! A hell in the human world and it was suppressed by Weed-nim.”

“I would like to hear a song about the adventure. A song written about the adventure in Roderick’s Labyrinth will be able to gain significant popularity.”

Weed was such a splendid figure that all the residents and users on the Versailles Continent were talking about him.

So far Weed had succeeded in every adventure and there was a frenzy whenever it was broadcasted. Weed was also the one who developed Morata and the northern frontier into what it was now.

It was to the extent that common sense was overruled and the indoctrinated Grass Porridge Cult formed. The Grass Porridge Cult was a group that the general public and users who lived in the north naturally joined. It was led by users with various levels of power.

The Grass Porridge Cult was a group in Royal Road formed on the power of grass porridge, not religion! The Grass Porridge Cult respected freedom, pioneering, adventures and culture. But when looking at it, their belief in Weed was no less extreme than the

Embinyu Church. Beginners who started in the Arpen Kingdom and joined the Grass Porridge Cult willingly cheered for Weed and paid their taxes.

So far Weed hadn't acted as a ruler. He had just poured a huge amount of his personal fortune into Morata's urban development. And the users in the Arpen Kingdom were mainly responsible for domestic affairs.

But when looking at the overall picture, Weed's governing ability needed to be rated highly. He prepared distinctive squares when planning Morata and invested money into maintaining peace.

He constructed the Arts Centre to stimulate cultural development while the Grand Buildings increased the influx of users. The low taxes and high reward stimulated the pioneering spirit.

Despite the tenuous financial situation, they didn't spare any money on the buildings. The users' hearts were tied together by the large sculptures and the loyalty of the users who started in Morata was special.

The area around Morata was a wasteland but now everything had changed. The city gave off a feeling of never wanting to leave after entering it. Even if they went to a distant place while exploring the north, they would always return to Morata. Residential areas like the shanty village was important to instil the perception that the king cared about beginners.

The beginners who started in other cities and kingdoms were very poor. They had to save a while just to afford their own house. But users in Morata and the Arpen Kingdom could quickly obtain a house. Even if the shanty village didn't have any facilities, it wasn't far from the city centre.

The shanty village that was a short distance away was a popular travel destination for users. The fact that it was an easy and cheap place to live in Morata quickly spread. Weed had changed the devastated Morata in the north to this.

“It is impossible that all of this was thoroughly planned. Anyway, it is increasingly worth watching.”

Yoo Byung-jin decided to watch comfortably. He waited for Weed to fail and become ruined. However, he still cheered when Weed fought and won against Montus.



The Dark Gamers actively supported the Arpen Kingdom.

Title: Unknown hunting grounds in the Arpen Kingdom.

Title: Come to Beard Dungeon. You can make a fortune.

Title: Level up? From level 300 to 400. This place is sufficient

Title: A place to acquire major items in the Northern Continent

The top users of the Dark Gamers Union explored the north and shared the information through the bulletin boards.

“Well, we should go here.”

“Even though the land prices is disgusting...this is the north. It is quite normal.”

“There is a reason those places are popular.”

The Dark Gamers scattered around the Versailles Continent gathered in the Arpen Kingdom. The Dark Gamers had various tendencies. They enjoyed dangerous adventures and made unexpected choices. The ones who were bards easily received information from the residents and formed hunting parties.

However, the majority of Dark Gamers preferred hunting silently. They hunted and cleared out the location where the Arpen Kingdom's palace would be built.

“Selling an intermediate teardrop jewel necklace.”

“Please whisper if you find the Jipang enchanted magic wand.”

“Selling blacksmith materials. I have a considerable volume worth 5,000 gold.”

Advanced items were sold at the squares. Many weapons and materials were swept up by the Dark Gamers in dungeons. Dungeons in the Arpen Kingdom were being discovered one after another by the Dark Gamers.

General users also found some dungeons but the territory was too enormous and the peace unstable. They would encounter groups of monsters, traps or difficult demons and then experience death.

On the other hand, the Dark Gamers were familiar with dungeons and hunting. They thoroughly prepared by investigating the terrain and characteristics of the surrounding monsters before unearthing the dungeon.

Their transactions at the stores were absurd. Once they went to a hunting ground, they would bring back a backpack full of items. Of course, they needed to bring whetstones, food, exploration tools, trap dismantling tools, magic scrolls, bandages and other supplies when going to the hunting ground. They enjoyed the shacks, theatre and music performances as the tax revenue of the Arpen Kingdom increased.



After Weed survived the quest, he returned to Morata with the paladins and priests. The quest in the labyrinth was finished so he went to visit the Church of Lugh and the Freya Church.

“My achievements would be cut a lot.”

The fact that he successfully conquered the labyrinth didn't comfort him. The audience watching through the broadcasts admired Weed's charisma and leadership. His command of the troops perfectly matched the flow of battle.

His keen eyes that seized the opportunity to win while leading his troops was worthy of praise. Weed had many skills but the most feared was his leadership ability.

“Weed can beat any quest along with his subordinates.”

“Yes. He is strong by himself but nothing is impossible when he leads his subordinates.”

“He won't let them die carelessly.”

“He thinks of human lives as precious.”

Those were the reactions after watching the broadcasts.

“I would like to become part of a hunting party led by Weed the God of War.”

“Really, his expeditions would be composed of high level players.”

“Until now I've only talked about Weed-nim's adventures but I

wish I could accomplish something like that.”

It was fortunate that they didn't know Weed's inner thoughts.

‘I need to complete the quest at all costs, even if it means using bait...’

Weed arrived in Morata and walked along the main street. The best city in the north where magnificent buildings were built! Normally this road was crowded with merchant carriages and people.

“Ooh, congratulations!”

“Hooray for Weed-nim!”

“I knew he would come back successfully!”

Users were standing on the side of the road and blowing pollen. They knew Weed would return to Morata so they waiting with petals from wildflowers. Weed received pollen, petals, claps and shouts of joy as he walked along the street.

It was the thrilling march of a great victory!

People from the Grass Porridge Cult had organized the event. Beginners stood on the rooftops and walls to watch Weed who was like their idol. Even the shacks on the hill was crowded with people

wanting to see Weed. The welcoming crowd that paralysed Morata was indicative of Weed's popularity.

“Preparing things like this...”

There wasn't a happy smile on Weed's face.

“How much taxes could've been collected if they hunted during this time?”

But other than Morata, there were taxes from 20 cities in the kingdom. Quests and trading occurred so the kingdom was growing steadily.

The northern kingdom was so large that there was plenty of room to expand. Weed finished the welcoming ceremony and visited the Church of Lugh. The High Priest was waiting for him.

“I heard news that you finished a tough and serious adventure.”

“It is nothing. The paladins of Lugh helped block the enemy threatening the peace of the continent.”

“A lot of blood flowed but peace isn't free. The experience of the paladins are necessary for the development of a religion. And the children growing up in the Church of Lugh will defend justice with their swords.”

Ddirring!

-Contribution to the Church of Lugh has decreased by 892.

The Church's fame and honour has increased.

Missionary actions will be actively carried out and the number of believers will increase.

The senior paladins that have accumulated large experience can receive new quests.

The contribution was reduced more than he thought. The surviving paladins were promoted. Many new quests would arise in the Church of Lugh.

Demon Clean-up of Pomullan Island.

Missing Person Idein.

Destroy the 3rd Base of the Embinyu Church.

Wrong Sacrifice.

Quests with A and S class difficulty! This qualification was given only to Weed.

“There are many places around the continent that requiring protecting to ensure peace. Then I will meet you again at the next opportunity.”

“Lugh’s blessing always be with you.”

Weed’s circumstances meant he couldn’t do the religious quests right now so he just exited. And he visited the Freya Church.

“I was able to come back safely thanks to the protection of Goddess Freya.”

“The damage is too big. We believed in Weed-nim but...”

The High Priest of the Freya Church reprimanded him. It was inevitable since most of the priests belonged to the Freya Church. His reputation was forced to drop because a lot of priests were killed in battle.

“However, it is fortunate that Weed-nim survived and returned. I look forward to the work you will do for the religious societies from now. And it is good that Alveron has returned to the Freya Church with a great deal of experience.”

Ddirring!

-The value of your achievements with the Freya Church has decreased by 2,493.

The blessings and grace of the Freya Church in the north has decreased.

Due to the large sacrifice, the activities of the priests in the Freya Church will decrease.

He had amassed higher achievements in the Freya Church compared to the Church of Lugh so that wasn't a big problem. Currently the Freya Church was the main religion in the Arpen Kingdom. But if many priests died then there were many penalties like decreases economic activities and adventures.

“Anyway, this part has been resolved.”

Weed now needed to find the last secret sculpting technique.



The Haven Empire made an announcement the day the Imperial Palace finished construction.

<For a long time, we stopped and watched while hoping for peace. But our peers in the continent wasn't satisfied.

The endless fighting over territory allowed the Embinyu Church free reign! The places where users can stay comfortably is becoming increasingly smaller.

This isn't what our Hermes Guild wished for. We have the power so we should take responsibility.

The Hermes Guild has decided to stabilize the continent. Those who don't understand may blame us but there will be even more extreme chaos on the continent if we do nothing.

Courage isn't just needed to fight against monsters or the enemy. It is standing up to correct a wrong. That's what true courage is.

The Hermes Guild will use this spirit to defend the peace.>

They used the justification of a moral duty to declare war on the entire continent! It wasn't a bluff as a war started on all the borders of the Haven Empire. They broke through the border garrisons of the other kingdoms.

The elite members of the Hermes Guild led their knights and troops into the other kingdoms. From now on, they didn't care about revealing the hidden power they built up to the other kingdoms. And a battalion of 70,000 troops led by Rensullot moved towards the Arpen Kingdom.

The Hermes Guild's power had swelled greatly in the meantime. They intended to occupy the Arpen Kingdom who had defied them for a long time.

“They are finally coming.”

“It was expected after their long silence.”

The Versailles Continent wasn't surprised about the Hermes Guild's declaration of war. They were already viewed as bad guys. The Roam Guild, Black Sword Mercenaries, Lion Star Guild, Cloud Guild and remnants of the Black Lion Guild also moved quickly.

“The Hermes Guild really hid a large army.”

“We've been making an effort to build up our military but...”

“We can't deal with those forces alone.”

“Let's form an alliance.”

The 5 guilds coordinated quickly. In the past, they had been part of an alliance with the Hermes Guild until the Britten Alliance Kingdom was invaded. When the Hermes Guild seemed to stop, the imminent alliance seemed to dispel. But internally they were still meeting.

-We have to fight against the Hermes Guild or they will conquer the continent.

-They are a strong opponent. Combining forces with others would be nice...

-We're close to the Hermes Guild so we will be in danger. Fighting against other competitors might weaken them.

The Black Sword Mercenaries, Roam Guild and Lion Star Guild agreed to strike the Hermes Guild. But while they were coordinating, the Hermes Guild declared war on the entire continent. They became a cohesive power to fight against the Hermes Guild.



“Having a war here is disgusting.”

The farmer Miretas wiped off the sweat with a towel while wearing a straw hat. This shabby hat wasn't an ordinary item.

-Straw Hat with a Chicken Feather:

Durability 9/15. Defence 8.

A loosely woven straw hat.

In the past, the farmer Pulbons wore this hat to save the continent during an extremely lean year.

Restrictions: Farmers only.

Level: 430

Perseverance 1,200.

Options: When farming, there is a chance for Wisdom to rise.

Monsters will pay less attention.

Birds that sit on the straw hat can bring special seeds from distant places.

Rather than having vitality decline during physical labour, it will often increase vitality.

Can weather a storm for a long time without health decreasing.

Energy can be used to restore damaged land.

The likelihood of achieving a good harvest on cleared land has increased.

Can be repaired easily unless the durability is 0.

This was a unique hat that he accidentally obtained in the wastelands.

“I don’t like that war is coming to the Arpen Kingdom...”

Miretas had the natural personality of a farmer. He enjoyed watching planted crops as the seasons changed. He had cultivated a large granary and fruit orchard in the Arpen Kingdom. He even installed an irrigation system to pull water from the river and he would have a good harvest for the next few years.

“Things I can do...the soldiers will need food to eat.”

Only King Weed could know the exact population of the Arpen Kingdom. The lords of each region couldn't combine the numbers to determine the exact population. Most of the land in the Arpen Kingdom was owned by the king.

However, Miretas could gain an approximate estimate of the population. Farmers were very sensitive about food production and its consumption. Prices would slump if there was too much food and conversely, people would starve if the food ran out.

The food consumption had increased by several times since he settled in the Arpen Kingdom. Humans, orcs, elves, dwarves, barbarians, avians and a variety of other species. There was also a tremendous influx of beginners into the Arpen Kingdom.

When a war started, rice was necessary for the military. The orcs were propagating at Vargo Fortress. They were a species with a quick growth rate as they often died and were born. Their growth system was completely different from humans.

When there were tough monsters or monsters disturbing the

peace, the orcs would bravely stampede forward. The orc beginners would get rid of monsters and sell the items they acquired at Vargo Fortress. Vargo Fortress became a gathering place for dwarves, elves, orcs and merchants.

“Purchase bows from the elves! These bows won’t be sold to just anyone. Only people with definite archery skills should come.”

“A steel glaive reliably made in Morata! If you purchase more than 600 then a discount will be given.”

“Baby orcs like dried deer meat. Stand over there and wait, Orc-nim.”

“These are dwarf exclusive high boots.”

The true power of the Arpen Kingdom was commerce. The merchants engaged in business and an increasing number of the orc population became armed. The orcs heard the news about a war and held a meeting.

“Chwik, it is a war.”

“Chwi chwit, how interesting. Things were very tedious.”

“I should ask the human and dwarven blacksmiths to get rid of rust on my glaive.” Chwi chwit!”

“We’re going to fight, cwit!”

The orcs were the first ones who wanted to fight. They knew very well the persecution the orcs would receive from the Central Continent. They couldn’t cross many checkpoints at the cities because they weren’t human.

The individual ability of the orcs weren’t strong but they had superior numbers so the ruling guilds didn’t want them in the area. The orcs would also reduce the number of monsters in the hunting grounds.

Of course, there were other dungeons available but the orcs were annoying and would consume a lot of funds. They regretted that behaviour after seeing the orcs propagating and destroying monsters around Vargo Fortress.

“Since the humans have fallen into a crisis, we need to fight together. Another reason is that they create delicious beer.”

“In order to protect the forests...we have to enter the war.”

The dwarves and elves were the same. All the species in the Arpen Kingdom decided to join the war.

Grass Porridge Cult! The group that represented the north also reacted to the Hermes Guild’s army.

“Those guys are coming to conquer us...we are willing to fight!”

“Huhu, I was waiting for this war to spread.”

“Let’s do it!”

In the past, they had helped end the war in Morata! At that time, most of them were beginners but now their numbers had grown to an impossible degree.

“Inform each unit to prepare for battle.”

“We need to rally a minimum of 40,000 people for each unit. Will that be possible?”

“The Toadstool unit doesn’t seem to be exploring dungeons...I’ll tell them.”

They started to gather participants for the war through the Grass Porridge Cult’s communication network.

“Hermes Guild...”

“Kill!”

“Join the war...”

“Let’s go!”

“Where should we gather?”

The notice was enough to persuade them without needing to carry on a conversation. Warriors in the north started to move out of the hunting grounds.

On the other hand, the users on the Versailles Continent who didn't understand were talking about it in taverns.

“The Hermes Guild is really occupying the continent.”

“Well, they are very determined. How long can the alliance fight against them...?”

Book 33: Time In The Past

Chapter 1: Grass Porridge Cult's Naval Warfare

The Hermes Guild's invasion of the Arpen Kingdom!

The military of the Haven Empire headed towards the north. Some moved across land while 1/3rd of the troops sailed on ships to the north. 100 ships carrying carriages, cavalry and armoured troops spread their sails while proudly flying the flag of the Haven Empire.

“This will be enough to occupy the north.”

“We need to step on a sprout from the beginning. We've endured it so far but now we must not hesitate since we're taking over the entire continent. We have to destroy Weed so that he can't get up anymore.”

The leaders of the Hermes Guild were convinced of their victory. In fact, they judged that the Arpen Kingdom had a poor army. Even if all the knights dispersed across the kingdom was gathered, the reports stated that there were only 20,000 people. The Arpen Kingdom focused on cultural and financial development but their military was much poorer.

That's why the Haven Empire sent 70,000 troops consisting of the magic corps and knight corps to the north. It was composed entirely of elite soldiers and their power couldn't be compared to the unemployed.

“Who should we send as the commander for the northern expedition?”

A siege on the plains! The placement of the troops and the terrain absolutely had to be taken into account when planning a strategy. This was a chance to cut Weed off and rule the north so the leaders of the Hermes Guild supported it.

“However, we can’t think of Weed as soft. He has shown various abilities in Roderick’s Labyrinth so we should be vigilant.”

“We won’t be able to wash off the shame if he defeats us this time. We must unconditionally win.”

“Rensullot can match Weed’s resourcefulness and luck. He is more focused on defence than attack.”

“We can believe in him. He is a high ranking member of the Hermes Guild and has a lot of experience in large scale battles.... But we’re currently conquering the continent so should we send him to the north?”

“It is worth considering after Admiral Drinfeld and the Crema Knights’ failure. If Weed uses the power of a necromancer then he won’t be an easy opponent. According to the guild reports, Weed has great power as a necromancer.”

“I was amazed when I saw the broadcast.”

“I haven’t forgotten the form of the chaos warrior that he used at the rocky canyon. Who can really fight like that?”

The Hermes Guild’s leaders felt a lot of pressure due to Weed’s adventures. He succeeded in things that seemed impossible and showed a strong combat ability when fighting against Bardray in the Melbourne Mine. The broadcasting stations also paid attention to the Hermes Guild’s war in the north and it would receive high ratings.

Anyway, they wanted to destroy the Arpen Kingdom while showing a strength that couldn’t be opposed. The Haven Empire wanted to show off the overwhelming power of the military they mobilized.

“If Rensullot success in the northern expedition then he will be a leading example of the Hermes Guild.”

“We have to send him to the north in order to achieve our purpose. Don’t we also have to think about governing after occupying the north?”

Rensullot was the lord of a castle in the Haven Empire. He made his carrier by making significant contributions in the war against the Kallamore and Lasalle Kingdoms. Above all, he occupied lands that were devastated by looting and arson. He was the most reliable person to occupy the north and govern it in a stable way. From the Hermes Guild’s perspective, it wasn’t a loss if he ruled in a brutal manner.



Weed heard that the Hermes Guild was sending an army to the Arpen Kingdom through the broadcasts. The stations informed everyone of the size of the Haven Empire's military and their movements.

Rather than concealing it, the Haven Empire openly revealed it like they were stating the Arpen Kingdom wasn't their opponent. The Hermes Guild gave an interview stating that those in the north who feared merciless destruction and plunder should run away.

Weed gave a deep sigh.

“Those guys won't leave me alone. I need to leave to obtain the final secret sculpting technique.”

It wasn't just one or two times. He had faced the Hermes Guild when defeating the Immortal Legion. His dirty destiny once again!

He saw on the news that the Hermes Guild had won in various areas of the continent. The border defence army of the Masen Kingdom was defeated and the Bichwi Lake area of the Aidern Kingdom was seized. The Dale and Tullen Kingdoms were ruled by guilds allied with the Hermes Guild so their rule spread.

“Anyway, this time I'm forced to fight. Kingdom information!”

Weed opened the Arpen Kingdom's internal affairs window.

-Arpen Kingdom: An emerging kingdom centred around Morata and Vargo Fortress.

The territory is 29% of the area previously ruled by the Niflheim Empire. The advanced culture and active trade has made it expand very quickly.

King Weed of the Arpen Kingdom is called the 'King recognized by the Gods' and has the active support of the residents. In addition, he is the only person who gained the 'Hero who Saved the Continent' title so he has the respect of the free knights.

The inhabitants of the Arpen Kingdom are active in pursuing art, adventures and freedom and are able to overcome difficulty with their hard work. Various cities such as Vent Castle that maintained the legitimacy of the Niflheim Empire has joined. Lavias the Sky Island has joined the Arpen Kingdom. The avian clan has spread over the northern continent.

Newly built cities have their population rapidly grow as advanced art and technology is developed based on Morata. The Arpen Kingdom showcases fine examples of Grand Buildings.

Military Power: 2,382 Economic Power: 19, 384 Culture: 30,930

Technology: 5,125 Religious Influence: 89 Kingdom Politics: 89

Influence on Surrounding Areas: 94%

Kingdom Development: 74 Hygiene: 44 Safety: 91%

The residents of the northern region are only looking at the Arpen Kingdom.

Mine development and production is increasing day by day. Huge amounts of resources are produced and distributed. However, there are still many places where roads aren't connected directly, monsters invading different areas and congestion of the shipping lines along the coast.

While trading with some remote islands is in progress, only 6.9% of the mysterious and dangerous areas of the sea have been navigated.

Agriculture is the foundation of a kingdom and the farmer's pioneering spirit scattered seeds at swamps where alligators live. Tea trees, rare herbs and special crops are the driving force behind the increase in population.

The residents of the Arpen Kingdom are active in adventuring so their average life span is short. Even the soldiers in the army are questioning it.

“Can we stop it if monsters flock en masse?”

“I would be happy to die to protect His Majesty the King and the

people living in the cities.”

“The kingdom is in danger but it can’t be helped since we have fewer soldiers.”

Law enforcement can’t handle the vast amount of territory and are forced to secure peace around the city. Residents of mountain villages close to monster territory have to protect themselves. Small villages can’t interrupt an invasion of monsters and are reduced to ashes. The free knights gathered in the Arpen Kingdom to meet the king. They are the core of the military.

The kingdom’s urban development is rapid and there is a boom in population, agriculture and production!

Kingdom’s Total Population: 15,347,238 Monthly Tax Income: 8,790,299.

Kingdom Operational Expenses: Military 6%, Technology Development 5%, Economic Development 38%, Culture Investment 7%, Monster Subduing Requests 21%, Road Establishment 19% Religion 4%.

Military: 991 Knights, 1,734 Trainee Knights, 34,280 Soldiers.

Vent Castle core troops. Knights and soldiers are mobilized to explore dungeons little by little. Have a low degree of basic weapons training.

The residents are anxious because all the funds are poured into development, causing excessive economic development.

“A perfect state system.”

Weed had pursued an aggressive economic development and the Arpen Kingdom expanded. Some small villages and cities had no choice but to disappear. The sacrifice of cows for a higher purpose!

No matter how many ruins were formed, a city could be built there again. His principle was wait-and-see once it developed. Securing the peace and building up the walls meant expansion was quite slow.

Furthermore, users didn't want it either. Users dreamed of pioneering villages and becoming lords. The military of the kingdom should be dispatched to help them but they couldn't do it themselves. In order to become lords, they had to raise intimacy with the residents and overcome much difficulties. Weed himself started from the bottom to establish Morata.

Once a territory in a kingdom was obtained, villages and cities would spring up, roads opened and the tax income would increase explosively.

“It isn't useful for development but it can't be helped. Summon all the military from every village and city while leaving behind the minimum number needed to secure the peace.

-The military has been summoned by the King of the Arpen Kingdom.

Peace will become unstable and deteriorate in some areas and the cities will be assaulted by monsters.

The current troops able to be mobilized are 871 knights, 1,593 training knights and 31,023 soldiers.

Do you really want to summon the military of the Arpen Kingdom?

“Summon everyone.”

-The military of the Arpen Kingdom has gathered at the King's order.

The military will gather according to the signal beacon determined in advance.

“I have to take decisive action.”

Weed left only the minimum of troops behind to defend the villages and cities. He also had his sculptural lifeforms.

“In the meantime, they've been playing so I should call the wyverns, Yellowy, Goldman, Bingryong and Phoenix.”

There were the sculptural lifeforms he gave life to in Jigolaths and the warrior Bahamorg. Weed called a support army for the war in the north.



The Southern Plains near Morata! The users and army of the Arpen Kingdom decided to gather there.

“Bamboo Shoots Porridge unit! Personnel needs to be checked so line up straight!”

“Garlic Porridge unit, over here! Gather and show your garlic earrings.”

“The Toadstool Porridge unit will be honoured to act as the vanguard in this war.”

“Wahhhh! The Toadstool Porridge unit doesn’t fear death!”

“The Ginseng Porridge magic unit will cooperate with the magicians of the Jujube Porridge unit.”

“Green Tea Porridge unit, we were founded later so don’t let other units take us lightly!”

The active users in the north gathered intensively.

“When is the Haven Empire invading?”

“Of course I have to fight.”

“I’ll smash them.”

“Let’s show our strength. They can’t push us like they can the Central Continent. There is no space for them!”

Usually there would be a complex atmosphere if 10,000 users gathered. But now the plains were covered with people.

Someone cried out in a loud voice.

“Now, sorting the troops is finished to let’s move quickly! Hurry before the sun sets!”

“If someone gets lost and can’t find their unit during the march, go to another unit and fight for the moment. There is no time.”

“Let’s move. Come on, move quickly.”

“Let’s move to the east.”

The Grass Porridge Cult moved from the southern plains towards the east. The sight of everyone moving was a tremendous view. And then the users gathered again.

“The 4th gathering of the Grass Porridge Cult is over and now it is the 5th!”

It wasn't possible to gather all of the Grass Porridge users in one place. Morata's gates were overflowing with a tremendous number of beginners. Every user who lived in a shack armed themselves with swords or bows. They were determined to die so they didn't pay attention to their armour at all.

The users belonging to the Grass Porridge Cult voluntarily gathered from villages and cities spread out through the Arpen Kingdom.

“Wah, it is real.”

“Look there. There are people holding a basic wooden sword and dressed in beginner's clothes.”

Even the Grass Porridge members didn't know there would be this much people but they were self-confident after coming to the southern plains. The personnel line-up continued into the evening. The northern continent was full of users and more people who just logged in were exiting Morata's gates.

“Midnight Snack Porridge, we were just waiting for it to become night. At your disposal.”

The wyverns, Bingryong and Phoenix flew over the southern

plains. The users watched the sky and heartily shouted.

“Grass porridge, grass porridge, grass porridge!”

“The fight to save the North!”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“This will be an easy expedition. Those guys won’t be able to resist....”

The Northern Expeditionary Force of the Haven Empire. The landing unit was escorted by 3 fleets.

After Drinfeld lost his fleet, the Hermes Guild’s marine power was hurt which caused a considerable headache. It was difficult to give users a marine education. They made a huge investment into constructing a shipyard and building 4 new fleets. The navy’s 3 fleets contained 23 combat ships.

In order to protect the Northern Expedition army, the ships escorted them to Varna Harbour in the north.

“The weather is clear and there is a fair wind for a comfortable trip.”

The commander of the 3 fleets, Hakim stood at the bow. Looking at the seagulls flying near the boat, he judged that they were close

to land. Those caught in a storm at sea or drifting ships could find their way using the birds. However, the trade merchants travelling to the north had pioneered a smooth sailing route.

“We can attack Varna Harbour before it is afternoon.”

They would land at Varna Harbour and attack. It was an operation to thoroughly destroy the city with magic and a bombardment.

“Congratulations, Captain-nim.”

“The day where you’ll be promoted to Admiral of the Empire’s navy isn’t far away.”

Hakim was a first class navigator. In a sea battle, the combat ability depended on the ship captain’s ability to manoeuvre. A competent captain would have a large effect on hunting in a party. Outstanding captains could make use of sailors with a basic level of proficiency. Of course, the relationship between shipmates wasn’t always peaceful so sometimes there would be a revolt.

“Well, that is only possible if this battle is successful.”

“Of course, Navy Admiral Hakim-nim.”

“Huhuhuhu! That doesn’t sound bad.”

“It is natural. You will soon hear it so often that you’ll get tired of it.”

“It already seems to be going well.”

While Hakim was drunk on the sailors’ flattery.

“The Arpen Kingdom’s naval battle fleet is ahead!”

A sailor observing from the lookout point.

“The scale?”

“That....”

“There are more than 30 ships! They are the size of small sailing ships.”

The number and types of ships were the most important thing in a naval battle. Larger ships were able to hold more cannons and also had higher accuracy.

“Did the Arpen Kingdom use their finances to found a navy? But they are small sailboats so cannons can’t be used. Rush into battle! Spread all sails! Full speed ahead!”

“Yes, Captain-nim!”

“Going to the battle stations!”

The sailors got up, spread the sails and loaded the cannons. Hakim’s fleet moved forward in a battle formation at top speed. They used the strategy of breaking through enemy lines with cannons and quickly annihilating the enemy. Their overwhelming firepower, quick firing ability and sailing speed to crush the enemy.

“More enemies are appearing. Small caravels. There are 40 of them!”

“That much is just like a snack. Prepare the degradation bullets!”

Hakim commanded the other ships. Degradation bullets were normally used to destroy a city but he decided to use it on the sea. There wouldn’t be any problems winning over the enemy but he wanted to minimize the damage to the fleet.

“There are 8 medium sized frigates behind enemy lines!”

“I’m getting bored. Just sink them.”

“Galley ships had also appeared. They are pirate ships!”

Pirate ships belonging to the 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Nin! They had dragged 24 galley ships into the battle. Galley ships could

travel short distances quickly due to captured slaves rowing the paddles.

The pirates were on the deck to prepare for a fight after the ships would collide. Usually in a normal sea battle, pirates were good at fighting on decks.

“Concentrate the shells on the galley ships. Keep moving forward!”

“The number of enemy ships keep on increasing. There are 300 additional small ships!”

“How can that be....?”

Hakim was watching from the deck. The vessels kept on increasing in front of him. More and more ships the size of small sailboats could be seen. They were only armed with 8 cannons at the most but shooting together would give them a lot of power. Even if the ships shook and the accuracy was low, there was still a chance of hitting something.

“How can there be these many ships?”

“There are many merchant ships. Fishing boats are also involved in the battle.”

“This is....”

It was highly unexpected to the users of the Hermes Guild. They found it difficult to fathom so many ships. The small sails spread out as the fleet headed towards Hakim.

“Fleet Commander-nim, we are about to ram head on.”

“Then prepare for a scramble with the enemies.”

Hakim intended to shoot the cannons on the left and right side to sink the enemy. The sea was full of small ships. It wouldn't be long before they started shooting. However, the landing unit was following behind the battle fleet. Things would become quite complicated if they became trapped among the ships. If they mixed in with the pirate ships then many ships might sink.

“Detour. The range of their cannons is short. Use our mobility to stay on their outskirts.”

Hakim's fleet turned. They kept a distance as they passed the enemy and fired their cannons. However, small ships were approaching from the east side, west side and open seas. Ships hiding in the shadow of islands also approached Hakim's fleet. Hakim observed that they weren't incompetent. Naturally medium and large sized ships were hiding. But the small ships and reefs were blocking the way behind him.

“Their flags indicate that they don't belong to the Arpen Kingdom. Other images are drawn.”

“What is that?”

“Sharks and whales, turtles and that...rockfish, cutlass fish and even mackerel are spotted.”

“What?”

The distance shortened and shouting could be heard from the small ships.

“Mackerel Porridge unit, load the cannons!”

“The cannonballs are expensive. Wait until the fishing boats turn before shooting!”

“Then just bump into any ship.”

“The Shark Porridge unit is supporting us from nearby. Let’s go!”

“Cutlassfish Porridge unit, we have been endlessly quarrelling with the Baked Cutlassfish unit. But now we will fight together with them!”

“Whale Porridge unit, we still haven’t seen a whale. Now is the time to catch a really big whale!”

“Let’s hunt them!”

“All-out attack!”

The marine forces of the Grass Porridge Cult appeared. They were users who felt the charm of the sea and moved their base to Varna Harbour. As they kept on going out to sea, they naturally formed units.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The sea was covered with the sound of artillery fire. Hakim’s fleet fired their cannons at the small ships coming from 3 directions.

“Grasp their movements!”

“If we get out of here then they won’t be able to catch us.”

“The Turtle Porridge unit is blocking the front. Throw the nets!”

Hakim’s fleet was forced to stop due to the blockade formed of ships. They initially moved forward but the large ships became immobile due to the wreckage and debris around them.

“Sink everything!”

“Don’t stop and keep firing the cannons!”

Hakim’s fleet shot their cannons while being surrounded.

Kwa kwang!

A small ship lost its keel and exploded! Concentrated artillery also flew towards the battle fleet.

“Put away the sails!”

“Beware of tremors!”

The cannons didn’t have a large power but they still destroyed the hull and caused the mast to catch on fire. He had moved forward when the sea was still clear so Hakim hadn’t thought of a combat strategy. Now he couldn’t use any tactics at all since he was surrounded!

“Just charge!”

“I decided to go on a long sea voyage....but I couldn’t keep my promise. I’m going to sink in the sea but I’ll come back.”

“If you’re going to fall into the sea then hold on to the side of the ship. Then it will become heavier for a short time!”

The small ships literally ran into Hakim's battle fleet. It was mostly the small ships sinking. The collision itself didn't deal any big blows to the large battle ships. But the shaking that occurred messed up the accuracy of the cannons. The enemy had a high hit rate but the crew could collapse from the cannon blast as well. The pirates used the intervals where the crew was confused to successfully board.

"It is an honour to board a Haven Empire warship on this day....everybody get on!"

"Kill everyone!"

"First occupy the gunpowder room. Don't let anyone block you!"

The 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Nin and their pirates climbed aboard the warships.

"Those shabby pirates! Show them the might of the Haven Empire's navy!"

A deck battle occurred on the open sea.

Kwaaang!

The ship that Hakim was on suddenly shook and tilted.

"What is this?"

“Fleet Commander-nim, a reef!”

“What did you say? There are these many ships so how can we hit a reef?”

“That...I don’t know either.”

The Grass Porridge Cult knew the waters around here extremely well. Some islands had caves that could hide a small ship or docks for big ships.

Above all, the currents in this area quickly moved towards land. The Grass Porridge Cult lured Hakim’s battle fleet into a trap where the currents would lead to reefs.

Hakim cried out in a loud voice.

“This is nothing! Bury them all in the sea!”

The Haven Empire started sinking the beginner’s merchant fleet and fishing boats steadily like they were a swarm of ants. However, more small ships came from the direction of Varna Harbour.

“I have been waiting for a long time. Seaweed Porridge unit, charge!”

“Lighten your spirits. Your friends the Clam Porridge unit has

arrived.”

“Seaweed Porridge unit, fire your cannons!”

Small ships covered the ship. And behind them were rafts linked together.



KMC Media’s ‘Talk about Versailles Continent.’

“Today we have really shocking news. Many people saw it in the live coverage during the day.”

Shin Hye-min’s face sparkled with a bright light.

“Oh Joo-wan ssi, did you hear the startling results from the collision between the Haven Empire and Arpen Kingdom navy fleets?”

“Yes, of course. I heard that the Haven Empire’s supreme marine force was overrun. This is a main scene that occurred.”

The Haven Empire showed wonderful destructive power when dealing with the fleet from the north. The furious bombardment continued but they couldn’t defeat the Grass Porridge Cult.

The battle continued for one day and one night. And the Haven Empire was ruined the moment their ships ran out of ammunition. Fire burned the sea as well as the Haven Empire's ships. The combat ships engulfed in fire couldn't move and sunk. Of the Grass Porridge Cult, only hundreds of members survived. But the users who safely returned to Varna Harbour shouted.

“We won!”

“Grass porridge, grass porridge, grass porridge!”

Large bonfires and smoke occurred along the beach of Varna Harbour as there was a festival.

There were those who didn't leave the next morning. They were waiting for the deceased users to log back in and enjoy the festival.



Tang! Tang! Tang!

There was the endless sound of a blacksmith's hammer near the shipyard of the harbour. They were bound to be busy since so many ships had sunk.

The war around the Versailles Continent widened. Great battles between kingdoms was a daily occurrence these days.

The majority of people disliked the war but the audience ratings for the naval battle between the Arpen Kingdom and the Haven Empire was 39.2%.

The reactions on the bulletin board was also explosive.

-Title: Let’s celebrate the victory of the Grass Porridge Cult.

Shall I eat a bowl of porridge?

-Title: I’m a student with a part time job at chicken store.

Today I seem to have fried 500 chickens....

-Title: I also have a part time job at a chicken store.

Currently there are 200 deliver orders. If someone orders now then won’t it take 5 hours to deliver?

-Title: Honestly, I belong to the Hermes Guild.

This was inevitable once we captured the Lasalle Kingdom. The ending was bad. But why was it so exciting?



Geomchi, the instructors and trainees had started the Martial

Artist Master Quest and was already up to the 7th part.

“The content of this quest is complicated. We should just be able to kill everything. I can’t understand it at all.”

“Tell me about it. Just cut their necks, Teacher-nim.”

Hit and kill, burn and kill, tread on them and kill. A martial artist utilized various weapons and their body to destroy the enemy. Many people came to do the Master Quest so group quests also occurred.

-Bandits of Bowl Mountains

After the death of the King of Dale Kingdom, bandits have accumulated in the Bowl Mountains.

They consisted a force made up of knights and infantry and dealt considerable damage to nearby cities.

Get rid of the bandits in the Bowl Mountains.

Difficulty: Martial Artist Master Quest.

Quest Restrictions: Weapons Mastery Advanced Level 7. A party of 12 people can be composed.

The Martial Artist Master Quests weren't just fighting a variety of enemies.

Geomchi-5 had told them an approximate summary so Geomchi, the instructors and trainees could easily advance.

“It is convenient to be able to eat and fight.”

“As expected, it feels better using my body than my head.”

“Our class was a really good choice. We don't have to be stifled.”

“People working in large corporations or public officials are really pitiful. So what if they have a high, stable salary. They've never chased a wild boar with their bare hands.”

It made Geomchi-2 remember his childhood.

His friends in elementary school used a computer and attended a cramming academy. But he practiced breaking a bottle with his bare hands. During school, physical education lessons was where he felt most comfortable.

His chest would explode every time he kicked a ball. He only hesitated and shrank back when it came to English, mathematics and science. These days he became depressed just seeing a blackboard.

“These days are tumultuous. Enemies have invaded the Arpen Kingdom that the maknae (youngest) rule.”

“Yes, Teacher-nim.”

“They are the Hermes Guild.”

The news of the northern war was a huge topic so even Geomchi, the instructors and trainees had heard about it.

‘It became urgent quickly.’

They wanted to quickly rush back to the Arpen Kingdom. The Geomchis were the most popular with women after a big battle. It was a feeling caused when they threw everything into battle. They couldn’t forget the exhilarating feeling of when they defeated Barkhan and the Immortal Legion.

‘I don’t have anything else. I need to catch at least 1 dragon to marry someone.’

‘If I master Weapons Mastery, can I get a girlfriend? Do I have to reach level 600?’

They didn’t have any solutions in life except for becoming stronger. Even though Geomchi and Geomchi-2 had girlfriends, they were still interested in the war in the Arpen Kingdom. This was a good chance to boast of their strength in front of their girlfriends.

“Hum hum, what a disgrace. In the meantime, he has been fighting haphazardly. Are we really not going to help Weed?”

“No. This time should be fine. The death penalty is a minor thing compared to being called a master.”

“The maknae is too civil.”

“Tell me about it. He shouldn’t try to settle this alone. If there are such numbers then he should fight with other people.”

“Life wouldn’t be fascinating without internal discord.”

The Geomchis wanted to race to the north. In fact, there was a simple reason why Weed hadn’t called the Geomchis. His eyes could see the situation.

It was also the same reason why he didn’t rally them for Roderick’s Labyrinth.

-They are stronger than us. However, we can’t show weakness.

-I understand, Teacher-nim!

-We need to protect the priests of the Freya Church. Charge!

-Wahhhh!

They would eagerly run up to the demon soldiers and be destroyed completely! The demons strength and resistance to general combat professions was a problem but their inability to be commanded was fatal.

The Geomchis also stood out in a war.

-We are fighting against Barkhan, the Immortal Legion and the Bone Dragon.

-Wahhhh!

As soon as they noticed the Haven Empire's Army, the Geomchis charged.

-Magician units, archer units! Aim!

-Aiming is complete.

-Shoot when they approach.

-They're running in a straight line.

-Concentrate your attacks!

Sususung! Kwa kwa kwa kwang! Peng! Kuaaang!

The Geomchis were wiped out! They were strong but the possibility of them being defeated was too big. In addition, he had to leave really delicious dishes to the end.

“My whole body is itchy. We shouldn’t allow stress to build up.... Hey everyone.”

“Yes, Teacher-nim.”

“Let’s go do the quest. Geomchi-3, what is the contents of the next one?”

“Then...there have recently been incidents of residents missing and we should investigate the reason....”

“Speak simply.”

“We should go to a lair and kill everyone.”

“Let’s go!”



Rensullot led the Haven Empire’s military along Porus River.

“From here on out, it is the northern continent. We will occupy, plunder and destroy this area.”

“Waaaah!”

The morale of the Haven Empire’s army was very high. They were elite troops who went through a harsh training so their morale didn’t fall from a long march. The high morale meant they could fight bravely.

Originally other guilds wouldn’t permit them to move to the north but this was a time of political strife. With the other forces of the Haven Empire opening the way, the expedition marched to the north.

Their enemies noticed that they were moving but the sudden political strife meant they couldn’t do anything. Their enemies calculated that the Hermes Guild’s power would weaken if there was an expedition to the north so they eagerly allowed it.

Rensullot felt a deep emotion as he stepped in the north.

‘I will destroy the northern cities and rebuild them as the Haven Empire.’

The knights of the Haven Empire would accept the extensive land.

‘If Weed is destroyed....’

Then news of the naval battle was conveyed. Troops had been destroyed at sea before they could step on the ground so he had to drastically modify their strategy.

The Hermes Guild had decided to advance on the east and south side to simultaneously capture the Arpen Kingdom. Even if Weed stopped one side, the other army would burn and destroy Morata.

The city was the symbol of the Arpen Kingdom so destroying it would be a damage difficult to recover from. The north would receive a setback of 1 or 2 years.

Their strategy was to march two armies through the Arpen Kingdom and annihilate the military led by Weed. If the military was wiped out then peace would become unstable and monsters would propagate. The Arpen Kingdom would receive long term damage and become extinct.

Of course, it would only be a ruin until the Haven Empire's army took over. They estimated Weed highly and used diversionary tactics but now the landing unit couldn't help them.

‘However, the Haven Empire's army is still invincible. The Arpen Kingdom can't compare to us. The necromancers can also exert their full ability so it is possible to win.’

The disadvantage of a necromancer was that their physical abilities were far inferior. Rensullot's knights could use a barrier of Death Knights or zombies to thrust at Weed.

The NPCs included in the expeditionary force consisted only of the most elite troops.

“This is an order from the guild. We will be waiting for additional supplies from an archer unit.”

“We’ve brought plenty so battle supplies aren’t necessary.”

“This is a direct command from the leaders. It needs to be done in order to win the war.”

“Understood.”

The Hermes Guild fully mobilized their merchants and gave the expedition additional arrows and magic equipment. The users of the Arpen Kingdom had formed the Grass Porridge Cult so the needed to prepare thoroughly.

They stayed 3 days to receive the supplies before moving again. The expedition was moving away from home so there was some homesickness and lowering of morale, but the damage wasn’t big.

“Scouts.”

“Yes.”

“Confirm the terrain in front of us.”

“We are going.”

Rensullot sent out scouts to search every corner whenever there was a suspicious terrain like mountains, canyons or forests. Weed could set up traps anywhere so this was an instruction from the guild. It was natural for their marching speed to become slow.

Rensullot had come this far so the delay angered him.

“I don’t know why we’re doing this when our forces are overwhelming.”

After moving as slow as a turtle, the Northern Expedition force finally arrived at the Rupoi Plains. From here on out, it was the territory of the Arpen Kingdom.

Chapter 2: War On Land

“Kuhuhuhut.”

Pale looked wickedly while looking around the plains. He had followed behind Weed and the Geomchis for a long time. In the face of such aggressive battles, his skills had no choice but to progress rapidly.

He steadily trained his basic skills and mastered the Quick Fire and Penetration Arrow. He rose to become part of the top 100 archers on the entire continent.

“Kuhuhu, a monster is there.”

Pale confidently spotted a monster 1.5 km away from where he was. An archer's eyes could accurately see into the distance.

“This distance...and considering the wind direction...”

Pale carefully shot his arrow. The arrow flew in the wind and precisely hit the monster in the distance.

Kkuek!

The monster looked around restlessly but couldn't find the person who shot the arrow. Pale continued shooting and hunting

the monster.

An archer could really wreck a lot of havoc on a level place like the plains. Of course, it was very annoying walking to find the items that the monsters dropped.

“Kekekek, a human.”

A monster approached on the plains.

“Earth Penetration!”

Pale fired an arrow into the ground. The arrow disappeared into the ground and emerged underneath the monster, piercing its feet. A skill that used the penetration and high angled firing skill that he mastered! Once the arrow was shot into the ground, the monster’s movement speed slowed and it couldn’t avoid any further hits.

“Huhuhu, I will be welcomed if I go to the guild now.”

Pale was sure of himself. Now was the time for compensation after shooting arrows since the beginning.

“Now I’m living on my own. I can become a little arrogant. I also have to gain some tremendous achievements in this war. Everyone will be surprised!”

Pale shouted in a loud voice! Then he received a whisper from Surka.

-Oppa, I'm lacking money to buy gloves. Can you lend it to me?

-Where are you?

-Morata.

-It is a little far from here...I'll bring it now.

-Thank you. I'll be sure to pay it back later.

So far Surka had already borrowed 9,000 gold.

“Just wait there, I will come quickly.”

Pale moved busily in the direction of Morata. After a while, he received a whisper from Maylon.

-I need to prepare for today's broadcasts so I will be late this evening.

-Take your time. I will go first and wait. I will always wait for my girlfriend.

Romuna also whispered him.

-Do you have any mana stones?

-I've set aside 3 to make magic arrows.

-Then can you give me a few

-Where are you?

-Palles Village.

-Right now I'm heading to Morata....

-Come quickly.

-I understand. Then I will come straight away after Morata.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

As soon as they heard the Haven Empire's army had reached Rupoi Plains, the Grass Porridge Cult started to march there.

“Vanguard Toadstool Porridge unit!”

“Chicken Porridge unit and Ginseng Porridge unit will give support!”

There were too many users so they marched towards the Rupoi Plains from 12 directions. The scene was televised through the broadcasting stations and the viewers could hardly believe their eyes. The hills were packed with users crossing them. And they kept on coming and coming. An endless procession was moving towards the plains.

The commentators introduced that this was an unprecedented number in the history of wars on the Versailles Continent.

“Now we will change to this video. As a reminder, viewers please prepare your heart before watching it.”

The television screen changed to a sky view that looked down on the plains and hills. Users were swarming towards the Rupoi Plains! There was a huge variety of species including human, dwarves, elves, barbarians and orcs.

Rensullot had received news that the users in the north were gathering so he prepared for battle atop a hill where the terrain was profitable.

“I’ve expected this to some degree. We will fight and win.”

The elites of the Haven Empire didn’t feel swayed at all. The knights and soldiers could be called repeated combat veterans. It was very common for regular soldiers who reached a high level to be promoted to a knight.

“We don’t have to worry no matter how many of them there are. Are they scary?”

“Not all up!”

The knights answered gallantly.

“Just step on them and kill them. Even if there are a lot of them, we don’t need to worry once the battle starts. If we just kill and kill then we will win like always. A vast amount of loot and honour is waiting for us. Archers prepared for a barrage while the magicians should meditate and rest.”

Rensullot decided to fight the enemy on Rupoi Plains. If he was in a hurry then he would go to the high peaks where defence was easier. However, there was a possibility of suffering a devastating blow from a disaster Weed could cause on areas with a slight slope.

Having a river flowing behind his back was like asking for a disaster. But the standards of the norther users was low so he was confident of success when fighting against them. It would be a one-sided slaughter.

“They are bravely jumping out at us. But they will soon learn of their powerlessness and won’t bare their teeth at us again. This time will be no different.”

“Kuwak!”

The morale of the Haven Empire's army was at its peak. And a few groups of the Grass Porridge Cult appeared.

"Toadstool Porridge, Chicken Porridge and the Ginseng Porridge units!

"Charge!"

"Forward!"

Bbuuuuh!

A horn sound rang out and the users once forward.

"No, what is this?"

"There is no formation and aren't they just running forward?"

"This fight isn't even the same as fighting goblins and monsters."

The Hermes Guild was filled with incredulity at the sight in front of them. Their levels and equipment couldn't even be compared yet they were doing at head on assault!

"Wait until they come into range."

Rensullot shook his head as he saw the enemies. Not only were they blindly charging ahead, some of them didn't even hold shields which was an important equipment in a war. Furthermore, they were become the prey of arrows once they came in range.

“Start to fire!”

The archers shot their arrows. The sky above the heads of the Grass Porridge Cult was filled with arrows.

“Ugh!”

“I can't do anything else now that I'm dying....”

“Keep running. Put those guys away!”

“Don't back down! We are the Toadstool Porridge unit. The vanguard unit of the Grass Porridge Cult!”

Their level was low and they weren't equipped with proper protective gear so the users died from the arrows. The original assault troops normally had the best armour and manoeuvrability but the Toadstool Porridge unit members hit by the arrows instantly died.

-An arrow has penetrated the body.

Armour didn't play a role.

Your health has decreased and you have died.

They couldn't even get close to the troops of the Haven Empire before dying.

"The magic has been prepared."

"Wipe out those guys. Fire Rain!"

"Thunder Ground!"

Wide area magic spells were cast in the area of the assault troops. Fire rained down from the sky while thunderbolts struck from the ground. It was a catastrophe that kill hundreds of people every second.

"Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!"

Yet the users continued to charge forward!

"These crazy people."

Rensullot and the Hermes Guild thought with amazement.

"No, are they really coming here without any protective measures prepared?"

“They are just committing suicide on their own.”

“Continue attacking!”

3 units of the Grass Porridge Cult was wiped out without even swinging their swords. They charged the whole time and disappeared in vain.

Then the Bamboo Shoots Porridge unit appeared immediately afterwards! It was an independent unit but the number of users exceeded 450,000 people. It was a unit where beginners could join just 3 months after starting Royal Road. They did not fear death like the Toadstool Porridge unit. It was the same thing whether they lost to the kobolds or the Haven Empire!

“Let’s go!”

“Yes! For someone who was hit by the kobolds to die fighting against the Hermes Guild.....”

“Even if I receive 2 arrows, I will endure and give more damage to the enemies!”

“Bamboo Shoots Porridge unit, charge!”

The charge of novice users. The force was so impressive that a huge amount of dust was raised on the Rupoi Plains. Among them

were small horses or bulls. There were numerous examples of those who had never even hunted in a party.

“Shoot! Kill everyone.”

“Magicians focus on casting low range spells.”

The Haven Empire killed all those approaching. But they felt like something wasn't ordinary. While it was true that the enemy might be weak, there were too many of them. The Grass Porridge Cult's communication network was also crowded.

-Bamboo Shoots Porridge unit, the time is too drawn out. There are more troops waiting to charge!

-What is the next unit to attack? I can't give them any time to rest.

-The Beef Porridge unit has arrived early and is waiting.

-Red Bean Porridge unit. I'm getting a little tired of waiting so can I have one red bean porridge?

-The Pumpkin Porridge unit has 310,000 people participating. An atmosphere of waiting!

The never-ending human wave tactics! Even the orcs, barbarians and elves were spread out in the Grass Porridge Cult. The perilla

porridge that represented the orcs, the elves preferred mung bean porridge while the dwarves liked walnut porridge.

The troops that Rensullot led was to deal with the entire north, not just the Arpen Kingdom.

“Save your arrows and mana. They seem to be trying to exhaust us.”

Rensullot was worried about the goods being consumed.

He had heard the news through the Hermes Guild’s information network but the colossal number of users gathered couldn’t be imagined. They had already killed tens of thousands of people but he feared it was only the start.

“Bean Porridge! Bean Porridge!”

“Gather Jelly Porridge unit! We have a chance. Cavalry and infantry will go together for a pre-emptive assault!”

“Barley Porridge! It is time to fight for honour!”

“Cold Porridge unit, find a place to die! If our troops die from a magic spell then let us know the location in advance!”

“Gourd Porridge members? I saw them earlier but it has been 2 hours since then.”

“Hazelnut Porridge, Yellow Corvina Porridge, Beef Soup Porridge, it is your turn next!

Get ready and standby!”

“Magicians of the Lotus Seed Porridge, Yam Porridge, Rice Porridge, Chinese Quince Porridge, head to the east. Pour magic towards those attacking the other units. Don’t try to prepare any large magic. You will die before that.”

The Grass Porridge Cult members were constantly flocking to the Rupoi Plains. They didn’t have any tactics. Even if it was impossible to hit a rock with an egg, how fearful would it be later if all the eggs in the world was thrown at the rock.

“Damn, this is totally crazy. Knights and soldiers pull out your swords! We’ll take care of them in close combat!”

Rensullot decided not to rely on arrows and magic attacks anymore. He was prepared for a prolonged war.

“Knights, go and fight!”

“Hiyah!”

The knights ran down the hill towards the plains. They ignored the wide area skills used by the novice users. The attacks from the

Grass Porridge Cult were insignificant like bee stings so their attacks didn't affect the knights' health. The knights gathered a bunch of users together with their horses and cast their skills.

‘This is too easy.’

‘Should I kill a minimum of 1,000 people today?’

The soldiers of the Haven Empire moved forward in a formation. Thick shields covered their entire body as they wielded their swords.

The knights kept attacking the Grass Porridge Cult as they advanced onto the plains and the armed forces collapsed in front of the iron wall.

It seemed to be an endless scene of slaughter. The moment the situation was rapidly changing.

“Weed!”

“Weed is directing the battle from there.”

Weed riding a striking white horse appeared on the battlefield. The leader of the 4th Knights Division of the Northern Expeditionary Force, Dyural was worried about others snatching the achievement and gave a command.

“We are the closest. Charge at top speed!”

The 4th Knights Division rushed towards the place where Weed appeared. They ignored the users of the Grass Porridge Cult swung their swords or thrust their spear. The biggest targets in this war was Weed and Morata. The one who killed Weed would gain the highest achievements. The Hermes Guild couldn't miss the chance to obtain this large honour.

“He is strong. Be alert. Charge in and kill. Prepare to use the Thrust skill!”

The Knights Division got increasingly closer to Weed.

“Health might be consumed a little bit. But it doesn't matter if we get a little tired. The best thing we can do is charge. Thrust of Grief!”

“Thrust of Grief!”

Once the thrust skill was used, they were engulfed in a bloody haze and their speed became fearsome. This skill increased their thrust attack by 3 times. Other than a war, it was a skill that could be used against large monsters so it was painstakingly trained.

There was no guarantee that even armoured infantry could stop the knights. The armoured infantry collapsed underneath the violent collision.

A knight was an profession called the flower of the battlefield for a reason.

“Go!”

The tension of Dyural and the knights reached its peak

“Die Weed!”

“Your neck is mine.”

The knights charged and closed the distance without any interference from Weed.

“Deadly Spear!”

Weed who was riding the white horse died from Dyural’s first attack! He had expected the attack to be stopped and to receive a counterattack yet Weed had unexpectedly died.

-A defender of the Arpen Kingdom, the user Tofu has been killed.

A very insignificant amount of experience has been gained.

-Old Leather Pants with a Hole in it has been acquired.

-31 coins have been acquired.

-Number of enemies killed to date: 457.

Once the war ended, the compensation would be given according to a person's achievements. Additional Fame might also be given.

“Eh?”

Dyural and the knights following him were amazed. They had been filled with excitement that the large battle would be over. Then they noticed the surroundings.

“Throw the nets!”

Connected nets were thrown from the left and right.

“It was a trap. Cut it!”

“Cutting!”

The nets were made with steel and stitched buffalo leather by Drago who was challenging the Master Quest and his friends.

They had been so focused on fighting Weed that Dyural and the knights had been caught by the nets. The knights twisted their swords and cut the net but it wasn't easy. Their horses were also captured.

“Crush them quickly!”

The users scattered sharp, steel spikes on the ground. This was a product that Herman and his fellow blacksmiths created! This product was the natural enemy of horses.

Fuhihihing!

The speed of the knights' assault decreased as their horses entered the danger zone while others fell. But enemies were around them so it was difficult to turn around. The Black Sesame unit and Pumpkin Porridge unit rushed to the knights that collapsed.

“I'm really disgusted because I started in the Arpen Kingdom! I was so nervous that I had a nightmare. I can't even sleep late. Now you are trying to occupy the north?”

“It is good that you came. I'm been hunting hard and sharpening my knife while waiting for you to come!”

The Grass Porridge Cult members that started in the Central Continent slaughtered the knights isolated in the nets. They hid among the beginners and dispersed to get rid of the knights who fell.

“I am Weed!”

“Weed has appeared here!”

“No! Don’t be fooled! They are just pretending to be Weed!”

Tonight I’m also hungry.

If I have a midnight snack then I can go to sleep happy.

Yesterday I ate Sweet Potato Porridge.

Today I will drink Jujube Porridge.

Where is the Toadstool Porridge?

If you like meat then it must be Wild Boar Porridge.

The glory of the Grass Porridge Cult will be eternal.

“It is the real one this time. Charge!”

“No! It’s a trap!”

False Weeds ran everywhere and disturbed the army of the Haven Empire. The huge Grass Porridge Cult members isolated the forces of the Haven Empire. Moreover, the blacksmiths created plain armour similar to what Weed always wore so the Hermes Guild users were confused.

Even if the soldiers of the Haven Empire advanced, the area was soon occupied by the Grass Porridge Cult again. The flags of the Grass Porridge Cult were all over the place.

“For Morata!”

“Soo-jin, I love you!”

“Bards, continue playing songs even if we lose! Sing about our battle!”

The northern users were almost one-sidedly killed but the Haven Empire also felt slightly intimidated. There were too many enemies to get rid of.

“Come on, let’s use all our power.”

The respected adventurer Spenson wore a knight’s armour found in the forbidden zone Argoldia. An excavated item that reinforced the power of the priests and knights! Of course, it only applied to knights on the same side.

“Wah, my strength has increased by 15!”

“It is like I gained 7 levels. I feel so hungry that I could even eat a hyena!”

“Kill! It will be a jackpot if we kill those guys!”

The faith of the Grass Porridge Cult increased even further. They still couldn't fight one on one with the soldiers of the Haven Empire but they could drag it out. Winning wasn't important. They just kept charging forward! Everyone had come to the Rupoi Plains fully prepared to die. Their resolution crashed against the might of the Haven Empire's army.

“Kul kul kul.”

“Our turn has come.”

“I've been waiting for this.”

Magicians holding skeleton staffs suddenly appeared among the Grass Porridge Cult. Their professions were necromancers! Jeanne, Otem, Bohram, Harian, Gruzled and Varenna who fought with Weed against Barkhan's Immortal Legion had settled in Morata.

Necromancers were professions that could hunt monsters or clear dungeons alone so they could go anywhere. But they also needed a city as a base. The users who chose a necromancer profession gathered together to form a guild and improve their magic.

The necromancers of the Hermes Guild stayed in the slums near Aren Castle with Krobidyun as the representative. There were

more necromancers living in Morata. The average level of the necromancers living in Morata was also high.

Beginner necromancers would often make skeletons with missing body parts like rib bones.

“Kuhuhuk, this is a festival.”

“There are many corpses that can run wild.”

“We can do as we please. This is the strength of a necromancer.”

“Then in order to preserve good manners on the battlefield... Corpse Explosion!”

A chain explosion occurred at the place where the troops of the Haven Empire was. They had raised countless skeletons, dullahans and death knights. They harnessed the bodies lying all over the place. Corpse Explosion had a strong destructive power so quite a few troops in the Haven Empire suffered.

High level necromancers like Jeanne and Otem were different. The advanced form of Corpse Explosion had been used. The bones flew in different directions and caused a chain explosion. The bones of the corpses continued exploding. Dozens of soldiers from the Haven Empire were dying.

The necromancers that used all the limbs of a corpse were able to show off their power.

“Chwik, this time it is our turn!”

The orcs made a lot of noise as they chaotically appeared. They boasted fearful propagation speed and both females and males participated.

“Let’s go, chwi chi chit!”

“Orcs are for battle. Orcs are battles. Chwiit!”

The battlefield became more complicated with the emergence of the glaive wielding orcs. Unlike the orcs, there was a group of hunters secretly taking action.

“Die, you novices!”

The high level Hermes Guild users took action!

They didn’t mind at all even if they were surrounded by 100 people. They focused on slaughtering thousands of people but then their allies started falling.

“Poison Dagger!”

“Keheok!”

A dagger secretly pierced their backs! It was a level 410 thief called Jansun with the title of ‘Dirty Thieving Hands.’

“Sharpness Sword.”

Puk puk puk puk puk!

“Ugh, this cowardly bastard....”

“Goodbye, these are good items to have.”

They hid themselves among the weak beginners to obscure them from the eyes of the high level users! This was the best hunting ground for thieves and assassins. It wasn’t just the high level thieves. High levelled knights, warriors, magicians and archers were also mixed in with the Grass Porridge Cult.

“It is time to change my armour...armour from the Hermes Guild should be worn.”

“The cost of tuition is rising so I’m thankful I came to the north.”

The Dark Gamers couldn’t miss an opportunity like that. They could gain loot, fame and achievements if they killed the soldiers and knights of the Haven Empire. They were able to blend in quietly with the units of the Grass Porridge Cult. The users of the Hermes Guild that came out individually was too great of a prey.

“Reduce the enemies using area magic.”

“Archers don’t worry about arrows and just shoot!”

The priests, archers and mages of the Haven Empire were on the opposite side of the river but that didn’t mean they were safe. Users were crossing the river by riding rafts. They were the Red Snapper Porridge unit and the Spanish Mackerel Porridge unit!

Along with the users crowding the river, there was a lifeform with a thick torso crawling on all fours. The large alligator that swallowed the priests of the Haven Empire and entered the river was Nile.



“Well, now it is time to fight.”

Weed personally prepared a lot for the sake of this battle. He had mobilized the military of the Arpen Kingdom as well as his sculptural lifeforms. He had been prepared to use Sculpture Resurrection but that wasn’t necessary since the Grass Porridge Cult flocked in such huge numbers.

“Gernika.”

“Uha!”

“Don’t yell. I can hear you. Vindex.”

“At your command. Who should I cut?”

“Eltin.”

“Who should I skewer with arrows?”

The wonderful personality education of his subordinates! The enemy had invaded the north so the atmosphere of the sculptural lifeforms was also serious.

“Countryside Snake.”

“Chwiririt!”

“Worm.”

“Kururung!”

“Nile.”

“He was hungry so he left first.”

There were many sculptural lifeforms standing by. There were also 47 sculptures including the ones from Jigolaths, the wyverns, Phoenix, Bingryong, Goldman, Yellowy etc. The sculptural

lifeforms could deal a devastating blow to the Haven Empire without him needing to use Sculptural Resurrection. Weed had originally planned to resurrect a charismatic leader that would lead the army and sculptural lifeforms.

“I guess I’ll have to do it.”

Right now the Rupoi Plains were surrounded by Grass Porridge users so it took a lot of time to enter.

“I guess my plan has changed. It went from defeating the enemy to not letting a single one get out alive.”

Weed didn’t hold a grudge against the Hermes Guild users and the NPC knights and soldiers of the Haven Empire. They came all the way to the north so Weed felt very strong emotions. He wanted the money and items that they had.

“I should make a sculpture while waiting.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Seo-yoon was completely dyed black from the blood. A berserker became stronger the more they fought so she cut through the soldiers of the Haven Empire on Rupoi Plains.

“Have strength!”

“Healing Hands!”

The Grass Porridge members around Seo-yoon supported her.

“I’ll block the magic attacks from the east side. Physical Shield!”

“A surprise attack! Where....”

The users from the north blocked some attacks heading to Seo-yoon and used their feeble healing magic on her.

The Haven Empire’s army on Rupoi Plains were villains they couldn’t co-exist with and were more disgusting than cockroaches. Meanwhile the colleagues fighting with them were considered heroes.

“Multiple Shot!”

Pale also participated in the war with his colleagues. He grabbed a spot on top of a hill and fired towards the enemies. He was thoroughly prepared as he brought 30 quivers.

“I’m sorry. This is going to hurt a little. Mountain Destroyer!”

Surka struck the abdomen of a knight. The effect of the technique crushed the armour and maximize the damage to the mana inside the body. The knights of the Haven Empire rode quickly on horseback while waiting to attack any enemies that fell

behind.

“A win! We can win!”

Every time a knight was killed, the Grass Porridge Cult was filled with hope.

Their death rate was overwhelming but the troops of the so-called invincible Haven Empire was slowly dwindling. The users in the north who received the news belatedly were still rushing to the battlefield.

It was a situation where high school students where bullying elementary school students only to have all the students in that school come running!

“We definitely have to get rid of that woman!”

Several knights leapt towards Seo-yoon. Her strength was far beyond normal so the 3rd Knights Division came out directly. The Grass Porridge members died immediately and Seo-yoon received the concentrated attacks from the knights.

“Fighting Spirit Sword!”

Chajajajang!

The knights twisted their swords and pushed her back. She was

holding up against a large number of strong knights! If it wasn't for the strong characteristics of a berserker and her battle experience then she would've collapsed already. In a moment of crisis, she could receive health from Weed through the wedding ring so she was enduring the offensive from the Haven Empire's knights.

Even the broadcasting stations reported live about her battle with the knights. The huge battle on Rupoi Plains was wonderful but it was rare to see a fight like the one between Seo-yoon and the knights.

“Who is that female warrior fighting in the north?”

“She seems to be a user who adventured with Weed in the Jigolaths.”

“She is as strong as expected for a colleague of Weed.”

“She is attacking fiercely against the Hermes Guild.”

The audience ratings had already beaten the previous record. Knights riding by on horseback struck downwards with their swords. It was possible to watch such an intense battle.

This was also the first time so many users were gathered on the battlefield. A third of the total users in the north had come to Rupoi Plains.

The fight between Seo-yoon and the knights continued to become more exciting. She persistently struck back by killing 4 people and dropping 8 knights down from their horses.

“Kill her!”

The Haven Empire’s knights unleashed a wave of attacks towards Seo-yoon.

“How? That person, she will soon die!”

“Let’s go quickly!”

“Priests please use your healing magic!”

“That woman has a high level so she needs to live! This is the place. Please!”

The users of the Grass Porridge Cult tried to help but they were incapable with their insignificant power.

-Durability has reached 0 and the item has disappeared.

Seo-yoon’s armour and helmet was okay but the durability of her mask fell, causing it to disappear completely. Her face appeared the moment the mask broke.

There was silence as time seemed to stop for a moment. The knights facing the female who fought fiercely also stopped moving. Men watching the broadcast from the home dropped the chicken legs they were holding from the shock! And the users of the Grass Porridge Cult could hardly believe their eyes.

“Goddess....”

“The Goddess!”

Morata’s Ice Beauty statue! The existence that had been designated as the number 1 treasure by the Grass Porridge Cult had appeared.

“The Goddess appeared!”

“Ohhhh!”

“It is a miracle! There really is a god.”

“An appearance like that....”

The incarnation of a goddess poured new energy into the tired Grass Porridge members.

“The Goddess is with us!”

“Defend the Goddess!”

“Martyrdom! Martyrdom! Martyrdom! Martyrdom!”

Chapter 3: Battle On Yellowy

The assassin challenging the Master Quest was also present at Rupoi Plains.

“I need to assassinate 100 people that are over level 300...it will be easy.”

The assassin mixed in with the Grass Porridge Cult like the Dark Gamers. The knights were really good prey if his attacks were successful. He determined the location of gaps in armour in advance and accurately stabbed with cursed daggers.

They had a lot of health but their movements slowed and they eventually died. As assassin’s poison was something impossible to deal with if there wasn’t a priest there. In such a confusing fight, it was impossible to be treated by priests.

After the assassination succeeded, the assassin would mix in with the users again. His disguise skill and the dark clothes meant he easily hid among the users.



“Well, I have decided to settle in the north so.... The Arpen Kingdom is the only one who will take us.”

“I have a personal relationship so I will fight for Weed.”

The Crimson Wings Guild.

They declined in a spectacular way so they couldn't live on the Central Continent anymore. They woke up King Belsos' curse and stabbed the Cold Roses Guild in the back when they were about to succeed against the Bone Dragon. After they died, they quietly lived in the north and decided to fight when the Haven Empire invaded.

“We will only follow King Weed....”

“Well, it will also be interesting to fight against the Hermes Guild.”

It wasn't just the Crimson Wings Guild. Numerous guilds that settled in the Arpen Kingdom or the north entered the war.

“How dare they attacked the land that we raised!”

“Those Hermes pigs are unconscionable.”

Numerous forces from the north and the Grass Porridge Cult endlessly charged against the Haven Empire's troops.

Red Bean Porridge, Mung Bean Porridge, Glutinous Porridge, Foxtail Millet Porridge, Cool Porridge, Black Sesame Porridge, Rice and Bean Porridge, Leek Porridge, Sprout Porridge, Pumpkin

Porridge, White Rice Porridge, Wheat Porridge, Octopus Porridge, Crab Porridge, Crucian Carp Porridge, Oyster Porridge, Yellow Corvina Porridge, Pine Nut Porridge, Loach Porridge, Chestnut Porridge, Acorn Porridge, Walnut Porridge, Plum Porridge, Sweet Potato Porridge, Potato Porridge, Bamboo Leaf Porridge, Sesame Porridge, Egg Porridge, Sweet Red Bean Porridge, Beef Porridge and the Cow Milk Porridge units!

There was an endless sea of users on the Rupoi Plains. And the Hermes Guild was a secluded island in the middle!

“T-this is....”

“The arrows are running out!”

“Archers who still have mana left should run around the battlefield collecting arrows.”

“Save your mana! Protect the magicians!”

The elite troops of the Haven Empire had come to occupy the north. The power of the military was terrible and each unit balanced. But they couldn't do anything against the vast number of northern users and died. No matter how many Grass Porridge members were killed over time, it didn't feel like they had decreased at all.

“Fight for the hero of the continent, His Majesty the King of the Arpen Kingdom!”

“I am free knight Duban from Lolus Village. I will fight for glory until the day my life ends!”

“Free Knight Ros! I will dedicate my body to justice.”

Vast amount of free knights joined as the Haven Empire invaded the Arpen Kingdom. Weed was called the ‘Hero who Saved the Continent’ so the free knights came running on their horses.

“The last knights of Niflheim! We will fight for the new king in order to bring back the glory of the Niflheim Empire!”

The Vent Castle knights also appeared in order to oppose the Haven Empire.

“Charge!”

“At full speed!”

The Vent Castle knights charged at the Haven Empire’s knights. The knights had a similar level of power. The Hermes Guild invested a significant amount into their knights but Vent Castle was constantly fighting against monsters.

The knights belonging to the Hermes Guild generally had a higher level but they were confused and couldn’t unleash their full power. No matter how hard they fought, it never ended because

reinforcements for the north kept on showing up.

The knights engaged in a close fight with many of them injured but the result for both sides was completely different.

The northern users thoroughly looked after the Vent Castle knights that fell.

“Are you hurt? Priest-nim, over here!”

“Healing Hands!”

They were immediately treated with holy magic and were hidden from the Haven Empire knights.

On the other hand, they were merciless towards the Haven Empire knights that collapsed on the ground.

“Hey, step on them!”

“Miner-nim, over here! Bring your pickaxe!”

“Cover them with a net so they can’t get up!”

The northern users covered them like a swarm of ants. Some Haven Empire knights still managed to escape in spite of such attacks but the number of Grass Porridge members kept growing.

The level 50 or lower troops appeared early in order to waste the arrows and mana. Now the intermediate level 200 troops were showing up! Their armour, swords, elementals, magic and arrows were at a much higher standard.

The Hermes Guild normally didn't care about level 200 users.

“Everyone is removed from the hunting grounds.”

“The dungeons are closed so you can't receive quests. If a user wants to do quests then you need to pay.

The users were forced to only perform quests that benefited the Haven Empire. They were no different from slaves.

But the level 200 users of the Arpen Kingdom were firmly united. They were users who had grown up in Morata since the early stages so their loyalty was special. Even if Weed cooked Sand Porridge, Fallen Leave Porridge or Stone Porridge, they were so brainwashed that they would still be grateful.

“Separate the enemies and take care of the priests.”

“Spread out and rush towards the supply unit!”

The level 200 users might be looked down on by the Hermes Guild but they knew how to use tactics. They had one advantage

over the Haven Empire. They would have faith even if someone died. They happily risked death to kill the Haven Empire troops.

“Commander-nim, we seem to be in trouble.”

“We should consider retreating before it is too late.”

The users of the Hermes Guild advised Rensullot. They hadn't been defeated yet but the situation was getting worse.

“The archers will soon become unnecessary.”

“The armour is okay but the weapons are in a bad state from being wielded too much. The beginners will pick up any swords dropped and use them.”

“The soldiers need a break because their vitality is falling.”

The number of Grass Porridge members that the Haven Empire killed so far easily surpassed 1 million. Yet they were the side struggling and getting tired.

“We can still fight. Defend the supplies location. Kill all enemies that arrive there.”

Rensullot was humiliated. He had been happy to come to the north to fight Weed the God of War. He wanted a great fight that would show his resourcefulness and bravery. He wanted to show

off his strength as tactician in this battle.

Yet he never imagined such cruel tactics that would make him need to retreat as soon as he stepped in the Arpen Kingdom. Thus he was furious. No matter how many they killed, the reinforcements kept on coming.

“Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!”

“We have entered this war as the Cave Fish Porridge.”

“A magic attack from the east! Take care to avoid it.”

“Arrows are flying!”

Rensullot listened to the bustle of the battlefield. Many were dying yet the morale of the northern users was still high.

“They’re not fighting to win. Instead they are going to die fighting. They clearly understand that they’re going to die but they still came to fight. When thinking about the profits, how can they do such a thing?”

The faith of the Grass Porridge Cult! Only players who lived in Morata would understand their feelings.

-There is nowhere on the continent as good as Morata.

-We have to protect Morata with our own hands.

-Morata grew from ruins. I grew bigger along with the city.

-It might be hard but we have to protect it.

-If I die then I can just begin again in the city.

The users were willing to die to protect Morata and the Arpen Kingdom. No one dragged them to the Rupoi Plains. They came running willingly.

And then a huge outcry suddenly occurred!

“Waaaaaah!”

“Hooray!”

“Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!”

The users were crying out on the Rupoi Plains.

A huge ice dragon was flying above their heads with the sun behind it. One of the typical lifeforms in the Arpen Kingdom, Bingryong! And Weed was standing on Bingryong’s head.

He judged that the Haven Empire was tired and that it was time

to collect his money. The wyverns, Phoenix and other sculptural lifeforms were present as well but that was only part of the surprise. An enormous number of avians from Lavias the Sky Island had come with Weed.

It was like Rensullot's troops had been fighting against children only for the scale to suddenly become larger!

“What on earth?”

“How many are there?”

“It really isn't a joke.”

“He is truly Weed the God of War.”

“The playing field is really different.”

The Grass Porridge Cult looked up at the avians from Lavias covering the sky.

The rancid smell that reaches the sky.

This rank smell seems to come from my hair.

I'm worried about washing my blanket on days when it rains.

The avians from Lavias looked doubtful at the strange song. However Weed's song just continued.

Doing chores every day.

Cooking, cleaning, washing and dishwashing.

Guests aren't welcome.

There is no rice to give you.

Also no fruits, sweets and drinks.

The gas and electricity charges in this world keeps on increasing.

"He is indeed different."

"It is common words but they express a mysterious and deep anguish."

Quite a few users thought there was some profound secret hidden in Weed's song. Chaos fell as Weed emerged singing his lyrics.

"Create a new formation!"

"A complete defence formation!"

“Gather!”

The army of the Haven Empire was frantic. They had been split apart by the Grass Porridge members but now they had to build a complete defence formation. Because a real battle would occur after Weed showed up.

They were very frightened he would cause a disaster or command undead troops. Furthermore, this sudden emergence was like being hit in the back of the head. Various tactics were prepared to deal with Weed but that was useless when he suddenly appeared in the sky.

“Prepare for an all-out attack and be careful not to be hit by the avians.”

The archers on the battlefield aimed arrows at the sky. In addition, the magicians prepared their top level attack spells. The knights and soldiers were prepared for attacks from the sky. And the faces of the Hermes Guild members turned pale.

“How are there so many of them?”

“No matter how furiously we fight, won’t we just end up dying?”

The vast number of knights and soldiers on the plains had been reduced by 1/3rd. The Hermes Guild users didn’t feel it fully but the NPC subordinates had been stepped on by the Grass Porridge

Cult, the Dark Gamers and the high level users in the north.

Weed didn't attack immediately when he appeared.

‘An incredibly powerful species has joined.....’

‘We need to beat the Grass Porridge Cult, Weed and his minions as well.’

The Hermes Guild felt sick in their hearts as they looked up while waiting for Weed to make his move.

Weed riding Bingryong in the sky was a big burden. Weed the God of War was a massive weight on their shoulders.

‘This isn't it. This approach.’

Rensullot had thought of various tactics to fight Weed in different terrains like plains, valleys, canyons, ridges or fortresses. The Haven Empire's army had enough power to beat the regular forces of the Arpen Kingdom and the sculptural lifeforms.

But the beginner and high level users in the north acted to block Rensullot's troops. There was a huge difference in power so the Haven Empire could repel their attacks.

In fact, the Hermes Guild had expected the users of the Arpen Kingdom to participate but they hadn't thought there would be

this many people.

The Grass Porridge Cult was ready to go running once Weed gave an order.

Weed decided to give a light greeting.

“There aren’t any problems but that doesn’t necessarily mean we’ll win...now that we’re all gathered, I should at least be courteous.”

He took out a nature sculpture that was a Masterpiece!

<Sucking Swamp>

“This is okay now.”

He had created the sculpture Wet Land for a final secret sculpting technique. Since then, he had used natural materials to create other nature sculptures.

Swamps and marshes were places of life but also death. The sculpture Weed took out was of a swamp that sucked many lives into it.

The sight was creepy enough to cause goose bumps! In particular, faces emerging from the swamp was full of hatred. He had carved it while thinking about Bardray and the loan sharks!

Weed was about to use a sculpting technique when he heard a shout from the ground.

“Listen King Weed of the Arpen Kingdom! I am the commander of the Haven Empire’s army to conquer the north!”

Rensullot was a very famous user so Weed had heard of him.

“A person is barking.”

Weed had no interest because he was about to cause a disaster.

“Disaster....”

“Strategy and tactics. Any great battle on the Versailles Continent involved those things.”

“But this kind of battle is also inconvenient. As the Commander of the Haven Empire, I formally challenge King Weed of the Arpen Kingdom. Man vs. man, a one on one confrontation between two people with big ambitions.”

Before a battle began, it used to be fashionable for a strong knight on both sides to come out and fight. Rensullot judged that the situation wasn’t good and asked for a fight between leaders.

“Master, should I blow them away?”

Bingryong snorted out a blast of cold air. The magicians could defend against it but the range of Ice Breath was very wide. They were weak and weary so many enemies would die while magicians would waste their mana.

Above all, Bingryong's Ice Breath had a high effect in a large scale war by freezing the land. Once the ground froze, charging would become difficult and this would undoubtedly worry the knights that the Haven Empire was so proud of.

Weed had no reason to consider Rensullot's proposal.

"Only a noble person would return a lost wallet with all the money in it."

A smile naturally formed on his face as he looked at Rensullot.

"As King Weed of the Arpen Kingdom, I express my sincere admiration for the courage of the person called Rensullot. The weight of honour makes it difficult to decline the challenge so I have to agree to this confrontation."

"Kyaaaak!"

"As expected from Weed-nim!"

"Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!"

There was an uproar on the ground. A few seconds ago, people had been laughing at Rensullot's challenge.

“He really is trying all types of things in a war.”

“Anyway, there is no reason to agree.”

“Those Hermes guys have no conscience.”

The war was already in their favour so there was no need for Weed to take risks. Even the users of the Haven Empire believed it was useless and that he wouldn't accept the confrontation.

Yet Weed had accepted the challenge so the atmosphere changed.

Surka hit the ground and said.

“Ah, this is ridiculous. What is he up to?”

Pale who was shooting a bow also murmured.

“This type of insidious, ulterior motive.....”

The morale of the Grass Porridge Cult fell slightly as they muttered.

“I smell something suspicious.”

However, the rest of the users were praising Weed. Mapan understood Weed’s heart to a certain degree.

“He covets Rensullot’s items!”

If the enemy was defeated in a challenge then the winner could obtain the items of the users who died. Rensullot was the commander appointed by the Hermes Guild so his appearance was the decisive reason for Weed changing his mind.



“The audience ratings?”

“It is continuing to climb.”

“Quickly put out the advertisements!”

The broadcasting stations quickly ran an ad after Weed appeared with the avians from Lavias.

The ratings were high so they had to show the advertisements. The audience might be angry but they could use the interlude to go to the toilet, prepare beer and squid, etc.

And the ratings ascended when Weed accepted Rensullot's challenge. Companies for fried chicken, pizza, pig feet etc. paid handsomely for advertisements during this prime time.

The writings on the bulletin boards were increasing like crazy.

“Weed seems to have made a reckless judgement. It is common sense that he doesn't need to accept that confrontation.”

The bulletin boards were full of people cursing that TV host.

–Do you want the broadcasting station to close?

–Host-nim, if you connect to Royal Road then come to the back alleys behind Bingryong Square.

–This isn't the only broadcasting station. I'm going to change the channel.

–I won't watch this station from now on.

The other broadcasting stations quickly changed their attitudes.

“Oh, he is indeed Weed! Although it is an extremely favourable situation, he still accepted the challenge. He seems to be putting on a great spectacle for the benefit of the viewers. Of course Weed will win.”

“Of course. He thought about the hearts of the viewers and decided to accept instead of ignoring it.”

“Indeed! We can really feel the dignity of Weed the God of War.”

-The hosts’ speaking ability seemed to increase every day.

-Initially they were insecure but now they are skilful. It took a while.

-The ability to grasp the military situation is excellent.

-CTS Media is a good broadcasting station.

-Big corporations are really different.



Rensullot and Weed decided to have the showdown on the ground in order to be fair.

“Back off.”

“Form a wide space!”

The Grass Porridge members and the Haven Empire’s army emptied a wide spot in the centre. The attention of both sides

focused as Rensullot came riding on a black horse.

‘I’m fighting against Weed the God of War.’

Rensullot’s heart was jumping with excitement. This would decide the outcome of the war so this was the most tense he had ever been.

‘I can win.’

He dreamt of a thrilling fight. The glossy black mane of his horse flowed as it snorted with excitement.

“Ummoooooooo!”

Weed was riding Yellowy. Yellowy had four muscular and resilient legs that didn’t have an equal! Yellowy was a specimen of the physical beauty of a cow. Any employees of a slaughterhouse would envy him riding Yellowy.

“A lot of beef will be sold once the battle ends.”

There were also promotions for accessories.

After Yellowy shot to fame in Royal Road, there was an official offer from the Cattle Association.

-I'd like Yellowy to appear on television as a model....

Weed met with the advertisers that evening.

“The modelling fee?”

“Well, we wanted to ask permission for something more difficult. There is a lot of love for the sculpture called Yellowy. It is natural that you would value your work as an artist. We understand. But if you would agree to a specific meat eating scene....”

“Marbled meat, meat around the spine, cow fillet, ribs...ask for anything you want. It is possible to bake, boil in a soup or eat it raw. But what is the modelling fee?”

If it was an appropriate amount then he would accept! The ads worked as Yellowy became a cannibal and ate the delicious parts of some of his kin.

The delicious taste of cow that could maintain health! The advertisements became popular and children toys of Yellowy were created, earning him a considerable amount of money every month. A suggestion also came in asking to use the wyverns as advertising models by eating some chicken.

“Yellowy, let's live happily. The wyverns and Yellowy, we are family.”

“Ummoooooo.”

Yellowy wagged his tail and dug at the ground.

“It is good to receive Master’s love. You are increasingly becoming nicer to me.”

“Yes. I care for you.... This battle, are you frightened?”

“A little bit. Ummooooooooo.”

“Yes, your body is valuable.... I won’t let your rib or oxtail be harmed so fight well.”

Rensullot was narrowing the distance. Weed took out the Daemon Sword.

“Let’s go, Rodus!”

Rensullot started to dash like the wind on the back of his horse.

“Yellow, let’s go!”

Weed also ran with Yellowy. They both charged forward for a head on clash. The distance was closing rapidly.

‘The direction of attack...right side? Or the left?’

The inside of Rensullot's head was complicated. He needed to make quick decisions and take action. He had challenged other knights before but he had never been this tense. The Daemon Sword looked like a toy in Weed's hands while Rensullot watched.

‘There is room to spare....’

Weed had no charging skill that could be used when riding a horse.

‘I have to use Thrust of Grief.’

Rensullot made a decision.

It was a charge skill that Bardray used a lot but Rensullot's proficiency was lower.

“Thrust of Grief!”

Rensullot shot forward like an arrow. The surrounding landscape passed at a terrible speed! A knight was considered the strongest occupation in the battlefield and this destructive power was the reason why.

Weed indifferently lifted the Daemon Sword in order to block Rensullot.

Chyaaaang!

Weed and Rensullot passed each other.

-The durability of the Daemon Sword has decreased by 12 due to the strength of grief.

The damage of the Daemon Sword has fallen by 9.

The impact to the body has decreased health by 4,390.

The message windows shone in front of Weed.

‘That was surprising.’

But that impact couldn’t compare to Rensullot’s.

-You have been overwhelmed in power.

The damage couldn’t be directly shown and the charge skill has failed.

Power has temporarily decreased by 11%.

-Durability of the Proctor Spear has decreased by 17%.

The tip of the spear has become dull and attack power decreased

by 21.

-You have been cut by the Daemon Sword.

Health has decreased by 1,399!

You have received the devil's curse!

“W-what is this? It makes no sense.”

Rensullot has used all his power in this skill so he was outraged. The charge basically doubled his power. It depended on the speed of the horse but he had rushed at top speed before so that wasn't the reason for the failure. But he was pushed back despite wearing heavy armour.

It was impossible for Rensullot to understand but Weed had used Sculptural Destruction to convert the Art stat to Strength. Naturally Weed had no hesitation. And the skill he used wasn't forbidden. The twinge on his conscience was really small so he quickly forgot about it.

‘When looking at it as a whole, we are roughly similar. I'm ahead in the Strength stat but he has slightly better equipment. And his thrust skill is good.’

He needed to win in an easy manner. Right now he was at war so he needed to show an overwhelming strength.

Weed used a skill after he wasn't pushed back by Rensullot's power.

“Radiant Sword!”

Eagles of light flew out from his sword towards Rensullot. Secret sword technique!

The utilization of his spear had fallen so Rensullot quickly grasped his sword. And he cut the eagles. While he was destroying the eagles of light, Weed quickly caught up to him.

Yellowy's physical strength and stamina was much better than a horse. And his charging power in short distances was beyond comparison! Yellowy was a cow built for war. Weed rode him frequently so Yellowy's level had already reached the mid-400's.

“Catching up this quickly....”

“Take this!”

Weed and Rensullot wielded their swords against each other while riding in the same direction.

“Heriam Fencing!”

“Imperial Chain Sword!”

Sparks flew as the effect of the skills exploded. It was like an image of a duel on horseback!

Despite that, it was Weed's side that gained the overwhelming benefit. Using Sculptural Destruction had increased his strength extensively. Rensullot failed to properly demonstrate his power in melee combat as Weed's Heriam Fencing continued to hit his body. He tried to use his skills but it was ineffective. Weed had a much higher understanding of the sword compared to Rensullot.

Rensullot took out a shield to block Heriam Fencing but continued to be hit. If he used wide area skills then Weed would be at a disadvantage. Yet after the first charge, Rensullot had used Imperial Chain Sword in a close combat fight.

“Uh, this sort of thing....”

Rensullot's face warped.

A knight was strong when charging but vulnerable to melee attacks like this. The power of his armour meant he was enduring but the demon's curse was piling up.

Moreover, Weed was obviously receiving less damage due to his armour. His sword skills were overwhelming.

‘And this hateful bull is the problem.’

Yellowy ran forward and Rensullot found himself hit by a sword again.

Kwaaaang!

Rensullot's black horse stumbled as Yellowy crashed into its side.

Despite a knight having high defence due to their heavy armour, they had rapid manoeuvrability due to their horse. Once they fell from their horse, they would be injured and receive a severe penalty in battle.

Every time Rensullot lost his balance, the Daemon Sword would continuously connect with him.

“Ummooooooooo!”

“Heriam Fencing!”

It was an exquisite combined attack that used Yellow and Weed's attack skills! It hadn't been a fair fight the moment he gave up riding on Bingryong in the sky. Sculptural Destruction and the presence of Yellowy was an absolute advantage!

A fine horse couldn't be compared to Yellowy.

“Kuwaaaaah!”

“Hooray for Weed-nim!”

“So cool!”

The Grass Porridge Cult members on the Rupoi Plains cheered.

The Haven Empire soldiers and users watching just kept quiet. Rensullot had led them to victory in many wars. He was at a disadvantage but the confrontation hadn't ended yet. The difficult opponent was Weed the God of War so they could only watch and hope.

‘At this rate I will lose.’

Rensullot felt uneasy. Sometimes his sword hit yet Weed wasn't damage at all. The message that popped up when the attack hit caused a large psychological impact.

-The opponent's steel like resilience means almost no damage has been given.

-The opponent's armour has taken away your good luck.

-The opponent's armour is showing a faint holy power.

The effect of a blessing has been invoked.

Damage from weapons made of iron has been reduced.

The defence of the armour has been enhanced.

Weed knew he was fighting against Rensullot who was a knight so he wore the Goddess' Knight Armour.

‘He was wearing an trash like armour in the Melbourne Mine... where did such a frightening armour come from?’

He had obtained information about Weed's information beforehand so he could prepare countermeasures but now Weed was overwhelming! Rensullot felt a great burden so he couldn't attack properly.

But Weed's situation wasn't as advantageous as it seemed. Sculptural Destruction could only increase the Agility and Strength stats. Those stats weren't weak but his health was very low in comparison.

If he didn't use Sculpture Transformation then the slightest mistake meant that he could die. He had run wildly when fighting against Bardray yet he had died in 2~3 attacks.

Rensullot's health and power was just as strong as the Royal Guards so he was an opponent that couldn't be disregarded.

“I need to avoid it.”

Rensullot also recognized Weed's skill in advance due to the information from the guild.

“Honourable Promise!”

He used a secret sword technique! Rensullot used a skill that tripled his battle ability by improving attack, defence and his physical ability. It was a technique that could protect a knight's pride. Rensullot wasn't a just person but he still had the pride of a knight.

“Chroma's sword technique!”

A unique sword technique that was used on horseback. Rensullot's mana surged every time he swung his sword.

Weed had no choice but to be hit.

-Armour has defended the attack.

Health has decreased by 3,419.

Rensullot swung his sword like crazy. It consumed vitality and mana so the skill couldn't be used for a long time.

“Yellowy, watch out for your ribeye!”

“Ummoooooooo!”

Yellowy ran with all his strength. His health was high and leather strong so he wouldn't die easily. Yellowy would run around wildly in a crisis but Rensullot chased after him.

Rensullot was fortunate that most of his attacks were reaching Weed. He had hoped for a prolonged battle but now time was urgent as he chased after Yellowy on horseback.

“Sword-cloning!”

Weed also used a secret sword technique.

-Sword-cloning has been used.

The skill effect has risen due to high luck and the blessing of the Goddess.

Twelve Weeds and Yellowys appeared. The effect of the skill also applied to Yellowy.

“Ummoooooooo!”

“Kuweeek!”

“Kwaaaaak!”

Rensullot was surrounded by cows and attacked by a storm of swords. Rensullot had used Chroma's sword technique but he couldn't stop all the attacks from the clones.

The fearful thing about Sword-cloning was that the real person and the clones both dealt damage.

Weed rode Yellowy and continuously struck. Rensullot's attacks were forced to disperse under Weed's offensive.

-You have received a critical hit.

-You have suffered another critical hit to the same area.

The defence of the armour has weakened.

It was difficult to have calm judgement while riding the horse and blocking the attacks. Each one of Weed's clones dealt huge damage to Rensullot's health.

“Sword Kaiser!”

One clone used a skill. He used all his mana in order to overpower Rensullot!

“Keheok!”

Rensullot fell from his horse. He rolled on the ground from the terrible damage to his health!

-You are in a state of confusion.

It is impossible to fight!

Falling off a horse during a confrontation almost always meant death.

The sky and earth swirled around him as Rensullot became confused. But he still moved his leg to try and raise his body. He hadn't died yet so he tried to remove the confusion so he could continue the fight.

However Weed soon returned on Yellowy. 6 clones joined their power and made Yellowy charge forward at a terrible speed.

“Faster! I will let you eat good herbs to become energetic.”

“Ummoooooooo!”

Yellowy's frenzied dash! Even if his mana was exhausted, his speed and weight wasn't an inferior attack.

Rensullot heard the dreadful sound of the land being kicked. His senses were still messed up so it seemed like dozens of Weeds and Yellowys approached. They were charging with their swords held high.

“I still haven’t shown my skills.....”

Rensullot lifted his sword.

Kwaaang!

Yellowy literally hit his head.

-You have received colossal damage that exceeds the limits of your defence.

After receiving the massive blow, Weed cut him with his sword.

-You have received a blow in a completely defenceless state.

Rensullot collapsed and couldn’t get up again. And a message surfaced in front of all the users on the plains!

-Rensullot the Commander of the Haven Empire’s Northern Expedition has died in a challenge.

Weed also received a message window.

Ddirring!

-The Commander of the enemy troops has been killed.

A great battle has been won.

-Your level has increased.

Fame has increased by 2,893.

Dignity has increased by 3.

The morale of the military has increased.

The courage of your subordinates has been stimulated.

The next hour will be the best time to fight.

The most important thing to Weed was the loot!

-The great horse, Hosren that can catch the wind has been acquired.

Riding Skill + 3

A great breakthrough ability.

Destructive power will increase by 86% when charging.

Dignity, Charm and Honour will increase by 35% when riding a horse.

-Armour of a Kallamore Knight Commander has been acquired.

-Armour of a Kallamore Knight Commander: Durability 109/165.
Defence 147.

An armour the Kallamore King directly requested from a dwarf of Thor. It was made especially for a bold knight.

It is possible to command knights and soldiers when wearing it.

Countless repairs have been carried out after many battles. It changed owners after the collapse of the Kallamore Kingdom.

Restrictions: Knights only.

Level 420.

Options: Knight skill +2

The power of charging skills will rise and speed will reduce when

breaking through armour.

Never get tired.

All stats increased by 24.

Honour, Authority, Dignity +40.

95% of regular arrows will bounce off.

Increased benefits and experience will be given when battling more than 3 times.

Loot!

-The Seven Jewels Studded Belt has been acquired.

-Seven Jewels Studded Belt: Durability 45/45. Defence 23.

A treasure of the Kallamore Kingdom! They are rare jewels that can store magic.

Restrictions: Level 410.

340 Wisdom required.

Options: Increase the damage of skills with elemental properties.

Magic resistance +21%

Magic Protection available.

1% mana absorption.

After the Kallamore Kingdom became extinct, Weed had obtained an armour and belt that belonged to it.

The other great thing about the Goddess' Knight Armour was that it gave good luck so the probability of obtained good items would increase.

Weed used Lion's Roar to yell his victory.

“Kuhuhihihit!”

Chapter 4: Winner Of Rupoi Plains

“Hooray King Weed!”

“Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!”The northern users shouted with joy.

On the other hand, the Hermes Guild members were devastated. If Rensullot won then they could endure or if it was a tie then they could withdraw safely. Yet he lost his health in only a short time!

It would’ve been better if he hadn’t asked for a challenge.

Due to the death of the Commander, the morale of the NPC knights and soldiers fell to the ground.

“We came to such a distant place.”

“As expected from King Weed of the Arpen Kingdom. It was a mistake to invade the Arpen Kingdom.”

“The north is a strong kingdom.”

“I want to go home to see my wife and children. But I suppose we can’t meet again.”

The Hermes Guild users rushed to stop it but the morale of the

soldiers was too low. Usually this didn't happen in long distance expeditions. But the opponent was Weed of the Arpen Kingdom whose adventures were renown so their morale fell faster. To make matters worse, the Commander had died so the NPC knights and soldiers didn't have the desire to fight.

“Attack!”

“Sweep away the Haven Empire!”

“Let's drink porridge and defeat them.”

The northern users continued attacking. The high level units of the Grass Porridge Cult that joined after Weed emerged also actively fought. Meanwhile Weed recovered a little of his mana and used Lion's Roar again.

“Strike the east side!”

The cry rang out through Rupoi Plains. The King killed the enemy commander and then issued a command so they felt an exhilarating pleasure through their body.

“As His Majesty commands!”

“Wahhhh!”

“Shield Units charge!”

The users moved smoothly between the military of the Arpen Kingdom. There was ample space for the cavalry and infantry to use their tactics.

“Make a formation. Destroy the enemy like a wedge!”

The military of the Arpen Kingdom changed formation and moved towards the Haven Empire’s army so tightly that there was no room for users. It was an efficient tactical formation for battles. There wasn’t any gaps no matter how hard a person looked.

“Let’s go!”

“Faster faster!”

“Go east.”

“Let’s run! Go!”

They surged like a violent wave.

When viewed from the perspective of Bingryong, it looked like a wave of humans rushing towards the army of the Haven Empire. A battle like this had occurred before Weed showed up but now it was proceeding at a much faster pace.

Earlier they thought a little bit but they didn’t bother with that

now. The end of the war was approaching so they just needed to fight. Users of every level just poured out.

“Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!”

“The Arpen Kingdom will last forever!”

“Martyrdom! Martyrdom! Martyrdom!”

The desperate cries were reminiscent of cults. Those who lived their lives would have many stresses build up. They were also worried about the tyranny of the prestigious guilds. Their stress was loosened in this war.

“The fine horse Hosren.”

Fuhihihing!

Hosren was a horse bound to its owner. As soon as Rensullot died, it had rubbed its head against Weed.

“Let’s see where I should go.”

Weed caught Hosren’s reins and mounted the horse. Of course, Yellowy was a good mount but it was dangerous when the attacks were concentrated.

“Run as fast as you can. Heriam Fencing!”

Hosren raced forward at its top speed! Weed moved his sword from side to side as he cruised through the battlefield. None of the soldiers of the Haven Empire were able to stop him.

“Uwaak!”

“King Weed of the Arpen Kingdom.”

“Run away quickly!”

In spite of the Hermes Guild users encouraging them, the soldiers didn't listen and ran away from Weed. The places around him opened up as Weed passed.

Hosren moved forward at a terrifying speed! Weed killed soldiers as he moved along the battlefield.

The Hermes Guild users tried to attack but they couldn't catch up to speed of the fine horse. Rensullot the commander was killed so the remaining users of the Hermes Guild gave orders to their respective units.

“Go catch Weed at any cost.”

“But there are too many supporters in the area.”

“It doesn’t matter. Attack!”

The archers and magicians concentrated their attacks on Weed!

“Moonlight Sculpting Blade!”

The arrows and magic were cut and redirected.

“Kuak!”

“To attack us....”

The redirected magic and arrows killed the soldiers of the Haven Empire in the surroundings. If Weed continued to receive damage then he would be in trouble but he had support.

The avians! They shot arrows from the sky and nosedived to annoy the archers and magicians.

“Weed, we will cut off your head this time.”

The leader of the 4th Knights Division Dyural came running towards Weed. Troops were fighting in every direction but there were still many users from the Arpen Kingdom.

“I surrender.”

“I will throw down my weapon so please spare my life.”

Moreover, the morale of the Haven Empire’s soldiers and knights fell after the death of their commander so some even surrendered. Dyural decided that if they were going to lose anyway then he would kill Weed first.

“Pave the way! Don’t hesitate and kill all the supporters blocking the way!”

Dyural and the knights of the 4th division ignored all enemies and just ran while staring at Weed. They even cut the knights and soldiers of the Haven Empire in order to break through.

But Seo-yoon ran and blocked their way. She had already taken out a spare mask and covered her face. Her sword and armour were completely dyed red and right now she was exerting the maximum power of a berserker!

“How valuable.”

Now Weed could afford to fight against Dyural and his knights. It was possible to fight nicely while riding on Hosren. It was possible to pursue the enemy and attack.

Weed’s ability to escape was excellent! But if he was ever in danger then the worried Seo-yoon would come running forward.

“Moonlight Sculpting Blade!”

Weed's horse moved to a target and light scattered everywhere from his sword. The troops of the Haven Empire gradually collapsed.

Bingryong, Phoenix and the wyverns flew around in the sky attacking. The other sculptural lifeforms joined the Arpen Kingdom's army while the Grass Porridge Cult and northern users were everywhere.

Every now and then, Weed would use Lion's Roar to give simple commands.

“Stick to the enemy!”

The systematic strategies were profitable and they were now certain to win. Everyone had gathered to protect the north so they were motivated by that power.

Ddirring!

-Well Smelted Spear has been acquired.

-Well Smelted Spear: Durability 55/60. Attack 43

A spear made of steel.

A spear mass produced by the Haven Empire.

The weight is inconvenient but it is effective for stopping cavalry troops. It can be handled easily with a little practice.

Restrictions: Level 80. Strength 120.

Options: When dealing with cavalry troops, damage +200%.

Weed did not hide from the soldiers and knights. Most of the enemies were heading towards him.

“His Majesty is in danger!”

“He is surrounded by them!”

The high level northern users came to support Weed and the Dark Gamers didn't miss this opportunity either! The Haven Empire's army had become dull after losing their commander so they were good prey.

The speed of their collapse increased as time passed. The complete defeat of the Haven Empire's military that had reigned invincible on the Versailles Continent! There was an explosive reaction from the audience watching the broadcasting stations.

-So cool.

-Ah, I knew it would be like this.

-The taste of victory.

-The tension after fighting with my girlfriend has been completely released by watching the television.

The ratings once again reached a high. The defeat of the Haven Empire was enjoyable but the sight of the war was also overwhelmingly fascinating.

The offensive of the northern users and avians from Lavias poured down on the Haven Empire. The spread out knights of the Haven Empire were decimated.

“I give up.”

“I reject. All those with impure thoughts who step on the Arpen Kingdom will die completely.”

Even if the knights surrendered, Weed wasn't tolerant and stabbed all of them to death.

‘If they give up and I capture them then I'll need to keep feeding them.’

When Weed was a judge, he wouldn't give a fine and would just condemn them to death. He could also obtain loot after the knights were killed so there was no reason to hesitate.

But even those decisions by Weed were portrayed beautifully on television. Everyone saw the magnificent form of Weed swinging his sword to crush an enemy before grabbing the items.

“As a King, it is necessary to take radical actions to protect his territory.”

“Forgiveness and tolerance? Such emotions are a luxury on the Versailles Continent. How else did he build Morata?”

“That’s right. Even if Weed forgives them, the angry Grass Porridge Cult won’t. Although it isn’t easy to kill those that surrendered.”

“It looks lonely. But if we take decisive action then there will be no pain at the last moment.”

A significant amount of time was needed in order to kill the Haven Empire’s army. Finally all the enemies were taken care of and the northern users were given the honour of ‘Winner of Rupoi Plains.’

-The Haven Empire’s military has been wiped out.

Talk of this victory will spread throughout the entire continent.

Soldiers who participated in the war can gain achievements.

When sharing this story, it is possible to improve relations with residents of the Arpen Kingdom.

341 fame has been acquired!

-The title 'Winner of Rupoi Plains' has been obtained.

All those who participated in defeating the Haven Empire's army will have their contribution to the Arpen Kingdom increased.

As King, Weed gained a huge amount of fame and honour.

Ddirring!

-The battle has ended.

The Arpen Kingdom has won and you have obtained 9,820 Fame as the King.

Infamy has risen by 1,860 due to the cruel behaviour shown in battle.

He didn't leave any prisoners and killed everyone so his infamy had increased. But the reaction of the northern users was positive.

"His Majesty has directly killed the enemy."

“Is it necessary for the enemy to stay alive? It is right to believe in His Majesty.”

“It might be cruel but that decisiveness is excellent. If anyone blames His Majesty then evict them from the village.”

His fame was so high that the residents were still loyal despite his infamy. Of course, if the infamy continued building up then the residents would start distrusting him and the knights and soldiers would declare independence.

-Friendship with the Ritten Kingdom who is at war with the Haven Empire has risen.

-The Haven Empire's army has been defeated and the appreciation of the Gadian Kingdom towards the Arpen Kingdom has risen.

-Relations between the Arpen Kingdom and the Aidern Kingdom has improved.

They have officially recognized the Arpen Kingdom and will send a diplomatic party for foreign exchanges.

-The local specialties of the Arpen Kingdom has become more famous.

Presently there is a friendly trade agreement with the Masen Kingdom. When the trade agreements are concluded, an

economical exchange between both countries will become active.

When procuring supplies from the Masen Kingdom, merchants from the Arpen Kingdom will be treated like it is their own kingdom.

-The Dale Kingdom wants to learn about the Grand Buildings.

If the Arpen Kingdom teaches their construction techniques then their research materials for magic and science will be exchanged.

Once the relationship between two kingdoms becomes positive, the trade amount will increase and quests can be received. The northern users who participated in the war on the Rupoi Plains would receive special respect from other kingdoms.

And the festival that was a unique tradition in Morata took place on Rupoi Plains.

“Let’s eat and drink!”

“No tax, no tax! Just buy without worrying about taxes!”

The northern users acquired food from the Haven Empire’s food carriages. Painters, sculptors and architects also gathered here. Naturally there were many cooks that made dishes from the food of the Haven Empire and distributed it.

Sausages and beer were items popular with the Haven Empire!

Weed also cooked and handed out food to people.

“Enjoy.”

“Thank you very much.”

Many users had never met Weed directly.

“I’ve been watching you the whole time...Weed-nim should be arrogant about winning the war yet you put on an apron straight afterwards. This is the spirit that Weed-nim used to raise Morata.”

“It is his true character. He is different from people like us. Isn’t this why I came to the Arpen Kingdom?”

“Yes, I understand.”

The users of the Grass Porridge Cult were pleased by this minor behaviour.

Weed cooked for a simple reason.

‘There are many food ingredients this time so I should raise my cooking skill. The carriages belonging to the Haven Empire contains many luxury ingredients. These guys were really

determined.’

Besides, he was aware of the political connotations behind the act! The people were thankful that they didn’t have to pay taxes after fighting a war.

‘This is the spirit of democracy.’

According to the users, the residents of the Arpen Kingdom had a strong pioneering spirit and a kingdom alive in adventure. It was different from Weed’s thoughts.

‘My kingdom. Everything is mine!’



The war between the Haven Empire and the Arpen Kingdom was a big topic of conversation on the Versailles Continent.

“It would be useful if the Lasalle Kingdom has a group like the Grass Porridge Cult....”

“I think so as well. But the leadership of the Lasalle Kingdom and the Haven Empire is significantly different.”

“That is even worse. It is only a matter of time until this kingdom is occupied by the Haven Empire.

“They will squeeze money and labour from us if they win.”

There were still many users in the various kingdoms that the Haven Empire occupied.

Kingdoms defeated in the war would be unstable, be set on fire and residents killed so quests would be broken in the middle. Despite the penalties, many users stayed because they didn't like leaving their homes.

“How about we create a Grass Porridge Cult?”

“Huh? Is that even possible?”

“It should be enough. If we want to then it should be possible.”

“Good. We'll found a Lassalle Kingdom branch of the Grass Porridge Cult.”

In kingdoms occupied by the Haven Empire, the Embinyu Church seized some areas while the Grass Porridge Cult sprang up in large and small villages. The continent had fallen into chaos as weeds spread in every direction.



“Huhuhu, that was quite a good battle.”

The assassin challenging the Assassin Master Quest took part in the battle on Rupoi Plains.

He had competed on the side of the northern users and killed 137 members of the Hermes Guild. Despite their good defence, he also eliminated 402 NPC knights and gained a great achievement on the continent.

He was still far from finishing the Assassin Master Quest.

‘I need to receive the next quest.’

He went to a tavern where he could rest and gain information.

“The Arpen Kingdom surprisingly broke the Haven Empire in the Northern War.”

“I heard that many people acted to prevent the Haven Empire’s invasion.”

The only topic between the drunk residents was the Northern War.

“Huhu, a bottle of whisky over here.”

The assassin drank strong alcohol. It was enjoyable to hear rumours about a battle that he had participated in.

“It is said that many new heroes have become famous.”

“Oh, you must be talking about the avians.”

“It is said that they penetrated through the magic attacks and swept the land.”

The assassin also witnessed it in battle but the sight of the avians nosediving through spells was amazing. The avians were NPCs but they had the power of knights.

“The knight called Kone also played a heroic role. He was a knight from the Aidern Kingdom but went to the north after the dishonourable behaviour of his lord.”

“It is impossible to forget about the archer called Pale. He fired from 100 feet away and could accurately shoot between 80~90 feet.”

“Drago made nets from materials and poison extracted from tarantulas.”

Talk about the users who played an active role in battle kept pouring in.

From the viewpoint of the individuals, it was a great honour to have rumours about them spread through the continent. Some people deliberately didn't leave the city in order to hear about their adventures. Hearing about their adventures even in distant

cities was very glorious.

“How much?”

The assassin had plenty of rest so he prepared to leave.

“Many important figures from the Haven Empire died in the war.”

“Oh, I also heard that story. The skill was so neat that even a ghost would be surprised.”

The assassin’s smile slipped. There were also rumours about him. A shadow of death that didn’t let its target go.

“That skill reminds me of the assassin that came to Montonya last time.”

Jump!

The assassin trembled as he received a big shock.

“Oh, was that the assassin called Seasoned Crab?”

“That’s right. Seasoned Crab is the skilful shadow that causes death.”

“It was sufficient to make him a hero of Montonya.”

“I heard that parents admire him and children want to grow up to be Seasoned Crab.”

Last month, he had completed the request of a young girl in Montonya. That was when the assassin’s name became known.

He wasn’t thinking about his name when he started Royal Road. Seasoned Crab.

This was the name of the shadow of death.

Seasoned Crab who causes death that can’t be avoided.

The dark killer Seasoned Crab.

Seasoned Crab who destroys souls.

Cruel slaughterer of lords, Seasoned Crab.

“Kehuhuhuk.”

The assassin Seasoned Crab felt grief. He didn’t want to tell anyone his name. Thanks to his name, he chose the assassin occupation that didn’t need to hunt in a party.

Assassins tended to complete wicked quests but sometimes they would get requests.

Rescuing daughters from the tyranny of vicious lords or knights or saving noble girls from monsters. Or following a party and secretly helping them when they fell into trouble.

But even if Seasoned Crab met someone he liked, it wasn't possible to tell his name and he was too mortified to register people as friends.

“Thank you very much. Please let me know your name.”

“If I see you again one day. Yes.”

“I'm fascinated. Can I ask for your name? I'd like to continue together for some time.”

“I....no, I prefer travelling alone.”

The grief of having to turn around and quietly disappear into the darkness!

Chapter 5: Nodulle And Hilderun

“Come come! Cheap dried fish.”

“Eat squid and go. Dried squids are sold in a bundle of 10. You should have something in your mouth while dungeon hunting or sailing!”

“Cutlassfish, Gizzard Shad, Rockfish!”

As soon as the war ended, Weed headed towards the harbour in order to complete the secret sculpting technique on Borota Island.

“There really are a lot of people.”

Borota Island was well known on Versailles Continent.

Clear skies, a calm and beautiful sea, plenty of mountains and hills and a nice landscape in the rising sun. There were good fishing grounds in the area so the harbour was always crowded with fishing boats from distant places.

The island was peaceful despite the continent falling into the chaos of war.

“The items I have to proceed with the quest....”

Scroll to summon a giant fire golem and a meteor. They were terrifying scrolls but it couldn't be abused so he should use it sparingly. The secret sculpting technique quests were difficult so he should save it.

“Inspect!”

-Borota Island Map: Durability 3/5.

The terrain of Borota Island, the surrounding islands and the sea currents are marked.

Can be sold for 3 silver at the harbour.

-Story of Stars in the Night Sky #73.

A parchment that shows the constellations on the northeast side.

The Polar Bear, Winter Snow and Lovers constellations are displayed.

-Stopped Compass: Durability 11/17.

A compass for navigation that doesn't work.

-Keys to a Residence on Borota Island.

A key that opens the front door.

It can only be used several times.

-Sands of Time.

It is possible to use 3 times.

Sands of Time, a mysterious sand that can recollect things.

A treasure from the southern desert that can look back in time.

Just possessing it can give information about the past.

Weed spoke to the residents first.

“I would like to know about Nodulle and Hilderun.”

“Those people? You should go to the park.”

The island had a park that commemorated them. Their names were also attached to squares, buildings and hills. But hundreds of years had passed so the exact facts weren't remembered anymore.

Weed sought the elderly first. Naturally he didn't come empty handed.

“What is this?”

“Fresh rice porridge with abalone. Can you tell me a story about Nodulle and Hilderun while eating?”

“Well, I like rice porridge with abalone. You are a rare example of a youth who knows manners. I know a little bit about Nodulle and Hilderun. This is something I heard from my grandfather and that he heard from his grandfather. They were born in the same village.”

“Where?”

“A small village in the hills behind the harbour. Nodulle and Hilderun grew up in the same village and fell in love. But where is the rice porridge with abalone?”

The elder stopped telling his story.

Nodulle and Hilderun were famous so there were other users who tried this method. But based on intimacy with the resident, different essential information could be gathered.

“Nodulle’s family, the Borota was one of the wealthiest on the island. It was to the extent that they owned most of the ships.”

“Nodulle was tall and handsome so all the women on the island

lost their minds over him.”

“Hilderun? Hilderun wasn’t that pretty. She stuttered and had an uncomfortable limp. Although that story was passed down for a long time so it might not be true.”

“Are there any pictures left of Nodulle?”

“Go inside the government offices. Nodulle’s home used to be there. By the way....didn’t you say you would give Rockfish Porridge?”

He got information using food cooked from the best ingredients. A big advantage of the cooking skill was that it was easy to acquire intimacy!

“I should focus on asking about Nodulle.”

Weed moved to the government office where administration of the island took place. It was a peaceful island so the guards at the entrance were only wearing light armour.

“Can I help you?”

“I want to come in to investigate something. I am Weed.”

“I have heard of that name. You can come in and see whoever you want.”

The guards opened the way.

It was difficult to enter the area containing government buildings unless they were merchants who invested a great deal of money into the island or famous adventurers. Weed was able to enter thanks to his adventures and fame.

The spacious area contained the headquarters of Borota's navy and Nodulle's family had lived here in the past.

"I recently obtained information about bandits aiming for merchant vessels so should we take action?"

"The Green Gills Sharks are continuing to attack and they frequently appear near areas with seaweed."

Players could receive quests from the navy headquarters. There were navigators but mostly there were ship captains so their attire was flashy.

Weed headed straight past the navy headquarters towards a mansion at the rear. The mansion had been neglected for a long time but the large trees growing gave it a cosy feeling. Weed smelled flowers on the wind as he pulled out the key to a residence in Borota.

-The door of a Borota residence has opened.

The old, rusty key has broken.

“There aren’t many things remaining.”

The antique furniture inside was old and broken. Hallways, rooms and paintings were covered with dust and cobwebs.

Weed brushed off the dust and searched around.

“Inspect!”

-Picture of the Borota Family

A painting of the Borota family.

The unknown painter’s style was to emphasize the lines and colour.

Artistic Value: 19

-Knowledge has increased by 1.

Apart from the paintings, there were various things scattered around that showed off the wealth of the family.

Looking at the expensive glass products, tapestries, silverware and jewellery, it was obvious that Borota Island participated in a

lot of trade.

Weed cleared the dust and cobwebs as he walked around.

“This seems to be an expensive painting....”

-Nodulle Riding a Horse

A painting showing Nodulle, the heir to the Borota family riding a horse up a hill.

Artistic Value: 45.

After searching through dozens of works, he finally found a painting of Nodulle.

“The rumour that Nodulle is handsome seems to be true. Well, he is almost level with my looks.”

Distinct features, deep eyes, thick eyebrows and a sleek jaw line! Nodulle riding a white horse made a great image.

“Money, appearance and the support of his family...his personality is probably that of a lowlife dog. A brutal and sadistic personality.”

Weed explored the mansion and found some paper that Nodulle

wrote on. A strange image was also drawn.

“Is this dugout with a stone house built in it? Some people really are strange. Inspect!”

-Borota Island is a place that often suffers from storms.

Residents can feel relieved if they live in a house like this.

-A design of a house developed so that residents don't receive damage in a storm.

-Knowledge has increased by 1.

The housing knowledge acquired means that houses that can't be destroyed in intense storms can now be constructed in the Arpen Kingdom.

“Well, he must've had interest in the architecture aspect. Then the paper....Inspect!”

Every day residents of the island leave to sail on dangerous journeys with rough waves so I can't help but worry.

It would be nice if this study could be useful to them....

-Knowledge of a large ship that can tolerate rough waves has

been acquired.

Special bows for large sailing vessels can now be manufactured.

-Wisdom has increased by 2.

-Luck has increased by 4.

“And this looks like herbs. Inspect!”

-Local diseases can be treated when several common herbs are combined.

Many cures can be produced and the residents can win against the disease.

-Knowledge has increased by 3.

-Leadership has increased by 1.

“He seems quite smart. But having intelligence doesn’t mean he is a good guy. He might be fake.”

The next piece of paper provided information about Hilderun.

Hilderun

Today many white clouds passed in the sky. I keep thinking of you whenever I see the sky.

Tomorrow morning, let's meet at the hill and watch it together.

He was an experienced sailor that dolphins would come to. Smart, caring nature, romantic. Weed became more aggravated the more he discovered.

“A really strong guy. I can't find out any insidious behaviour. An intense affair, having a child, going to a cemetery to chew on corpses....”

He searched every corner of the house but those were his only results. Perhaps there was a secret hiding spot but he couldn't find it.

Weed then travelled around the scenic spots on Borota Island with their names. Painters drew images of Nodulle and Hilderun on the streets while there was a sculpture commemorating the two lovers on a hill.

Weed climbed the hill that overlooked the harbour. The sight of the coral reef sea surrounding Borota Island, big and small islands gathered together and sailing ships unfolded before him.

And there seemed to be a wide slab overlooking the sea.

“What is this?”

Weed touched the slab.

“There is a phrase carved in the stone. Sea God’s Altar?”

Ddirring!

-Lovers of Borota Island has been completed.

Nodulle and Hilderun were born in the same village and fell in love.

However, Hilderun was a priest of the Sea God. She couldn’t get married and was supposed to dedicate her life to the sea.

And a video played in front of Weed.

“Hilderun, I want to be with you forever. Like a large tree that is rooted deeply. I want to see this tree with you as elderly people.”

“Me too, Nodulle.”

Nodulle and Hilderun talked closely on a hill blooming with flowers. And looking at them were other priests of the Sea God.

“If Hilderun who is a priest comes to know a man then the Sea

God will become angry.”

“It was scheduled for 3 years later but we need to do the sacrificial ceremony to calm the sea.”

Borota Island and several others were under the jurisdiction of the Sea God. The decision was made by priests of the Sea God so it couldn't be disobeyed. They decided to offer Hilderun and notified the Borota family.

The following evening, there was an intense storm and Nodulle and Hilderun sailed out in a small ship. The next morning, it became known that the two of them disappeared. The priests of the Sea God went out to sea to pursue them.

Ddirring!

-A Raging Sea

Nodulle and Hilderun took a ship out to sea on a day of intense rain and rough waves.

Take a sculpted ship and follow their path to their destination.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: The quest will fail if you die.

The quest requires one female companion to participate.

Her role is important so you should complete the quest with her until the end.

The quest will fail if your companion dies.

It is raining.

“I need one female.”

Judging by the contents of the quest, it was something related to sailing.

“The 3 Mad Sharks of Becky Nin are all men...should I bring another female sailor?”

But it wasn't a simple problem of sailing skills.

“My sailing skill is intermediate so it is better to have a female that won't easily die.”

The only person who was suitable to not die was Seo-yoon. She played an active role as a berserker at Rupoi Plains. She attacked various Hermes Guild members and survived until the end.

He was jealous of the loot and achievements she had collected. A

berserker was a persistent and dangerous profession.

Weed sent a whisper to Seo-yoon.

-Excuse me, are you busy?

-I'm relaxing.

Seo-yoon was swinging her sword in a level 450 dungeon.

Kaekang!

A monster changed to grey light and disappeared. But there were another 7 hiding in the darkness while preparing to pounce. Seo-yoon had already collect 314 horns, fangs and leather since entering this dungeon.

Weed didn't know the situation so he continued to whisper.

-I have a quest....can you help me?

-I'm going right now. Where are you?

-Come to Borota Island. I will send Wy-3.

While Wy-3 was picking up Seo-yoon, he called his other flying sculptural lifeforms. They could give aid from the sky if it was

required.



Shwaaaaah!

It rained at sea.

-It will continue to rain while the Raging Sea quest is in progress.

“Oh, then this rain won’t stop?”

“It seems so. It has already been raining for 6 days.”

“There isn’t even a small break so isn’t this a little strange?”

While the quest was in progress, the users on Borota Island had to put up with the rain. The torrential rainfall made it impossible to swim at the beach or go fishing.

Weed and Seo-yoon only had a cedar boat.

“I needed to use my shipbuilding skill again.”

His shipbuilding skill was at beginner level 3 and reached level 4 after carving a precise ship.

This was another benefit of his profession. If Weed was a knight then this quest wouldn't be easy.

“The sculptor profession has its ups and downs but it seems to have many quests that risk death.”

The sea had waves 4 metres, 5 metres high. This weather was absolutely unfriendly to a sculpted ship. But even if he waited, the rain wouldn't stop while the quest was in progress.

“Nodulle and Hilderun departed in this type of weather...I have no choice but to follow.”

Weed and Seo-yoon headed towards the sea with the boat. Unlike Hilderun and Nodulle who departed suddenly, he had various supplies like timber for ship repair, food, etc.

Normally a medium sized sailboat wouldn't go out to sea in weather like this. The waves could become worse in the open sea and there were dangerous whirlpools that occurred when the currents changed the direction they flowed in.

The steep waves meant rowing with oars was hard but they had to endure. They didn't sail but were pushed back and forth by the waves.

Ddirring!

-The durability of the hull has decreased by 1 due to the rough waves.

Hull Durability: 44/45

“First we need to leave Borota Island...then the direction needs to be decided.”

He had the Sands of Time but it couldn't be used excessively. If he didn't use it for the quest then it could be sold for a high price!

Weed spread out the map of Borota Island.

“Nodulle's ship wasn't that good. The waves were rough and he departed on a rainy day.”

He needed a route where the ship wouldn't sink and the high waves could be avoided. There were two possible routes that Nodulle and Hilderun could take to depart from Borota Island.

One of them was to head directly to the continent via Pahil Island and 3 other islands. The other route was to go through the Velazquez reef waters where there were many marine monsters.

Weed took out the Stopped Compass that was a quest item and laid it on the map. It might be a coincidence but it pointed directly towards the Velazquez area of the sea.

“We’re going to the Velazquez reef waters.”

“Why?”

Seo-yoon also for the basis behind the decision. The compass wasn’t solid proof.

“Look at this. It isn’t easy to reach the continent if they take the Pahil Island route.”

“That makes sense. The supplies were low so a safe route would be better.”

“Thus the Velazquez area. It will be full of hardships so be prepared.”

The map of Borota Island had written that the Velazquez area was extremely dangerous waters. It was a little strange that Nodulle and Hilderun had headed there so casually. However, they would have no choice but to head to the Velazquez area if they were being chased.

“I’ll go first. You should return to the other side.”

Weed rowed with all his might. His high strength and agility meant rowing was very fast.

“I can’t just head straight. I should also consider the waves.”

Seo-yoon scooped out rainwater from the boat while drinking tea in a cup.

The waves were rough and it was raining at night, but sailing along on the sea was also romantic.

Nodulle and Hilderun. When the lovers escaped from the island, they must've felt deep and warm love.

Seo-yoon had warm tea so she found it a pleasure to travel the sea.

-The durability of the hull has decreased by 1 due to the rough waves.

The dreadful sea at dawn!

Weed had been busy repairing the ship and rowing all night.

Now it was morning. The sun was on the horizon and started to push away the dim darkness. An overwhelming impression after all his suffering!

A lot of rain was still falling so Seo-yoon had been scooping out water all night. Seo-yoon smiled with something like pleasure.

“It is still a good memory.”

It was a sweet and warm smile she didn't show to anyone other than Weed. Weed shook his head.

“No. I will bet on it. My unlucky fate doesn't end here.”

And after a while, 12 large ships could be seen heading from the direction of Borota Island. They raised flags that depicted the Sea God.

“What happened? Wasn't the Sea God just in the story?”

“I don't know. But no matter how hard we row, the sky, sea and land won't be able to hide us.”

Chapter 6: Time In The Past

“Nodulle! Hilderun is the offering to the Sea God. Stop right there!”

The voices shouting from the large warship had mistaken Weed and Seo-yoon as Nodulle and Hilderun.

Weed knew it wasn't a simple illusion. It wasn't a coincidence that they were being chased by battleships during this quest.

The time in the past when Nodulle and Hilderun escaped from Borota Island was being replayed like an illusion.

-The Sands of Time has shaken and something mysterious has occurred.

“What mysterious thing?”

It as a situation where the quest item activated by itself! Seo-yoon gazed at Weed.

“I don't know the story but you can send me if it necessary.”

Perhaps Hilderun had also said those words to Nodulle in this situation. It was a moment where the lovers trembled with fear and felt anxious.

Of course, the meaning of Seo-yoon's words were different. Hilderun was worried about Nodulle but Seo-yoon....

'Please send me. I'll kill everyone and return.'

Weed shook his head.

"No. We'll go together until the end. I'll never hand you over to them."

The final secret sculpting technique quest was very important. He needed Seo-yoon to survive in order to succeed. But the quest would fail if his colleague was killed!

"Really?"

"Yes. Like I said, we're going to go together until the end."

Seo-yoon smiled beautifully again.

Weed pretended to be indifferent but he felt sorry. In the past, he always cooked meals when she was hungry and bandaged her when she was injured. Of course, Weed had been subservient because he had been frightened of her.

"Is it possible to escape?"

“I will do my best.”

Weed rowed with all his might but the battleships were approaching at a very fast speed.

‘According to the map, if we get out of this area then reefs will be ahead....’

They could escape from the battleships there.

‘Perhaps Nodulle could sail a boat better than me. They also didn’t have any baggage so they could escape safely.’

The large battleships were nearing the sculpted boat. A naval battle depended on the range of their artillery.

“This won’t work. Wait a minute while I go.”

“Yes?”

Seo-yoon got up and light shone around her body. And wings of light spread open!

Recently the sculptural lifeform Light Wings had gone to Seo-yoon. It wasn’t as useful as Yellowy or Goldman but the Light Wings had willingly followed Seo-yoon.

Seo-yoon flew towards the battleships using Light Wings. Weed anxiously waited from the boat.

“If she gets caught by them then this quest will fail. Then the quests for the secret sculpting technique was end in vain....”

And then he heard loud sounds from the battleships.

Ujikun! Kwa kwa kwang!

The central sails collapsed and the cannons and hull destroyed.

“Kuaaak!”

“S-save me!”

The screams of the Sea God’s followers could be heard as they fell into the water. And after a while, the battleship tilted and sunk. Then Seo-yoon used Light Wings to fly to the other battleships.

Kwa kwa kwang! Kwang, kwa kwang!

He could tell terrible things were happening to the battleships without looking at it directly.

“This time is crazy as well.”

She had demonstrated the capabilities of a berserker on Rupoi Plains.

“This is different from the story of Nodulle and Hilderun.”

According to the contents of the original quest, the female who played the role of Hilderun needed to be protected until they escaped. Yet Seo-yoon was now the one killing the Sea God’s followers.

“The world has changed these days. A woman is even more terrifying than a Death Knight.”

After 3 ships were sunk, Weed entered the range of the cannons.

Pepepeng!

Shells fell around the boat as pillars of water shot upward. The bombardment had started but the distance was still far so the attacks weren’t accurate. Weed skilfully rowed the boat between them. The small boat meant it was easier to avoid the cannons.

The reefs gradually appeared. Once he reached the reefs, the remaining 6 battleships stopped their chase. And Seo-yoon also burned 2 more ships. The ships were engulfed in fire as they sank into the sea.

Then Seo-yoon used Light Wings to return to the boat.

“I’m back.”

Seo-yoon’s smile was so beautiful that a painter or sculptor couldn’t express it. Now it was a little scary!

In the past, Seo-yoon was cold but now she was smiling in front of Weed while holding a sword.



They had entered the Velazquez waters unharmed but their difficulties were only starting.

Purim!

Marine monsters called Gruduru swam in the water past them. He had to ensure the small boat wasn’t sucked into whirlpools or blocked by marine creatures.

“How did Nodulle conquer this?”

If Weed used the Sands of Time then he could see how Nodulle did it. Nodulle didn’t have good fighting skills so he would show his sailing abilities here. He could see the weaknesses of the Gruduru or tricks used to cross the sea.

However, Weed was the type of stingy person who regretted consuming supplies. It was to the extent that he didn't use warm water to wash his face in winter!

“I just need to hang on. Mind Hand!”

It was a skill without a particularly great use. Mind Hand. An extra hand paddled in the water and the boat shot forward. Seoyoon didn't hold still and cut any enemy that approached.

-The lower part of the ship has been attacked. 3 damage has occurred.

Hull Durability: 29/45

-The lower part of the ship has been attacked.

Durability decreased by 8. There is a hole and the ship has started to be flooded.

Hull Durability: 21/45

The Gruduru has crashed into the ship.

The ship had been damaged by the Gruduru.

“Repair!”

Weed brought wood beforehand in order to repair the ship.

Tung tang tung tang!

-Part of the hull has been repaired.

The flooding hasn't stopped.

Hull Durability: 29/45

“Droplets!”

The elemental created with Elemental Sculpting!

“You called?”

A drop of water appeared wearing a dress. It had been summoned after a long time so it was smiling cutely.

“Get out.”

“Huh?”

“Get the water out of the ship!”

“.....”

All the water on the ship was removed through the water elemental.

“Repair!”

-Part of the hull has been repaired.

You have successfully prevented the flooding.

Hull Durability: 34/45.

The flooding was stopped but Velazquez was a paradise of marine creatures.

“We have to go forward....”

Weed was almost desperate.

“This is something many youths in Korea face. Entrance examination competition, competitive employment and an endless life of working overtime for the company!”

He couldn't give up and continued firing arrows and Radiant Sword at the enemy. The desperate struggle to stay afloat.



“He is having a hard time.”

Yoo Byung-jin said while watching Weed’s adventures.

“Versailles, how did Nodulle cross that sea in the past?”

Versailles the artificial intelligence of Royal Road retrieved the history records and replied.

-The video is being prepared now. Would you like to see it?

“Play it on monitor number 7.”

The 7th monitor’s screen changed to Nodulle and Hilderun sailing on the Velazquez waters. The screen that was showing Morata changed to Nodulle and Hilderun.

They were eating sandwiches prepared beforehand while sailing. The Gruduru wandered around them but didn’t attack. The Gruduru was annoying but they had avoided any damage.

The reason was the figurehead! Nodulle’s octopus figurehead caused the marine monsters to retreat. When other types of marine monsters would approach, he scatted a little bit of onion juice into the water. Onion juice mixed with seawater caused the marine monsters to flinch and not come close. Of course, the

figurehead was something that belonged to the Borota family.

Yoo Byung-jin looked at Weed and Seo-yoon desperately hanging on and muttered.

“It hasn’t even reached the difficult part of the quest....”

-They seem to be having trouble.

“But the remaining quests aren’t going to be that easy right?”

-Of course. So far this is the most difficult quest that has appeared in Royal Road.

“But Weed’s ability is excellent.”

Yoo Byung-jin had been annoyed because Weed had managed to conquer a crisis every time. He won despite the difficulty so the mania of the public rose even more. Yoo Byung-jin found this exasperating.

“If he learns the final secret sculpting technique and unifies the continent....”

Of course, he needed to shatter Bardray and the Hermes Guild in the middle of the process. He had high approval with the users as the King so he could accomplish it. He gained a variety of skills and stats every time he completed a complex quest.

Yoo Byung-jin often became grumpy whenever he used the best solution to breakthrough any difficulty. It was to the extent that Weed could roll around in a swamp and still settle something coolly. He had broken the Haven Empire's Northern Expedition.

If fact, Yoo Byung-jin didn't necessarily hate Weed but he felt better every time Weed suffered.

-Should I calculate the probability?

“No, don't do that.”

He decided not to believe the probabilities about Weed anymore. Despite being an advanced artificial intelligence, the results couldn't be trusted. He didn't know whether he would collapse with frustration or be glad if Weed obtained the secret sculpting technique.

Bardray and the Hermes Guild committed bad acts so they deserved destruction. But watching Weed obtain great success caused a pain in his stomach. He was interested in watching Weed's behaviour while cursing.

“The final secret technique quests could be said to have the greatest difficulty in Royal Road.”

-Weed's versatile skills and stats will be obsolete. He has to win using pure sculpting ability so it will be hard even for Weed.

“I guessed that as well. I want to see it quickly. Huhuhuhuhuk.”

-Kil kil kil kil!

Yoo Byung-jin and the artificial intelligence laughed.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Hah, we managed to pass that safely....”

Weed looked back at the Velazquez waters. He experienced countless crises until they managed to pass through safely.

The hull’s durability fell to 6 points but they drove the marine monsters away and endured. Once they reached the current area, the marine monsters didn’t follow anymore.

“We were able to do it. If we have the fortitude then we can succeed.”

Seo-yoon also played an admirable role. Despite her profession as a berserker, it wasn’t easy to tirelessly fight a myriad of monsters as they passed through. They needed to protect the ships and check for monsters underwater. Weed also sailed and fought without a break. If it wasn’t for the experience then his body wouldn’t have held on.

“Final secret sculpting technique quest. The difficulty level is indeed enormous.”

Weed was satisfied that he had overcome one challenge. It was the sense of accomplishment after a hard day's work. He wouldn't have succeeded if he didn't have intermediate sailing skills.

“As expected, the sailing skill isn't useless.”

The rain gradually stopped and now the sky was clear. Weed's quest had moved forward so the rain at Borota Island stopped.

“Thanks for the help.”

“No. I had to do it.”

As an aftereffect of the battle, Seo-yoon was lying down feebly. Once the battle ended, she would become extremely weak and take a while to recover.

“We will take a small break here.”

Weed and Seo-yoon rested on the ship. If they followed this current then they would reach the continent. The great danger seemed to have passed.

And that night, the stars shining in the sky above the sea seemed more beautiful than usual. Weed carved sculptures like normal

while Seo-yoon watched. The moonlight subtly shining on the sea while he made sculptures had a wonderful atmosphere.

Splash!

“Did you hear that? A sound came from the sea just now.”

Weed turned his gaze towards the sea. The sea was as gentle as a lake. There was a cool breeze under the fantastic night sky and the air was clear.

“Huh? I didn’t hear anything?”

“I clearly heard some sound....”

“You’re being paranoid.”

Weed carved the sculpture again. His sculpting skill was 75.3% Advanced Level 9. It wasn’t long until it reached master level. Although he had continued sculpting during his countless adventures, he still hadn’t accomplished it.

“Once I finish the sculpting skill, I should challenge sewing. And if the world becomes a little peaceful then I can master the skill in 1 year.”

He set up a far-reaching plan. If he mastered all the production skills then he would have no rival on the Versailles Continent.

Splash!

“Did you hear that?”

“This time I heard it.”

The sound of splashing water was very close.

“Something is coming.”

He armed himself with a high elf's bow. He was alert while watching the wide sea.

At that time!

Splash! Splash! Splash!

A big fish jumped up in front of the ship Weed and Seo-yoon were riding.

“A Blue Marlin.”

It was a large fish that exceeded 3 metres! If Zephyr caught it then it would make a delicious dish. But right now it wasn't a relaxing situation. Soon tens, hundreds or thousands of Blue Marlins jumped up. The splashing sound was caused by countless

Blue Marlins nearing Weed and Seo-yoon's ship.

“Such a thing....”

Kuwong!

-A Blue Marlin has crashed into the bottom of the ship and durability has decreased by 9.

A crack has occurred.

Hull Durability: 36/45.

“Repair!”

-The hull is repaired.

The Blue Marlins kept on colliding with the ship. To make matters worse, one Blue Marlin made a mistake while jumping and fell on the small boat.

Blink blink.

The Blue Marlin blinked its eyes while moving its tail. This was a horrifying sight for people who eat Maeuntang (spicy fish soup)! The other Blue Marlins also fell, causing a difficult situation at sea.

-The hull has been destroyed.

It has sunk.

“These things.....”

The ship was destroyed not because of marine monsters but a group of fish.

“Kyaah!”

Seo-yoon screamed as she fell into the sea. Weed plunged into the sea to save her. It was a dark night so not a lot was visible. The Blue Marlins were beneath the surface so it was hard to move.

Seo-yoon was wearing armour so she sank down quickly. Weed swam deep underwater in order to catch her.

‘I got you.’

A image appeared as soon as he grabbed Seo-yoon’s hand.

After Nodulle and Hilderun escaped the Velazquez waters, they had received a surprise attack by the Blue Marlins. Their ship broke into pieces and they drifted on one of the fragments.

‘We’re still going to the right place.’

Weed pulled Seo-yoon up to the surface of the water and asked.

“Are you okay?”

“Thanks for saving me.”

“That thank you.... Pay my gas or city bill this month.”

Weed and Seo-yoon held on to a broken plank.



“Kkuek!”

Wy-3 glided over the sea.

“Master has disappeared.”

“He was just gone.”

Wy-1 opened its big eyes that were shining brightly. The sea had already become gentle after Weed and Seo-yoon sank. Wy-5, Wy-6 and Wy-7 glanced at the water and couldn’t find anything.

Wy-3 looked at his urgently searching brothers like they were

pathetic.

“Let’s go and eat rice.”

“Wy-3 doesn’t seem worried about Master.”

“After Master kept on calling you pretty....”

Wy-3 flapped his wings like his brother’s words were absurd.

“A man and woman disappeared together.”

“So?”

“We searched but couldn’t find them. Ggeug ggeug ggeug.”

Wy-3 gave an ugly grin!

“Oh, I like that.”

“We’ll pretend like we know nothing when he appears again later.”



Weed and Seo-yoon drifted in the sea for over a day. The two

people weren't bored. Holding on to a floating plank was a unique experience.

"I liked swimming from an early age."

"Did you go to the pool?"

"I often played at the public baths."

And they finally reached land!

Ddirring!

-The skill proficiency of Sailing has increased.

-A Raging Sea has been completed.

Nodulle and Hilderun avoided their pursuers and landed on the continent safely. They were filled with anxiety due to being chased by the Sea God's followers but now they could be pleased.

"We found the right place."

Weed checked the surroundings. A beautiful sandy beach spread out before them. They headed to the continent from Borota Island but they hadn't travelled that far.

“This location is probably Kordadesul.”

Warm sun shining in all four seasons, sandy beach and beautiful terrain. It was one of the 3 major resort cities on Versailles Continent.

“I’ve seen the broadcast and the surrounding mountains seem to fit.”

“But why are there no people?”

The luxury accommodations and restaurants built on the beach couldn’t be seen. There were no villas built by aristocrats and the only thing that could be seen was the sandy beach.

“The weather is nice but not one user is playing at the beach....”

Weed was suspicious. They also didn’t meet any users sailing while drifting here. Normally there were many tourists and merchants moving between Borota Island and the continent. Among them would occasionally be those who needed saving from sharks.

“There are footprints over there.”

Seo-yoon found footprints on the beach. Usually he would ignore any footprints on a beach but there were no other marks so it stimulated his curiosity.

“They are the footprints of two people. If we follow then something might emerge.”

Weed and Seo-yoon walked along the footprints. Unknown adventures should make a person feel uneasy. But they were different from ordinary people. Seo-yoon’s case was very simple.

‘If a monster comes then I have to quickly kill it.’

Weed was worse.

‘It would be wonderful if a monster with good leather emerges. I will peel the leather off, separate the claws and fangs, roast the meat and squeeze the oil.’

It was the end the moment a monster met Weed.

The footprints led to a small log cabin. It was in the forest where the beautiful sandy beach could be seen between the trees.

“This is a bit lacking....the structure will be hot in summer and cold in winter. And water will leak if it rains.... The house seems to be made with the surrounding materials. Shall we enter?”

“Yes.”

Weed and Seo-yoon pulled out their weapons and prepared for

battle as they entered the log cabin. There weren't any decent items inside.

Ddirring!

-Home for Two

Nodulle and Hilderun arrived on this land and began living by themselves.

But peace was nowhere to be found for them.

The Cross Kingdom, Mapon Kingdom and Bromba Kingdom on the continent were fighting intensely and the log cabin was close to monsters.

They were lacking in everything but the lovers just held each other.

Avoid the monsters running wild and live in this log cabin for 1 month.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: The quest will fail if you die.

Log cabin should not be destroyed.

The quest will fail if your female companion dies.

“The war in this time period.”

After reading the details of the quest, it was clear that they weren’t in the Versailles Continent’s normal time.

“Judging by the Cross, Mapon and Bromba Kingdoms, Nodulle and Hilderun lived in that time period.”

“Time has changed.”

“We have jumped directly into Nodulle and Hilderun’s history.”

Weed didn’t bother to think of a complicated explanation. In the past, the Hero’s Tower plunged him into the past to save a princess. If he used that experience then the situation was simple.

“If it continues in this manner then this quest seems to be huge trouble.”



“He went towards the square. Search every corner!”

“Catch the person wearing paint covered clothes.”

Guards moved near the alley where Petrov was hiding.

“Pant pant, I was almost caught.”

Petrov was roaming the areas governed by the Hermes Guild.

He secretly painted the Hermes Guild’s misdeeds on walls and roads. The contents included exploiting the residents for taxes and labour. Some of the situations were real but there were quite a few paintings based on his imagination.

<Lord Jerou eating a newborn baby alive>

<The famous Lenon bathing in people’s blood>

<The female knight Timo playing with the bones of corpses>

The residents of the Haven Empire had low loyalty so they believed the images Petrov painted.

“Lord Jerou is a person who would do something like that.”

“Honour and conscience? Lenon is a coward like those dirty goblins.”

The residents’ loyalty to the Haven Empire was reduced, which

made security worse. The realistic images that Petrov drew had a bigger influence on the residents.

Despite the Hermes Guild’s utter defeat in the north, they were showing their superior military power in other areas of the continent. Bardray led the Royal Guards against the Black Sword Mercenaries in wonderful battles and became more popular every day.

Petrov use the time when the Hermes Guild was concentrated on occupying other territory to paint his images. He drew bad images of the Haven Empire on the brick walls of alleys, under bridges, inside dungeons, on carriages of mercenaries, etc.

The problem was that the behaviour wasn’t committed by one person.

-That bastard Solo. Did he sell his conscience for 20 copper?

-Our Lord Vicar is greedy.

The painter drawing the images received a cold reception from the Haven Empire.



Steiner. A name that wasn’t well known on the Versailles Continent but he was a thief with great ability.

“The security of the Haven Empire is falling so this is an opportunity.”

The took 60 NPC subordinates that he had trained directly and led them to the Kallamore territory that the Haven Empire had occupied.

“We will steal from all merchants passing through this mountain.”

“Yes!”

“We will shake all of them according to Boss’ command.”

The carriages of the residents and merchants transporting goods around the Haven Empire was the target of the bandit group in the mountains.

In the Haven Empire, NPC and user merchants played an active role carrying goods. Local specialities, data on taxes and goods to be sold at stores were transported on the carriages.

Steiner and the thieves welcomed numerous guests (?) and enjoyed the situation.

“This is the checkpoint that we rule. Take out everything you have and go. Hahahat!”

“Please spare my life.”

“Of course I will. So next time you can give me money again!”

An enormous amount of food and materials were captured in the Dumallea Mountains. Of course, nearby military were sent to subdue them but the thieves knew the mountain terrain and were ready to retreat.

“Move away from the mountain stronghold.”

The mountain stronghold was well defended but the knights of the Haven Empire were strong. Steiner's thieves separated, secretly moved around the circumference and continued plundering.

The villages in the area with shabby defences were also ambushed.

-The subordinate thief Korum has gained a lot of experience.

It was good for Steiner when the abilities of his subordinates increased. His subordinates created another stronghold in the mountains.

The thieves' Honour became increasingly low and the achievements didn't rise. Despite there being a lord, it became a

lawless area infested with thieves and criminals. It wasn't possible to rule a city or village but Steiner could rule the mountain as head of the bandit group!

“Well, I have heard all about your infamy. It is an honour to meet Steiner.”

Steiner's high infamy meant that the number of his subordinates rose. He had to develop and build his infamy properly. He was the leader of a bandit group so it was profitable to take advantage of that.

The scale and standard of the bandit group rose, making it harder for the kingdom to endure. The bandits were surrounded in order to be destroyed. If a few escaped safely then they would just form another stronghold. Once the peace was disturbed by the bandits, the residents' degree of loyalty decreased and more volunteers were recruited.

“Aye, this dirty world. I have nothing and now I need to join a bandit group.”

“They've taken taxes from everything I've farmed so now I should steal from them.”

The residents willingly joined the bandit group.

Once the tyranny of the nobles became intense, even the knights and soldiers entered the bandit group. The military that were sent

to subdue them were overwhelmed by Steiner’s charisma and joined the group.

The bandit group was a plague on the Haven Empire. The thieves in the mountains rapidly increased their power while the population of the surrounding territories decreased. The trade routes were cut off and the farmland devastated.

Steiner’s thieves!

The group of angry thieves spread excessively through the territory of the Haven Empire.



The bard Murray played musical instruments and wrote songs about Bardray’s exciting adventures.

He happily listened to the legends the residents talked about and was happy to be involved in ridiculous incidents from time to time. He wasn’t a bard with a fixed home but one that wandered the Versailles Continent.

Murray looked at the night sky.

“Weed’s star is shining brilliantly these days.”

The bard’s special skill, astronomy! It was possible to predict the

destiny of special people through the stars. The designated star would shine differently depending on the situation. When they lost their lives or something bad was happening, the star would shine red while the light would fade if nothing extraordinary was happening.

Weed's star in the night sky was shining exceptionally brightly.

The user Murray travelled the continent and designated a total of 364 stars in the night sky. Among all the stars, Weed's brightness was unmatched.

“That gorgeous light..... I wonder what type of quest he is doing.”

His step headed towards the centre of the continent. He wanted to see the Hermes Guild fighting with all their might.

Chapter 7: The Versailles Continent In The Past

Weed had many thoughts about the house.

“This terrain isn’t a good defence. The house needs to be reinforced.”

He cut down trees and built a barrier around the log cabin. The cut down trees were bound tightly with rope and the ends sharpened. Seo-yoon dug pits in the ground and sprinkled pieces of iron.

“Is it hard?”

Weed felt sorry every time his adventures caused her to suffer.

“No, it is interesting.”

Seo-yoon was surprisingly enjoying it. She was able to smile thanks to Weed and her tears had melted the pain in her chest. She was always happy to be with Weed.

“I really enjoyed the time we went to the north with Bingryong and the priest called Alveron. It was good when we went to the Jigolaths.”

“.....”

Shockingly, the places that troubled him were beautiful memories!

‘In addition, all the events are related to me.’

In fact, Weed and Seo-yoon had no memories of comfortable adventures on the Versailles Continent. They never got to eat delicious food at resorts or act like tourists. Crossing the cold north, suffering in the Plains of Despair and almost dying in the Jigolaths!

If Weed was in trouble then she couldn't avoid it either. The good thing was that they conquered the difficulty together every time! When the two of them came together, they could defeat it every time! Even if the two of them weren't holding a conversation, Seo-yoon knew Weed's heart well.

‘How much money did I earn today? The ratings reached 23.4% so the advertising revenue....’

‘He is thinking about money.’

‘The market price for items is quite high these days. I got 5.’

‘He is thinking about money.’

‘Ah, next week is the gas bill.’

‘He is probably thinking about money.’

And on the opposite end.

‘Weed-nim is handsome. I didn’t understand it at first but he is becoming increasingly charming.’

‘The way he is looking at me isn’t ordinary. I need to be careful not to get caught.’

‘Pretty and cute. Do I have to hunt this?’

‘I should kill it with one stroke of the sword so it isn’t in pain.’

‘I don’t want to fight against human like monsters. And the monsters raising children....’

‘Kill them all!’

Weed’s misconceptions about Seo-yoon couldn’t be easily released due to her battle mode. She liked Weed so she did her best while fighting in order to not be left behind. Every time she hesitated, Weed could be in danger. If Weed experienced something difficult then Seo-yoon would be happy to sacrifice herself. She didn’t mind dying against the monsters if it meant Weed would live.

Weed also had a similar mindset.

‘Two eggs can ease some boiled ramen.’

Weed was stingy yet he was willing to give an egg to Seo-yoon! They hunted and adventured together in Royal Road, went to the same school and lived next door.

If the horrible affection, hateful affection and grateful affection had continued stacking up then Seo-yoon would’ve become empty. That’s why he had trouble expressing her beauty in sculptures for a long time.

Weed and Seo-yoon worked to fortify the log cabin. The monsters didn’t appear until evening so their work proceeded comfortably. And it was night.

Awoooo!

The sound of wolves howling could be heard from a distant place.

“Well, their leather should be soft....”

Weed licked his lips. And a cruel incident occurred.

Kang! Kakang! Keng!

Wolves leapt at Weed and Seo-yoon but the result was already decided.

“I got meat and leather.”

The next morning, the wolf leathers were folded and stacked on top of each other! The fortification of the log cabin continued.

“There are quite a few fearsome monsters on Kordadesul.”

Further inland was the Keltun Kingdom. Keltun Kingdom had a strong military and was praised for its chivalry. But as recorded in history, this was a time where all parts of the continent were suffering from monsters.

Kordadesul was untouched by humans so it remained the best beach. Weed and Seo-yoon lived on the edge of the beach while facing monsters.

Seo-yoon and a beautiful beach, it was a situation anyone would envy! They were like a poor couple that eloped and were now on their honeymoon.

“I need to build steel needles and sprinkle them on the ground. And a sufficient amount of meat can be obtained through monsters....”

Some of the land around the house was cleared and lettuce planted. Humans, in particular Weed's ability to adapt was truly fearful!

He couldn't stop the marine monsters that emerged from the sea. But once they went up on land, they weakened rapidly and were easily taken care of. The marine monsters became active on rainy days and they would have to fight on the waterfront.

When comparing the degree of difficulty to Roderick's Labyrinth, it was like lying down all day then eating a snack after midnight!

It seemed necessary to follow Nodulle and Hilderun's flow in order to complete the quest.

"I'm getting tense because the difficulty is too easy. I don't know what will come out next."

It felt like two murderers spending time at a beach during their travels. He baked fish when hungry and spent time relaxing. Ten days passed and the level of the monsters strengthened while the fortification of the log cabin proceeded at a frightening pace.

Weed used his blacksmith skill to craft iron nails and sprinkled them. The beautiful sandy beach was full of traps so no one could enter. Marine monsters that crawled out from the sea received large damage.

"This isn't enough."

Weed gathered some stones from around the log cabin. He showed the ability of a sculptor by stacking the stones in a connected system to form a stone wall.

20 days passed and he found a vein of iron ore. It was thanks to his intermediate mining skill.

“We were lacking iron.”

Kang kang kang!

After digging out the iron ore and melting it, the log cabin was covered. A steel framed cabin surrounded by stone walls was built on the beach and forest of Kordadesul.

“Executioner’s Sword!”

Seo-yoon’s ability to fight was shown against the monsters. When she was in danger, Seulroeo’s wedding ring would transfer health from Weed. Weed gave support from the roof using Radiant Sword and the high elf’s bow as one month passed!

“I wasn’t this relaxed in Roderick’s Labyrinth.”

If he hadn’t resurrected Roderick then there was no doubt he would’ve suffered greatly in the labyrinth. Yet he didn’t need to create a new sculpture at the moment. Seo-yoon’s power was the

strongest among Weed's group so there was nothing to fear here.

Ddiring!

-Home for Two has been completed.

Nodulle and Hilderun spent many happy hours on the beach.

But that relaxation didn't last for a long time.

-Quest has increased maximum health by 2,000.

"The quest was fairly easy but the content seems vaguely sinister."

The only income was the rise in maximum health. Health was vital to Weed's defence capabilities so he could now fight more aggressively.

It seemed he wasn't uneasy for no reason as ships appeared on the horizon as soon the message window disappeared. It was a big fleet with 50 ships.

They were approaching the land to take Hilderun.

"This time we can't fight with them."

The ships had at least 32 sails! The mounted cannons were probably even stronger.

Ddiring!

-Find a Haven

Nodulle decided to take Hilderun to a safe place to avoid the fleet of the Sea God's followers.

The place he chose was Boden village in Portu Kingdom. Move there across the continent.

The followers of the Sea God will disembark and chase you.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: The quest will fail if you die.

The quest will fail if your female companion dies.

The contents this time required him to take Seo-yoon and cross the Versailles Continent in the past!

"I don't know where Boden village in Portu Kingdom is."

Weed didn't know the geography of the Versailles Continent in

the past.

Names of places in the past rarely emerged in quests so there was hardly anyone who deliberately remembered it. Although it was a problem finding the history of the past in the future, it was simple for those living in the time.

“We should go into a city and buy a map. These leather should get quite a bit of money. And the price of travel goods shouldn’t be high. Anyway, we should raise our levels while crossing the hunting ground.”

While Weed was estimating the cost required for the quest, Seo-yoon spoke.

“Shouldn’t we get away before those people land?”

“We should go.”

In a situation where imminent escape was required, he had calculated money first. The two of them entered the house and collected their items. They had obtained a lot of leather and loot during their time hunting here.

In the past, Seo-yoon would only pick up the valuable items. But now she would even pick up coins from the ground.

“What is the value of this antique coin in Keltun Kingdom?”

“We will know when selling it. How many do you have?”

“A little more than 430.”

“That is a lot. It would be heavy. You can give me 300.”

“I’ll give you 100 pieces.”

“I can keep it and return it when we return to the continent.”

“Didn’t you say you would buy me a house for Yellowy?”

“.....100 pieces.”

She came to enjoy being frugal!

Meanwhile, the followers of the Sea God changed to small boats and moved upstream. They didn’t stop the boats so their chasing speed was very fast.

Surung!

Seo-yoon took out her sword. They had to escape from the people pursuing them.

“It isn’t necessary to take the difficult path. Climb on my back!”

“I’m heavy....”

“It is okay. I can handle the weight. Heuk!”

Seo-yoon’s weight was no joke. The weight of her armour and baggage was included as well.

“We’re going now. Quadruped Run!”

It would be nice if he could run coolly piggybacking her but this was his fastest movement skill.



Lois Castle!

Weed and Seo-yoon arrived at a great city in the Keltun Kingdom. The buildings were made of red brick and had an antique look.

Ddirring!

-You have admired the building style of the Keltun Kingdom during a period of war.

As a sculptor and King of the Arpen Kingdom, you can construct buildings with the distinctive style of the Keltun Kingdom.

These buildings were created during times of war so they are efficient and built for defence. But famous architects spread a new awareness of beauty, with the facilities containing the royal authority and religion boasting a great grandeur.

It was destroyed in the future but the Pechin Royal Palace, Nurod Cathedral and Benoar Tower were global architectures.

Special buildings can be constructed.

-Soldier Training Camp

Construction costs between 20,000 gold and 1.5 million gold.

A place for drafted soldiers to do their basic training.

The better the training facilities, the more quickly the soldiers can improve their combat skills.

Can be taught how to march quickly.

Special Effects: Soldier conscription rate will improve.

When Sword Mastery is taught, the skill will quickly reached

Beginner Level 5.

-High Solid Wall

Construction costs at least 300,000 gold.

A wall designed to hold out against siege weapons, not monsters.

Very heavy and expensive. The construction period will take a long time and it can only be established on firm ground. However, the wall will be able to protect against outside invasion.

Special Effects: Residents will feel less unsettled despite being surrounded by an army.

Morale of the soldiers will be high as long as the walls aren't destroyed.

Weed discovered buildings that just ate money!

“Anyway, let's go inside the city.”

“Yes.”

After crossing the forests on mountains on all fours, he decided to purchase a map and other necessary items in the city.

“Cheap, cheap!”

“If you need things then come and look!”

Merchants were selling goods while all the stores had their doors opened. All the residents were NPCs. It wasn't just Lois City but the whole continent.

Weed and Seo-yoon were the only users to wander around.

“It will be heavy when escaping so let's dispose of some useless stuff.”

“Yes.”

Weed looked for a merchant who seemed to have a decent price.

‘A person with a moderate belly....’

An exclusive merchant like Mapan would be useful at a time like this. His profession wasn't a merchant so it would be difficult to bargain when selling to NPCs.

Weed neatly arranged his items and headed to a merchant to start the bargaining strategy.

“You have a lot of marine products and leather. Hunting these

should have been fairly difficult... The amount of materials is good so I will give you 14,850 gold. How is it?”

He thought it would be possible to receive at least 20,000 gold but the price was surprisingly low!

“Can’t you buy it for a slightly higher price? I came here intentionally without going anywhere else.”

“Go to other stores. Don’t look so pitiful if you want me to buy it.”

This was the past so Weed’s fame had no use.

“You have a good impression. Please help this poor traveller by adding 150 gold....”

“If you’re not selling then go away!”

A perfect cold reception! Weed tried two other locations but their quotes wasn’t higher so he had no choice but to sell. His baggage would just continue to grow by picking up herbs and hunting monsters along the way. It was inevitable that he had to reduce the weight.

If only the Sea God’s followers weren’t chasing then he could hit a jackpot with commerce. The city and aristocrats sometimes wished for a particular specialty. If he supplied the necessary item then he could gain fame, money and commerce experience. He

didn't need to compete with other merchant users so it would be very profitable.

Seo-yoon bargained with the merchants. The items she took out had a similar quantity to Weed.

“There is this much marten leather. Recently this leather has moved into the limelight due to the aristocrats. You are beautiful so I will buy it for 16,300 gold.”

The price was higher than Weed's. There weren't any users here, only NPCs so Seo-yoon had taken off her mask. She didn't raise her Charm stat yet there was no one who didn't have a favourable response to her innate beauty.

It was an appearance that could crush stats and skills. If Seo-yoon had increased her Charm stat just a little bit then the merchant would've probably bought it for the price she asked. It was to the extent that she could even receive proposals from kings or high ranking NPCs.

Seo-yoon wasn't familiar with bargaining but she learnt from Weed.

“Could you buy it for 17,000 gold?”

“Ah, I was too rude. I tried to gain too much profit. I can't maintain my conscience as a merchant. Then I will buy it for 17,700 gold if you come visit again.”

“.....”

Weed didn't have much to say. The world was originally unfair!

Students could study day and night to raise their test scores but those who played around got better grades. Later a normal salary might be 1~2 million won but the son of a wealthy family would inherit billions in elementary school.

‘Lots of money, intelligent, pretty and good natured.’

The world was really too unfair. Her combat capabilities also excelled in Royal Road. But he took comfort in the fact that Seoyoon had a weakness.

“It's really a fatal weakness. She can't eat gamjatang (pork spine soup), haejangguk (hangover soup) and pig intestines. They are so delicious...”

“Huh?”

“No, nothing. I just had a pitiful thought.”

Weed bought a map of the continent and Portu Kingdom from the market. Portu Kingdom was heavily based on the west of the Central Continent but it was a small kingdom.

“We have to cross the mountain range and southern wastelands in order to reach the Portu Kingdom.... Or there is a shortcut across the border where the Keltun Kingdom is at war with the Mapon Kingdom.”

The residents of the Keltun Kingdom were talking about the war with the Mapon Kingdom. Now they had to set a path.

“Which one is better?”

“There are many monsters in the mountains. The roads are demanding so it will take a long time to cross. Those guys will be quickly chasing us.”

“If we cross the border then there is a high possibility we’ll be involved in the war. I’ve experienced it in the past due to the Tower of Heroes so the Mapon Kingdom is quite scary. If we take that path then we need to be prepared for the war.”

Weed and Seo-yoon pondered their choices.

Monsters and steep paths or a battlefield! Anyway, either path had the risk of damage.

“I think any road won’t be easy. It is hard to determine which one is better with a lack of information.”

“Usually I would go across the mountains. It might be steep but we can take care of the monsters.

But let's just go west for now."

"....The reason?"

"I was always unlucky so I'm going to make the reverse choice this time. The so-called contrary idea."

Weed and Seo-yoon bought everything from the city.

Once they crossed the battlefield in Mapon Kingdom, they could quickly arrive at Portu Kingdom.



Yoo Byung-jin tilted his head to one side as he watched Weed's adventures.

Weed had established many nice things during his time in Royal Road!

"Adventuring with a beautiful woman...there's also the dancer."

That was even more difficult than becoming the God of War. Moreover, Seo-yoon's tone and expression showed that she would be happy as long as she was with Weed.

On the actual Versailles Continent, the Haven Empire was continuing the large scale battles against the other kingdoms.

The Haven Empire’s surprise attacks were successful but the other guilds had allied together. The other side was strong so they desperately hired mercenaries and conscripted soldiers. They were desperate to stop the Haven Empire so fierce battles were waged.

However, Weed was having a romantic adventure with Seo-yoon in another time zone of the Versailles Continent.

“There is even a chance of acquiring the final secret technique.”

-Should I start calculating the odds?

“No.”

Yoo Byung-jin decided not to check the probability and to watch. Weed had a long and winding road in front of him in order to complete this quest.



“This battle has also been won.”

Bardray saw the flag of the Haven Empire flying on Loube Fortress while riding his horse. He led the main force of the Haven Empire in an intense battle against the Black Sword Mercenaries.

But the enemies were defeated and the Haven Empire occupied that territory.

The first strike from the strong magician and archer unit! After that, Bardray and the 4 Imperial Knights Divisions disturbed the enemy. Once the infantry division moved, the enemy was incoherent. It wasn't possible for them to endure.

It was reckless to fight the Haven Empire on the plains. The users in the Hermes Guild had some of the best skills and levels on the continent. Their potential power was enough to fight against the entire continent.

“The damage is 14,873 people killed in battle and 30,000 injured.

The knight Ramos who commanded the NPC soldiers came and reported back.

The Black Sword Mercenaries were outstanding mercenaries so they had dealt a colossal amount of harm to the Hermes Guild. The Black Sword Mercenaries had the co-operation of the Mercenary Guild so they were a formidable enemy.

The leader Michel was one of the top 5 users in Royal Road! That was the reason Bardray appeared directly. But due to the situation, the two of them avoided each other. Bardray took pride in the fact that he was the strongest in Royal Road. But no one knew what could happen in a war.

If he was besieged by several members of the Black Sword Mercenaries then Bardray could lose his life. If Bardray died then the Haven Empire’s continent conquest plan would receive a great setback. It would be an opportunity for the guilds not involved in the war to counterattack.

Michel also didn’t do any risky gambles. Bardray was his rival but Michel had no confidence in a one on one match. It would be difficult to grasp a chance with the Royal Guards and the Hermes Guild. Even if he won the battle, there was a high probability of losing.

The Black Sword Mercenaries were spread over the Masen and Norton Kingdom so they aimed to drag the enemy deeper and reverse the situation. The users that reconnected and the trained NPCs would be waiting. The system was the same for all the guilds allied against the Hermes Guild.

They called this strategy Lion Hunting.



Lafaye and his advisors stayed in the Haven Empire’s vast territory and organized things like logistics, troops training, support for new troops and other similar work. There was a lot of work but small mistakes could happen so it was important.

“The southern front?”

“They’re crossing the Beimond Plateau. Currently there is an intense sandstorm...they are being delayed due to bad weather.”

“The enemy might use the sandstorm. Notify the 3rd and 5th armies.”

“Send 3,000 reinforcements to the Britten Alliance Kingdom occupation forces. It seems like we need more cavalry on that front.”

“There are enough reinforcements but it will take 4 days to move them.”

“Make sure that the cavalry moves to the Aidern Kingdom first. Once they take care of one side, they can help the Britten Alliance Kingdom.”

The entire war was controlled by Lafaye and his advisors. There was a commander for each army but all plans were drafted at Aren Castle in the Haven Empire.

As time passed, the power of the Haven Empire and the Imperial Palace rose. This had been set up for a long time by Lafaye so the Haven Empire kept extending. Administration of domestic affairs had deteriorated due to construction of the Imperial Palace and the war but Lafaye showed exceptional abilities to minimize the aftermath.

“Lion Hunting. Huhuhu.”

Lafaye knew the strategies of the Allied Forces like he was reading it from his palm.

It was due to the placement of spies he planted in advance! Moreover, a guild they were secretly allied with belonged to the Allied Forces.

“I’ll gradually have them devoured by the lion.”

The Hermes Guild was relaxed since they knew they knew the tactic of the Allied Forces. They would continue to fight to occupy the area and then throw all their power at the proper time, causing a complete surrender.

“Dispatch the Northern Expedition army to help.”

Lafaye didn’t inform the guild of all the thoughts in his head. When he organized a force to destroy Weed and the Arpen Kingdom, he knew that they wouldn’t succeed.

Of course, it was fine if Weed and the Arpen Kingdom were destroyed but it didn’t matter if the troops failed. The strong forces of the Haven Empire sent to the north were completely wiped out. The Allied Forces were able to gain great courage and disparage the Haven Empire.

Expectations that they could win were planted. But the Haven Empire was the one thoroughly winning in the Central Continent.

The opponents were on a losing streak but the Northern Expeditions' failure gave the illusion that they could win.

And they aimed for a dramatic reversal with Lion Hunting. Lafaye would profit from both the success or failure of the Northern Expedition.

The Haven Empire troops were placed around the continent without a hitch.

Lafaye was the brains behind the Hermes Guild and they knew how scary he was after multiple wars.

“But it is difficult with that bandit group running amok.”

The activities of the resistance army was continuing in the Kallamore Kingdom, Lasalle Kingdom and Britten Alliance Kingdom.

Security was weakened and the resulting damage of the bandit group in the mountains was surprisingly large. The territory of the Haven Empire was causing more of a headache than the battlefield.

They couldn't spare any military fighting at the borders to return and the reserve troops at the city couldn't be used to chase after the bandit group. The activities of the Embinyu Church was also multiplying.

The Haven Empire was huge and Lafaye knew how hard it was to

get rid of something once it started to fester.

“It can’t be helped. Using precious troops here...send an assassination squad.”

Large and small events continued spreading in the Haven Empire. Lafaye managed the huge forces like a puppeteer and gradually took possession of the continent.



A groan emerged from Weed’s mouth as he saw the battlefield between the Keltun and Mapon Kingdoms.

“Uhh, we won’t be able to avoid it.”

An all-out war with more than 100,000 soldiers! The infantry, cavalry and magic units were fiercely attacking.

“If we don’t pass through here then we’ll have to go back. Then taking a shortcut would be meaningless.”

The Sea God’s followers were 1~2 hours behind them. Waiting for the battle to finish or going back would be the worst choice.

“The only way is to break through. I’m fortunate that this won’t be like Princess Remy.”

He had failed the Tower of Heroes' quest because he left Princess Remy along in order to fight and she died. If it was Seo-yoon then he didn't have to be that worried.

Surung!

Seo-yoon smoothly pulled out her sword. She was a natural berserker in battle. Rather, she would be the one defending Weed.

“Are you ready?”

“I am.”

Seo-yoon answered vigorously. She would go anywhere with Weed. Anyway, this moment would be a fun memory for later.

“Let's go!”

She cried in a loud voice but Weed didn't move. When Seo-yoon rode forward first, he followed behind her. The spirit of a female was shown on the battlefield!

“I'll protect you! Don't pass me. Stay behind.”

The special quality of a berserker could be understood as she participated in the large battle.

Seo-yoon wielded her sword.

“Dance of the Mad Warrior!”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The soldiers blocking her way fell down. She earnestly attacked from the beginning without worrying about defence.

“Radiant Sword!”

Weed also used his sword technique from the beginning. The thunderbird flew through the Keltun Kingdom’s military and shot out thunderbolts. Hundreds of lightning and thunder flew on a clear sky.

Strategically it was better to side with the Mapon Kingdom instead of the Keltun Kingdom. Once they passed through the Mapon Kingdom’s camp, they could safely reach their destination.

“Unconditionally kill as much as you want. Pile up the achievements for when we cross the Mapon Kingdom....”

Seo-yoon attacked when the knights of the Mapon Kingdom approached.

Bang!

The body fell to two pieces.

Seo-yoon showed a berserker's capabilities as she killed and wounded many.

A berserker was the strongest on a battlefield. The disadvantage of a berserker was that they couldn't distinguish between friend or foe on a battlefield. The area seemed to distort and everyone looked like an enemy to the berserker. Sometimes unharmed children would look like monsters and honour would decrease after they were killed.

Under these kind of circumstances, Seo-yoon couldn't distinguish between the army of the Mapon Kingdom and the Keltun Kingdom. She just focused on killing all enemies that approached.

“A crony of the Mapon Kingdom.”

“Minion of the dirty Keltun Kingdom!”

Weed and Seo-yoon became the target of two kingdoms...

“This isn't it. I would hire someone like that if I won the lottery. Yet they would get crazy when protecting me.”

Although Weed complained, he adapted to it quickly. It would be difficult to die with Seo-yoon using all her power. The important thing was that the Mapon and Keltun Kingdoms were busy fighting

each other.

“Pierce through the troops on the right side. Run there!”

Weed stuck closely to Seo-yoon. Seo-yoon cut any soldiers or knights that they passed. Weed didn't have to worry about attacks while next to Seo-yoon but there was something else.

“If my eyes turn black then get far away from me.”

“Huh?”

“When that time comes, I won't be able to control my body anymore.”

Another disadvantage of a berserker was that they became stronger when they saw blood. The commands of the leader wouldn't have any effect after that. They would go crazy and just attack at random around them.

“Why didn't you mention such side effects sooner?”

“It is just a small side effect.”

“.....”

Seo-yoon made a light joke. But Weed didn't hear it as a joke!

This was entirely different from when he had to guard Princess Remy. The longer the fight went on, the more insane a berserker would become and that was dangerous.

“Please keep a clear head. We need to live and escape from here.”

“I will try my best.”

“You must not fight too long. We will leave the battlefield and flee to a safe place.”

“I’ll keep that in mind.”

“Ah, that is the adamantium boots that are hard to obtain. Go there!”

Weed’s eyes scanned all over the place.

Thanks to the clash between the Keltun and Mapon Kingdoms, many precious knight items were scattered everywhere.

Chapter 8: Flames Of Disaster

From Weed's perspective, the isolated groups of knights fighting each other were too good to leave alone.

The level of the knights was approximately 300. It was a time of war so the knights of the Keltun and Mapon Kingdoms had a high standard. Stronger Royal Knights also participated but they weren't near Weed and Seo-yoon.

Weed's plan changed.

"If we try to get out of the Mapon Kingdom area then we'll just keep being chased by knights and cavalry. We should build some public achievements."

Weed drove them towards a place where the infantry had built a line of defence.

"Take care of everyone. Moonlight Sculpting Blade!"

"Kueek!"

"Strong. Block with your shields."

"We've been breached!" That guy broke through!"

The regular soldiers were swept away. The soldiers fell down as he passed them and attacked. They changed to a grey light and he collected the dropped items! But it wasn't possible to be careless for even a short moment on the battlefield. The Helos Knights from the Keltun Kingdom were bearing down on them.

“Watch your back!”

Weed turned around as soon as he heard Seo-yoon's voice. The Helos Knights were rushing towards the Mapon Kingdom army like a gale.

“That's great. They can take care of the others.”

Weed quickly moved to the side. Their goal wasn't Weed so they moved past him.

“Let's show those Mapon hillbillies the greatness of the Keltun Kingdom.”

“Charge. Charge!”

The Helos Knights passed and struck the army of the Mapon Kingdom. Weed followed the Helos Knights on horseback. It wasn't possible to follow using pure horse riding skill but the opponents were knights wearing heavy armour.

After breaking through the camp, many soldiers of the Mapon Kingdom fell due to the charge. The health of the Mapon

Kingdom's army gradually decreased as the Helos Knights attacked. This was like a shower of flowers for Weed!

Kuaaaaang!

The Mapon Kingdom aimed magic and arrows towards the Helos Knights.

“You have to fall so I can eat properly!”

Weed sneaked out of the Helos Knights and entered the archer unit of the Mapon Kingdom. Now that the knight unit was the main target, he could secure access to the archers.

The knights of the Mapon Kingdom thrust at the Keltun Kingdom. Seo-yoon didn't separate from the knights and just cut them down as she headed towards Weed.

“We have to leave quickly! If we delay too long then we will receive the enemy's concentrated attack.”

“Those are my thoughts too!”

Weed and Seo-yoon rushed through the battlefield. They had no time to rest and endlessly fought as they tried to escape.

“This is a mess!”

Weed surveyed the Mapon Kingdom for a way to escape. Thousands of arrows intersected in the sky and magic hit the places where soldiers were gathered.

The sight of the battlefield was overwhelming. 100,000 enemies were fighting against each other on both sides so he couldn't find an empty space.

They had to break through despite being outnumbered! Furthermore, if the battle on the plains finished early then the situation would be worse. Whether the Mapon Kingdom or the Keltun Kingdom won, the winning army would then target Weed and Seo-yoon.

“The Sea God is angry!”

“Collect the offering.”

The Sea God's followers then appeared at a place near Weed and Seo-yoon. They were soon chased across the battlefield. Although the battlefield was filled with cavalry, they would soon be caught.

“It seems to be good that we came here. This battle will buy us some time. We just need to get out alive.”

Seo-yoon took everything in stride as she thought of how to escape.

“We have to go!”

“If we wait a moment then the cavalry and knights will block their pursuit.”

Weed didn't move. He calmly watched the movements of the Keltun Kingdom and Mapon Kingdom. He paid attention to the actions and words of the soldiers and knights. He looked at every detail of how the troops were moving.

“Many soldiers are gathered in this small place so it is impossible for there to be a gap. Therefore we have to make a gap.”

Sometimes his evil thoughts transcended human imagination. Weed was a creative person who could put his wicked plans into action.

The northern users who fought for the Arpen Kingdom on Rupoi Plains! Weed had been waiting above them in order to use Great Disaster Nature Sculpting. Of course, he didn't use it because it would be unprofitable but now there was no reason to hesitate.

“Originally people liked playing with fire.”

Young children dreamt of becoming firefighters so he pulled out an astonishing sculpture. It was a Masterpiece of a flame sculpture that he had been saving!

“Great Disaster Nature Sculpting!”

-A Masterpiece Sculpture.

A fearsome havoc will be exerted that can kill you. Even so, do you want to use the skill?

Affinity to Nature was incomparably high so it was natural for a terrible power to emerge. There was a cruel smile on Weed's face.

“Use it.”

-You have used Great Disaster Nature Sculpting.

200 Art stats have permanently disappeared.

20,000 Mana has been consumed.

All stats have been temporarily reduced by 15%.

Affinity to Nature has fallen.

Great Disaster Nature Sculpting can only be used once a day.

When a great calamity is called upon, fame or infamy can be increased depending on the damage.

It is possible to die in the middle of the disaster so be careful.

-You have become familiar with the Great Disaster Nature Sculpting skill.

It is possible to cause two disasters at the same time.

The interaction of the disasters can cause different effects on nature.

-Title, Person who Drives Disaster has been acquired.

Faith has decreased by 60.

Affinity to Nature has fallen.

“I got used to a bad thing too quickly!”

It took a short while for the skill to kick in. However, if he was caught in the disaster then he would lose his life.

“Let’s go. We will penetrate the front.”

“I understand!”

Weed and Seo-yoon rode like crazy across the battlefield.

“You over there. I am Knight Lanter from the Mapon Kingdom and I challenge you.”

“I am busy right now so find someone else.”

“A person who runs from a sword in battle has no honour!”

“Honour won’t feed me!”

“Keltun Knights, chase after them.”

“These tedious fellows.”

There were only a few knights and the attack of the soldiers were weak so he just passed them. Magic and arrows targeted them. Weed and Seo-yoon just kept running forward.

Fuhihihing!

Seo-yoon’s horse was hit by magic and collapsed.

“Get on my horse!

“But...I will just slow you down.”

“I don’t care.”

“We will be caught by the pursuers.”

“If you die then there is no meaning in me staying alive. We either die together or live together.”

Seo-yoon’s heart leapt in her chest. Although Weed appeared to be a stingy person concerned with profit or loss, his words really warmed her heart.

‘I want to be with him anytime, anywhere. I’m really happy.’

Weed rose through the battlefield with Seo-yoon behind him.

‘Even if I stay alive, the quest will be a failure if Seo-yoon dies.’

So far he had never been caught in a disaster because he had thoroughly prepared in advance. However, he had become embroiled in the battle between the Mapon and Keltun Kingdoms too quickly that he couldn’t prepare properly.

Reeds rapidly grew on the battlefield. The reeds made horses uncomfortable and slowed them down. And they were dry.

“We haven’t gone outside yet but it is starting.”

Weed and Seo-yoon penetrated through the field of reeds. He had carved the sculpture directly so he knew how it worked.

Rough winds passed through the reed field and kindled a blaze. The reeds flew in the air and a huge fire started! The disaster was finally triggered.

“Kuaaak!”

“A huge fire!”

The soldiers who were fighting suddenly yelled. Weed didn't turn around and just concentrated on driving his horse forward.

However, his back was blazing like the sun was burning him and it became increasingly intense. Suddenly the soldiers and knights were fleeing instead of fighting because their fear and curiosity was stronger.

“Over there.”

“Yes.”

“What is happening now?”

He didn't want to check directly so he asked Seo-yoon.

“It looks good.”

“How is it?”

“Well, the wind is blowing from all sides and the flames from the reed field is flying up. The swirling flames...they are burning nicely. And it is spreading and becoming bigger.”

“The screams of the soldiers are very intense.”

“The knights and soldiers were covered up just now. I think it will be quiet soon.”

“.....”

Listening to Seo-yoon’s calm and accurate explanation was every more creepy.

“Hiyah! Let’s go!”

Weed dashed forward at full speed. The horse kept on running as their lives were at stake. But the flames surging at his back was becoming increasingly scary. The strength became more intense the longer it lasted.

Hurururut!

It was the sound of wind spreading the fire! The reeds flew through the air and the ground caught on fire. Fire was swallowing everything in the plain. It was a dramatic and beautiful scene but

there was no one to appreciate it.

‘As expected, we shouldn’t play with fire.’

Weed’s despairing expression was like when he peeled the lid of the last remaining ramen late at night only to find no soup.

“This can’t be avoided.”

“I think so as well.”

“Still, we should try our best....”

“I think it is already too late.”

The flames were enveloping them at a fearsome rate.



Stone Hammer Guild.

It was a large guild formed from architects of the Arpen Kingdom.

“What has Pedso-nim been doing these days?”

“I’ve been working on maintaining the sewers underneath Morata.”

“That is good.”

“There are definitely alligators in the sewers.”

The architects were the foundation for the expansion of facilities in all the cities of the Arpen Kingdom. Architects took care of everything from bridges, roads, waterways, houses, etc.

Currently there was an emphasis on construction of Royal Palace but 78% of the important buildings had already been completed. The interior, exterior, landscaping, murals and ceiling painting took some time to make so the work was proceeding in a gradual manner.

“It is too bad I can’t see it through to the end.”

“There isn’t time to play since we still have a lot of work to do.”

“Isn’t building the Royal Palace quite a bit of work? It is boring to build shacks.”

“Just hand it over to the person who initiated the construction of the shack. There are 3 Grand Buildings being built at Varna Harbour so skilful architects are needed.”

“I have to go there.”

Architects scattered throughout the entire Arpen Kingdom again.

‘Although I received a commission for a Grand Building, it isn’t my thing.’

‘How long do I have to live my life making buildings for others?’

It was the same with painters and sculptors who lived relying on commissions. Instead of receiving compensation, they were just given another request.

Weed picked up the materials he needed himself but most production professions relying on the compensation to pay for their materials. If they were too greedy or looked for unreasonable work then the failure would lead to a vicious cycle of poverty.

When an art related quest was failed 3 times, there would be a rapid decline in fame. It was difficult to succeed and to be constantly creative.

-There is no answer other than working hard in the early stages of a career.

-Only become an artist if you are willing to die. However, you will labour until you die.

Morata's architects considered themselves the lucky ones.

"It is good that we came to the north."

"This is heaven."

Nothing they built was constructed directly by their hands. The demand for architects increased as the city expanded and the number of users grew explosively. Architects were also valuable for things like bridges, waterways and Grand Buildings. A lot of their names were known through the buildings but they had no possessions.

Many ambitious architects started digging in the middle of nowhere.

"There are many paths to walk in the area, a river flowing upstream and fertile ground so a city can be built here."

They built walls, granaries, inns, etc. Once the basic facilities were built, residents came there to live.

Ddirring!

-A hamlet has been formed.

It is near the habitat of the Lizardmen so there can be an invasion at any time.

An uneasy peace will last depending on the stone walls.

Military Power: 2 Economic Power: 3

Culture: 369 Technology: 1

Urban Development: 19 Safety: 64%

No vigilantes present. But there will be a resistance if an invasion occurs.

They need to find a way to live. If they can't find a way....

The residents of the Arpen Kingdom rose due to the advanced culture. Most of the residents didn't have special technical skills and could only make rice.

The architects had to endure all sorts of difficult things to ensure the residents could live peacefully. Mercenaries were employed to prevent monster attacks while residents went out to clear nearby land.

Once the housing and population reached 100, it was officially recognized as a village in Arpen Kingdom.

Ddiring!

-A small village has been formed.

The Lizardmen habitat nearby has been wiped out by passing knights.

The sturdy walls have blocked the monsters many times so the residents can feel at ease.

Military Power: 9 Economic Power: 13

Culture: 398 Technology: 7

Urban Development: 21 Safety: 72%

There was a big sacrifice but the residents have learned to fight against the monsters. Talented people can fulfil their dream of being a soldier.

There is interest in agriculture and hunting. Getting rid of the surrounding monsters can increase the farmland.

The only inn in the village has no vacancies.

Talk about the wonderful culture of the Arpen Kingdom is continuing.

The residents are eager to experience everything.

-You have been inducted as a Lord.

Once given a place in the Arpen Kingdom, you can earn a barony. Your status as an aristocrat will rise higher as the village grows.

40% of the tax income should be offered to the kingdom and the contribution can be used to develop economic, military and technological needs.

The architects suffered all over as they grew cities.

-The secondary advancement is possible.

It is possible to become a city architect due to the wealth of experience.

A city architect! The architects were a big success in empty territory, cities and villages.

Of course, this also increased the work of merchants, farmers and miners.



The forces of the Mapon Kingdom, Keltun Kingdom and the Sea

God's followers were enveloped with the flames of disaster.

“S-save me!”

“I am a knight of the Keltun Kingdom. It would be more honourable to be killed by an enemy.”

“Brave warriors, show them that we aren't scared of death until the end!”

It was inevitable that the armies of both kingdoms would be wrapped in flames. The place where Weed was riding was also covered with flames.

“Sculptural Destruction! Everything into Agility.”

Weed carried Seo-yoon and used Quadruped Run after destroying a sculpture.

“Close Eyes Tightly, Stone Skin!”

He mobilized all the skills that he could use!

Everywhere was covered in fire so there was no meaning in opening his eyes. There was no risk to his eyes and the stone skill improved the protection of his body.

And he ran unconditionally in one direction.

‘I need to hold on to Seo-yoon....’

Weed’s health was rapidly decreasing.

-Your entire body has been wrapped in flames.

The hot fire decreases health by 3,850 every second.

It wasn’t possible to escape so his health fell at a rapid pace.

-Durability of your weapons and armour has decreased.

If it lasts too long then there is a possibility the fire can cause permanent damage.

The message windows popped up as Weed ran forward. Then a new message window appeared.

-A blessing has been given by Hestia who is in charge of fire and the hearth.

Goddess Hestia has blessed the human who is fulfilling the obligations in this holy land.

Resistance to injustice has temporarily increased.

The fire has been absorbed and all stats increased by 39.

The effect of all attack skills increased by 2 levels and the activation time reduced.

Achievements of the Hestia Church has decreased by 2,300.

Hestia's blessing had also been given to the Goddess' Knight Armour. The blessing lowered the weight and raised defence. This time Goddess Hestia blessed Weed directly.

And after a while, they finally emerged from the area filled with flames.

“Keoheoheok! I barely lived.”

Weed and Seo-yoon had completely become charcoal.

-Remaining Health: 3,891

“I was on the verge of dying but I barely survived.”

Weed touched his pounding heart. The battlefield couldn't be seen due to the blazing fire. He was almost consumed by the disaster but they managed to avoid the pursuers for a while.

“When the heavens are helpful, a miracle can also happen.”

Weed wrapped bandages around himself and asked Seo-yoon.

“Are you okay?”

“Yes. That was a little dangerous.”

“How much health is left?”

“Around 110,000.”

“.....”

“I have many items with fire resistance.”

Seo-yoon wore a set of rings, earrings and bracelets with fire resistance. They were berserker items that she packed in cases of emergency.

Weed was upset.

“I ran really fast because I thought you would die.”

There were moments of crises but Seulroe's wedding ring gave him some leeway. But he just found out he suffered for nothing!

Weed muttered as he recalled the past.

“I really am unlucky. When I was young, I wanted to drink strawberry milk so I wanted a month until it went down to 500 won at the supermarket.”

“But?”

“The price rose to 600 won from that day onwards. The price this time was my achievements with the Hestia Church.”

Seo-yoon took out a black lump.

“Here, have some baked sweet potato. Let’s eat together.”

She had even learnt to bake the sweet potatoes using the fire from Weed.

“The salt and kimchi?”

“I brought some from Morata.”

Weed felt a little better after eating the sweet potatoes.

“We should’ve also baked some squid....”

Ah, it was really difficult...

Chapter 9: Seo-yoon Caught In Between

Weed and Seo-yoon acted like tourists as they travelled through the Mapon Kingdom.

“Shall we ride together in a carriage?”

“Thank you.”

After walking part of the way, a generous NPC merchant gave them a carriage ride. Weed carved sculptures in the carriage and asked.

“Would you like to trade?”

“I have olives and eggplants. It is difficult to get a fair price due to the war.”

Weed and Seo-yoon were moving across the whole continent. They had no choice but to be astonished by the enormity of the Versailles Continent. When talking with the residents, they were reproducing the time when Nodulle and Hilderun lived. It was even possible to ask about the Niflheim Empire in the north.

“Ah, that...our merchants haven't gone that far. The monsters there are too wild.”

“The monsters in the north are stronger?”

“I think so. And it is on such a large scale that it would be no use even if we go there with mercenaries. And mercenaries don’t like going there. But merchants who have gone to the north received large amounts of profit. The Niflheim Empire has many rare, quality products so I would like to visit it one day.’

In the past, the Niflheim Empire was very powerful. Exchanges with the Central Continent wasn’t very active so many rumours spread about it. Weed’s head was full of thoughts.

‘We need to go to Boden village. In order to do that, we need to pass through the Mapon Kingdom safely. But our infamy is a bit high so it will be a problem if we pass through cities and villages.’

Residents could check infamy and fame. The ordinary residents wouldn’t understand but it would be a problem if he encountered soldiers or the Royal Knights. It was natural for Weed and Seo-yoon to be wanted after their actions.

‘Then maybe we shouldn’t go faster and just raise our experience and fame as we travel?’

Weed was an expert at finding solutions for disadvantageous situations. He utilized his various skills and information. His most important asset was playing cheap tricks.

‘This is the Versailles Continent in the past. There a large

number of dungeons that will be unearthed later is still untouched.'

A monster's habitat, bandits' den, places of historical events, secluded magicians, etc. There were various reasons why a dungeon could be created or destroyed. Once the doors of Royal Road were opened, people would unearth ancient treasures buried in the dungeons.

If Weed and Seo-yoon entered those dungeons...no one would've entered them yet so they could receive the first time visitor benefits and the treasure. Of course, he would have detailed information about the dungeon beforehand!

'Besides, right now there are no competitors.'

There were no other users so it would be easy to receive quests from the residents. If he collected the information that existed now then they could become the first visitors to all the dungeons.

Weed felt like he had picked up 100 won from the street. It was a situation where he couldn't be happier!

"Let's go hunting. We know this dungeon."

Weed had prepared a long explanation so that Seo-yoon could understand. But she answered immediately.

"Well, we're the only ones in this time. It would be great to

become the first visitors to the dungeon.”

“So.....”

“I’ve been thinking about it since the log cabin and I think it will be okay.”

“.....”

Weed sometimes good tired around a clever woman. His body could relax. But he became mentally deprived! He tried his hardest to come up with something but the other person had already thought of it first.

“We’re travellers that can’t enter a city....”

“We should obtain a map from travellers and prepare supplies from merchants. If our infamy lowers then we can comfortably enter Boden village.”

“The trackers....”

“The forces of the Sea God fought with the Mapon Kingdom so chasing us beyond the border will be difficult. If they do manage to chase us, they’ll be forced to deal with the soldiers in the Mapon Kingdom.”

Seo-yoon knew Weed’s mind too well. So she had thought of all

this already.

“Do you know what I was thinking a short while ago?”

“Yes.”

“What am I thinking about?”

“The increase in electricity bills.”

“Heeok!”



Seo-yoon and Weed headed to the closest dungeon in the Mapon Kingdom.

“Here.”

The entrance wasn’t hard to find. The dungeon had been unearthed 2 years after the Versailles Continent opened. The treasures left in this place was huge. He had a large stomach-ache watching it on the television.

“Okay. We’re starting.”

Weed and Seo-yoon finished their battle preparations and

entered the dungeon.

-Dungeon: You are the first ones to discover the Tomb of the Hero Karmung.

Benefits: Fame has increased by 870. Experience and item drops will double for a week.

The first monster killed of each type will drop the rarest item.

“As expected.”

The monsters in this place weren't that difficult and they managed to conquer it in 2 days.

“Inspect!”

-Karmung's Spear: Durability 73/75. Attack 85~126.

The spear belonging to Hero Karmung of the Mapon Kingdom.

The weapons technology of the time wasn't that developed but the best craftsmen dedicated themselves to completing this spear for the hero.

Restrictions: Knights, Spearmen and Paladins only.

Level 380.

Options: Fame +3,150.

The maximum damage is shown when charging.

Piercing Damage + 46. Destroys shields. Deals continuous attacks.

Set items! He gathered Karmung's spear, sword and all the armour pieces.

"Huhuhu, these goods are as expected."

Karmung's spear, sword and armour were intact.

"We should go somewhere else quickly."

-Dungeon: You are the first ones to discover Venus's Treasury.

Benefits: Fame has increased by 430.

Experience and item drops will double for a week. The first monster killed of each type will drop the rarest item.

"Indeed!"

Weed shouted with joy. The entrance was within the mountains and they were the first visitors.

He had obtained information about Venus’s Treasury from the Dark Gamers Union but it didn’t exist in that time anymore.

“I am lucky...even if the sky collapses, I am a person who will still pick up money.”

This quest was worth doing. He collected quite a bit of profit. He didn’t know how the final secret sculpting technique quests would end but right now Weed was fortunate.

“Originally, horoscopes will change depending on the year.”

Weed and Seo-yoon swept through the dungeons with a positive mind.



Bardray and the Hermes Guild!

“Bergen Castle has surrendered. The death toll on our side is 38,000. The walls have been completely destroyed and residents are living outside. The Black Sword Mercenaries were defeated and abandoned the castle.”

“Congratulations on occupying the Gadian Kingdom. Your

Majesty.”

The Hermes Guild devoured all the land in the Gadian Kingdom and finally made the capital city surrender. Lafaye’s side knew their Lion Hunting plan and didn’t miss the opportunity.

The Hermes Guild gave Bardray a lot of troops and sent him towards the Gadian Kingdom. The overwhelming force of Bardray and the Royal Guards defeated the Black Sword Mercenaries!

It was confusing for the Black Sword Mercenaries since they thought their plan had been progressing. But once the balance of power tilted, it was difficult to restore..

The Black Sword Mercenaries were driven into a defensive, melee fight. The Allied Forces were also complaining about the Lion Hunting operation. They had united to defeat the dangerous Hermes Guild. But that didn’t necessarily mean they would help in times of emergency. Their only concern was defeating the Hermes Guild so they refused the Black Sword Mercenaries’ request for help under a pretext.

In the end, the Black Sword Mercenaries suffered repeated defeats and ran away from the Gadian Kingdom.

“The Gadian Kingdom occupation ceremony is almost ready, Your Majesty.”

Bardray shook his head at the chamberlain’s words.

“Defer that. I will be chasing after the Black Sword Mercenaries.”

The troops of the Haven Empire were pleased that the Gradian Kingdom was conquered and didn't stay long. They immediately caught up with the Black Sword Mercenaries in the Nest Kingdom.

The Nest Kingdom was already at war with the Haven Empire but Bardray hit them from the direction of the Gradian Empire.

Title: The strong Hermes Guild. Where is the end?

Many people are wishing for the downfall of the Hermes Guild.

But they have never been defeated in their battles so far.

The Versailles Continent is going to be theirs.

Title: I fought directly against the Haven Empire.

I'm a magician from the ruined Lasalle Kingdom. At that time, they were just the Haven Kingdom.

A person who only sees the video probably won't understand. They are a dreadful existence that causes despair.

The Hermes Guild packed with high level users is like looking up

at the sun. The NPCs are also soldiers trained to systematically move.

Many of my friends participated in the siege but it is like children trying to fight adults.

The Hermes Guild, no Haven Empire's victory? It is natural. They are overwhelmingly strong.

The reactions on the bulletin board were explosive.

-It can't be denied that Bardray is the strongest person.

-It is only a matter of time until the Haven Empire occupies the Britten Alliance Kingdom.

-It won't be long.

-Will the north be able to hold out until the end? The north is the one who destroyed the Haven Empire's Northern Expedition.

-It is far away so it will survive. It isn't the strongest but....

-Once the Hermes Guild makes up their mind, the north will be decimated.

-It isn't possible to compare the Central Continent and the

recently pioneered north.

- Isn't it possible if the users come together?
- The northern users? If they gather then the Haven Empire won't pause and will squash them.
- Will the Haven Empire ignore them? They have the best users and military. There are many beginners in the north so they can't compare.
- The Hermes Guild is undoubtedly strong.
- This is the paradise of the Hermes Guild.
- The Hermes Guild should go away!

A myriad of statements popped up on the bulletin boards. It was evidence that all users feared the pace of the Hermes Guild.



“Oh, it really was a long road.”

Weed and Seo-yoon rode into Boden village.

They had ridden around the Versailles Continent and cleared 2

more dungeons before arriving. Weed had gained 6 levels and reached 438. It was difficult to gain experience once the level became high so this was the benefit of discovering the dungeon first.

He also sold the sculptures he made to merchants in the Mapon Kingdom.

“This wonderful sculpture! You have been hiding great skills.”

-1,384 Fame has been gained by showing off your skills.

Weed's name wasn't spread over this continent so it was rare for people to know his name. That's why it was easier to increase fame when selling sculptures.

“The sculpture is my life. I wouldn't sell it if it wasn't good.”

“The price will be high for a rare work like this!”

Later he entered a city and dealt directly with aristocrats.

“Well, you've managed to express the tone and atmosphere. I'll generously give you gold coins.”

“Thank you very much, Sir Count! I was wondering about my skills. I'm glad that Sir Count sees something worthy in my work.”

“Hahahat, I’ll also give a jewel!”

“Your kindness is very big!”

The flattery that earned him more profit! Weed made a large amount of money even in times of war. The skill proficiency of sculpting reached 82.3% of advanced level 9 and handicraft reached 88.7% of advanced level 9.

Furthermore, his rise in fame reduced the influence of infamy. They comfortably moved from the Mapon Kingdom to Portu Kingdom and arrived at Boden village.

Weed felt regret.

“It would have been nice if we came more slowly.”

He was in a hurry due to the situation on the Versailles Continent but he would’ve liked to stay for 1 year to hunt in dungeons. They hadn’t seen any trackers from the Sea God’s followers while travelling in the Mapon Kingdom so they were either defeated in the battlefield or couldn’t cross the border.

“Where should we go now?”

Seo-yoon asked while changing her armour.

It was a bright and clean silver studded with tiny jewels. Once a

battle began and the ability of a berserker started to be exercised, the jewels would turn increasingly dark towards the colour of blood.

Weed and Seo-yoon deliberately didn't touch some monsters and hunted the boss class monsters that dropped nice berserker items. Weed didn't obtain anything nicer than the Goddess' Knight Armour but got a rather good helmet and boots.

He had picked up the Devil's Helmet from the devil Montus. It contained a great power but there was a severe penalty so he didn't use it.

"I don't know. We'll see after entering the village."

Weed went inside in order to complete the quest. Boden village was a small place with approximately 100 houses.

-Find a Haven has been completed.

You have travelled around the continent and finally arrived at Boden village. Nodulle and Hilderun have hope that they can live peacefully here.

-Experience has risen.

-Charm and Courage has increased by 10.

“This is like the early days of Morata.”

“There aren’t a lot of people and it has a cosy feeling.”

“Talk to everyone and see if there is a quest. If there isn’t a quest in this small place then we will go to a big city.”

“Later we should find a chance to visit the Niflheim Empire.”

“It would be nice if that is possible....anyway, it won’t be easy.”

They walked along the main street of the village.

“His Majesty the King. The King is coming.”

“His Majesty is coming to survey Boden village.”

The residents came out on the streets and bowed down. A sudden development! Weed and Seo-yoon looked at the street from a distance.

He was the King of the Arpen Kingdom but that was no use in this time. In addition, he would be happy to lower his head if there was any benefits.

‘Should I sell a sculpture to the King?’

The king came riding into town with 1,000 knights and soldiers.
A magnificent procession!

‘Money is superfluous. I heard that rumour about the Portu Kingdom.’

They had the best fertile land and mines in the area. The Portu Kingdom was in the Central Continent and later gave birth to the Lasalle Kingdom.

“You there, raise your head.”

The king who looked like a mix between a bullfrog and a black pig said as he saw Seo-yoon standing on the corner.

“A woman with such a strong aura is rare.”

“.....”

Seo-yoon didn’t say anything.

“Tell me your name.”

“.....”

“Hilderun, a name that refers to the sea on a sunny day.”

She didn't speak but the King already knew her name. This was a special event related to the quest.

“Come with me to the palace. Your legs look uncomfortable so I will heal it. My daughter will prepare dresses and jewels for you and a sumptuous banquet will be held for 100 days.”

The king spoke some amazing words.

Seo-yoon looked at Weed. It would be nice if he screamed at the king not to touch his girlfriend or showed anxiety!

“Excuse me....”

Weed walked forward.

“His Majesty is talking you country bumpkin!”

His shoulder was instantly grabbed by a knight. Of course, it was possible to resist if he fought. But they were Royal Knights so their levels weren't low.

‘Is this going to be another tough quest?’

Weed and Seo-yoon locked eyes.

If that was the case then it was better to attack at the same time.

They didn't know the structure of the village but it was better to get as far away as possible. He would also have to fight the soldiers beyond the knights.

It was a difficult situation with the odds against them.

“Keheok!”

But at that moment, Weed suddenly coughed up blood. The King of Portu was laughing meanly.

“You weakling, your face has turned black like you have a heavy disease. Hilderun, if you don't follow me then that man will cough up blood and die. But if you follow me then I will give the cure.”

Ddirring!

-Hilderun's Cruel Destiny

Hilderun has come to the continent with Nodulle. The Portu King is a warlock who noticed the aura of the sea around her and wants to take her to the palace to experiment.

Nodulle became sick and is on the verge of death after exploring the continent. The King is demanding a choice from Hilderun.

“You either come with me or watch your sweetheart die.”

Depending on Hilderun's choice, she could save Nodulle's life or lose something more precious than their lives.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: Nodulle's destiny will be determined by Hilderun's choice.

Weed thought quickly.

'How did this happen?'

The situation had suddenly changed. His body was suffering from aches like he was in hospital and he was frequently coughing.

Ddirring!

-You have acquired the severe Black Disease.

Vitality has fallen.

Health is reduced.

Skills can't be used.

Your body is aching and you will die after 4 days if a cure isn't found.

-The level limit of the equipped sword hasn't been met.

The weapon can't be handled directly. The lack of skill means you can hurt yourself when handling the sword.

-The armour you're wearing is too heavy.

It isn't possible to move due to the penalty. Even if your eyes are opened, you won't be able to stop the attack.

-The Agility requirements are lacking and you can't utilize the options of the boots.

-Intelligence is lacking to wear the helmet.

The level restriction hasn't been reached.

'This took a strange and unexpected turn.'

Weed had changed into level 100 leather armour before entering the village. Yet these message windows rose excessively. He murmured in a low voice for confirmation.

"Stat Window."

Character Name Nodulle Alignment None

Level 37 Profession None

Title Family's Heir Fame 53

Health 79 Mana 282

Strength 19 Agility 16

Vitality 23 Wisdom 95

Intelligence 77 Leadership 5

Art 3,153 Luck 5

Attack 3 Defence 4

No Magic Resistance

Status: Dying from a serious illness.

‘Unbelievable.’

Weed was secretly astonished. His name was changed to Nodulle and it was the same for his abilities! All the stats he worked hard to accumulate had been reduced except for the Art stat.

‘Perhaps, then my skills....’

Weed checked his skills and most of them were gone except for his sculpting skills. Apart from sculpting, the 5 secret techniques and handicraft, everything else was gone. Only the skills related to art remained.

Now he couldn't run away anymore. He might die depending on Seo-yoon's choice. The contents of Seo-yoon's message window was different from Weed's.

Ddiring!

-Hilderun's Cruel Destiny

The King of the Portu Kingdom is a cruel warlock. He wishes to take Hilderun to the palace to be used in experiments.

If you reject his offer to go to the palace then you will awake from the dream of acquiring treasures and will have returned to the original Versailles Continent.

But Nodulle will be left on this continent and will be killed by the Portu King and his knights.

If you follow the king to be his experiment then you will die.

It is a cruel fate but Hilderun has to choose.

Would you like to save your lover by following the king or refuse and return to the original world?

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: Nodulle's destiny will be determined by Hilderun's choice.

If Weed knew this then he would be even more anxious but Seoyoon replied like it was natural.

"I will do anything to save him. Take me there."

"Good."

-Hilderun has chosen to become the warlock's experiment.

The protagonists were now following Nodulle and Hilderun's situation in the past.

Ddirring!

-Hilderun's Cruel Destiny has been completed.

Hilderun has decided to go with the Portu King. She will be

sacrificed as an experiment underneath the palace.

The Portu King took Seo-yoon away.

Weed didn't just watch without resisting. The final secret sculpting technique couldn't be lost like this. It was the end if Seo-yoon died!

'No. It also makes sense. This is his destiny but I can't let my guard down. It is like picking up money on the street only to have the owner come....'

And fairy tales from Nodulle and Hilderun often ended in tragedy. To be honest, a happy love affair was rarer! That was the reason why Weed didn't dream of a girlfriend or marriage.

'I have to put up with parents of my wife, wedding costs, honeymoon, housing, fighting at home....these days, I heard that designer handbags are necessary before marriage. And there are all the challenges after marriage. The expenses when giving birth to a child and their education costs....'

Reality was too hard to live on just love. Instead, the sweethearts who ran away together would have one of them taken away by the king.

'I can't deny it. It fits perfectly with the narrative.'

Weed was convinced. The knight that grabbed him was about to

leave when Weed asked.

“T...hat, treatment....medicine?”

Seo-yoon was taken away and he had to get the cure!

The knight just laughed. Of course, it was a rotten laugh so Weed didn't smile along.

“There is no medicine. Kuk kuk.”

“Go and die in pain.”

In ordinary circumstances, it was natural for the person to be angry. But Weed's spirit had become calm.

He couldn't trust anyone in this world. His heart was already prepared since he couldn't trust the Portu King. Just because it was in the contents of the quest didn't mean there was a cure.

“Ah, I...see... I...under...stand...”

Weed quietly waited until the knight left. If he resisted then he would just die. He needed time to organize everything.

Chapter 10: Crossroad Of Life And Death

“Cough.”

Weed was still coughing up blood.

‘This situation really isn’t good.’

He sent a whisper to Seo-yoon.

-W...hat is hap...pening?

-I’m being dragged into the palace.

-E...scape?

-I just checked but my name changed to Hilderun and I can’t use my skills anymore.

Her level and skills also fell so she couldn’t think of resisting. Nodulle and Hilderun probably felt this feeling of helplessness.

Ddirring!

-Treatment of the Black Disease

The black disease is eating away at your body. If you're not treated quickly then you will die. If the time of treatment is delayed then obstacles can occur.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: Three days remaining.

The quest will fail if you die. You will return to the original Versailles Continent.

He staggered around the village and looked for a temple. If there was a priest at the temple then he could be healed with holy magic. Boden village was a small place so he couldn't find a temple. Instead, it was possible to meet a village elder on the street.

"H...ello."

An instinctive greeting to increase intimacy!

"You are an outsider. What is happening?"

"B...ody, have...to t...reat b...lack di...sease."

It was difficult to even talk. Despite barely uttering the words, the elder's reaction was cold.

“If you have the black disease then just die. There is no cure in our village.”

“T...hen...”

“If you give money then I can help.”

The eyes of the village elder brightened. Weed knew that look very well. It was a look that aimed for more money. If he had his original abilities then he could easily get rid of the village elder but now he didn't have any capital.

“N...o. I...d...n't h...ave mone...y.”

“Damn. As expected.”

The village elder moved away from the sick Weed. The hearts of the residents were bound to be tough in times of war.

Weed admitted that Nodulle was in an unfortunate and regrettable situation. In this world, he was someone fortunate enough to have a good face and a lover. But now Weed had experienced it himself.

The residents just indifferently walked past as they saw Weed. Then a guard holding a spear approached and said.

“A diseased person can’t stay in this village.”

He had no combat ability and his body was in the worst state so Weed might be bitten by wolves if he went outside.

“There is n...o da...mage.”

“If you die then we’ll have to get rid of your body. Get out of the village.”

“.....”

People really were heartless.

“I w...ill lea...ve.”

Weed staggered out of the village. He felt a vain hope every time he saw a resident but they didn’t help.

“Wah, a sick person!”

“Look there!”

He also encountered naughty children that threw stones.

-You have been hit by a stone.

Health has decreased by 3.

He had no armour so his health fell immediately.

‘At this rate I will die.’

Weed lowered his head and quickly left the village. It was distressing but he also had to watch out for passing dogs! He still needed to be careful after leaving the village.

-Resting has recovered 2 health.

Vitality is slowly recovering. It would be better with bandages but he didn't have any.

“Keheok!”

-The Black Disease has caused a seizure.

Health has fallen by 14.

Lower vitality makes it difficult to walk.

Weed's body trembled from the pain.

‘Still I’m lucky. Because it isn’t cold.’

Wiiing!

Suddenly a cold wind started blowing!

‘As expected...I probably sold a galaxy in a previous life.’

Weed suffered as he slowly regained his health and vitality. He didn’t know how much time he had left before the Portu King sacrificed her. Seo-yoon’s abilities had also climbed so she couldn’t escape alone.

He sent a whisper to Seo-yoon again.

-Now wh...ere?

It also wasn’t easy to say short words. His body was cold and in pain.

-I’m trapped in a carriage that is continuing to move. I thought I’d go to a palace but it seems I’m to be locked in a tower. I’ve been listening to the soldiers and it seems like it will take one day to arrive. I’ll inform you of my location once I’m trapped.

Seo-yoon indifferently replied.

-Y...es, fi...rst te..ll me t...he c...ity. I w...lll go and g...et y...ou l...ater.

-Yes. Come slowly.

Weed had restored his health and vitality but it was still difficult.

‘I can’t stay in the vicinity of the village so I need to go to a place with no monsters.’

He lacked physical strength and had to walk slowly. He continuously surveyed the area to ensure no dangerous monsters were nearby.

-Vitality has decreased due to excessive movement in a fragile body.

The movement will cause strain.

Health has decreased by 6 due to the Black Disease.

5 hours should be plenty of rest.

When he moved his body, the Black Disease was aggravated and his health decreased.

If he tried to walk a little faster then his vitality would drop.

Judging by his current state, he would die from the Black Disease before the 3 days were over.

‘It is hard to walk. It might be better if I just collapse and die.’

Although he had fought with Barkhan, he never felt this tired that he just wanted to collapse. It was the domain of monsters once he got away from the village. Weed needed to exert a lot of effort to avoid or hide from the monsters.

‘I need to think about it. Small errors of judgement can’t be tolerated. I need to decide where to go and what should be done.’

The urgent will to live! Weed’s quest had sent him on a long journey. He had to live. In reality, if his body was sick then he could lose everything. The situation was frustrating but it could get better if someone empathized with him.

His weakened body caused his spirit to strengthen. After leaving Boden village, a wide plain and forest stretched out in front of him.

‘I’d rather go towards the trees.’

If he entered the forest then the path was steep and there were many monsters. But it was also dangerous in the fields and he was an easy target. Weed moved quietly while checking the safety of the forest. He hid his body in the bushes as kobolds and goblins passed.

“I’m hungry.”

“Let’s hunt quickly.”

“Kikikik!”

Even the kobolds were a fearful existence!

‘The sun hasn’t set yet. I have to find a safe place before then.’

He couldn’t hide quickly. Once the sun set, the monsters would become stronger and start to roam. Then it would be really dangerous.

‘This body....’

The body that could jump off a wyvern couldn’t even climb a tree now. Nodulle was weak but the real blame lay in the Black Disease. Weed utilized all his experience and walked slowly. He hoped to find a house belonging to a hunter. But if that wasn’t possible then he wanted a place where he could cover himself up.

‘A cave.’

Weed stared at the deep, dark cave and contemplated on whether to go inside.

‘At times like this, I have to be cautious because I can’t expect to be lucky.’

He hid in the bushes and observed the cave. And after a while, a bear left the cave and headed elsewhere.

‘I almost died.’

Normally a bear meant leather and meat but now it was an existence similar to a dragon!

‘Once night comes, there is no place to hide safely in this forest.....’

The starving wild animals would also be really dangerous.

‘I have to go to the territory of the kobolds.’

Weed moved carefully to the border of the kobold territory. He was more afraid of the wildlife and weak monsters than the kobolds who moved in groups. If he was in their territory then he didn’t need to worry about other beasts.

“It is time to go hunting.”

“Follow the kobold leader!”

The kobolds moved in groups of 20. They were monsters with a command system and preferred a systematic life. Weed observed the kobolds in the forest and avoided them. It was unreasonable to move further due to his vitality and health.

‘I have no choice but to entrust my life to the heavens.’

Weed stayed up all night while crouching down. The good news was that he had a lot of beef jerky so he wasn’t going to starve.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Kiyahh!”

“How exciting! Smash everything!”

“Huhuhu, it is my turn after Geomchi-127!”

The Geomchis were currently completing their Master Quest.

-Subdue the rebel army of Pallisar

Rebels have taken control of Pallisar Fort. Subdue them quickly.

You shouldn’t die in battle and render large achievements as martial artists.

Level of Difficulty: Martial Artist Master Quest.

Quest Restrictions: Weapons Mastery Advanced Level 8. A party of 30 people can be composed.

The strong point was that they could combine swords, hammers, axes, bows and spears to attack! The Geomchis used all types of weapons to attack the rebels occupying the fortress.

But countless number of arrows were pouring towards them. The opponent in a fight needed to be strong.

“Men shouldn’t talk a lot.”

Geomchi-3!

He took off his jacket in front of the gate and revealed all his muscles. It didn’t matter if his defence fell. The wild beauty and pride in his muscles was the utmost priority!

He was excited about the Martial Artist Master Quest due to the increasingly strong enemies.

“Go!”

The spear in Geomchi-3’s hand started to spin at a formidable pace. The arrows from the rebels poured down but they all bounced off the rotating spear. This was a skill Geomchi-3 received

when Weapons Mastery reached advanced level 8. It maximized the power of whatever weapon he handled. It was possible to apply this to swords and spears as well.

“Crush. Shortwave!”

Geomchi-3's spear struck the gate with all his might. There was a noise like a thunderbolt was falling as the gates were destroyed.

“Let's go!”

Geomchi-3 cried in a loud voice.

Like a starving beast, he ran through the gates to subdue the rebel army.

“The Master Quest has already advanced this much.”

“That's right Teacher-nim!”

Geomchi and Geomchi-2 had completed the rebel subduing quest first. Therefore, they could now create a new Weapons Mastery skill.

There were endless possibilities involved with the Weapons Mastery skill. They could handle all weapons so they could make any skill related to a weapon. Even if only a sword, spear and bow skill was produced, the combined power could make Geomchi

stronger than the military.

Geomchi-2 politely waited for his master to produce the skill first. They followed a well-structured plan for their future and didn't delay it. Their style was to create a Weapons Mastery skill straight away!

“I....”

Geomchi decided immediately.



Geomchi-5 met a woman during a quest.

A female cook holding a ladle over a boiling iron pot! She was selling soup for those about to enter a dungeon.

“Please eat. It is delicious.”

The female user Rosen sold meat soup for 2 silver. The soup bowls were carefully made by Morata's novice ceramists.

“One more bowl.”

Geomchi-5 cleaned out the soup.

Rosen was a novice user who only reached level 60. But skill was more important than level when it came to cooking. The soup contained various types of spices. Rosen laughed and handed him another bowl of soup.

“Is it tasty?”

“Everything is delicious when you are hungry.”

“.....”

Geomchi-5's insensitive way of talking!

“Give me one more bowl.”

“Again?”

“I'm hungry.”

Geomchi-5 ate seven bowls before entering the dungeon. Ever since then, he appeared every day to drink the soup.

“Welcome.”

“Two bowls of soup please.”

“Thank you very much. I'll give you a lot of meat.”

“Hmm.”

Many people gathered around Rosen who was engaging in business. This was close to a famous dungeon so many merchants and guests came to taste her cooking.

Geomchi-5 drank the soup every day and greeted Rosen. Rosen had a good impression of Geomchi-5 who came to eat daily.

“This must be your favourite soup.”

“It is tasty.”

“The food from other chefs are also good....”

The expression that secretly hoped he would say her cooking was the best!

Keook!

Geomchi-5 replied with a burp.

“This is a lot cheaper.”

“T-there is no other reason?”

“Well, everything is the same once it enters the stomach.”

Rosen was still an amiable woman. The blunt appearance of Geomchi-5 who hunts in the dungeon and returns to eat all his food left a deep impression on her.

Geomchi-5 was also wearing great level 400 equipment. The other guests admired his equipment when he ate at the restaurant.

‘A person like that coming everyday just to eat my 2 silver soup. He likes me. But he is too shy to express it.’

Rosen spoke to others kindly every time Geomchi-5 had a meal.

“I really like the Arpen Kingdom.”

“Why?”

“People are organized. I can’t forget the first taste of porridge someone gave me while carrying stones to build the Cathedral.”

“So you became a chef?”

“Yes. I want to cook good porridge for people. And my specialty at school is food.”

“You must be learning the science of cooking rice.”

“Huh? I’m a food and nutrition major.”

“Isn’t that just rice?”

Rosen’s body trembled at Geomchi-5’s ignorance.

“But isn’t that specialty divided into several parts?”

“What do you mean?”

“Korean, European, Chinese, Japanese food, etc.”

“That is....”

Usually there was a misunderstanding about the food nutrition department.

They learnt about balanced diets, new food ingredients development, microbiology, chemistry etc. but people just thought they learnt a variety of food cuisines.

“Do you have qualifications in cooking?”

“.....”

“You should systematically learn dishes.”

Rosen wanted to hit Geomchi-5 with her frying pan and ladle.

Book 34: Sculpture That Makes A Miracle

Chapter 1: Nodulle's Suffering

“O...uch, ther...e are no p...arts of my b...ody t...hat i...sn’t in p...ain.”

Weed opened his eyes in the morning. His whole body was throbbing due to the Black Disease and he didn’t have his usual power.

“S...tat window.”

Character Name Nodulle Alignment None

Level 37 Profession None

Title Family’s Heir Fame 53

Health 69 Mana 282

Strength 19 Agility 16

Vitality 23 Wisdom 95

Intelligence 77 Leadership 5

Art 3,153 Luck 5

Attack 3 Defence 4

No Magic Resistance

Status: Dying from a serious illness.

Maximum health has decreased by 13%.

Recovery rate of your health has slowed.

The seizure symptoms will become more frequent on the 2nd day.

“I r...eally s...eem to be dy...ing.”

Weed currently only had enough vitality to slightly move his body. But he couldn't really walk through the forest to another village to obtain a cure!

Then a bush growing nearby caught Weed's eye. He had come into the territory of the kobolds to sleep so the area he rested in had many bushes.

‘Those are....’

He could see various types of herbs. Weed's spirit became clear

like he saw money that fell down.

‘Nodulle also survived in a similar situation. Then there is clearly a way.’

It was a hopeless situation but Nodulle used every type of method to live. Weed had planned to use the Sands of Time to see Nodulle’s action in the past. But now he didn’t need the Sands of Time.

The moment he saw the herb, he realized what Nodulle did.

-Local diseases can be treated when several common herbs are combined. Many cures can be produced and the residents can win against the disease.

That was written on the piece of paper he found in the old mansion on Borota Island! Weed pulled out the piece of paper with trembling hands.

There were dozens of local diseases written down. The reason he obtained this piece of paper was probably because of the Black Disease.

‘Black Disease. Black Disease....’

-Black Disease

Mainly occurs in the swamp area of the Keltun Kingdom. But the

disease can travel to distant places using flies and mosquitos.

Thistle, field horsetail, nettle, Chinese evergreen oak and thorny roots.

It isn't a complete cure but can help someone push through the Black Disease.

He came into the forest already so it wasn't hard to find the ingredients needed for the Black Disease cure. He put them in a bowl, grinded them together and placed it to his mouth.

Ddirring!

-The Black Disease cure manufactured by Nodulle has been eaten.

Time is necessary for the medicine to spread through your body. If the manufacturing is incorrect then side effects may occur.

Weed shook as he waited for the medicine to kick in.

'It will be unfortunate if I die from such a thing. I've almost learnt all the secret techniques only to die in vain from the Black Disease.'

The negative thoughts that frequently entered! A swamp was cold and damp so it was an easy place to become ill. However once his vitality, strength and level rose, he didn't pay attention to

illnesses anymore. If he was level 50 then this disease wouldn't be enough to take his life.

Weed had desperately struggled on a turbulent sea during a storm for several days without getting symptoms of a cold. Yet he got the Black Disease during the final secret sculpting technique quest and his survival was at risk. It was lucky that he hadn't thrown away Nodulle's piece of paper.

'I couldn't engage in business. Maybe that was a fortunate thing. It is like an employee embezzling money that caused a building to collapse, making the redevelopment team be fired....'

-Your body's condition has improved.

Health and vitality has recovered to the maximum.

The Black Disease has weakened.

"T...his is t...he r...ight m...edicine."

He was sick so the only thing he could do was eat and sleep. And after a while, a message window popped up.

Ddirring!

-Treatment of the Black Disease has been completed.

It was possible to treat the body through Nodulle's knowledge.

Your life has been preserved.

Weed was grateful to survive.

He had safely completed another step of the final secret sculpting technique quest. But despite getting over the Black Disease, his stat window showed that he was still Nodulle and level 37.

“W...hat is g...oing to ha...ppen now?”

A message window showing a new quest appeared.

Ddirring!

-Rescue Hilderun

Hilderun has been caught by the Portu King.

She will die after being used as a tool in a magic experiment. You have to rescue her before it is too late.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: The remaining time is unknown.

The quest will fail if Hilderun dies.

* Please note

The quest must be completed as Nodulle.

Sculpting is available.

The use of anything other than sculpting will reduce your stats and level. This will apply even after returning to your original body.

The sculptures or elementals created can't follow you when time becomes normal.

-The quest has been given.

You can't refuse.

‘There isn't even one good condition.’

Weed was hungry so he ate beef jerky. His body was recovering so he didn't need to worry about kobolds.

He had enough mana to briefly use Sculpting Blade. It wasn't possible to show off the power of a level 40 but it was enough to

defeat the kobolds. But he had no confidence about saving Hilderun from the Portu King.

“I don’t know the internal structure and defence system. Seo-yoon said it as a tower but I don’t know the precise one she is trapped in. Getting permission to access it is impossible.”

The Black Disease was healed and he was recovering his vitality while thinking out loud.

“Right now, Seo-yoon and I aren’t at the standard to even defeat one Royal Knight.”

Common sense was required to solve even the most basic of quests! Even if he knew the full structure before Seo-yoon died, it was impossible for him to break in and take her out.

“Do I have to give up here? Then I might be able to take care of my life.”

If he gave up the quest then Weed and Seo-yoon could return to their original time zone alive. This was currently the wisest path.

The difficulty of the final secret sculpting technique quests was incredibly high. He had built up numerous skills and stats but now he couldn’t even take advantage of it.

“It is a lie that hard work and effort is enough in this world. As expected, community leaders and politicians are experts in lying!”

He released his stress by blaming other people. It was difficult so he thought about the Sands of Time again. He was interested in how Nodulle and Hilderun’s story continued. Surely they didn’t become frustrated and end here.

“I have to try it out. If a difficult quest like this has a time limit then I can’t wait any longer.”

Weed took out the pouch that contained the Sands of Time.

“Sands of Time!”

-The Sands of Time has been used.

The axis of time has been shaken and the past shown.

Can be used 2 more times.

-New information about the item has been acquired after using the Sands of Time.



Nodulle created the cure near Boden vllage and ate it immediately. And the next morning, he requested help from nearby villages and nobles to rescue Hilderun.

“It is futile. Your woman is as good as dead so you should just give up.”

“You are crazy. Why should the Count meet you?”

“I don’t want to hear anymore. I don’t want to be dragged to a battlefield!”

They heard his story but none of the villagers, nobles or guards showed interest. Nodulle looked for people to help but there was no one. Naturally it was impossible for nobles protest against the Portu King. A world where justice had collapsed!

Nodulle was frustrated but a chance came after one week. The hostile country the Raum Kingdom invaded the Portu Kingdom. The Portu King led the military to the battlefield to fight. And Nodulle used that chance to rescue Hilderun.

It was good if he could rescue Hilderun safely but the knights were protecting the place where she was staying. In addition, the Portu King returned earlier than expected after being defeated by the Raum Kingdom.

The magicians of the Raum Kingdom used their skills to block the King’s black magic while the Portu Kingdom’s army was defeated. The Portu King barely returned alive with the soldiers while the Raum Kingdom immediately surrounded them.

The day when the palace was collapsing and burning. Nodulle headed towards the place where Hilderun was kept. The Royal Knights and soldiers were on the verge of death around him.

While siege weapons and magic were breaking down the castle, Nodulle moved through the collapsed walls, rubble and fire.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Ah, that really is terrible suffering.”

Weed was full of admiration. And he repented.

“I thought I was unlucky and experienced a lot of crises but I wasn’t really suffering.”

He lived an ordinary life like a library employee when compared to Nodulle. Looking at the video was like watching an action and thriller movie. It was a situation where the protagonist was about to die but someone survived.

Nodulle had almost died at least 17 times retrieving the key, reaching the tower and getting Hilderun out.

“How impressive. The problem is that I need to be in Nodulle’s position to solve the quest.”

Weed wasn’t excited about it. He grasped the terrain and tower

where Seo-yoon was trapped due to Nodulle's behaviour. It was considered an impregnable fortress in the Portu Kingdom in this time. The region was steep and it was a natural fortress.

If he made even the slightest mistake then this weak body would fail the quest. In fact, it was a miracle that Nodulle lived until he reached the tower. It seemed impossible but he somehow managed it.

Escaping from Portu with Hilderun was an entirely different problem. Although they had met up with each other, it was hard to escape from the collapsing castle.

“There is another fundamental problem.”

Weed wasn't Nodulle. If he made a small error while repeating the past then unexpected circumstances could occur. Even if he imitated Nodulle, there was no guarantee that everything would happen exactly the same.

A piece of ceiling might collapse on him when Weed passed or he might encounter a Royal Knight that Nodulle hadn't. It was impossible to align every behaviour with the correct time. It was possible to consult the video but that didn't mean he could repeat the actions!

“It isn't easy to handle even knowing this. And I also gained new information about the Sands of Time. Inspect!”

-Sands of Time.

It is possible to use 2 times.

Sands of Time, a mysterious sand that can recollect things.

A treasure from the southern desert that can look back in time.

It is possible to return to your original time to bring goods or people.

Possessing it can allow the past to be edited.

A bit of information about the item was added.

“I can bring goods or people....hrmm.”

Weed was currently alone so he felt like this quest had no possibilities at all. So far he had overcome countless difficulties so if there was a slight degree of hope then he should try it.

“No matter how well prepared I am, the chance of success is low. I have no choice but to use the Sands of Time. Sands of Time!”

-The Sands of Time has been used.

The axis of time has shaken so you can return to your original

time to bring goods or people to the past.

Are you sure you want to use it?

Watching Nodulle save Hilderun was useful. But he needed a rise in power to solve the fundamental problem.

“I will return to my original time.”

-The axis of time on the Versailles Continent has changed and you have returned to your original time.

It is possible to collect the necessary goods or people.

Can be used 1 more time.

Restrictions: Limited to bringing only 1 person and goods that you can carry directly.

You have to return after three days. Otherwise, the crack in time will fray and you can't return to this time zone.

The Sands of Time gushed out from the leather pouch and filled the air. After a while, the still grass, trees and forest completely changed.

‘I have returned to my original time.’

The forest was filled with other users.

“Oh, it is too hard to collect a set of kobold weapons.”

“I’ve already tried 7 times and if it isn’t possible this time then I’ll give up.”

“I told you that it would be better to buy new steel weapons at the stores.”

A party consisting of 4 users was talking while walking.

“But I can’t. I need to collect a lot of money to pay for that.”

“Shall we go to Kantul Dungeon?”

“Yes. It is best to raise our level there.”

The Kantul Dungeon was very popular among beginners in the Lasalle Kingdom.

‘This is the land of the Haven Empire.’

The Haven Empire had expanded and Weed was now in their territory.

“Hello.”

“Yes, hello.”

“Would you like to go hunting together?”

“Nope. Right now I’m taking the road to the city.”

“I wish you a good day.”

“Yes. Have fun hunting.”

Weed exchanged light greetings and walked past them. No one would think that a person inside the kobold’s hunting ground was Weed.

‘There’s only one person who will be really useful.’

Weed sent a whisper to Yurin.

-Little sister, do you want pizza tonight?

-I understand. Wait there.

Yurin was quick and noticed what he wanted without needing to explain. She was aware that he wanted her to use Picture Movement.

★★

“Huhuhu, this dungeon hunt. It isn’t too hard!”

Pale quietly shot his bow in the underground pit. He had specifically ordered high strength arrows for today.

The steel arrows were 20 times more expensive but the penetration, accuracy and range couldn’t be compared to normal arrows.

“Each one is worth 15 gold? The arrows are too expensive.”

“It is literally high strength. Only a few blacksmiths can create these arrows. They are busy making these orders all day. It is hard for even Mapan to obtain it.”

“Even so....”

“What about the others? Pale-nim is cultivating and selling land.... If you find it difficult then purchase it later.”

“I’ve brought it intentionally.”

“Well, I’m trying to sell 2,000 arrows so I’m forced to take a little damage.”

“That much isn’t necessary.... I’ll buy it.”

“If you buy everything then I’ll reduce it to 1 gold.”

So 2,000 arrows were purchased!

Pale felt like he was firmly hit in the back of the head but he believed in Mapan. He didn’t pay close attention to money transactions in the past but he didn’t want to order unnecessary goods. But Mapan’s thick belly showed that he was a successful merchant.

“Money is always needed once you level up.”

However, it would be okay if he succeeded in this quest.

The Niflheim Empire!

The marks of its former glory were left in the north. The residents submitted to the Arpen Kingdom so reconstructing the Niflheim Empire had become impossible.

While gathering information about a quest, Pale heard about archers from the Niflheim Empire who caused a fierce wind when firing a bow. Thus he proceeded with the quest to learn the skills.

“Lightning struck the valley. It is scary going alone.”

Surka had obtained lightning resistant clothes and ornaments in advance. A thorough preparation for the quest!

She had received a special request from the Monk Guild.

“I often hear your names these days. Be proud of your power as a monk. Every time lightning strikes the valley during a full moon, a monster will appear...it would be great if you could catch it. I will give you these shock resistant gloves as compensation.”

It was possible to get equipment from the request. Romuna entered the deep mountains to raise her fire magic.

“I’m bored in the mountains. If I see a monster then I will burn it to death!”

Irene gave out blessings and treatment in a city. Her level and faith had risen so she could get a position in a religious society. Along with her rise in status in the religious society, she was dispatched to follow paladins and heal them.

While Weed was proceeding with his quest, his other colleagues were developing.

Although Pale and Surka could challenge the Master Quest, they didn’t proceed with starting it. They had seen other people doing the Master Quest and it wasn’t a joke. They could challenge the Master Quest but they were still far from reaching master level in

the skill so they decided to defer it. It would become much easier once other people completed the Master Quest.

And Hwaryeong. She took pride in slowly increasing her charm through music and dance in Morata.

“The Royal Road themed album. I want songs that contain the feel of adventure and combat.”

“Do we have to do this?”

The producers had a headache. They had composed most of the songs on the album yet Hwaryeong wanted to change the feeling of the music.

“Won’t that affect your image? So far you’ve sung about love between men and women and now you want to change the feeling?”

“Music has no boundaries. There is also music in Royal Road. And a few songs are played by instruments in Royal Road. So please contact the best musicians.”

Bellot was recently cast as the main heroine in the drama <Brilliant Property>.

She was cast as a sweet, innocent, pretty but poor girl! Men liked that type.

Chapter 2: Zahab And Queen Evane

The place that Weed arrived at through Yurin's Picture Movement was the Bryce Highlands.

It was a wide and flat grassland in a very high location. Flocks of sheep and beasts like leopards and fire bears were running around. There wasn't any cover so users barely bothered to come here to hunt.

"This is the place where Zahab retired to."

In the past, he had met Zahab at Grapass one of the 10 Forbidden Zones. He had used him for hunting and earning contributions. Weed knew Zahab's fighting skills better than anyone.

'He is strong. And I know how he fights.'

He was also a master at sculpting and sword mastery.

"He is a figure I can't forget."

In his memory, Zahab had been worked like a slave. Of course, he would later return the favour.

'I need to use this opportunity to make him work again.'

The happy memory of clearing dungeons with Zahab in Grapass. Zahab would be a huge help if he wanted to invade Portu's Royal Castle.

In the case of NPCs, if the degree of intimacy or contribution wasn't high then they wouldn't easily follow. Furthermore, high level NPCs needed a large number of contribution before they would move.

That's why Weed had to use a lot of achievement points in the Freya Church when he wanted to drag Alveron along on a dangerous mission. But Weed had a definite means to make Zahab work.

“Summon Sculpture!”

Weed summoned Cerberus.

Covered with a black aura, it was the three headed dog that guarded hell!

Cerberus roared as soon as it arrived.

“Kuuuuong!”

“Shut up, smell this.”

Weed brought a sculpture he previously obtained from Zahab's

house to Cerberus's head. Cerberus raised its head and looked at it. His master had summoned him so he expected a huge battle.

“You can't find it?”

“Bark bark!”

“Let's go, Hound!”

It was treated like a normal dog despite being a guardian of hell! Cerberus sniffed it with the three heads and moved. Weed summoned Yellowy and followed from behind.

“Ummoooooooo. Master, your appearance changed.”

“There were a few circumstances.”

“If you do too many bad things then you will receive punishment....”

“Noisy. You should look at the three heads.”

Cerburus' noses went in various directions as it smelt the ground. It wasn't necessary to wander around looking for Zahab like in Grapass. None of the beasts on the Bryce Highlands dared to attack due to Cerberus so Weed could casually follow. Zahab had put a log house in a place with a good view.

“Building a house in a secluded area surrounded by trees is a residential preference.”

Zahab didn't like settling among people. It was still a secret that he was a Master Swordsman! If a user raised intimacy with him or fulfilled a request then they could learn Radiant Sword. But no user was visiting so he was just casually sculpting in front of his house.

‘That’s great. I’m relieved to see him. This time I will be sure to make him work.’

Weed jumped down from Yellowy and moved forward.

“Zahab-nim, I have come!”

“A guest has come here.”

Zahab wasn't glad to see him. The friendship between them had already fallen.

“What brings you here?”

Zahab immediately asked him. Weed looked at the face of the sculpture that Zahab was making before answering. It was Queen Evane who he still hadn't forgotten.

‘I had a quest associated with Queen Evane but the Royal Knight

had died. 'If I finished that then I could've asked Zahab to save Rosenheim Kingdom from the Embinyu Church.'

It was a shame those days were past.

Right now the Embinyu Church was running rampant so there were many quests to destroy them. Maybe there were continuous connected quests that proceeded from an early stage like Weed. But Weed as well as other users didn't proceed with such quests. As public safety worsened due to wars and dictatorship, the Embinyu Church played a more active role. Numerous things that happened on the Versailles Continent were due to the users themselves.

Weed shrugged off his dissatisfaction and said.

"I have a little problem. You taught me Radiant Sword so I thought you could help."

"We don't have a relationship."

"A person's life depends on it."

"Leave."

The guest was immediately turned away! Weed had a satisfied smile on his face.

He had no intention of complaining. His will wasn't weak enough

to be defeated by something like this.

“Can I carve a sculpture in the area for a while?”

“That is none of my business. But I’d like you to leave when it becomes night. You don’t seem to have any ability now so if you camp then you will die.”

“I will go when it is time.”

Of course, at that time Zahab would be his slave! Weed decided to use earth to form the sculpture. He was a sculpture but right now he was too weak to carve rocks or wood.

‘The thing that matters is the skill used to create the sculpture rather than the material.’

Yellowy and Cerberus dug up dirt from the ground while he created it. A woman’s body with small calves and wearing a skirt!

He needed to sculpt something that caught Zahab’s attention.

“Bark bark! It is disappointing, Master.”

“Ummoooooooo. Something like that! The back of the legs are too thick.”

Yellowy and Cerberus were disappointed. He wasn't making just any sculpture for Zahab but one of Queen Evane. The slightly different point was that she wasn't wearing shabby clothes like peasant girls.

‘There wasn't a lot of time but the form of Queen Evane looks good....’

The form wasn't of a queen but a young Evane! Of course, Zahab was watching with cold eyes. Just creating a sculpting of Evane wouldn't significantly increase intimacy. In some cases, it might actually cause more hostility. This obviously wasn't enough to raise Weed's intimacy with Zahab.

An ordinary sculpture was completed!

“Hrmm, it is well made.”

But Weed was satisfied. It had taken him 20 minutes before he hurried. The important thing was that Evane's appearance was kept intact. He had accumulated a lot of experience making sculptures so far.

‘The penalty is intense but it can't be helped.’

A sculpture that could cause a miracle. Weed used the skill that he had personally created.

“Sculpture Resurrection!”

-Sculpture Resurrection has been used.

The virtuous Queen Evane of Rosenheim Kingdom. She has been called back to this land through art.

45 Art stats have permanently disappeared.

Faith stat has been permanently reduced by 100.

Level has fallen by 3.

70 Health and Mana has been consumed.

The person revived by Sculpture Resurrection will retain their knowledge and ability.

It is only a fixed short time but they are thankful for being able to move in this world again.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpture Resurrection has improved.

The debt of the earthen sculpture! The young and lively sculpture blinked and took a breath. It was for less than a day but Evane had revived again.

Evana and Zahab were stunned as they stared into each other's

eyes.

“Zahab....”

“Evane! Evane, is it really you?”

“Zahab!”

Zahab and Evane embraced each other. The poignant love that endured between two people.

“Zahab, how did this....?”

“Don’t say anything.”

They conveyed messages through their eyes. The scene of the two shedding tears while embracing each other was really inspiring.

“Huhuhu.”

And Weed was laughing evilly in the background! The manly Zahab was crying with pure delight and happiness. The pair was a pleasing sight.

“It is over. This ensures that I can work my slave to my heart’s content.”

Weed didn't neglect the service after that. He had prepared ingredients beforehand so he could cook dishes for Zahab and Evane. The log house was filled with 3 copper decorations and the fireplace gave it a cosy feeling.

On the Versailles Continent, Weed was unmatched in earning achievements, giving flattery and bribery.

Jjoruruk.

Weed took out beautiful wine glasses and spoke with admiration.

"I heard you say it but I was still hesitant... Evana-nim really is beautiful. Now I know why Zahab-nim was so in love."

"Omo, is that so?"

When he flattered Evana, his intimacy with Zahab also rose.

'This is necessary to living in society.'

Clumsy flattery wasn't believable. But if he made sure that admiration came out automatically then it would be profitable.

And the afternoon of the next day!

Evane lived for less than one day before disappearing again like

bubbles. But Zahab would never forget that day with Evane.

-You have accomplished Zahab’s cherished goal.

He will think of you as a benefactor for the rest of his life.

Friendship with Zahab is now 491.

Zahab pulled out his sword the moment Evane turned back into a sculpture.

“Did you say there was a request? A person’s life is in danger? I’ll help. You don’t have to talk about justice. If you ask then I will help unconditionally.”

“Thank you.”

The operation to make Zahab his slave was a success.



There were two days left so Weed quickly gave orders to Mapan.

“I need some luxury sculpting materials.

“Elf wood?”

“Nope. I need difficult to find gemstones such as ivory.”

Normally he used cheap materials but since the final secret technique was at risk, he needed top quality products.

“I will need a bit of time to obtain them.”

“You need to prepare them within two days.”

Mapan made a perplexed expression.

“Are you doing a quest?”

“Yes. The success or failure depends on this.”

“Hrmm, I can’t guarantee that I can do it. As you know, a lot of materials went into the construction of the Haven Empire’s Imperial Palace. I can ask for help for other merchants. I’ll try to get it by the date.”

Mapan scraped everything from the north. Of course, Mapan could afford it.

A merchant received large benefits in the north due to the low taxes. The merchants that ran around developing cities and kingdoms could accomplish large amounts of wealth.

The King of the Arpen Kingdom was bound to notice their activities. However, Weed was very favourable towards merchants. The so-called merchant preferential policy!

‘If the merchants become rich then I can squeeze them later.’

Mapan requests the luxury sculpting materials for other merchants in the north. Usually ordinary merchants wouldn’t cooperate with such a request. But it was well known that Mapan worked closely with Weed so the merchants jumped on this job.

“Where? The materials are on Helsen Island? It was close by but there isn’t a good wind so we will barely meet the time limit. Set sail on the ships!”

“I heard rumours that sculpting materials are buried in Ross River. Can you help me dig? I need to obtain the help of fishermen.”

“Gamong-nim entered the ghost cave. She did it to recover the materials.”

“Lois-nim is wandering through the swamp. I intend to obtain the materials from the ruins of the Niflheim Empire’s Imperial City.”

All the merchants in the north moved to obtain the sculpting materials for Weed.

“We need to recover them in two days.”

While the merchants were running around everywhere, Weed decided to return to the north. It was like playing around the day before a test! Varna Harbour was bustling with adventurous users and people trading.

“The markets are very large.”

There were the Whale Market, Tuna Market and Mackerel Market. Many users came to Varna Harbour to taste seafood.

And the next place he arrived at was Vent Castle!

The Niflheim Empire had surrendered to Weed's Arpen Kingdom and pledged their loyalty. The standard of the residents was high and the attire of the users entering or leaving was also remarkable.

Apart from merchants, users more than level 200 gathered as well as occasional users in the 300s and 400s. Many prestigious guilds had been destroyed by the war on the Central Continent. The users of the guilds that broke up became wanderers. They came to the north so the number of high level users indirectly increased.

Weed walked to the gate. The main entrance and side gates was bustling with users wanting passage. Weed naturally headed towards the front doors!

“Your Majesty, it is an honour for you to visit a humble place like this.”

“Raise your head.”

The knights at Vent Castle’s gates bowed as soon as they saw Weed.

Deng deng deng deng!

Once they heard the bell ringing from the gates, the knights in the interior rushed out and also bowed.

The dignity fit for a king!

“Is that really Weed the God of War?”

“This is the first time I’ve been this close.”

“How? I need to brag to my friends.”

The users were excited by his appearance. All the NPC knights of Vent Castle were bowing in front of Weed. Their loyalty was very high and they sincerely wanted to follow the king. Weed nodded like it was natural.

“I just want to comfortably look around this place like other people. So return to the work that you were doing. Defend the peace and make sure that the residents of the Arpen Kingdom can live comfortably.”

A dignity that seemed like it came from a movie! Nobles normally cringed in fear during times of war but Weed had dignity as king of the Arpen Kingdom.

“I will guide you, Your Majesty.”

“Sir Knight, what is your name?”

“Salomon.”

“Salomon, first I want to go to a weapons store.”

“It is an honour that you came, Your Majesty.”

The real reason he visited Vent Castle was to see how much he could raise taxes but he needed to seem interest in the castle's safety. Weed was able to measure the financial power just by visiting the weapons store. Weapons could tell the level of the blacksmiths and the goods would allow him to determine the number of high level users and what was being hunted.

‘Well, this is amazing.’

Vent Castle had excellent blacksmiths. The dungeons nearby were high levelled so many blacksmith users came. Knights, warriors and hunting parties used Vent Castle as a base so the amount of sales was terrific.

‘The prices are maintained at a very cheap price.’

Normally prices would surge with the increase in users but the Arpen Kingdom was different. Lots of people obtained basic items from hunting monsters and dungeon. Demand for food, minerals, weapons and armour increased.

Even the small villages in the Arpen Kingdom obtained the minimum number of goods due to the merchants shipping them. The efficient distribution of food led to the explosive population growth of the Arpen Kingdom.

‘The prices has to rise more....’

Weed exited the weapons store and headed towards the castle. A knight’s castle!

It was the greatest castle constructed by the Niflheim Empire. The castle’s entrance and room were covered with the finest carpets that made Morata look shabby. The artwork and knight weapons from the Niflheim Empire was preserved.

‘There are a lot of decent equipment.’

Weed could take the equipment used for decoration and sell it.

Of course, then rumours about him being a gold digger would spread among the knights, infamy would rise and there might be a rebellion. It was possible to loot when a hostile kingdom invaded but selling the treasures of the Arpen Kingdom was too much.

Weed also didn't want to use such extreme methods. He had more to lose than gain. He couldn't be careless about how to raise money!

“Local information window!”

-Vent Castle

A castle that belongs to the Arpen Kingdom.

The loyalty of the knights to King Weed is wonderful.

The thick walls have endured for many long years and can repel any type of invasion.

The strong residents are experts at hunting. If given swords and armour then they could become soldiers of the military at any time.

There are many treasures and workmanship dating back to the time of the Niflheim Empire. Over the years, many goods haven't

been used so the castle's finances are rich.

The closed gates has been opened for exchanges.

The expansion of the village has caused a higher birth rate and more residents migrating here.

Military Power: 4,998 Economic Power: 1,421

Culture: 934 Technology: 677

Religious Influence: 23

Local Politics: 79 Influence on Surrounding Areas: 81%

Influence of the old Niflheim Empire: 15.2% (Influence of the military, economy, culture, technology, population and requests in the area)

Urban Development: 199

Hygiene 64 Safety: 98%

The number of residents is increasing but the strong and vigilant knights prevents thieves from entering.

There are training places where knights can change professions

and learn advanced riding tricks.

The major military buildings built by the Niflheim Empire has been maintained.

The territory of the village has expanded outside the castle.

The patrolling knights sweep for monsters and exerts their military influence in the nearby area.

Free knights are gathered.

The residents respect King Weed who built up the Arpen Kingdom in the north. They believe he is the only one who can rebuild the shattered honour of the Niflheim Empire and marvel at his amazing adventures.

The weapons and armour production technology has been passed down. Siege weapons haven't been used for a long time so the production technology is still immature.

The knights aren't scared of an army of monsters and many talented cadets of the Arpen Kingdom are being trained. The knights prioritize pride and loyalty when teaching.

The Niflheim Empire's sharp swordplay has taken on a rugged strength over the years.

Food isn't self-sufficient and they are focused to obtain supplies from outside.

Most of the income comes from hunting or cleaning up monsters.

The residents are positive about more goods and the market has expanded.

Interest in art is lukewarm. Survival came first so they worry more about food and weapons than art.

Children are interested in knights and have no interest in other fields. Recently the reactions to merchants have become more positive.

The local faith now believes in the Arpen Kingdom's Freya and Tyr the God of Battles.

Specialties: Iron swords, iron armour, valuables of the Niflheim Empire.

Territory's Total Population: 33,920

Monthly Tax Revenue: 74, 006 gold

Castle's Operational Expenditures: Military power 64%, economic development 22%, cultural investment 3%, requests and subduing monsters 7%, castle maintenance 4%.

“It is a complete military fortress.”

Morata was a commercial city so Weed was satisfied that it was different from the port city Verna and Vent Castle.

This was necessary to ensure his military strength.

“Vent Castle has a low population and development is slacking. If the population increases and migrants move here....”

The number of trained knights and soldiers diving into enemy lines would multiply in an instant. Of course, the military would eat money but it wouldn't cause a kingdom to go into a deficit.

Slaying monsters and clearing dungeons could secure a safety zone and expand the borders. Users could gain achievements when travelling with knights and the castle would slowly change like Morata.

“A little more investment is needed. I need to make war-era buildings.”

Weed built buildings in Vent Castle.

It was possible to make buildings since he was the king that ruled over the castle. If he left it alone then it would expand but he needed to intervene if he wanted the right buildings in the proper

place.

While completing the quest in the Keltun and Mapon Kingdoms, he had seen a complete military fortress. Architects in towns and cities created twisting alleyways that maximize the beauty of the buildings.

Weed preferred a grid style.

“The land is expensive but architects and merchants can deal with it!”

The territory of Vent Castle and its village was very wide due to their army.

“Increasing the number of houses needs to be prepared in advance.”

Shacks were built at the base of every mountain in the area.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Lee Hyun grilled meat and boiled bean paste soup.

“I need to fill my stomach before proceeding on a big job.”

He cleaned and did his chores before proceeding with the quest.

If he had to take one thing then it would be Seo-yoon. She risked her life when helping in quests and stayed by his side for a long time. However, now she had been captured and was at risk of being killed by the Portu King.

“Well, I feel sorry... It is like when I was 19 years old and saw a girl in kindergarten drinking strawberry milk.”

At that time, he was hungry and had a cold so his condition wasn't good. The cute looking girl was drinking strawberry milk when Lee Hyun spoke.

“Kid.”

The girl opened her eyes and retorted.

“Why, Oppa? No, Ajusshi.”

“Sell me that strawberry milk.”

“I don't want to.”

“I'll give you 200 won.”

“This is 600 won. Don't you know the prices these days?”

Lee Hyun was quite discouraged. He thought a child in

kindergarten would be naive or foolish so he resented this smarter world. Furthermore, politeness and respect towards adults seemed to have disappear.

“Then I will give it to you for 1,000 won because I was drinking it.”

“Go to sleep!”

“Kyah, so delicious.”

He escaped while she drank delicious strawberry milk! He cursed the little girl as he recalled that memory. It was a sad memory that he didn't want to recall anymore. He couldn't help feeling sorry when Seo-yoon received damage helping him.

‘I need to give her a gift. A necklace or earrings... No, that will be expensive. It needs to be a minimum of 100 won.’

Lee Hyun bought flower seeds and scattered them in his yard.

‘I will raise them and make a bouquet.’

But a bouquet of flowers wasn't substantial so it seemed somewhat weak.

‘Instead of a present, should I give a chicken? No, I gave her that last time after the Jigolaths.’

He had used Half Sauce and Half Fried chicken many times. They hadn't started breeding yet but he wasn't stingy enough to offer an unborn chick.

“Well, I guess I will have to buy a bag. A bag is the best gift for a woman.”

Lee Hyun started searching for information.

“Let's see, a suitable bag....”

He searched the internet for the brand of the bag that Seo-yoon used. His body then received a huge shock. His heartbeat seemed to stop before his rigid body relaxed again.

Lee Hyun quietly turned off the computer.

“I'll soak some kimchi.”

Seo-yoon normally ate delivered kimchi. Lee Hyun decided to thank her with kimchi that he soaked with care.



“The construction companies in the Middle East are continuing to delay payment, President-nim.”

“That... Wait a little bit. It is possible to receive it at a later time.”

Seo-yoon’s father, Jeong Deuk-soo who was the president of a company had to go in to work early these days. There were reports with serious content every time the board of directors convened.

“The domestic construction industry?”

“The construction business is becoming increasingly bad. Our company has more than 10,000 unsold apartments. Business is deteriorating so we can’t selling residential land in metropolitan areas isn’t feasible anymore.”

“Then how will we raise the funds?”

“The apartments... The unsold housing should have the price be lower than that of the competitors. And a savings bank is required for loan repayments. However, loan repayment is impossible due to the funding situation of Hosung Construction.”

“The corporate bond expiration dates?”

“Early next year, President-nim.”

The construction side was driven into a crisis due to the lack of new funding. The situation of their biggest affiliate, Hosung Electronics was fairly dangerous.

“Due to Unicorn Corporation launching new models, the products from our company are shrinking rapidly. The flat screen televisions aren’t selling well so the factories have a large deficit. The profit has plummeted by 79% since the second quarter of last year.”

“The home electronics?”

“This is a recession so we haven’t reached the manufacturing cost. The export volume has reduced and the order from our fixed customers aren’t coming.”

“I heard that mobile phone sales have fallen despite a top actor being hired to advertise it?”

“Our brand is losing the competitive edge.... Our software is behind compared to a lot of other businesses.”

President Jeong Deuk-soo sighed with grief.

The management circumstances had worsened in a matter of 2~3 years. The Hosung Corporation was in a recession. The credit rating was pessimistic and corporate bonds had already been issued. Sales were bad so the financial costs were worsening.

“President-nim, you should consider closing down a few production factories overseas.”

“If the market share decreases due to reduced production, do you know how hard it will be to obtain it again?”

“But if this deficit continues then we won’t be able to endure it.”

“We can’t abandon any of the electronics. We need to increase our investment in promoting and restoring the competitiveness of the electronics.”

“There is a lot of pressure to improve our financial structure so getting approval from the credit companies will be difficult.”

Hosung Corporation made a massive investment in electronics to overcome the crisis. However, every attempt was a failure.

“What are their requirements?”

“We’ve been asked to sell Hosung Chemicals, Hosung Construction and Hosung Hotels.”

“Isn’t the construction side the only company that can generate cash now? That is an absurd demand.”

They had 24 affiliates in Korea with the Hosung name but the funding crisis affected all of them.

“I will meet with the Bank Chief.”

President Jeong Deuk-soo decided to negotiate with the credit companies and main bank directly.

Chapter 3: Battle Of Portu's Royal Castle

The northern users gathered the sculpting materials for Mapan within 2 days. The amount of money exceeded 550,000 gold.

‘The amount of materials is sufficient for me to become a sculpting master.’

Fortunately, there was no need to pay money. The Arpen Kingdom was large and several important rights were granted to the merchants.

“I hope things turn out well, Weed-nim.”

“Huhuhut, of course.”

The dictatorship that secretly solicited bribes!

Weed and Zahab returned to the age of war on the third day. He appeared in the forest near Boden village. The valuable materials had been used for the quest.

“First thing we need to do is wait near the place.”

“Then let's do so. I will follow your opinion no matter what.”

They headed on foot towards the capital of the Portu Kingdom. It

was dangerous to travel around as Nodulle due to monsters but he didn't need to worry with Zahab.

Children were dying and starving people were begging in the streets of the city. He knew they were NPCs but he didn't feel comfortably seeing children dying.

“Well, public sentiment doesn't matter to him.”

The Portu King was a warlock so he had no interest in the lives of his people. He would use the time when the Raum Kingdom invaded in order to rescue Seo-yoon.

‘Do I just need to follow the path that Nodulle used?’

Weed was somewhat worried. Nodulle handled the crisis by disguising as a servant and going to rescue Hilderun. The sight of him running between collapsing ceilings, pillars and walls was a breathtaking sight. The risk was too high if he used the same method.

‘I will make a new plan. I can take advantage of several favourable conditions unlike Nodulle.’

Right now he had the help of Zahab and various secret sculpting techniques.

Sculpting Blade!

Until recently it was a useful skill for hunting. Moonlight Sculpting Blade used the light of the moon to interrupt the enemy's magic or special attack. The damage itself was a little weak but the good point was that it ignored the enemy's defence. It was a skill best used against enemies with low health! But his stats and level meant he couldn't use Sculpting Blade.

Elemental Sculpting!

Summoning an elemental consumed mana. Weed was the creator of the elementals but he could only summon them for a short duration.

Sculpture Transformation!

It was very useful but the transformation had its limits. His level and stats were low so it wouldn't be effective even if he transformed himself.

Sculpture Life Bestowal!

It was possible to produce a subordinate. Of course, he would receive bigger damage if they died.

Sculpture Resurrection!

If he could call a suitable hero then he could make them work,

but he had already used it to make Zahab his slave. Therefore it couldn't be used for 1 month.

Great Disaster Nature Sculpting!

His Art stat was maintained so it was his strongest skill. He could now combine disasters to make them even more complex. But Weed's health was now very low so his safety couldn't be guaranteed.

‘Anyway, I have to use them as a whole. And if I build up achievements for the quest...Although my level and Art state is valuable, I shouldn't be reluctant to give it up.’

He decided to choose a more profitable method than Nodulle's choice.

“Kill the Portu King who uses forbidden magic and feed him to the crows!”

“Wahhhh!”

“The worms of Raum have spread to here. Stack them up like a tower. Punish those who want to ravage this country.”

“Slash their throats. Go!”

The army of the Raum Kingdom marched to Portu Kingdom's

capital as scheduled. Portu's Royal Castle was in for a wide, defensive battle. The invading Raum Kingdom army contained 300,000 troops. They were joined by the allied kingdoms Rubens, Gorgul and Tamona.

The majestic view of a great army!

“Smash everything!”

“For His Majesty King Riyas, smash everything without leaving even the foundation behind!”

The siege weapons rolled forward and launched chunks of stones towards Portu's Royal Castle. But Portu's Royal Castle didn't collapse easily.

“Ah, here... The offerings gathered here are sufficient.”

“This day will become a festival of blood.”

“Calais's sickle of death, give me your eyes.”

The evil warlock organization called Energy Seed gathered at the castle.

“Kiyak!”

The Portu monsters devouring the soldiers suddenly became stronger. Soon the gates opened and the demons ran outside. And a battle spread against the allied forces of the Raum Kingdom.

“I’ll wait a little longer.”

Nodulle gained some servant clothes and sneaked into the castle. Weed and Zahab hid in the sewage nearby. There was a disgusting smell but this was the safest place as Nodulle. Good planning often had to sacrifice neatness.

“Until when should we wait?”

“So far there has only been a small uproar. We will watch for 10 more minutes.”

The interior was heavily guarded by Royal Knights so he needed to wait for the chance.

When Nodulle had entered, every hallway had been guarded with knights.

Kuooong!

The impact of the siege weapons hitting the castle reached the place where Weed and Zahab were. The walls were big and thick but it was inevitable that it would collapse.

“Shouldn’t we go now?”

“Please wait a little more.”

Weed showed patience.

He had watched the video of Nodulle and memorized the Portu Kingdom’s military response. He didn’t miss one bit of trivial information when watching the video.

‘It is about time for the south gate to be broken. The warlocks can’t deal with it.....’

“The south gate! They’re flocking through the south gate!”

“Intercept the enemy. Go knights!”

The ground vibrated as many personnel moved. Nodulle had used this chance to enter the Royal Castle.

“Now.”

Weed and Zahab climbed out of the sewer. The place they emerged at was the training place of the knights! Usually it was filled with knights but right now it was empty. There were several soldiers but they soon turned their gazes elsewhere. It was because they wore clothes of the warlocks of Portu Kingdom.

It was difficult for the regular soldiers to question the behaviour of the warlocks. Weed and Zahab had hunted in a dungeon before coming here.

‘The warlocks of Portu. Then there will surely be warlocks in the dungeons.’

The residents had plenty of rumours about places where they were forbidden to step foot in. He found the warlocks inside those dungeons! Hunting the warlocks there increased his infamy and mana by 300.

The warlocks were a fearful existence for general soldiers.

And a carriage soon moved to where they were. Weed went forward.

“Stop here.”

“What is happening? Hurry up and stop the army... Magician-nim.”

“I am here to take over this carriage.”

“That can’t be. I only take orders from the garrison leader Harock-nim.”

“I received orders from Chakujel-nim directly.”

“Then please show me the order.”

The knights inside the carriage were stubborn but their opponent was Weed!

“There are no orders.”

“Then you can’t pass this carriage.”

“Despite the fact that we’re fighting, are you telling me to go back to Chakujel-nim to receive the orders?”

“Rules are rules. We have to uphold martial law.”

“Good. Then look carefully at my face.”

“Eh?”

Weed pulled down the hood covering his face.

“Ah, Bill-nim.”

“Yes. You recognize me.”

“Of course.”

He had examined the appearance of a warlock and used Sculpture Transformation in advance.

“And this is Nulta-nim.”

The flash of gold that proved his identity! Weed had carefully examined the Royal Knights in Nodulle’s video. And had elaborately forged an identity plaque. Weed maximized his sculpting and counterfeiting skills to 300%!

The knight confirmed the identity plaque.

“This is Nulta-nim’s identity plaque.”

“If you don’t believe even with this proof then let’s go to where Chakujel-nim is.”

Chakujel was a notorious warlock in the Portu Kingdom. In addition, he had been the mentor of the Portu King. Many fearful rumours about Chakujel had spread. Meeting him was similar to nailing down the coffin lid!

The knight hesitated before handing over the reins of the horse.

“If it is Bill-nim then I will believe you. We request that you safely return this to us after the battle.”

“Don’t worry.”

Weed and Zahab drove the carriage towards the castle.

-You have convinced the knights of the kingdom.

Wisdom has increased by 1.

The carriage was robbed due to a scam!

Your charm, charisma and wisdom meant things could be stolen without a fight.

Normally Weed’s high charm, charisma and wisdom meant he could easily convince the knights but life wasn’t that easy now. However, they had a false sense of security due to this being the Royal Castle and the knights also feared warlocks.

Weed and Zahab comfortably passed areas protected by knights and soldiers and arrived at the castle’s entrance. An intense battle was occurring outside while the Raum Kingdom had secured the south gate. There was also a roaring sound as siege weapons attacked the area. The entrance of the castle was protected by the Royal Knights.

“Stop, what can we do for you?”

“I have some special materials needed for black magic.”

“I will check.”

The knight checked the corpses of monsters inside the carriage. The corpses of monsters were a necessary material used by warlocks to create chimeras. Weed knew that a carriage would enter thanks to Nodulle’s video and decided to use this.

“I didn’t think that Bill-nim would transport it directly. I was notified that these materials were coming in advance. You are granted passage!”

“Work hard.”

He successfully infiltrated the castle without any resistance! Nodulle had almost died 5 times while reaching this point.

‘The time has also been reduced by 7 minutes.’

This reduction in time was important to ensure that he wasn’t hit by siege weapons. He also needed to safely move Seo-yoon to the exit as quickly as possible. The last part of the video showed Nodulle rescuing Hilderun when the castle had been on the edge of collapse.

He didn’t know how Hilderun was rescued after that. Weed didn’t want to encounter that situation so he had to go quickly.

–I’m coming soon so just wait.

Weed sent a whisper to Seo-yoon. Seo-yoon was trapped in darkness at the top of a tower and couldn’t move so she could only send and receive whispers.

–Come slowly. I’ll be waiting.

Seo-yoon spoke like it was okay even if she died! But she couldn’t die in order for the quest to succeed.

“Let’s go.”

Weed and Zahab left the carriage and headed towards the tower.

“Where?”

“To the right side.”

There were enemies everywhere and the carriage had stopped so they could be discovered at any time.

‘I am fighting against time. I need to reach the tower as soon as possible before I’m discovered.’

More than 30 guards were walking around while armed. Nodulle hadn’t encountered them but now he was early.

“What are you doing?”

The soldiers asked politely first because he was a warlock. Weed whispered in a low voice so that only Zahab could hear.

“Zahab-nim, from now on you have to get rid of everyone who sees us. There is no time to waste on a conversation.”

“Yes, I’ve heard and experienced many things while coming here so I am sure they are bad people.”

“Of course. Zahab-nim is doing the right thing.”

Weed’s specialty was inciting people!

“Moonlight Sculpting Blade!”

Zahab used a sword skill. Brilliant light was emitted like falling autumn leaves and cut the soldiers. As expected from a master swordsman!

“How amazing, Zahab-nim!”

Weed clapped and cheered.

‘It is worth bringing him.’

The soldiers were no match for him. A power that could get rid of dozens of soldiers quickly! 3~4 soldiers ran away but that was unrelated.

They might be noticed but the Raum Kingdom's army was going to enter soon. The warlocks and knights would then become busy trying to stop the siege. Nodulle had come in disguised as a servant and then a prisoner of war of the Raum Knights in order to barely escape the crisis.

“It is this way.”

Weed remembered the terrain seen in the video and led the way. They encountered knights and soldiers but Zahab just took care of it without acknowledging them. Weed couldn't die so he just watched from a distance. Fortunately, Zahab was like a god so Weed was relatively safe.

‘That's great.’

Zahab fought so often it was worth using Sculpture Resurrection. He could've used Sculpture Resurrection to call a stronger historical hero but there was no guarantee they would cooperate.

Especially now that Zahab was willing to die for him. In the worst case situation, Weed could sneak away while the warlocks and knights concentrated on Zahab.

‘Well, he is the one who taught me Radiant Sword and we have sculpting in common.’

The spirit of a sculptor and tremendous loyalty that was better than an assassin!

“Radiant Sword!”

A big archaeopteryx appeared when Zahab used Radiant Sword and swept away everyone in the area. All the knights and soldiers were taken down.

“As expected... There is no doubt that he will win. Then we should go to the next place.”

It didn’t matter if Zahab was slightly injured or had his vitality drop since they had no time.

Weed encountered 6 battles as they moved towards the tower. He had to carefully survey the area since his current strength was weak.

“Emergency! It is an emergency!”

“Everyone gather in front of the south gate in order to fend off the enemy knights!”

The troops in the castle moved quickly as the knights of the

Raum Kingdom entered. The troops moved to the castle entrance to stop them.

Weed and Zahab hid behind stacked hay or pillars to avoid the moving troops. The quest required saving Seo-yoon so there was no need for unnecessary battles.

“There.”

Weed and Zahab arrived at a corner where he could see the tower.

“Those guys are tough. I’ve finally met opponents worth fighting after a long time.”

Zahab murmured as he looked at the entrance of the tower. The Royal Knights protecting the entrance of the tower looked formidable. Only the King and warlocks were allowed to enter so Nodulle couldn’t penetrate through them.

When he looked at the video, he estimated that the knights were in the mid-400’s but were strengthened by black magic! If the knights of the Raum Kingdom hadn’t arrived then Nodulle wouldn’t have a chance at all.

But there were many demons in the tower. Nodulle climbed the sheer wall of the tower and almost died twice. Usually he could be caught but there was a battle unfolding in the yard. The archers were all focused on the external enemies and didn’t notice Nodulle

creeping up the tower.

Of course, it was close but that time hadn't occurred yet. Weed calculated that he was 30 minutes faster than Nodulle. That time would be a very big asset in moments of crisis.

“We're going to the building next door.”

The hall of the warlocks! Various black magic related books and study materials were available there and it was a place for novice warlocks to begin. Weed and Zahab went up the stairs of the empty building.

“And this is....”

It was a rope with a hook attached that he prepared after seeing Nodulle's video! He planned to rise quickly on foot towards the general level where Seo-yoon was trapped on the tower next door. If he succeeded then he could rise from the 5th floor of the tower towards the 7th floor.

He needed to obtain the secret keys for the 5th, 6th and 7th floor but the video allowed him to know where they were hidden. Most of the dangerous elements were also outside.

“Catch!”

Weed threw the hooked rope towards the tower. And it felt it connect after a while.

“I will go first.”

Weed stepped forward as he tied the rope and climbed aboard it. The destination was the 5th floor but there was a considerable distance from the height of the general building.

Kuaaaaang!

He turned as he felt something flying to the left. A large fireball from a siege weapon has flown past him with a black smoke tail.

“Aigoo!”

Weed flattened his body close to the rope. The fireball had narrowly brushed past him.

“I almost died.”

Weed briefly looked back and had a panoramic view.

“S-save me!”

“The 4th Infantry Division has taken control of the castle’s east walls!”

“We won’t accept any members of the Portu Kingdom as

prisoners so behead them all!”

There were the endless screams of the soldiers in the background and the siege weapons continued shooting fireballs. Fire and smoke spread everywhere as the calm of the Royal Castle was disrupted.

When looking at the history books, Portu’s Royal Castle that had been considered a beautiful fortress had been destroyed on this day and only rubble remained.

Nodulle had entered the tower as ceilings and walls were collapsing so Weed was in a fairly comfortable position right now.

While Weed had stopped for a while, Zahab grabbed the rope and started climbing.

“Go quickly.”

Bizarre creatures were also starting to fly in the sky. The demons that the warlocks had summoned!

Kkirit kkiririt!

A demon with a long head and legs approached Weed and Zahab.

This was the risk of coming early.

“I haven’t even reached half-way yet.”

Weed painfully clung to the rope. His strength and vitality was weak so he couldn’t easily climb the rope. Not to mention his low health. If he was pecked or fell down then he would die instantly!

“I will buy some time so continue climbing upwards. You have to live and rescue you sweetheart.”

Zahab went out to take care of it.

“Radiant Sword!”

Despite hanging in the rope in an uneasy position, birds of prey made of light shot forward and blocked the approach of the demons.

‘As expected from Zahab.’

It was good that he brought Zahab here. It was like getting bonus jajangmyeon when buying jjampong.

Weed didn’t pay attention to the battle and slowly climbed up the rope until he hit the 5th floor of the tower.

“As expected, there is nothing.”

An empty corridor. Now there were only two obstacles remaining before he reached Seo-yoon.

Traps and guards with the keys!

Nodulle had barely managed to overcome the traps and guards. It would've been impossible if the Portu Kingdom wasn't falling but he had bribed the guards with jewels to give him the key.

It was a difficult quest but Weed knew the terrain thanks to Nodulle. After a while, Zahab followed him in.

Kkirik kkiriririk!

The gap was too small for the demons to enter no matter how many times they tried so they flew away towards other enemies.

“Let's go!”

He knew the exact location of the traps. Nodulle had overcome the danger of the traps due to his knowledge of architecture and machines.

“Wait!”

Weed stopped Zahab as they stepped into a passage with a trap.

“You have to be careful. This place isn’t ordinary.”

“There is nothing. Go quickly.”

“Well, there is a large danger that is hidden. I know the interior of the tower based on my knowledge of architectural design....”

Weed touched the stone wall.

“This wall will shoot out poisoned steel. If I remove this brick here...”

He was acting like Nodulle. And there was the sound of a small gear moving as the trap was turned off.

“It is now safe.”

“That’s really great.”

“It is a basic part of being a sculptor. Let’s continue.”

Acting smug whenever he dismantled a trap!

-The trap has been neutralized.

The Dismantle Trap skill has been generated.

Knowledge has increased by 1.

This was a skill that thieves mainly received. Of course, this wasn't a useful technique if Weed was in his normal state. In his previous dungeon hunts, he would look at the monsters to determine where the traps were. Then he would just take it with his body or use Van Hawk.

“Ah, I'm worried. This invasion of the Portu Kingdom...doesn't it seem like it is going to collapse? Then how will I live in the future?”

There was a sentry anguishing on the 7th floor of the tower. Nodulle gave money to persuade him but Weed didn't need to do that.

“Zahab-nim.”

“What is it?”

“Kill that guy!”

Zahab could take care of him for free!

“He is a little weak to kill. His body is also pathetic.”

“He is a pawn of those people. He helped sacrifice many innocent

people....”

Seokeok!

Zahab hesitated for a while but cut the sentry after learning he was the warlock’s henchman.

In fact, the sentry was a naive youth but took the task of keeping the key in order to feed his family. But Zahab was told a story so that he would kill. He could be bribed with 1,400 gold but Weed didn’t want to waste money so he had Zahab kill the sentry.

-You have acquired the No. 54 Key.

The key to Seo-yoon’s prison was obtained!

He had obtained 30 other keys but those places were empty or the wrong place. Rescuing the prisoners would be useful when escaping but most of them had been experimented on and would often attack.

“Here.”

Weed inserted the No. 54 key into the iron door and turned it.

Cheolkeol.

The lock of the iron door was opened.

“I came to rescue you!”

Weed let Zahab open the iron door. It was to avoid dangerous situations so he could live longer! Fortunately there weren't any knights, monsters or warlocks as Seo-yoon was locked up alone.

But her perfect skin had completely turned black. Her skin had turned black like a dark elf.

“What is this? Even if it was scorched by the sun, her skin wouldn't turn dark like this.”

Weed checked that there was no danger and approached Seo-yoon.

Ddirring!

-Rescue Hilderun has been completed.

Fortunately, Hilderun is still alive. But the Portu King has already offered her to a devil.

“This is... Why is it like this?”

Weed thought it was ridiculous. Nodulle had definitely come to

rescue Hilderun on this day. In fact, his arrival time was actually faster. Nevertheless, she had already been offered as a sacrifice to the magic experiment!

Then an idea passed through Weed's head.

‘Don't tell me Nodulle didn't rescue Hilderun?’

No one knew exactly what happened to Nodulle and Hilderun. It was possible that it ended unhappily like most love affairs.

And a short video played in front of Weed.

Nodulle arrived at the top of the tower and opened the iron door. He sobbed as he discovered the trapped Hilderun.

“I....I'm too late.”

Nodulle carried Hilderun.

“It is not over yet. She is still alive. I won't give up until the end. I will revive you even if you were offered to the devil.”

And Nodulle carried Hilderun out of the door.

Ddiring!

-Save Hilderun

A devil is sleeping inside Hilderun's body.

The best saint on the continent, Ahellun sealed the devil previously.

Interfere with the devil summoning ritual in the time remaining. You must destroy the seal binding Hilderun's spirit and vitality.

If you break the sealing bead that the Portu King hid away then Hilderun's spirit will wake up.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: Colleague won't wake up until the quest ends.

Colleague will turn into a devil after 5 hours and the quest will fail.

* Please Note

If the devil is summoned, then it will indiscriminately destroy the Raum Kingdom and its allies and significant changes will occur to the history of the Versailles Continent.

The mighty forces of the devil will appear on the continent and

the Portu King will continue living. If this quest fails then the devils will descend to earth.

And after that, the history of the Versailles Continent will change completely.

This would have a large effect on the continent as devils emerged in the Portu Kingdom.

Weed's quest would have an enormous influence on the entire continent! If the kingdoms and users received damage then they would heavily blame him.

“Well, the good news is that this isn't the north.”

It was somebody else's problem so the burden decreased for Weed. If the Portu Kingdom swallowed the Raum Kingdom and its allies then it would even effect the Haven Empire in the present.

It was possible to deal a serious blow to the Hermes Guild who was conquering the continent. But he couldn't deliberately fail the quest. It was amazing as the contents of the quest became increasingly bigger. They spent a peaceful few weeks on the island before experiencing this large adventure.

Weed wasn't the same as other males. Even if he met someone he loved, he didn't want to experience the cost of the wedding, honeymoon, housing and other expenses. Everyone had a vague idea about meeting a suitable partner but the process wasn't that

easy. If there were children from the marriage then he also needed to feed them pork.

Weed had prepared in advance for having a baby in the future.

‘I’m raising 3 pigs in the yard.’

Livestock to reduce the food costs!

“I thought I just needed to escape the castle but now I need to destroyed the sealing bead.”

He could determine the difficult just from hearing the contents.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Hrmm, um, something like this...”

Yoo Byung-jin continued to look at Weed’s adventures with admiration. The behaviour itself was simple but he needed to calculate the terrain, timing and strategy.

“Yes, he is called the God of War or King of Adventures for a reason.”

Weed had great adventures from his time in Continent of Magic and that continued to Royal Road. He had used his accumulated

knowledge and experience to find Seo-yoon. But the fun was starting now. He couldn't escape from the castle but needed to plunge into more danger to break the sealing bead.

He would need to confront the knights, warlocks and Raum Kingdom troops invading the castle. There were many situations where he could die so it would be really difficult to survive.

The Sands of Time still had one use remaining but there was no meaning in using it now. Weed's circumstances were already different from Nodulle's due to his actions.

“Maybe the secret sculpting technique quest will end today.”

Yoo Byung-jin couldn't move his eyes from the monitor. He looked at Weed stabbing some soldiers and killed them. Zahab could easily take care of such a situation but he was fending off some knights. Stones falling from the ceiling also almost killed Weed and Seo-yoon.

Beep beep beep.

Then an alarm rang at the back of the monitor. Yoo Byung-jin asked the AI without looking away.

“Tell me what is going on.”

–The board of directors of Unicorn Corporation is convening. Several outside directors are presenting an agenda to increase cash

dividends and interference in corporate management.

“The reaction of the executives?”

–It is difficult. Unicorn Corporation possesses abundant funds so they’re not worried about the investment plans hindering new businesses.

It is difficult to refuse the foreign outside directors due to political, public and media pressure from our country and abroad.

The growth rate of Unicorn Corporation wasn’t surprising to outside businessmen and financial specialists. Many officials and employees were astonished at Royal Road’s technology and sales.

Other general businesses found it difficult to believe the accounting reports.

Unicorn Corporation also experienced unprecedented success in areas like robotics, environmentally friendly materials, heavy industries, electronics, finance, communications and biotechnology.

They were also becoming increasingly tangled in politics.

“This is a nuisance. What influence do they have on the stocks?”

–Approximately 24.81%.

Unicorn Corporation had listened 36% of their shares as public stocks. The rest was owned by corporations around the world and Yoo Byung-jin.

If Unicorn Corporation's shares were owned by a little company called A, the real owners would be a private company called B or an unlisted organization. But Company B might be managed by Company C and C was an affiliate of a large corporation called D. Yet Corporation D was silently managed by Company E who had invested in them or was a paper company for taxes.

And the final owner was Yoo Byung-jin. He used this snowballing tactic to astronomically grow his property. In the end, Unicorn Corporation was thoroughly owned by Yoo Byung-jin.

“Dispatch the parent company or bank to shake the outside directors. If there is a chance then have Unicorn Corporation take over those companies.”

–It is in progress. The result of this work will be delivered in 3 months.

The artificial intelligence didn't only operate in Royal Road. It moved through Unicorn Corporation's systems present throughout the world and kept watch on the politics, economics, movement of troops, transportation, telecommunications and the internet.

The AI could quickly find the best situation.

-And there is a minor problem.

“What is it?”

Yoo Byung-jin was a little annoyed since he wanted to watch the video of Weed. Usually the executives of Unicorn Corporation and the AI could take care of most problems. But some situations required Yoo Byung-jin’s judgement directly.

-It related to the private life of Weed.

The AI displayed the house where Weed lived in real time.

“That is a good place to live.”

Yoo Byung-jin said as he saw Lee Hyun’s house.

Fruit trees and vegetables were growing in the yard. When looking from an aerial view, the expensive pear trees caught his eye. If he didn’t live in an apartment then he would’ve liked to live in such a house. Management would be a little inconvenient but he could enjoy the peacefulness of the house.

The screen focused on a black car parked near the house.

-They are monitoring him.

“Who are they?” Do they work for his girlfriend’s family?”

He knew that Seo-yoon’s father didn’t really approve of Weed.

The top ranked players in Royal Road. They received the special attention of Yoo Byung-jin. Thus he had arranged surveillance cameras around Lee Hyun’s university and small unmanned surveillance aircrafts around his house.

They were state of the art technology that looked like small flies and fly around Lee Hyun’s house, sometimes sticking to the walls.

–They are working for a private money lender.

“Why are they watching?”

–In the past....

The AI explained everything it knew about the bad relationship between Lee Hyun and the private money lenders.

“Hasn’t their relationship ended yet?”

–It ended a long time ago. But recently the money lenders used the people who owe them debts to jump into Royal Road.

They created a workshop that employs Dark Gamers. They recently learnt that Lee Hyun is Weed the God of War from Continent of Magic. Now those money lenders are targeting Lee Hyun for wicked work.

“How unpleasant.”

Yoo Byung-jin didn't feel good about someone interfering with his plan.

It was possible that Lee Hyun could accomplish the greatest achievement since Royal Road opened. He wasn't good natured enough to tolerate such a thing.

“Take care of them so that my ears never have to hear about them again.

The fate of the private money lenders was determined in that moment.

Chapter 4: Collapsing Castle

Weed carried Seo-yoon on his back. It was dangerous so Zahab was leading the way.

“Shall we go to the office of the king? No. He is a warlock so he should have something like a magic laboratory.

But there is no safety since a battle is happening in the yard.” The Portu’s Royal Castle was collapsing.

Historically that was true but it would change if the devil took over Seo-yoon. Weed needed to find the sealing bead before then and break it. Of course, he needed to find it, defeat the king and escape from the castle safely.

“It is like searching for something on the beach.”

It was impossible unless he was a little lucky! The difficulty level was just like a recent movie called <Impossible Errands> that had become popular.

There was also no meaning in watching Nodulle using the Sands of Time. There was already a large time difference from when Nodulle invaded and when Weed rescues Seo-yoon.

“I said it before but Nodulle is really unlucky. It will be hard for one human to settle this.”

He could see the traps if he watched Nodulle using the Sands of Time but he decided to use his own judgement. His only hope was that the king was a warlock. Most magicians were physically weak. This was a great opportunity to launch a surprise attack.

“Zahab-nim.”

“Yes, tell me.”

“We have to remove a few knights of the Raum Kingdom.”

“The reason?”

“They will have a map.”

Those that lived in the palace didn't need guidance. But the knights of the Raum Kingdom who came here after taking care of the warlocks would have maps! The next part was to look at the map and find a suitable place for the king to be.

‘ Perhaps he is waiting somewhere for the devil to wake up.’

The Royal Castle was very spacious so it would be difficult to go back if he made a mistake. The devil would wake up before the castle collapsed. He had to check the behaviour of the knights and warlocks and see where they had gathered.

“Fire!”

“Kyaaaak!”

“The walls are crumbling!”

While he was coming down from the tower, chamberlains and female maids were running around in an uproar. Thick pillars connected to the ceiling were falling on soldiers and fire was spreading as the walls collapsed.

‘Now is the time that Nodulle entered.’

There were many guards in Portu Castle but they were running around everywhere and didn’t pay attention to Weed, Zahab and Seo-yoon. Their priority was stopping the Raum Knights invading the collapsing castle.

Weed ran through the corridor while carrying Seo-yoon. Then he suddenly stopped.

“Wait a minute.”

“Why?”

“The chamberlains and female maids running away aren’t heading towards the right side.”

The people escaping weren't heading to the right hallway and were only going to the left side. Of course, it could be due to the risk of collapse or fire but he thought it was the opposite.

"There seems to be more there than the collapsing castle and Raum Kingdom knights."

"It seems so."

Weed followed his instincts at that moment.

"We're going to the right side."

He didn't know the reason why everyone was going towards the left side. But in a situation like this, he decided to go to the right for the quest.

'Just a little. In the worst case scenario, Seo-yoon will die and the devil will wake up.'

It was a plan of desperation in the collapsing castle! But he belatedly regretted it.

'I arrived here much earlier than Nodulle. If he got rid of the sealing bead...maybe there were more collapsed stairs or hallways while he carried Hilderun.'

It meant there was more closed areas so Nodulle didn't have to

wander around as much. He came early so there were more places to search.

“Intruders! This place is prohibited for everyone except for a few people.”

“This is His Majesty’s command. Kill all intruders!”

A hallway was being guarded by 5 Royal Knights. Weed stepped back while piggybacking Seo-yoon.

“Zahab-nim!”

“I will take care of it. Continuous Storm Slash!”

Zahab ran forward and used a distinctive skill. His skills really had outstanding effects.

“Ugh!”

“He is very strong. Be careful!”

The Portu Royal Knights were overwhelmed. Zahab’s power surrounded the Royal Knights like a storm and wreaked havoc. Light and wind combined to form a spectacular effect!

“The aura of heavy earth inhabiting this sword. Sword of the

Land!”

Zahab also used the power of the land. Zahab’s sword that cut the enemy became 5~6 times heavier.

“Done. It is sorted.”

“Thank you very much.”

The blockade of the Royal Knights was easily penetrated thanks to Zahab. He processed the enemies quickly and protected Weed so that not one fingertip touched him. He was a Master Swordsman for a reason so it was worth bringing him.

He changed his thinking as the fighting continued.

‘I’m thankful we came here so early.’

‘His combat abilities are really wonderful.

‘If it wasn’t for Zahab then this quest would be really tough.’

‘That is the armour of the Portu Royal Knights! If I take it then it will be an antique. The money when selling it to a collector....’

‘The jewels are overflowing.’

‘Another item has come out. Zahab is good. I wouldn’t have any luck without this guy.’

‘After seeing this, there is no need to thank Zahab. I’ve gone to a lot of trouble to raise our intimacy. I just need to accept what he is giving.’

‘Aigoo, this time there are 8 knights. Some knights holding a kite shield will be hard to handle. I should’ve brought a stronger guy.’

‘How useless.’

His emotions deteriorated to jealousy after seeing Zahab fight a lot!

“Everyone has been put away.”

“Uh, yes.”

Weed ran forward carrying Seo-yoon.

“Intruders! How dare you come here!”

Now 4 warlocks wearing dark robes appeared. The warlocks used black magic and curses to attack. Although other professions used curses, the warlock was the most difficult to resist due to sacrificial offerings.

Weed now had to be much more careful.

“Take care of them before they use magic!”

“Understood.”

“Get rid of the one on the right side first!”

Zahab threw his sword. It flew with a dreadful light and pinned the body of the warlock to the wall. Then Zahab ran up and touched the sword with his hand.

“Moonlight Sculpting Blade!”

Light emerged from his hand as he used the sword skill. He was a master so he had the ability to exert Moonlight Sculpting Blade. Zahab freely utilized the rays and hurled them towards the warlocks.

“Howling....”

A warlock’s magic could exert terrible power in battle so they couldn’t be allowed to complete their magic spell. After Zahab ran and attacked with his sword of light, the warlock couldn’t do anything and died.

Zahab collected his sword and murmured.

“These warlocks...this really is a great place like you said.”

“Okay, let’s go. Haven’t you eaten enough?”

“What?”

“It is nothing. Zahab-nim. Come quickly!”

They broke through the passages where the warlocks were standing guard! Zahab killed a combination of warlocks and knights.

Weed was in the vanguard so he had no choice but to wish that Zahab won. The enemies didn’t have the ability to resist so he just needed to wait impatiently.

“I can’t just stand back.”

Weed prepared to use a sculpting skill.

“It is valuable but it is better than feeling regret.”

He took out a Fine sculpture that he collected when he returned to his original time. A gold bull lying down! It was a great piece of art that he could utilize.

His spirit was squeezed.

“Sculptural Destruction! Everything into Agility.”

At that moment. Weed’s body became light.

-You have used Sculptural Destruction.

The pain of destroying a Fine sculpture! The grief!

The Art stat is permanently reduced by 5 points. Fame has decreased by 100.

The Art stat has been converted to Agility for one day.

Since your Art stat is too high and your Agility stat is too low, the conversion won’t be converted all at once.

980 Agility has been changed to the level 9 advanced skill ‘Wind Sprint.’

You can use mana to run with the wind. This will be more useful when travelling long distances outdoors than indoors.

430 Agility has been changed to the level 5 advanced skill ‘Lucky Help.’

Luck will spread and attacks can gain 3 attributes.

2,360 Agility has been changed to the master skill 'Avoidance.'

The enemy won't be able to attack accurately. The efficiency of leather armour has also increased. It is difficult to receive a critical hit.

5,600 Agility has been changed to the level 7 advanced skill 'Accurate Attack.'

Increases the probability of a critical hit and increases damage.

1,340 Agility has been changed to the level 4 advanced skill 'Excellent Experience.'

Reduces the activation time required for an attack skill. It is also possible to grasp the weak points of the skill that an opponent users.

760 Agility has been changed to the level 6 intermediate skill 'Distance Reduction.'

Stamina and mana will be consumed to strike the enemy with extremely quick movements while ignoring distance.

1,340 Agility has been changed to the level 2 advanced skill 'Feather Steps.'

The body will become as light as a feather and you won't get tired. Jump power has improved and it won't hurt when jumping from a very high place.

They were techniques that could be used to deal damage and avoid attacks!

"I had to use this. Trying to live is really hard."

Meanwhile, Zahab finished cleaning up the Royal Knights and the warlocks.

"Let's continue!"

Zahab took the path where a considerable amount of enemies emerged. The Master Swordsman and Sculptor Zahab! Traps, magic and the knights' attacks didn't connect with him.

Now that his Art stat had been converted into Agility, Seo-yoon wasn't heavy anymore. Yet Weed felt a vaguely ominous feeling.

'So far it has been very easy. Somehow I feel like I can't easily move forward.'

Nodulle would've probably suffered more because he didn't have the help of Zahab and the sculpting skills.

Weed had personally prepared a plan and it was mostly

progressing as planned. It would've been better if he could escape from the tower with Seo-yoon immediately but the path to the king was much more smooth than expected.

‘It is dangerous. This is a temptation that I shouldn’t fall into.’

Shortcuts in life were also associated with traps. Of course, there were people who lived life running through a successful road.

Those who joined prestigious guilds in the early days of Royal Road gained access to good hunting grounds and were provided with the appropriate equipment, quests and people to help them grow. They might feel like life was easy.

Weed had experienced many things and developed an absolute keen sense of danger.

‘The final sculpting technique quest can’t be this lax. It is a sign that something isn’t good.’

Of course, the quest wasn’t even finished yet. There would be a growing danger as it became closer to collapse.

For instance, he could take the wrong path and die. If he was surrounded by enemies then he would die. Even falling stones would cause death! He hadn’t even glimpsed the sealing bead yet so Zahab needed to be rested enough to protect him.

“Wait!”

“Why? Shouldn’t we hurry before the castle crumbles?”

“Umm.”

The situation were definitely something where he had to hurry but his feet couldn’t move for some reason.

‘There is a risk of the castle collapsing or being in danger from the knights, warlocks and the Portu King.’

The bottom line was that the entire situation was dangerous. But there was a feeling of being dragged into a larger trap so he couldn’t move his feet.

‘It is like a pig running towards a slaughterhouse....’

Weed decided to give up and just enjoy the benefits in the meantime.

The battle was ongoing but he had come here far earlier than Nodulle. It would be useful to quickly get out of the crumbling castle but right now the powerful enemies were more dangerous. He didn’t need to encounter the strong enemies early.

“Let’s go to a safe place and wait.”

“What is this? We should move quickly.”

“Please believe in me. I’m not proud of it but an unfortunate person like me...on average, I have no luck.”

He was uncertain so Weed decided to wait. Still, he couldn’t just waste time.

“I should pack some valuables, artwork and antiques in the area.”

The riches of Portu’s Royal Castle outweighed his sense of danger.



The stations hadn’t broadcasted the final secret sculpting technique quest yet.

Weed had requested it be kept a secret so they speculated that he was in the middle of an amazing quest. They patiently waited and prepared for the day the quest finished so they could broadcast it.

The users of Royal Road were still interested in the first person who would complete the Master Quest. But no one knew about the last secret technique that could stop time.

Yoo Byung-jin knew all the secrets. He was the only one who knew all the secrets of the Versailles Continent.

“What about the chef’s final secret technique?”

-If a chef doesn’t start it but the time winter hits the Versailles Continent, the secret technique will disappear. Judging by the progress of the chefs so far, there isn’t one person who can challenge it so the final secret technique will be hoarded.

“They will have to wait a while after that.”

-3 or 4 years will be necessary.

If the quest for a secret technique failed then it would disappear. Once time passed, the growth of a NPC or development of certain areas meant it was possible to receive the quest again. But people who mastered the profession was rare.

The possibility that they would collect all the secret techniques and challenge the final secret technique was slim.

Sadly, the final secret technique of a chef who could have the best flavour under the sky was going to disappear.

“Doesn’t the Painter’s final secret technique had to start soon?”

-The Master Painter El Greco will die soon. Once he dies, the quest won’t be able to proceed for a minimum of 5 years.

“It is unfortunate.”

Yoo Byung-jin had large expectations for the painter’s final secret technique.

The final secret technique of combat professions tended to be related to fighting. They could hunt dragons or have an outstanding performance in war.

But art professions could gain the skill to create something new.

The painter’s final secret technique ‘Creation.’ It was a skill would the painter could draw and create a new continent with terrain, animals, monsters and species.

This was a colossal skill so it could only be used once. And the continent created wouldn’t give any benefits to the painter. The new continent must be developed from the beginning by the residents that inhabited it. But if the continent became prosperous then the name of the painter would be constantly mentioned. Creating a continent was the greatest honour and pride for a human.

Of course, if Weed was a painter then he would make something with his own self-interest and selfish desire in mind.

‘I don’t need deserts that don’t have money. Why do I also need something like cliffs? Breadbasket! I need to make a fertile breadbasket where I can sprinkle seeds. And mountains full of gold

mine and gem mines will be good. The coast should be a peaceful place for marine transport. There doesn't need to be various monsters. I need to make sure a bunch of goblins can be captured to use as slaves.'

A continent full of resources for the picking! The skill to create a land fit Weed's aptitude.

Unfortunately, no one was attempting the painter's final secret technique. The only one challenging the final secret technique of a profession was Weed.

Yoo Byung-jin watched as Weed embarked on such an adventure.

"Well, the path was figured out quickly...."

The map of Portu Castle displayed on the monitor showed a very complicated structure. It was close to impossible to find the sealing bead in a place like that. Even if he did find the location, the king would still be a problem.

Weed had grasped the inner terrain due to Nodulle's video so he had quickly determined the path. He was able to have a full understanding of the structure despite running around carrying Seo-yoon on his back. The spatial ability that he mastered during milk and newspaper deliveries!

"That is the relatively right road. It might be frustrating but it is the relatively right direction. If he continues going that way,

huhuhu....”

Weed was heading towards the deepest place where the Portu King was.

However, it was the place where all the power of the Portu Kingdom was gathered. It contained the king, Royal Knights, soldiers and warlocks.

They were getting sacrifices ready for black magic that would open the Gates of Hell. Once the magic was exercised, the red Gates of Hell would open in the sky above Portu’s capital city. The Gates of Hell that ate away at a person’s vitality.

Even if Weed was prepared to disrupt the warlocks, he was going to a place where there was nothing he could do. It was a place where he would die.

“Now if he goes forward a little more....huh?”

Weed ridiculously went into an empty room and started looting it with Zahab.

The knights of the Raum Kingdom and their allies grabbed control of the interior and started heading towards where the Portu King was. It was like going to a tiger’s den early.

Yoo Byung-jin had been looking forward to the situation yet Weed suddenly wasn’t in a hurry and started gathering artwork,

antiques, gold and silver. He used the chance to loot during his biggest crisis!

“What is he doing? Did he have a special feeling?”

If Weed heard those words then he would be complaining. But Yoo Byung-jin knew everything about the circumstances so his words were correct.

He knew even the slightest deployment of troops. He knew when Royal Knights stepped into a passage and grasped the full internal structure of the castle.

Older people who experienced many adventures could sense trouble or their joints would hurt when it was about to rain.

In this situation, Weed wasn't careless at all. He had the survival instinct of a cockroach!

“This is his ability.”

Even if the castle was crumbling, Weed would survive until the end. It felt like he would never die.

In the buildings and infrastructure in Korea were destroyed in a war, they would be restored after dozens of years. In a situation where everyone was afraid, Weed would just try to gather up more scrap metal. Of course, an unexpected bomb falling would still kill a person.



“I’ve lived a lifetime with a sword and overcome many fights with my sword. Obviously I need to use that to make my secret sword technique. Skill....”

Geomchi recalled the time he felt the best when handling a sword.

It was when he was holding a sword in a heavy rainstorm. He was tired from a hard practice but at that moment, he had become one with the sword. A sword that could cut down any opponent, even in moments that seemed insignificant.

“A sword that can cut anything.”

-Please define the sword skill.

“A sword that can slash any enemy or object.”

A sword slashing skill that could cut anything!

-Due to the special nature of the sword skill, a serious penalty can be given.

Do you still want to proceed?

“Of course.”

-The sword skill has been completed.

Excessive use of this sword technique can have a large cost.

-Sword that Cuts Anything 1 (0%): Advanced level 6 Sword Mastery is required to cut everything.

When the attack hits correctly, a maximum of 55 times the damage can be dealt by the blow depending on the skill level.

However, if the opponent isn't hit then there is a 20% chance that the sword will be broken.

If the attack is blocked then it can cause injuries, paralysis and death.

There will be a large gap if the attack goes wide.

-The skill proficiency of Weapons Mastery has improved.

-Fame has increased by 3,190 due to the creating of a new secret sword technique.

Once Geomchi made a skill, it was Geomchi-2's turn immediately

afterwards. Geomchi-2 only lived for the sword.

‘I am Teacher-nim’s successor who will inherit the dojang.’

His dream was to teach young disciples for the rest of his life.

“I want to make Sword that Cuts Anything

“Second.”

“I just want to develop the skill that Teacher-nim chose.”

Choosing the wrong skill due to flattery.

Unlike Weed who used the important chance to make a profound secret technique, Geomchi-2 wasted the opportunity.

“Hmmm.”

Instead of a sword, Geomchi-3 wanted to become one with the art of spear fighting. A spear exerted great power in a war. Holding a long spear while riding a horse was the best feeling.

“I would like to learn Sword that Cuts Anything.”

But in the end, Geomchi-3 decided to choose the same skill. That was also a problem from Geomchi-4 and Geomchi-5.

‘This isn’t it.....’

‘Oh, something is going wrong.’

They felt it was strange but the atmosphere couldn’t be reverted. Geomchi-2 hadn’t thought it would be this deep when he first started it.

“I will also choose Master-nim’s Sword that Cuts Anything.”

“I feel the same way as Geomchi-4.”

They inevitably had to commit to it! Of course, it wasn’t a large damage but they couldn’t get the skill they desired.

And when it came time for the selection of the trainees!

‘The only way to live is to choose that secret sword technique.’

‘If I select a different skill alone then I’ll probably have to spar every day.’

The trainees had large worries.

But fortunately, Geomchi managed to rectify this. He thought they were a pitiful lot. Geomchi thought it was stupid for everyone

to choose the same secret sword technique.

“You should make a different technique.”

“I understand, Teacher-nim!”

“We would like to learn from Master-nim.”

Geomchi said seriously.

“Learn other things. If you continue doing this then we will be ignorant like everyone thinks.”

That’s why the trainees freely chose their skills! 200 people chose a secret technique related to a sword. A variety of techniques with flashy effects and options were acquired.

Geomchi-207 was especially interested in sprucing up the effect.

“When the skill is used, I would like thunder to strike and five colours of light to wrap around me and protect me with a large roaring sound.”

Others chose secret techniques focused on reducing mana. Other trainees chose long range attacks with bows and spears and shields were also popular.

“I would like to learn Sword that Cuts Anything.”

83 trainees also chose flattery. They decided this was a very wise decision after that day.

Geomchi and Geomchi-2 were forgiving on those that chose other skills but Geomchi-3 was different.

“All the children who made new skills should assemble before me.”

And he made them train all night long! Geomchi-3 showed the dirty character that he was normally hiding.

The next day was Geomchi-4.

“A lot of children are looking for individuality and romance these days? Let’s see what type of skills they have.”

Geomchi-5 also spoke the next day.

“I didn’t say anything before. Discipline has completely collapsed.”

The students had to go through gruelling training. Sometimes they watched the general public and thought they were weak.

“They get tired after running 10 kilometres. Everyone should be able to run at least 30 kilometres.”

“I don’t know what is so tiring about driving a car towards the east coast. If I have a bicycle then I can take the 400 kilometres round trip.”

“I can take a day trip and then play a game of football in the evening.”

“I can stay up all night and then go to work at the dawn market while feeling refreshed.”

The trainees could feel stronger after earnest training.

Systematic theory, training and quality. These were words that would emerge from textbooks. Humans had great adaptability. Those that felt terrible would become stronger.

Geomchi, the instructors and the trainees proceeded to the next step of the Martial Artist Master Quest.

There were unique but easy quests where the Geomchis had to rescue NPCs or break through dungeons within a specified amount of time.

Geomchi-101 thought that training time was more important than anything else. The body was reliable as long as it was trained.

“I will swing the sword all night long to learn the skill.”

“I would like to play. Why don’t you come with me to play?”

“I need to learn this before going to play.”

A level 130 NPC said.

“I think you are strong enough. Please go hunt monsters.”

“Stop it. I will die if I carelessly wander out with these skills.”

“That is okay. Teacher-nim will understand your heart.”

“Shut up. I will kill you with my own hands!”

Chapter 5: Sculpture That Makes A Miracle

“If I hadn’t come here then I really would’ve regretted it for the rest of my life.”

The smile on Weed’s face was like a child who just found money. The items that were decorating Portu’s Royal Castle! Weed and Zahab went around aggressively collecting the items.

Of course, they didn’t forget about hunting.

“He looks like a servant. Vaguely rich...no, he is probably a bad person who flatters the king and squeezes the people. He is a bad guy hiding his wicked actions. Kill him quickly!”

The valet who was sold as a slave in his childhood died!

“Kill all the nobles. The ornaments and precious jewels...heh, they are definitely carrying treasures.”

“Haven’t you been listening to my words?”

“The servant! Don’t pretend you didn’t see him! Just kill him.”

It was to the extent that he didn’t know if he was rescuing Seo-

yoona or robbing the palace. He obtained a lot of warlock equipment and magic scrolls.

“There are many people who would buy this on the black market. Huhuhu!”

Black magic wasn't properly developed on the Versailles Continent in normal time. Very few people had chosen a warlock as a magician's advancement.

However, Weed had acquired things like <Basic Black Magic Guidebook> and <12 Different Types of Curse Magic>. If they had those books then more people would choose a warlock.

Weed wanted to bring home bad things! Of course, he felt some pricks to his conscience but it was just like a fly or mosquito.

“I still feel like a pure and kind person despite doing this. Well... yes, I've gone through too many things in life for this tender heart to be damaged.”

If he had money then he would write an autobiography later.

“Aaaack!”

“The Raum Knights are coming here!”

A scream was heard in the hallway. Then the dull sound of

armoured knights running could be heard. The elite knights of the Raum Kingdom and their allies had been mobilized. Even the elite rangers were following behind.

“Our guides have arrived.”

Weed had been waiting for guidance. Fundamentally, this war was happening between the Raum Kingdom and Portu Kingdom.

Nodulle and Hilderun were lucky this situation occurred when the Portu Kingdom was being attacked.

“If we can’t find the correct path then they will look for it.”

It was time to chase after the Raum Knights. This was the reason why he deliberately fell behind schedule by looting.

“Come quickly.”

Zahab led the way while Weed carried Seo-yoon on his back. The Raum Knights were taking care of the defenders so they just needed to comfortably follow from behind.

The castle was built for durability so the interior was relatively fine despite the onslaught of siege weapons. But the building sometimes shook and decorations hanging on the wall would fall.

The frightening feeling!

The Royal Castle hadn't collapsed yet but it could sink at any moment. His heart wanted to hurry but he shouldn't blindly rush towards the sealing bead.

“These guys have appeared. Cast the prepared magic.”

“Land of Sacrifice!”

“Astaroth's Claw!”

There was a huge roar and Weed was pushed back by the impact. The strength in his legs weakened and Weed was only able to endure thanks to Zahab.

‘As expected, it is better to come later. If I arrived first then I would've died from that magic attack.’

Screams were heard in rapid succession. If he continued going forward then he would arrive at the fiercest and most dangerous place. The Raum Knights were outstanding and quickly broke through the warlock skills. Deadly attacks that would cause death with just one graze!

“Rest for a little bit.”

“Should we do that? The status of your female isn't good.”

Seo-yoon's eyes were darkening like she was dying.

“She is going to live.”

Weed didn't easily lose his cool even in moments of crises. Let alone in a moment when Seo-yoon might die! She would understand even if she died in a place like this.

‘If I can't protect her then I will give her a 2nd generation puppy.’

He never gave gifts for birthdays or anniversaries yet he was planning to give her a puppy. Of course, Seo-yoon was nurturing a 1 year old female Dogmeat but she couldn't give birth without the cooperation of a male dog.

‘I will give up my share of the puppies. Until Dogmeat gives birth, I will give her a puppy to nurture.’

It was a situation where generation after generation of dogs would be tied to Weed!

“Those possessed by the power of darkness, use this blood and life to descend here....”

“Chop up all the warlocks. Ranger troops attack!”

“Destroy the magic circle so that their magic won't work.”

The sound of fighting between the Portu Kingdom and Raum Kingdom continued. Weed didn't move as he organized his thoughts.

He couldn't just run into the battlefield while piggybacking Seo-yoon.

'Judging from history, the Portu Kingdom was defeated. This will happen again unless important variables become involved.'

Of course, Weed and Seo-yoon were variables. If the devil inside Seo-yoon woke up then the Raum Kingdom and their allies would be cruelly defeated. Nodulle somehow succeeded so Weed had to accomplish that as well. Now he had to find some way to help Seo-yoon.

"Shouldn't we go now?"

"I need to prepare a little more."

"Prepare what?"

"I need to clean up a whale and eat it."

The Portu King and Chakujel who were great warlocks! They were the leaders of these evil forces. The troops of the Raum Kingdom were also terrible.

During this time, the Raum Kingdom and their allies would become the best knights of the continent and were on the verge of forming an Empire. Their military power could be considered the best on the battlefield!

Weed and Seo-yoon had plunged into a great, historical battle.

“I need to be prepared for the past. It would be nice if I could live without using tricks. That way I won’t receive damage.”

The battlefield continued to explode with black magic and screams.

“Not yet.”

It was possible to see that the battle hadn’t reached its climax yet. He gained various information from listening to the noises.

The kings and nobles of the allied kingdoms had met to discuss driving away the warlocks from the continent. Thus they formed the blitz invasion plan to instantly destroy the castle with siege weapons and kill the warlocks. The knights of every allied kingdom marched here to chop up the warlocks. In fact, the knights were prepared to be annihilated when the castle collapsed.

“Warlocks are persecuted everywhere.”

This was the reason why users didn't choose to become a warlock. The magic was powerful and they could easily use advanced magic through sacrifices, but the infamy was too high. Knights would constantly chase after them to kill them.

Furthermore, their body might be seized by a devil or demon like Hilderun or they might become sacrifices. It was a strong profession that received endless accusations.

“It is through black market trades so it will be difficult to sell warlock items for a high price.”

Weed decided to start the plan he prepared. He pulled out a sculpture he made in advance.

“Sculpture Transformation!”

Turning into an archer of the Portu Kingdom!

-Sculpture Transformation has been used.

The infinite affection for sculpting makes the sculptor and statue resemble each other!

Mana required for this skill is insufficient. You have overcome this using your sculpting skill and artistry. But the big penalty will be given.

The influence of Sculpture Transformation has slightly increase Strength and Agility.

Intelligence and Wisdom will decrease.

Art stat has halved.

Health has risen a little bit.

Due to the penalty, it isn't possible to use skills that consume mana.

This will last until Sculpture Transformation is released.

It was natural to become a Portu soldier if he wanted to near the warlocks.

Weed had deliberately changed to a fat body when using Sculpture Transformation. It was so that he could cover Seo-yoon on his back with a cloak. It was hard to move his body but Sculptural Destruction meant simple movements wasn't an issue.

“You have to protect me well.”

“I will risk my life to accomplish this.”

Zahab equipped the sword and leather armour he obtained from

a soldier. His Sword Mastery was high so he could use the basic weapons and armour worn by the soldiers.

Unfortunately, he couldn't disguise as a knight because his sword performance had fallen. If a sword battle ensued then he would suffer a loss.

"I have to use these guys. I was hoping this day wouldn't come but...if I complete this quest then it can be restored through hunting."

Weed took out a sculpture. He had already created sculptures using the luxury materials he obtained.

There were Ordinary and Fine pieces. And one was also a Masterpiece. The subject of art wasn't free so it was inevitable when using precious materials.

6 sculptures in the form of the Portu Kingdom's soldiers could be seen.

"Even if I give them life, it will be difficult to bring back to my original time or have them survive the battle."

Weed gave a deep sigh.

"It can't be helped since I arrived at this point. Sculpture Life Bestowal!"

-Life has been given to the sculptures.

The ability of the sculptures has been converted to 513 due to the current 3,122 Art stat.

Mana is lacking to use the skill so their level has been decreased by 23% as a penalty.

Three types of attributes have been given to the lifeforms.

The standard of the attribute given will depend on the level and shape of the sculptural lifeforms.

Attribute of Steel (100%), Attribute of Fire (80%), Attribute of Loyalty (100%).

Excellent weapon and defense techniques are given to the lifeforms with the attribute of steel.

It is possible to burn an enemy with the attribute of fire.

Everyone will have immunity to curse magic. There is a strong resistance against black magic.

They will offer blind loyalty and will never commit acts of betrayal. They are willing to follow every command.

282 Mana has been used.

Due to the skill level, the efficiency and stats given has been reduced by 20%.

The Art stat is permanently reduced by 6 points. The reduced stats can be supplemented with other sculpture or art related activities.

Level has fallen by 2. Stats have been reduced by 10.

When raising the level, the decreased stats can be regained.

Cherish the sculptures that have been given life. If they die then you have to give them life again.

If they are completely destroyed then it isn't possible to revive them again.

The body of a soldier grew rapidly bigger. He immediately kneeled down in front of Weed.

“Master has given me life. Please set my name!”

The voice filled with loyalty! Weed sent a bittersweet look towards the sculptural lifeform.

“It is great to see you. I will call you Iron-1.”

“That is a good name that seems to fit me. Thank you for the name Iron-1.”

“You don’t have to be thankful. Unfortunately, it seems like we won’t be together for a long time.”

“Master! Why are you saying that?”

The time zone had changed so he was proceeding with Nodulle and Hilderun’s adventures. He would have to leave the sculptural lifeforms behind once he returned to his original continent in the future. There was also no guarantee they would be unharmed in the difficult battle. Even the crumbling castle caused a risk of dying.

Of course, they were saved from Weed’s repeated bullying so these sculptural lifeforms might actually be lucky.

“I am happy to fight here even if there is danger. I will serve you whole-heartedly.”

“Yes, I understand. Now let’s gather your colleagues.”

Weed waited for his mana to be restored before continuing to use Sculpture Life Bestowal. He lost a total of 10 levels in exchange for

the sculptural lifeforms. Weed's current low health also reduced further from the loss in levels. Once he returned to his original body, that level decrease would be applied so he felt significant grief.

“Art is really...it is like the pain of cutting through my bone. I can't make them work repeatedly.”

It felt like tears of blood was falling from the pain.

“Master, please give a command!”

“We will crush any enemies!”

“I am happy to offer up my life. There will be no glory if I can't fight with Master.”

“I'll do anything. I will complete any tasks that Master gives me!”

Weed looked at the dignified sculptural lifeforms like they were wonderful.

One Masterpiece, two Fine pieces and 3 Ordinary pieces. Their levels were a little bit different but they looked like soldiers of the Portu Kingdom. There were four archers, one spearman and one swordsman.

Weed had prepared a combination of sculptures for the situation.



“Let’s go. If we delay any longer then the Royal Castle will collapse. We may be attacked by the Raum Kingdom and their allies so be careful.”

Weed and Zahab took the soldiers and went underground.

A wide, green vacant land!

This space was designed for the warlocks’ magic experiments. Cold air flowed through the area and a green liquid dripped down. The demons were already fighting with the knight of the Raum Kingdom and their allies.

‘This is a decent place for a warlock.’

Various curses were spread out through the underground area. The knights and soldiers couldn’t show off their usual skills against the demons.

If they received an injury it would be significantly worse, be poisoned or have unusual bugs similar to larvae crawl on the body. In addition, they were corrupted by hallucinations and attacked their colleagues.

The rangers tried to shoot from afar but poison fog pushed up

against them. All the nutrients in their bodies were sucked away and their skin dried up like a block of wood.

The warlocks were really difficult opponents for the knights.

“We’re going to do something now.”

“To the left...run!”

Weed and Zahab ran forward. The sculptural lifeforms escorted them as they ran. They were heading towards the camp of the Portu Kingdom.

“Iron-1, Iron-2, Iron-3! Prevent the Raum Kingdom from approaching. Don’t reveal too much of your skills.”

“Yes!”

“Iron-4, Iron-5, Iron-6! Be careful and warn me if there is any attacks from the warlocks.”

“I will throw my body Master!”

Weed and his subordinates were shrimps caught between the whales that were the Portu Kingdom and Raum Kingdom. If he was hit by the warlock’s magic or arrows then Weed would die very soon!

But if they felt he was on the same side then they wouldn't attack. Instead, the archers even sent arrows towards the Raum Kingdom troops to contain them.

The sculptural lifeforms had excellent skill so Weed wasn't caught. When he arrived at the Portu Kingdom's camp, the commander of the archers severely scolded him.

“Where did you go? I told the units to gather here 1 hour ago.”

Weed bowed his head humbly.

“I'm sorry.”

“Stupid bastards! Get ready to fight. You will have to go out at any time if there is an order from the top.”

“Yes!”

Weed, Zahab and the sculptural lifeforms were quietly arranged in the camp. The demons were playing an active role so most of the soldiers were just watching.

The Portu King, Chakujel and the warlocks felt the demons were sufficient and also prepared black magic to reduce the number of knights.

The big magic circle on the ground flashed red every time the

magic was used.

‘This is pandemonium. Doesn’t that magic seem really dangerous?’

Weed asked the soldiers around him as he saw the black magic.

“What is that magic?”

“I don’t know. It is a great magic that can exterminate the enemies.”

The soldiers answered.

He was considered a colleague so he didn’t need to raise intimacy with the soldiers and they also didn’t have a high degree of loyalty towards the king.

The other soldiers also had more knowledge.

“If that is complete then we can defeat the Raum Kingdom.”

“Do you really believe those words?”

“I don’t know either. But why else would they be working so hard to prepare the magic in this crisis?”

“I heard they offered the maids as sacrifices so they might kill us.”

“If the Raum Kingdom is defeated then His Majesty the King will continue to rule. I don’t know whether that is a good thing.”

“But the enemy must still be defeated. They will never let us leave alive.”

Weed talked to the soldiers while avoiding the attention of the warlocks. He had guessed but now that he knew the situation, he could attempt to make it more profitable. The soldiers knew about black magic.

“I heard from Draker-nim that the magic is to open the Gates of Hell.”

“Gates of Hell? What is that?”

“It is magic to get rid of the enemies.”

Weed remembered something about black magic. Many people were interested in advanced black magic so there many rumours about it.

‘The Gates of Hell is probably a wide range destruction magic.’

This absolute destruction magic couldn’t be used alone. A large

number of high ranking warlocks had to be rallied. The warlocks had to be at least level 400 and they needed more than 5,000 victims to be sacrificed in order to have the appropriate mana!

Once the Gates of Hell opened, all living things in the area would be forcefully dragged to that place. And they would be fed to the demons and devils in hell. In addition, the demons could be brought over to this side to become the warlock's minions.

Zahab came and spoke in a low voice.

“You should interfere with the completion of the black magic. If that magic is activated then everything is over.”

“It is impossible with us alone.”

“We still need to try. I will handle the warlocks while you cancel the spell.”

“Then Zahab's life will be in danger.”

“I can't just watch them die.”

“But you still can't act.”

The warlocks would concentrate their attacks the moment someone tried to stop them. No matter how strong Zahab was, he couldn't ignore the black magic.

“This isn’t the time to worry about me.”

“There is still a little time before the magic is completed.”

He became more anxious as time passed.

The warlocks prepared their magic as the Raum Kingdom troops continued pushing inside the castle. The Central Knights of the Raum Kingdom, Stone Knights of the Rubens Kingdom and Steel Knights of the Gorgul Kingdom. The coalition of elite knights continued to enter.

‘It isn’t the end yet. There are some large variables. If Nodulle succeeded then there is a way to reverse the situation. The quest might fail even if Zahab manages to cancel the spell.’

Weed continued to silently wait.

The power of the Raum Kingdom and the allies wasn’t that simple. They needed to crush the black magic in order to defeat the Portu King. The true ability of the Raum Kingdom would definitely appear. It was a fight against time as the castle crumbled!

Weed and his subordinates waited for a chance to come.

“Finish the warlocks here!”

“Have courage! We have received the protection of Tyr so we will win. In the meantime, let us condemn those who committed countless atrocities. Put an end to this dirty fighting!”

The knights, infantry and rangers of the Raum Kingdom and their allies penetrated the interior. They couldn't establish their superiority due to the magic curses and demons but there was a fierce battle with flying arrows and swords.

“Hero Ransom of the Raum Kingdom!”

“The Cartar Knights are finally here!”

The Raum Kingdom and their allies fought fiercely against the demons. Ransom and the Cartar Knights. Their swords were aimed at the demons. They were strong enough to be called heroes of the Raum Kingdom and their allies.

“These guys....get rid of them!”

“More victims are needed. Get their blood and bodies!”

The Portu King shouted. The warlocks started to show their evil magic. The black magic invoked headed towards the knights. There was an intense fight between the knights, demons and warlocks.

‘Yes, this is indeed a fight between whales. And the circumstances meant that Nodulle and Hilderun interrupted it.’

The leader of the Portu Kingdom's archers shouted.

“Do it now! Shoot the arrows!”

“Yes!”

Weed aimed arrows at the Raum Kingdom soldiers along with the other archers. His level was so insignificant that he would do damage even if it hit them.

But the arrow fired was nimble and accurate.

The archer leader praised Weed.

“Amazing skills.”

“Thank you. I learned directly from Leader-nim in practice.”

“Well, that is certainly one kill.”

“Yes!”

Weed only aimed for the knights overflowing with health and the damage was minimized. He also gave an order to the sculptural lifeforms.

“Make rough shooting motions. Try not to hit anyone.”

“I understand.”

The sculptural lifeforms also shot arrows. Their level was high so if their arrows hit the soldiers then it could be dangerous.

The descent of the devils, completion of the Gates of Hell or the defeat of the Raum Kingdom.

Either way, the circumstances weren't very good for Weed.

Chapter 6: Exquisite Treachery

Weed feigned fighting while looking around.

‘If the commander of the Raum Kingdom throws all their power then the castle will crumble....’

Kukukung!

The shaking of the ceiling was becoming serious. It meant the Raum Kingdom’s siege weapons were intensifying their attacks. And the elite troops of the kingdoms kept on increasing!

“Ohhhh!”

“I’m glad to see that the magician Featherman-nim has come.”

Magicians wearing white robes arrived underground and triggered their attack magic.

“Wind Pressure!”

“Holy Thunderbolt!”

“Lightning Ball!”

“Wave of Fire!”

The demons collapsed due to the offensive of the magicians. Featherman was a Great Magician of the Raum Kingdom and only a Great Magician could repel the Portu King. The guests that Weed had been waiting for finally arrived.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Light and fire exploded due to the confrontation between magicians. Weed was close to the back with his sculptural lifeforms.

And within the warlock camp, Chakujel was preparing the Gates of Hell magic with a gloomy smile.

‘If Featherman came later then it probably would’ve been too late. The Gates of Hell would have been completed. I have to do whatever it takes.’

His progress when entering was much faster than Nodulle. But he decided to delay by looting and using Sculpture Transformation so now Nodulle would’ve moved first.

‘It is valuable but I have to use it.’

He took out the scroll to summon a Fire Golem. It was called a magician’s strongest guardian.

The magic scroll left behind by the Great Magician Roderick! If he could sell it then it would be a valuable commodity that would earn him a lot of money!

‘Life isn’t without investments. It is better to survive and feel at ease.’

Weed tore the scroll. The scroll quietly disappeared in a dust of light!

“Ghosts who melt flesh and bones, come here.”

“Heavy Blow.”

The battlefield rife with black magic and attack magic suddenly became quiet.

“Why is this....?”

“Mana is gathering.”

“The magic circle isn’t working.”

The knights of the Raum Kingdom were unable to use their skills. The magicians that followed Featherman and the warlocks opening the Gates of Hell were making a fuss.

The giant Fire Golem! There was a blank zone due to the mana required to summon the Fire Golem.

Kuooooong!

A terrible voice rang out through the underground space. The ground shook violently like an earthquake was occurring and it seemed like the castle might collapse.

Pieces of rocks from the ceiling fell on top of knights and demons. It wasn't that bad for the knights of the Raum Kingdom and their allied forces. The effects of the black magic was released and their bodies returned to normal. And there was a subsequent aura of fire as the Fire Golem was summoned.

-Kuaaaaang!

The demons in the area were blown back by the aura of fire. Those near the Fire Golem had their bodies burned down. The giant Fire Golem that was connected to Weed's soul!

Weed sent a whisper to it.

-I am the person who called you.

-Give me instructions.

-Avoid the humans and sweep away the demons. And use any opportunity to attack the warlocks.

-Understood.

-And there is something else to be careful of...pretend not to know me.

-Why?

-Life is complicated. You don't need to understand.

-.....

The Fire Golem faithfully fulfilled his commands. A demon was seized by the burning arms while purifying fire shot towards the warlocks. The warlocks used their protection magic but the flames penetrated the barrier, causing the robes to catch on fire.

“Reinforcements!”

“Don't miss this opportunity and quickly slaughter the enemies.”

“Knights, stand in line for the Thrust of Glory!”

The morale of the Raum Knights were raised and they exerted themselves even further. The knights and soldiers of the other

kingdom also came with them. They broke through the defensive wall of demons and dashed towards the warlocks.

All the magicians gathered together with Featherman to prepare a huge magic. The impact of advanced large magic!

“Something like this...”

Weed watched them do well but couldn't be pleased at the situation. He didn't know where Featherman's magic would head towards! The attacks from the Raum Kingdom could hit Weed, Zahab and the sculptural lifeforms at any time since they were among the Portu Kingdom.

However, the warlocks' response was also quick. They used the prepared humans and demons as victims. Even the warlocks involved in prepared the Gates of Hell magic helped in the battle.

They gathered the aura of darkness and fired it towards the Fire Golem. The warlocks also summoned a large snake to bite at the body of the golem. The Fire Golem had huge amounts of health and resilience so its body didn't shrink despite the warlock attacks.

The underground space shook every time the golem moved.

“It looks like the Royal Castle might fall faster.”

The time Weed had left was further reduced due to the golem.

-Time remaining for the Fire Golem to be summoned is 9 minutes and 37 seconds.

Once the golem emerged from the magic scroll, it would disappear once the mana was depleted. He needed to gain as much as possible during the time left.

“Archer unit, take action! Go ahead and attack!”

“Yes, Leader-nim!”

The Portu soldiers and knights become involved in attacking. Weed was an archer so luckily he wasn't mobilized to fight. But magic was flying everywhere so it was hard to find a safe zone. The magic of the Raum Kingdom was flying towards the soldiers.

‘It will become difficult to me to endure even for 1 minute. Even if the warlocks use protection magic, it is impossible to be treated by the priests.’

Weed decided to make his move.

-Golem, this is a command. Attack the knights protecting the warlocks.

-Understood.

The Fire Golem turned towards the place where the warlocks were gathered. Then the knights that escorted the Portu King came out to block the Fire Golem. In addition, various warlocks hurled black magic towards the golem.

–Kuoooooh!

The golem suffered as they were hit by magic! But the warlocks now didn't have any knights protecting them.

“Go, my subordinates! Iron 1 to Iron-4, don't spare your arrows and shoot.”

Weed gave an order to the sculptural lifeforms. The four archers turned around and fired towards the warlocks.

“The arrows can't be prevented!”

“Fire!”

“Rapid Fire!”

It was different from the time they crudely aimed at the Raum Knights. The arrows shot by the sculptural lifeforms poured down on the warlocks. The penetration, destructive force and swiftness was high so it dealt large damage to the warlocks.

“Kueek!”

“Treachery....”

“The magic is flowing backwards!”

The warlocks chanting spell were surprised by the arrows. 10 warlocks hit by the arrows collapsed and turned into a grey light. If the spell was cancelled in the middle then the magic would run out of control.

“N...No! Cancel the spell! Heok! It can’t be cancelled. Uaaaack!”

The magic used to summon demons couldn’t be controlled. And the black magic attacked those close to it.

“Being killed in an insignificant place like this....”

“Keeook! My whole body is boiling.”

Due to the excessive sacrifices offered, the warlocks casting the black magic suffered from the mana backlash and died. The sculptural lifeforms continued shooting towards the other arrows.

The protection magic was penetrated and the warlocks died due to the sudden arrow attack. They were using second hand bows so the sculptural lifeforms couldn’t show the full power of the bow. Despite that, it was enough for the warlocks who had low health.

The moment Weed gave instructions to attack, the golem managed to approach the warlocks chanting attack spells. The sculptural swordsman and spearman bravely ran towards the warlocks.

He had no interest in the warlocks killed by the arrows.

“Take care of the ones wearing grey robes first!”

Weed decided the target of the attack!

“Revolving Spear!”

“This sword will take care of the Portu Kingdom!”

Just like magicians, the warlocks were vulnerable to melee attacks. Three strong warlocks were handled in an instant. The power of the warlocks decreased in 3 minutes due to Weed and his sculptural lifeforms.

And then Zahab ran towards the Portu King. His mission was to kill the king! Weed left the most important task to Zahab.

“Stop him before he reaches me!”

The king shouted but the knights were too busy dealing with the Fire Golem to rescue him. The warlocks threw their bodies to save him.

An intense light shone from Zahab's sword.

“Sculpting Blade!”

That was the most comfortable skill at the moment. The damage wasn't high but it was sufficient to handle the warlocks. The warlocks lost their lives to Zahab.

And he was finally able to reach the king. But it was enough time for the other high ranking warlocks to finish chanting their spells.

“Internal Bleeding.”

“Maddening Anguish!”

“Weakening the Skin!”

The powers of darkness caused Zahab mental pain and the blood vessels inside his body were ripped apart. But Zahab didn't care about the warlocks and just wielded his sword against the king.

“Dark Body!”

The Portu King had his arm turned solid black and he used it to block the sword. It was possible for a warlock to reconstruct their body to strengthen their defensive ability. The king used his magic and health to temporarily strengthen himself.

“No way! Continuous Storm Slash!”

Zahab twisted his sword. The king impeded the continuous attacks with his longer and thicker arms. Sparks flew as the sword collided with the arm.

“Iron-5, continue to remove the warlocks. Iron-6, interfere so that Chakujel can’t succeed in any magic.”

“Yes.”

“I understand.”

The warlocks were killed by the surprise attack. This had an influence on weakening the demons as the mana summoning them decreased.

The Raum Knights now had a chance against the knights and soldiers of the Portu Kingdom thanks to Weed.

But things didn’t go that smoothly.

“There is internal trouble on that side. It is truly incredible. Frost Burn!”

Featherman and the magicians hurled their attacks.

Zahab was competing with the king while Iron-5 and Iron-6 took action. Weed, Iron-1, Iron-2, Iron-3 and Iron-4 were still within the Portu Kingdom's camp so they were vulnerable to the magic attacks.

Weed had also betrayed them so there was a risk of being assaulted by the other archers and soldiers.

Then the wide area magic flew!

"I knew it!"

When looking at it calmly, he was on the same side as the Raum Kingdom. However, Weed and the sculptural lifeforms were wearing the uniforms of the Portu Kingdom so they were still attacked.

Despite the magic exploding, Weed was safe thanks to the sculptural lifeforms protecting him.

-Golem!

-Speak.

Fortunately he still had the Fire Golem. It was fighting against the Portu Kingdom's knights but could still afford to stop the warlock's magic.

-Move to the right!

-Understood.

The Fire Golem moved and completely exposed the magicians.

“Iron-1 to Iron-4, you need to somehow hold out!”

Weed whispered a small command to them. He carried Seo-yoon on his back and ran towards the warlocks.

“He has betrayed us! A traitor of the Portu Kingdom!”

This treachery was exposed at the same time!

“.....!”

The warlocks that turned to attack Weed were immediately shot by the sculptural lifeforms. The soldiers and archers of the Portu Kingdom also attacked the sculptural lifeforms. The sculptural lifeforms were forced to interrupt the magic and block the shots aimed at them.

There was a level difference so they weren't in danger right now. However, their profession was an archer so their low health meant they couldn't deal with the Royal Knights. Especially with the Raum Kingdom forces being unable to distinguish them from the

enemy.

However, Weed already had no interest in the subordinates left alone in the back.

‘I can only hope they survive somehow.’

Weed just focused on protecting himself and Seo-yoon. He hid in a back corner behind the Fire Golem and fired arrows towards the warlocks.

The battle of Zahab, Iron-5 and Iron-6 was taking place nearby. Zahab was in a tight confrontation with the king. Of course, Zahab’s sword was very strong but the knights escorting the king acted as diversions. The king was also persistent in his black magic.

Iron-5 was thrusting his spear among the warlocks while Iron-6 was attached to Chakujel. Chakujel was the strongest warlock who taught the king! Chakujel was but by the sword but he was still far from death.

He also completed his spell despite the damage.

“Reign of Chaos.”

“Ugh!”

Iron-6 missed and grabbed his head.

Ddirring!

-Iron-6 has been hit by the magic of a master warlock.

Domination magic!

This magic causes confusion and obedience.

However, the subordinate has strong mentality and loyalty.

Iron-6 is absolutely loyal to you.

Iron-6 once again swung his sword at Chakujel. In the meantime, the warlocks in charge of the Gates of Hell died and the mana gathered formed into a fearsome whirlpool.

“Y.O.U. F.O.O.L. Y.O.U. A.R.E. N.O.T. H.U.M.A.N”

Chakujel who became angry that the Gates of Hell magic was cancelled gave a fearsome cry. And his mana started to get out of hand.

‘This is really dangerous.’

Weed immediately hid in the closet corner. A whirl of lack mana

surrounded the warlocks nearby.

“Kueek!”

“N-No!”

All the health and mana of the warlock was absorbed before moving somewhere else! The vortex of black mana moved randomly so it was hard to stop.

“Iron-5, get rid of the warlocks around the king.”

“I can’t approach.”

“Try everything you can!”

Iron-5 threw his spear towards the king.

Syuuuuung!

The knights and king were distracted by Zahab and the swirl of black mana. The spear flew through the air and plunged into the king’s back.

“Uaaack!”

But despite that, the king still didn’t die! Iron-5 picked up a

weapon from the ground and flew towards the king like the wind. It was reckless courage caused by loyalty.

Zahab had a chance to win against the king with Iron-5 helping. But the king pulled the spear out and healed his injury.

“Black magic is really revolting. I should’ve chosen techniques like that.”

While Weed was full of admiration, Chakujel moved towards a magic gate.

“I. W.I.L.L. B.E. B.A.C.K. A.N.D. I. W.I.L.L. P.A.Y. Y.O.U. B.A.C.K. F.O.R. S.U.R.E.”

Chakujel left through the magic gate. Chakujel knew that he made a mistake. The situation had become complicated due to Zahab, the sculptural lifeforms and the Fire Golem. The remaining obstacles were cleared up by the Raum Kingdom’s knights and magicians. Therefore he didn’t stay in the collapsing castle and left his apprentice behind.

And the king’s death!

“Kuaah!”

The king turned grey and collapsed due to Zahab’s sword. An item that looked like a ball rolled out from his body. Zahab broke the ball with his sword.

Ddirring!

-Save Hilderun has been completed.

Hilderun's spirit and vitality sealed inside the bead has awoken.

As long as human will remains, the body won't be easily taken over even if a devil descends.

-The descent of the devils has been disturbed.

All stats have increased by 8 due to the adventure.

Faith has increased by 40.

“That's it!”

The quest was successful! However, there was no time to rejoice.

The Gates of Hell magic had been cancelled and the Raum Kingdom and their allies were sweeping away all the demons in the area.

In addition, the Fire Golem received the attacks from Featherman and the magicians and disappeared.

“Your Majesty!”

“N-no!”

“This can’t be. Now everyone will die!”

The warlocks became desperate and irrational after the king was killed. They sacrificed their bodies using black magic so that demons would take over it for a short while.

Weed’s head was calm in the current situation.

‘The warlocks and knights of the Portu Kingdom are enemies and the Raum Kingdom won’t spare us.’

The Raum Kingdom would remove everything related to the warlocks without asking questions.

‘A clean person like me looking up at the heavens has nothing to be ashamed of.’

Enemies everywhere!

The castle would also crumble soon so he didn’t have a lot of time.

“Get out of here quickly. Follow me.”

Weed ran towards the back of the underground space. Zahab, Iron-5, Iron-6, Iron-1 and Iron-3 chased after him.

Iron-1 had been injured and died in the battle while Iron-4 was surrounded by knights of the Raum Kingdom.

“Those two have been lost.”

Weed couldn't hide his grief as he ran. But something like that didn't last for long.

“The traitor who killed His Majesty! Die!”

The king's knights jumped forward. Zahab and the sculptural lifeforms had to fend them off. They had already received the warlocks' curses so their condition wasn't good. And some warlocks sacrificed their flesh to throw magic at Iron-6.

“No!”

“Keook.”

Iron-6 was hit by the continuous magic and collapsed. He wore armour picked up so his defense was less than ordinary soldiers.

“Unfair Curse!”

Weed found it hard to avoid the curse.

-Luck has been reduced.

Your body is heavy so movement will slow down.

Mana is not recovered.

You don't have any blessings so there is no resistance against the darkness.

“Go...quickly.”

Iron-6 stood up and raised his sword.

“I will stop these guys.”

Weed stopped moving for a moment. He wanted to bring Iron-6 with him somehow. Even if he had to submit to a little danger!

But then Iron-5 said.

“We have to go. Please allow Iron-6 to die for Master!”

“We have to go quickly!”

“It is our mission to protect Master. We are prepared to give our lives at any time!”

Iron-1 and Iron-3 cried out as they fired arrows.

“Damn!”

Weed’s heart wasn’t good as he turned his back and ran.

Many years ago, his younger sister was sick but couldn’t go to the hospital. His sister stayed up for 10 hours crying with a fever but wasn’t taken to hospital. He had no health insurance fee and didn’t have money to pay the hospital. The dreadful, helpless feeling that reached deep into his bones!

Now he earned profit and had quite a lot of savings but he never forgot that feeling. Numerous problems from growing up in poverty without parents couldn’t be easily settled.

Weed had feelings similar to then. The strongest and most violent person in Continent of Magic was miserable in reality. The reason he conditioned his body in reality before stepping foot in Royal Road was to stop feeling that helplessness.

Zahab exclaimed.

“If we follow this passage then we can get outside?”

Weed panted as he looked around the area. His body was weak and it became tired faster after receiving the magic curse.

There was a passage connected to the back of the underground space.

“I do not know. But in the situation where the castle is collapsing, how else can we escape from the warlocks?”

“What if there isn’t an exit?”

“Then we’ll die.”

It was either lie down to be killed by the enemy or choose a chance of escaping.

And Iron-3 fell behind! He moved to block the passage from those chasing them.

“If I survive this then I will serve you for the rest of my life.”

The loyal Iron-3 lured the knights of the Portu Kingdom.

“Iron-3!”

Weed grieved as he kept on moving. The only ones left were

Zahab, Iron-1 and Iron-5. Even if the quest succeeded, he would be filled with grief more than joy.

‘I need to make these guys work like a mountain.’

And the thing that showed up at the end of the path was a warp gate. But stones had fallen from the ceiling so some of the magic circle was damaged. The lights of the warp gate flickered.

Weed breathed a sigh of relief.

“This is a bit late but it has almost come to an end.”

It was possible for him to catch his breath. But the Portu King’s knights, the warlocks and the Raum Allied forces were chasing after him.

“You go first.”

Weed shook his head at Zahab’s invitation.

“No. Zahab-nim should enter first.”

The danger might not end here. If he entered the gate first then there might be unknown danger on the other side.

“Then I will go. Follow afterwards.”

“Yes!”

Weed would’ve followed immediately afterwards anyway. If he wasted a lot of time then the magic gate might disappear because it was damaged.

Zahab entered the magic gate and disappeared.

Weed then spoke to the remaining sculptural lifeforms.

“You follow immediately as well.”

“Yes!”

“I understand.”

Weed plunged through the gate with Seo-yoon.



The architects who participated in the construction of the Haven Empire’s Imperial Palace gathered and gave a toast.

“Cheers!”

“Drink heartily. I will pay for the costs of drinks today.”

“Well, let’s get properly drunk.”

The architects drank the beer and commemorated that the construction of the Imperial Palace finished.

In fact, the Imperial Palace had already been built but they needed to arrange the interior. The interior needed additional reinforcement but it was finally completed. The ceiling of the Imperial Palace was flashing gold and the height was also amazing.

The architects didn’t worry about the funds and made a lavish palace. The grand of majestic appearance of the Imperial Palace and the vast grounds naturally caused admiration among the people who saw it.

“This building will become the most famous in the Versailles Continent.”

“Our names will be remembered for decades for participating in this work.”

“This will become the symbol of the Haven Empire.”

The architects continued boasting among themselves. These architects specialized in renovating castles and building walls. Due to the war, many architects couldn’t help specializing in building reconstruction.

It wasn't a small challenge but they succeeded in the construction of the Haven Empire's Imperial Palace. The Imperial Palace would raise the loyalty of NPC knights, residents and nobles.

The Arpen Kingdom's palace was being built at the same time but it couldn't compare to the vastness and flashiness of the Imperial Palace. Many more residents, artists, sculptors etc. participated in the Arpen Kingdom.

But the artwork and antiques plundered from the entire continent was placed in the Haven Empire's Imperial Palace. There were also jewellery and gold so it was hard for an architect to ever complete such an extravagant piece of work again.

The architect Mibullo participated in the construction and was finally able to successfully complete it. But he didn't participate in the celebration when it was finished.

He disguised himself and secretly left Aren Castle.

"All the work in the Central Continent is completed so I need to go to the north now. It will be fascinating to build a city from the ground up."

His eyes glanced at the Imperial Palace. It was so huge that he couldn't see the top despite raising his head. The towers and palace were spacious and had marble floors. The Imperial Palace flashed in the bright light of the sun and could be considered the best

building on the continent.

The Hermes Guild were busy with the Conquest War but they were glad the Imperial Palace was completed.

“I can’t see this view again. I will be gone for the next few months.”

Mibullo muttered those words to himself.

He was a leading architect. And his various construction experience meant he knew how to weaken a building without leaving a trace.

Subtract the cornerstones! Bogus materials! Frequent design changes!

These things would lead to shoddy construction!

The Imperial Palace wasn’t as strong as most people thought. The heavy pillars placed enormous pressure on it.

Mibullo had techniques to collapse buildings. Building materials weakened and corroded early. The foundation would sink. Then it would come crashing down. The towers that were connected to the Imperial Palace!

All of this wasn’t building something up.

The Imperial Palace was sitting on structure that could cause it to collapse the moment the structure was destroyed.

“If this falls then it won’t be cheap for the Hermes Guild. Then they will experience difficulty on the continent.”

Mibullo continued making changes to the design and piled up the construction costs for the Hermes Guild.

He used the Grand Buildings in the north as excuses for increasing the budget. Naturally he was welcomed by the Hermes Guild everywhere he travelled.

Materials were also stolen from the construction. The thinly spread gold was actually covering cheap copper.

Anyway, no one would know. They wouldn’t know unless they peeled off the interior of the building.

“This is why people have to careful of bad construction.”

Mibullo hummed as he headed towards the north.



As Yurin became twenty years old, she became increasingly more beautiful.

Men flocked like clouds whenever she drew on canvas. She went around the continent in the morning and drew landscapes and people at night.

“It really is fun to draw paintings.”

The colours were used to freely draw the beautiful world. Her favourite thing was the Tower of Light in the Morata. The light show constantly had many spectators. Yurin was happiest when drawing at this time.

Her painting progressed steadily so she wasn't ashamed of her skills. It was fascinating to discuss the composition of paintings with other painters.

Yurin enjoyed the fine arts.

“I might really become an artist in the future. Should I change my specialty in school to fine arts?”

In fact, there were many similar cases.

Some people used the experience in Royal Road to pick their future career. They were typically cooks, merchants, farmers and cattle ranchers!

“This isn't possible. The amount of dishes to wash is never-

ending.”

“This occupation really makes my hand tired. This business...I give up!”

“This land! This year has a poor harvest. The price of the agricultural products have fallen again as well as the income from other areas. I want to set it on fire and abandon the barns.”

“Why do pigs eat so much? I thought they would be cheap....”

Those who chose the profession ended up giving up and changing their dreams.

Weed would shudder when thinking about the moneymaking potential of a painter.

Chapter 7: Desert Of Tranquillity

Weed felt dizzy as he walked through the gate. He felt like a duvet inside a washing machine!

“Don’t tell me it failed because I went through an incomplete gate?”

It was the same feeling that he got after not winning the lottery! Weed hugged Seo-yoon tighter to make sure he didn’t lose her.

The practical reason was so he could continue the quest but he also wanted to hug her since she had suffered so much.

It was also a mystery why she hadn’t woken up yet despite the quest being finished.

‘It was prepared....’

The situation was so urgent that he couldn’t even send a whisper. Seo-yoon had yet to wake up. But Weed put her on his back and sped off. That’s why he felt a sense of urgency during the battle.

‘I wish we could relax the whole time....’

He was going to exit through the gate somewhere. And a cry of distress emerged from Weed’s mouth.

“Aaaack!”

His limbs were struggling but it didn't hit anything. They were in the air! In other words, it was the sky.

“I'm never lucky!”

Weed muttered with resentment as he crashed into the ground. He was in a state of low health so if he fell now then he could die.

‘Will I live if I quickly hit the ground?’

He thought as he fell through the sky for 1 second!

‘Well, this is a little dangerous. The situation might be better once I can look down at the ground.’

And another 1~2 seconds passed.

‘It is quite far away...if this continues then my body won't survive. Looking at the ground will only cause despair.’

Now he prepared his mind for it.

‘I'm going to die in this way.’

An attitude that already gave up on life after only 4 seconds! Weed’s body finally reached the ground. However, it wasn’t solid ground but a pile of sand.

He slid down the slope of a hill formed from sand piled up. He slid approximately 10 metres before stopping safely.

“Ah!”

His joy was short-lived. Weed became frustrated again as he climbed the dunes and looked around. The only thing visible in the vicinity was red sand. The wind didn’t contain any moisture and the sunlight was very hot.

“I’ve heard of this place before. Desert of Tranquillity!”

One of the continent’s 10 Forbidden Zones. They arrived at a hot, desert land without any preparations.



Lafaye and the leaders of the Hermes Guild sat in the Haven Empire’s Imperial Palace to discuss strategies.

“The siege weapons aren’t sufficient to destroy the fortress in the Chepen area.”

“Are there any resources nearby?”

“They are either being used or repaired. The terrain is also difficult to move them.”

“Then dispatch the magic army corps from the capital. They need to quickly take control of the Aberdeen area.”

“The enemy has retreated as soon as the Mosulli walls were captured.”

“Instruct the cavalry not to chase them over the hills. The 14th Cavalry Division will pursue from there.”

They commanded multiple battles that were taking place simultaneously across the continent. The Haven Empire’s territory was expanding so the leaders had to work hard to efficiently command the military.

‘The resistance is too weak.’

In the early days of the conquest war, the enemies gave them and cities and retreated. Lion Hunting plan.

It was a conspiracy with the Haven Empire as the target!

The details were complicated but it was basically using NPC soldiers for intense attacks to cut them off in a specific area.

‘No matter how good the plan is, it is useless if you are unable to execute it. War isn’t something just fought with your head.’

The guilds had joined together in an alliance but they were still susceptible to their own interests. There was heavy resistance. If the Haven Empire fell then they would pick up the maximum profit so they didn’t care about the amount of NPC soldiers consumed.

Lafaye immediately used this chance to get a profit.

The enemies weren’t taking an active stand so the Hermes Guild’s leaders boldly marched to obtain as much territory as possible and used their strong power to counterattack. They assaulted the Black Sword Mercenaries on both sides and dealt devastating damage.

“If the Allied Forces combine then they can deal major damage to us.”

“Where should we start?”

“They will probably make Bardray the primary target. If he isn’t defeated first then they can’t reach the Imperial Palace.”

Bardray, the Royal Guards and their army gathered at the Gradian Kingdom. They were the strongest forces of the Haven Empire.

The Allied Forces couldn't resist the temptation to attack Bardray.

'They will do so even if other plans are made.'

Lafaye moved troops across the continent according to the situation. He adjusted the amount of military forces, considered the terrain and the scope of the occupied area.

The Allied Forces had a chance to take over some strong fortress with the element of surprise but didn't. Bardray was bound to be their goal.

'Those fellows will be prepared within a week. This will be a decisive battlefield.'

Lafaye gave an order as the guild master.

"Secretly dispatch the rangers and magicians to the Rubidom Mountains. And give instructions to all knights in the area to be prepared to move."

"I understand."

"Bardray-nim's troops will need to be at the Rubidom Mountains after 6 days so send a request for passage to the annexed Norton Kingdom."

“Rubidom Mountains? There are too many tress so it isn’t a good terrain for the army to move through. It is a route that will take a lot of time.”

“This is the reason why it is favourable to fight in the Rubidom Mountains. And then we can quickly occupy the Central Continent.”

“What happened?”

“I’ve received contact from Palma. The work is progressing faster than planned.”



Palma!

He was the secret weapon of the Hermes Guild. The Hermes Guild was an organization originally formed to unify the Versailles Continent. They were a group of top users unified under a single flag.

From the beginning they had an enormous potential to conquer Royal Road.

‘Tens of thousands, hundreds of thousands enjoy this game. Millions of people will definitely play this game.’

It was the first virtual reality game so there were plenty of advantages. But the stormy popularity of Royal Road was larger than even they expected.

The Hermes Guild intentionally scattered according to the continent conquest plan. The Haven Kingdom was ruled by their guild and used to get rid of competitors. They took control of the Haven Kingdom to camouflage some of the other work their guild did.

Palma and the shadow troops were given missions in various parts of the continent.

-Numerous guilds will grow on the continent. And will develop their kingdoms. Work to disrupt them.

As recorded in the history books, there were numerous risk factors on the continent. The early stages when Royal Road just opened!

Evil magicians and creatures attacked and destroyed cities and castles. The biggest achievement of the shadow troops was causing the rise of the Embinyu Church quicker than expected.

“Embinyu Church. When looking at the history of the continent, it was a great threat to peace.”

“Is that so? Then find a method to use them.”

Palma and a number of other users formally signed up to the Embinyu Church. They did related quests, found necessary items and raised new followers for the Embinyu Church.

“The Embinyu Church is much more enormous than I imagined.”

“It is like that? Make sure they encroach on the other kingdoms except for the Haven Kingdom.”

Expanding the forces of the Embinyu Church! They used the Embinyu Church to weaken their competitors and the confusion allowed the Hermes Guild to grow stably. The Embinyu Church played a significant role in allowing the Haven Empire to not be impeded by their rivals.

But recently the growth of the Embinyu Church was terrible.

Once the Central Continent was in chaos due to the war, the Embinyu Church propagated in every direction. Palma couldn't stop the influence of the priests reaching the Haven Empire.

‘Embinyu. The Embinyu Church is far too dangerous!’

Palma was appalled just looking at the activities of the Embinyu Church. The Embinyu Church spread an evil aura in lands that were raising crops.

The soil was polluted and new demons born from bodies. The residents became increasingly fanatic and those whose souls were

seized became Dark Knights. The monsters were brainwashed by the Embinyu Church and emerged from their habitats and dungeons.

The territory of the Embinyu Church broadened at a colossal speed due to their evil aura and the surrounding areas destroyed.

The rivers flowing spread the pollution and plants became dyed with the evil aura. The branches and roots of trees in dense forests started attacking people. The trees full of the evil power were driven towards fortresses and were used in siege warfare.

‘The Embinyu Church is growing too fast in a short period of time.’

Palma roamed through the areas occupied by the Embinyu Church. There was no end to the army mobilized by the Embinyu Church.

The battles became wider as the fanatics conducted frenzied assaults. And now they were advancing towards the Haven Empire.

“It is too hard for me to handle it anymore. I need to tell these facts to the guild.”

In the original plan to conquer the Hermes Guild, the Embinyu Church had to survive until the end. They would then reunify the continent and restore peace under the guise of getting rid of the

Embinyu Church.

No one would be able to stand against their power and a new age of Haven Empire rule would be ushered in.



Seo-yoon woke up while Weed was waiting for his subordinates.

“Those guys haven’t come.”

Iron-1 and Iron-5. The sculptural lifeform soldiers hadn’t appeared.

“Surely they didn’t miss the opportunity to go through?”

Zahab who came before them also wasn’t visible.

“Maybe they ended up going to a different place.”

“Those are my thoughts too. As expected, the gate wasn’t working properly.”

While completing the final secret sculpting technique quest, he learned that his ominous feeling was always right. He also became entangled with Nodulle’s messy fate!

Ddirring!

-Walk through the Desert of Tranquillity

This is a place with hot sand and a blazing sun.

A place where water is life. Survival is the only goal.

Cross the desert while overcoming the lack of supplies in order to arrive at the Brukan Tribe's oasis.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: If your colleague receives a great injury in the desert then the devil will wake up in her body.

The heat of the Desert of Tranquillity burns away all mana so skills can't be used.

-The quest has been given.

You can't refuse.

"Hmmm."

It felt like seeing another mountain after crossing a mountain. Weed felt great respect towards the mountain climbers.

“It is like crossing Mt. Seorak only to see Mt. Everest. The Antarctic or Arctic will probably appear after I cross that.”

This wasn't like the Jigolaths.

The Desert of Tranquillity was literally a quiet desert. It was a place where human like lifeforms couldn't live. It was a region where sand continued endlessly for most of the southern continent.

In the early days of Royal Road, many people headed to the south of the Versailles Continent to adventure. Those who advanced down from the Central Continent only found a huge desert. There was no end to the land as they walked. Desert tribes lived in the vicinity of the oases but everywhere else was just sand dunes.

Desert of Tranquillity! Those walking would become tired and die after being unable to quench their thirst.

It was rare to find people leaving the Desert of Tranquillity. Weed and Seo-yoon were currently on the continent in the past so there was no possibility of meeting other travellers.

“Skills can't be used in the Desert of Tranquillity.”

“You received a quest?”

“Yes, it is a quest where we need to survive.”

Seo-yoon who followed him was given the same quest.

“We don’t have a lot of food.”

Weed sighed as he looked in his backpack. He received the request to rescue Seo-yoon so he wanted the burden to be as light as possible.

Currently his backpack only contained a day’s worth of food and water and the rest was filled with his spoils.

“This is why people shouldn’t be greedy. Anyway, let’s try to reach the Brukan Tribe’s oasis.”

“Yes, but which way?”

Weed looked at the sand ridges present in every direction. No matter where he looked, sand was the only thing visible. It was a hot and desolate atmosphere.

“This way.”

“Really?”

“Well, we can’t be sure until it is night time. The desert night

will be full of stars. We can use that to determine if we are going in the wrong direction.”

Weed recalled reading about experiences of through the desert in Africa. When travelling abroad, they stayed in guesthouses as well as camped in the desert. He never expected that those experiences would be useful now.

“I should abolish the practice of picking up empty bottles and collecting scrap metal.”

“Huh?”

“It is nothing.”



Weed and Seo-yoon walked endlessly. It was difficult due to the sands blown by the wind. They also didn’t know the distance to their destination. Fortunately the two of them had the basic clothing for this trip.

Weed wore the novice clothing obtained from Serabourg Castle, Baran village and Lavias. The old cloak was easily torn but he could use it to hide his face from the sand.

“Not throwing these things away is useful in a time like this.”

“The smell is reaching here.”

“It is normal. I haven’t washed it even once.”

“.....”

Then it went back to silence! They didn’t meet any monsters so they just walked forward.

‘There are 2 canteens full of water. Even if we drink it sparingly, it will only last for 1 day. After that it will be hard to find water.’

Then a desperate situation will arise. And now it was night. Fortunately he could see the stars but it was more painful moving through the freezing night than it was the hot sun.

“Cold.”

“Night in the desert is originally cold.”

Weed and Seo-yoon sat close together under a sand hill. There was quite a distance to go so they would need to experience quite a few cold nights.. Therefore they took this moment to recover their vitality before walking.

“I remember the fun days in the past when I walked through the ice in the north. At that time we were with Alveron and Bingryong.”

“That was really cold. You also caught a severe cold.”

“Back then you were covered with white frost while on Bingryong’s back. I really needed to refrain from laughing when seeing your appearance at that time.”

It was one incident involved in causing Seo-yoon’s closed off heart to melt. She thought warmly of the adventure against the Bone Dragon in the north.

Ironically, this adventure planted warmth in Seo-yoon’s heart.

“Will this also become a memory later?”

“Perhaps.”

“I hope there are more good memories.”

“If those are your precious memories then it might be better to have amnesia.”

Weed and Seo-yoon tightened the cloaks around their shoulders and maintained their body temperature. And they started marching through the desert again at dawn!

-You are thirsty.

Due to the severe heat, your vitality has weakened and you have become thirsty.

That message window popped up once his moisture intake lessened. He was thirsty but he needed to conserve water.

Weed felt like his mouth and throat was filled with sand.

“That blade of grass looks like it comes from a tropical area.”

“How can there be a tropical region in the desert?”

“Yes, this is a place where rain hasn’t fallen for 1 year.”

“We can’t expect such good fortune.”

There was a long way to go so they needed to preserve their vitality. He didn’t know what would happen if they collapsed from weariness.

“Go well my children. We will meet again in a good place.”

In order to lighten his burden, Weed threw away the loot he acquired from Portu’s Royal Castle. It wasn’t an easy decision for him to make. The pain was like tearing healthy flesh from himself!

“Eat this salt.”

“You eat first.”

“Luckily there is plenty of salt. That is the only good news.”

“Then I’ll eat.”

Salt intake was very important in the desert. The salinity in his body was continuously falling so if he didn’t eat salt then he would get sunstroke. His advanced cooking skill meant that he could eat beef jerky covered with abundant salt.

“Let’s go again. We should move as far as possible before our food supply falls.”

Weed sluggishly moved his heavy feet. Walking was painful but he feared collapsing on the sand in the desert. It was hard but he couldn’t show it in front of Seo-yoon.

And time passed endlessly. He felt like he had been walking under the scorching, hot sun for a long time.

Weed shared the water canteens with Seo-yoon. She had been held as a captive of war so she didn’t have any water.

“Thirsty? Go ahead and drink.”

“Yes.”

Seo-yoon returned the canteen after drinking the water. Weed lightly shook the canteen after receiving it.

Challang challang.

The weight of the canteen hadn't decreased. They cherished each other so they drank as little as possible. Therefore the amount of water didn't decrease. His heart became warmer when he thought about it.

‘Nodulle and Hilderun also went through this pain. Well, I'm really glad I wasn't born in the desert.’

And they kept travelling through the middle of the desert until it became night. After taking a short break, they continued marching the next day.

They needed to get as far as possible before the water ran out. They couldn't afford more than one sip of water. And the water in the canteen decreased little by little.

‘Hot, so hot....’

Weed and Seo-yoon no longer conversed with each other. It took all their power just walking. The blazing sun and hot sand in the desert!

Then a mysterious white city appeared in front of him.

“A city is visible.”

“Really? Use a little power. There might be water over there.”

Weed and Seo-yoon were filled with joy as they drank heartily from the canteen and walked quickly.

“Only a part of the city is visible but it looks strange. I think it is a mirage.”

“It can’t be.”

Weed continued heading towards the city but couldn’t approach it. It faded away the moment he approached.

Ddiring!

-A desert mirage has been seen.

Perseverance has increased by 1.

“It is making fun of us....”

Weed hung his head as he walked. And Seo-yoon's voice was heard after a while!

“This time there is a lake.”

“Well, it is like that.”

He might be fooled once but he wouldn't be fooled twice. It was impossible for a lake to form in the middle of the desert.

Not surprisingly, the lake slowly disappeared.

Ddiring!

-A desert mirage has been seen.

Affinity to Nature has increased by 2.

“Whew....”

His throat was dry and he was tired so he felt like dying after seeing the mirages. They kept moving forward but there was only an endless sandy desert.

Weed and Seo-yoon's pace slowed as they became tired.

“Should we just go?”

“It is a little difficult.”

“It seems like we’ll be walking tomorrow.”

“How much water is left?”

“If we continue to save water then it will last until tomorrow morning.”



The next day.

Weed and Seo-yoon once again started walking at dawn. There remained one sip in the canteen so they persisted in not drinking for as long as possible.

And they shared the water once they couldn’t stand it anymore. Once there was no drops remaining, Weed placed the empty canteen into his backpack.

“Now there is no water.”

“We will continue.”

Seo-yoon was becoming more haggard after becoming tired. The

sight of her sad beauty made him want to hug her.

‘She encountered trouble after meeting the wrong man. It would be good if I remember these features to make a sculpture.’

His foolish hope of walking towards the north disappeared. He was surrounded on all sides by the desert so he couldn’t have any positive thoughts.

Weed and Seo-yoon walked on small sand particles. The wind blew the sand grains towards them. There was no hope for finding a tropical area in the middle of the desert.

Weed’s lips were completely dry and cracked.

“I’m sorry.”

“Why?”

“I brought you here to help me with a quest.”

“It is okay. Do not give up and continue walking. If we continue then there might be an end.”

“But now it’s over.”

Ddiring!

-You are suffering from a high fever due to serious thirst.

You are seeing hallucinations and vitality isn't recovering.

Health is reduced.

Health will keep decreasing unless body temperature is lowered.

"I never expected to die in a desert due to a lack of water."

Weed was so weak that he could barely even take one step. Seo-yoon was using all her effort to walk so she couldn't even help him. She had a little more to drink so she had more strength.

'Surely the success or failure of this quest doesn't depend on how much water was brought?'

It was understandable that he thought that. He didn't worry about the amount of water while rescuing Seo-yoon.

Weed really couldn't walk anymore. He was suffering from severe hallucinations and his legs couldn't walk straight. And they climbed over another sand ridge. The sand reached his ankle, making it harder to walk.

"There is a tree."

“Again...a mirage”

“It is a real tree!”

Weed lifted his head as he heard Seo-yoon’s cry. There were real trees. This was a sandy desert but there were occasional tress growing with leaves dripping with moisture.

“There are really trees?”

“It seems so.”

Right now he had reached his limit. Weed and Seo-yoon painfully arrived near the trees.

Ddiring!

-You have escaped from the Desert of Tranquillity.

The title ‘Desert Traveller’ has been acquired.

The amount of vitality consumed when travelling through the desert will be reduced.

Perseverance has increased by 45.

“We finally arrived!”

Weed lay down next to the trees. He then pulled out his Sculpting Knife. Then he cut the trees. The theme was a simple rainbow and rain. And then he used a skill.

“Cloud Sculpting!”

A skill that summoned clouds in the sky! He could create a sculpture now that he escaped from the Desert of Tranquillity.

“Cloud Sculpting, Cloud Sculpting, Cloud Sculpting, rain fall from the clouds.”

Dark clouds gathered like a miracle over the desert area.

Swaaaaaang!

And rain fell over the desert! Weed and Seo-yoon watched the sky and lay down with their mouths open as they drank the rainwater.

-Your thirst has been relieved.

Now his mind was cleared due to the rain.

Ddiring!

-Natural sculpting has changed the continent.



Yoo Byung-jin admired the rain falling over the desert.

“Great patience.”

They walked tirelessly through the desert without losing hope. This couldn’t be done by just anyone.

People couldn’t underestimate the despair and negativity in situations like this.

Weed and Seo-yoon shouldered the responsibility of conserving water while constantly moving across the Desert of Tranquillity.

The starting point for this quest depending on the amount of water they originally had.

Weed and Seo-yoon didn’t waste time quarrelling over water or blaming each other. They just walked until they finally arrived at the destination. Their patience meant they achieved it despite the low vitality.

“And the desert will be changed now that the quest is successful.”

Yoo Byung-jin glanced at another monitor. The monitor was showing the Versailles Continent in the present.

The rain didn't seem like much as it soaked into the ground. But the Desert of Tranquillity in the south was vast and black rain clouds quickly spread through the area. And the heavy rain that fell! The rain soaked into the desert causing trees, grass and oases to grow.

New rivers were created and swept into surrounding lands, making it fertile. Weed's rain brought tremendous changes to the Versailles Continent in the current time.

The flowing river eroded the weak desert land. And canyons started to form! The erosion created colourful canyons where a vast river dozens of metres wide flowing through it.

A long time was needed for these scenes to occur. Weed made a wonderful sculpture that manifested over time.

There were minimal users active in the desert. The environment was far too hot and painful with few monsters so only some people came to the desert to complete quests.

But now that Weed created a flowing river and there was a mysterious gorge, many users started coming.

Just like in the north, Weed changed the southern desert. Yoo Byung-jin looked at the monitor where Weed and Seo-yoon were

resting in the rain.

The scorching sunlight shone through the dark clouds. A desert rainbow surrounded the two people lying down.

Chapter 8: Person Who Calls Rain

The message window continued ringing in front of Weed.

Ddiring!

-The nature sculpture has brought rain to the desert.

Thanks to the power of time, the nature sculpture as brought an enormous change to this region.

The growth rate of animals have increased by 850%.

The birth rate of the desert tribes has increased and they will expand their activities in this area.

The Desert of Tranquillity has been reduced. As a result of the nature sculpting, the desert area where lifeforms can't live has been reduced.

-The title 'Person Who Calls Rain' has been acquired.

You can obtain absolute respect in the desert.

Honour has increased by 36.

-Fame has increased by 6,394.

-Due to the wonders of the nature sculpture, all stats have increased by 41.

-Affinity to Nature has increased by 54.

-All stats have increased by 4.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-The skill proficiency of Handicraft has improved.

-The skill proficiency of Nature Sculpting has reached level 10 and transformed into advanced Nature Sculpting!

The ability to harmonize with nature and your affinity to it has improved.

The accuracy of Great Disaster Nature Sculpting has increased.

A variety of benefits and good luck can be obtained from nature.

“Hmmm.”

Weed felt all the fatigue in his body loosen as he read the message windows.

His sculpting skill proficiency also climbed by 4.7%. In a situation where only 20% was left to reach master level, 4.7% was a huge income. The Cloud Sculpting that he used because he was thirsty was a huge hit!

“This is beyond my expectations.”

Weed’s eyes shone.

“Suffering from thirst while crossing the desert. Rain falling on a desert. This sculpture can show the impressive aspects of nature. This is a result of my passion for the arts.”

And he laughed lightly like he was expecting the whole thing.

“Huhuhuhu, well. This much isn’t enough to surprise me anymore.”

A sculptor crossing the desert. He suffered so much for the final sculpting technique that he felt like cursing for 3 hours.

The smile on his face became slightly rotten but he endured it because of Seo-yoon. He was happy just feeling the rain that hit his body.

Seo-yoon also lifted her head towards the rain with a joyful expression. Her hair and clothes were wet but her features were

still beautiful.

“Wait, we should’t just lay here.”

Weed hastily covered their bodies with cloaks. Their physical strength was low in this time so they couldn’t afford to get a cold. Fortunately Seo-yoon was wearing a traveller’s robe that was good in the rain.

“We’ve finally escaped the Desert of Tranquillity so now we have to reach the Brukan Tribe’s oasis.”

“Food?”

“There are scorpions.”

Now that they’ve exited the Desert of Tranquillity, insects and lizard like animals were running around. With their current level, large animals could counterattack and they might die instead. But there was something he could believe in.

“Summon Sculpture!”

He could summon the recent sculptural lifeforms.

Iron-1, Iron-5. A skill to control them again!

-The amount of mana is lacking!

“Uhh, unbelievable....”

He needed 10 times more mana if he wanted to summon his sculptural lifeforms. Weed didn't lose his hope.

“The sculptural lifeforms aren't like tuna mayonnaise rice balls that have a short expiration date....”

The sculptural lifeforms were created with expensive and precious materials so he didn't want to separate from them.

Right now Iron-1 and Iron-5 were somewhere in the continent. They had accidentally gained their freedom really easily.



Iron-1 arrived at the gates of a castle ruled by Lord Balkad.

“Ohuhuk, if I can't get food then my family can't live.”

“Please give my child something to eat.”

“Please give my child something to eat.”

The residents were being beaten up with clubs and spears. It was

a typical oppression from the lord of a territory in times of war.

“I absolutely can’t stand this.”

Iron-1 stood up resolutely with his bow. And he took care of the lord and nobles with arrows.

“Hooray Iron-1!”

After taking care of the Nehallem Kingdom, he chased monsters into the deep forest. And Iron-1 didn’t appear again.

On the other hand, Iron-5 arrived at the Straud Kingdom.

It was in the west of the continent and quiet far from the Portu Kingdom. It was a war zone so Iron-5 made a name as for himself as a spearman.

“Will you be forever loyal to this Straud Kingdom?”

“It isn’t possible since my master may someday come back.”

“I understand your loyal heart. So I want to get more. Can’t you follow me?”

“I will serve Your Majesty until I meet my master.”

Iron-5 didn't lose his loyalty. However, he didn't know that Weed was only disappointed because he couldn't work Iron-5 as a slave!



The Brukan Tribe had a wide territory.

The desert territory was huge yet their population was quite low. Still, they were still one of the biggest powers among the 15 desert tribes. Weed and Seo-yoon received all types of conveniences from the desert tribes.

“It is unbelievable that you can summon rain.”

“Cloud Sculpting!”

“Ohhhh, a miraculous thing really happened! Our tribe has been suffering from a lack of rain.”

They were treated like kings by the desert tribes after calling the rain.

“Camel meat.”

“We'll bring it straight away.”

“Make sure it is well cooked.”

“The best chef will make it.”

And they were given items and gold as gifts when they left.

-Warrior's Necklace:

Durability 29/35 Defense 4

A bone necklace worn by warriors of the desert tribe. It can increase bravery.

Restrictions: Level 310 Strength 600

Shamans, Warriors only

Options: Strength +13%

Shamans who wear this will increase skill levels by 2.

When fighting with a strong enemy, Fighting Spirit will double for 4 minutes.

“It isn't much but this is a gift we've prepared. I'd like you to take it.”

“It is really insufficient. Isn’t there anything with more money?”

He didn’t care about trying to obtain more from the poor desert tribes!

The tribal warriors were fierce when hunting but they didn’t really know the state of the world. That’s why the Brukan Tribe had the most luxurious oasis called Laos on the continent in the past.

A rare desert lake! Thousands of houses were built on poles in the centre of the lake. The scale of it made the sight exotic and mysterious.

Of course, Weed already knew about the Brukan Tribe.

‘They are the tribe that Belsos belongs to.’

The Master Sculptor Belsos!

He had already learnt Elemental Sculpting before meeting him. But this was the era before Belsos was born.

Ddirring!

-Walk through the Desert of Tranquillity has been completed.

You have safely crossed the Desert of Tranquillity and arrived at the Brukan Tribe's oasis.

“Phew, let's go in.”

He had safely survived another final secret sculpting technique quest. Weed and Seo-yoon entered the city near the oasis.

In the meantime, he had progressed through quite a few final secret sculpting technique quests.

He travelled as a hummingbird and used Great Disaster Nature Sculpting. He fought with a devil in the labyrinth, searched for traces on Borota Island, escaped from Portu's Royal Castle and walked through a desert.

He expected that it was now closer to the end. And the ringing sound of a message window!

Ddirring!

-Nodulle's Growth

Nodulle and Hilderun settled at the oasis.

It is impossible to escape the crowds tracking them! Nodulle could only escape from the enemies so he decided to become strong and overcome this weakness.

Become strong in the 22 years until the devil energy sleeping in Hilderun's body becomes active.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: You must grow in the desert areas.

Time is accelerated so 1 day is equivalent to 100 days.

The quest will fail if you die.

The stats and skill proficiency obtained in this quest will disappear when it ends but compensation will be given based on the performance.

* Please Note

Skills, experience and fame will increase by 100 times when hunting.

Luck will increase so the likelihood of gaining special items will rise.

The additional effects will be given to your colleagues, subordinates or NPCs in your party

Originally, only his sculpting skills remained intact.

And the skill proficiency had risen like normal while he proceeded with the quests.

“Hrmm, this is a unique method.”

Weed considered the quest from various angles. Nodulle and Hilderun lived 22 years in a desert city.

‘My growth will be 100 times quicker. And if it is for 22 years then this quest will last 80 days.’

It was a long time for a quest! But 22 years of experience was being compressed so he couldn’t afford to waste even a single second.

He didn’t know what could happen to Nodulle in a few months or years so he couldn’t relax for a few hours. Even if the quest didn’t fail, he didn’t know what impact it would have on the following chain quests.

“You received the quest?”

“Yes.”

Seo-yoon received a similar quest. She was given a condition to survive for 22 years but it wasn’t difficult if she stayed in the city.

“Let’s go!”

Weed ran with Seo-yoon into the desert city.

Rather than drop in at stores to examine the current price of goods, he went straight to the weapons store. A desert warrior with tattoos was running the business.

“A human hasn’t visited the desert in a long time. Where did you come from?”

Weed answered as he looked around at the weapons.

“The Desert of Tranquillity.”

“If you can travel through the desert then these weapons aren’t enough. Nevertheless, you can handle these weapons so look to your heart’s content.”

Weed’s current level after becoming Nodulle and giving life to the sculptures was 27. It was a level where a graze from a monster would cause death!

‘These weapons aren’t suitable. A simple knife is the best for me.’

The lowest was a sword from the Bansen Kingdom with a level of 62. Now he didn’t have the blacksmith skill so he couldn’t wear it

even if there was a good weapon.

“This is good.”

Weed picked up a cimenter that children of the desert tribes used to play with.

-Cimeter that Frequently Changes Owners:

59/59 Attack 13~21

A cimenter that any child of the desert knows who to use.

A thick and heavy piece that won't easily break. The flexible blade will show a high attack power.

Weight: 35

Restrictions: Level 15

More than 40 Strength

Options: The durability will reduce slowly.

Will degrade armour by 60% when attacking.

When striking a downward blow, attack power +5.

It wasn't a sword but a bent knife! The weapons store owner frowned as he saw the weapon Weed selected.

“Isn't this power insufficient for fighting?”

“It does not matter.”

“Good defense. If you want to live long then you should pick your own weapon.”

Weed didn't want to engage in a long talk.

“I am a person who can call the rain. So just sell it to me.”

“Call the rain...um, I've heard about that. A person who can call rain in the desert is valuable. The ability to cause miracles is something I can't fathom. I'll sell it if that is what you want. The original price is 250 gold but you can receive it for 195 gold.”

“.....”

These were precious goods in Laos.

Weed didn't waste time bargaining and just bought it. He obtained quite a few jewels from Portu so he could afford to spend

that money. He bought daggers, bows and even arrows.

“Sell me that sword of the Bansen Kingdom.”

“You want that as well?”

“Yes.”

“I can’t understand it. Your level means you can’t use it. However, a person who calls rain is a miracle man. If you want it then I will sell.”

He purchased weapons and armour from the store. He bought clothing of the desert warriors that didn’t have a level limit.

It was due to the hot nature of the desert climate. This feature meant it was light but the defense was weak.



Weed exited Laos and searched for animals in the area.

“I need to catch a suitable opponent!”

He couldn’t find any herbivorous animals such as rabbits or deer. He even had to be careful of the weakest scorpions who were poisonous. But Weed had bought a complete set from the stores!

“Let’s test out this cimeter.”

Weed pulled out a sculpture.”

“Sculptural Destruction! Everything into Strength!”

All of his Art stat was converted into Strength.

-You have used Sculptural Destruction.

1 Art stat has permanently disappeared from the pain of destroying a sculpture. Fame has decreased by 3.

The Art stat has been converted to Strength for one day.

Your Art stat is too high. Strength stat is too low so the conversion won’t be completed all at once.

1,090 Strength has been converted to the level 8 advanced skill ‘Severe Blow.’

When hitting enemies with the exact amount of power, enemies will be blown away. Probability of causing paralysis and confusion has increased.

1,180 Strength has been converted to the level 8 advanced skill

‘Piercing Sword.’

The opponent’s shield and armour will be smashed by the powerful attack.

1,430 Strength has been changed to the level 9 advanced skill ‘Momentary Herculean Strength.’ Power will triple for a short amount of time. Enormous vitality is required.

1,150 damage will be applied to the weapon’s basic attacks but the durability will decrease by 35%.

A rudimentary rise in strength! Weed was only armed with the cimenter as he ran towards a scorpion.

Chyurik!

The scorpion raised its tail towards Weed but it was useless. Weed brought the cimenter down.

Ddiring!

-The weak scorpion has been smashed by a devastating power.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-You have learnt projection.

Projection has increased to beginner level 2.

The destructiveness of the sword has increased by 120%.

The weight involved in the attack will increase by 6%.

Frontal attacks will have a chance of pushing back the enemy.

His level instantly rose! The 100x increase in experience and skill proficiency was tremendous.

“Let’s try it!”

Weed smashed all the scorpions around him. He went over level 30 in a flash and gained many scorpion teeth and tails.

“The experience already isn’t that much.”

After that his goal was the snakes. The desert snakes were also easy prey for Weed. He had a wide variety of hunting experience so he could easily see through the simple behavioural patterns of animals.

-Charisma has increase by 1 due to winning with overwhelming

power.

On that day his level even reached 55. It was a 100 times growth so he reached this extent despite only hunting for one day.



Seo-yoon toured the stores within Laos.

‘This place is trading ores. I should remember it in case it is needed.’

Information about stores selling food and equipment, quests and hunting grounds were remembered so that she could support Weed.

And the next day!

-The Mercenary Guild is seeking a person to work in the information department.

This person will work for the Red Sun Mercenary Guild.

Urgent: 30 Copper

Supplementary payment will be given depending on the career path.

The income was small but there was a possibility of obtaining good information. Seo-yoon headed towards the Mercenary Guild for an interview.

A mercenary with a wild atmosphere around him welcomed her.

“Have you done this type of work before?”

“No.”

“You are interested in working for mercenaries?”

“Not at all.”

“Your honest is good. You can gradually learn the work.”

The mercenary guild’s job interview was a success!



Weed hunting near the city until morning and reached level 75.

“I’ve learnt Sword Mastery.”

Once he switched from a cimenter to a sword, he gained Sword

Mastery and it reached intermediate level. He learnt Sword Mastery from the Desert Warriors Guild!

He obtained supplies and information about the next hunting ground from Seo-yoon.

“If you head to the north then the lake is inhabited by crocodiles.”

“It will be difficult to breathe and hunt in the water.”

“It will be fine if you stay on the shallow side. Make sure to bring a bow.”

“I bought a lot of arrows.”

Hunting the crocodiles in the lake to the north! Desert warriors were wandering around but they didn't participate in Weed's work. His level was insufficient so the desert warriors were indifferent. They didn't want to get involved with a weak warrior.

And Weed reached level 110!

“Stat window.”

Character Name Nodulle Alignment None

Level 110 Profession Desert Warrior

Title Person Who Calls Rain Fame 8,382

Health 13,982 Mana 7,383

Strength 273 Agility 216

Vitality 61 Wisdom 125

Intelligence 97 Leadership 41

Art 3,141 Luck 79

Attack 819 Defence 198

Magic Resistance: 11%

“I’m happy but I can’t stop here.”

Weed worried while completing quests.

‘Level 110 is quite high.’

He had suffered so much difficult in the meantime due to Nodulle’s body so he felt like level 100 was quite high.

'22 years is quite long so to what extent can my level grow?'

It was really distant but he could soar to legendary heights. Sword Mastery was the default but he also often shot arrows using a bow. His Perseverance and other stats were able to become exceptionally high. But this was likely to be the foundation for the next quest.

'It is really terrible to imagine but I might need to kill a dragon next for all I know.'

He felt like something huge was going to happen. A minor different in how strong he became might make a huge difference.

It was important to optimize information gathering but he also needed a strong body to jump at strong enemies. Extra stats and high levels meant that he could grow quickly while hunting.

"The hunting time is 80 days."

Weed reduced his resting time and minimized his movements. His fast sweeping hunting was unsurpassed. Furthermore, he could take advantage of his secret sculpting techniques so the possibilities were endless.



“Now Weed is making progress on the final secret sculpting technique quest.”

Yoo Byung-jin drank sweet cocoa as he looked at the monitor.

A few years had opened since Royal Road opened. In the meantime, users had grown from strangers to becoming masters on the continent.

Yoo Byung-jin had hoped that everyone in Royal Road would become crazy about money and power. Unicorn Corporation was giving an enormous prize money so people would become frantic trying to conquer the continent!

Of course, the guilds were systematically trample on the weak. But Royal Road offered a huge happiness to people.

“Heheheh, I’ve finally obtained the broken blade after searching for 3 months. Now I can complete the quests!”

An adventurer who received a F class quest didn’t care and spent 3 months completing it. Some didn’t care about quests and just enjoyed adventures like Weed’s.

“Kyah, how cool! The taste of water after hunting is the real deal.”

“Do you want to go play in the valley?”

“That’s good. We can eat the baked meat from lizards in the valley.”

“We should quickly grab a good spot. It will be full of people from noon onwards.”

Beginners might be persecuted but they felt like the world of Royal Road was really fun. People could freely delight in hunting and going on adventures.

Yoo Byung-jin wished for people to kill in order to live.

The development of capitalism meant that more people were becoming lonely. Royal Road gave people happiness in their lives. They felt a great sense of achievement when hunting monsters or finishing a quest! They could also experience a tingling of fear when going with colleagues in a dark dungeon.

All they needed to do was connect to the game in order to live another reality. Despite the behaviour of the prestigious guilds, new users were constantly starting in the Versailles Continent.

Of course, a vast majority of the new users were inhabitants of the Arpen Kingdom in the north. Weed’s adventures inspired feelings of challenge, hopes and dreams.

Yoo Byung-jin was accurately aware of all the situations occurring in the game.

“Weed’s adventures are becoming more difficult and he will probably fail....”

–I’ve improved the prediction algorithm. Do you want me to calculate the probability?

“No!”

–I will not calculate the probability.

“Weed and Bardray are diverging in two extreme directions.”

Weed was experiencing the adventure of the final secret technique and was nearing the final stage.

His actions in the past would change the present. There were many areas where Weed’s adventure can fail. Weed could cause the current Versailles Continent to fall into a serious problem.

“If he doesn’t finish Nodulle’s work then the Dragon of Chaos will be revived and chaos will occur....how interesting.”

The large scale of the quest was becoming unimaginable.

And a time of darkness!

If Weed failed in the quest then the Versailles Continent would revert to the Dark Ages. But these opportunities couldn't be known in advance and the adventurer would discover it too late. Therefore, the likelihood of success was slim.

In the end, all the responsibility would be laid on Weed. If he didn't succeed here then all the fame he built up would be lost.

In comparison, Bardray was successfully governing the Hermes Guild. His strength was so high that he was undefeated! Moreover, the Haven Empire was the best on the continent. He was the user walking down the most successful path in Royal Road.

People might have a bad impression of Bardray but there was no denying his outstanding ability.

“Bardray is walking the traditional path of an Emperor. He wins due to his overwhelming charisma, political knowledge, power, confidence and the support of his subordinates.”

Bardray had all the necessary means to unite the continent.

“Anyone with common sense would give the victory to Bardray instead of Weed. It is absurd to compare Weed and Bardray. If I wait a little bit then Bardray will become master of the continent.”

He would learn the results not long in the future. If Bardray removed Weed who was his only obstacles, he would become the de facto ruler of the Versailles Continent.

Yoo Byung-jin acknowledged Bardray’s efforts to conquer the continent.

In contrast, it wasn’t an exaggeration to say that Weed reached this point through his dramatic adventures and skills. He was informed that there wasn’t much time until the Hermes Guild conquered the remaining guilds.

“If Bardray conquers the continent then Weed’s adventure might be buried forever.”



The representatives of the Roam Guild, Black Lion Guild, Lion Star Guild, and Cloud Guild had a private meeting.

“The time is approaching to counterattack against the Hermes Guild.”

Sherwood from the Cloud Guild presided over the meeting.

“What is the commencement date?”

Gunter from the Lion Star Guild asked. A map of the continent was spread over a wide desk.

“Bardray is leading some elite troops through the Rubidom

Mountains. Once they come out of the mountains, troops from the Roam Guild and Black Sword Mercenaries will attack. And we will instantaneously start the Hermes Guild hunting on the continent.”

“Hrmm, this mission has to be a success.... What is the troop deployment and plan of attack?”

“This will confirm the details.”

Maps displaying castles, cities, roads, the southern desert area etc. were displayed. Flags were placed at the important gateways to the Haven Empire and they could see the extent of the Hermes Guild’s territory.

‘Dammit!’

Michel the head of the Black Sword Mercenaries’ face turned red.

The Haven Empire had obtained quite a bit of land in the Gradian Kingdom. They failed to prevent the attack of Bardray and the elites and had to flee to the Norton Kingdom.

The original plan was to retreat in order to pull them into a war of attrition but the quick offensive surpassed their expectations. However, the Black Sword Mercenaries mobilized their forces remaining in the Norton and Masen Kingdoms in order to take back Gradian Kingdom.

If the other allies had helped then he wouldn’t have lost the

territory so easily but he couldn't blame them for not sending reinforcements.

‘I need to take back the Gradian Kingdom.’

His eyes were burning with desire to seize the territory of the Haven Empire. The reason why the allies joined together was to swallow up the Haven Empire.

‘This is our last chance.’

Carlise from the Black Lion Guild was sure of their unconditional victory. Their power had significantly reduced so they were barely able to obtain a place in this meeting.

They received a large injury due to the Hermes Guild and Beden Guild taking over the Tullen Kingdom and hadn't been restored to their former glory.

Those that attended on behalf of the Roam Guild were silent.

‘This time we will be sure to win. It will be okay. We can be in charge once the Hermes Guild comes crashing down. Our Roam Guild.’

The heads of the alliance made of prestigious guilds gathered to make final preparations for the war.



The day of the fight!

The coalition called it the Lion Hunting Day.

Bardray had 430,000 troops from the Haven Empire and collected prisoners of war for an army of 1.04 million people. This huge force was going through the Rubidom Mountains from the Norton Kingdom.

“We will win!”

Michel cried out loudly on the Benzen Plains.

“Waaaah!”

Soldiers and mercenaries holding a variety of weapons shouted. The Black Sword Mercenaries mobilized the support of the Pram Guild, a professional mercenary coalition.

30,000 senior mercenaries! There were also 220,000 NPC soldiers from the Dale and Norton Kingdom.

The Roam Guild gathered a huge army consisting of 1,600,000 troops and waited on the plains. The allies gathered in a different spot depending on the guild they belonged to.

“Roam Guild.”

“Yes!”

“Our goal this time is the Hermes Guild.”

“There is no problem.”

“We are different from the Hermes Guild. This time we will win.”

The Roam Guild consisted of the elite users.

The Hermes Guild possessed a lot of high ranking users but the Roam Guild was comparable to them. The Roam Guild gathered the influential people and their members could be called the continent’s strongest knights.

Among Royal Road’s top 20, 4 of them belonged to the Roam Guild and their combination of archers, mages and warriors exerted overwhelming tactics and destruction. And the Roam Guild generously gave expensive equipment to their 250,000 NPCs.

The Roam Guild had yet to fight against the Hermes Guild. But if they belonged to the Allied Guilds then they could use the troops to break through the Hermes Guild.

“We definitely have to control Bardray.”

“That guy has the myth of invincibility. We will break it perfectly.”

The high ranking users were greedy to beat Bardray. They wanted to gain the largest fame in the war by defeating the one who killed Weed. Some wanted to obtain Bardray's equipment.

The Allied Forces that arrived on the Benzen Plains had no intention of retreating. The alliance of the Cloud Guild and Black Lion Guild blocked the rear of the Rubidom Mountains towards the Gradian Kingdom.

The army going through the steep mountains was due to suffer severe fatigue! They might choose to turn around rather than continue on to the Benzen Plains and fight.

Of course, even if the Hermes Guild went forward then they would need to fight the Cloud Guild, Black Lion Guild and the other allies on the Benzen Plains.

Other than the 4 prestigious guilds, there were another 100 allied guilds gathered to fight the Hermes Guild. In order to complete the complete encirclement, the Allied Forces put a lot of effort in to hide the movement of their troops.

The Haven Empire had gained a vast amount of territory in the meantime so defeating Bardray wasn't enough to break their army.

Bardray was the Haven Empire’s emperor! His death would be the start of the Haven Empire’s collapse. They would deal an unrecoverable blow to their mindset. The offensive of the Allied Forces would then cut across the territories of the Haven Empire.

“Huhuhu, we will be a rat poison.”

“If we miss this opportunity then who knows when it will appear again. We can’t afford to let Bardray escape.”

“Reliable users are prepared to pursue them.”



Bardray received a report while travelling through the Rubidom Mountains.

“There really is a large army.”

The Black Sword Mercenaries had squeezed as much troops as possible. The Hermes Guild’s movement through the Rubidom Mountains was actually a trap for their enemies.

“This time the Black Sword Mercenaries won’t be able to rise again. We can easily occupy the Norton Kingdom. Soo Ra-im.”

“Yes!”

“Let the weary soldiers rest. They will wait until we appear so we can get sufficient rest.”

“I understand.”

The Haven Empire’s movements stopped and started resting.

The alliance who saw this was at a loss.

“Knights? We will be moving on.”

The Rubidom Mountains was a deep place with hidden caves and many tress. The scattered knights of the Haven Empire started gathering. Lafaye dispatched the rangers and magician units inside the caves. The teleport gate in big cities and castles were expensive but they had been prepared in advance in order to win the war.

“The Persek Knights have finished gathering.”

“The Vermik Knights are arriving now.”

“The Chavillin Knights are preparing to move.”

“The Teberun Knights are gathering.”

The Haven Empire boasted 24 units of knights and they gathered in the Rubidom Mountains.

“It is taking a long time.”

“When will the battle start?”

“Let’s drink alcohol after today’s win.”

There was a smile on the faces of those gathered around. The Hermes Guild had won every victory in this war. This was the pride of a guild that overcame every struggle.

“We are complete beggars.”

“There is no helping it. We were defeated once. The Hermes Guild isn’t that lenient.”

Pollon and Rensullot.

Commanders who experienced defeat to Weed also came to the Rubidom Mountains. In the past, the guild members would flatter them but now they were ignored. They were strong but the respect of the Hermes Guild was low after their loss to Weed.

Pollon clicked his tongue.

‘The environment in this type of guild isn’t good.’

The Hermes Guild that was trying to conquer the continent had fierce, internal competition. They competed over becoming the lord of a vast territory with a high population. The Hermes Guild would no doubt conquer the continent and they would be trying to pick the best egg yolk.

It was a situation where the conquest of the continent seemed close at hand.

‘We are the dominant power so it will be stupid if we don’t win.’

Pollon thought the war was easily won.

The Hermes Guild’s troops and tactics made it so obvious that it was boring. And he was an army commander so there was no need to envy others.

The really difficult battle was when he fought Weed! Pollon caught a glimpse of Weed’s scary side when faced with waves after waves of undead.

‘He knew exactly how to organize the troops. And persistently aimed at weak spots.’

The ability to see through things and command capabilities were different. It was the first time Pollon felt like that.

Every time a weak spot was aimed at, a link between the troops would be cut. The process was accomplished so naturally that they

received a lot of damage. And the troops were too fast. Weed quickly grasped the status of the opponent and gained control over the battlefield. Although he resented it at first, he analysed every reason for his defeat and felt better.

Rensullot hadn't accepted it yet. He was a tactician who went to the north and faced a miserable defeat. He was wiped out without fighting well and was waiting to meet Weed again.

“I will thoroughly win. In a real battle I will win.”

Pollen listened but didn't say anything.

If Weed commanded the army of northern users then the Northern Expedition might've suffered worse losses. Pollen and Rensullot scattered and arrived at their respective camps.

Knights of the Haven Empire arrived at the Rubidom Mountains under the pretence of a supplies troop. In order to reduce fatigue, the infantry had chopped at the trees on their way in.

“Rangers are placed at the locations specified for ambushes.”

“Magicians inspect the traps!”

Knights, magicians and soldiers of the Haven Empire continuously arrived through the teleport gate. The elite troops of the Haven Empire were all here.

“Now we will march to the Benzen Plains to defeat them. This surprise attack will cause despair.”

The army marched towards the Benzen Plains after a suitable rest. As the leader, Lafaye showed shocking and brutal tactics.

The Rubidom Mountains were perfect for luring the enemies into a trap. Bardray would defeat their enemies on the Benzen Plains and then march through the Norton Kingdom. The rangers would also delay the Black Lion Guild and Cloud Guild behind them.

After finishing the troops on the Benzen Plains, the enemies arriving through the Rubidom Mountains would be too late.

The variable terrain of the Rubidom Mountains would cause even the prestigious guilds to feel frustration.

Lafaye and the other leaders called this plan Hunting the Lion Hunters.



The Roam Guild, Black Sword Mercenaries and other allies smiled with satisfaction as time passed.

“Those fellows aren’t retreating and are heading towards the Benzen Plains....”

“Is the Hermes Guild so proud that they won’t retreat in the face of defeat? Then we will give them the taste of losing. Anyway, it is good. The Haven Empire’s huge loss today will be irreversible.”

“Get in battle formations!”

The Allied Forces were confident in winning over the Haven Empire. They firmly believed that the Benzen Plain would act as a road towards conquering the rest of the Haven Empire.

The wide empire would be eaten up. The Allied Forces stood at the locations assigned in advance.

Many guilds decided to attack through the units system created by the Grass Porridge Cult in the north. There were a few differences but these units had much higher ranking users and a larger size.

“They have appeared!”

“Continue waiting!”

“Stop. Do not jump at the enemy!”

The Allied Forces waited for the Haven Empire to enter the Benzen Plains. There was no need to fight in a hurry. The Black Lion Guild and Cloud Guild would appear on the other side so they

just waited.

Prior to the start of the battle, Michel gave a loud speech.

“Today! It is the day that the Haven Empire will decline!”

“Roam Guild! We will become the strongest guild on the continent!”

It was difficult to hide their excitement at the thought of the Hermes Guild in ruins.

After a long time passed, the troops of the Haven Empire completely entered. The Benzen Plains was flat and spacious with a lot of room for troops to fight. But any who retreated to the Rubidom Mountains would suffer damage.

“Go!”

“Sweep them all away!”

Buuuuuong!

A horn sounded and the Allied Forces started marching.

The knights began to charge. Every flag representing a guild, castle or kingdom moved in unison, causing a grand spectacle. The

distance to the Haven Empire's army was getting closer.

“Death to all those bastards!”

“Yes!”

According to Bardray's commands, the magicians of the Haven Empire had already prepared various spells.

“Steps of Fire.”

“Overturn the Earth!”

“Group Fire!”

“Flame Vortex.”

“Chain Explosion!”

Different types of magic and arrows rained down on the Allied Forces. A tremendous site of destruction! The subsequent light and noise transcended imagination.

The Allied Forces in the front suffered horrifying damage and collapsed. When the dust cleared, the users had already disappeared without a trace. The Allied Forces stopped moving and groaned.

“Unbelievable...why are there so many magic attacks?”

“No matter how great the magicians in the Hermes Guild are, such destructive power is impossible. No!”

The Haven Empire started their assault while the Allied Forces were hesitating.

Chapter 9: Hero Of The Past

Weed decided to take advantage of this rapid growth for his sculpting.

“This is for the quest so I can’t fail. Sculptural Destruction! Everything into Knowledge.”

He broke sculptures from the beginning and applied it to hunting. The rise in Knowledge increased his maximum mana and he furiously used his skills.

“Radiant Sword! Hot Fire!” Weed’s original body couldn’t use magic but that changed when he became Nodulle.

That’s why he switched professions to Desert Warrior in the desert city of Laos. Now there was the possibility of using fire magic and fire elementals. He would also become stronger under the sun.

“Moving around will take too much time. I should eat while walking to save time.”

It had been 3 days into Nodulle’s Growth quest. He couldn’t find reasonable prey around the city anymore so he needed to move further.

In order to save precious time walking through the desert, he had

Seo-yoon buy him a camel from the Mercenary Guild. She had worked for close to 1 year so her income was quite big.

“It is still too slow. I need something quick and tireless.”

He used water and sand to carve a sculpture of a camel.

“Sculpture Life Bestowal!”

The sand became flesh and a life was born.

“Meheheng!”

“Your name shall be Bactrian Camel.”

The name was Bactrian Camel! The size was over 4 metres!

It could run quickly in the desert, had long legs so it wouldn't fall in the sand and the soles of their feet were flat and spacious. The Bactrian Camel also had 2 humps where nutrients could be stored!

The level of the camel was 483 and it could go 10 days without sleeping. In addition, the camel was a sculpture he gave life to.

“It will become stronger while I'm fighting. Anyway, it is done now that I've given life to it.”

This quest required hunting for 22 years so he could easily recover the levels. He obtained valuable information from his colleague in the city in order to save time and because he might not be able to meet her in a while.

Therefore, Weed decided to hunt with 10 desert soldiers. Warrior-1, Warrior-2, Warrior-3, Warrior-4....he felt annoyed making them but he buried those feelings.

“My life is yours. I can also tear out my heart and give it to you.”

The characteristics of a desert warrior was similar to eternal obedience.

“Yes, I will keep you with me. And I can’t buy them from the city so two priests are needed.”

The priests were both men, called Alverun and Alveren. To be exact, they were fake Alverons.

“God bless you for giving life to us.”

“This is a blessing. It would be nice if we had money and clothing.”

After making sculptural lifeforms for various situations, he decided to hunt in the dungeons.

“I will protect Master.”

“I will attract monsters for Master to fight.”

The desert warriors who Weed gave life to protected him and helped him hunt. After going through one dungeon, the desert warriors grew rapidly.

17 days after the quest started, his level broke through 440! He only concentrated on hunting with his subordinates so his growth was fearsome. Weed felt strength surge inside his body every time he fought. He demonstrated fire magic without a hitch and showed a frightening ability to slay the enemies! Weed and the sculptural lifeforms swept through the dungeons.

“This is not real....”

He hated that the sculptural lifeforms and everything he gained with Nodulle’s body would disappear at the end of this quest. He received the x2 experience effect when entering a new dungeon but he was greedy for more.

‘I should raise skill proficiency first. If I don’t raise that and my stats more then I will really suffer in the future. I can’t go into dangerous dungeons unless my level is high.’

The level of the monsters went up with the growth of the desert warriors and priests. He didn’t want to spend hours searching for the entrance of a dungeon. Good hunting grounds at higher levels

might be difficult to find which is why Seo-yoon's efforts in the city was crucial.

“Oh, the tough soul of the desert! The desert warriors will solve all difficulties in Laos!”

“It is great to see such fiery desert warriors.”

The treatment changed when meeting the desert tribesmen.

They watched Weed and the desert warriors pass through the city while holding scimitars. The law of the desert meant they respected strong warriors! The desert tribes fought and killed each other.

They were like bandits around a city. This was the reason why desert tribes had a lot of infamy. Weed felt tempted but he didn't attack the desert tribes.

‘They are all riding fast camels. It will be hard to catch them.’

He was riding Bactrian Camel but his subordinates were on general camels. If the desert tribes escaped while fighting then it would be hard to track and chase them through the sand.

In fact, many of the desert tribes were so poor they only had one sword and a few sheep. This was why the desert tribes threw away their self-respect. Every time they finished a dungeon, Weed wouldn't end the hunting and would just switch to another one.

“I’m really looking forward to seeing the sun in the desert.”

“The sandy desert is vast.”

In no time, he was called a king. Weed and his soldiers exceeded level 500. Less than half of the time has passed since receiving the quest. 22 years was a long time.

‘I wonder what will happen at the end of the quest. No, I don’t have time to think about such useless things. I should quickly beat the monsters.’

He spent of the time fighting in the desert so he earned many achievements.



Users in the southern dukedom of Borghes. Meyer, Kenten Dreita, Enru and Frame!

These 4 people were hunting in a party regardless of the war in the Central Continent.

“Which side should we go to this time?”

“Shall we go towards the south?”

“The south?”

“Yes. We should go hunt the Ibellina Dungeon and then do some trade in a nearby desert city.”

“Shall we? I need to buy a magic book.”

They weren't merchants but their backpacks were filled with basic things to sell. It wasn't a large profit but this was a way to earn money for users more than level 200.

“Let's go!”

They bought supplies first before going towards the Borghes area in the south. It was an enjoyable trip as they passed fields and fish swimming in rivers.

There were a few activities in the dukedom so they went down to the south with 250 people. The crowd of users meant that monsters wouldn't attack even if they were low level users.

“What the, isn't this a strange city?”

“Did we take the wrong road?”

“No. I've been here a few times...that's right. There was once a city in the desert called Probullen. There were signposts about it.”

“I saw a few intact buildings.”

“No way! It is really Probullen. When did it become bigger?”

The users were lost at the sight of a city so developed in the southern desert. Not long ago, there were dozens of outdated white buildings in the desert. The sand covered most of them and even small merchants wouldn't set up a trading post there.

But now it was a large city with tens of thousands of buildings. Thick walls and moats were surrounding the city and a number of facilities drew water from a nearby lake. Even the merchants who normally travelled to the desert were surprised!

“I just came here two days ago.”

“Really? It wasn't like this at the time?”

“Not at all. What magic caused such changes in only 2 days?”

“Should we go over there and look?”

“I'm going to check. Originally I was going to pass through but I can't just go now.”

The curious users carefully went over to the city. Desert tribal warriors were guarding Probullen. Enru swallowed his saliva and

asked.

“Hey, is this Probullen?”

“That’s correct.”

“Wasn’t it a small village a few days ago?”

“I don’t know what you are talking about.”

“There is a lack of water so the desert is a hard place to live.”

“Too noisy. Can’t you see the city facilities that we’re proud of?”

The guards became angry. But they weren’t stopped from entering the city. The users cheered as soon as they entered the city.

“Wow! This is amazing!”

“The real deal!”

The stores displayed fine silk, steel, ivory and jewellery. Hard to find equipment like scimitars over level 400 were displayed. Furthermore, the city contained a mercenary guild where tough desert warriors could be hired.

The desert warriors were very strong and the hire costs were low so they were immensely popular. In order to hire them, they had to go to large cities in the desert so Probulen was welcome.

“W-wait a minute. Why are the levels of the mercenaries so high?”

“How much?”

“Minimum is 390. Others are 420.”

“The employment costs are 400 gold per day?”

“No! That is the level.”

“Hik!”

Merchants ran through the streets clustered with shops selling goods. The market price had also changed a lot.

“Olives? That is common in our city. I’m not interested in buying imported goods. This isn’t a secret but if you want to sell something for an expensive price then bring things like dried fruits and pickled fish.”

“Pickled fish can be sold at a considerable price?”

“The number of visitors are increasing these days so it can’t be guaranteed. Those who come first can get a good price.”

In the past, food in the desert could be sold for an unconditionally good value. They were poor so they couldn’t buy a large quantity but now the market was highly developed so the goods could be disposed of.

The city’s population grew dramatically due to the increase in goods. Hundreds of different things of items were displayed.

“Oh my god! Lemons, basil, cumin, parsley, pepper, celery...there are tons of different spices.”

“There’s even the hard to obtain saffron!”

“What things are you looking for? The city merchants...if you find something you want then we work out a cheap price.”

“Really?”

“Yes. And don’t go to the old city of Laos in the south.

“Why?”

A merchant in Probulen mentioned the name Laos to an adventurer.

“The dye industry there is very developed and it is a wealthy place. So they often speak contemptuously of us.”

“Heok!”

Probullen wasn't the only city in the desert with a tremendous change. Some cities were so wealthy that this place just seemed like a trading post.

‘A jackpot!’

‘It is a complete uproar. What can I buy and sell?’

Adventurers and warriors wanted good hunting grounds in undeveloped land. The merchants in the big cities competed with each other. Merchants experienced happiness and anguish when trying to purchase specialties.

Right now the north had a lot of trade and were building up their wealth.

“Are we still going to Ibellina Dungeon?”

“No! Let's explore more of this city.”

“I also agree! There isn't a rush to go to the hunting grounds.”

Meyer, Kenten Dreita, Enru and Frame postponed their dungeon hunting and toured the city. They tried talking to residents in order to obtain quests. They tried talking to a grandmother sitting on the sidewalk selling ornaments.

“How did Probullen become larger? Hahaha, you didn’t know a famous fact like that. It is thanks to the Great Emperor of the desert, Weed-nim.”

“W-Weed-nim!”

Enru and Frame were amazed. They were young but were big fans of Weed! Talk about Weed often occurred at school when they chattered with friends.

They started in the south and felt regret that Weed’s activities were in the distant north. Once their levels were a little higher, they dreamt of heading towards the north. Yet they heard a story about Weed in the desert city of Probullen!

“Shush! Don’t recklessly call the name of the Great Emperor. It is disrespectful and a desert warrior won’t forgive you if they heard it. His stature is something that the desert warriors don’t dare forget.”

“Y-yes.”

“I want to know more about him!”

Enru and Frame were passionate fans of Weed so they showed an interest.

“Weed-nim is a person with enough power to burn through the desert. He created incredible miracles in the desert. Have you heard about the Golden Desert?”

“No!”

“The conquest of the Golden Desert led to the discovery of the desert city Metapeia.”

“Oh really?”

“Yes!”

Meyer who was listening couldn't believe it. Weed had become an existence that was like a legend in the desert. There weren't any stories when they came the last time and now this was happening suddenly. It also felt strange that the grandmother was talking about Weed like he lived a long time ago.

“Are you interested in adventures?”

“Yes!”

“Then you should ride a camel in the southeast direction for one day. You will be able to find a large canyon. Weed created his place

in the desert as a gift. Go there and take a look. And if you see a man around there then ask if he is my son Vincent. That boy went there to meet a woman and hasn't returned."

Meanwhile, the merchant users became familiar with the store owners. It was important for merchants to determine the latest fashions in the city in order to trade.

"Weed-nim was the Great Emperor of the desert."

"He built a kingdom?"

"He could create sandstorms in the desert so no one dared go against His Majesty."

"Created sandstorms?"

"He didn't need to use a sword."

One of the biggest reasons why merchants were reluctant to go into the desert was a sandstorm. Even a small one would be several hundred metres high and there were no countermeasures. They could suffer a great loss due to the sandstorms.

Even Bardray wouldn't be able to display such a miracle. This story told how strong Weed was.

'Is it possible they are talking about a different Weed?'

‘The stories might be wrong but I don’t feel like they are.’

The owner of a trading post told a different story.

“The Bukun colony near here? Weed-nim smashed it. Giants in the mountain? Weed-nim brought his subordinates there and cleared them out.”

“Eh?”

They were dumbfounded because those places were at least level 600. And the owner of an antique store covertly said.

“You there, do you want to see a real precious item that can’t be compared to the common goods in the store?”

“I would like to see it.”

“I don’t normally show this to merchants who first visit here. Watch carefully. It is a valuable treasure that can’t be bought. Follow me.”

The items in the store were too expensive for them so they wanted to see the really valuable treasure. The store owner guided them to the back of the building. There was a separate room protected by guards and pulled out a box that seemed like it contained rare gems.

‘Looking at this atmosphere and the size of the box, the item should be.... Wah, calm down.’

‘There must be an item worth thousands of gold in that box. A jewel worth more than 1 million gold might appear.’

‘It is expensive so there is no possibility of buying it. However, I can save money and aim for it. If I can sell it then my name will be known across the continent.’

The store owner said in a heavy voice.

“You will feel reverence when you see this. It is the most precious treasure that came from the desert.”

“Yes!”

The users watched as the store owner slowly opened the box.

‘T...this is?’

It was something they were familiar with!

‘A rabbit sculpture.’

The rabbit sculpture that Weed mass produced in Serabourg

Castle and sold for 2 silver. Its colour had faded due to many years passing but the guards on both sides kneeled down and gave it the utmost respect. The merchant users also kneeled down due to the atmosphere.



Weed’s desert warriors extended up to 280 people.

“This sort of thing wasn’t intended. It is quite annoying.”

His subordinates weren’t all sculptural lifeforms. The brave desert warriors came running barefoot and kowtowed to him. In addition, the sculptural lifeforms got married and had children. The females weren’t weak due to the nature of the desert. Those children grew up and learnt how to use a knife from a young age.

“Great Emperor of the desert! I am not strong enough. I thank you for allowing me to be your subordinate.”

“I used all my strength to come here. Please accept me. If I am lacking then please cut my neck!”

“The glory days of the desert warriors are no more. My heart and limbs will fight for you.”

“Just like my father, I came to serve the greatest warrior. I am young but I know how to fight. Please accept me!”

Weed and his sculptural lifeforms had built up achievements and were widely known throughout the desert. The desert warriors ran over barefoot like a Korean star had arrived at the airport.

“We can go to various places in the desert with all these people following.”

Weed accepted the desert warriors into his group. The warriors had a lot of information about the desert so it was easy to pick a place to go. They were used as guides and errand boys.

“Monsters are rampaging near the area of my tribe.”

“Are they strong?”

“Yes. But if a strong warrior like you leads this group then it can be easily resolved. We can overcome any difficulty....”

“That’s it!”

Weed didn’t refuse any requests and listened to all the information from the warriors.

“There is a mysterious city. It is like a mirage in the desert. In the past, I heard there were rumours there that can greatly increase a governing area.”

“Weapons?”

“It is said that legendary treasures are sleeping there. But the only thing found there was a tomb.”

“Is it a dangerous place with powerful enemies?”

“Yes! It is a scary place.”

“Then let’s go!”

Weed and his subordinates ran through the desert. The unit of desert warriors followed Weed who was riding Bactrian Camel! And they arrived at the tomb with speed and efficiency.

“Fight! The people injured should take care of themselves while the others will keep on moving forward.”

The desert warriors engaged in a high speed hunt due to Weed’s charisma. The mysterious city of Metapeia was filled with monsters belonging to the legendary ghost clan. It had been 57 days since the quest started and he achieved level 640!

Weed just needed to wave his hand and the desert warriors would gather like clouds. In fact, now he had plenty of mana to summon Iron-1 and Iron-5 but he didn’t need them anymore. He would rather be accompanied by subordinates who were easily sacrificed.

“Don’t stop when the enemy comes rushing and fight until the end.”

“It is an honour, Great King!”

Apart from the dungeons, there weren’t many scary monsters in the desert. He needed to pay attention to all the details to achieve the best performance in a quest.

“Great Emperor, please give a command.”

“The monsters are very strong. Attack them face on!”

The desert warriors hurled themselves into the fray while Weed and his sculptural lifeforms stayed in the rear. In addition, there were 12 priests that could save them at any time. If their size kept on growing larger then it would become cumbersome to wander the desert.

-The hero of the desert shows cruelty and brutality.

-The Great Emperor that has a thick, bloody smell around him.

-It is a cruelty that doesn’t spare the lives of his subordinates in order to overcome any challenge.

Weed ruthlessly and efficiently commanded his subordinates. His Charisma and Fighting Spirit grew. It might seem brutal but this

was the desert. They followed strong commands! Survival and strength was the most important thing in the desert so they became more excited with each victory.

There was no such thing as honour in the first place.

Ddirring!

-You have mastered Swordsmanship

The sword has been used to cut numerous monsters and you now completely understand it.

You have reached the point where you have become one with the sword and there is nowhere else to advance.

The basic damage of the sword will be enhanced by 500%.

Sword skills can be cancelled at any time and mana can be recovered.

The scope of attack skills is expanded.

Attack skills can be learnt easily and skill proficiency will quickly increase.

No damage will be received when blocking an attack with the

sword.

The enemy's sword skills can be learnt.

All stats increased by 40.

Combat quests can be received without any limitation.

Will pull out the weapon's latent ability and original damage will double.

Sword durability will rarely drop and it will never break.

-The title 'Master of the Sword' has been acquired.

You can meet any kings regardless of fame or previous relationships.

Knights and warriors will come to challenge you.

The effectiveness of Fighting Spirit and Charisma will increase and will not be affected by enemies at a lower level.

A master swordsman!

He achieved it through Nodulle's quest but he was the first user on the continent.

“It soared up from Advanced level 9 and I eventually mastered it.”

Weed’s joy was very small. The power of a sword master wasn’t that good. Ironically, his original Swordsmanship was still at Advanced level 4. After that, he also became a defense and magic master. He mastered countless attack skills.

Fire magic and elemental magic also reached the advanced level. The power of fire magic and fire elementals in the desert was very large. He didn’t feel the need to create anything other than basic fire elementals like salamanders.

Weed’s current body could use the techniques of a Desert Warrior, had the support of Sculptural Destruction and high health and mana. Of course, he could use the Art stat to switch between Strength or Agility as needed.

“Thank you very much. You are the benefactor who saved our tribe.”

“I’ve heard that a new sun is rising in the desert. Desert Sun, thank you very much.”

100 days passed in one day. Weed hunted, procured supplies from stores, sold his sculptures and used Cloud Sculpting. This caused oases, lakes and rivers to form after a couple of years and cities would become larger. The bulletins boards were in an uproar from users in the southern desert and dukedoms.

-Weed the God of War's activities in the desert.

-It is really a jackpot!

-Cities names after Weed have sprung up.

-The terrain is changing. The reason? I don't know. It is a full transformation. What is impossible for Weed?

-The people in this dukedom is talking from morning until night.

-What kind of magic can build a city overnight? I couldn't believe it until I saw it directly.

-My friend fell asleep in sand dunes and woke up in the middle of a city. Originally I thought it was a lie and didn't believe my friend. This is a story for the broadcasting stations.

-It is a little strange. Weed's history is recorded in the history books like he is an old person. He was the greatest hero of the desert.

-It is the same for me. People kept on talking about Weed like he lived hundreds of years ago.

-Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!

-Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!

-Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!
Grass Porridge!

-.....

-Bombardment is prohibited. There are more than 1,000
comments of Grass Porridge!

The result of Weed's actions were normally spread. But this quest
was something he didn't spread. He just focused on becoming
stronger in the desert.

Seo-yoon stayed safe within the city and worked at the Red Sun
Mercenary Guild. The main work she did was commissioning
merchants and determining what quests should be accepted.

-Capture the White-Furred Antelope in the Kensera Desert.

The Kensera Desert is filled with rumours of a white-furred
antelope that frequently appears there.

Capture the white-furred antelope so I can give it as a gift to
nobles.

Level of Difficulty: D

Client Payment: 950 gold.

-Find the Escaped Raccoon.

The raccoon has escaped from our kennel.

Capture it before it runs away.

It isn't a difficult task but the nobles of the Lesbo nobles will have more confidence in you.

Level of Difficulty: F

Client Payment: 35 gold.

-Escort the Horse Traders through the Mald Area.

There are rumours that bandits are appearing around the Mald area.

Merchants have asked the Red Sun Mercenaries to escort them through there.

A large sum will be given if they are escorted through safely.

But there is no information about the bandits.

Level of Difficulty: C

Client Payment: 1, 300 gold.

-Scout the Urkan Area

The Red Sun Mercenaries need to send scouts to acquire information about the Urkan area.

Send appropriate, quick mercenaries.

Level of Difficulty: F

-Lack of Plunder

A group of merchants has been attacked by the Zeke desert tribe.

If the mercenaries steal from them then it would be considered an act of justice and the mercenaries won't be criticized.

But the desert tribe won't forget such a thing.

Seo-yoon assigned the requests to the appropriate mercenaries after she decided to accept them. 100 days passed in one day so the results came quickly. Some mercenaries failed and died while

others achieved large success. Seo-yoon confirmed new information on a daily basis as she worked in the mercenary guild.

“This time the work was completed brilliantly.”

“It is good that you’ve thoroughly resolved the work given to you.”

“Well, I can’t find fault in the work this time.”

“Huh! This is perfectly....! It is amazing. In the future I will put all requests through the Red Sun Mercenaries.”

Seo-yoon’s ability to deal with information was incomparable. In addition, she knew every detail of the mercenary’s information so she didn’t accept any reckless requests. She also assigned good clients to Weed and his subordinates.

“Do you think this will be difficult?”

“Um. It is really easy. It could end soon. Do you want to do something else?”

“There is a request to fight illegal gold panning at the Kosuma River.”

“I will pick that.”

“It has a fairly large scale.”

“No. How can I miss this opportunity to pick up some gold from them?”

“.....”

“I can use this labour to grow.”

Weed and his troops neatly succeeded in the jobs. As Seo-yoon’s capabilities were recognized, her authority over the mercenaries kept on increasing.

“I’ve been watching for 8 years. You are the only woman we believe in. The mercenaries have great confidence in you. In the future you will lead our Red Sun Guild.”

She rose to the position of Deputy Director of the mercenary guild. She expanded the Red Sun Mercenaries.

-A branch of the Red Sun Mercenaries has been opened in Ocharem City.

-A branch of the Red Sun Mercenaries has been opened in Buhares City.

-A liaison office of the Red Sun Guild has been opened in Nukud Oasis.

Seo-yoon's management skills results in branches of the guild opening in vast areas of the desert. Due to the fact that 100 days passed in on day, she became known among the mercenary guilds. Weed saw the cities grow 3~4 times larger and after 12 years passed, they had become huge metropolises.

The compensation for the guild requests also rose. In addition, commerce developed due to merchants being able to trade safely.

“The security of the Rumi area is falling. Mercenaries should be dispatched there. I will send some mercenaries along with Weed-nim the next time he visits.”

The desert prospered under her hands.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

By the time 19 years passed in the quest, Weed and his sculptural lifeforms had reached a record level.

They broke through level 740! The important skills were mastered and they also got the x2 experience from dungeons. Weed meticulously remembered the information ahead of time. His thoughts changed continuously as time passed in the quest.

In the early days.

‘Do I have to kill a sick and decrepit dragon? Ah, I’m anxious about dying.’

A dragon was an absolute existence. The hard skin meant it was hard for a sword to cut and magic attacks lost any meaning. The enormous health also meant it would take a few days to kill.

After half a year.

‘My level is rising at a good rate. It is important to minimize the travel distance. The quest can change completely depending on the results.’

Weed and his subordinates swept through the desert.

‘The Great Emperor of the Desert. The name they’re calling me is okay. My memories of Continent of Magic is rising after a long time. At that time there were no obstacles in my way. I lived without knowing when I would face a scary monster.’

In the second half of the year.

‘Hunting one dragon? Is there a sick dragon living in the vicinity?’

He really wanted to go against try going against a horde of monsters or a dragon. Weed and his subordinates’ strength in the desert was absolute. The desert warriors also became strong after experiencing all the cruelty.

“We’ve come back alive from the Dakhun Cave, Your Majesty!”

“I’ve brought this big lake monster that I’ve caught. 785 warriors headed there and only 377 people returned.”

The desert warriors called Weed a king. He didn’t govern over any territory or inhabitants but Weed’s influence stretched over the entire desert. The power and population of the desert tribes grew and they faithfully dedicated their lives to Weed.

Of course, if Weed was weak then all the desert warriors would turn on him. But they followed him because they recognized that Weed was strong. They were pure so he could control all of them.

Elite warriors swore loyalty to Weed every day and some honourably died while fulfilling orders. But the lives of the desert warriors weren’t always positive.

“These ugly bastards! You are useless fellows who only eat rice. Hestiger, why didn’t you intercept the monster trying to kill me earlier? Take the lead!”

“Yes. It is an honour.”

“If you can’t win this fight then you don’t have the qualifications to become my subordinate.”

“I will certainly win.”

Weed cruelly sacrificed his subordinates.

His temperament from Continent of Magic was revived. The sculptural lifeforms were important investments but he didn't care if the desert warriors died.

As the quest continued to progressed, he couldn't afford to individually take care of his subordinates. Over 1,000 desert warriors who followed him suffered that pain.

Book 35: Warrior Saving The World

Chapter 1: Victory Of The Haven Empire

Weed looked at the endless sandy desert.

His clothing had completely changed to that of a perfect desert warrior. A turban was wrapped around his head and his body was covered with luxurious fabric.

His features had changed and he looked much older than before. The wrinkles around his eyes had deepened and his hair fell out until he was bald. He was the classic example of a freeloader!

He was doing this quest as Nodulle and subsequently aged 20 years.

“This is definitely different from reality.”

Weed muttered as the hot winds from the desert hit his bald head. It would be a shock to return to his original appearance after the quest was finished. Weed still hadn't reached his prime age.

“Well, it doesn't really matter because it's not real. Actually, I think I've gracefully aged when looking at myself. In particular, my scarred eyes and ripped mouth is hard to see in reality.”

On the surface he didn't care about his appearance but he wore a golden mask with the face of a pharaoh on it. It was a 2,000 year old treasure with a level restriction of 700.

This was Nodulle's body so he started from the beginning. However, he grew rapidly and obtained a lot after dominating the desert.

"This is much better."

Weed wore ordinary white t-shirts and jeans compared to celebrities or models. However, the desert style clothing fit quite well with him. As the quest progressed, his smile became more rotten as more residents joined him.

"Great Emperor-nim, we have arrived."

The sand around Weed blew as 1,000 warriors gathered around him. They were heroes and representatives of different desert tribes. Weed spoke in a low, solemn voice.

"Has everything been prepared?"

"It has finished."

"Now is the time to destroy the last hurdle. I'm going to ask, who are we?"

The loyal sculptural lifeform Warrior-1 answered.

"Villains of the desert."

“What?”

The answer was completely contrary to what Weed expected!

Warrior-3 was honest.

“We are desert robbers.”

Sometimes they even committed wrong doings. Time was running out so he didn't bother hiding anything. Once they accidentally encountered NPC adventurers from the Central Continent and the result ended cruelly.

“Huhuhu, good.”

Weed's eyes shone as he saw the equipment and map belonging to the adventurers.

And after a few minutes, the adventurers were robbed and stuck in the desert in their underwear. The desert tribes were poor but they were experts in combat and massacres.

Warrior-6 spoke some clear words.

“The desert is a harsh life involving sand and hot water so a ruler like Master is needed. He is someone who kindles the desert, His Majesty King Weed. Hooray, hooray, hooray!”

“Well, remember this well.”

“It is amazing that we can wear the colours of His Majesty.”

“Good. Let’s go!”

Weed’s cloak floated behind him as he rode Bactrian Camel over a pile of sand. They were heading towards the mysterious city Metapeia!

Once the sun had risen to its highest point, a huge city appeared in the desert like it was a mirage. Weed and the Red Knife desert warriors ran towards the mysterious city on their camels.

Nodulle’s quest required him to grow for 22 years! 100 days occurred in 1 day so time passed fairly quickly. There was little time remaining so Weed was approaching the end of the quest.

After 21 years passed in the desert, his level had now reached 783. Whether the final secret sculpting technique quest succeeded or failed, everything he gained would completely vanish. It was like winning the lottery only to be given an honour as the prize instead.

“I would rather get the money.”

Weed discovered all the important or hidden dungeons and hunting grounds in the desert and cleared them with the Red Knife

warriors.

They went around the area close to the southern desert and defeated all the difficult dungeons. Therefore, they were now heading towards the mysterious city Metapeia in order to conquer it.

“I’ve returned.”

He had attacked the monsters in the mysterious city Metapeia several times when he was around level 400.

Kuwoooooh!

The monsters ran away or lay down on the ground pretending to be dead. The monsters fell down under the weight of Weed’s charisma! When he first came here, there were monsters with razor sharp teeth and a nasty smell called the Laukao.

“Hey, are you dead?”

.....

“I’m going to peel your leather.”

Kuing king king king!

Weed was over level 700 so even ferocious monsters quivered in front of him. It was like they were standing in front of a bank robber asking to be robbed! He needed to hunt properly but there wasn't much time remaining in the quest. He came to Metapeia to clear the dungeon present.

“This is no time to deal with these monsters. My aim is to reach level 800. Let's go.”

“Understood, Great Emperor!”

Weed and his subordinates rode their camels towards the entrance of Metapeia.

‘The monsters inside are vicious fellows.’

He quickly looked from side to side.

At the entrance to the city were statues on both sides of a giant holding a trident and a golden fountain spouting water. It had the mystical beauty of the ruins of an ancient city.

He had been defeated by this dungeon myriad times. He obtained valuable knowledge that it couldn't be beaten if his level was only in the 400s.

Seo-yoon gathered clues about Metapeia from residents of the desert and Weed gathered materials related to the battle.

Weed and his subordinates were around level 430 the first time they arrived. At that time, they fought the fierce monsters near the entrance and then the ghost clan that were present just inside the city.

There were countless riches preserved for a long time and the opponents wore the best equipment.

Weed didn't have a lot of time to hunt and had lacked good items. But after sweeping through the first dungeon, he managed to arm himself with equipment. His subordinates called the Red Knife also had many good equipment.

Of course, they wore advanced equipment but there were many deaths among the new recruits. There was a lack of equipment so the desert tribes would snatch them when they appeared.

“Junior. That knife looks good.”

“The chief of my clan specially gave it to me when he heard I was going to join the Red Knife unit.”

“Give it to me.”

“Yes!”

It was like the army where seniority was important! Also, the

beatings from Weed were a daily routine. Many Red Knife warriors who already have achievements would handle the newcomers.

“The intruders have showed up again.”

“They have become scary. Don’t touch them.”

“The fate of the tribe is at stake.”

The ghost tribe entered their houses and didn’t come out as they allowed Weed and his subordinates to move.

Weed led his army of camels until they were in front of a large, stone door. It was Metapeia’s dungeon where the strongest monster ruled!

In the past, Weed had tried to enter but lost 100 desert warriors before running away. It was lucky his judgement retreated in time or else the damage would’ve been even larger. They might’ve suffered damage but it wasn’t a waste of time as he had gained 3~4 levels.

Weed asked his subordinates.

“Are you afraid?”

“No.”

“I am afraid.”

“.....”

The desert warriors and his sculptural lifeforms were silent. They absolutely couldn't understand Weed's words!

“Are you scared?”

“I'm scared.”

“Go home.”

“.....”

Weed quickly looked over the faces of the desert warriors. The warriors here were outstanding warriors from each tribe that ran to dedicate their loyalty to Weed.

Weed and Seo-yoon had caused a lot of changes to the terrain and history of the desert. Due to the abundant rainfall, the desert cities thrived and many monsters and bandits came to invade them.

The desert tribes that lived in the desert fought against tens of thousands of monsters. Large scale battles occurred often and the levels and combat skills of the desert warriors and residents grew.

Of course, even the warriors Weed gave life to hadn't reached level 740. Even so, most knights were able to beat berserkers with their bare fists. The quality of the army was exceptional and similar to knights.

“Great Emperor, we are willing to sacrifice our lives in this battle.”

“We will always stand in front of you.”

The desert warriors that met Weed's eyes showed their bravery and determination. Weed would only go forward once the battle heated up. He never looked back and would fight the enemy blocking in front of him. As the fight went on, the warriors would start giving him more believing looks. The desert warriors would start showing him the respect worthy of a ruler of the desert.

Weed won difficult battles and this led to the revival of the desert. At the same time, he became a legendary leader! The warriors who followed thought of him like a god.

Weed was thinking about how to take advantage of this as he met the eyes of the desert warriors.

‘Kill that one... He isn't useful and will just be a distraction.’

The unnecessary desert warriors were ruthlessly killed before a battle!

‘I used him as bait last time to survive the battle. I can throw him again.’

If they came back alive then he would throw them again as bait the next time.

‘It is good to have new tools. They have a lot of uses. It would be good to get someone with a docile personality who can be easily controlled.’

An increase in troops was inefficient in the desert. He needed to narrow them down to only maintain the elite warriors with strong abilities. Weed looked at them with complex emotions in his eyes and charisma flowed from him.

“We are going to kill the strongest monster in the desert.”

“Yes!”

“It will be a very dangerous challenge. But there is a reason we must do so....”

Weed hesitated for a moment.

Nodulle’s quest had a fixed time limit. There was no need to hunt the strongest monster in the desert for the quest. Of course, if he was successful then he would reach a much higher level.

“The first reason is to obtain all the treasure and the second reason is....”

Gulp!

The desert warriors swallowed their saliva. Unlike the proud knights, they didn’t cling to honour. They were downright greedy!

Desert cities developed rapidly and wandering bandits were the result of Weed calling rain. But one crucial reason to clear out the monsters in dungeons was to obtain the treasures inside.

“We are fighting the strongest creature in the desert.”

“Owaaah!”

The delighted warriors cried out!

“Go get the treasure!”

Weed unabashedly led his subordinates into the dungeon. Weed had obtained the title ‘Ruler of the Desert’ because of this recklessness and greed.



“The continent is now completely finished. It is obvious that the

Hermes Guild, no the Haven Empire will unify the continent.”

“Ah, damn. It seems like taxes will rise.”

“The Allied Forces on the continent can’t compare to the Hermes Guild in tactics. They just attacked.”

“The Hermes Guild showed their capabilities in this war.”

The Hermes Guild completely destroyed the Allied Forces on the Benzen Plains. The prestigious guilds were also tyrants and bad guys so some people were supporting the Hermes Guild.

The main guilds had been split up into many kingdoms but the Hermes Guild would enhance the persecution if they unified the continent. Therefore general users felt hopeless no matter the result from the Benzen Plains.

The prestigious guilds from the continent might be united in this place. They believed they would win if their power was concentrated. In order to get an overwhelming victory, they gathered a huge army on the Benzen Plains and surrounded Bardray’s troops in the Rubidom Mountains in front and behind.

The Allied Forces even actively promoted themselves ahead of the battle. Bardray’s army was crucial to the Hermes Guild so the broadcasting stations paid attention to whether they would be wiped out.

The Hermes Guild predicted this and placed a trap in advance. They mobilized all the knights and magic units of the Empire in order to shock and cause large damage to the Allied Forces at the very beginning.

Furthermore, the scale of a war has grown so big that the Allied Forces didn't have a proper chain of command. The formation of the various guilds became a mess under the attacks of the Haven Empire and they couldn't recover.

The Haven Empire didn't miss this weakness and dealt large damage using magic attacks and the knights. Since then, the Allied Forces lost the will to fight.

‘I guess we won this fight.’

They tried to prevent the Hermes Guild's dictatorship but the loss to their guild is too big.’

‘We will be known as real warriors after winning this battle. There is no need to concentrate. Although we'll have to fight others.’

‘Will the prestigious guilds continue to maintain their positions? The 5 prestigious guilds will fall and we will take their place.’

The guilds emerged with the expectation of victory. But once the situation became hard, they only thought about preserving their own power and gave the command to retreat.

“We can’t die here. Escape!”

“Everyone in the guild should slip away to the east.”

This was a deadly situation so the coalition army shook even more after some guilds escaped.

The result after that was completely obvious.

“Provide magic support!”

“Shoot arrows at the enemy.”

“Look at the shields they are holding. The arrows of the archers won’t mean anything.”

“A frontal assault!”

“A mistake. Escape quickly!”

The combined forces were unable to endure and were defeated! The competence of the commanders were a problem and the lack of unity created a worst result. The brave knights lost their lives halfway through the battle and the NPC soldiers surrendered.

Under Bardray’s leadership, the Haven Empire only consumed a

small amount of energy and were filled with confidence as they routed the enemy.

“Gather the entire army. Now we will take care of the enemies left in the mountains.”

“Waaaah!”

The Haven Empire army took a small break and treated the wounded soldiers.

And the Rubidom Mountains! There were magicians, trap setters, rangers and other users from the Black Lion Guild, Cloud Guild and 51 other guilds.

The Allied Forces inside the Rubidom Mountains were puzzled. The magicians and rangers were there to grab the ankle of the army but the troops on the Benzen Plains were unexpectedly overwhelmed and defeated.

“But it isn’t over yet. We will catch the Haven Empire.”

The battle in the Rubidom Mountains wasn’t one-sided. The Allied Forces accounted for the overwhelming influence of the terrain and were waiting in a high position.

“Shoot! If they approach then send them to the underworld!”

“Don’t lose focus and concentrate your attacks on the enemies.”

“The magicians are climbing to a higher position to attack!”

They besieged the Hermes Guild located at the bottom and poured arrows and magic at them. But this battle situation soon changed.

The Hermes Guild had prepared leather armour and shields that specialized in blocking arrow attacks.

“Act according to the plan. Rompelt’s unit in the high peaks, Drinfeld at Tochen Lake and Helcait’s unit hidden in the reed forest will ambush.”

“Yes!”

“Move.”

Dozens of units split up in different directions and used important elements of the Rubidom Mountains to seize control. They took control of a few major strongholds and caught sight of the Allied Forces.

Assassins were dispatched to quietly move through the reeds and easy terrain. Furthermore, the stamina of general soldiers fell rapidly when fighting in the mountains.

The Allied Forces had exhausted a lot of their stamina chasing after the Haven Empire in the Rubidom Mountains. There was a chance of battle so they also wore heavy armour and weapons, making them tire quickly.

Although the Haven Empire had the same conditions, they moved through fast and easy paths in the mountains that had been laid in advance. Before starting the fight, they had given a break to the ordinary soldiers, magicians and rangers who had the role of restraining the enemy.

The Rubidom Mountains became increasingly filled with the flags of the Haven Empire.

“Waaaaaah!”

“Slay all the rabble. Attack. Attack. Attack!”

“The Haven Empire is invincible. March for His Majesty!”

Armies fighting in the mountains!

The Allied Forces and Haven Empire fought with swords and shields. There were also a storm of arrows and magic attacks that caused flames. The wind spread the embers through the mountain. The large wildfire caused the battle to become more violent.

The battle in the Rubidom Mountains raged on and both sides fought fiercely as they lost their favourable terrain. And finally the

Haven Empire's weapon, the necromancer Krobidyun emerged.

“Huhuhu, this is the best stage to show the power of a necromancer.”

The necromancer was escorted by the best knights of the Haven Empire.

“What should I show first? My law of darkness governs this land. The power of eternal immortality is grasped. Dark Rule!”

A demonstration of Barkhan's Immortal Legion.

One of his three spells! The Hermes Guild individually analysed Weed's battle with Barkhan. His ability to summon the undead in combat was top-notch. So they embarked on an adventure and found an old laboratory belonging to Barkhan that contained his research and magic!

Dark Rule was a magic spell learnt from an unfinished book. Of course, Dark Rule wasn't perfect so the level of the undead was a little low. And it kept consuming mana so other magic spells couldn't be used. The weakness of Dark Rule was overcome by climbing to higher ground!

As expected, the power of a necromancer when fighting a large number of enemies was the best. It didn't matter if it was friend or foe as the corpses woke up as skeletons, ghouls and zombies.

“Scratch them. Bite all of them!”

Within the territory of Dark Rule, all new dead bodies constantly got up. In addition, the summoned undead that collapsed would get up again. The zombies and skeletons were weak but they caused confusion among the soldiers and archers.

The skeletal archers also shot their bone arrows towards the enemy. The archers that died would then rise due to the power of immortality. Many people died in the Rubidom Mountains due to magic and arrows so Dark Rule had a significant impact.

“Echo of Terror!

Another necromancer used a different spell.

Kuhihihing!

Ghosts flew around and shouted curses, lowering the morale of the enemy. The Allied Forces placed killing the necromancers as the top goal but the Imperial Knights were protecting the necromancers on the battlefield.

The Haven Empire's troops placement, utilization of the magic units and their leadership overwhelmed the Allied Forces. The Allied Forces had united into one army but internally they were separate guilds.

The Haven Empire was able to use the high terrain to amplify

their magic attacks better than the coalition. The Allied Forces initially held out but they couldn't properly attack or defend. Bardray and the Imperial Knights broke through and devastated the knights, magicians and NPCs of the Allied Forces.

In no time, the Allied Forces lost all the favourable peaks and were attacked on adverse terrains. They tried to escape but the Haven Empire and the undead had already controlled the ridges.

The Rubidom Mountains became like hell to the Allied Forces. This was the result of the leaders of the Hermes Guild staying up several days and nights to place the troops and create the movement paths.

The leaders of the Allied Forces showed the worst incompetency and the Hermes Guild thoroughly beat them! It was rare for anyone who took part in the battle to survive.

CTS Media and other broadcasting stations like LK Games delivered the news.

"The Haven Empire has gained a large victory for the second time."

"The Haven Empire has achieved an overwhelming victory in their war to gain control of the continent.

"I can assure you. Bardray, maybe everyone will be calling him Emperor in the future."

KMC Media aired a special 'Versailles Continent Story' and talked about the battles.

"Ah, I never expected this type of fighting to occur. The Haven Empire's fighting ability is really amazing!"

"Numerous heroes and kingdoms have attempted to conquer the world.

Alexander the Great, , Genghis Khan, Napoleon. Their actions were considered excessive for the era they lived in!"

"Oh Joo-wan, we need to reassess the Haven Empire's power."

"After analysing today's battle, they seem to have no weakness in the overall power, abilities and performance in battle. No, the Allied Forces used simple tactics and couldn't fight against them. Anyway, the Haven Empire is stronger!"

The commentators of the broadcasting stations only had praise for the Haven Empire. The ability to execute large scale joint tactics!

The charm of Royal Road was commanding tens of thousands of soldiers. However, leading various classes while considering the terrain wasn't easy. The Haven Empire won the battles based on their skills and achievements. Videos of battles with that level of beauty could be counted on one hand.

This contrasted with the incompetency of the Allied Forces.

In the meantime, the PDs of the broadcasting stations were anxious about something else.

“Won’t the Hermes Guild get ahead of the other lords?”

“Today makes it seem like the conquest of the Versailles Continent is almost over. Will the allies in this debacle be able to recover and catch up? The Hermes Guild has now got their hands on the Central Continent.”

“The broadcast ratings for the next war in the future will be a problem. It depends on Kim’s appearance.”

“The Haven Empire is preparing to conquer the continent.”

“I’m already concerned about the ratings.”

The Hermes Guild gained a large number of anti-fans as their power became greater. They destroyed cities and taxes were enormous in order to pay for the costs of war. Therefore a large number of residents and users disliked them.

After they conquered the continent and the large battles became rare, the interest of the users would fall. These signs were already appearing everywhere.

The interest for the stations to play adventures other than the Haven Empire was spreading like wildfire. While the Haven Empire were winning their battles, Weed's name constantly appeared on the bulletin boards.

-Why aren't you showing Weed?

-Broadcast Weed the God of War's quest! Even reruns are good.

-Isn't he still doing the Sculpting Master Quest in the south? Broadcasting stations, don't you know about this?

-I want to see Weed sweat.

The situation deteriorated as the viewers made the same request until the broadcasting stations couldn't stand it anymore. But no matter how they tried to get in touch with Weed, all contact was cut off. His phones were disabled and there was no response when they rang the doorbell. He had unplugged the electrical cord.

KMC Media obtained some information from Shin Hye-min.

"Tell us if you know anything, Hye-min ssi. We will keep it between us and not broadcast it. And absolute secrecy will be maintained.

"Director-nim, I don't know the details."

“Just tell me this. Why has no one seen him if he is doing a quest in the south?”

Users went to the south to meet Weed but none of them have been able to find him.”

“It is a really special quest.”

“Is the last part of the Master Quest that hard? I feel like he should’ve finished it by now.”

“It is not that much.”

“Then is he fighting an army of immortals? Perhaps there is an army that keeps on resurrecting somewhere in the desert?”

Director Kang would be satisfied with even that much. If Weed was fighting an immortal army then the broadcast ratings would be shocking and the viewers would be full of praise! Even the ratings of the reruns were higher than normal programs.

Weed had the most videos in the top 10 of the Royal Road Hall of Fame.

1_ Orc Karichwi and the Immortal Legion.

2_ Skeleton Soldier Weed and the Bone Dragon.

3_Weed and Bardray’s meeting in the Melbourne Mine.

4_Jigolaths adventure.

5_Warrior Python and the Averian Forest.

6_ 26th siege of Fort Odin.

7_Immortal Legion led by Barkhan.

8_Escape from Serabourg Castle.

9_Lich Weed

10_ Weed and the Embinyu Church at the River of Lamentation.

The videos number 1 to 10 in the Hall of Fame were based on number of views so the early adventures had a higher view count. But even videos by other users that filmed Weed fishing reached at least 3 million views. He was so popular that even the worst video of him fishing would be received highly.

“Oh, it isn’t an immortal army. Well, only something like an ocean of undead would be interesting after Weed destroyed Barkhan. Other undead would just be like dust that appears when Weed-nim empties his pocket.”

“Then what is it? Not long ago, the desert completely changed. Why have the cities in the desert suddenly become so big? What type of quest is he doing that would cause such things?”

“I don’t know.”

“Desert revival? Prosperity of the desert? Then why is Weed developing the southern desert and not the north?”

“Aren’t you seeing him later?”

“No, but it doesn’t matter what is happening. Doesn’t he have another contract with the other station as well? Didn’t CTS Media even offer a luxury car?”

“He might not have made the deal yet. If we offer him an apartment or land then you never know.”

“We recently got enough to offer that.”

The popularity of Royal Road was spreading over the whole world so KMS Media gained many benefits as the ratings leader. Weed’s appearance alone would cause a barrage of advertising money to be given to the stations.

Children even wanted the toys of Bingryong and the wyverns. A benefit of getting Weed’s adventures on one station was also being

associated with the booming toy business.

He would become significantly rich like a celebrity. However, the amazing thing was that Weed didn't look like he had money every time they saw him.

“In my opinion, he would dislike an apartment. It requires paying monthly utility bills.”

“As expected, he would want a piece of land?”

“Yes.”

“Should it be for business or housing?”

“That won't cover it.”

“Indeed, it needs to be a really wide piece of land. Quickly find a suitable land.”



The Royal Palace of the Arpen Kingdom was built along 7 mountains.

Thanks to the effort of the players, the construction was able to connect to the top of the highest mountain peaks.

“Kkung! Today I will just carry this one. If the rock is too heavy then I won’t be able to carry it. This degree is possible.”

“Aigoo, my back! My legs!”

The users carried the materials to the top of the mountain. The height and slope were rough but they were majestic mountains. It looked like a swarm of ants covering the mountain.

“I think we are really amazing. I’m glad we participated in this.”

“Yes. But the labour doesn’t seem to be decreasing.”

“This is the original deal.”

“I participated in the building of the pyramid in the Rosenheim Kingdom. I who studied at Seoul University.”

“Do you remember when we hunted in the dungeons?”

“I am becoming more familiar with construction workers.”

Many users gathered on top of the mountains so procuring the materials were completed quickly. The architectural design was the form of a crown draping over the top of the 7 mountains. The architects were considerably worried before executing this idea.

“I think the cost of construction will be quite expensive.”

“Widening the interior of the building will be difficult. The construction will also be quite hard.”

“The Royal Palace needs to be visible from distant places. We have to complete the buildings one by one so they harmonize with each other and become perfect. But the form of the buildings, the width and height of the palace and the amount of flat ground needs to be considered.”

“However, we have to try it once. Should we give up just because it is too difficult?”

“If the Royal Palace forms a crown on top of these high mountain peaks then it will give people an unforgettable memory.”

“The spirit to take on challenges! This is why the north thrives. There will be hardships during the construction but our challenging spirit will overcome it. If we complete it then it will be the pride of the Arpen Kingdom.”

“Let’s do it. We will try. Nothing is impossible for an architect!”

The architects working on the Royal Palace had the most outstanding skills. This was the best location that would allow the form of the crown to be seen when looking at the entire northern plains.

An optimal design was necessary. The Royal Palace was like a crown on top of the mountains and it would be great if a city naturally formed around it.

They needed to create a large road from the Royal Palace to the bottom of the mountain. Horses and carriages would take a long time to travel up the mountain to the Royal Palace on the road. But the scenery from the mountains in the north was beautiful so it wasn't a waste of time.

And users wrote phrases on single stones on the stone walls of the mountains.

-I have expectations for Weed's adventures every day -Morata's Ham Hock Association

-I'm happy I started in the north -Swordsman Ying

-This is the best soil – Elementalist Lin.

-This is food to eat on adventures -Jewel Candy

The stone walls were filled with the happiness of the northern users. The Arpen Kingdom was evolving together to give the users pleasure, dreams and hopes due to the efforts of those that belong to it.

Sculptures and paintings were displayed at regular intervals so it wasn't boring. Those with an art profession were also involved. Everyone walking on this road had no choice but to think favourably of the Arpen Kingdom.

The best commercial establishments, guilds, laboratories and adventurer facilities were also being built near the Royal Palace so it was a driving force behind further development of the north.

The users already gave a nickname to the Arpen Kingdom's Royal Palace.

The Earth Palace. The crown design on the mountaintop made it seem like a king ruling over the earth. But they thought it suited King Weed even more.

"It would be good if our king is comfortable."

"That's right. Sometimes it is easy to forget that Weed is the king."

"The legendary adventurer and sculptor! In fact, it might be a good thing that he travels all the time."

And the users flocked there en masse as the time for the Royal Palace's completion approached. The users intentionally came to see the final moments of the palace being completed.

"Oh, the Steel Knights have finally arrived. This is the palace

ruled by our eternal master Weed-nim.”

Like magic, knights appeared on the road to the palace.

“What, group teleport?”

“No. There isn’t the garish effect of teleportation like fog rising from the ground.”

“Then are they ghosts?”

“No ghosts would appear so sharp and clear in daytime. But look at the equipment. It is like the armour of the Arpen Kingdom’s Royal Knights.”

“Arpen Royal Knights? They wouldn’t be able to wear armour of that level.”

Users started in amazement as the knight in front kneeled down.

“I have arrived after a long time has passed in order to pay back the life given to me.”

The knights behind then continuously kneeled down.

They were the descendants of Iron-5. Despite settling down in the Straud Kingdom, Iron-5 never forgot the eternal loyalty that he

swore to Weed.

He gave birth to children, had a fulfilling life and died comfortable after a long time. Since then, the descendants passed down stories of Weed from generation to generation and also swore eternal loyalty to him.

Weed had thoroughly brainwashed Iron-5 after only spending one day together.

-You have my loyalty forever. In some cases, it even surpassed the child's love for their parents. That love was stronger than a dragon swimming in the deep ocean.

-You gave me life so I will spend my lifetime repaying you.

-You gave the expensive and good food to me first. That is the happiness of a knight.

Iron-5 conveyed his deep loyalty to his children through these words and that was passed down until his descendants appeared in the Arpen Kingdom.

Chapter 2: Metapeia Conquest

Weed and the Red Knife unit entered the dungeon.

The dungeon was underneath Metapeia. He had analysed it based on the information gathered so far and determined that it was a level 6 dungeon.

This was the habitat of the salamanders that grew over 1,000 years from the heat of the desert. It was an extremely dangerous area with natural treasures, magic artefacts and materials that could be obtained if the people who entered were talented enough. The floor was composed of solid rock but stepping onto any crack could cause someone to fall into a lava pit.

He couldn't condemn anyone without the courage to stand at the front.

“The air here is certainly different. It reminds me of something I heard a while ago.”

It was the feeling of drinking hot coal. It was a place on the Versailles Continent where monsters with the highest degree of difficulty lived.

Nodulle's quest meant he could conquer the monsters and dungeons. Weed really liked that.

Although creating artwork was fun, there was no greater pleasure than fighting monsters as a warrior. He felt a tingling in his chest and self-admiration every time he entered and conquered a dungeon. It was like that thrilling excitement the first time he stepped beyond the gates in Royal Road and saw the stars in the dark, night sky.

“Hul hul. It would’ve been nice if I could do something like this since I was young.”

“Isn’t this better than being a boring merchant or a child?”

“Yes. I’ve lived for a long, long time.”

Those type of words emerged from the old residents of Royal Road. The smile on Weed’s face was like he was looking at fresh fish in a seafood restaurant.

“There is nothing better than the taste of combat. Surging Flames, an battle cry from ancient times!”

Fearsome fire flowed from Weed’s body.

The Surging Flames skill that represented the highest level Desert Warrior! The aura of fire was normally sealed and this could be released in combat. The monsters close by would suffer fire damage while any attacked by him would have the aura of fire transferred to them. The fire magic would continuously flow out and explode, causing mass damage and even killing the monsters.

This was how Weed dared to bring regular soldiers and knights despite the risk of death! In addition, Surging Flames continuously supplied health and mana to Weed and also provided amazing defense to his subordinates.

It was the ancient war cry that wandering NPC warriors passed on! The effect elevated his Dexterity, Agility and Resilience by 160% while giving 70% of the effect to his colleagues.

Of course, not all desert warriors wanted to teach this skill. It was the strong pride and fame of the warriors in the previous era. Their level was approximately the same as Oberon who had led the expedition to the north.

“Do you want to die or teach me? You only have 2 seconds to decide.”

However, the warriors gave away the technology in front of Weed’s intense charisma so they could live. He was a fearsome warrior he didn’t show fear even when the trees and mountains melted. No, it was because Nodulle’s quest sped up by 100 times that he could hunt like this.

Weed’s fame in the desert grew due to his bad actions.

“Desert Bravery!”

“Heart of Steel!”

Warrior-1 and the other sculptural lifeforms also used blessings. Warrior-1, Warrior-2 and Warrior-3 had grown into the strongest, elite warriors that not even knights could go against.

They were the first to jump at the monsters so their faces had many scars. They were over 2 metres tall and had thick forearms! There was an air of oppression around them but they were like mild sheep compared to Weed. Their level was lower than their king but fortunately they could become stronger by following Weed.

The desert warriors were arranged in an orderly manner and entered the dungeon. A tight military discipline! This discipline was due to Weed's nagging and mistreatment.

“As you know, anybody left behind will be thrown away.”

“Yes!”

“If you know then move forward.”

Alverun and Alveren gave blessings to the entire group.

“Divine Protection, Round Shield and Enhanced Fire Resistance.”

“Flame Armour, Burst of Strength, Deep Anger and Forgotten Pain.”

They were based on Alveron who was their candidate Pope so they had the divine power to heal. They were dressed in shabby uniforms but were useful helpers to increase the strength and heal his subordinates.

“Units 1-3 arm your bows. 4-5 will raise your shield. The rest will advanced forward with your sword and spears. After the first attack, freely convert the weapons as necessary.”

“Yes.”

Weed and his subordinates were experienced with dungeon hunting so there wasn't much to say. They advanced without speaking to save time.

But this was a dangerous dungeon so it was important to command his subordinates. If he didn't use his subordinates well then he wouldn't be safe.

Weed's archery was advanced level 8. It wasn't long until it reached a master level. His subordinates also specialized in the bow so ranged combat was possible.

“Look forward. Keep checking around and move quickly.”

“Yes!”

The army moved as a whole and were prepared for the emergence of any enemy. The tension made it seem like the dungeon had a heavy atmosphere. Time was gold in this quest so there was no time to waste even if it was dangerous.

His subordinates contained thieves who dismantled the traps.

“Thank you for accepting me. I will offer my sword to you, Great Emperor.”

“Do you know how to open locks? You will be a thief. You are responsible for dismantling any traps in the future.”

“Huh? I was looking forward to life as a warrior....”

“Do you want to die? Think about your family.”

“....”

He recruited 5 rogue magicians 17 years ago and their employment costs were relatively cheap.

“Our ransom is expensive. Every year you need to pay a bag full of gold as a salary. This amount is non-negotiable due to our pride.”

“Ridiculous. Your abilities aren’t worth that much money. You’ve lost your passion for pure magic.”

He scolded them when he had to make an offer of a salary!

“This isn’t fair compensation.”

“Hunt and give away any magic items that you obtained. Fling yourself into studying to learn a new spell. And only talk about employment if you manage to survive. This is the best that I can offer.”

The rogue magicians were upset but ended up accepting the offer. At that same time, Weed gained a reputation for making successful deals.

But unfortunately the magicians’ skills stayed at advanced level 3. It wasn’t easy to raise the skill proficiency of magic because they needed to learn a variety of magic. The amount of magic able to be learnt in a desert city was limited. There were limits to a magician’s knowledge if they didn’t wander.

“Believe in your colleagues. And I will lead you.”

“If I wander then mana will increase and I will gain a new enlightenment.”

“Are you trying to get away?”

“....”

“Are you planning to not come back to the desert? You can study magic in a great neighbourhood and do magic research for a pretty queen.”

“....”

“Work hard or else you won’t survive.”

The president forcefully pressed his insight into the minds of his employees. He couldn’t ignore the potential of the magicians until Nodulle’s quest was completed!

“Hwik!”

“Humans. Humans are here...”

“Horrororum. It is the one who fled last time. Hororum.”

7 Fire Salamanders appeared. They watched Weed and the Red Knife troops with hungry expressions. The two pronged, elongated tongue stretched out 10 metres. Lava dissolved the land near them.

The Fire Salamander significantly resembled a dragon. The Fire Salamanders weren’t the top level fire attribute monster like the Red Dragon but they were still dangerous.

In the past, he fought the Fire Giants in Jigolaths and they were

dull and had many blind spots. Of course, they were lower levelled than the Fire Salamanders and their aura of fire wasn't even a comparison.

The rolling flames wouldn't damage a monster with the fire attribute. For example, attacking the Fire Salamanders with fire would just increase their power.

“Chyu. Chyu. Chyu. Chyurum.”

“Horohorok!”

The Fire Salamanders blocked the passage in front of them. They had a habit of hunting so they were wary. However, this was weak because they didn't have any natural enemies. The free and dangerous monsters arrogantly surveyed the humans.

Weed quickly took out his bow.

Ddiring!

-You have equipped the Yurbusika Frost Bow.

This isn't a plain, wooden bow but one that has an eerie chill emanating from it.

There will be an unconditional increase in rapid fire skills by 35%, ice damage by 65~194, freezing, unlimited magic arrows, skill

effect of multiple arrows by 40%, arrows with hit 100% when using tracking skills, Agility +160 and sure-fire hit.

Even the bow's default option was astounding. The ghosts in Metapeia used it to exterminate the salamanders who tried to go out aboveground. The desert warriors also obtained a large number of equipment from the ghost that helped them slay the Fire Salamanders. This was the rule of local procurement.

Weed pulled the bowstring and fired an ice arrow into the air..

“Dispersion Fire!”

The thick ice arrow turned into 10 arrows that flew towards the Fire Salamander. The special archery that hit the Fire Salamanders like magic!

“Kuweeek!”

“Cold. This is the first time I've felt like this!”

“Kuhek, so cold! My body is freezing.”

The salamanders suffered and struggled against the arrows. The arrows even plugged into chunks of lava and reduced the flames. The ground froze and emitted a freezing aura, damaging weak creatures and those with a fire attribute.

Now that the flames weakened them, the strong defense of the salamanders suffered significant damage.

“It is effective. Attack!”

The desert warriors aimed their bows at the Fire Salamanders. A simultaneous arrow attack!

The desert warriors had large physiques like a barbarian so they only needed to pull the bow with a weak force. Hundreds of arrows flew towards the Fire Salamanders.

“Kyahuhuk!”

“Rude humans. I will turn you to ashes.”

“I will burn and eat you!”

The Fire Salamanders moved their 6 legs and moved forward while being hit by arrows. Weed shot arrows at least 3 more times before withdrawing. And took out his sword.

-You have equipped the Three Screaming Children Sword.

The leader of a southern dukedom became crazy due to greedy and threw his own three children into a fire pit to make this sword!

The sword contains a curse that lowers maximum stamina and health. It will also increase the cutting ability by 5 times.

Seo-yoon had given him convoy information and Weed obtained the sword after leading the desert warriors to ambush them. He was currently in the role of Nodulle so he didn't care about Honour reducing.

“Moonlight Sculpting Blade!”

Weed swung his sword that had its strength amplified towards the Fire Salamanders. Although the desert warrior class had many attack skills and absurd defensive strength, it was difficult for them to make continuous attacks.

That's why the long ranged Moonlight Sculpting Blade was effective.

His subordinates wielded scimitars and spears in order to attack.

“There is almost no effect despite hitting the body directly. Attack the eyes!”

“Be careful not to let the sword touch the body too long. It will melt.”

The weapons of the desert warriors had flame resistance but the fire of the salamanders was incredibly powerful. If iron weapons were inserted into the body then they would melt in an instant.

Furthermore, nearing the flames would cause sweat to trickle down their bodies.

“These ridiculous humans! I will let you experience your body melting.”

The Fire Salamanders emitted lava from their mouths while they were rushing forward. The 6 feet kicked at the warriors and the line of defense immediately collapsed.

“Kueok!”

“Watch out for the lava emerging from their mouths.”

“Damage! Don’t do a frontal attack and go from the sides!”

“Kuaah!”

The body of the warriors covered in lava melted. Warriors who had gone through all types of hardships died in vain. The kicked warriors also flew back like a broken kite.

“Circle of Ice!”

“Freeze!”

Three magicians fired their spells! A ring of ice appeared over the

head of a salamander and dealt a blow.

Weed took advantage of that opportunity.

“Warriors should boldly approach. The longer we stay here, the more damage we will receive. Don’t give them space to move!”

“Yes, Great Emperor!”

The Fire Salamanders were fierce but they were surrounded by the warriors in several layers. Arrows hit them and their thick bodies were struck with spears and swords. However, Weed and the desert warriors also suffered damage in those series of attacks.

This was different from the last time they entered the dungeon.

“Half of their health is remaining. Use all your power!”

“Flame Curtain!”

The Fire Salamanders felt the crisis and used their species magic. And flames quickly spread in all directions.

“Strike!”

“Don’t be scared. Get rid of them!”

The warriors fearlessly entered inside the curtain and attacked the Fire Salamanders. It was only a few seconds but the lava coming from the Fire Salamander's mouth was dangerous.

“Tail of death!”

The Fire Salamanders tail whipped from side to side to attack the warriors! The desert warriors wore shields and belts with considerable fire resistance by default. He had made many preparations in order to conquer Metapeia's dungeon before Nodulle's quest finished.

But those struck by the tail became paralysed. After that, the salamanders brutally struck them with continuous attacks.

“Cycle of Life!”

“Wound Recovery!”

Alverun and Alveren immediately treated them before they were killed. However, they couldn't save everyone.

Fortunately, the soldiers were high level so some treatment could sustain them while they were being beaten. Weed also gave his subordinates the signal to retreat.

“Humans, I was killed by human hands...”

In the end, the salamanders suffered from the warriors' attacks and collapsed to the ground.

-A Fire Salamander has been killed.

It has lived for 1,141 years.

This is the first time in the history of the continent that humans have hunted this species of Fire Salamander.

-All those who participated in the battle will have Strength increased by 1.

Fire resistance will increase by 0.6% for 30 days.

It was only one but Weed yelled in order to raise morale.

“Uhaaaaah! The hunt was a success.”

It was an ancient battle cry he learnt in the past that was substituted for Lion's Roar!

“Follow the Great Emperor!”

“We can do it!”

The desert warriors became heated up and wielded their swords

and spears towards the salamanders. The salamanders moved their tail and feet but they didn't give up. Those that fell immediately got up and participated in the battle again.

This wasn't due to the high level or any stat. This bravery was something Weed had conditioned in them through countless battle experiences. His subordinates would willingly jump down a pit for him!

Warrior-1, Warrior-2 and Warrior-3 showed an outstanding performance.

“The power to live.”

“Warrior-2, draw their attention. I will approach from the rear.”

“The rear is the most dangerous area, Hyung-nim! I should go with you.”

“Be careful!”

They rode camels when attacking in the desert like knights but now 3~4 people were holding off a salamander with spears. They stabbed recklessly with their spears.

-All 7 Fire Salamanders have been hunted.

All those who took part in the battle will have Perseverance

increased by 3.

Through the experience of fighting the Fire Salamanders, fire resistance has increased by 0.6% for 45 days.

-Once heading into a deeper place, Fire Salamanders who have fed on fire for a long period of time will appear.

-Your level has risen.

“We won!”

Weed only had 23% health remaining after directly confronting the Fire Salamanders. The salamanders realized that Weed was the leader among the humans and attacked him the most. Alverun and Alveren were always treating him before the other warriors so his health managed to hold out.

When looking at it from afar, it was a heroic scene but those facing the spewing lava felt like they were going to die. However, there were still cheers of joy after the victory.

“The enemies have all fallen. Nevertheless this is....”

The warriors were in a hurry after hearing Weed’s words.

“As the Great Emperor of the desert and the caller of rain, this is a tribute to Weed-nim.”

“You understand it well.”

“Hooray, hooray, hooray!”

The warriors completely flattered him! Time was running out on the quest but if he won a large battle then he could obtain 100 times experience. Weed achieved his high level due to his recklessness and courage.

‘It is okay to enter deeper. I will earn fire resistance every time I hunt.’

The warriors would adapt while fighting! There were a huge number of Fire Salamanders in this dungeon. However, his resistance and perseverance would rise with each hunt so it was worth a try.

The salamanders also dropped items. Unfortunately, he didn’t have his blacksmith or tailoring skill to take advantage of the materials.

Weed asked Warrior-1.

“How many subordinates died?”

“There are 17 victims.”

“That...is a lot.”

“I’m sorry Great Emperor.”

Those who died were at least level 500 and even the level 700 subordinates received enormous damage. Weed had to control the morale of his subordinates.

“Only the weak ones died. Then get ready for the next battle.”

“Yes!”

His men weren’t gently raised.

They fought strong enemies so the remaining troops gained experience but they became stronger as a whole. Currently Weed and his subordinates had spent 20 years on the Versailles Continent and became elite warriors.

Even the annoying Hestiger was constantly thrown at monsters and came back alive every time. Therefore, they were praised as great warriors in different kingdoms.

“Let’s go!”

Weed took the lead again. Their leader was always at the forefront and survived encounters with any enemy they met so the warriors moved forward with confidence.

‘I have to go to the front.’

It was natural for Weed to be the vanguard.



Jeong Deuk-soo met with the president of a bank.

There was an amicable atmosphere in the bank but it soon turned pessimistic when he tried to persuade them.

“Chairman Jeong-nim, our creditors have determined that Hosung Group’s crisis can’t be solved with a simple matter of funding.”

“A corporate management company is bound to have ups and downs. If you can postpone the loan repayment and approve additional funding then we can overcome the crisis with bold, new investments.”

“Chairman Jeong-nim, we have received a number of reports about Hosung Group, including Hosung Electronics.”

The two main creditors was the Commercial Bank and the Du Sangchul Bank. Hosung Group had their loans in these banks.

The president of the Commercial Bank Hyun Jin-won handed

over a document and spoke.

“The creditors have come to the conclusion that Hosung Construction recovering is impossible.”

“It is difficult but there is still a chance. Once again, if new funds are donated then it can revive. The assets and manpower of Hosung Construction is competitive and sufficient. There are also overseas construction effort.

“Doesn’t Chairman-nim know already? New funds can’t be injected into Hosung Construction. We wouldn’t be having this discussion if that could happen.”

“....”

“And we believe that Hosung Electronics is precarious. Factories in the United States are in a cumulative deficit so they might need to close.”

“The trend changes quickly but our technicians are working all night and bringing in famous designers. Sooner or later there should be a visible result.”

“It is too early to proceed with a massive investment since the situation isn’t good. The cash flow of the Hosung Group isn’t good so you shouldn’t keep pounding on the market.”

“That is baseless anxiety. Hosung Electronics is still a leading

company worldwide. The group's debt ratio is high but if there are investments then we can progress further. Hosung Electronics has a number of finished products and materials so it is still competitive."

"But so far, haven't you been in a deficit instead of a surplus despite your efforts? Production from the factories are dwindling and investment in these facilities would have to increase."

Chairman Jeong Deuk-soo failed to convince the creditors.

The Hosung Group had too much debt due to the recession and unreasonable investments in the construction and electronics side.

However, the root cause of the crisis was Korea's largest conglomerate Baekhwa. About 1 year ago, the chairman of the Baekhwa group came to have a secret conversation.

"The Hosung Group overlaps with a lot of our territory. This means the lost revenue will be much larger...

Isn't this bad?"

"Being active in the research and development side causes headaches. Hosung Group's construction business is in danger so you should consider the political and financial areas."

"The media will pay attention when a new electronic product is launched."

“A produce launch requires negotiation with the contractors and finished by the delivery date or else the launch will be delayed. And the sale price will lower, causing profit to decrease.”

“I can’t just get rid of Hosung Electronics.”

“We will still employ the executive director and team of Hosung Electronics.

I can also go through the creditors at the bank to obtain Hosung Electronics at a cheap price. You should release it calmly so that the media doesn’t become aware of it.”

“I will take care of it.”

A frequent business tactic for large companies was to kill the competing group!

The leading technological company in Korea, Hosung Group was about to collapse despite their challenging spirit.



“14 salamanders have been defeated! 9 Fire Salamanders have come running after hearing the disturbance.”

“Carry out a thorough defence formation.”

“A thorough defence formation!”

Weed's subordinate got into a defense formation at his command.

Every dungeon had a different combat method. His men could be arranged in a line or circular defense formation. The Fire Salamanders typically bunched together in group so that their fire attacks would become hotter.

They had to isolate one Fire Salamander in a wide terrain and kill it. Once the battle dispersed, commanding them was more difficult so the warriors had to know how to fight well. The wounded warriors had no choice but to treat themselves.

Weed soon mastered the method to attack the Fire Salamanders.

“They throw out their 6 legs and tail from time to time as well as capture humans with their tongue.”

The conclusion was that their whole body was dangerous! The warriors gave terrible screams as they were eaten alive.

However, Weed's subordinates weren't paralysed by fear and attacked even more aggressively. The desert warriors had blind faith in Weed. They endlessly challenged stronger enemies.

Weed used this method to significantly increase intimacy with his subordinates. The absolute affinity between a dictator and criminals!

The Fire Salamanders liked fire and were high levelled but if they were calm then there was a way to deal with them.

“Keep your eyes on them!”

“Chyurik!”

“Look at them and feel the vibration and temperature differences. And this is the weak part of the tongue. Be careful of the flames. Or else the knife will melt!”

“Understood, Great Emperor!”

The desert warriors and Fire Salamanders had the same alignment! So despite attacking each other countless times, little damage was taken by both sides.

The result would be very extreme if they invaded a snowy glacier where Yeti lived. The Fire Salamanders would be freezing and couldn't display their capabilities while the Yeti wouldn't be able to approach or else they would melt. The desert warriors and Fire Salamanders both had similar abilities so the battles were slow.

The brave desert warriors jumped forward or fired their arrows. The tongue wasn't protected no matter how high the defense of

the salamander. Weed didn't try to avoid some of the high level fire.

The salamanders collapsed more easily after their weaknesses were exposed.

“We won!”

“It is all thanks to following the Great Emperor.”

The fighting spirit and morale of the desert warriors were high. Naturally there were those injured or dead but the quality of the warriors might difficult battles were continuously won and the atmosphere was high.

Weed knocked down 2 Fire Salamanders directly and gained 3 levels.

“Hrmm, good!”

He took advantage of his sword mastery and various attack skills learnt to fight enemies and rise to the top of the desert. By taking advantage of various sculpting skills, he could raise his strength and use the best offensive skill to overwhelm the dungeons!

He occasionally met boss level monsters with high health and mana but his abilities meant he could take care of them without using his men.

In fact, he often chose not to use his subordinates when facing boss level monsters. He alone would eat all the experience, skill proficiency and loot! He displayed terrible destructive power when fighting with monsters over level 700 in the dungeons so the sculptural lifeforms and desert warriors couldn't help falling behind.

However, Weed would lose his life when surrounded by so many Fire Salamanders so the help of his subordinates was certainly necessary.

Weed didn't disclose all the stacked up combat footage. If the video of his hunt in the mysterious city Metapeia appeared in the Hall of Fame then it would become frantic.

Metapeia was widely known as a level 500 hunting ground. The monsters appeared and disappeared like fog. The entire city was their territory so Weed and his subordinates had to engage in a deadly struggle. People who saw their strength and speed would shiver from the electrifying feeling.

However, this was underneath Metapeia. The continent would become noisy if they saw the monsters being swept away in here. Audience ratings wouldn't even matter with a scene like this.

The number of subordinates dying decreased and their level rose rapidly. His subordinates would be able to easily take over a country in his original time. They could also destroy the Haven Empire

“If I unify the continent then I could raise the taxes. If I can use these guys while ruling then there wouldn’t be a revolt.”

He still hadn’t thrown away his original dream of becoming a vicious king and raising the taxes.



Only a few people knew the details of Weed’s current adventure.

His sister, Seo-yoon and Yoo Byung-jin who watched it on his monitors. Their reaction was really great when Weed started the Nodulle’s Growth quest.

“Oppa is bound to do well.”

Yurin left it to Weed and just continued playing.

“I have to actively help.”

Seo-yoon looked for any work he could do.

“It will be difficult. I will watch whether you can grow again from the beginning. If the growth method is wrong... Now you need to prove that your abilities are due to more than luck.”

Yoo Byung-jin had many concerns about the events that would occur in the future. Weed's situation wasn't that good. And he looked forward to seeing how Weed would grow on this quest.

"I have to take care of this well."

"You should find more people to help you. If you come back successful then I will give another request. The further development of the desert cities can wait."

"How surprising. You are quite reckless."

His sister and Seo-yoon believed in Weed. A family member or someone who liked him would know him better than most! He was the type of person who wouldn't starve no matter where he went.

Yoo Byung-jin who was watching from the monitor was different and had doubts.

"You shouldn't do that."

Yoo Byung-jin couldn't understand or accept Weed's actions.

In the early days of the quest, he took advantage of sculpting. It was obviously the correct choice. He used Sculptural Destruction to improve his performance in the early days.

Although it was somewhat of a penalty, Nodulle's growth was an

essential part of the final secret sculpting technique quest. If he didn't take advantage of this moment then future quests would be impossible.

But despite his weak body, he just jumped into dungeons with strong monsters without understanding anything.

“Why is he doing that? He should go step by step from the bottom up and steadily grow. No matter how fast his level is rising, this type of explosive growth is surprising.”

Weed didn't seem to feel any tension despite this being the final secret sculpting technique quest. He didn't choose to be timid or stable and boldly hunted dangerous dungeons. Weed was aware of this. The situation was important but he wasn't going to cower!

His growth already jumped over what Yoo Byung-jin had imagined. During the course of this quest, his growth rate was multiplied by 100 times. But given that the environment was the desert, it was difficult to grow to the required amount in 80 days.

He could waste hours due to an unexpected mistake and the slightest slip could cause his death. Weed should be satisfied when reaching a suitable strong level. But if the connected quests were too difficult then he would continue to pay the price.

Thanks to Seo-yoon's help, Weed managed to achieve dramatic adventures and rose to the height of the desert's Great Emperor. Rather than stand around, he sought out the stronger monsters underneath Metapeia to hunt.

His wonderful survival skills and ability to adapt meant he could take risks and enjoy his adventures. Weed's experience, judgement and combat skills was what made it possible to get this result.

“What part of his brain makes it so he doesn't hesitate when making decisions?”

Weed gave off the impression of a stingy person yet his subordinates were eating meat all day. He was the type who would mourn for a few days after losing some loose change. Sometimes he would curse.

“That time I bought the 200 won more expensive salt!”

A common, ordinary person would suddenly show an heroic style. Like a hungry dog starving for days and nights, his weak body searched for any hunting grounds and attacked like demons. Weed's growth rate in the desert could be called a miracle.

As the stage became bigger, he showed his capabilities without any cowardice.

“Maybe he really can obtain the final secret sculpting technique? He returned to the past due to the quest and might be able to produce huge changes.”

Yoo Byung-jin watched Weed defeat the Immortal Legion and found the Arpen Kingdom so the idea of obtaining the final secret

technique wasn't absurd. When looking at it, Weed's adventures were naturally immersive and exciting. And he could become thrilled at any moment!

He wasn't taking small steps by leaping up the stairs towards the future.

Currently Weed's level was approaching 800. Being able to reach this level despite the many disadvantages was unbelievable. He was already much stronger than Nodulle who had been a desert hero and defeated the Embinyu Church. He couldn't speak as he continued to watch Weed's achievements.

Weed was the hero who commanded the desert warriors and cleared the dungeons.

"Is he a real hero? A hero hiding in reality had appeared in the world of Royal Road?"

He didn't want to admit it.

Anybody looking at Weed would see a hero. Humans with spirits of dedication and sacrifice were raising their heads defiantly while exploring the Versailles Continent. Yoo Byung-jin rarely saw someone like this.

But there were many people who weren't like Weed in this world. Those who were always accompanied by woman, relied on their goods looks and became a hot topic when appearing on broadcasts

so that the ratings of the program would be 1st.

The residents of the Arpen Kingdom respected their king. The Grass Porridge Cult was spreading through the whole continent.

“Hope is going down the drain.”

He had hoped for Weed and the Arpen Kingdom’s downfall due to the missing 100 won for the hot chocolate.



Earth Shadow.

The most famous adventuring party on the continent. Unring, Ben, Elliks! They were adventuring around the Prosuk area.

“Aigoo, this slab is fake. The map is also broken.”

“We’ve already been wandering for 4 months and haven’t made any progress.”

“I’ve dug up so many graves that it is like I’m a professional grave digger.”

“There is also a burial chamber at the shrine. We didn’t completely waste our time. But it will be lucky if we find even a

little bit of money in the future.”

Unring gave a deep sigh.

“Why are we doing this quest...? I really doubt if this quest can succeed.”

“It is because of the marvellous experience.”

“But my mind can’t feel at ease when thinking about the people struggling on the continent.”

The adventurers were concerned about the result of this quest. They were performing a request from the Valhalla Temple about a significant event involving the Embinyu Church.

Of course, the Embinyu Church was a religion that built their power in the darkness so not everything could be attributed to them. Anyway, this quest involved the Embinyu Church so the party couldn’t help feeling guilty every time they heard about some devastation on the continent.

This quest stood on the side of justice and the Valhalla Church’s connected quest hadn’t ended. Surprisingly, the Valhalla Church led 30 of the best warriors on a quest to pull out the roots of the Embinyu Church.

The quest was ongoing and their linked quests required saving people from the Embinyu Church and bringing supplies. They

successfully finished 6 quests in 1 year. And now the adventurers were looking for a treasure of the Embinyu Church.

They wandered around ruins and tombs but still couldn't find the hidden treasure of the Embinyu Church.

-No more books with records about incidents in ancient times remain.

Once the world became occupied by human rulers, they burnt the records due to fears of stirring up nonsense like a conspiracy.

King Alexander the 3rd committed this action due to his ignorance and greed.

Scholars with knowledge of these incidents were also accused and were locked up, causing them to starve to death.

1 billion years ago before humans lived alongside dwarves, elves and orcs. The early days had the dragons, monsters and gods spread their enormous influence over the continent. At the time, there was talk that the gods descended directly and God Embinyu left behind several treasures.

Earth Shadow was completing a quest to obtain that treasure before the Embinyu Church! They didn't know what progress the Embinyu Church made so they couldn't help feeling anxious.

“Metapeia! We need the location. We can't proceed with the

quest without knowing where it is on the continent.”

“So far I haven’t been able to discover it.”

“It would be nice if someone could find it.”

The Earth Shadows were searching through Morata’s library. Earth Shadow gathered various records related to history and the quest so the library was a lot of help.

And one day.

“Do you know about the great hero Weed of the continent?”

One resident of Kulen Village said.

“Ah yes.”

Earth Shadow was passing by.

They were adventurers so hearing about Weed was like having a nail stuck in their ear. Weed’s name was heard no matter what profession it was.

Good at sewing Weed, able to carve a meticulous armour pattern Weed, Weed who can pull a large fish, etc. Every time there was a successful adventure, the residents had no choice but to talk about

Weed.

“He was the most dignified person in the history of the Southern Desert and no one could match him. But that is how it is. He is a person who lived hundreds of years ago.”

“Huh?”

Unring was surprised. They said that he lived hundreds of years ago.

“Grandpa, just now were you talking about Weed who is the king of the Arpen Kingdom?”

“Of course he is great. But the desert king Weed was cold blooded. He was violent and merciless to his enemies but was responsible for the revival of the desert tribes.”

“That person was responsible for the desert development?”

“Yes. Have you seen the best city in the desert, Agusellia? He is responsible for the luxury villas and houses present in the sea of sand.”

“I see.”

They were adventurers so they had memorized most of the map of the continent. They also know the name and some information

about the desert cities in the south.

“Agusellia is a place with a population of less than 3,000 people.”

“Ah, this person! You are talking nonsense. The desert is a place with only 100,000 warriors.

A place with only 3,000 people can't be that rich.”

“.....”

“Drop in on the city when there is the festival celebrating the Great Emperor Weed and the warriors of the sun. Millions of people head to Weed's ruins every year.”

Unring, Ben and Elliks looked at each other after hearing the unfamiliar story.

Dori dori.

It was like they were talking to each other in their heads.

‘What is he talking about?’

‘Warriors of the sun, Great Emperor Weed? My intuition senses that this will be a huge adventure.’

‘Really, this isn’t fake? A fake rumour about an adventure isn’t going around?’

The old man continued speaking.

“He is a warrior who enjoyed adventures and rose to the top.”

Of course. Weed was a sculptor but he was also known as a tailor, blacksmith and chef. No matter how much effort they put in, it was difficult to push each skill to the advanced level like Weed. Even following in his footsteps was too hard.

Weed was an adventurer’s biggest rival! When they had a successful adventure, the residents only talked about them for a short period of time.

Weed had so much fame that the residents enthusiastically talked about him. He always succeeded despite not having the skills or benefits of the adventurer profession.

“Weed is a legend in the desert. He discovered the mystery city Metapeia. His achievements will forever remain on the continent.”

“Ah! Metapeia!”

“Heeok!”

“R-really?”

“Yes, isn’t it really amazing?”

The Earth Shadow party was truly astonished.

They searched so much for the treasure related to the Embinyu Church! It was located at the place called Metapeia.

-A hidden place in the world.

A mysterious place that doesn’t give access to strangers unless they are walking the path of death.

“So it was the desert!”

“A mirage!”

The information they checked hadn’t revealed that. But the thing that would surprise them in the future...

“Do you know about the Fire Salamanders?”

“Yes. I’ve heard of them but never met them.”

A regular monster that lived in fire! Fire Salamanders existed in dungeons deep underground.

And the only thing remembered was a scene where they blew out fire from their mouth. The level 400 users died immediately! In order to find the lost items, they headed back to the place where they died. They wanted to risk secretly collecting it but it was impossible with the enemy monsters.

3~4 Dire Salamanders gathered together were enough to destroy a city.

“This is talk handed down among the desert warriors but...”

“What is it?”

“Weed-nim exterminated all the Fire Salamanders.”

“Cough!”

“How?”

“Isn’t that impossible?”

“Of course not. If it wasn’t true then I wouldn’t tell such a pointless story. And there’s even more. In order to stop the Fire Salamanders from growing, he destroyed all the eggs. The Warrior’s Guild went to take a look. They should know more about this story.”

Ben felt his neck and legs tremble after hearing those words. In

the past, he regarded Weed as a competitor and sent a brave challenge to him. But that was just bravado.

Unring and Elliks also thought it was ridiculous.

“Are we dreaming?”

“It seems so. But we found Metapeia. And...the Fire Salamanders have already been destroyed.”

“Should we be glad or start crying?”

Chapter 3: Matchless Warrior

Weed watched the huge body lying on the floor.

The skin was like blazing lava and the three horns sprouting from the forehead was a threat itself. This was the boss monster of Metapeia, the Fire Salamander King. It was a legendary existence that lived in the desert.

But it was being hunted by Weed and his subordinates. The special leather with patterns drawn on it, blood and horns were all pieces that could be sold in stores.

Of course, the process to raise the prices through bargaining was essential!

“As expected from something known as the most powerful monster.”

-You have received a severe injury.

Current health remaining is 4.3%.

Flame damage will continuously occur.

Your life will be in a critical condition if this isn't treated immediately.

He took out medicinal herbs and bandages and wrapped it around himself with familiar hand movements.

-The cold bandages are perfect to prevent bleeding.

It will prevent the deterioration of your condition.

Your innate resilience has increased the injury recovery speed by 67% faster.

The Fire Salamander King has been destroyed. Among all the monsters Weed faced, this was definitely the best.

The thick walls and ceilings had melted during the hunt. There were many injured and dead warriors. The fast and resilient desert warriors gave up their lives so Weed could jump at the head of the creature and deal continuous, critical hits.

“We barely defeated it.”

The body of the fallen monster was still hot. Sparks were still covering Weed's body. The effect of the flames was the special move used by the Fire Salamander King! However, it wasn't hurting anymore thanks to his high fire resistance.

Ddirring!

-The legendary Fire Salamander King has entered its eternal rest.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-Fame has increased by 16,782 due to the great achievement.

-Charisma has increased by 7.

-After entering the dungeon, your bold commands have caused Leadership to increase by 6.

-This victory will have an effect on the entire desert so all those who participated in the battle will have all stats increased by 7.

“Huhuhut, this is the taste!”

The experience from hunting a boss monster was multiplied by 100 times. Of course, his growth process wasn't normal so Weed had different skills at this level. Furthermore, the stats related to his sculpting failed to grow even higher. This was a disadvantage but he still reached a colossal level!

Even if he was facing level 400 mobs, they wouldn't dare resist and would just stay still for his sword swing. If Weed was determined enough then he could easily crush a city. A Sun Warrior was an upgrade from Desert Warrior.

However, the profession of desert warrior is only granted to the strongest in the world. At the end of the day, the strongest Sun Warrior's skill was Mana Burn.

“Let's check the item.”

Sya sya syak!

-A master class tailoring item.

The thick leather of the Fire Salamander King has been acquired.

-The Mana Heart of the Fire Salamander King has been acquired.

-Master class sculpting item, the Fire Salamander's 3 Horns has been acquired.

-The Crystal Leading to the Fire Sanctuary has been acquired.

“As expected, these items aren't simple. I'm looking forward to it. These things might be helpful.”

Weed glanced at his subordinates. The injured soldiers were sitting on the ground after the last big battle. Less than half of the desert warriors who entered the dungeon remained. The injured were in the centre of the room but at least 200~300 people had died.

His conscience was slightly pricked at the thought of monopolizing all the items from the Fire Salamander King.

“I need to confirm it secretly. Inspect!”

His conscience was slightly active but he still concealed checking the items from his subordinates.

Ddirring!

-Leather of the Fire Salamander King: Durability 125/125.

The leather of the legendary Fire Salamander King.

It is thick but also very lightweight and flexible.

The noble pattern is revealed every time it is exposed to heat and it won't tear.

The leather will give 85% fire resistance.

Physical attack damage will be reduced by 88%.

Depending on the level of the skill, additional magic resistance and other features will be given.

If properly processed, it can give great defense and a mysterious quality.

Master class tailoring material

-Mana Heart of the Fire Salamander King: Durability 17/17.

A heart filled with fire mana.

A very rare item.

Eating it will increase maximum mana by 1,700 and the ability to deal with fire by 3%.

The skill 'World of Fire' is available.

The additional effects when eating multiple hearts will gradually decrease.

Chefs who cook this fresh will gain larger abilities.

-Horn of the Fire Salamander King: Durability 182/196.

The most solid horn in the world.

It is close to impossible to process it but blacksmiths and sculptors can attempt to transform it.

If it is used to make a weapon then it can pierce any armour.

“How excellent.”

Weed was satisfied with this loot. This was the feeling of happiness when hunting a boss class monster. And the crystal with a red aura around it!

“Inspect!”

-Crystal Leading to the Fire Sanctuary: Durability 9/10.

A crystal that can generate a portal to a mysterious sanctuary.

Inject a bit of mana to use it.

Only 1 person can pass through.

If the crystal is destroyed then fire elementals will appear and shoot flames of anger in every direction.

“I’ve heard of this.”

An old man in a desert city said.

-Fire, water, wind, earth and lightning. There are special places that are the source of all this.

The desert has 5 sanctuaries hidden that are related to this. How do you know?

It was recorded in the diary found on five charred corpses. Chuckle. The book is probably left behind from a city covered in sand.

You will suffer if you try to find it.

The old man gave him some clues but not enough for Weed to find it. And he had no plans to find it. There were only 4 minutes remaining in his 80 days of hunting. His plan was to hunt incessantly before time ran out.

“These guys. You’ve gone through a lot of suffering.”

He checked the items and wrapped bandages around the bodies of his subordinates.

“Kuooh, Great Emperor...”

“You came here because you believed in me. You worked hard.”

Kindness would be more favourable in this quest!

‘There is only a little bit of time remaining so should I try to raise my level some more?’

Weed’s eyes sparkled at the thought. His current level was 824. The level of his subordinates was also considerably high. The desert tribes were so loyal that it didn’t matter if they died.

‘No. I still have a few hundred people remaining. They followed me despite the harsh treatment so their discipline isn’t bad. There is no chance of a rebellion even with a deep injury. I can use these guys later. I should make something to eat. I can even sell it on a shrimp boat later.’

Weed handed the bandages back to his subordinates and didn’t hesitate to pull out a weapon.

“Thank you for everything so far. The fact that we won this battle is all due to you.”

“No, Great Emperor. It is a glory that I could follow behind the Great Emperor. I will go anywhere. I won’t forget the glorious days even if I die.”

“You can’t die before me. I feel the pain of my flesh tearing every time you get hurt.”

“Great Emperor!”

“Yes, this insignificant desert warrior won’t end here!”

“Heeok! Please remember my humble name.”

“Of course thoughts about all of you are filling my head! I can’t take you lightly.”

Weed called the names of his subordinates one by one and sent them encouragements.

“Tallonya, Bollos, Krenggrand, Ai...sumi? Hmm hmm. Your injury is serious. Come here. There are still many bandages remaining.”

“My injury is nothing. Great Emperor doesn’t need to take care of it.”

“We are the sword and bow that will split Great Emperor’s enemies.”

His subordinates were thrilled that he remembered their names.

‘This person called Hestiger! He is still alive. Looking at that arm protector, he has picked up another good item.’

He felt jealousy whenever he heard that name. Soon it was time for the Nodulle’s Growth quest to end.

Ddirring!

-Nodulle’s Growth has been completed.

The scorching hot lands.

The time given to Nodulle has ended.

He has worked hard to maintain the peace and defend Hilderun.

Please Note: The flow of time has reset from 100 times to the original.

The next quest will take place after one day.

The crisis was over but he felt a premonition that the next quest would be even more eventful.

“The next request hasn’t been given.”

Weed sighed but it couldn’t be helped. He had completely

succeeded in continuous, difficult quests. It was natural to receive even more difficult quests.

Weed and his subordinates returned to the desert city of Laos near the oasis. Of course, he had to pack the skin, bones, teeth and claws of the Fire Salamanders before leaving the dungeon. The dungeon was empty as it lost everything. The Fire Salamanders had been purified and it would take at least 1 year for the to reappear.

The number of desert warriors that survived this hunt was 741 people! His troops had suffered and their numbers were significantly reduced. However, they became considerable stronger after the experience in the Fire Salamander dungeon.

“Warrior-1, this is Laos right?”

“Yes. It seems to fit.”

Laos had changed a lot during the course of his quest. The residents had built thousands of red and white houses along the sand dunes. The beautiful, colourful walls gave off a type of elegance.

The kingdoms of the Central Continent were cities built to match the lush, green forests and mountains and were suitable for nobles. The materials were stone or wood from trees.

Laos was a popular city but the houses were made with sand and

earth. It gave a solid and cosy feeling of a revived city!

It was a city of desert warriors so it didn't need to worry about attacks from outside. The high walls were meant to divide the city rather than play a defensive role and the gates were open.

Due to Cloud Sculpting and the abundance of rain falling, the oasis turned into a clear, blue lake with a river flowing from it.

Honey and milk flowed from Laos and merchants and nomadic farmers gathered, making it always crowded.

“Throwing this much money... I'd rather embezzle the money then spend in on the arts.”

Seo-yoon thought that Weed liked the arts so she generously invested the funds she gained from the mercenary guild in this area. The desert had a creative culture of passionate dancing, singing, sculpting, art, etc.

“The Great Emperor is visiting!”

“Everybody come forth!”

Weed's visit attracted attention so all the troops and residents ran out to the streets and bowed respectfully on the ground.

The most majestic presence in the desert! He had the status of the

strongest in the desert so it was natural for them to worship him. In fact, Weed's power was so huge that he would settle disputes among large tribes.

“Watching you fight every time can be very annoying.”

“Great Emperor, they robbed the flock of sheep that we have been raising for 80 years.”

“No. This is our pasture. Their one is over there. Here is the evidence.”

“Too noisy. The reason isn't required. In my eyes, both of you are wrong for causing a conflict in the desert.”

“Save me!”

“We were wrong.”

“Both sides made a mistake so you should give compensation. The flock of sheep and pasture. Your relationship isn't good so you should give the properties to me. If you don't want to die.”

“T-thank you for the fair judgement.”

Weed lightly showed off his power to extort them of their property. He would return to his original time after the final secret sculpting technique quest was finished so he needed money. He

used it to purchase good weapons, equipment, skills etc. He gained the title of ‘Person Seeking Bribes’ but that didn’t matter.

“There is nothing wrong with it. I’m not an honourable person.”

His active spirit of bribery overrode any actions of aid or virtue. He was meeting Seo-yoon in the city but it was difficult to tell apart the faces covered in cloth with only the eyes showing. Weed sent a whisper to Seo-yoon.

–Where are you?

–The fountain.

–I’ll be there in a minute.

Seo-yoon was waiting in front of the fountain in the city.

Weed got off Bactrian Camel and took off the Pharaoh’s mask. His bald head glared in the sun!

Seo-yoon was wearing a headscarf and neat desert clothes, giving off an elegant and intelligent style. It was absurd but she hadn’t aged as the quest progressed.

Seo-yoon smiled brightly as Weed headed towards the fountain and looked like a model for expensive cosmetics. She proved the reason why females poured money into skin care.



“This isn’t going to happen...”

“It is still too early to give up. We should be able to buy some time if we enter the sewers!”

Artists packed their brushes and paints and escaped in a hurry. Usually cities were a safe zone from monsters but these people were being pursued by assassins.

“Where are they coming from?”

“I don’t know. I can’t see. We’ve arrived at the sewers. This should be enough...cough!”

A purple dagger with poison on it belonging to an assassin suddenly hit the drain!

“This place is obvious for anyone thinking of escape.”

“Shut up, you Hermes dog!”

“This is proof of the rumours.”

Seokeok!

In order to maintain peace in the Haven Empire, the Hermes Guild employed a merciless squad of assassins.

“There is a lot of graffiti. The deterioration of public order is more serious than I thought.”

“Kill anyone who is suspicious. Pay special attention to the painters in the city.”

They assassinated painters, rebels and anyone belonging to the Embinyu Church! The Haven Empire acted swiftly to maintain public order.

The players protested in the square of the Imperial Palace but the military mobilized their forces, including battle carriages in order to exterminate them. Public opinion was bad but the Haven Empire had the strongest power in the Central Continent and used that to suppress any backlash.

Additionally, Emperor Bardray set some edicts.

All those who oppose the rule of the Haven Empire will be given the death penalty.

Any who help the rebels of any kingdoms will be given the death penalty.

Those who draw graffiti about the nobles of the Empire will be given the death penalty.

Anybody with a connection to the Embinyu Church will be given the death penalty.

Any actions that will worsen public order will be disposed of.

Emperor Bardray.

The Haven Empire wanted to unify the Versailles Continent so they were concerned about ending the war and maintaining peace. Users from the defeated kingdoms or guilds often spread false rumours to disturb the rule of the Haven Empire.

Users who were caught doing these things were killed and then permanently expelled from the Haven Empire's territory and hunting grounds. The vast majority of general users had to endure the rule of the Haven Empire.

A hometown was very important on the Versailles Continent. It was a familiar city and their colleagues were there. Their contribution and intimacy with NPCs would also rise and it would become the base city for their adventures.

Even if others criticized the Hermes Guild, the users who started in the Haven Kingdom had already adapted to the bad situation.

Expensive hunting ground admission prices and heavy taxes. The

situation wasn't like other kingdoms.

The Empire was increasingly gaining strength. As the Haven Empire expanded, the scope of the users' activities naturally widened.

Moreover, the Haven Empire might be the first to unify the continent. Other guilds had to compete for places. Quite a few people left for the north to escape the Hermes Guild's persecution but many people still lived in the Empire.

“Edicts? It really isn't a joke.”

“The Haven Empire just wants to kill anyone they see as wrong.”

“This rule is a dictatorship.”

The users were dissatisfied but they didn't show it on the outside. The military power of the Haven Empire was pushing on them from above. In addition, the Allied Forces on the continent were thoroughly defeated.

The Haven Empire continued to increase the occupied territory and used the money plundered to grow their military. People looked away like it was unrelated to them and continued quietly hunting and adventuring.



The flames under Fabio's hand seemed like they were dancing. He learnt to deal with both metal and fire!

His blacksmith skill proficiency had reached a high of 99%. He was waiting to become a master but even the most perfectly created sword didn't increase it anymore. Even smelting hard metal didn't change the proficiency.

"This is the limit of simple production. I need to look for a new method."

In fact, Fabio had expected this to some extent.

The best blacksmith had to create a legendary sword that would be known throughout the continent.

A Master Blacksmith. He needed a great achievement in order to become a ruler of metal. There were numerous users waiting to master their skills but Fabio was stuck at the final step.

Fabio rose from his spot.

"The best armour and perfect sword. It will be good items for those qualified to use them. The hero who is the first to unify the continent will be the one I make this weapon and armour for."

He was well aware of how the world was changing.

The dwarf kingdom of Thor hadn't received any external aggression yet. The dwarf culture had no kings or nobles and were uncompromising warriors who dealt with their enemies using their axes. Most of all, the presence of Akryong Kaybern meant conquering the kingdom wasn't going to be that easy.

But the dwarves would naturally be affected if the Haven Empire conquered the world. Their fate as a minority species was to be swept away by the war. The Thor Kingdom wasn't active in the world but they were naturally interested in the changes occurring on the continent.

“The military needs to strengthen its cooperation with the Hermes Guild. We have to make that choice before it is too late.”

Fabio and the junior blacksmiths decided to aid the conquest of the Haven Empire. The dwarves made weapons and defensive items from ores. Numerous other guilds who had been watching quietly until now sided with the Haven Empire.

They decided to give up on resistance and accepted the rule of the Haven Empire.



Pale, Surka, Irene, Romuna, Hwaryeong, Bellot, Maylon and Mapan were all gathered together.

“Sigh... Everybody went through a lot of trouble.”

Bellot said as she looked at the others' faces. The reason she failed to connect to Royal Road for a while was a TV filming.

But everyone's face had changed in the meantime. Their hair had become matted, their faces dirty and armour shattered. Repairs could make them neat again but they had just returned from a quest.

“It is okay. It was worth it. Look at my fist now!”

Surka whose face looked like a dark elf gripped her fist tightly. When her fist punched something, there was a probability of causing lightning. It was a fighting skill gained from the monsters in Lightning Valley!

Pale's bow had also changed, indicating that he had gained quite a bit of profit.

“Ah, this fragrance is really good.”

Romuna wore a robe that covered her face and sat quietly while drinking tea. This was unusual since she liked to talk. This was either a very large failure or a one-time jackpot!

‘I was nervous but I guess the work succeeded.’

People who knew her well thought that she was lucky. Hwaryeong was dressed like an Indian female in order to learn a new dance.

After greeting each other, Mapan started talking with a heavy atmosphere. Mapan had invited them to his mansion in Morata.

“Here, this is the reason I invited you...this is a book bought cheaply from a farmer.

It isn't unusual for something that I read to turn out to be something more.” Mapan pulled a book from his backpack. A corner of the book was torn and the title said ‘The Discovery on Halmerun Mountain.’

“Let's read a bit of chapter 1. Start now.

I've seen a lot of places as an adventurer. But I think this is a special place.”

When I first came to the north... I was going to run away. The monsters were too scare for my colleagues and I.

I'm writing this book while hiding in a cave but this is a romantic adventure.

So why is there a musty smell? This is the smell of a bear. Tonight we didn't want to be the bear's dinner. Please note that I have no taste. Although the Shabel Tiger tried to bite my arm, it

soon left to seek different prey. The reason for this is the secret paste I applied to my body.

...Omission...So I was wandering lost in a place overgrowing with trees.

It was an area with deep, dark trees when I saw a ring.

It was a ring belonging to a missing knight of the Niflheim Empire called Ivanstein.

I looked around a little bit but returned after not finding anything.

Facing a hungry monster on a dark night is very dangerous.

“Who is Ivanstein?”

Surka asked a question but everyone was quiet. It was because they also didn't know. They were like new chicks in this area.

“Knights of the Niflheim Empire are constantly fighting off invading monsters. I searched in the library for Ivanstein and discovered that he was a knight holding a brass plate before disappearing. It is one of the four treasures of the Niflheim Empire.”

“What is the effect of the brass plate?”

“Unfortunately, I couldn’t find out. However, it seems valuable enough to search for it.”

“By ourselves?”

“Yes, that’s right.”

The people looked in each other’s eyes.

This required searching a mountain based on a story from a book! It was far away and they would have to pass through several monster habitats.

Apart from quests, adventures could also be obtained from clues like this.

“Let’s go.”

“I will go.”

“We have to go there.”

It was an important decision but everyone made it easily. There were unpredictable difficulties that could occur on adventures.

‘It might be a little hard but we will suffer even more under

Weed.'

'This is nothing compared to Weed's quest.'

They grew quickly while hunting with Weed!

The tension in regular quests wasn't high enough. Every once in a while, they wanted to feel the thrill and exciting moments when hunting with Weed.



[Minor TL Note]: This is just speculation but I'm going to put it down here because I know some people will ask the question. I assume that Weed still has the level he earned because the whole point of this quest is to level up for the next few quests. Therefore, Weed probably won't get the reward for the levelling up until his level is reset. But this is just my guess...

Chapter 4: In Times Of War

Kokotaek, koko.

Lee Hyun fed the gathered chickens.

“Eat well.”

He watched the healthily grown chickens and chicks with a pleased look. A happy laugh automatically emerged when giving food to the animals he raised.

“I’m a really good owner.”

The chickens had a miserable fate. While hens could lay eggs, the roosters that couldn’t lay eggs were discarded when they were just chicks. And the hens who could only move their bodies in a small space and gave birth to eggs every day died after 2 years.

The life of an animal was too sad. Maybe that was why there were movements to protect animals.

Lee Hyun wished for his chickens to grow up happy and healthy.

“So they will be delicious when I eat them later.”

The joy when eating them half fried and half with sauce! He also

cleaned the yard and enjoyed the chores that he had been neglecting for a while.

The quest in progress had the time only flow when Lee Hyun and Seo-yoon connected. Although it was like that, the normal Versailles Continent was changing so he couldn't relax his mind.

“I will access it again in the evening. Lululu!”

Lee Hun hummed as he completed the chores around his house.

“Earn money. Earn it rapidly. Last time I made a deposit to buy the land. It can be developed into anything. It will be a jackpot if it becomes a train station or a highway.”

A fun song that made he feel good!

While Lee Hyun was working, he was being watched through binoculars from the rooftop of a building.

“He is living quite differently than expected.”

“Hyung-nim, we've already robbed him. Is he really going to sign a bond contract?”

“Hyung-nim will take care of it. Our work is to just watch that fellow.”

Myeongdong's loan shark!

They knew that Weed the God of War was Lee Hyun. He had a formidable popularity that attracted attention from the broadcasting stations. Therefore they had a definite plan to hook him.

They used illegal means to collect information and keep watch on Lee Hyun.

-Diriririk!

The loan sharks were so busy dreaming they didn't see the 9 tiny dots floating around them.

The latest stealth drones! They were the surveillance aircrafts sent by Yoo Byung-jin and the artificial intelligence. Detection radio waves were launched at the loan sharks and measured the biological responses. The missiles mounted on the small aircraft could wipe out the loan sharks.

The Myeongdong head office also investigated any relationships he had.

“His grandmother and sister. The old lady is in a nursing home so she isn't useful. His sister will be an effective hostage.”

“It will be easy to snatch his sister, Director-nim.”

“We have to be careful. It will become troublesome if this becomes known to the media or the police investigate.”

“Do it quietly and we can control him until the end. In the meantime, we’ll earn quite a bit of money from the contract so it will be profitable.”

“Check out the list of properties near the region and buy a few of them, Director-nim.”

And of course, the mini android was able to see all this information. Not long ago, Yoo Byung-jin had issued an order to the artificial intelligence to take care of the loan sharks.

-Get rid of them. So that my ears never have to hear about them again.

The artificial intelligence determined the best way to fulfil this command after taking into account the behaviour of the loan sharks. And it came to this conclusion.

Diririk!

-High risk level. This won’t be resolved with a normal conversation. I have to actively take care of it.

From that day on, the Myeongdong loan sharks were broken.

“What? Investigation Commissioner-nim, what does that mean?”

-This is a legitimate police duty so I don't know what you mean. I don't know who you are.

“Isn't this unbelievable? I gave you so much money until now. You shouldn't do this after accepting all my money!”

-I've never heard of or met you. I don't know how you know my phone number but let's have no contact in the future. Also, keep in mind that things might not improve in the future.

Dalkak!

They were suddenly investigated by the IRS and the prosecutor's special investigation unit. They asked for help from the politicians and officials that they regularly bribed.

“Donation? Huhuhu. Ddek! Look at this person. These days donations are illegal so I've never received any! I'll warn you now. Keep in mind that you shouldn't bark such words in public!”

“Gwon Jae-hyuk, I've eaten in Senator's rice restaurant for 16 years! You dare to threaten me now? Do you want to be buried in Korea?”

The Myeongdong building was instantly shaken up by the

government forces.

“This...it can’t be like this all of a sudden.”

Han Jin-seop had started this work against other competing factions. But all the strings holding them up were breaking.

Politicians, prosecutors, the police and national tax service. All these organizations started moving against their company.

“Clean up the data. Dispose of all the materials, including the computer’s hard disk.”

“But these books are worth more than 1 billion won.”

“First we need to get rid of all the evidence.”

The account books, computers, documents, etc. were all destroyed in preparation for a search and seize. They also allocated quite a few funds for lawyers to defend the office. Given the tolerance of Korea’s laws, they had no choice but to wait and believe in that. Sale activities that weren’t illegal and only a small, normal part of their overseas finances was left.

“These are in English?”

“The funds given to Senior-nim to move?”

“There is no contact yet. Rather, they are withdrawing funds and erasing all traces to us.”

“Our work can’t be revealed...the social repercussions will bury us.”

“They won’t obtain any evidence.”

It would be the end if they were revealed as loan sharks who forced people to pay back their debt or lose everything. Therefore, they were anxious as they removed the evidence and 6 days passed.

The search and seizure occurred but all the data had been lost. The preparations were complete so the finance group could feel somewhat relieved.

“Korea’s true form of prosecution gives us time to wait.”

The judiciary process in Korea didn’t move quickly so it rewarded businesses like theirs. But this was all part of the artificial intelligence’s plan!

-Phase 1 is complete.

-Phase 2 is starting.

Later that evening, Han Jin-sup and other members of the finance company lost their spirits. Whether they were in their

home, at the company, on the streets or in the toilet alone, they all lost consciousness and woke up in a small, dark room.

“W-where are we?”

Beds were crammed in a narrow space reminiscent of prison cells and there was a television, bread in a packet and food.

“It can’t be.”

They were suddenly reminded of the story of a man in a movie. The man was trapped somewhere for 15 years and forced to live on dumplings. And from that day onwards, they survived on barley bead and tap water.

“Someone... Surely they will find us. The members and police won’t be quiet.”

The loan sharks grinded their teeth together. But the trapped people were unaware of one thing.

The police had closed the investigation into the loan sharks. The search warrant was executed too late and they had already disappeared from the office. They examined phone records and looked for other traces but couldn’t find anything. Therefore, it was assumed that they were smuggled to foreign countries.

10 days ago, a post appeared on the internet community.

Title: What is a good method to control loan sharks?

Author: AI.VERSA

There are loan sharks that are repeatedly annoying me.

Despite the money being paid off already, they keep on making persistent attempts to do bad things. Words don't seem to convince them so what should I do?

-Just bury them. Bury them in the tidal flat.

-Hey, is this a joke? If this is real then report it to the police immediately.

-Don't report them. If it isn't reported then this will become a liveable world sooner.

-The loan sharks should go to jail. They are also bothering me. Be careful everyone.

-Those people won't repent. They should just be isolated from society forever.

-They should be locked up like in Old Boy.

-I agree!

-That is the truth.

-I also agree!

-Dumplings are expensive. It is too precious to give to loan sharks. Just give them leftover rice.

-But the motorcycle fuel cost delivering it will be a waste.

And then there was a list of good foods to feed the loan sharks. The most astronomical and practical methods listed barley bread and canned tuna. At least 5 years' worth of barley bread and canned tuna was already paid for.



Weed once again accessed Royal Road. He was a Sun Warrior with a level of 824.

At that moment, the flow of time on the continent returned to normal. The stars in the cool, night sky shone down on the desert cities. He had spent a relaxing day in the city with Seo-yoon as they ate grilled scorpions and camels.

“Well, I am trembling a little.”

Nodulle's quest had led to an explosive growth. But like always, he wasn't distracted. The scale had grown uncontrollably larger so the difficulty was bound to increase. It felt like he was now reaching the climax of the quest!

Seo-yoon soon connected as well.

"You came early."

"Yes. It is a good night."

Weed and Seo-yoon sat on a pile of stones and waited for the next quest. The desert evening wasn't too cold and the atmosphere was cosy. They had spent a lot of time together during the process of the final secret sculpting technique quest.

'Give me a suitable quest... If I receive the final secret technique then I can prevent the attack from the Hermes Guild and earn a lot of money. Seo-yoon...I'm thankful that you are helping me.'

It was just become his kimchi soup started boiling. Weed tried to think about his life in the future.

The situation in Royal Road was going out of control. While the quest was ongoing, the war among the prestigious guilds was reaching the finale.

'That fellow seems to be eating the continent.'

It was an established fact that the Haven Empire was going to occupy the Central Continent! The Arpen Kingdom had gathered numerous people and materials but the situation wasn't hopeful. Weed's popularity and myths caused the north to rapidly develop so it was a target to be conquered.

The Haven Empire launched a frontal attack and were repelled by the Grass Porridge Cult. Therefore there were rumours that they were going to attack again. He guessed that spies of the Hermes Guild were already in the north. The fight in the Central Continent was over so there was only the north and the Embinyu Church left.

The Rosenheim and Brent Kingdoms in the east were destroyed by the Embinyu Church. The original population of the south was small but it rapidly flourished due to Weed's adventures.

Yesterday Weed relaxed while on the internet so he knew that such things were happening.

‘Although it is still like a dog.’

Despite the south developing, it couldn't compare to the strong users in the long established Central Continent. The desert cities had become larger but that wasn't a good thing against the armies of the Haven Empire and Bardray.

‘In the end, Bardray is behind all these bad things. The northern and southern areas that I raised might be eaten by him.’

Maybe Bardray also had the life of a protagonist. He was revered as a warrior who won every battle. The Allied Forces on the continent had collapsed and no one seemed able to stop the forces of the Hermes Guild. An inferiority complex burned inside Weed.

‘He isn’t a lot better than me. He seems to be only 10 centimetres bigger. I am 170 centimetres, which isn’t that short as 180 centimetres is considered tall. And when I saw his face... He seems to have received a fine education.’

The intense eyes and neatly trimmed features, Bardray had the appearance of a typical elite.

‘His leadership is also significant...well, I’m not that much of a leader. I lived moderately while going to an old school. When looking at him... A spacious house and nice car. The bank deposits are also incredible.’

His thoughts deepened as his hostility increased! Realistically, he wasn’t a rival for Bardray and his followers. They would just eat him up on the spot.

‘Life is a time to bloom.’

He missed the chance to have the spirit of a warrior! While he was envious of Bardray, a video started playing in front of Weed and Seo-yoon.



A deep, dark and dismal cave!

“Chakujel, was the work in the Portu Kingdom a failure?”

“I’ve collected the necessary materials for the black magic so it wasn’t a complete failure.”

The person wasn’t visible and only the voice could be heard. But there was at least 2 things that he knew. Their voices were low but there was enough power to cause it to ring through the cave.

“Desun?”

“Dead.”

“Hul hul, even though he was the treasured disciple you raised.”

“His value was used up. At least I don’t have to handle him now.”

Desun was the name of the Portu King.

“The sacrifices?”

“They ran away. But the power of the devils descended so it wasn’t a complete waste. If we search the entire continent then we

can collect the sacrifices again. If there are sufficient scapegoats then the devils will be able to open their eyes.”

“Let me help. I want the era of fighting and killing to continue for as long as we want.”

The video lingered before slowly changing to a different place.

This time it was an enormous, red wasteland. A bird was flying away. The screen moved according to the eyes of the bird.

The remnants of the walls were collapsing and ugly looking monsters roamed the place. A river with black water flowed with bones from various different species floating on it. And beyond that was a shrine that gave off a dreary atmosphere.

There was a high guard tower where centaur like demons stood holding bows. In the centre, people were continuing to build up a tower that reached into the sky. That alone was remarkable but there was a statue in the middle of the shrine that reached 200 metres in height. A statue with 12 arms!

Weed thought to himself as he watched the video.

‘It is Embinyu! The Embinyu Church!’

Weed really had a tedious, evil destiny.

‘Why has this thing appeared before me? Bother Bardray instead of me. The Embinyu Church hasn’t bothered Bardray at all. He is truly lucky.’

Anything involving the Embinyu Church was never easy. But looking at the scale of it, this wasn’t a typical Embinyu shrine.

Numerous buildings were placed around the statue like a city. And in the building connected to the Sky Tower, demons were selling souls at altars. A training camp had women and young children wielding weapons with bloodshot eyes. Creatures, beasts and insects were captured by the fanatics and brought to the Embinyu altars.

Those bodies were turned into evil spirits. This was the military production base of the Embinyu Church and a den of evil.

‘Somehow it doesn’t give off a good impression.’

The screen moved closer to the statue in the centre.

“All believers, we will purify this world of the corrupted with our strength.”

It seemed to be an important ceremony as the High Priest gave a speech in front of the huge statue. Every time he shouted, the red liquid in dozens of bronze would boil explosively. Countless humans kneeled down on the ground and replied in unison.

“Ohhhh!”

“God Embinyu, give us your directions.”

A heavy but bloody atmosphere occurred.

“God Embinyu has answered us. Destroy, destroy, destroy everything! Your efforts and willpower will give me strength!”

Ddirring!

-Important information has been obtained.

The Embinyu Church is constructing a tower.

If the tower reaches the top of the sky and pierces through the clouds, they will be able to exert a stronger power obtained from the God Embinyu’s will and strength.

There is 197 days and 16 hours remaining until the tower is completed.

Submissive humans in the Embinyu Church are obediently stacking stones in order to build an infinitely high tower. There are many people who staggered after losing their strength and died. The other fanatics literally stepped on the corpses to build the tower.

In this confusing and anxious world, it was a completely horrible scene.

The High Priest took a stick off the ground and shouted as he waved it around.

“God Embinyu is an endlessly merciful person! Destroy the hypocrites and open up this world for the subordinates that he will send us!”

“Ohh, God Embinyu!”

“We will punish them all!”

The sound of drums rang out throughout the entire shrine. The faithful had bloodshot eyes and were foaming at the mouth. And a vast shape slowly appeared alongside the High Priest.

There was a long, sleek body over 100 metres long and a pair of magnificent wings. It was the most complete art form.

The dragon Ausollet.

In ancient times. Unlike other dragons that maintained harmony and balance, Ausollet was born with only feelings of hatred and insanity. Even the other dragons didn't associate with Ausollet.

Ausollet burnt the peaceful elven forests and invaded the human

world. There was a direct battle with the clergy and the high elves borrowed the power of the gods and other dragons to seal Ausollet.

That's why Ausollet was named the Chaos Dragon. It was unthinkable that the Embinyu Church was going to unseal the Chaos Dragon. The priests sacrificed their own soul and flesh to gain the power required to unseal Ausollet. Now there were no constraints on Ausollet's flesh.

The dragon Ausollet was like a stone statue with its calmly folded wings and closed eyes. But the dragon made the atmosphere heavier.

Sometimes a dragon like Akryong Kaybern would show their force. He burnt entire mountains in one day and caused scenes of destruction. Kaybern was insurmountable to the dwarves.

For as long as human existed, it was common to think of dragons as unslayable. They would have to penetrate through a large number of monsters before reaching the dragon. Dragons were different from conventional monsters so the guilds and kingdoms couldn't help worrying about their safety.

The Embinyu Church had found and removed the seal on Ausollet. The torchlight shining on Ausollet's body caused the shadows to lengthen.

“God Embinyu handed us this ceremony in order to control the soul of the dragon. Untainted but blessed young babies are required.”

“Ohh, we will be God Embinyu’s eyes and ears.”

“Destroy and kill more. We will bring the children in order to obtain the dragon’s soul!”

The fanatics screamed and cheered furiously.



“Hrmm.”

Weed had a myriad of thoughts as he watched the video.

‘Others are being entertained in Royal Road so I wonder why these things keep happening to me. I don’t have any interest in things like the peace of the continent or the conspiracies of the Embinyu Church.’

He remembered when he was a child of 12 years old. A fortune teller sitting at the pedestrian underpass had sighed when seeing his face.

“Tsk ts, the share of millions of people.”

Lee Hyun stopped and asked the fortune teller about the meaning of those words.

“Does sharing the fortune of others mean I will earn a large amount of money?”

“No. But you will do the work of millions of people. It will be tangled and tangled and the water will become murky.”

“No way.”

“It isn’t normal to go through all that trouble. Dark clouds, dark clouds. The dark clouds in the world will flock to you.”

Now looking back, it seemed like the fortune teller’s words were true.

Weed escaped from reality for a moment after seeing the video

‘It can’t be. It can’t be. It can’t be. I don’t want to face a dragon. Just give me goblins. Bardray should bear the burden of taking care of the Embinyu Church and the Chaos Dragon.’

Ddirring!

-The Path for the World

After Nodulle grew his strength in the desert, they headed towards the Central Continent to solve Hilderun’s curse.

But the Central Continent had yet to escape from the swirl of war. The royal families strengthened their military due to greed and unknown grudges.

And the biggest cult on the continent, the Embinyu Church! They mobilized their forces to destroy the continent that was preparing for the final stages of the great war.

They require large seeds to acquire the soul of the Chaos Dragon. They will randomly kidnap babies in the future. If 100,000 soul seeds are gathered then Ausollet will wake up.

The priests from various species obtained reliable information about this and planned a raid of the Embinyu Church.

They have to implement a reckless plan before they are killed. If this isn't stopped within a specified period of time, the devil in Hilderun's body will wake up.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Restrictions: Three months remaining.

If you or Hilderun dies then the quest will fail.

Please Note: If you are unable to fulfil Nodulle's role then the continent will suffer much damage.

The awakening of the devil, rule of the Chaos Dragon and expansion of the Embinyu Church will depend on a series of quests.

“Uhh!”

Weed swallowed his saliva.

“To be honest, I expected it but a dragon really did emerge.”

It was like buying a lottery ticket not expected to win but still feeling disappointed when it didn't win. Technically speaking, he didn't have to fight a Chaos Dragon. The dragon hadn't woken up yet so he only needed to fight the Embinyu Church.

“But this won't be the end.”

Naturally the work wouldn't progress smoothly.

This wasn't going to be the ending of a fairy tale that kindergarten students would read where Cinderella lived happily ever after with the prince. After fighting with her parents-in-law and sister-in-law, she had to deal with her husband's infidelity.

Now he became involved and had to actively fight the Embinyu Church.

“The power of the Embinyu Church is tremendous in times of war. There is no need to mention what will happen if the dragon wakes up.”

Weed couldn't find any details of Nodulle and Hilderun in the history books. In addition, there was no mention of the Embinyu Church in this time of war.

“This must mean Nodulle's adventure didn't cause any damage to the continent. I have to take over his mission.”

He knew how horrible the Embinyu Church was.

Even in the original time zone, the Embinyu Church had expanded greatly with many followers. The cities and villages were destroyed and the army contained thousands of fanatics. They grew like poison mushrooms to cover the Versailles Continent.

If Weed failed the quest then he would be giving a great gift to the Embinyu Church and Chaos Dragon. This would be a catastrophe for numerous users.

“Well, it's not like I'm going to lose anything anyway.”

Weed's sense of morality was different from that of a hero. It depended on whether he would profit or not!

Even if the devils woke up because of the Embinyu Church, the action would mainly take place on the Central Continent. The

indescribably damage would most ruin the kingdoms of the Central Continent and surrounding areas. In particular, it might break down the Haven Empire that was currently being established.

The devils and Embinyu Church. Both were terrible things to deal with. If Weed failed the quest then Bardray and the Hermes Guild would have to deal with it.

A small smile was on his face.

“I haven’t suffered in vain. The ship won’t sink even if the quest fails. Things are rapidly coming loose.”



The Hermes Guild implemented their policies based on careful, strategic thinking.

They had abundant resources, sufficient strongholds prepared, squeezed the residents for money, upgrade military facilities and improved road networks.

Lafaye used textbook management and leadership strategies.

“Only dispatched 40,000 troops to the Havers area. It can be occupied in 14 days.”

“Stop the troops from marching into the Rom area and rearrange them. Has the commander requested battlefield supplies?”

“Not yet.”

“Send any magic weapons available through the forest.”

“The supplies road has been secured and it will arrive after 19 days.”

They gained the advantage over their enemies due to extensive military support.

The Allied Forces had combined again after their defeat in the Rubidom Mountains and challenged them to soothe their souls after the loss. The previous deaths of the experienced users and the soldiers weakened the power of the Allied Forces.

During this time, some minor guilds didn't miss the chance to apply for an alliance with the Hermes Guild. Well, it was an alliance application but they were actually puppets.

“With these odds, wouldn't it be better to ally with the Hermes Guild instead of fighting them?”

“If we surrender then we can act within the Haven Empire.”

“It will be better to side with the Hermes Guild even if we have to

pay war reparations. It would be better to build up achievements in their army now. The Camelot Guild will act as a vanguard of the occupation forces.”

The occupation of the Haven Empire was gaining momentum. White flags would raise before the march of the Imperial Army.

The Haven Empire only took a small amount of time to secure public order because they wanted to occupy the continent. They completely seized the Gadian Kingdom, Norton Kingdom and Nest Kingdom!

The broadcasting stations talked about this news straight away.

“I saw that the Dragon Castle opened their doors to the Haven Empire and surrendered.

“The Nepiad Fortress that have been fighting a few days ago raised the white flag. They abandoned the fight against the Haven Empire.”

The stations honoured the Haven Empire. The Imperial Army gained the nickname of invincible army.

The leaders of the Hermes Guild issued a new command.

“From now on, the army will be divided into two. The occupation troops will be reorganized and focused on the primary battles.

And the remaining troops will organize the occupied areas.” As the number of conquered territories expanded, a larger management plan was required.

The conquest of the continent was proceeding smoothly as the Allied Forces were unable to confront Bardray.

The Thor Kingdom and Iron Road Guild was also helping the Haven Empire. Dwarf weapons would wreak havoc on the battlefield while the armour meant that ordinary damage was negligible.

“It is a good thing that we’ve internally absorbed the Thor Kingdom and Iron Road. And the elves haven’t made contact?”

“Yes. They are a species not normally involved in war so there is silence.”

The elves didn’t built cities or strongholds. They lived together in large forests without anyone vying for dominance. Many users selected the elf species due to that atmosphere.

The Central Continent might be engulfed in war but the elves were free. Prestigious guilds that rules cities and castles within the influence of the elves knew not to interfere. For that reason, the elven players grew unhindered to an extent that they could no longer be ignored.

“Should we continue to leave the elves alone?”

“No. The army needs to pass through the elven forest in order to safely arrive at Dragon Castle.

“The forest is a natural fortress to the elves.”

The elves could get help from the trees and the spirits they had a high affinity to. Rangers firing arrows were also active in the forest.

“Use axes to chop down all the trees, rocks to dry out the forests and burn the whole forest if there is resistance when advancing. It would be good if you recruit applicants with already high infamy.”

“I understand. We will take action.”

The Haven Empire headed towards the forest of the elves.



“Phew, we can survive for a bit here.”

“Be careful. We can’t believe in people.”

30 novice users carefully observed the area before exiting the forest. They were users of the new ruined city Crea.

It had only been a couple of days but the city was in ruins when they connected around the fountain. There were only traces of fire, collapsed buildings and dead bodies in the street. Despite the fact that it was noon, dark clouds filled the sky like it was evening and a chilly wind blew.

Awooooo!

There was the sound of a howling wolf not far away. This was like the bleak atmosphere of a scene in a horror movie.

“It is this way. Come quickly!”

“Hide before the wolves catch our smell.”

The Crea users who connected late joined those who were first. They had belatedly connected and couldn't take refuge.

“Why has it changed?”

“You don't know? The Embinyu Church completely swept through it.”

“Ah, I never got the compensation for the quest I completed for the weapons store owner.

“Forget about it since the owner turned into a cannibal.”

“The employee of the inn?”

“Now there are only a few surviving residents. Furthermore, most of them have changed into fanatics. It is foolish to perish for some quests when we should be fleeing from the Embinyu Church towards a safe city.”

Most groups or parties had a warrior as the leader.

“But I am level 230. Wolves are nothing...”

“I am a level 300 warrior. But a monster’s speed and strength grows in areas occupied by the Embinyu Church. I barely survived with my health and vitality.

And if fanatics flock to the fight then we are dead.”

“Let’s escape when it is night.”

While the conversation was ongoing, users continued connecting to Crea and joining them in the hiding spot.

“The Embinyu Church headed to the north and the south.”

“Let’s do it. Tell everyone.”

In the evening, the 30 people moved in the opposite direction of the Embinyu Church. They hid behind rocks whenever the cry of a wolf was heard or fanatics appeared.

It was exciting and thrilling but they couldn't help worrying about the Embinyu Church.

‘Will this continue to happen?’

‘Ah, I wish peace could find the Versailles Continent.’

The users pulled out of their comfort zone tried to move as secretly as possible.

Illek City.

“Embinyu! Embinyu can save you. Destroy. Kill and destroy everything around you.”

“The era of reason is over. Madness and anger will set us free. We will punish those who torment us. In the name of Embinyu!”

But even here followers of the Embinyu Church roamed the city preaching. The city guards caught them but new followers kept on appearing out of nowhere.

“There is news that the troops of the Embinyu Church are heading here.”

“Is that so? Then where should we go?”

“Go anywhere if you want to survive.”

The users continued to avoid the Embinyu Church.

Chapter 5: Warrior Saving The World

Weed and his men decided to arm themselves in Laos before leaving. It was because there might be an all-out war against the Embinyu Church.

“Don’t think about money and just freely choose.”

In the meantime, the desert warriors had handed over all the loot and weapons obtained to Weed. Although a significant number of armed warriors managed to get good weapons, some of them were using items barely fit for their level.

There were basic materials but the desert warriors had also mastered the bow and arrow.

Due to Weed’s blacksmith skill and the high level of monsters he fought on the quest, he could continually change his equipment. It would be fine if Weed obtained the good stuff alone but he emphasized a strong mind and body for his subordinates.

“I need a spear.”

“Buy it.”

“I need plenty of arrows.”

“Pick any.”

“I would like to pick elf arrows. It would be better if they were expensive.”

“Um, buy as much as you want. I will give it to you.”

Weed spent big.

He obtained a large number of jewels while hunting for his quest! The level of the his hunting grounds was high so the number of jewels was tremendous.

He felt like crying as he pulled out the opal jewels to pay for it. The flawless diamonds and emeralds were put aside in his backpack. Hopefully the processed jewels could become royal treasures!

“This is the time to dispose of it. Is this the feeling of lethargy a parent feels when they give away their children to marriage?”

Weed also chose items required to sculpt the jewels.

Anyway, he wouldn't be able to return with his subordinates once he completed the quest and returned to his original world.

Ddirring!

-Jewel sculpting has finished.

Your advanced sculpting skills have carved the jewel.

A rounded egg that expresses the gem!

It is transparent and inside are colourful flowers.

Looking at the diverse patterns and colours is enjoyable.

A marvellous sculpting skill that has no choice but to be admired.

-The value of the jewel has increased by 2.6 times.

Due to the scarcity, the value of the jewel will climb over time and if the person wearing it has high fame then the health will increase.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

You have obtained 154 jewel crafting fame.

Weed produced the jewels without hesitation.

In the meantime, the final secret sculpting technique quest had been adventuring and survival so he barely had time for leisurely work.

There was still a steep quest ahead but he continued carving the rest of the jewels.

“This time I’ll make a jewel look like a cup. It will contain pretty hues when the cup is filled with wine or water. This will be a very demanding task if I don’t want to lose the light. But it is still worth a try.”

The art of fine jewellery was born. The desert warriors and city residents were surprised every time Weed created a new work.

“For the Great Emperor to have this aspect...it is hard to imagine.”

“I could only stare silently the first time I saw it.”

“Truly a hero of the desert!”

He couldn’t hear any of the words due to his intense focus on the jewels. They were precious jewels. Of course the value of the jewels were important but Weed could easily obtain them at his level.

He endlessly worked on large and small gems of various colours. The light coming through the window hit a jewellery box and let loose a glistening of hues.

‘Come to think of it, I haven’t given a gift to Seo-yoon yet.’

Weed thought the items would disappear when returning to their original time so he created sapphire and diamond earrings and necklaces. There was a total of 92 on the continent and Weed used 60 of the really precious diamonds on the jewellery.

He hadn't forgotten his gratitude to Seo-yoon for her help in the quest. The gems were going to disappear anyway so he didn't mind using them for gifts.

“Take it.”

He had prepared words to persuade her once she refused.

“Thank you.”

“.....”

“Beautiful.”

“No, well, I burdened you with some difficult things...”

“I'll wear it well.”

“.....”

Regardless of the price, Seo-yoon considered any gift that Weed

gave her as valuable.

She wore the necklace and earrings. The effect of the jewellery significantly enhanced her dignity and charm!

Her skin tone also improved, she became brighter and had less wrinkles. Her pores shrunk and blackheads were removed.

It had the same effect as magic items but female players were sensitive to jewels. Seo-yoon already had perfect skin and figure so the gorgeous necklace and earrings matched her well. The sheen of the jewels didn't look awkward and was perfectly natural on her.

Seo-yoon looked like the precious princess of a rich kingdom. Her appearance was enough to be the protagonist of movies or dramas where bad guys would unconditionally advance on her.

‘It is fine.’

Weed had no regrets in giving it to her.

‘I can give a few jewels.’

Seo-yoon matched perfectly well with the necklace. The shining jewels would naturally catch attention. He then moved his eyes up to her face and sighed, simply feeling grateful that he could live together in the same air.

‘It is pretty and matched really well. Is this why presents are given to women? If Seo-yoon was my girlfriend... Uhh, it is unreasonable to have too much imagination. A pretty woman in a capitalist society will have too much expenses.’

Even a pure heart would find it difficult to overcome a modern, capitalist society! He was still in shock from the price of the food and coffee that Seo-yoon bought.

While Weed’s inner world was in turmoil, his subordinates had finished purchasing the goods.

“6.74 million gold.”

“What?”

“Great Emperor, it all cost 6.74 million gold.”

“How did such a ridiculous price emerge? You have contempt for me!”

“The warriors preferred luxuries.”

Warrior-1 wore a shoulder protector that wasn’t there before and Warrior-3 had a new belt. The sculptural lifeforms were high level warriors with excellent equipment.

In fact, it was impossible for stores in the city to sell things worth

6 million gold. But Seo-yoon had developed the city of Laos. It was the headquarters of the Mercenary Guild in the desert so there was an enormous number of mercenaries and warriors gathered. Therefore the weapons and armour stores contained special magic items worth over 6 million gold.

“I’ve been careful not to be ripped off for my entire life yet my subordinates just bought things on impulse.”

He grumbled but he didn’t think he could get all the items for a much cheaper price.

Weed was the saviour of the desert so the merchants were already selling it for half of the official price. The merchants and blacksmiths who traded in imported goods were delighted to take a loss. Buying equipment for just one desert warrior would cost at least 10,000 gold.

“Wait a little bit.”

Weed used the remaining sapphires to make a circlet. The artistic value was 3,600. It had the effect of enhancing magic and gave a cooling effect to those in the desert.

“I don’t have much loose change so a transaction is difficult. Now, how much would this jewellery be worth?”

He eagerly waited for a high price. The store owner inspected the jewels and replied.

“Great Emperor, it is amazing that you crafted these jewels and honoured that you are showing it to me. The transaction price of these jewels will differ depending on the timing. But Great Emperor, the tens of thousands of gold passed down through my desert tribe is insufficient to pay for this. This circlet is worth 3 million gold, no 3.35 million gold. It is a huge amount for an ornament but I will nevertheless buy it.”

He had saved a considerable amount of money from quests. They swept through the dungeons and found good items but most of them were used by the desert warriors. That’s why he couldn’t dispose of equipment to earn money.

If Seo-yoon hadn’t helped the mercenary guild then they would still be poor.

“I will sell this.”

Weed took out a jewel crafted wand. It was a wand that granted magic and the artistic value was 4,150 so it was much more desired than the sapphire circlet. It was a treasure that would fund an army on the Central Continent.

“This thing... This store is famous so many wealthy guests will visit. The value of that is 3.6 million gold. But since you are the Great Emperor, we can give you 3.87 gold.”

“This thing is priceless. Hum hum.”

He might lose face but he still tried to bargain.

“Of course I know that. But if the amount is any more than I might not be able to dispose of it in this store. I need to take my position into account.”

The bargaining failed! The merchant already increased the price as much as possible so Weed decided to just sell it.

He needed to pay for his subordinate's items. It would be a problem if their loyalty fell.

“Then I will sell the sapphire circlet and jewel wand to you. I am giving you a great honour. And... If you could give me an extra 30 gold.”

“Understood, Great Emperor!”

Ddirring!

-You have traded a large amount of jewellery.

The store owners will have a good impression of the person who succeeded in such a large deal.

You have become an important clientele of Laos.

You can order special items as needed.

Ordered goods will be obtained through Laos's contacts.

You can hear information and rumours about goods.

-Charm has increased by 2.

A high amount of fame will increase the value of the jewels.

Thieves might target you after hearing rumours of riches.

Fame of the city Laos has increased by 2.

4.8 million and 30 gold has been received in minor jewels.

Warrior-7 looked at him with naive eyes and said.

“Great Emperor, I still want to buy more.”

“...Buy it. However, avoid spending excess money.”

The desert's first legendary Sun Warrior was sad over something that could be regarded as a pittance.

‘But I am a little proud of my subordinates. If I have to compare it to walnut cookies, it is like buying a bag of 20 only to find it contains 21.’

It felt like his money was used well! Of course, they were heading to the Central Continent so it was unsure how many would return to the desert.

Then Seo-yoon opened her backpack.

“This is for your subordinates.”

“I don’t need it. I have enough to take care of my men.”

Weed wondered how much she would’ve earned since she hadn’t left the city the entire time. And she gave him money when he needed it.

“Still... How much money?”

“It is a little over 20 million gold.”

“Heok!”

“This is the Mercenary Guild’s operating funds and the compensation received after managing them.”

Seo-yoon also bought land in every major road before developing a desert city. The land values would soar and then she would sell it. She was even firmly involved with trade so there were rumours that she had all the wealth in the desert. Those funds were used to expand the Mercenary Guild and help Weed.



The Arpen Kingdom’s Royal Palace attracted another guest.

Heavily armed men with a tanned appearance rode towards the gates on horseback. Swords were worn at their waist so they were obviously warriors.

“Stop!”

The NPC knights of the Arpen Kingdom saw them coming and blocked the path. They lifted polished steel swords and shields.

The shield had a wyvern drawn on it to depict their affiliation. It was different from normal wyverns as it had the flat back appearance of Wy-3!

“Intruders! This is the glorious land of the north so you aren’t allowed to invade it.”

“Surrender your weapons. Otherwise you will be attacked.”

The guards protected the gates.

Cha cha chak!

Archers appeared on the walls and aimed their longbows. The knights and soldiers of the Arpen Kingdom continuously received the invitations from users to go hunting together. Users hunting with the soldiers could earn contribution towards the kingdom.

Now the Arpen Kingdom had widened its territory and more villages belonged to it. The high level users strengthened the economy and the military also expanded.

“What, is a guild coming to attack the Royal Palace?”

“No. Take a look at that. I’ve seen a similar outfit before. NPC?”

“So this is an event?”

Players gathered near the entrance of the Royal Palace revealed their curiosity.

Of course, they were also prepared for a fight. Swordsmen placed their hands on their scabbard while magicians chanted a spell that could strike at any time.

The users were alert when they suddenly sensed a bloody atmosphere.

“I don’t know if this is an event involving NPCs.”

“Why? An appearance like that isn’t common.”

“I’ve seen it before. Big and terrible people armed with swords.”

“Oh, they are similar to those people.”

“The atmosphere around them is more menacing. I instinctively sense that they are at least level 400!”

Geomchi and his students were kind to beginners and even gave them help when hunting. Yet their infamy spread! They didn’t do any bad things but just gave off an air of life in jail.

The warriors who came to the Arpen Kingdom just proudly looked around without paying attention to the atmosphere.

“In accordance with the law of the desert, we have come to keep the blood oath.”

The knights of the Arpen Kingdom were confused and asked for the whole story.

“What does that mean?”

“We will draw our sword for the Arpen Kingdom in the future.

“What?”

“We won’t be complacent and we return the favour to the king of the Arpen Kingdom.”

The warriors from the southern desert had arrived. They were the later generations of the desert warriors that followed Weed in the past.

“One day the Arpen Kingdom will be built in the exact opposite place, the north. Desert brethren. When the time comes, send warriors to serve me as I will be the king of the Arpen Kingdom. All those who don’t comply will be taken away by the dusty winds.”

“Yes, Great Emperor!”

To the desert warriors, it was the same as God’s command. Weed’s presence was like a sun god and they unconditionally followed him. While in the past, Weed’s fame and high level earned him a huge number of slaves.



The number of Weed’s desert warriors surged to 3,000.

“The story of how you exterminated the Fire Salamander King is a huge story in my tribe.

I am lacking but am looking forward to following you.”

“Good.”

“I grew up at Rosco Lake. My body is yours. Please accept me.”

“I will give you plenty of opportunities to fight.”

Many desert warriors were sacrificed when facing the Fire Salamanders. In addition to accepting 1,000 warriors to replace them, he accepted warriors from each desert tribe into the Red Knife unit.

In the past, he found them annoying and deliberately fed them to monsters but now their presence was valuable for his quest.

Their levels were low compared to the direct subordinates he raised. However, they were still elite warriors of the desert so they had some degree of value.

“I can’t run in recklessly. I need to fight against the Embinyu Church.”

In the contents of the quest, Nodulle took a few colleagues from the desert and headed to the Central Continent with Hilderun to

stop the Embinyu Church.

“It isn’t possible to do this alone. I need to raise my subordinates.”

The scale was slowing growing out of control! Seo-yoon also had a network of contacts. She withdrew the funds invested into the desert city and directed it towards the Mercenary Guild.

“I’m saving the people. It will be dangerous.”

“Everything is available to Hilderun-nim. I don’t know what is going on but I will entrust the warriors to you.”

She recruited 8,000 elite desert warriors! The desert mercenaries were relatively cheap but they had extraordinary value. Due to the fact that Weed and Seo-yoon frequently integrated and developed the desert, the standards of the armed forces were significantly higher.

“We will enter the Central Continent. And we will take part in a noble battle to fix the continent.”

“Waaaah!”

His troops now exceeded 11,000 people!

And the elders of the desert tribes gathered. Historically there

was a lack of harmony among the tribes but this stopped for a considerable period of time due to their prosperity.

“The monsters threatening the desert have disappeared due to our warriors. The Great Emperor is heading towards the Central Continent to ensure that our children can grow up safely.”

“I don’t know what difficulties there could be in that fertile land but...it must be important if Great Emperor is willing to participate.”

“Good. There can’t be a shortage of sand.”

9,000 warriors from the desert tribes came to help them. Weed’s expedition was composed of a massive following.

And the message window that appeared!

These days Weed trembled at the sight of a message window. But this time the contents were positive.

Ddirring!

-The subordinates have reached 20,000 people.

You have walked a different path from Nodulle and escaped the trajectory of destiny.

Fate can't update and a new path has opened.

Many events will be changed when leading your troops to attack the Embinyu Church.

Will you accept the new destiny?

“Hmmm.”

Weed pondered for a moment.

“Should I suffer alone or struggle with my subordinates?”

In other words, if he refused the new destiny then he would need to dismiss most of his subordinates. He could just take the Red Knife unit which had the best equipment and elite troops in the desert.

“I need them in case the Chaos Dragon wakes up.”

It didn't matter if his men were killed or suffered.

“I will accept the new destiny.”

-The wheel of a new destiny has started rolling.

This is a special compensation due to the much greater

performance in the quest that took 22 years.

You have changed professions to Hero Saving the World.

The first upgrade for Sun Warrior has been born.

The characteristics of the Sun Warrior will be enhanced by 30%.

It is the final profession in the knight series and only one person can have it at a time.

You have transcended the limits of the human armed forces and have been given an important divine duty.

The warrior's hand can use all weapons.

Based on experience, you can easily learn combat skills.

Honour will be at the maximum value, regardless of the stats.

The meaning of fame will disappear. Once the profession is revealed, you will receive the avid respect of many people.

You will be able to save your colleagues using your honour, faith and charisma.

All acts will minimize the increase of infamy.

Warriors fighting for the world will receive profound interest from the gods.

The gods are willing to impart some of their strength to you.

-Tyr the God of Battle has blessed you.

“Young human, the weight of the continent on your shoulder is heavy.

But you will be able to win if you believe in yourself.”

Pick five techniques related to combat.

Tyr the God of Battle will give a skill with the effectiveness of advanced level 7 but the skill proficiency won't grow. It is also impossible to be taught to others and will disappear after the war.

-Atrock the God of the Military has blessed you.

“Your leadership abilities are amazing. Everyone can hear your words in battle and will gain courage.”

Leadership has increased by 130.

The military commanding skill 'Atrock's Cry, Encouragement of

the Brave' has been acquired.

The growth of your subordinates has sped up.

-Mi-ne the Goddess of the Earth has blessed you.

“Warriors, I remember everything on the land. In this tumultuous world, the souls will experience many wounds. You have a lot of work to do for this world in the distant future yet you also planted the seed of new life in the desert. Love the land and your life won't collapse easily.”

Maximum health has increased by 3.7 times.

Once health is reduced to less than 20%, recovery rate will increased by 4 times.

When your hand is touching the ground, you will show a mysterious resilience surpassing that of a troll.

-Lugh that symbolizes the sun has blessed you.

“Brave warrior with a sword of light and an ardent heard, move forward and defeat evil with your sword.”

Damage associated with the light attribute will rise by 55%.

Light will act as protection and will decrease dark damage by 60%.

The blessing will enhance the effect of magic.

-Freya the Goddess of Blessing and Abundance has blessed you.

“Morata’s Master, you have already accomplished great things and carry a huge fate on your back. You have walked along a path of fruit and grain.

And this will continue in the future. You and your subordinates won’t starve and will not lost your dignity in any environment.”

Food will be extremely easy to find.

No matter how long you don’t wash, charm will not decrease.

Residents will easily gain a good impression of you.

Five divine blessings.

All stats will increase by 89 until the fight against the Embinyu Church is finished.

Tyr, Atrock, Mi-ne, Lugh and Freya!

The gods who sought justice gave Weed a new destiny and power. Weed felt a heavy sense of duty.

In this day and age, he was probably the strongest human. It was like eating a meal without having to spend money.

“Blessings of the gods and Warrior Saving the World. I’ve gained the best power in this day and age.”

A warm smile was on his face. This was the exact reason why Weed wanted to raise his level in the desert.

To be honest, he found that acting out the role of Nodulle was boring. He had to follow the trail of a good person. Despite many people worrying about him, he threw away a guaranteed future for the woman he loved.

“Maybe he just distributed all his money through the desert.”

In the future, he probably became widely known for justice on the continent after defeating the Embinyu Church. Of course, he was a different but Weed’s mindset was so different it was like comparing tuna and an eagle.

“I can properly face the Embinyu Church with this power.”

The gods trusted him to take care of the Embinyu Church.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

-A huge force is coming from the south of the continent to stop you. Defeat them.

Get rid of all those who would interfere.

“Yes. I understand.”

The High Priest woke up the sleeping forces of evil earlier than planned. They also mobilized the other branches of the Embinyu Church.

High Priest Motuls of the 4th sect led the Bronze Army. High Priest Igrig of the 6th sect led the army consisting of fanatics.

“Tell me how to help my brothers wake up the dragon Ausollet.”

Pechet of the Embinyu Church was willing to help. Igrig had another opinion.

“Is this even worth it?”

“This is the most immediate work. We need to remove anyone who will interfere with our work of destroying the continent. God Embinyu has entrusted us with this so we have to handle it directly.”

“Good. Then I agree.”

Pechet was the strongest witch in this warring age and caused big headaches to the kingdoms she harassed. Pechet had eliminated countless elites from the Keltun Kingdom and the damage had caused of major decline of the kingdom’s military power.

The Embinyu Church in the past had been caught off guard. Nodulle adventured with 7 other friends and broke the Embinyu Church’s conspiracy. The friends in the desert that he met during that time included Hestiger, Luhelrun, Brevinsun, etc.

The lucky Hestiger was Nodulle’s most loyal ally. Four of those people became Weed’s subordinates but 3 of them died while he hadn’t met the rest yet because he was too busy touring the hunting grounds.

Weed didn’t know this fact and laughed happily.

“Huhuhu, there are differences in this quest. The poor Nodulle suffered while those who worked hard will receive something in return.”

He had less luck than Nodulle so the events became more complicated. The degree of difficulty for this quest was already high and it just increased one step further.

Weed decided on five combat skills.

“Absolute Defense!”

It increased the defensive power of the warrior's armour by 3 times. When suffering from deadly or successive attacks, the body can still move to avoid it.

If he had Absolute Defense then he wouldn't die even when surrounded by knights. Due to the massive increase in health from Mi-ne the Goddess of Earth's blessing, he could withstand the concentrated attacks of strong enemies.

“And the following techniques... Sword Awakening that increases damage, Power of Birth, Black Knight's Strike and Summon Another Sword!”

It was beneficial to take advantage of these skills. These were all skill that Bardray had.

Sword Awakening increased the damage of the weapon itself. The Power of Birth decreased the amount of vitality used and can enable him to use the maximum power. There was an extra effect of pushing back the enemies.

The Black Knight's Strike was a wide area attack skill. Summon Another Sword created a sword of mana that would fly by itself for offense and defense.

While fighting Bardray, Weed had determined that his composition of attack and defense skills was pretty good.

He didn't learn Power Break that destroyed the opponent's weapon or Heriam Fencing from the Tower of Heroes.

Bardray received the support of the Hermes Guild and reaped the benefits to obtain superior skills..

“One day I will aim to learn them.”

Weed's current skills weren't bad but it was like heaven and earth when comparing it to Bardray. Of course, he reached level 824 and mastered Swordsmanship so it couldn't be compared. He also raised some skills in the desert that would supplement his weaknesses.

“Now I can march to the Central Continent to face the Embinyu Church.”

The quest had a time limit of 3 months. The backdrop was the entire continent so he couldn't be too hasty.



The Noah Principality.

It was a country on the Central Continent facing the sea and was active in trade. In times of war, supplies were traded through there and large fortunes could be earned.

Weed and his men rode on camels towards Noah. During the previous quest, he had been in a hurry so their camel riding skills were excellent. Weed and his troops ran forward like the wind. The warriors also had above basic horseback riding skill.

“There is a dust cloud coming from the south.”

“What is it?”

Noah’s defenders discovered something approaching them.

Deng! Deng! Deng!

The bell rang to inform of an emergency and Noah’s military force gathered. It numbered 32,000 soldiers!

This was a time of war so even a small principality had many troops. On the other hand, it was mainly concentrated on defense with a lot of archers.

Noah’s army had assembled when Weed and the Red Knife troops arrived.

“The scale of a commerce city is considerably big.”

The city under the blue sky contained antique buildings made of red bricks. It was an old city so the result was complicated and

narrow passages. It was a city with the traditional look and elegance of medieval times.

“The enemy has appeared!”

“Prepare for a fight. There aren’t many enemies!”

The sound of the Noah soldiers shouting could be heard.

“We are just approaching but the army is already prepared for battle. It is natural since the desert warriors have an image of an invader.”

Of course, his subordinates hadn’t come with pure intentions.

“Now, what should I do?”

Weed had to make a choice at this time.

The desert warriors were heavily armed so they would encounter problems when moving around the Central Continent.

The movement of extensive troops wasn’t permitted even in peaceful times let alone now in a time of war! Leading the desert warriors towards the Central Continent would naturally be considered as an invasion of the south.

Weed thought for a moment after arriving at the Noah Principality.

‘Can I solve this with an amicable conversation? It is also possible to use a suitable bribe. But convincing the leader of every city I have to pass through will become tedious. Then should I divide the desert warriors into smaller numbers in order to move? No, that is the worst method. Those impatient people will cause a fight anywhere they go.’

He couldn’t give up the 20,000 members of the desert warrior army. Noah’s military also wasn’t considered strong on the Central Continent. They paled in comparison to the monsters fought in the desert!

Weed made a decision.

“I’m glad. If they are obstructing us then we just need to shatter it And then we can obtain all the loot.”

The Noah Principality was famous for its gold and spices trade! He discarded any thoughts of diplomacy and decided to thoroughly destroy them. Anyway, he was currently Nodulle so infamy wasn’t important.

“Being too good is boring. This will be fun.”

Weed was seeking the endlessly intense days of Continent of Magic. That’s why he had no trouble with punishment in the

game. Living in a world of the sword was the ambition of a man!

He wanted to lead an army in a time of war. If he followed his head instead of his heart then he would regret it later.

But he had to fight very carefully. Weed and his troops could be called the strongest combat force. However, the desert warriors he belatedly accepted weren't seasoned yet. They weren't properly equipped for a large scale war so the 20,000 army might be destroyed in vain.

"We have to thoroughly avoid the crowd. Everybody prepare for battle."

The desert warriors raised their bow and scimitars. He didn't have any siege weapons so Weed needed to find a way to destroy the gates and walls.

If fact, if Weed used his power then Noah Castle wouldn't be that difficult.

"I have to use the army properly."

Users in Royal Road dreamed of facing against an army by themselves. Weed had the sufficient qualifications and abilities to do so. But it was difficult to control his power against ordinary soldiers and knights.

Then the Noah knights appeared on the wall.

“Some barbarians of the desert had come here to pillage.”

The Noah knights were naturally NPCs. The Noah soldiers shouted and laughed in mockery.

“Kilkil, they don’t know anything.”

“They are just useless bodies that will be buried.”

“We will give those beggars bread crumbs before they die.”

Weed was the commander but didn’t feel the need to say excessive things.

‘There is no way the morale of my troops will reduce.’

His reputation in the desert hadn’t spread to here. The only people who knew Weed well were the warriors who accompanied him from the desert. He laughed at even the thought of surrendering voluntarily.

Sentiment was ignored in the east, west and south. The shabby clothes of the desert warriors meant they were ignored. The wealthy warriors of Noah were armed with steel armour. This was in comparison to the desert warriors who were wearing leather clothing.

The reason was that metal armour was impractical in the hot desert and it was difficult to find blacksmiths. The desert tribes produced leather armour and weapons but the quality wasn't good compared to the Central Continent.

Weed was familiar with being ignored. From a young age, he was always wearing bad clothes and bags compared to the others at school.

“Come to think of it, I never once bought snacks or ice cream at elementary school.”

At that time, he was ashamed and embarrassed around his friends. Now he was much more mature. But his stingy personality became worse as he got older!

“Kill everyone. Get rid of all the seeds. And take away the armour they are wearing. Warrior-3, take some troops and attack.”

“Yes!”

Warrior-3 took 400 troops and approached the enemies.

“Fire! Don't let those savage people climb up the walls!”

Noah's army fired their arrows as soon as the desert warriors were in range. The archers let loose a huge storm of arrows that couldn't be avoided.

“Kueok!”

“Shields!”

“Block the top!”

Warrior-3's troops moved forward and tried to protect their fallen colleagues. Of course, they just had the role of bait. Most of Warrior-3's troops had high health despite not wearing good armour so they wouldn't be killed by arrows shot from that distance.

This was to learn the power of the enemies and consume their arrows! Some even fell on purpose and acted dead.

The desert warriors would follow any instructions even if it was cowardly. They obediently followed any command mercilessly attacked the enemy without hesitation.

“They are tough to this extent. They are not as shallow as I thought. I guess we have to do this siege properly.”

Then Noah's army leader shouted.

“This is nothing! The arrows are precious. Come out and smash these guys!”

The army naively opened the gates and exited the city to face the desert warriors. There were a few cavalry soldiers but they were mostly made up of infantry. The knights and Lord of Noah were conceited due to constantly repulsing the invaders in this time of war.

In Weed's eyes, they were like little boys just entering the world.

“Wait until enough of them has emerged.”

“Yes, Great Emperor.”

The desert warriors continued waiting in place. They didn't want to miss the opportunity to fight.

“Many times they will be swept away with me needing to fight.”

Weed knew how to patiently wait for the correct time and also had perseverance. And finally the enemy troops came close enough that they wouldn't be able to return to the castle.

“Sword Awakening, Power of Birth.”

He used secondary skills to increase his damage. His level was already enough to not die against fearsome monsters when getting distracted in a terrible dungeon.

He felt an electrifying thrill when facing the Noah soldiers.

“Sword of Deep Collapse!”

This was a skill he gained as a Sun Warrior.

Numerous coloured emerged from Weed’s sword before radiating in every direction. The sharp point of the sword then pointed down and entered the ground. The sword hilt became deeply lodged in the ground.

Kukung!

The earth suddenly became barren like the desert terrain. The grass and rocks broke down into small grains of sand. The land became eroded and cracked.

The soldiers of the Noah army that stepped onto the ground sank into the sand. It was a wide area attack skill!

The ground that the enemy stepped on became a skill instead.

“Kuweeeek!”

“I’m falling. Help!”

There were more than 2,000 casualties once the dust settled! It was originally a great skill but the range expanded since he reached level 800.

The enemy troops were buried in a 20 metre deep pit. Those alive in the pit clamoured for someone to save them but they couldn't climb up.

“The blessings of the gods is definitely effective. This isn't even the best power yet.”

It was difficult to imagine so the huge Noah army froze. They stopped in shock from the assault and yelled.

“Monster!”

“Black magic, it is a human devil!”

The word ‘bully’ was insufficient to describe him. He had scared the entire army with a single attack.

But the desert warriors didn't move despite the good opportunity. Weed ordered them to pick up the japtem first!

Weed gradually cast his second skill. The collapse of the ground gave him considerable time to prepare. The mana consumption was quite large but it could be used three or four more times.

“End of the Day!”

Hot flames spread out like a tsunami. The cruel and greedy

flames that would burn everything! It was like the lava slowly flowing down when a volcano erupted.

Once the fire reached the ordinary soldiers, they were covered in flames until only the bones fell to the ground.

The stricken soldiers started trying to escape to the rear.

“N-no! I can’t possibly die here. My mother, wife and children at home... And the neighbour’s wife Helen is waiting for me!”

“We have angered the god of the desert. We will live if we can enter the castle!”

“The embodiment of fire. The Lord of Noah has done something bad and this is the punishment.”

“Red Dragon! The Red Dragon has found us!”

The soldiers shouted as they fell into a state of panic. The Noah’s army that received a serious blow had their morale fell sharply. If a commander had outstanding power then the entire strength of the army could double.

However, Weed was capable enough to control victory or defeat on his own. His power surpassed the limitation of a human so the knights and magicians ran for the castle.

This was the dignity of a level 800 Sun Warrior! The level 200, 300 and 400 had their combat spirit collapsed when confronted with Weed. Their limbs instinctively trembled from a fear that grew out of control.

It was like a real God of War was there.

“It is like young children twisting in my palm. Black Knight’s Strike!”

Weed took advantage of the attack skill to jump over the pit. His agility was high and he wasn’t wearing full plate armour so it was almost like he was flying. Even so, it was reckless for him to face the Noah army alone. But there was no one who could stop Weed’s attack.

“One, two, three, four!”

Enemies disappeared every time he swung a sword. And after a series of continuous attacks, he would use a wide area skill.

-Black Knight’s Strike

An irreversible attack against the surrounding enemies.

The soldiers who pretended to resist were hit by the shock waves and changed to grey. The archers with low health and vitality were easy game. Although arrows were fired, they were swept away with the wide area skills. The knights and soldiers were

mercilessly hunted by Weed!

In the past, he thought that coordinate and organizing his subordinates were important. The entire unit would act to optimize their combat capabilities. But now he was in the vanguard and earned the most achievements.

During dungeon hunts, Weed also charged at the front while his subordinates swept up the remnants from behind. The presence of his subordinates weren't necessary so there was no need to take care of them.

Now the battlefield was just like a playground.

He was like a lion among a flock of sheep. Weed leapt into enemy lines and made a mess of the Noah army. Attacks hit his body but he just ignored them. His resilience and perseverance was already like an absolute defense.

But he had no need to take care of the weak Noah army alone. He had already piled up the achievements from the beginning of the battle. Weed sent a command towards his bloodthirsty men.

“Step on them. There is no need for prisoners. Kill and plunder!”

-Atrock's Cry has been used.

49,050 mana is consumed.

The duration is 30 minutes.

Your subordinates have blind confidence in their victory.

Every time they kill an enemy, they will feel less pain and gain more experience.

Resistance to magic curses will increase.

Even a generous offer by the enemies won't lead to betrayal.

“Great Emperor has given permission. Let's start hunting!”

The desert warriors were all riding camels and horses. They had been waiting for a while so they ran at full speed towards the Noah soldiers. Only the dead bodies of the soldiers remained everywhere they passed.

One-sided slaughter!

These soldiers and knights had a high standard in the age of war.

Weed and his troops destroyed the wealthy Noah Principality as they took their first steps into the Central Continent.

Chapter 6: The Disappearing City

Weed moved without hesitation after demolishing the Noah Principality.

“The enemies are coming. The allies of Noah.”

“I can see the shape of the beacon. There is no reconciliation or truce. Advance.”

“Yes, Great Emperor!”

They looted and secured the Provista Principality and the free city Mogen.

“Cut down the time you take to loot.”

The army simply smashed anything standing in their way while moving. The desert warriors used the power of the camels to move towards the heart of the Central Continent at lightning fast speed.

People often had the misunderstanding that camels were slower than horses. However, a camel was much faster and had stronger endurance.

Weed and the Red Knife unit advanced into the central area.

“Have you heard rumours of the three headed monster in the desert? It deals with the fires of hell and disappears after dealing damage to the soul.”

“The devil has appeared in this world.”

“Has God sent it down to punish us humans?”

No matter how he tried to minimize his infamy, dangerous rumours spread like wildfire among the occupied territories. Originally Warrior Saving the World would use their righteousness in order to save the world and the other species on it. Like a movie, they fought against evil forces and a dragon. It was unfair but if he overcame the difficulties then the world would recognize him.

Weed had piled up so much stress that it felt like he would need to go to the hospital.

“Just like the elementary school book said, it is hard for a man to live in this world.”

A Warrior Saving the World was now indiscriminately destroying cities. But he still has some mercy as he left behind enough sweet potatoes and potatoes for the residents of the kingdoms he overpowered to eat.

Ddiring!

-Combat achievements have piled up.

You will have an influence of the balance of power in the Central Continent.

Weed ignored the messages that occasionally popped up. He had no choice but to lead his army forward to the city of Ahellun.

He had secretly fled with Seo-yoon when he had no power but now there was no need. He didn't need to hesitate with a strong, armed force!

Of course, his subordinates needed to become stronger to fight against the Embinyu Church. More experience was often achieved through war than hunting. The current level of his men wasn't good enough yet. But the constant looting allowed them to easily obtain top of the line equipment.

-You have looted the city of Frederick.

Infamy has increased by 2,774.

You have obtained the exclusive title 'Greed and Dirty Person.'

A title that only the low class humans would receive and it will cause hostility.

"Well, it is a decent nickname. Anyway, all my infamy and

related titles will be lost after returning to my original time!”

Weed wasn't a gentleman. He just killed anyone who opposed him in Continent of Magic.

Compared to that, he had been living relatively gently in Royal Road. He avoided any relationships with the prestigious guilds. He had suffered while founding a kingdom only to have the Hermes Guild strike. The accumulated stress and tantrums!

“Looking at the damages in my life, it really is like a story.”

He would drink a hot broth only to find it wasn't cooled. When looking at it from that point of view, destroying the kingdoms and facing the Embinyu Church wasn't a bad choice.

“Returning to the past worked out well. I can act as I like!”

There were a number of large scale battles as he moved on. There was a time limit on the quest so he just attacked the enemies.

-You have burned the city.

A human committing wicked acts would naturally receive censure.

But there are no witnesses so infamy has only increased by 1,938.

-Horn Castle has been destroyed.

The cornerstone has been removed and the violent action will spread fear.

You have obtained the Castle Owner document.

“There is something else.”

Weed read the piece of paper.

–I have sworn eternal loyalty to God Embinyu.

And a video occurred!

The Lord of Horn Castle was wearing a black robe and bowing to someone.

“That day will soon come...”

“Yes, of course.”

“The soldiers....”

“They have finished the preparations and are waiting.”

“I vow to follow Embinyu...”

“My soul will forever be yours!”

It was the scene of the Lord of Horn Castle swearing allegiance to the Embinyu Church.

-A secret guardian of the Embinyu Church has been discovered.

Faith has increased by 14.

“Once again. A strange piece of paper.”

He was able to obtain new information in the midst of his looting.

-Tirek City is representative of the fanatics of the Embinyu Church.

Prepare the army to wipe them out.

That message shone during the battle. He continued to gain information about the Embinyu Church as he moved from cities and castles.

-You have obtained the Embinyu Church's List of Signers #3.

-Important information has been obtained.

Ddirring!

-The historians in the next generation have judged this warring period to be a savage time.

There are corrupt and incompetent kings, greedy nobles who only care about profit and knights that craved blood.

However, it was an unknown fact that many of these kingdoms actually followed the Embinyu Church.

They gathered forces to oppose the Embinyu Church but were actually secret members.

After a certain amount of time passed, the Embinyu Church suddenly stopped all their activities and disappeared.

Since then, the remaining kings just wanted to beat each other and the war became boring.

-Background information about the time of war has been obtained.

An important change has occurred in the situation of the continent.

The quest has been updated.

A new quest related to the Embinyu Church has replaced the existing 'The Path for the World.'

-Advent of the Conqueror

In the age of war, many kingdoms have become cronies of the Embinyu Church. There are those who want to do the right but they are weak and have no hope.

The fanatics of the Embinyu Church spread covertly like poisonous mushrooms. The sunny world was tinged with the darkness of the Embinyu Church!

Then destroyers came from the vast sands to change the existing world situation. Can their uncompromising pursuit erase the dark shadows cast over this world?

The goal is the destruction of all kingdoms that follow the Embinyu Church!

And maximize the death of the fanatics!

In times of war where the evil forces are widespread, great strength is needed to decisively pull up the roots.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Quest Reward: Special title with stats.

Quest Restrictions: Proceed with this until you reach Ahellun.

The quest will fail if you or Hilderun dies.

Objective: Destroy the following kingdoms that contain fanatics.

Destroy the cities surrounding the Herr River.

Destruction of the Jeben Kingdom.

Devastate the training base of the fanatics in the Ruprea Principality.

Destroy the three city state, Vino.

Total destruction of the Tarot Nation.

Set the city of Itua on fire.

In addition, destroy the other unknown cities that have sworn obedience to the Embinyu Church.

The quest will be completed with 3 or more of these goals are

completed. If you achieve 5 or more goals then the battle with the Embinyu Church will expand.

Please Note:

The Embinyu Church members gathered at Ahellun might come save their colleagues being attacked in order to obtain their cooperation.

Depending on your infamy, the Embinyu Church members at Ahellun might be prepared by the time you arrive to stop the awakening of Ausollet.

The more fanatics that are destroyed, the more difficult it will be for the Embinyu Church to secure sacrifices for the Chaos Dragon.

If you obtain a large achievement, compensation will be given after the final secret sculpting technique quest ends.

The damage to the Embinyu Church will also affect their power in the original time.

“The quest has changed.”

The warring period was full of rot. Thus the quest required a conqueror to get rid of the darkness!

Maybe life was a constant stream of quests and survival. A child

was led from pre-school to elementary school by their mother. Once they grew, they would go to junior high, high school, university, the military, employment, marriage, preparing a home and having children.

It wasn't easy to settle this series of quests. They would have to instinctively notice their boss, use excessive overtime to complete the tasks and attend work related dinners. Once they got home, they might not receive any respect from their families.

However, there were also moments of happiness while carrying the weight on their shoulders. Their level would rise and they would be rewarded by such things.

Weed felt similar dots on this quest.

“However, I need to keep the contents firmly in mind. It is just destroying like I’ve been doing until now.”

It was a quest that suited his aptitude. After receiving Warrior Saving the World, his ability to fight had increased further. His subordinates were also brave and reliable. They would be able to display a fierce ambition in modern society.

“I will destroy the continent with my own hands!”



Dagan Kingdom was one of the countries on the verge of

destruction due to war.

It once possessed an important granary system alongside the Ruben Plains. The kings and nobles that pledged their loyalty to the Embinyu Church gained riches while the soldiers acquired special powers.

The population wasn't enough to call it a powerful country but there were quite a few culture and ruins left behind for the next generation.

In the golden days, the territory was wide enough to rule over 13 big castles. But Weed and the desert warriors were born and the history changed, making them encounter an invasion 100 years earlier.

“We need supplies for war. Dagan Kingdom is good for this.”

Weed led his troops over the border of Dagan Kingdom.

The royal family of the Dagan Kingdom held an emergency meeting.

Of course, Weed saw this scene in a video. This was the benefit of the Earth Goddess Mi-ne.

“Those barbarians dare step on our sacred territory, Your Majesty.”

“That’s right. Let’s show them a lesson.”

The half-naked women, kings and nobles congregated in the Royal Palace were in chaos. The enforcement of discipline had collapsed, veteran knights were demoted and the nobles were only skilled in flattery. They had become familiar with extravagance and hedonism due to the Embinyu Church.

“We will shatter the barbarians so why should Your Majesty appear directly? We will show the dignity of Your Majesty to the surrounding kingdoms and even the people complaining about the king will be quiet.”

“I agree. I will lead the military directly to deal the punishment. I will personally teach those barbarians a lesson.”

“It is worrying. I heard those people are unusually cruel.”

“I also heard that. But those guys will stop here. The armoured cavalrymen and infantry are an impregnable fortress that they absolutely can’t pierce.”

“Of course, Your Majesty. It is a good idea to practice fighting before proceeding to conquer other areas.”

“Huhuhu, it was worth investing a lot of money into the military.”

The King of the Dagan Kingdom gathered 60,000 troops and met them in the middle of the plains.

“Look at them. You can’t even distinguish between the infantry.”

“Their armour doesn’t even have a unified look, Your Majesty.”

“They don’t even have a flag which is a symbol of their pride.”

“It isn’t time to show Your Majesty’s dignity. The soldiers are here to serve Your Majesty so you should just rest and we will delay the battle until tomorrow.”

The nobles of the Dagan Kingdom sneered at the desert warriors. The Dagan Kingdom’s elite soldiers were organized in the traditional manner!

“Those fellows are looking at us and laughing.”

“Are we going to just wait? No one would dare laugh at us in the desert.”

Weed laughed while riding Bactrian Camel.

Puheheheng!

The camels looked ridiculous to the Dagan Kingdom. The desert

warriors rode camels and carried different types of weapons. The desert warriors looked ridiculous to the knights who used swords with both feet on the ground.

The desert warriors used specific weapons and could display outstanding abilities. They shot arrows or threw their hand axes while mounted.

“This is the first battle that will test our power against the military. Unit 1, pretend to break through enemy lines. Unit 2 will go around the right side to bypass any blocks. Unit 3 will wait to attack the enemy along with Unit 2. Unit 4 will go to the left. Unit 5 will arm themselves with bows.”

Weed divided 3,000 desert warriors using a variety of tactics, including ranged attacks.

“I’m going. Kyihahhh!”

The dust flew up as the camels rushed forward. The 60,000 heavily armoured infantry and cavalry formed a solid defense that was dangerous.

It would take a lot of power to break through the brunt of the infantry. It was common for those attempting to break through the cavalry to be eaten by them instead.

Weed didn’t feel the need for a frontal attack so he tried a variety of tactics.

“We have to strike them hard.”

The scattered desert warriors assembled and struck one point.

“I am Warrior-1!”

A sculptural lifeform. They were the commanders of the desert warriors.

“Let’s go, Hyung-nim!”

“Today will be a festival of blood.”

Each sculptural lifeforms had their own units and stormed the enemy forces.

The mobility and destructive force that couldn’t be caught exposed the weakness of the enemy camp. By default, the armoured infantry moved slowly so they exhausted themselves chasing them. There was also cumulative damage from the arrows and axes that the desert warriors threw while circling them.

The armoured cavalry were much simpler opponents. The desert warriors were cavalymen in the desert. When the armoured cavalry tried to show their destructive power, the opponents had already scattered and weren’t there anymore. It felt like the enemy was endless but that was due to cunning tactics.

“These desert savages, they have no idea of honour!”

“They are like hyenas!”

The armoured cavalry rampaged wildly. The knights started accusing them after becoming frustrating but the desert warriors thought it was just useless nonsense.

“Why do they keep on talking about honour?”

“I don’t know. My parents never mentioned it even once.”

“Weed-nim who is the Great Emperor spoke about honour.”

“What is it?”

“It is something that makes life more tiring. If we commit to bad actions then we will be healthy and live longer.”

The desert warriors who believed in Weed’s words! At the end of their racing, the armoured cavalry was so tired that they had no chance. They were slow and heavy so their vulnerability was exposed once they stopped. Once their speed slowed, it opened them up to counterattacks by the mounted enemies.

This was a tactic that could be seen in military manuals. Wolves used this method to hunt down grazing animals.

Weed's desert warriors were strong and he had a firm grasp of the enemy's weaknesses. Weed and his subordinates' growth was the result of 22 years of training!

“Give up. Let's stop fighting.”

“I surrender. Please treat us as the nobility.”

The king and nobles surrendered after the victory. The Dagan Kingdom already had 23,000 casualties. The prisoners were close to 25,000 people.

There were few desert warriors among the victory. Some were those that grew together with Weed but they were mainly the recruited warriors from the desert tribes.

Weed gave a command.

“Don't kill the prisoners.”

“Yes, Great Emperor!”

And the destruction and looting of the Dagan Kingdom!

“How could these cruel acts... I don't even fear the sky!”

The king and nobles helped captive after surrendering started running amok.

“The sky? I don’t know anything about that. The real scary thing is the heating business in winter. Hey kids, these guys are being noisy so cut their necks!”

The king and nobles were beheaded!

Ddirring!

-The leaders of the Dagan Kingdom steeped in the Embinyu Church has disappeared.

Many in the Dagan Kingdom gave up their resistance and he was able to have a bloodless foray.

“Ohhhh!”

“These savages, they should go away.”

“God Embinyu will rule over this land. Destruction. Destruction. Destruction!”

The Embinyu Church revealed their true colours after the leaders died and started looting and setting fires in the cities. In this state, the residents were indifferent to things like human morality, honour or infamy and would just follow anyone.

For example, Nodulle could've been a great leader of the Dagan Kingdom. Weed was a different matter.

“Search the city for everything of value. And thoroughly destroy it!”

He found youths with good physiques and forcibly conscripted them as slaves. Weed's troops increased to 60,000 people. But they weren't like the youths the Embinyu Church recruited to be fanatics! They didn't have any loyalty so there was always a chance of desertion.

“The next battlefield is Eluna. March!”

The 60,000 strong army either walked or moved by carriages. There was a mountain of materials behind the combatants. Merchants were forced to draw the carriages and made to trade. Weed jumped into the role of a villain in these times of war.

“I shouldn't stop eating halfway. Once it started, I must do it properly. I have to act as a conqueror if I want to defeat the Embinyu Church.”

The weapons from the Dagan Kingdom were used to sweep through other occupied areas without much resistance. And the war with the Eluna Kingdom!

It was much bigger than the Dagan Kingdom and had a long

history. Weed led the troops and quickly advanced towards an important fortress called Brunhaim in Eluna Kingdom.

“These savages, go away!”

“Soon His Majesty will send reinforcements and none of these people will return alive.”

He decided to stroke the Brunhaim Fortress in Eluna. Weed’s victory had already reached here so they were prepared.

“It is impossible for a warrior to live forever in a time of war. This is a chance to make the slaves into proper fighters.”

Weed started a merciless operation.

“Give the conscripted soldiers from the Dagan Kingdom bows and arrows. Armour or shields to protect the body isn’t necessary. And have them shoot arrows while advancing towards the fortress.”

“Yes, Great Emperor.”

The desert warriors gave out the bows and arrows to the conscripted soldiers according to his command. And he forced them to advance.

Arrows from Brunhaim Fortress flew and hit the soldiers.

“Unbelievable...”

“No. I don’t want to die!”

The soldiers that tried to flee were executed by the desert warriors! The desert warriors were ruthless so they weren’t embarrassed about their actions. Brunhaim Fortress were considered the enemy so they wouldn’t retreat even if it meant death. They couldn’t shoot arrows towards the walls.

Nevertheless, the slave soldiers were attacked and collapsed! They didn’t have armour or any basic shields to protect their body. They couldn’t hide behind walls and could only shoot their arrows.

Nearly half of the 40,000 slaves died in vain. It was a tremendous but forced sacrifice.

Weed had other ideas while watching such a horrifying situation.

‘Should I eat jjapagetti tonight?’ Well, I’ll like to eat ramyun as well.’

A conflict in his life choices!

There were many cases when users became attached to NPCs. Giving and receiving help from others during the quests would further their intimate relationship. Weed and his sculptural

lifeforms have a similar relationship. The feeling of making them work hard even if they were lacking.

The weak NPCs dying were unrelated to Weed. They only existed in the current time zone so the NPCs would just disappear later. In other words, they were expendable consumables that he could take advantage of. A strong person would have a comfortable life compared to the weak.

“This is good enough. Have the soldiers retreat.”

“Yes, Great Emperor!”

The desert warriors gave the signal to retreat to the soldiers. A few arrows flying blindly had injured some of the fortress’s defenders but the damage was almost nothing. The defense had consumed their arrows and with no reserves, the fortress would fall within a day or two.

“The number of soldiers should be reduced in order to prevent a rebellion.”

The slave soldiers in this battle hated the Eluna Kingdom. Once the Eluna Kingdom occupied an area, they forcefully conscripted soldiers and create hostility among the slaves.

In addition, they greatly feared the desert warriors. Weed and the desert warriors appropriately used their fears to manage them on the battlefield. They used tactics to drive a wedge between

people who had been friends since a young age.

That evening, Weed created a sculpture. It was a precise sculpture of Fort Brunhaim and the lands surrounding it. An earthquake had split the fortress into two.

Weed had his subordinates withdraw behind the fortress.

“Great Disaster Nature Sculpting!”

Kwarururururung!

The ground shook so hard that they couldn't stand properly. Far away from the camels and horses, wagons had their wheels broken off. And the thick stone walls of Brunhaim Fortress were demolished. The towers containing the archers fell on the soldiers underneath.

Distant screams could be heard due to the power of Great Disaster Nature Sculpting! The reason he used this skill despite the large penalty was because he wanted a sure and quick win.

“Charge.”

Weed and the desert warriors riding the camels jumped over the broken wall. The slave soldiers followed behind without any armour but held swords. The Eluna soldiers failed to respond properly after the fortress was demolished.

“End of the Day!”

Weed’s skill swept through the knights.

“Black Knight’s Strike!”

No one dared take an attack from Weed’s sword. And a wide area skill.

The desert warriors also jumped in.

The army that came from the hot desert conquered Brunhaim Fortress.

“Owahhhh!”

“Attack. Kill everyone!”

The slave soldiers also furiously slashed at Eluna’s soldiers. They had experienced endless fear when facing the walls with just a bow! They didn’t dare complain to Weed and the desert warriors so they directed all their hate towards Eluna’s soldiers.

“Should we take any prisoners?”

Warrior-1 asked when he was certain of victory.

“No. We can’t forgive those who tried to strike against us. Burn the entire fortress.”

“... Really?”

“Yes.”

Weed’s subordinates completely burned down the fortress at his command.

-Infamy has increased by 48,921.

Charisma has increased by 27.

The title ‘Cruel and Diabolical Murderer’ has been acquired.

A brutal and violent war!

These actions normally wouldn’t be taken by humans. However, Weed thought that he shouldn’t act too moderately during this quest.

“I need to instil more fear in order for future battles to proceed smoothly.”

The residents had a different mindset in times of war. If they

didn't respect the desert warriors then they would revolt. The slaves soldiers also feared the Embinyu Church and didn't believe anyone could suppress them. Ruthless violence was the best solution to ensure people wouldn't revolt.

The slaves soldiers that witnessed the slaughter froze. And it actually caused adverse effects!

“How splendid.”

“The ideal military tyrant.”

“Yes, he is obviously the new incarnation of Embinyu. He can create a fascinating environment.”

The Embinyu fanatics in the ruins of Brunhaim rejoiced!

This influenced the slave soldiers and they were more aggressive during the next battle. After winning several battles, the forced recruitment increased the number of slave soldiers to 200,000. The victories in the siege warfare caused fear of Weed and his troops to spread deep into the continent.

The only person who could stop Weed's ruthless activities was Seo-yoon. She was the one in charge of Weed's military funding and other related matters.

“...Yes? We can do that.”

Unbelievable money transactions between parents, siblings and children! But Weed knew what Seo-yoon had done in the desert so he easily allowed her.

‘She will take care of it well. Anyway, I can always gain more money.’

He just needed to plunder some goods!

Seo-yoon paid money to the merchants and provided the necessary materials to the army. These were times of war so the merchants were blinded by money.

“Thank you for this transaction. Is there anything else?”

After a few successful transactions, Seo-yoon made a special order.

“...Can you do it?”

“It is difficult to get past the magician’s tower but if we used the Royal Teleport Gate then it can be easily obtained. Yes? If we obtain it early will you give us more money? Aigoo, I’m so thankful! I will use any method.”

And the merchants obtained 300 elephants.

So far, Weed’s army consisted of the desert warriors and the slave soldiers. In addition to planting fear in the enemies, Seo-yoon organized an elephant combat troops.



The Haven Empire that had repelled the Allied Forces!

Moros Castle was an important place in the Central Continent. It was a historically significant commercial city that traded in high end furniture, velvet and spices.

The Haven Empire had incorporated it after conquering the Britten Alliance Kingdom and the entire area had high taxes.

Lord Ropno!

“I did well to bribe the Hermes Guild to allow me to rule this place. I’ve collected a huge amount of money due to the raised taxes while ruling this city.”

The Lord felt proud as he looked out the window and enjoyed the sight of the blue sky and buildings spread before him.

“Ruoni, those houses over there... When did it change to a wasteland?”

“Well, I’m not sure.”

“It is probably just my mistake.”

“Perhaps you’re right. It is a quiet residential area, not a wasteland.”

They both started laughing at the mistake. The Lord remembered every inch of this city. But on this hot summer day, the houses on the outskirts seemed to melt away like ice cream.

“What is this? The luxury residential buildings are clearly smaller. Eh? Now they’ve completely disappeared.”

“What is going on? The small houses at the boundaries has disappeared and the city shrank! This is nonsense.”

Ropno evaluated the number of inhabitants using the mode reserved for lords. But he only confirmed that there were 30,000 less people than yesterday.

“How did this happen? It is like a plague.”

It was a situation that caused his spirit to go crazy! The change soon moved from the residential to commercial area of Moros Castle. The thriving business district noticeably shrank.

There was a reduction in trade goods, the residents’ attire worsened and the streets became emptier. The merchants with

protruding stomachs turned thin like they had dried out. Roadside stalls closed and the buildings disappeared.

The commercial district closed and the city literally melted away. The places where roads and buildings were became covered with overgrown weeds and the surrounding area became wastelands and forests.

“What is happening?”

“What is this?”

The Hermes Guild users and regular users who belatedly discovered this were confused. There were many merchants who came to Moros Castle despite the high taxes.

In addition, hundreds of people waiting in front of the gates thought it was absurd as they saw the disappearing city!

“Well, this is a grand sight.”

“Indeed. I’ve never seen anything like this.”

Anyway, it is someone else’s business so it is fun to watch. The users still remained in the same spot as only the buildings and residents disappeared. It was a weird experience for them to experience buildings or goods they were buying suddenly melt away.

The city disappeared until only the users were left. The walls of Moros Castle gradually faded away until only the land remained. Moros Castle and the commercial district changed to fields and forests.

At almost the same time, wooden buildings appeared at the nearby river. Small boats floating leisurely and fishermen NPCs were there.

The Hermes Guild ran up to them.

“Excuse me, I wanted to ask you something.”

“What? I’ve been here a couple of years and it is amazing that so many people suddenly showed up.”

“Eh?”

“Yes, where did you come from? The north or the south?”

The Hermes Guild felt frustration at the fisherman who was placing bait on the end of his fishing line.

“We were here in Moros Castle.”

“Moros Castle? I’ve never heard of that name in this area.”

“It was built on that wide piece of land just 10 minutes ago.”

“Hey, stop joking. That is a wasteland. Furthermore, doesn’t my son run there every day? He even tried to grow a little garden there two years ago but there was too much gravel and he had to give up.”

The Hermes Guild couldn’t understand what the fisherman was talking about. They had quite a bit of knowledge from completing multiple quests in Royal Road. However, it was impossible for their minds to understand an impossible event like a large city disappearing.

The general users that arrived at the fishermen also pricked their ears. The disappearance of Moros Castle had stimulated their curiosity.

Then one member of the Hermes Guild, a scrawny thief user rolled his eyes and asked.

“Then Moros Castle isn’t here?”

“Of course not. The closest place is Hepen Castle.”

Hepen Castle was a former territory of the Britten Alliance Kingdom and also belonged to the Hermes Guild. Well, it was fortunate that the fisherman confirmed that place was safe.

“Moros Castle suddenly disappearing... No, doesn't those words mean it was never here in the first place? And no one has heard of it.”

“Yes, that's right.”

“I've lived here for a long time fishing.”

“I've been here since I was 7 years ago and it has been 30 years since then. I will spend the rest of my life here fishing. My wife weaves the nets.”

They couldn't understand the incident of Moros Castle disappearing without a trace from the continent. But the Hermes Guild were in a position where they needed to understand.

“Why isn't a city built here? It looks like a pretty spacious land.”

“Well, that... I heard from a traveller that Heltun Castle with many residents used to exist there.”

Before the Britten Alliance Kingdom occupied the area, Heltun Castle used to be ruled by the Eluna Kingdom.

“After the invasion of the desert tribes, not one cornerstone of Heltun Castle was left behind.”

“Invasion?”

“Yes. They conveyed a large disaster. The Eluna Kingdom couldn’t stop them. The Fire Demon Weed took everything away.”

Weed!

That name made all the changes on the Versailles Continent understandable. Among the users present, some of them found a reason for the situation.

“Is this associated with the desert cities suddenly springing up in the south?”

“I think that fits. There is an increasing number of cities and Moros Castle disappeared.”

“No, what type of quest would involve this type of magic?”

“I don’t know. Anyway, Moros Castle has perished.”

“I feel the same.”

The Hermes Guild members who identified the situation felt like fainting.

Moros Castle had great commercial value and was also a transportation hub. Losing Moros Castle would cause a huge setback to the activities of Hepen Castle and Madhed River. There

were many monsters rampaging around the area. If there wasn't an army stationed at Moros Castle to subjugate them then it would be a huge problem.

“Then let's head towards Hepen Castle first to think up some countermeasures. If they give us support then we can reconstruct Moros Castle.”

“Get people ready to leave in 30 minutes.”

Then the Hermes Guild was interrupted by the fisherman.

“The closest place is Pridal Castle.”

“Huh? Hepen Castle is closer. Pridal Castle is quite far away. It would take roughly 2 hours riding horses.”

“Didn't you say earlier than Hepen Castle was closest?”

The fisherman scratched his head.

“When did I say that? I don't remember. This is the first time I've heard the name Hepen.”

The face of the Hermes Guild members paled.

And people started experiencing the phenomenon of Hepen

Castle disappearing like a mirage.

Chapter 7: War In The Past

Changing history!

The bulletin boards heated up as Weed's adventures made significant changes on the Versailles Continent.

-6 castles and 12 cities are already gone.

-Yikes, that is awesome.

-4 castles vanished without a trace and 2 cities were damaged.

-The Fire Demon Weed fighting!

-But is the Weed who came out from the desert the same Weed as the God of War?

-Fits. It fits. Who else would do something like this?

-This isn't the normal Weed that people encountered. It is rumoured that he had the personality from Continent of Magic.

-I'd like to be Weed's friend.

-I'm okay with being Weed's subordinate. I want to accompany

him.

-But hasn't the 'Savage Weed' been a hot topic in the history books lately? There is a massacre everywhere he goes.... Isn't Weed-nim being a bit too excessive?

-There is a reason. If you don't know exactly what that is then you shouldn't criticize him.

-They probably deserve to die.

-Why should we always live as good people? So we should just sit back and be subservient when the Hermes Guild attacks?

-You don't know what type of quests he needs to do in the desert. I can understand the difference between a race and a tribe.

An argument was taking place on the bulletin boards. There was resentment from the users experiencing discomfort when the city or castle disappeared.

-Weed. I had a good home but it just flew away like dust. What should I do know?

-Then just move to Morata.

-This is a good opportunity for migration.

-To the north!

There were users who liked Weed's adventures and those who were tired of the evil actions from the Hermes Guild. Their unconditional defense against the malicious comments!

Even the users in the Central Continent were struggling. Once the Haven Empire waged war, cities in a disadvantageous situation became broke.

-I was trying to trade in Hepen Castle in vain. It is completely annoying. Isn't it common sense to avoid damage to innocent people like me?

-Are these taxes diligently funding the Hermes Guild's war?

-Squabbling over money when you don't know the really important matters. If you lost money then come to Vent Castle. Find Gamong.

-The legendary merchant of the north Gamong!

-Oh, Gamong-nim has appeared.

And an important post was also registered.

Title: I know what Weed's adventure is.

Many people must be curious about Weed's adventures!

Huhuhu, I came to the right answer with my superior reasoning power.

Just for your information, I ranked 1st in my country. My mother boasted about me every day to my relatives and neighbours.

First of all, let's gather the clues.

Due to Weed's adventure, some cities are built in the desert while other cities are eliminated. And all of a sudden, Weed is recorded in the history books as an old man.

A dream that everyone wants to fulfil!

Becoming a great hero of the Versailles Continent and building up achievements in the past to become a legendary hero.

No one has met Weed and the residents talking about him act like it is the story of an old man.

There is no choice but to think these changes are being made a long time ago.

In other words, Weed isn't on the current Versailles Continent but is adventuring in the past.

If we consider the sudden appearance of the desert tribes in the north in a similar context then it makes sense.

Ah, I know a lot of people won't believe this.

People based their ideas on the knowledge that they know.

But the thing I'm talking about doesn't make sense.

Even if the Versailles Continent did exist in the past, it is common sense that it was just created to form the elaborate Versailles Continent now.

The vast amounts of data and resources used to support 1 person is economically absurd.

But this is Royal Road.

Based on the numerous legends and adventures available, I believe that it is possible despite the risk. Unicorn Corporation's technology is beyond imagination.

Weed's success will probably make the warring period fluctuate!

And for some reason, he is much stronger than we know. Based on the stores, he successfully hunted in the desert and led his men into the Central Continent to fight wars. Even the armed players who reached a high level wouldn't dare do something like this.

There is no doubt that he is the middle of an important quest.

The degree of difficulty for this quest is far higher than anything else.

This is just my guess but I'm sure it will fit perfectly.

Weed returned to the past to change history and this will 100% affect the current world.

Weed will destroy cities and build more cities.

This is the interesting part.

Piling up many achievements over hundreds of years, I can't imagine how it will change our current world.

It is like someone's wildest dreams but we are watching the results of Weed's actions.

How much fun is this?

He has become an enormous conqueror that is changing history.

Royal Road is enormous and fun.

My dream is to get a job at Unicorn Corporation in the investment or law areas.

It is okay if Unicorn Corporation realizes my brilliant mind and fine insight.

Now, have you listened to my explanation well?

You know where to ask if you have any questions. You are welcome to point out any doubting areas. Of course, I am certain of my claims.

And there were 3,900 ensuing comments.

-Go and eat rice.

-Do you have any friends?

-It is time to eat. Nurse, this is patient #205!

-I have to admire your brilliant mind. I'm in 5th grade of elementary school, please help me with my homework.

Although the comments were full of malicious remarks about the contents of the article, but most were sympathetic. In fact, by this time users already had a hunch about how Weed's quest was progressing.

They couldn't imagine that he was adventuring in the past of the Versailles Continent but they expected that he was experiencing a historic battle during the quest. But they only felt envy!

They also wanted to experience an adventure like Weed's in Royal Road. They felt a tightness in their chest every time they watched it on television. Stories about adventures that emerged from the broadcasting stations reached a point where it became unbearable.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"Catch him. Earlier this week, he appeared and submitted his resignation!"

"Other stations have doubled their unconditional agreements! Alert people so that they can alert CTS Media conglomerate."

"You're not sure about the specifics? That is the important part! Have you been working in television for only one or two days? If the ratings climb then shouldn't you quickly catch a bullet taxi towards the advertisers?"

KMC Media was like a profession like a professional gaming television program for Royal Road but it was under a larger conglomerate.

Apart from Royal Road, they also aired leisure, lifestyle, sports, adventure, business, etc. Renowned investment experts gave

advice about commercials, sportsmen and unique adventures. Events like swimmers crossing a sea were also broadcasted.

But the company had the foresight to start broadcasting Royal Road early and their revenue and barrage of advertisements increased. It was beneficial for broadcasters of Royal Road to promote cutting edge and expensive premium products. If the image of the entire group was positive then they would use the capital to form new stations in other countries.

The amazing thing was that famous foreign broadcasters such as BBA, Wolf, ABCD also participated. Royal Road was a hot craze in foreign countries.

When there was a long holiday season in Europe, people would connect to enjoy a cool wind or a resort. Foreigners also didn't have to care about their appearance as they could select different species such as dark elf, orc, goblin, etc.

Therefore the representatives from each station resided in front of Lee Hyun's house in order to form a contract! It had been a long time since the exploration of Roderick's Labyrinth.

“Ahem, I'm glad to see you again.”

“Director Hyun-nim seems to have no work these days.”

“The adventure program being broadcasted on the weekdays is a success so I don't need to directly handle it.”

“Haven’t your audience ratings been declining this year?”

“No!”

The station officials growled at each other. They had respect for other broadcasters in media reports but in this situation, they were competitors for the contract.

‘I’ve come prepared.’

‘I will set aside a separate option for advertising costs. Do I need to tell the Head Director if he raises it more?’

The competition between broadcasting stations was positive for Lee Hyun. In the past, he had gone directly to the stations to sign the contracts but now the atmosphere had heated up. This meant he had the upper hand!

The station officials stood outside his gate in the hot sun.

“By the way, today is going to be....”

“These days he hasn’t left the house at all.”

“Isn’t this evidence that his task is important? Today rumours about a tyrant Weed were spreading in Royal Road.”

If Lee Hyun entered the capsule then they would be forced to wait for hours in vain.

‘If only they ring the doorbell.’

‘I just want to go somewhere with a cool drink. If I don’t want here until evening then I’ll need to work late. My wife wasn’t thinking about this type of work when she was delighted about my promotion to director.’

‘Our broadcasting station has prepared good terms in the contract. If we sell it to overseas broadcasters then the royalty income alone....’

‘We will need him later on in Royal Road.’

It was around noon.

Lee Hyun opened the door and smiled warmly. This expression was joyful at the thought of more money incoming!

“Eh, did you come to our house for some reason?”

“Aigoo, hello. The previous audience ratings turned out well. I am ashamed to come here empty handed to congratulate you but...”

“I am Director Kang.”

“This face is a little old so I wanted to come in and share some stories. This is a new television with a 3 star rating in order to sure your time isn’t inconvenienced. I hope that you can watch our broadcasts in comfort.”

“No, that isn’t necessary.”

“It is the energy saving model.”

“Then I will accept your sincerity.”

Lee Hyun received a few presents from the station officials.

They had experience so a long talk wasn’t necessary after the flattering words.

The station officials felt more at ease after Lee Hyun received the gifts. In the meantime, they had been very honest about their bribes. If he received it then he was more favourable to their ideas. The difference in the sales amount would depend on the market!

Lee Hyun brought them into his house and offered coffee mix and barley tea.

“Your adventure these days...”

The current director of CTS Media tried to talk about the specifics.

“Wait a moment. I rarely have guests so I want to cook you a meal.”

“R-really?”

The station officials were somewhat surprised. Lee Hyun was widely known among the broadcasting stations for his stingy personality. They had been prepared for just a quick cup of coffee and ate breakfast separately beforehand.

‘I must be instant noodles.’

‘Did he boil some jjapegetti?’

Lee Hyun said before going out to his yard.

“This will take a bit of time. I need to obtain the ingredients.”

“Oh, of course we will wait.”

There was some noise in the yard before it became quiet. They had seen some dogs barking when they entered the house.

The silence of the dogs!

Soon there was the sound of Lee Hyun turning on a machine and the chickens making noise. Lee Hyun then entered the kitchen and started chopping and cooking. He used plenty of potatoes and vegetables and created spicy, braised chicken for the guests.

“Perhaps he...”

“Perhaps he used the chicken in the yard for the meal.”

“.....”

The station officials felt like Lee Hyun was quite different from normal. Their expectations started to grow.

‘He is cooking for us which is different from his usual nature. Perhaps his adventure this time is a real hit.’

‘There is something. The analysis from our station has already figured out that this quest doesn’t have a normal scale of difficulty. It might be on a completely different level.’

‘This case must be quite big.’

Cooking wasn’t his usual sentiment so their expectations had no choice but to swell up. And perfectly cooked chicken!

“Tasty.”

“This is the first time I’ve tasted such a delicious chicken dish.”

The station officials said with a thumbs up. It wasn’t complete flattery as it really did have a sweet taste. It wasn’t wrong to say that Lee Hyun was a universal worker. The station officials ate 10 pieces of chicken with the dipping sauce, leaving only the bones behind.

“Then let’s talk about my adventure.”

Lee Hyun started to talk first.

He judged that it was time to start broadcasting. He had already reached the peak of the secret sculpting technique quests and the Hermes Guild couldn’t interfere anymore.

Furthermore, he could use the old contents of the adventure to hype the viewers. The result would be known through rumours on the Versailles Continent so he didn’t see any damages with forming a contract with the broadcasting stations.

“My adventure now is related to the final secret sculpting technique.”

“Final secret technique?”

“There is such a thing?”

The words were unfamiliar to the broadcasters. The director of KMC Media could figure out the details at a glance.

“The final secret technique exists but you have to gather all the profession related secret techniques first.”

“That’s right.”

“Then the sculpting secret techniques that you’ve collected...”

“All of them.”

“.....”

It was difficult to obtain even one secret technique yet he collected the all! Weed was indeed worthy of admiration!

‘A scoop!’

‘I need to tell it!’

‘I have to return to the station earlier than these guys.’

But right now, it was more important to sign a contract with Lee Hyun than to leave first. They also couldn’t send a text with their phones.

Lee Hyun was young but still an important person. If they didn't use manners while conversing then he might become annoyed!

“First of all, the adventure in Roderick's Labyrinth was also related to the final sculpting secret technique. It is complicated so I can only briefly explain the contents of the quest... It is an adventure filled with love, dreams and courage with the backdrop of the vast Versailles Continent.”

“....”

The position of the station officials was that such things didn't matter.

‘I need to accept it unconditionally.’

‘I will resign if I can't sign a contract with him.’

‘I'll receive a punishment from the executive personnel. Manager Noh is already aiming for my spot.’

All the broadcasting stations would bend over backwards to make him accept. Weed's adventures were already determined to be a huge draw so they had no hesitation.

However, they still needed to ask the important questions.

“The quest. Have you already completed it?”

“It is still in progress. Such things such as the recent desert cities being built and the vanishing cities are the aftermath of this quest. It is my fault since the sacrifices required for the final secret technique quest is so enormous. Hum hum.”

“Wow....”

The station officials were glad. It would be more exciting if he hadn't finished the quest yet. A little bit of fun would drop if they knew the ending of a novel or movie beforehand.

The stations could do a more realistic relay and the viewers would be breathless. And the natural of the adventure meant it was risky but a real jackpot might occur in the future.

“Can you tell me about the skill for the final secret sculpting technique?”

“I can't disclose that yet.”

“We expected it to be difficult but what is the difficulty level of the quest?”

“Well, it is quite hard to explain. But if I had to say a little bit, it involves the Embinyu Church and a Chaos Dragon?”

“Heok!”

They were completely shocked!

Weed the God of War doing the final secret sculpting technique quest, facing the Embinyu Church and a Chaos Dragon. The title alone was enough and there would be no need for further promotion.

‘This...’

‘I absolutely have to broadcast it.’

‘I’ll make him sign a contract!’

The station officials were determined after seeing the size of the contract.

They came here expecting Weed’s adventure to have a S class difficulty or to have it involve saving the continent. The contract agreement needed to consider the progress of the quest and set a specific schedule. Of course, Weed’s adventure was the highest priority so other programs would be pushed to the side.

“Here, this is a golf membership.”

“I’ll send you some 100 year old ginseng. It is really rare.”

“Tell me if you need home appliances like a sofa or sink.”

The bribes started again!

They had to furiously come up with things since this happened. There were several broadcasting stations but things like an exclusive interview would make a huge difference.

“These type of things... Please make sure to place a warranty. And I’ll ask for a natural leather couch. And doesn’t a sink installation require you knowing the exact measurements?”

Lee Hyun steadily received the bribes.

Recently, there was a trend for bribery to reduce or disappear. But it was a developed tradition in the east as an act of courtesy from generation to generation.

While everyone was acting especially sociable today, Director Kang of KMC Media finally pulled out his card.

“Take this paper.”

“What is it?”

“Land.”

“.....!”

“This land belongs to an area planned for redevelopment. Hum hum, the owner can legally be changed and you can receive a monthly rent. Of course, you can gain significant development profits later.”

The station knew in advance that this quest was extraordinary and secretly prepared this.

Snap!

Lee Hyun grabbed Director Kang’s hand.

“As expected from KMS Media.”

“Hehehe, yes!”

A huge response! And Lee Hyun made a suggestion at the front door when the station officials were about to leave.

“I ate well.”

“You’re welcome. Indigenous chickens and 5 bottles of cider. 45,000 won.”

“....”



Hosung Group’s financial difficulties.

The creditors judged that it couldn’t be revived.

Hosung’s e-credit rating drop. Corporate bonds issued have failed.

Hosung group will collapse soon.

These were the recent headlines over the last month! Hosung Group focused on repaying their debt but it was difficult was an expiry date on their cash affiliates.

The real estate and apartments were sold at a large downturn. Hosung Group’s major affiliates were emerging in Eastern Europe or developing countries such as India and Africa. The foreign buyers involved in Hosung Group delayed their payments so their financial difficulties deepened even further!

The reports of Hosung’s critical situation in the television and newspapers meant there was nowhere to borrow money. In order to strength their competitiveness in political circles, they needed to actively restructure.

In the end, the creditor’s meeting decided that they should

restructure and sell their flagship electronics company. Chairman Jeong Deuk-soo took responsibility from the group and decided to resign from a direct management position.

“Phew.”

Bart was sitting down at a fountain in Royal Road.

“Life is free.”

As the chairman of a huge company, he always had urgent appointments and needed to worry about money. But his countless friends and contacts made it difficult for the company to allow him to retire. But the current situation meant he could resign.

Once he returned to his spacious mansion with a relaxed mind, he logged into Royal Road.

“We should eat pomegranates. Gamong is selling it at a discount.

“Is that so? I ate the fruits from Mapan and they were delicious. Mapan’s prices are a bit expensive but the quality means it is worth it.”

The new users were running about.

Merchant carriages had colourful decorations and the warriors took pride in their bulging muscles. Smiles didn’t leave the faces of

users as they stared at their flashing weapons. It was the look of satisfaction when seeing new weapons bought or forged by blacksmiths! Many users also walked by with old and wrinkled leather armour. Morata was still receiving an influx of new users so it was common to see novices.

And there were the avians who build apartments in trees like they were nests. Even if they didn't purchase separate houses, it was easy to gather small branches to build a residence. The dignified eagle types or sleepy looking owls walked around unabashedly.

The colour of the fur or bulk signified their level but they had a minimum of at least level 120. Baby birds that were just started to fly stayed with their family and were mainly in the form of small chickens or sparrows.

“Tweet. Tweet.”

“Piyak. Piyak!”

Small birds were floating around the fountain.

It was difficult to distinguish between the NPC and users of the avians but there were some significant differences. The avians were familiar with a collective lifestyle so they looked and acted together.

The avians increased the number of attractions in Morata.

The avians immediately joined the military! Once it became evening, the avians would soar around Lavias while doing their training drills. Hundreds of birds were freely doing a unique dance in the sky.

NPCs and users also came up with a dance choreography to match the flapping of the wings. Those who joined the dance would have their charm and fame increased. Every evening, the humans, elves and dwarves would join in the large spectacle.

“They truly seem happy.”

Bart felt a bit of weight in his chest lessen as he watched the users. He had lost the company he devoted his life to but it wasn't the end of his life. He had lost some property and needed to hand over his mansion but he still had enough money to live.

“This situation is like being able to have a 2nd life.”

Bart repaired his weapons and armour and tried to hunt. He was used to hunting in a party so he decided to seek a team at the nearby square.

“Weed-nim has destroyed the Fire Salamanders... It is really amazing, amazing.”

“Kyah! I hope Weed-nim finishes this quest quickly so he can return. Then we can have another festival.”

“He can also see how the Arpen Kingdom has developed.

Weed’s story was everywhere. The only worrisome thing about Bart living in Morata was Weed.

In the past, he once handed over money if Weed never met his daughter again. But now the situation had changed. His company had failed and Weed’s presence in Royal Road was like a sun in the sky. Bart was just a novice living in Morata.

‘I can never meet Weed here. I would be completely ashamed and embarrassed.’

Morata was a vast city so it wasn’t easy to meet King Weed. Bart was in a vaguely bittersweet mood after that.

“A truly free life... I never thought I would become like this.”

“Excuse me, where are you tired?”

A sweet looking young lady walked over to him.

“It is nothing.”

“If you’ve received a curse... Is there a place where you are injured?”

“I am normal. I appreciate the concern but I’m just going hunting.”

“If you are going hunting then I will give you a blessing. Protection of the Goddess!”

Protection of the Goddess was a skill only available for priests level 420! If he had this protection then it would be difficult to die in level 200 hunting grounds. It was the reason why senior priests had great respect and influence in the city.

“Heok, this...”

Bart was shocked to see that the defense of his armour had climbed by 5 times.

“This should last for a day. Have a nice day and be careful.”

“Wait a minute....” Can you perhaps tell me your name?”

“Irene.”

“Ah, this angel if called Irene.”

“You are praising me too much. Then I should go since there are visibly injured people over there.”

“Thank you.”

It was a great honour to see Irene who was famous in Morata. Bart sighed deeply as he watched her walk away.

“I wonder what my daughter is doing... I hope she is eating properly and isn't suffering. My heart won't feel at ease unless I know she has enough money.”

Chapter 8: Emergence Of A Tyrant

Weed's army had a series of winning streaks.

They smashed through any resistance in the small principalities. The cities that didn't surrender were looted or decimated by arson. The slave soldiers reached 200,000 people and the number was enough to fill the plains.

Funds looted from war torn castles or cities were used to improve the equipment of the soldiers. All the cities and villages that surrendered would rush to produce war equipment.

His story started to change and more weight was placed on the title of Great Emperor Weed.

"The weather is very nice. Show mercy to the family of those who enlist. But take all the gold."

"Yes, Great Emperor."

"In order to maintain the army, conscript one in every three houses. If they don't come voluntarily then cut their necks...no, sweep them all away."

"I will do as you command."

-Forced conscription of the masses.

There is a decline in the city's security and loyalty.

Economic activities and production has received a big setback and long term technological development will be reduced. People have reluctantly joined the military and there is resistance against the invaders. The residents perceive that you are more interested in war than a stable rule.

Conscripted soldiers who have their family killed will have a deep antipathy.

It is impossible to comfort them.

Weed's ruling policy wasn't far-sighted.

If he had enough time then he would invest in the city's development and plan a huge empire. However, he didn't have a lot of time to fight the Embinyu Church. Furthermore, in the future the Hermes Guild users would be raising their levels through hunting.

If Weed failed this quest then he would lose everything. And people who he could trust in this world was really rare. If he took too long for this quest then his Arpen Kingdom might be eaten.

“You can't drag this out. I've already entered the boiling water.”

It was a truly irreversible situation. Even though he took control of the territories, he couldn't worry about investing in development or internal affairs.

This was the only method in a time of war!

Weed just increased the forced conscription and looting. Flags representing the Red Knife Army were driven into the ground of the cities and villages that fell.

Once the troops reached 250,000 people, the elderly and young children under the age of 14 were allowed to go home.

“The king who rules this land has granted you mercy. Return home and live happily with your family.”

Of course, they would be naked and starving at home so there were some that had no interest in returning.

-After seeing the tremendous power of the army, the lord of Teitun Castle has surrendered out of cowardice.

He is sick from the infamy of the invaders and will give up his riches as long as he can live.

-All the nobles have fled from Erun Castle.

The soldiers have surrendered not long after.

“This is a place that contains the Embinyu Church. Youths of all ages who can hold a sword shall be taken into captivity. And light it on fire.”

Weed had a lot of fun leading the army in these warring times.

A conqueror. His unrefined wild ambitions could be released.

Soon his army reached a place with walls endlessly lined up to the left and right. There were parts that crumbled due to not being repaired but it wasn't a huge hindrance.

“This is the border of the Keltun Kingdom.”

Keltun Kingdom was a powerhouse in this warring period. The border had a large fortress to prevent invaders. Troops that tried to invade the borders of the Keltun Kingdom had no guarantee that they wouldn't be wiped out.

“Pass.”

The border defense of the Keltun Kingdom was also defeated! Weed's combat capability was something that the knights at the border couldn't face. His devastating skills caused even the knights to tremble with fear. Weed's desert warriors were also skilled in combat and broke through the enemy territory on their camels.

Weed's tactics when dealing with common soldiers were radical and destructive. The number of enemies continued to pile up as they aggressively invaded. He would seize prisoners with each landslide victory.

He also struck against the screaming Embinyu fanatics. The 250,000 military force consisting of warriors and surrendered soldiers had significant fighting power. Yet this constantly shrank to as low as 140,000 soldiers due to killing the Embinyu fanatics among the prisoners.

"The ruler of the vast sandy desert and caller of water, His Majesty Weed who is destroying this land, hooray!"

"Kilkilkil. For the glory of His Majesty!"

Some of the fanatics decided to follow Weed instead. Their aptitude was perfect for his current actions.

"Ignore the defense and break through. Fight until all the troops are dead.

Cut the throats of anyone who tries to run away without fighting." The enemies that encountered the elephant unit was panicked and terrified. The enemies were destroyed in one breath.

Ddirring!

-A war achievement has been gained.

Among the novice soldiers, 438 have been upgraded.

613 skilled infantry soldiers have been upgraded.

4 knights have been promoted to junior commanders.

The Embinyu members participating in the battle have woken up like cold water has been poured on them. They have realized that life is more important to them than religion! Of course, there were the fanatics who still worshipped Weed and threw themselves at the enemy soldiers.

“I believe in and will follow the Great Emperor until the end.”

“I will give my life.”

The loyalty of the soldiers towards Weed kept increasing.

-Loyalty of the army has risen by 3.

Your amazing charisma and combat ability has controlled the army!

“It is like I desired.”

Weed had become the undisputed lord in this time of war. Apart from the desert areas, he had seized numerous principalities, the Dagan Kingdom and the Eluna Kingdom.

His army had overwhelming power and he didn't pay attention to things like people, goods and internal affairs. It soon created a spectacle where carriages stretched out for thousands of kilometres.

“The Keltun Kingdom contains believers of the Embinyu Church so they are our enemy. It can't be helped. We need to pass through here to reach the Mapon Kingdom.”

They had 3 consecutive victories in the Keltun Kingdom. They passed through the remote regional knights and nobles as they headed towards the centre.

By the time they reached the Nomega Plains, an army consisting of 50,000 soldiers and 70,000 elite knights appeared.

“Valles Knight. The heads of the barbarians are rotten. Don't show them any weakness.”

A chivalrous knight of the Kallamore Kingdom decided to challenge the representative of Weed's army.

“I will be grateful if you voluntarily let me through.”

Weed shrugged and came forward.

He easily settled the battle without much force exerted. The level of the knights and magicians in this warring period was very high but Weed was like the sky to them.

“Brilliant. This great swordsmanship... I’m honoured to be defeated by you. Kill me.”

“Your age is still young. It would be a waste if a precious talent like you died in a place like this. Would you like to follow me?”

He gave proposals to decent knights.

“I have pledged my allegiance to the royal family of the Keltun Kingdom. How can my honour be satisfied if I follow the leader of the barbarians?”

“If you follow me then you can obtain as much gold and jewels as you want.”

“Right now the momentum is in your favour. But once you are defeated, your troops will be scattered and you will have a miserable death in the wilderness.

Your skeleton will start rotting to reflect your true appearance.”

“Your words are severe.”

“There is still more that I want to say. Your ugly...”

Slice!

“Keeook!”

But not all the knights were so foolishly honest.

“If you follow me then I will show you the true meaning of the sword. And I will conquer the continent.”

“A knight always has dreams to advance in the wider world. If you spare my life then I will swear my allegiance to you.”

The knights who faced Weed sometimes became his subordinates. Other nobles surrendered and their subordinates became his.

“I want to follow King Weed-nim.”

“I eagerly waited for this day to come. It is an honour to meet you. I will give the allegiance of generations of my family.”

Weed saw the eyes of the nobles. They gave the impression of cunning fellows.

“Good. If you sincerely follow me then I will give you a large

number of slaves and land.”

“Thank you, Your Majesty.”

“But have you come empty handed?”

He didn't trust the forces of the nobles so he placed them at the vanguard. In the occupied territories, he placed some desert warriors as necessary to manage the slave soldiers. Some kingdoms would try to recapture the conquered territories so he needed to leave a minimal force behind. They were commanded to burn the city if the enemy invaded!

The desert warriors took the lead in real battles but the slave soldiers also played an active role. They continued conscription every time a battle was won so the army continued to be filled up.

The desert warriors were hard to replace if they died but it was easy to supplement the ordinary soldiers. The ruthless conscription kept the quality and quantity of the troops constant.

“The Keltun Kingdom is known for its chivalry so the Embinyu Church hasn't spread too much. But it will later become the Kallamore Kingdom that is incorporated into the Haven Empire.”

Weed thought about the upcoming future.

By the end of this warring period, the Keltun Kingdom would become the Kallamore Empire. It was once a proud empire but

eventually declined to a kingdom until it was eaten by the Haven Empire.

However, the Embinyu fanatics would spring up in devastated cities of the Keltun Kingdom. Rebels would appear in the current Kallamore area of the Haven Empire and public security would worsen.

“The Mapon Kingdom is also integrated into the Haven Empire in the future.”

Weed’s thoughts were busy rolling around his head. His brain tried to make excuses for his bad actions!

“A king should be free and strong. I don’t need to worry about eyes gazing from the outside. Or personal ill feelings. The Mapon Kingdom and Beiner Kingdom will be completely destroyed!”

A declaration was made against the two kingdoms! There was no need to invade every city but they set fire and took prisoners of war along the way. The type of behaviour from Weed would greatly reduce the population of the Haven Empire in the future.

“Move diligently. I need to complete my quest so my subordinates can’t take too long.”

If he destroyed everything then the existence of the Haven Kingdom itself would completely disappear from history.

Weed took the desert warriors and swept through Central Continent, changing only a short history of the Versailles Continent. The Mapon Kingdom would just rebuild and recover. Important moments in the entire history couldn't be reversed. Nevertheless, medium cities and monster habitats could fly away.

“I need to gain more power in this war!”

Bad things were highly addictive.

“Some cities have been surrounded by desert sand and disappeared without a trace, Emperor!”

“Huhuhu, I've cut the necks of more than 300 people.”

“Let's wage a bloody feast!”

As the looting and killings continued, the regular soldiers gradually became similar to the desert warriors.

Weed's sculptural lifeforms directly led 700 subordinates. However, the desert warriors he accepted later didn't have that degree of mental strength.

They became drunk on the brutal destruction and victories. They were constantly disciplined but they would plunge into insanity if Weed left them unchecked.

“If they don’t maintain the tension in battle then it would be hard to win the battles.”

Weed’s 20,000 desert warriors and the soldiers fought continuously with no breaks. They would become crazy enough to destroy and kill.

But the thing that Weed wanted right now was indiscriminate destruction!

“Mapon Kingdom, Beiner Kingdom. You can smash all of it.”



“There are troublesome variables in the military. If we stay silent...”

The leaders of the Hermes Guild held an emergency meeting.

“The Pisaro area in the south is experiencing a collapse in transportation, trade and taxes collected.”

“The population around the Herr River is shrinking and it is rapidly becoming a farmland. There will be some yields but it is half of the expected harvest. Maybe less.”

The matter of Weed destroying the cities on his adventure couldn’t be taken lightly. Some large cities had vanished or been

cut in half.

Weed burned the occupied cities but they would recover after a long history. Despite that, the deterioration still caused enormous damages. They suffered significant economic harm and it also caused inner agitation.

The lords had control of the cities they conquered in the war. They invested a lot in urban development so this caused unprecedented damage. The leaders of the Hermes Guild profited from the vineyards and silver handed over by the lords so they couldn't do nothing in this situation.

It became troublesome as Weed moved closer towards the capital of the Haven Empire.

“Cologne hasn't been damaged yet. There is the training centre for the heavy cavalry there.”

“Who doesn't know that? The problem is that we can't do anything!”

Weed's quest had forced the Hermes Guild's hand. According to information obtained from broadcasting station officials, he was currently adventuring in the past so they couldn't stop him.

“What about the matter of the Allied Forces?”

“We are continuing to defeat them. They will not recover.”

The main army of the Haven Empire cornered the Allied Forces and didn't allow them any room to regroup. The commanders of each unit, including Bardray, performed well above expectations.

Now they headed towards the elf forests and barbarian areas in order to unify the continent. But their performance there was surprisingly bad.

The elves were like ghosts in the forests but the infantry used their broad shields to block the arrows and advance. The elves knew the entire forest so they formed a tight encirclement around the army. Not long after, a large number of elves arrived for a final, decisive battle and managed to win.

Humans needed to obtain food and security to expand their population. In the case of the orcs, they had no criteria to expand their family.

A few injured orcs would enter the mountains and an orc castle would appear there 1 month later. Gifted hunters would be quickly upgraded to warriors or orc fighters. The orcs lived in a harsh environment so they become more powerful but there was also the risk of being wiped out.

However, the elves had a slow birth rate. They were proficient in magic and spirits and promoted the growth of plants and water purification rather than combat. Of course, they had outstanding archery, agility and magic so many users selected the elf race. Many people enjoyed the advantages of the race.

The elves and users didn't cooperate to fight for the forest. Building kingdoms were human like activities so they hadn't been interested in the Hermes Guild's attempt to conquer the continent.

Some users who left the forest early had been lured by the prestigious guilds. Paradoxically, the Hermes Guild was the one with the most elf users.

“There might be some damages but the most important part of the war still remains. After occupying the Central Continent and getting rid of the Embinyu Church, Bardray will lead troops directly north.”

There was no more need for a war against the Allied Forces. The cavalry dispatched overwhelmed the military fortresses and weak cities. The Haven Empire was gaining a vast amount of territory and residents on a daily basis. They would demolish the Embinyu Church after the completion of their empire.

“There is no tolerance. This was their plan from the very beginning and then they would destroy the north so badly that people couldn't live there again. The necromancers and warlocks will plant a strong curse throughout the entire region.”

The Hermes Guild planned to ravage the north! They thought it was impossible for the Arpen Kingdom that hadn't grown properly to resist the full economic and military power of the Central Continent.



-Weed's adventure, KMC Media will start broadcasting it today.

-CTS Media, this time Weed's adventures will be shown live!

-LK Games has prepared an exclusive interview. Weed in the era of war!

-The broadcasting stations dedicateing 24 hours a day to Weed's adventure!

The Royal Road stations started advertising about the live broadcast. All the stations were only showing one adventure. It might be a risk for someone else's adventure but it was natural when the person was Weed.

-I can't wait to see what he does next. I've been waiting for this.

-Life is fun.

-I can always laugh when seeing Weed.

The viewers already had an explosive reaction. The stations had already consulted in advance with the senior officials.

"Should it be just a few hours or is it worth the risk to broadcast

Weed's adventure all in one day?"

"I think so as well. And put time for advertisers in the early morning reruns. So far more than 150 companies have contacted us for advertising space."

"There will be high ratings but I don't think we can ignore the demands of the advertisers."

"Based on the reports from the production PDs, there isn't even one scene from the video that can be missed."

"The growth in the desert quest. There is a sense of urgency flowing throughout the quest that doesn't need any editing to be shown."

The stations talked about dividing up Weed's adventure. They decided on a set amount to be shown every day for five days.

The broadcasting stations agreed not to pre-disclose any scenes in the promotions and trailers. In particular, the final secret sculpting technique quest. This was a very sensitive issue so it would be great if they used it for publicity.

But they would start airing from noon so they decided not to announce it to viewers. The stations wanted to hear the stories of how thrilling and interested it was to see on television. Viewers could fall into Weed's adventures throughout the five days.



The Death Knight Van Hawk and Vampire Lord Torido!

Immediately after Weed and Seo-yoon left for the warring period.

“Hrmm, I don’t feel Master’s soul all of a sudden.”

“Even the smell of blood has gone away.”

“Was he swept away by the sea?”

They searched around the area where Weed disappeared at sea and couldn’t find him.

In fact, they usually accompanied their master on quests and hunts so they didn’t necessarily want to see him. And after staying several days at the beach, Torido rose to his feet first.

“I am going to move around the world. I will go and meet beautiful girls.”

Van Hawk also wanted to travel. He had lost his freedom after becoming a Death Knight.

Barkhan ordered him to lead an army of darkness and Weed was

awful.

“Master, I miss the Kallamore Kingdom. Should I travel there?”

“You have already left home.”

“I feel some nostalgia. In the past, I had sworn my allegiance to the Kallamore Kingdom so I want to see if it is doing well.”

“You are a Death Knight.”

“I will never ask for another favour. Only once....”

“Hunting!”

“I will return as quickly as possible....”

“Hunting!”

Van Hawk’s opinion was that his Master was wicked and didn’t respect him at all!

In fact, Weed knew that the Kallamore Kingdom had been taken over by the Haven Empire so he was worried about Van Hawk causing trouble.

Van Hawk now used a ghost horse to move towards the desired

Kallamore Kingdom. A Death Knight moving in daylight was a great attraction. Sometimes he would cut people lightly as he moved!

“...This isn’t your place.”

Van Hawk felt the energy of darkness and death as he travelled and boss level monsters and ghosts of knights appeared.

“If you want to pass by then you need to defeat me.”

“Knights who have lost their lives, you have existed in this place for a long time. I look forward to facing you with my sword. This is the wish of a dead man. ”

He won almost daily!

As Van Hawk kept winning, he encountered stronger enemies that he defeated. He waged fights against the best boss class monsters and knights and won.

Van Hawk was made of dark energy so he would lose his body if he lost. But right now, dark energy was flowing on the Versailles Continent.

The number of necromancers on the battlefield increased. The priest of the Embinyu Church used the powers of darkness so the dark energy flowed everywhere.

Van Hawk absorbed the dark energy as he travelled to the Kallamore Kingdom.

“Um, everything has completely changed.”

He didn't see any signs of the magnificent cities and castles that used to belong to the Kallamore Kingdom. The flags of the Haven Empire were inserted and only traces of the destruction remained.

“Let's go someplace else.”

Van Hawk rode up the hill on his ghost horse towards a royal area.

This was a secret place present since the early days of the Kallamore Empire! The Imperial Tomb of Kallamore was hidden here. The Emperors of that era slept within along with numerous relics.

If Weed knew about this place then he would come with a shovel and sack!

“U-unbelievable....”

Van Hawk was lost for words as he arrived at the Royal Family's hill. The entrance to the secret tomb had already been dug up. The Hermes Guild had secretly excavated it.

“Even His Majesty....”

Van Hawk fell to his knees in front of the entrance. Emperor Theodore who he had sworn loyalty to had his grave robbed.

“It isn’t clear. I should check and see.”

Van Hawk entered the pit. He descended 10 metres underground where the brick walls were carved with the pattern of the Kallamore Kingdom. The Hermes Guild had shouted with joy when they dug up this land.

And the hidden entrance of the Tomb.

The Emperor who ruled this land with strict laws and knowledge, King Theodore sleeps here.

Intruders with respect for the Emperor, go back.

A monument had been erected but the doors were destroyed. Van Hawk entered with trembling steps.

It was a long and spacious place with stone pillars supporting the ceiling. However, the landscape that unfolded underneath was unpleasant.

Empty boxes were all over the place and there were only traces

left of the paintings and antiques that used to hang on the wall. The excavation team had packed all of it.

And the sarcophagus where Emperor Theodore was lying! He climbed up the 5 steps towards the altar the sarcophagus was lying on. The appearance of Emperor and Empress Theodore was carved on the altar. But the excavation team had brutally smashed open the sarcophagus and took everything buried with the Emperor.

The Emperor's crown, clothing, shoes and everything of value were grabbed. The only thing left was the unpresentable skeleton of Emperor Theodore.

“Ohh, my Emperor...”

Van Hawk was seriously angry. Barkhan had pulled him from the grave and forcibly made him a Death Knight but he still had his loyalty. All the memories of the past awoke feelings of anger like a human being.

“Kuwaaaaah!”

Van Hawk yelled and the Emperor's Tomb shook fiercely like there was an earthquake. And a horribly dark aura occurred!

Ddirring!

-An event has occurred.

Death Knight Van Hawk.

An army commander with the power of darkness!

During his life, he was well known as a knight of the Kallamore Kingdom.

A knight with sublime devotion, courage and honour.

Under the special favour of Emperor Theodore, he was an honourable subordinate with handsome looks and was popular with women.

However, he suffered a harsh fate after death. His undead master Barkhan planted a command for him to lead the army of darkness.

Van Hawk used a dark sword when commanding the army but lost his strength and became an ordinary Death Knight.

Now his deep despair and anger has caused the power of the abyss to wake up.

Event Limit: Van Hawk's growing anger.

An Abyss Knight has appeared on the continent that is in chaos.

Van Hawk flew out of the Emperor’s Tomb with a black aura pouring out from him. His level was already over 400 due to hunting with Weed but his deep anger and the forces of darkness caused a rapid growth.

The legendary undead, an Abyss Knight had been born.

The aura of darkness flowed from Van Hawk as he roared.

“All of my anger will sweep through this land!”

His shout echoed through the catacombs! Then the sarcophaguses around Van Hawk started to distort.

“This is...no!”

Forced summoning magic. Van Hawk released the powers of darkness in an attempt to resist. But the boss level Abyss Knight couldn’t resist the force.

He was summoned and saw a familiar person. Weed with no hair.



Weed had reached the temple of Atrock during the warring period.

In the process, he had wrecked many cities and villages. And he looted the gold and silver treasures in Atrock's Temple.

"God... You have already left this world so give a little bit of this to me!"

He had robbed several wealthy principalities and gained a literal pile of gold and treasures! The charitable Atrock decided to grant him a wish.

-...Yes, I can give you something.

Weed's actions on the continent couldn't exactly be considered charitable. He needed a good spirit to receive things in return!

"I need subordinates with invulnerability to defeat the Embinyu Church."

-The sacrifices required are too large.

Atrock politely refused.

Weed was undefeated as he swept through the Central Continent but he still needed to fight the Embinyu Church.

"Then what can you do?"

–You have come back in time so I can allow you to bring 2 people from your original time zone. They will fight with you until the end of your adventure.

“Is that so?”

Weed was quite satisfied.

Users from the original time zone would be a great help. Geomchi coming to the battlefield was beyond comparison.

But Weed thought he wouldn't follow loyally like the desert warriors that he trained. Furthermore, he was busy with the Master Quest and special training so Weed shouldn't interfere.

“It is too risky to bring sculptural lifeforms like Goldman and Yellowy.”

He could only bring 2 people and Pale and the others were on an adventure.

“Huhuhu, then bring Bardray here!”

Weed wanted to summon Bardray.

It was a despicable act but he had already been accused of cowardice and despicable behaviour.

“Life can only be lived once. Listening to curses everyday won’t permanently harm me.’

But Atrock rejected it.

-He is already my patron. He has an important mission so he can’t come here.

“.....”

Bardray contributed a lot to the gods so he had received all types of blessings and protection. This was the epitome of a wealthy son!

“Then I can only bring that fellow.”

Anyway, he needed someone for a long period of time so he decided to summon Van Hawk.

“Bring Van Hawk.”

-Understood.

Weed didn’t consider the situation at all and used Atrock to forcibly bring Van Hawk back to the warring period.

Book 36: The Strongest Warrior

Chapter 1: Commander Of The Dark Army, Van Hawk

Weed welcomed his subordinate.

“Hey Van Hawk. Have you been well in the meantime? Your bones seem to have become chubbier from your laziness.”

“Why did you call me here?”

Van Hawk answered coldly. His pride and fighting spirit had soared to the sky after becoming an Abyss Knight. Now his master could only be called a weakling!

“Of course I brought you back here to work. I’m busy so I’m going to leave you some chores.”

“Return me to where I was originally.”

“Aren’t your words a little short?”

“I won’t hit you for the sake of old times. But you could die if you refuse. Use this opportunity to release me.”

Weed sighed deeply. He hadn’t beaten his subordinates for a long time so they were rebelling.

“I haven’t been hitting you enough in the meantime. The area between your ribs have become very greasy.”

“.....”

“The quality will hurt when a parent doesn’t pay attention to them. I will properly manage my subordinate for three days and nights.”

“Don’t let such careless words come from your mouth. I am no longer the same as I am in the past.”

“Once I am your master, you must serve me for the rest of your life.”

“Shut up. Even my patience has limits. I will take out my sword and let you watch carefully.”

“Yes, I spoke too much.”

Weed reflected again. Dialog wasn’t necessary for persuasion. He would listen better from a beating.

Weed took out the horn obtained from the Fire Salamander King. It wasn’t a proper combat weapon but it was hard.

“I’ll talk later after hitting you a little bit.”

“I’m taking out my sword.”

Van Hawk kicked at the ground and sprang forward. An Abyss Knight was swinging at him. A ghastly sight!

Van Hawk’s eyes had a red sheen around them. Those whose levels were low would feel like they were weighed down by an evil spirit and die. The deep power of the Abyss came from every direction.

Van Hawk didn’t doubt his victory.

‘I shouldn’t kill him. But I will gain my freedom after achieving victory. In order to get revenge on the Haven Empire!’

Weed didn’t block Van Hawk’s sword. He just reached out.

“Absolute Defense!”

The effect wasn’t significant but his entire body became harder than steel.

-The enormous effect of the armour has reduced damage by 31.

The effect of the skill has been increased by 28%.

There will be a perfect repair after it is finished.

Health has decreased by 9,484.

Van Hawk's attack was among the strongest in the warrior class and had the capacity to shred fierce animals to pieces. But Weed who received the blessings of the gods, was the best warrior in the desert and had an influence on history managed to block it.

“You have indeed become strong. Your appearance has only changed a little bit so I didn't realize you had become an Abyss Knight.”

“How did you prevent my attack without being harmed?”

An Abyss Knight formed from rising from a deep despair so their fighting spirit could become broken if they were frustrated. If their willpower was low then it was common for them to be unable to move their body.

But Van Hawk felt atrophy after meeting Weed's eyes.

-You have met a strong man you can't go against.

The aura of darkness is warning you.

When facing a holy warrior, the blessed flesh will cause mental atrophy.

Fighting spirit has declined and all combat stats will decrease by 6%.

If this state fails to be released quickly then paralysis symptoms will occur.

“Why is this happening....?”

Van Hawk had become the legendary Abyss Knight of the undead but he was being topped by the human Weed.

Of course, that situation would change after he returned to his original body but for now it was a one-sided fight.

“A skeleton should be tight.”

Pabababak!

And the beating began. An Abyss Knight was being stepped on and punched with no mercy!

Weed clutched a horn in his right hand and skilfully used his hands to harden Van Hawk's bones.

“An Abyss Knight can endure for a long time. This is just a little taste.”

“This humiliation, I will absolutely never forget it!”

Van Hawk couldn't tolerate it and the summoning was cancelled. Weed just used mana to summon Van Hawk again. Although the summoning had been cancelled, his body was still present in this age.

“Taste my anger that is sleeping like an active volcano.”

“Did you know? My heart is right.”

And he was continuously hit and summoned again!

Hawk pulled his sword again with the intention of fighting but Weed treated him like a young child playing a joke. He didn't use any attacks skills but used his previous experience fighting against rare or special monsters to easily break the unique skills of an Abyss Knight.

The countless, dangerous combat experience during this final secret sculpting technique quest was an important asset! He had faced many knights so he was accustomed to Van Hawk's attacks.

“Well, I must admit it. You are stronger than me.”

Eventually Van Hawk's will broke because there was already a master/slave relationship.

“I can’t hear what you are saying.”

“I know that Master is strong so you can stop now.”

“There is a long way to go. I will let you feel the true taste of my hands. Isn’t this just like drinking a cool smoothie before entering a karaoke room?”

.....

“I am too sick. Gently....”

“Sick? This is medicine for a sick hawk. Now what areas are sick?”

“My whole body is aching. In particular, my flank is hurting.”

“That’s right. I’ve been beating that side a lot. Yet there seems to be no broken ribs.”

.....

“Master! You can look forward to my loyalty in the future.”

“You said such things in the past. Yes, you were always like that. You are just aiming at my back the entire time, waiting to betray

me.”

“Absolutely not!”

“No, that’s right.”

“What makes you so sure?”

“Originally the world is like that.”

.....

“Please spare me. I will give you absolute obedience.”

“You still have the strength to say that!”

He continued hitting the sore spots! It was a bizarre situation that showcased the worst aspects of human nature as well as their craftsmanship.

Thus Van Hawk returned to his position next to Weed. His recovery was much higher now that he was an Abyss Knight but he couldn’t last against Weed’s undivided attention.

The only consolation he felt was when he saw the roof of a nearby wrecked house.

The person sitting on the roof of the house with a pale complexion and black cloak was the Vampire Lord Torido. He had been dragged here before Van Hawk.



“Thank you for waiting. Weed the God of War, what adventure has he been on? The viewers’ curiosity will now be satisfied as the broadcast begins.”

“Modifiers aren’t necessary for this adventure. The scale of Weed’s adventure is so large that it can be called the Return of the King!”

The viewers looked forward to Weed’s adventure that started broadcasting! Each of the stations showed it at exactly 6 p.m.

The delivery places like pizza, chicken, ham hocks etc. were also waiting for this time. The audience would become hungry while watching the television and would get food delivered.

The viewers also made delighted posts on the bulletin boards.

-Finally.

-I was so thrilled that I couldn’t sleep yesterday.

-The time until I’m discharged from the army seems to be

slowing down.

-Royal Road is good but it is fun to see Weed's adventures.

-My spirit is thoroughly immersed when looking at it. It is like seeing a goblin only to realize he is a Bone Dragon slayer!

-I broke up with my girlfriend to watch this.

-You did well.

-Congratulations.

And the first image KMC Media showed was a golden, sandy beach with calming music playing.

Weed was wandering around Borota Island looking for stories of Nodulle and Hilderun. A few people might be bored but it was necessary to show the first step of the quest.

“Do you know Nodulle and Hilderun?”

“I know but it is annoying to say it. Many people have asked me about them.”

Weed met people on the island who shared their stories. Little children talked about Nodulle and Hilderun while picking up shells

and stones on the pretty beach.

-Human.

-Weed the God of War has this hidden side to him.

-This is the delicate sensibility he used to make his sculptures.

At that time, Weed stole a piece of squid that was being dried and ate it.

“Ahh, salty.”

-Weed-nim also does bad things.

-This is the charm of a human.

-I also want to taste stolen squid too!

-I will immediately develop a Squid Grass Porridge Unit.-A new porridge development team.

His visit to Nodulle's residence and consequent steps in the quest were also broadcasted.

After a brief introduction, CTS Media and LK Games showed the scene of his escape from an island in the middle of a storm. At first,

the provocative images pulled up the ratings. But viewers would rather leisurely watch the quests so the ratings for KMC Media was much higher.

-Who are Nodulle and Hilderun?

-I don't know. Are they a pirate couple?

-Maybe they are lovers like Romeo and Juliet.

-The background music gives the island a completely romantic atmosphere. Where is that island now?

-Borota Island.

-Oh, I want to move to a warm, sunny island.

-Judging by this, Borota Island will become a popular tourist destination in the future.

-How much money would it cost to build a house on that island?

-Recently a user bought a cast amount of land on Borota Island so the real estate prices has soared. For example, it has soared by 10 times compared to the past.

They were curious about Nodulle and Hilderun and also leisurely

viewed the relaxing scenery of Borota Island. They also waited for other exciting, future developments in the future.

Weed's adventure was connected with danger and suffering on another scale. The viewers knew that he would change the important history of cities on the continent so they were looking forward to future information.

The lyrical and romantic view of Borota Island! Holding onto a piece of wood in the sea while being threatened by the followers of the Sea God.

In the beginning, Seo-yoon's face didn't appear intentionally. This only served to raise the viewer's curiosity.

-She is an absolute beauty based on the rear view alone.

-I want to marry her just looking at the hands that are rowing.

-The brief sound of her voice is enough to pull out my soul.

All the attention within Royal Road was focused on Weed's adventure. The ratings were also a big bang! But the number of antis also significantly increased.

-I'm doomed because of Weed. The destruction of the city dealt a blow to my business. Even the goblins wouldn't want to rob me.

-The house I worked hard to prepare is gone. Who will be responsible for this damage?

-The indiscriminate destruction of the city. In the meantime, I've been building up intimacy with the residents. Is it right for Weed to do this?

-I understand that the Haven Empire is his enemy. But what am I guilty of?

A considerable number of users damaged by Weed's actions on the Central Continent demanded compensation during the broadcast. The Hermes Guild also diligently took advantage of this to accuse him.

-Weed was originally bad. He couldn't hide his innate nature in Continent of Magic.

-Weed is really vicious. He deceived the people of the north that he was a good person.

-Weed's adventures are all due to his own greed. Please be a little more calm.

-Grass Porridge Cult? It is funny that people would join such a ridiculous group. The Central Continent is full of prosperity and development.

Weed's broadcast was a hot topic from day one.



“This incompetent bastard.”

Weed kept on abusing Van Hawk who didn’t say anything.

An Abyss Knight might be described as the pinnacle of the undead but he knew who was in charge. It was absurd that he was still following a human like Weed after he had switched professions.

“I will leave the 1st Army Corps to you. Can you lead them well?”

“Of course.”

When he was under the reign of Barkhan, Van Hawk had been the commander of the dark army! He now assumed the role of leading 80,000 soldiers.

“You....”

Van Hawk saw that half the soldiers were composed of riff-raff.

They were conscripted youths so they were undisciplined and their stance when holding a sword was a mess. Weed deliberately gave him those with no combat experience and the fanatics of the Embinyu Church. They were cannon fodder so he hadn’t bothered

teaching them.

A legendary monster, the Abyss Knight had appeared but the soldiers didn't speculate.

“You will die fighting so it isn't necessary to fight well. Just die early. That will hopefully be your only obligation.”

“Yes!”

Van Hawk and the 1st Army Corps rushed to the vanguard. A myriad of soldiers died from the enemy's arrows or cavalry!

“Huhuhu.”

“My body is cold, cold. I want to drink hot blood!”

The soldiers then became zombies and skeletons. Compared to when they were alive, they had a fast and strong power. The power of the Abyss Knight could revive subordinates from the dead.

Half of the troops were affected by Van Hawk's darkness. The 80,000 army changed to half undead and half humans. It even increased by 20,000 as the bodies of the enemies were changed by dark forces. Van Hawk could control exactly 100,000 undead with his dark powers!

The maximum size and quality of the army kept on improving.

Countless ghosts, Dullahans, Death Knights etc. began appearing.

“Yes, this is really nice. Having the undead listen to orders is really good.”

Weed used the undead to actively fight against the Mapon Kingdom. The power of Weed’s desert warriors was being raised with a high speed. The conscripted slaves, elephant troops and undead troops were organized.

The majesty of a true conquering army!

He also used the vast riches looted from the principalities to hire mercenaries. Not only that, the nobles and members of the royal families surrendered without a fight. The number of troops went over 100,000 and the surrendered soldiers were placed at the vanguard.

Weed’s army went beyond 300,000 as he struck the Central Continent.

“I’ve already wrecked 20 cities. This will certainly be recorded in history. Nevertheless, to be able to leave a name behind after death....it is very honourable.”

He would go down in history as a villain who committed terrible actions! Weed’s absolute force and charisma meant the soldiers didn’t dare take a breath or relax in front of him.

Having the undead as colleagues and destroying all the cities made the soldiers somehow feel more comfortable.

Only cities that opened their gates and surrendered could avoid complete destruction. The desert troops passed through the cities and kingdoms and forcefully conscripted combat slaves.

Hope was lost and they could only fight.

“We have been caught by a vicious mastermind.”

“Should we try to escape tomorrow?”

“No. We can’t escape from his range of vision even at night. And you know what will happen if we get caught trying to escape.

If 1 person tried to escape then the entire unit consisting of 2,000 people would be annihilated.

An army dominated by fear! Weed allowed them to kill the enemy and loot to their heart’s content. The soldiers that used the despair of their enemies to overcome their hopelessness and became more cruel.

“Charge.”

The soldiers ran forward like caught wild horses at Weed’s order.

“Hihihihit!”

“Kill. Kill them all!”

“Snatch everything.”

The mental state of the soldiers was the worst. They weren't equipped with stability, gold, equipment or skill proficiency. The army only waged war!

“We should obtain a total victory.”

The absolute strength and dominance meant the army was victorious every time. In addition, the cruel soldiers helped in the destruction of the Central Continent.

Ddirring!

-You have fulfilled 6 of the conditions necessary for the Advent of the Conqueror quest.

The objective of the quest has already been exceeded.

The fanatics in the Dagan Kingdom have been completely destroyed.

Destruction of the cities surrounding the Herr River has been

completed.

Devastate the training base of the fanatics in the Ruprea Principality has been completed.

Set the city of Itua on fire has been completed.

You have sniffed out some of the royals who were secret follower of the Embinyu Church.

The Droma Kingdom has collapsed and a new dynasty will emerge.

This was a considerable achievement when taking into account that he couldn't travel to cities and kingdoms far away. In order to avoid a battle with the Embinyu Church, he had only aimed to achieve 3 goals.

But he needed to make sure he destroyed certain kingdoms when completing the quest. Once he returned to his original world, his level of 824 would disappear. It was like trying to paddle when water was entering the boat.

In addition, this conquest war was fun. He came into the past so it was good to heat things up. Users didn't exist in the warring period but the presence of outstanding knights meant it was hard to conquer the continent.

Weed had a bad side. But he didn't have the opportunity to

commit bad actions. People viewed him as an honest and steady person but Weed had wanted to be a villain in the first place.

His teacher in elementary school asked him what his dream for the future was. Weed's answer was 'a villain who will destroy world peace.' The forbidden chance to achieve his childhood dream had been opened.

"Kill everything. Don't let them live even if they surrender. And don't touch the riches in the castle's warehouse. That is mine!"

Tyrant Weed! The slave soldiers that surrendered were dragged into the next war.

Now the kingdoms in the warring period started having an active response.

"We have to prevent the barbarians from coming to our kingdom."

"Those fellows are merciless. Send the knights to bring back Weed's head."

"I heard that Weed is a great warrior. I don't know why he is opposing us but the dignity of the Royal Family can't allow him to pass."

The kingdoms moved their troops in order to suppress him. Hundreds of thousands of elite troops marched to annihilate Weed

and the Red Knife army.

In addition, the Embinyu Church also moved.

-We are carrying God Embinyu's trust.

-A huge force is coming from the south to stop us. Get rid of them.

The anxiety deeply rooted in the continent has become parasitic. The Embinyu Church forces gathered in forests, complex underground caves and secret places in the kingdom were shown in a video.

An amazingly huge turtle more than 400 metres large was flying through the air above the Embinyu Church, with 300 archers on board. An Embinyu army was running around with crossbow devices and siege weapons that could cover the sky with rocks. And there was a 10 storey tower with Earth Giants following behind. Fanatics covered the plains or dug stones with pickaxes.

These fanatics weren't an insignificant presence.

Nodulle had caused the fall of the Embinyu Church at Ahellun until it eventually recovered in the future. They could cut off limbs and tear iron armour.

The 4th and 6th sect. High Priest Motuls and High Priest Igrig led the dark army. They were level 700 priests that could freely use

magic but their ability to lead their men in battle was much superior. The High Priests of the sects used curses and black magic so sacrifices were inevitable.

The priests in the present day Embinyu Church also led hundreds of people. The warring period meant the priests could led more than 10,000 people to commit atrocities. They used brainwashing, deception and all types of dark magic in the Embinyu Church. Even the evil Pechet threatening the Keltun Kingdom joined them to mobilize an unprecedented army.



Weed and Seo-yoon.

There were the only 2 users on this huge continent filled with NPCs. Numerous quests sprang up or disappeared and the recorded history was changed. They caused a big war that would be written in history.

That’s how large the scale of this quest was. When thinking about it calmly, this was a quarrel between the desert area and the enemy. The revealed army of the Embinyu Church was more terrible than expected.

Weed finally realized what happened in the past.

“No, Nodulle’s success was a case of a typical and archaic hero!”

The latent strength of the Embinyu Church that emerged in the world could easily change. Weed led a desert army to conquer so his analysis of the situation was very accurate.

Although the desert warriors were strong, the Embinyu Church contained all sorts of odd creatures and fanatics.

“But I can’t do that. I need to obtain a stronger power in cause the tower is successfully built and the Chaos Dragon awakens.”

The Embinyu Church had thoroughly prepared and planned. And they were irreparably damaged by Nodulle and Hilderun.

The hero in the story used a might power to stop the villain, the Embinyu Church from conquering the continent.

“These ugly bastards.”

Weed was understandably upset about the Embinyu Church. They brainwashed many kings and nobles to follow them. The aim of conquering the continent was naturally difficult to accomplish. The sweat and passion of the villains had disappeared.

“This is really stupid. If I was the head of the Embinyu Church then I would use all sorts of despicable means. I would rather receive a quest to help the Embinyu Church dominate the continent.”

Anyway, the Embinyu Church in the past changed due to Weed.

The Embinyu Church woke up an army in order to prevent Weed and his army of desert warriors.

“I caused an accident with those guys. Was I too greedy? I should’ve acted moderately while playing a hero.”

He now had a very large burden to defeat the Embinyu Church.

In fact, Weed hasn’t been comfortable acting out the role of Nodulle. He was forced to follow the righteous acts of a hero.

However, the desert army invading the Central Continent was Weed’s choice. His frustration over his destiny had already rolled away.

“All my actions will break the history of the future. Well, it can’t be helped.”

It was an extremely rare opportunity against the backdrop of the entire continent. The level 800 armed forces swept through the continent during this chaotic period. He conquered vast lands and cities as well as struck against the Embinyu Church.

Weed and Seo-yoon wanted to live like this forever. The exhilarating fun of war and adventure!

“This is an uncommon opportunity to do bad things. For the sake of justice, I need to teach the Embinyu Church what a true villain is.”

It was like watching cartoon villains from a young age only to get the chance to release all his frustrations. Now it was time to lead the troops to loot the city.

Weed climbed on the Bactrian Camel and held out his hand to Seo-yoon.

“Grab on.”

“Thank you.”

When moving long distances, Seo-yoon rode on the camel with him. It was a practical reason since she hadn't raised her level. But it wasn't just for quick movements that the two became familiar with riding together.

It was severely cold in the desert and as they headed north from the southern area. Memories piled up as they travelled that route.

‘Youth is fleeting and life is short. I will be reminded of these memories over time in the future.’

The two people spent a happy and romantic time together. And they used experience and hard work to overcome and live. As a person became older, they realized how important these things were.

It was shrouded in countless suffering but Nodulle and Hilderun's quest also had a romantic aspect.

He wasn't the type to help a complete stranger who was suffering. Yet Weed was the first one to stretch out his hand to her.

‘I'm not that type of person.’

He had lived in poverty since childhood so he wasn't confident about love. He felt a sense of insecurity about bringing suffering to a woman. That's why he kept feeling sorry.

There were times in junior high and high school where he stopped himself and just looked at the back of a nice female. He might have a good heart but he was scared to show it.

‘But if it is this woman....’

He gained some faith during the time spent with Seo-yoon. He didn't want it to but the possibility slowly formed in his mind.

‘Well, it's not like she doesn't have flaws. Eventually these conflicts will be resolved one day.’

Weed hid his cowardice deep down in his thoughts. He felt like that while watching Seo-yoon's actions.

‘Ah, now she is a lot like me.’

It was being revealed even if the other side tried to hide it.

It had been quite some time since he carved the Goddess of Freya Statue in Baran Village. At that time, Seo-yoon's heart had been closed off.

Weed used her as a model for the statue that had a bright and beautiful appearance. And he had secretly written down a sentence in a hidden place.

-This smile is good....I hope you can smile like this....

He hoped that Seo-yoon would go back to that little village and find the phrase. Their meeting in the instructor's house was short but it created a special sculpture.

And then they had met on the Plains of Despair when he was Karichwi. The reason was unknown but Weed had felt something special after seeing her behaviour and eyes. Weed carved a sculpture while accompanying her through the plains.

A sculpture of her smiling that caused tears! Seo-yoon didn't express it but her heart had always been crying and in pain. She felt doubts and anxiety but had a vulnerable and pure side hidden. The sculpture was able to elicit tears and ease the pain.

Since then, she was always willing to model for Weed's sculptures. His sculptures were beautifully carved and made Seo-

yoona even prettier.

Weed was also scared of exposing his heart. But the sculptures were honest.

The sculpture of Warm Lovers while hiding in a cave with Alveron! In the sculpture, Weed and Seo-yoon were hugging each other while sharing warmth.

This had expressed a little bit of something contained deep in his heart. The two people had each suffered pain and suffering in their lives. And after some time and incidents, they shared many events together.

Now they could close their eyes and understand the other person's mind.

Chapter 2: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Dong! Dong! Dong! Dong!

Pale was carrying a bow in the mountains.

“I knew it would become like this.”

Weed wasn't among them so it was common to separate for adventures. But this time, they had to recover one of the four treasures of the Niflheim Empire! Mapan had obtained a clue that led towards the Halmerun Mountains and after patrolling it, the environment was really no joke.

His companions had their own opinions.

“We need to sneak into that tree fort.”

“We don't have a profession that can secretly infiltrate it. It would be hard work even for someone with the profession.”

“Yes... Someone needs to draw their attention.”

And everybody's eyes fell onto Pale.

Romuna said.

“An assassin won’t be easily caught but....”

Irene nodded her head.

“We need someone who won’t die if hit multiple times. If a person has low health then they can’t be the bait.”

Surka felt remorse for 0.3 seconds before saying.

“A counterattack should also be possible! I think that Pale oppa is the only one possible.”

Pale’s name was mentioned directly!

Hwaryeong and Bellot took it for granted.

“I will feel very reassured if Pale-nim is the one to do this. A man should do this much.”

“Leadership in adventures can be very attractive....”

Pale was always surrounded by women so his senses were quick.

‘They are pushing everything to me. Bellot-nim, your tone of voice right now is like when you are acting in a prime-time

weekend drama.'

Other men were usually envious of Pale. Gazes were often stuck to him when he was drinking in a tavern in Morata.

'He is a sought after bastard.'

'He must be from a family of independence fighters.'

'How happy he must be. I would like to be so popular. Well, that probably won't happen.'

Ironically, the person they were envious of didn't think it was a good thing. The women ate food while making him pay for it and talked about complex or boring things he didn't understand.

In particular, the atmosphere when talking about handbags was so serious it was like they studied tannery or leather craftsmanship at university. The women would also nag him about chores.

His girlfriend Maylon also recommended him to undertake the dangerous task of acting as an assassin to lure the enemy.

"I believe that you will come back alive and unharmed."

Maylon was a ranger so she could also undertake this mission. That's why she wanted Pale to do it instead.

Another man surrounded by the gorgeous women was just drinking water quietly. A fisherman had high health but low movement speed so he wasn't suitable for the role of luring the enemies.

Zephyr normally came to the front in battles.

Cheerful whispers were sent towards him.

-Take them far away. It will be risky if we're nearby!

-I believe in you.

-Show a cool appearance.

No matter how the girls cheered or complimented him, Pale realized something. Pale was an unfortunate man among pretty girls! But his true character became known once he was alone.

“Regression Arrow.”

Pale ran forward while shooting an arrow. The arrows heading in front of him suddenly changed to the opposite direction. The arrow shot into the heart of an enemy chasing Pale.

“Kyak!”

They were a tribe similar to humans but with blue skin.

Pale shot five arrows at once while running. He had experience with repeatedly inserting arrows into his bow. And he only felt a moderate tension.

‘This crisis is nothing. When I’m with Weed, every moment is like the crossroad between life and death. This degree is only a little dangerous.’

Then the guy next to him grew larger.

“Dispersion Fire!”

Pale turned like lightning and aimed the arrow in the direction of the assassin. 20 arrows covered the assassin that had grown.

“Keet!”

“Kwaack!”

Pale listened to the screaming as he dodged poison daggers, chain scythes and poisoned arrows.

Pale used the trees and bushes as obstacles. Quick judgement as well as speed was very important.

‘Those fellows aren’t simply pursuing.’

More than 10 people among the assassins headed elsewhere. It was to form an encirclement.

‘Left, right? Left side.’

Pale made a short decision after analysing the terrain. He had improved his improvisation and accurate judgement from battles and adventures.

An assassin jumped out of a tree and stabbed a dagger towards him.

“Kuhit, die human.”

Pale retreated one step and fired an arrow at the head.

“That will be you!”

And an assassin appeared right under his nose!

Archers were known to be weak at close range. Therefore they usually had an additional weapon apart from the bow. Elves used elementals while humans selected magic or daggers.

But archers didn’t invest a lot of stats into strength so the power

of their dagger was much lower. It was unusual for someone to have Weed's outrageous stats in both strength and agility.

So it was preferable to stay at a favourable distance while shooting arrows. It was considered a failure if they needed to life their dagger in combat. Their swordsmanship had barely grown so it was rare for them to be able to beat a monster. That's why high level archers collapsed when it came to close combat.

Pale had a lot of experience running quickly while using his bow and arrows. He didn't tremble and prepared carefully for an opportunity. And he learned how to deflect a monster's attacks.

When fighting with Weed, it felt luxurious to sit back in a safe and comfortable spot while pulling his bow. In order to pull his weight, he worked hard when hunting alone. Other archers would be unable to use such fearless movements.

Shooting arrows through the trees and branches! And it hit the side of an assassin prepared to ambush him.

“Kuek!”

The assassin was hit in the chest by the arrow and pushed back.

“Goodbye.”

Pale managed to escape while packing the japtem.

He felt like it was a waste to not collect the items dropped from monsters or enemies. In fact, japtem didn't have anything to do with increasing a person's level but it could be helpful in future quests.

'I think I can escape to this side.'

Pale believed in his own judgement despite being ambushed by the assassins. It would be different if the encirclement was perfectly organized but they were unprepared for his arrival.

And Pale wasn't actually being surrounded by the assassins.

"Twenty one, twenty two, twenty-three!"

He subdued the assassins pursuing him one after another! He predicted the assassins hiding behind bushes and trees and shot the arrows.

"Piercing Arrow!"

"Kuuk!"

There was a moaning sound as the arrow pierced through a tree. A high level archer shooting accurately at this distance was detrimental. The assassin had similar defense to a knight but their health fell greatly.

“Deceleration Arrow!”

The arrow fired at an assassin slowed down. Power wasn't the only thing necessary when dealing with concealed assassins.

“Continuous Arrows!”

He predicted the path the assassin would use to avoid the slowed arrow and would defeat them with the next attacks.

Pale took care of the assassins in the forest like he had a panoramic view on the plains. He lured those guys back and forth while attacking them.

One attack from an assassin would lead to his death. The vicious poison, bleeding, hallucinations or paralysis would all eventually cause death.

These dangerous and important moments were what caused his heart to jump. But he needed to stay calm and impersonal in order to handle the assassins!

Pale's mood was like a small and firm mountain.

Ddirring!

-You have wiped out all the assassins chasing you on Halmerun

Mountain.

63 assassins have fallen to your bow.

Your arrow hit ratio is 49.7%.

52 deadly attacks.

24 people received critical strikes.

You have achieved a miraculous victory without any assistance.

Fame has risen from dealing a big blow to the assassins.

The title 'Hunter of Halmerun Mountain' has been obtained.

Agility has increased by 1 when accurately hunting.

Pale ran towards the assassin's fort as soon as he achieved victory.

"It wasn't a big deal."

There was no time to enjoy it since his companions might be in danger.

Fortunately the majority of the assassins had died chasing Pale so his companions safely obtained Ivanstein's secret records in the fort. As they predicted, they were able to easily take care of the remaining assassins patrolling the fort.

Romuna turned to Pale who looked like a ghost.

"You are alive!"

"That..."

"I thought you were dead."

"How did you live?"

His companions were the ones who entrusted him with the dangerous role yet they questioned why he hadn't died. They were confused because they never expected Pale to survive the assassins chasing him.

However, Pale quickly woke up and took care of the assassin chasing Maylon. The assassins could strike at Maylon at any time so he couldn't just watch.

Zephyr came up to him and asked.

"You managed to handle the assassins chasing you alone?"

“I did.”

Pale was proud and wanted to show off his heroism to his colleagues. It was a thrilling crisis and he had also gained decent experience.

“But....”

“Has unni made the reservation?”

“I tried 37 times as soon as I heard the limited edition came out. I won’t be able to obtain the Chanel bag until autumn.”

“Absolutely envious. I’ve tried 71 times.”

Hwaryeong and Bellot were having a serious conversation.

It was expected. The singer and actress only paid attention to shoes and bags as it was a source of energy for them. Confidence was an important asset for celebrities.

He looked over at his long-time friends Surka, Romuna and Irene.

“You fight well. Completely lucky. It is annoying.”

“I will ask again the next time something dangerous happens.”

“Wow, I’m disappointed that you didn’t give me any work to do as a priest.”

“.....”

His last resort was his girlfriend Maylon. As he expected, Maylon looked him over from head to feet.

‘She is worried about my injuries. Indeed....’

Pale was thrilled.

“Where is your stash?”

“I don’t have any.”

“Did you find some good items that you are keeping to yourself?”

“.....”

Pale felt desperately alone.



The broadcasting stations that were showing Weed’s adventures!

Each room that had a television showed the daily broadcast.

On the second day, the damage to the Sea God's forces on the Central Continent and Seo-yoon's rescue from the Portu Kingdom was broadcasted. The stations increased the tension with background music, brilliantly placed subtitles and special effects.

-Ah...a complete drama.

-This is the so called power of love. It was really dangerous.

-Where did Weed disappear to after carrying Hilderun through the portal?

-That's why we need to wait for tomorrow's broadcast.

-I didn't know the story of Nodulle and Hilderun was so deep.

The bulletin boards were all filled with Weed's adventure.

However, some fans of Weed were bored. A romantic atmosphere by the sea and a rescue from a collapsing castle.

"I'm bored. This is revolting."

Weed normally overcome risks with a dazzling performance in

battle.

-It is disappointing to see him go around with a woman. He is being lazy. There is no excitement in a dull adventure like this. I didn't find the rescue from the castle interesting.

-I didn't see any of Weed's combat scenes. He is too busy trying to avoid things.

-I didn't want to see a weak and insignificant appearance.

-Who is the man helping Weed?

-He appears to be a master swordsman.

-His connections are enormous.

Fans of Royal Road were professionals with considerable knowledge. Even the Grass Porridge members just starting in the north had deep knowledge of beginner adventures.

This wasn't a typical case where the body followed the head! They were tired and disappointed dozens of times during Weed's adventure. Of course, they were still fans but their satisfaction with this adventure was extremely low.

-This isn't the look we wanted to see.

-There are still days left. We've only seen two days so let's wait a little longer.

-The desert cities and destruction of cities in the Central Continent. In order to increase the impact of the adventure, this won't be shown quickly.

-Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!

The broadcast schedule was five days. Viewers were burning with excitement.

The second day of broadcast was a Sunday. That evening, the individual stations each received the highest ratings for the 8 p.m. show.

Weed and Seo-yoon were walking through a desert. The viewers watching the video had different thoughts as they watched him suffering in the desert.

-Well, he won't die in the middle. They've decided to broadcast for five days.

-I figured Weed would do well.

-He went into the desert like that.

-He has gone to various places. It is like the real quest has been

abandoned. I wonder what compensation will be received for the suffering.

-It aired at 8 p.m. today but isn't it ending a little early? I gave up dinner in order to wait for this.

-Ah, it can't end early. The evening broadcast schedule said it would end at midnight.

The viewers' opinions started to be plainly expressed.

And then!

Weed's quest that was in progress suddenly flowed back to the beginning.

-This is the beginning of Weed's great adventure. The unknown story.

The scene changed to Weed receiving a quest from the Sculptor's Guild in Rhodium. It was the conversation with the old man about the Stellar Tear.

"Welcome. Since the Stellar Tear is welcoming you, a person who knows Moonlight Sculpting has come."

"I want to know a way to express radiant beauty."

“Rhodium has existed for hundreds of years and I finally found someone to speak to about radiant beauty.”

-W-what is this? The atmosphere changed out of the blue.

-Eh, a way to express radiant beauty? I think it is to learn a skill.

-Sculpting? Has Weed mastered sculpting? It must be a tremendous secret technique. He can create disasters and also transform into several species.

The adventurers and fans suddenly seemed to wake up from their sleep. It felt like having water poured on them after experiencing temperatures of -40 degrees Celsius.

The impact of the video coming from the broadcasting stations was enormous.

-The stations are all uniting to play the same scene. I suddenly have an exhilarating feeling.

-This isn't like Weed's usual adventures. But it is replaced with something else.

-It is fun just watching it... I think this will be a long and dangerous quest. The atmosphere feels like there is something big!

-This isn't a joke. The tension escalating was enough to fry an

egg.

Weed's conversation with the old man continued.

“Do you want to hear the story about radiant beauty?”

“Of course.”

“I want to go back to when I heard about the radiant beauty. Can I do that?”

“I would like to hear about the radiant beauty.”

“This is something I heard a long time ago. This is a legend about sculpting passed down through the mouths of the people. I don't know about the feasibility. Almost no one believed the story.”

-Now they are Nodulle and Hilderun and are facing a huge, difficult quest in the desert.

-I'm not sure but I can see that it will be epic.

-Now a scene of Weed flying around the continent as a hummingbird is emerging.

-I don't know what he is trying to do.

-My heart has started pounding.

-Ah, that's right! The last time Weed produced a disaster. Is that also associated with this quest?

-I can't imagine where this quest is going to lead.

Using a sword of light in a storm and creating a natural sculpture. The viewers became more curious as Weed's early adventures were broadcasted.

The compensation for the Nodulle and Hilderun quest wouldn't just be average. It was a scale that was like a sculptor's hell!

They couldn't even imagine changing the channel.

Weed's enthusiastic fans had a separate place where they could talk.

-I was lacking in faith. Grass Porridge!

-I shouldn't even ask questions. This is Weed's adventure.

-Orc Karichwi might reappear. Or maybe more!

-The expression of radiant beauty. A skill. Is Weed trying to obtain a secret sculpting technique?

-Most secret techniques are acquired through the master quest or adventures.

The skill is hard to obtain but should the adventure be this long? This seems like nobody can obtain it.

-Just watching it is enough to make me tired and feel like giving up. Doesn't it require devoting your life to obtain it?

-The stations haven't showed it yet but Roderick's Labyrinth is also an incomprehensible dungeon. I would die entering that place.

-It doesn't make sense that Roderick's Labyrinth is just a stepping stone in the middle of this quest.

-I feel like this is too much labour for a sculptor.

-I don't understand the old man's words. What does he mean about the legendary sculpture?

The large fans, adventurers and high level users gathered at the discussion boards to talk about Weed's adventure. Then in the end, someone with deep knowledge about Royal Road said some difficult words.

-Doesn't this feel like the final secret technique?

“The final secret technique?

-No way!

-Who would say something like that? Hahahaha.

-I heard that you need to gather all the other secret techniques of that profession first... It is impossible.

-The labyrinth and changing the past... Doesn't the difficulty of the quest appear to be on that level?

-Why can't it be true? This is Weed!

The possibility of the final secret sculpting technique spread through each community.

-Final secret sculpting technique quest?

-Completely amazing.

-Ah...I'm feeling dizzy.

-Indeed Weed, really Weed, Weed who makes me feel sick!

-I will be nervous in the future when hearing about Weed's adventures. I never thought this adventure would be so huge.

-It is not yet confirmed this is the final secret technique. Getting ahead of ourselves when it might be a false rumour!

-If this quest is for the final secret technique... Will he really succeed in such an adventure?

-A huge existence?

-Hey, perhaps...

-I'm not sure since we have no idea what the skill is.

-It won't be easy. He might fail.

-When have Weed's adventures ever been easy? After seeing the broadcast of Weed yesterday and today, who else can succeed in an adventure like that?

-I'm envious. Although I still want him to succeed.

The bulletin boards heated up with stories of the final secret technique.

It varied from people praising Weed, speculations about the final secret technique and pessimistic viewers.

And at 9 p.m., the broadcasting stations made an announcement to put an end to the controversy.

“There has been much speculation about Weed’s adventures. Can Oh Joo-wan ssi tell us anything about the quest?”

“Yes. The viewers have been demanding more detailed information about the quest on the various forums. Excuse me, I just received a note from the station.”

Shin Hye-min and Oh Joo-wan talked about the current stories on the Versailles Continent. This time the largest number of viewers were watching the broadcast. Oh Joo-wan’s face instantly became stiff as he unfolded the note.

Weed’s adventure is linked to the grand quest of obtaining the final secret sculpting technique. This will be broadcasted later but it involves the destruction of the Embinyu Church in the warring period. And there is the high possibility of hunting a Chaos Dragon.

Millions of people saw Oh Joo-wan’s expression change and it didn’t recover. He was a commentator so he didn’t know in advance that Weed’s adventure was related to the final secret technique.

Besides, the quest also involved a full scale war with the Embinyu Church and the appearance of a Chaos Dragon. The contents were more than a commentator of Royal Road could imagine.

“What is it about? The viewers are also wondering so I think it needs to be read quickly.”

Shin Hye-min gazed at Oh Joo-wan and sighed lightly. She knew in advance since she was Weed’s friend. However, she had to use a woman’s acting skills to occasionally seem surprised.

“Um...the viewers must be very curious about the contents of this note. Shall I begin with the conclusion? Or make it longer....”

“Did Oh Joo-wan ssi know that your anti fans just increased by 1 million people?”

“I will announce it quickly. King Weed of the Arpen Kingdom is currently on a quest for the final secret sculpting technique.

And it involves destroying the Embinyu Church and hunting a Chaos Dragon.” Shin Hye-min laughed lightly at Oh Joo-wan.

“Are you joking? Joking at such an important moment. I guess Oh Joo-wan ssi really wants to be cursed.”

“Shin Hye-min ssi really didn’t know?”

“Yes, I don’t know the details. Ah, really?”

“That is the complete truth.”

Shin Hye-min was also surprised.

She knew there was risk involved with the final secret technique but she didn't know about the Embinyu Church and Chaos Dragon!

Currently the Embinyu Church was enormous on the continent. They were expanding their influence on among the residents every day. The activities of the users were reduced and it was common to see deformed monsters and fanatics in broad daylight.

But to defeat the Embinyu Church and hunt a Chaos Dragon in the warring period!

‘Ugh...the end.’

She knew that the Embinyu Church was much more powerful in the warring period.

The viewers felt the same shock as Shin Hye-min as well as amazement and delight. They were ecstatic at the thought of watching Weed's adventure.

-I knew Weed didn't go back to the past and destroy cities with a bad intention.

-It is probably necessary to fight the Embinyu Church. It is to decrease some of the influence of the Embinyu Church.

-What will happen between Weed and the Embinyu Church? Will they just disappear like the cities? The occupied areas might return to normal?

-KMC Media has a separate description. In the original history, the Embinyu Church was defeated by Nodulle but didn't suffer significant damage. Depending on the result of Weed's actions, the Embinyu Church might shrink or grow more explosively. We will be able to see in tomorrow's broadcast.

-It is Monday so I will ask my company for my monthly leave.

-I am on summer vacation. I won't leave the television for the next three days.

-Ah...I wish that Weed's adventure would continue through the night.

-I only use the television to watch Royal Road.

And posts of regret!

-I lived my life raising cattle and I feel a chill at the thought of experiencing such an adventure.

-I am just doing the dishes for 1 silver a day.

-I'm getting rid of horse dung.

-A rabbit killed me three times. This is the first time the rabbits have beaten to death so many people.

-I'll tell you a secret. I was killed by Tokkung-nim seven times. I'm still hopeful for a good adventure.

-Isn't Tokkung-nim part of the Toadstool Unit of the Grass Porridge Cult? He pulled me onto a grassy hill yesterday and killed me!

Chapter 3: Best Offering

The conquest of the Haven Empire was causing wind to blow blood every day.

“Embinyu! Follow Embinyu. This world is completely corrupt. By destroying this crumbling world, we are saving it.”

The believers of the Embinyu Church aggressively tried to recruit the residents. There were complaints because the security in the Empire wasn't good so many residents fell into the religion.

“God Embinyu, please accept me.”

“Come quickly. Our colleagues will welcome....cough!”

Assassins of the Have Empire moved around killing fanatics of the Embinyu Church!

However, countless inquisitors and Dark Knights of the Embinyu Church were still present in the Haven Empire. In the past, the Embinyu Church had torn apart other kingdoms and now flocked to the Haven Empire.

“Have you bought the paints?”

“Yes. It is enough to completely repaint the wall.”

“I don’t have time until morning. So be careful not to make a mistake.”

“Of course not.”

The painters at Monterium had their own resistance movement. They drew paintings blaming the Haven Empire for the war. In order to complete the painting without being seen by the guards, they raised their skill proficiency a lot and gained more fame and influence.

However, getting rid of the paintings that portrayed important figures of the Haven Empire in a controversial manner was important.

“Over there!”

“Eek, they’re already here.”

“Go quickly. There is no time to grab the paint.”

“That is my property....”

The novice painters desperately tried to escape.

There was a commotion as the guards of the Haven Empire chased them but the users and residents just ignored it. They

didn't want to get involved in matters of the Hermes Guild. It was hard to live comfortably while the Hermes Guild was pushing to conquest the Central Continent.

“Ah, this is a dead end.”

The painters ran through complex alleyways until they reached a dead end.

“Huhu, today I get to taste blood.”

The users of the Hermes Guild were used to murdering.

They didn't have a good image but that could be an advantage. If their level was low and they fought an opponent with strong power, then their fighting strength would rise. In contrast, high level users killing ridiculously weak people wouldn't gain a lot of experience.

Users who attached themselves to the Haven Empire did a really good job!

“Haven Empire!”

“It is your bad luck to be caught by Roberto and I.”

“That's great. It is most interesting when killing women..ack!”

Roberto suddenly collapsed in a grey light.

“Eh?”

“Enemy?”

The guards looked around the alley. They couldn't see anything. The painters were also shocked as Roberto died in the blink of an eye. And the moon was hidden by clouds as the alley became dark.

“Ugh!”

“Ack!”

“Kwaack!”

Screams could be heard from among the quiet. The painters stood there in awe and fear as they looked at a man wearing a black robe.

His appearance was big like that of a painting. He was holding something that looked more like a sacrificial tool than a knife.

“Are you okay?”

Even the voice was clear and direct

“Yes, we aren’t injured. Are you going to spare us?”

“I was just passing by and decided to help.”

“Ah, thank you very much. Though you should be careful. It will be a big deal if the Hermes Guild finds you!”

“Thanks for your concern but I’m not afraid of the Hermes Guild. And I’ve taken care of all the guards in this area of the Haven Empire so finish up your drawing. Then I wish you a good night.”

This behaviour was enough to cause emotions in a woman’s heart. The painters called out desperately as the man turned around.

“Excuse me, can I register you as a friend?”

“That.....”

“You don’t want to because we are low levelled?”

“Absolutely not. Just... The situation is a little complex. My name is Seaso....”

“Eh?”

“No, it is nothing. Someday I might see you again.”

The man said before walking into the darkness. He moved quickly and vanished.

“Totally cool. An apostle of justice disappearing like the wind.”

Monterium was a place where knights of the Haven Empire and inquisitors of the Embinyu Church ran amok.

-The inquisitor Brukschild has fallen.

The missionary activities of the Embinyu Church has been impeded.

Security will be temporarily restored by 3.

-The Haven Empire knights have died without knowing who killed them.

The sudden death is questionable but the reason can't be figured out.

Message windows continued to ring in front of the users in Monterium Castle.

“An ambush!”

The knights of the Haven Empire gave an emergency decree but it was to no avail. The knights and nobles inside the castle were assassinated. Users from the Hermes Guild wandering around the streets were killed by bows, flying daggers and traps that sprang from the earth!

A professional assassin would leave no signs and also wouldn't receive a penalty for murder. Moreover, the fame and loot gained from killing monsters was nothing compared to that of infamous users. There were a number of assassination squads in the Haven Empire but they were easily removed.

“An assassin's blade will deal justice. The Hermes Guild is bad so I don't feel any pangs of conscience killing them.”

The Hermes Guild users died in several cities in the Haven Empire.

“Do you know about the proclamation of death? Death is inevitable when night comes. Evil people should become afraid of the night.”

“There will be a black wind and then the person will die. Be scared when going into dark places.”

“The neat workmanship calls to mind the assassin of Montonya.”

“Ah, that shadow of death called Seasoned Crab?”

Seasoned Crab wasn't the only one targeting the Haven Empire. Steiner was now the leader of the Federation of Bandits.

“Boss, the Haven Empire guys are flocking.

“Yes? This is the base. But those guys won't stop harassing us. Prepare the stone throwing weapons and set fire to the mountain!”

“Yes!”

The Haven Empire needed to dominate the mountains in order to expand their territory.

But it wasn't an easy task to take control of the mountains. The monsters had left but bandits set up forts on the mountains. And the walls grew thicker as the number of bandits increased.

Their growth was slow compared to the soldiers and knights but they were trained well. It wasn't easy to live but they managed. The Imperial Army kept on making them move their bases but it increased the quality of the bandits. They also obtained riches by raiding wagons destined for the capital of the Haven Empire.

“I'm not going to live life twice. I should make the most of it during this life. Wuhahaha!”

The bandit Steiner laughed mercilessly as he annoyed the top level users in the Hermes Guild.

“This apple is too crunchy for my taste. Uh, why is the fruit I was eating missing?”

“What are you talking about?”

“It was just in my hand and now it is gone!”

The famous treasure thief Jackson who had been wandering around the world also came to the Haven Empire.

‘I came here to steal. The precious treasures will be mine.’

The prestigious guilds had fallen so there was power vacuum in the Central Continent. Users rose to make their mark in the Haven Empire.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

-The soldiers of the Red Knife desert army has brutally committed murder.

The criminal activity involved the fanatics of the Embinyu Church.

The infamy of the army’s commander has increased by 45.

-There has been a scuffle between soldiers.

An argument started for no reason in the middle of dinner.

Currently 420 soldiers are involved in the melee and it was grow further if it isn't settled quickly.

Discipline will decrease the morale of the soldiers.

-Citizens of Pire are protesting the soldiers' thefts.

If the soldiers don't stop their criminal activities then they will riot.

Security of the city has reduced by 13.

The larger the size of the army, the more chances there were of incidents occurring.

"What should we do?"

"This is what happens when people are forcefully conscripted. The fanatics, they are the particular problem."

"Should we discipline them?"

"No, just kill them! Place them at the vanguard in the next

battle.”

He solved a lot of the problems by killing the soldiers! He could just recruit more soldiers as the fighting continued.

The army contained a lot of soldiers but it didn't matter as long as the skilled soldiers had loyalty. The morale of the army and the administration of conquered lands didn't occur systematically.

Conscripted soldiers were busy looting while the nobles who surrendered were given to the residents.

If Weed established an empire using this method then it wouldn't last for even 1 year. But from Weed's standpoint, he just needed to maintain the army until it came time to fight the Embinyu Church in the Central Continent. Besides, he wanted to damage the Central Continent so it was good if they committed some bad actions.

“Torido.”

“Yes Master.”

Torido was extremely polite.

He had a cunning character with accurate judgement but was overwhelmed by Weed's force. He remembered how Van Hawk couldn't even fight back properly and didn't dare talk with the normal arrogance of a noble.

“You don’t have anybody to lead.”

“My vampires didn’t come to this era but I still have the power to create them.”

“Where did you put your sharp teeth? Wander around at night and suck the blood of some soldiers to make them your subordinates.”

“I understand. Thank you.”

He decided to make the soldiers dreaming about home submit unconditionally by turning them into vampires.

“And the women in the city?”

“Yes. There are many who are young and pretty.”

Torido watched the faces passing by.

Turning pretty females in the Arpen Kingdom into vampires was absolutely forbidden. Usually he could only increase his subordinates during quests and hunting. He didn’t even get the chance to meet Prina who worked in a flower shop.

“Go catch women and turn them into vampires.”

“Isn’t that a bad thing?”

“Only if you are noticed.”

This wasn’t the Arpen Kingdom. The Embinyu Church also had a vampire queen as a follower. He would rather offer the fanatics and residents than the desert warriors.

“If you don’t win in this era then our army will be annihilated.”

Weed’s invading army faced increasingly fierce resistance.

The Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms placed military forces at the borders to form a defensive wall. Smoke rose from distant mountains as the army of other kingdoms were gathered.

“The Mapon Kingdom and Beiner Kingdom are both preparing for battle.”

Weed’s army was strong but there was a risk of it being wiped out if the kingdoms joined together to attack.

This was the warring period so the kingdoms had powerful armies. If this was in the future then the users would take much longer to obtain the power necessary to occupy these kingdoms.

“This is the warring period so they should have a deep grudge

against each other. Did I aggravate their aggression?”

He briefly regretted damaging 50 cities!

“I started the fight so it can’t be helped. And I need to destroy the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms to achieve the goal. Hestiger!”

“Yes!”

“I will give you 30,000 cavalry. Attack the Opus Castle and occupy the nearby area. Destroy the cities while avoiding the enemy as much as possible.”

“I will follow your command!”

Hestiger left to the east with 30,000 troops.

The strategy depended on the troops! That’s why he let Hestiger lead the troops towards the Beiner Kingdom.

In times of war, resources for strategies were too expensive. Maintaining it would require an enormous cost but they were constantly looting. Hestiger only took 30,000 troops to disturb the Beiner Kingdom.

“Now I won’t need to see that guy anymore. I feel relieved. Jebeker.”

“Yes!”

“You also have a similar command. Take 40,000 troops to the south. Go around and thoroughly crush the cities.”

“I will follow your words.”

40,000 troops left with a billowing of dust clouds. It had fallen by 70,000 troops but Weed’s army still contained 250,000 people.

The desert troops were close to invincible against the kingdoms in this era. When there was a siege, Weed could just approach directly and bring down the iron gates or walls.

“Levanhut, lead the army to the Noah Kingdom!”

“Ah, yes?”

Saktok!

Weed led the army to charge at the knights of the various kingdoms but he didn’t need to give direct commands.

The morale of the army was overwhelming due to Atrock’s Cry. The conquest war was progressing smoothly as cities surrendered and residents were conscripted. The remaining troops were the elite members.

There were 10,000 undead, 20,000 desert warriors and 70,000 soldiers with combat experience. The remaining 60,000 were slaves and this was the optimal configuration.

“Advance as quickly as possible and devastate the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms. Effortless and clean!”

Weed captured some prisoners for military information.

“You are evil monsters that eat raw flesh and blood. In order to suppress you, His Majesty asked for help from the Mapon Kingdom. Now you are dead. Chwe (spit)!”

Weed and the desert warriors were notorious for being ruthless so the kingdoms were extremely wary. The Beiner Kingdom and Mapon Kingdom gathered 600,000 soldiers.

Weed was even more pleased to hear the news.

“How fun.”

The conquest was taking place at a tremendous rate. But he had felt no tension in the process.

Reaching here was like stealing something from a child.

Even if Weed didn't actively participate, the Red Knife army had overwhelming strength.

The desert warriors gathered had outstanding talent from the beginning and Weed led them on a steep path. His subordinates were strong and fought to survive.

The desert warriors had an average level of 500~600. Their skills had a wide variety while some were close to mastering swordsmanship. There were also 46 powerhouses who had reached level 700.

His sculptural lifeforms were also proficient. They treated the knights on the Central Continent as toys. Their power couldn't be stopped with high walls or traps.

There were many variables in battle and no matter how excellent the warriors were, they were still vulnerable to curses. And one or two of them may die when hunting a boss level monster that used magic attacks.

In addition, the Tower of Heroes showed that there were many tough opponents in the past. The Mapon Kingdom and Beiner Kingdom coming together to suppress him would have overwhelming force.

“They have twice as many troops and the best knights and magicians of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms are gathered so they are worth fighting. They won't attack until they are ready...I think it will take six days.”

Weed was ready to embark on a large scale war. The experience

of commanding such a large army would be thrilling!

In additional, it would be considerable practice before needing to fight the Embinyu Church. So far this was just a war of conquest but it would eventually involve the fate of the Versailles Continent.

“I suffered... It might be tough but I’m going to finish the final secret sculpting technique quest.”

Whether this quest succeeded or failed, he could get a good rest after it was over.

“I will forget everything else and go to places like the south coast. For a week....”

He wanted a vacation to restore his weary body and mind.

“Well, even the south coast is too expensive. It is far away so transportation will cost too much.”

This was a realistic anguish about a holiday.

“I should just vacation within Royal Road. Nowadays, there are plenty of people doing that so it must be pretty good. I can fish on a beach or cook saury to eat. And if a week seems a bit too long... Compared to other competitors, I need to recover my stats and level... Three days should be enough?”

Weed shook his head.

He was king of the desert and his enormous army was sweeping through the Central Continent. But once he returned to his original time, he would be back to level 400 and kicked by the Hermes Guild. It would go terribly if he met Bardray again.

“Three days is too long. Um, I should just rest on Sunday...no. I will catch up on housework and enjoy the warm sunshine before going to Morata.

And three minutes later.

“This is hard hunting so there should be a good quest reward. I need to work harder in this warring period!”



Bardray held his sword as he looked around.

His Royal Guards were cleaning up the remainder of the Roam Guild.

“S-save me! I accept the rule of the Hermes Guild.”

“Too late. You should’ve said that before the battle!”

“Cough!”

They conquered Star City and destroyed the Roam Guild. The Roam Guild was eventually exterminated. The Hermes Guild had made unreasonable demands that they couldn't possibly accept.

- Hand over the land that the Roam Guild conquered and all commercial developments.

- Dissolve the Roam Guild.

- The Roam Guild should leave their houses and settle elsewhere.

230,000 troops of the Haven Empire surrounded Star City and offered these conditions for survival.

“This is so humiliating that I would rather die.”

The leaders of the Hermes Guild had expected the Roam Guild to fight.

Bardray and the Royal Guards broke through the external walls and disposed of the defense forces. The Roam Guild fought to the death but the results didn't change before Bardray's power.

Bardray was called a god in battle and he became stronger with more experience. The Haven Empire planned to conquer the

Central Continent and he had led numerous large scale battles. He gained tough combat experience, enhanced his level and stats and gained a mysterious ability that dwelled in the forest of the elves.

His superior leadership and charisma made soldiers and knights bow to him.

“So far it has been a long road. Only a little bit of the journey remains until I reached the destination.”

Bardray didn't feel motivated to fight the Roam Guild. The Royal Guards took care of everything else after the battle. The Roam Guild had been broken a while ago so this was just a long process of taking care of them.

After leaving Continent of Magic, he had thoroughly prepared for Royal Road and helped start the Hermes Guild.

In the early days of Royal Road, not a lot of information was available to the users. In some cases, it was common to get lost after leaving a city and barely making it back.

It was normal to see distressed users near the gates. Some merchants couldn't even dream of long distance trading and just stayed safely in the cities. The cities were bustling and novice users were full of curiosity about the unknown world.

Bardray and the Hermes Guild demonstrated strength and solidarity and got ahead of their other competitors. They steadily

built up their influence in the Haven Kingdom until Bardray obtained the ultimate position.

The numerous minor guilds and powers started scrambling. They quickly seized control of the Haven Kingdom and moved on to the Kallamore Kingdom. They also joined the United Supremacy Alliance and there was a tug-of-war until they reached this point.

Soon the entire Central Continent and then the Versailles Continent would be under his reign. The period of glory he had been dreaming of would soon arrive.

“Dominating this continent as the Emperor....”

After the war ended, Bardray would lower the tax rate and establish reasonable policies for users. He would firmly lay the foundation of the empire on gratitude. There were no obstacles in front of Bardray and he believed that it was proceeding smoothly.

“Fulfilling the greatest challenge will be achieved by Bardray.”

But ironically, the broadcasting stations weren't showing the crucial event of the Roam Guild being shattered. The stations only edited it to be talked about in the evening news.

This scratched Bardray's pride. He blamed Weed who the stations were featuring heavily.

The battle between the Hermes Guild and the Roam Guild was

already decided so the stations weren't interested. Even the ratings were tired of the fight and they would rather watch Weed's adventure.

Europe's fledgling station, Zenith Media was the only one interested in paying to show the Hermes Guild's adventure.

“Weed, let's see what the result will be.”

Bardray only looked at Weed. He was still worried despite his previous victory. He watched Weed's adventure and also heard about it from other people.

The final secret technique quest baffled the Hermes Guild so they collected all the data available. The Hermes Guild prayed for Weed's adventure to fail!

If they could, they would send a large squad to the past to interfere with the adventure. More than anything else, they were furious that the invasion in the past was affecting the Haven Empire.

“It will be interesting to see if you can live. I will catch you with my own hands. And you will be the best offering in order to climb to the seat of Emperor.”

Chapter 4: The Strongest Warrior

Weed took over the advantageous position of Jonas Castle and relaxed while waiting to fight the Beiner Kingdom.

High level human blacksmiths were gathered at Jonas Castle. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that this place was the home of blacksmiths.

The Beiner Kingdom's defense army didn't want to lose this place but they were eventually annihilated and Van Hawk used them to strengthen the undead army.

The proud sculptural lifeforms protested against the undead army.

“Great Emperor, the undead is undesirable.”

“This isn't an attitude for a warrior. We need to fight justice with swords!”

10 sculptural lifeforms! Weed's charisma and strength pressed on the also wavering desert warriors.

“This isn't it.”

“Great Emperor leads us with pure power and pure strength.”

The desert warriors who accepted pillaging and slavery couldn't accept the undead troops as colleagues.

“These guys.”

Weed tried to govern them but it was difficult to convince the desert warriors. Of course, he didn't do it with words but beating them up.

“We left the desert and headed to the Central Continent for a reason.

“We are humans.”

They had a history with Weed so they didn't want to abandon him but the desert warriors had their own will.

“That's right. We need to slay the Embinyu Church in order to stop the confusion on the continent. If I wanted to be warm and satisfied then I would've just stayed in the desert. However, I left the desert so that my children and desert brethren can live well in the future.”

“I am aware of that.”

The goods pirated from the Central Continent were sent to the desert.

Many of the technology in the desert was outdated. Furthermore, technology and culture was required in the desert. The desert warriors were able to maintain a steady, high morale during the war on the Central Continent.

The warriors had a good understanding up to here. Weed's sugar-coating skills were effective.

"My wife and family is waiting in the far desert, wondering what my fate is."

The warriors thought earnestly about their family.

"My wife is pretty like a rabbit and might meet a new man."

"My son is wearing short, leather pants so he needs money. Just one pair of pants will cost 30 copper."

"....."

Weed had to listen to their complaints when hunting. The desert warriors longed for their family but couldn't be close to them. Most parents felt like this when working or their children.

"Hum hum, listen carefully. We didn't come here to live. We will fight until the end until your bones are buried. You might not like the undead but they are necessary to act as obstacles against the

real enemies. After you die, your body will also stand up and fight for the desert.”

“Great Emperor!”

“We have been too short-sighted.”

“Please punish us!”

Ddiring!

-You have persuaded your subordinates

Charisma has increased by 1.

The drop in loyalty has slowed.

These simple words wouldn't be enough to persuade the merchants in the Central Continent. There wouldn't be any concerns about the undead in the first place.

But the desert warriors were naive compared to their high strength and knowledge. From an early age, they had wandered along with Weed to the dungeons and battles. Weed was the spiritual pillar of the desert warriors!

“Arm the soldiers. And prepare the weapons.”

“Yes!”

The armour, leather and weapons store of Jonas Castle were pillaged by the occupying forces. The desert warriors obtained a considerable amount of equipment.

The Red Knife unit proudly wore a headpiece made of the feathers of a red bird from the desert.

“The scouts say that we have a few days to spare. We need to be properly prepared. We need to slay the Beiner Kingdom and Embinyu Church.”

Weed gathered the finest blacksmiths at Jonas Castle.

“I will give this to you to process. Create a sword with these 3 horns.”

He handed the blacksmiths the leather and horns obtained from the Fire Salamander King.

The polished leather wasn't remarkable but the horns were incomparable. The horns were like a transparent diamond without any impurities. It was the finest of materials but he was Sun Warrior so he had to begrudgingly leave it to the blacksmiths.

“This is such a precious material that it is a pity a fiend obtained

it!”

“Does that barbarian think we will use all our skills for him?”

The blacksmiths had dedicated their lives to working steel. This was the warring period but it was still possible to find dwarves in human cities. The dwarves wouldn't follow anyone even if a knife was at their throats.

“Then it is pointless. I will need to destroy all these materials.”

“Heeok!”

“These precious things....destroyed?”

The eyes of the blacksmiths shook!

The blacksmiths had never seen the materials from the Fire Salamander King before. Just seeing such precious materials made them able to imagine rare, obscure designs.

“It can't be helped.”

“But we can't do a good job for the enemy.”

The blacksmiths were still humans. Weed was the head of the army that stole their weapons and armour and damaged the Beiner

Kingdom. But the eyes of the dwarf blacksmith was filled with regret.

“The difference between the forces is like the earth and the sky. He even managed to destroy the Fire Salamander King.”

“.....”

The public would need thousands of sacrifices to catch the Fire Salamander King but Weed achieved it with just his subordinate!

Weed licked his lips.

“I no longer require a good weapon r armour.”

Of course it was necessary.

“Swords, magic, elementals and arrows. I can block them all.”

His words were enough to make them sick!

“Even an army of 1 million people won’t be able to block my steps!”

Weed roared in front of the blacksmiths.

It was like a man in his thirties threatening to steal a

neighbourhood kid's candy. It was like watching a polished screenplay being directed!

It was a similar tone when nagging the desert warriors but the incredible force overwhelmed the blacksmiths. They had no choice but to fear the barbarian Weed in this situation.

“This is your last chance. Make the best sword and armour with these materials within a week. If I am satisfied then my troops will leave this castle unharmed. I will let the residents leave quietly without hurting them. But if I'm not satisfied then this castle and the Beiner Kingdom will completely disappear.

Weed refused to leave without any threats.

He couldn't take the goods back to his original time so he might as well put them to good use here. If the castle's blacksmiths didn't cooperate then the materials from the Fire Salamander King would be wasted.

The blacksmiths looked among each other with worried expressions.

“What does everybody think? The goods are too precious to pass up.”

“I think so as well. We should make it. The savages are making us so we're not betraying the Beiner Kingdom.”

“Uhh, this nourishing feeling with touching this horn and the great mana. I can already taste the satisfaction when working on this with my hands.”

“Well, well! Let’s think carefully and not get too excited. This involves our lives and the fate of the entire castle.”

“Is he really going to get rid of it if we don’t make the items?”

“I heard a rumour when I was growing up. According to the rumours about the savages, our families in Jonas Castle won’t be able to survive.”

“Hrmm.”

The blacksmith with an elderly face full of wrinkles was locked in deep anguish. The dwarven blacksmiths next to him were drinking beer.

“If we don’t make things to the satisfaction of the barbarian then he will kill us.”

“I think so as well. That lousy bastard has no honour, morality or tolerance.”

“He is worse than an orc.”

The dwarven blacksmiths also poured insults but their eyes were

gawking at the Fire Salamander's horns and leather.

The instinct of a blacksmith. Their eyes could sense the finest materials. It was a strong temptation that they couldn't resist.

"But in the end, are we really qualified to deal with such precious materials?"

"Morul Hand, you are like a god!"

"My hands have never touched such materials before...and you know that iron is my specialty."

"This is a rare opportunity to touch such materials. It is no wonder that he ignored us."

"Haren Hand, your self-esteem?"

"I am thinking. Haven't we made a considerable amount of weapons and armour so far? It isn't impossible to handle such excellent goods."

"Can we handle it without making any mistakes? If I make even a small scratch on these seamless horns then I will never forgive myself for the rest of my life as a blacksmith."

"Well, this is our chance to touch the horns and leather."

Weed left the NPCs blacksmiths who were talking loudly and entered the room filled with the loot.

Gold and loot obtained from the Central Continent was piled up like a mountain! He was happy every time he saw it.

“I can’t take this back to the original world... This quest is too unfair.”

He felt like this was the worst quest after looking at the treasures.

He had already taken care of the blacksmiths. He had no more control over whether they manufactured the sword and armour. Leaving the materials would stimulate their desire as a blacksmith.

A blacksmith’s capabilities would rise when seeing good materials! They talked nonsense but their bodies would itch when looking at the Fire Salamander’s horns.

The blacksmith NPCs and dwarves knew what to do. They couldn’t help feeling greedy. He had no doubts that good work would emerge.

Weed was satisfied with his own judgement and nodded.

“Craftsmanship is important. Autonomy and creativity is important for this.”

They might feel under pressure with a time limit but the results wouldn't be bad if he left them alone.



It was the warring period so little boys were playing with swords.

“Hiyah! I am a Royal Knight of the Beiner Kingdom! You can’t meet His Majesty without passing through me first!”

“I am Captain Vincent of the Keltun Kingdom. Charge forward!”

“Huhuhu, I am the villain and tyrant Weed.”

“Heeok!”

“Spare my life.”

His infamy had spread even to the children. As the conquest war continued, Weed and his army became known as barbarian invaders throughout the warring kingdoms.

The 540,000 army of the Beiner and Mapon Kingdom approached Jonas Castle. The number had reduced by 60,000 in order to pursue Hestiger.

“Your Majesty, let’s show those savages the greatness of the

Mapon Kingdom.”

“Ohh, I’m concerned since I heard that the barbarians are very strong. But Rohadram is a reliable person that I can believe in. We won’t let anyone leave alive.”

The Mapon Kingdom didn’t have the possibility of winning a war against the desert army. But they joined forces with Sword Master Rohadram of the Beiner Kingdom.

600,000 people was a massive army but this was the warring period so it wasn’t made of citizens with swords and armour. They were well trained regulars. They had experienced numbers wars and battles and were familiar with defense and assault type tactics.

“The place we will handle those savages is Jonas Castle.”

Weed knew that a decisive battle for the continent was going to occur so he decided the location and waited there. He would devastate the enemy around Jonas Castle with tricks!

“I need to fight the Embinyu Church so I can’t waste my sculptures.”

Weed spent some time making sculptures. Time was running out but he produced works using the finest materials. In the past, he had created warm and positive sculptures to sell to other users. But now the pieces were dark and expressed the gloom of the world.

“This should be enough.”

He made mythical races that he could transform into using Sculpture Transformation. It was a work which fit Weed's aptitude exactly!

Meanwhile, the desert warriors were conducting high intensity training with the soldiers. There would be another battle with the Embinyu Church so he needed to raise their usefulness by even a little bit.

It was mainly training with charging and using their shields! Anyway, his expectations couldn't be too high.

“Great Emperor, the enemy is here.”

“Let's go greet them.”

Weed took out 200,000 troops to meet the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms. 50,000 troops were left to defend Jonas Castle from leftover forces of the Dagan Kingdom.

Seo-yoon also stayed in the castle protected by desert warriors.

“Guard her well.”

“Yes, Great Emperor.”

The knights trembled with fear.

Weed was a cruel human existence so it was natural for the knights to be scared. They had seen his great skill and heard the frightening stories.

“This treatment isn’t bad. If I commit bad actions then people won’t dare protest.”

19,000 desert warriors, 100,000 undead and 800 vampires created by Torido headed out to the battlefield. The rest of the headcount consisted of slaves.

“Numbers aren’t important in this fight. We will beat them.”

“Yes!”

Compared to the desert warriors who were excited about the upcoming battle, the soldiers were frozen. They were fighting against the elites of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms.

“Hihihit, Embinyu will take care of us.”

“Follow Embinyu. Hooray!”

The fanatics of the Embinyu Church worked hard on missionary activities among the slaves. The fanatics that had their areas seized couldn’t accept it.

“I want to go back home.”

“Can I live on this looted gold? This is mine and I won’t give it to anyone else.”

“Fire, like a firebug. Just like my surname, I will make this house burn!”

This was common in the army but Weed didn’t mind. He just intended to get rid of the Embinyu fanatics in battle.

“It is fairly systematic. Magicians, archers and knights. None of them are lacking.”

Weed stood on a hill and observed the armies of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms.

The infantry held up their weapons and shields. 2,000 people in columns carried the flags of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms, causing an scene that would normally be difficult to see. The knights wearing gleaming armour rode on horses in the central group.

“It is very desirable. People like that will be more tasty to fight.”

Weed had a greedy appetite.

If he defeated the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms then he could combine it with the south to form a great empire. The biggest empire since Geiher Von Arpen made the Arpen Empire would be born.

However, the purpose of this quest wasn't to create an empire but to defeat the Embinyu Church.

“It is really too bad. But this battle will be fun.”

He didn't rush at the Beiner and Mapon armies camped on the plains. The full-fledged battle at Jonas Castle would be delayed until the next day.

The justification of the desert army was to allow the weak kingdoms of the continent to join together. There were more troops coming from the other territories so it was advantageous to them.

Weed could afford to give them this time. He also needed to train his soldiers for the upcoming battle with the Embinyu Church. That's why he did a good thing for the enemy.

More than 500,000 troops gathered on the plains by the end of the night.

“It will take quite a bit of time to kill them all. However, it is necessary to achieve a complete victory to prepare for the next battle with the Embinyu Church. Warrior-1, I will leave command

of the soldiers to you.”

“Yes, I understand.”

“Warrior-2, you are leader of the desert warriors.”

“I will perform this task.”

He installed his sculptural lifeforms in important positions. They had experience with commanding and fighting a war.

The sculptural lifeforms used the camels to strike them strongly. And they also minimized the friendly fire against the slaves. Repeated battles had taught them not to fall into any traps.

The knight had better strength and tactics than regular users. The well trained soldiers put up a valiant assault against the desert warriors.

“Great Emperor, what are you going to do?”

Warrior-1 who was in charge of the military command had asked Weed this the previous day. Usually it was rare for him to give permission to his subordinates.

“I will fight alone. I can properly exert my skills in this battle.”

Weed hadn't used all his power since he exterminated the Fire Salamanders in the dungeon.

The 824 Royal Knights he killed just died with a touch! No matter how strong the knights were, they were just treated as neighbourhood kids.

He jumped over walls and smashed the gates during sieges before chopping up the enemies. The Mapon and Beiner allied kingdoms. This crisis was enough for him to appear on the battlefield.

“Now I can relieve me stress!”



Dong! Dong! Dong!

The sound of drums resonated through the battlefield.

“Kill all the savages who don't have manners!”

“Eliminate the nobles. This is a rare opportunity to make them suffer. We can loot after we win. Charge!”

The Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms clashed with the Red Knife army! The hooves of the horses ran through the plains.

Weed was among the recruited soldiers. He wore a gorgeous leather cloak and leather armour instead of his gold mask. He sacrificed defense in order to greatly increase his agility.

“Will we be able to live this time?”

“You’re wrong. Huhuhuk...”

“My father’s enemy is the Beiner Kingdom. I’m going to kill them.”

The slaves spoke in anxious voices.

The sculptural warriors conducted the desert warriors from above on their camels. That was Weed’s original position. The position that could oversee the largest number of people in the battle, the army commanding position.

He used overwhelming strength to lead thousands of soldiers against the enemy and gave them hope of victory. But unlike the other battles, Weed wasn’t watching and was among the combatants.

The knights from the alliance ran out after the desert warrior’s first assault. They caught each other’s tails on the wide plains.

“We can’t surrender to the invaders!”

“Full force attack!”

The enemy archers, magicians and infantry holding flags marched forward. Weed was slightly in the back and could see the troops confronting each other.

“Shield unit, thrust forward for the sake of His Majesty!”

Elite slaves holding spears stabbed through the shields of the allies. In this warring period, the level of the soldiers was very high. The slaves were their enemies.

“Please help me! I was brought here with force!”

“We don’t need cowardly bastards who would surrender to the barbarians!”

“Kuaaak!”

The alliance soldiers easily got rid of the slaves.

Half of the Red Knife army consisted of Van Hawk’s undead so this was the predetermined fate of a slave. The attacks of the archers and magicians concentrated on the slaves.

But the slaves also had a stubborn side. Soldiers picked up from Noah had survived countless battlefields. In fact, they were the soldiers that grew the fastest in this war.

It was mainly the rookie soldiers that died. They soon collapsed and the enemies approached Weed.

“You....”

The 400 allied soldiers froze. They suddenly felt chills as their imagination saw something terrifying. The entire group stiffened simultaneously!

“It is ludicrous that you are my first opponent. I wanted some stronger people.”

Weed said as he slowly pulled his sword from the scabbard. The result of the Fire Salamander King’s equipment hadn’t emerged from the blacksmiths yet. But it was like herbivores facing the king of the animals so the soldiers were stiff.

-You have equipped the Three Screaming Children Sword.

The soul of three children have fallen into a pit of bitterness and is crying out in pain.

The souls have bent to your mighty power and 100% of the power of the sword has been drawn out.

“Undulating Flame Mark.”

A desert warrior's strongest skill. It amplified and spread the aura of fire. Weed's skill exploded towards the bodies of the soldiers with an enormous force.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

There was a chain explosion due to the skill. Hundreds of soldiers were killed instantly. Apart from the soldiers of the Beiner Kingdom, the slaves were also damaged.

“Well, it is indeed a spectacular effect!”

Weed didn't care that much. It was just like throwing a rock onto the wide desert that was his infamy. Professional bank robbers wouldn't have any problem depriving a child of their candy.

“Sword Awakening, Power of Birth, Summon Another Sword.”

Brilliant light exploded from Weed's body due to the special effects of the skill! The soldiers of the Beiner Kingdom hastily lifted their shields.

“I am sorry for you.”

Weed started a monologue as he watched the scared enemy soldiers.

“It is a shame that I needed to properly exert my power. How can

I enjoy using all my power to fight you when you won't resist properly? Not much, just a little bit of fun.... It can't be helped. Because today's battle will be broadcasted in the future!"

He would receive a salary and advertising fees from the broadcasting stations.

"Let's start with the sales."

Weed ran forward while holding his sword. Every soldier that he passed by would die without needing to swing his sword. They were just swept up by a river of fire.

"He is trying to reach His Majesty. Block!"

"Knights gather here!"

He passed through the soldiers and the knights of the Beiner Kingdom tried to intercept him.

The king and nobles were still quite far away but the knights still rushed forward to escort them to safety. There needed to be an immediate and rapid evacuation of military commanders during times of war.

Of course, he could still catch 1~2 senior nobles if he wanted to. It was the law of this era that the king would have successors in case of hostages.

Weed's goal was to thoroughly annihilate the enemies.

"The knights escorting the king has appeared? Let's have a little taste."

He turned the sword in his hands.

It was a light sword trick that couldn't afford to be done on the battlefield. Therefore, it was an act that was rarely seen.

But none of the enemies could get close to Weed.

The average level of the desert warriors was 500~600 so they would just be burned by the hot flames around him. Especially the amateur desert warriors who were only around level 300.

"Now, pull out this knife."

"Yes."

"Water is on the left."

"We will bring cool water."

They were taught the basics step by step.

400 Royal Knights riding white horses rushed towards him. Their mounts contained great speed and power!

The goal of the knights that were normally called flowers of the battlefield was tragically Weed.

“Shall I try them out? No, I can’t use too much mana at the beginning of the battle.”

Weed waited until the knights came closer. The Beiner Kingdom’s knights separated in three directions and rushed from the sides and the front. They crossed at regular intervals and cut down on him!

“Ring of Fire!”

Weed wielded his sword as he turned his body. Then hot flames were emitted in all directions.

The knights about to assault him lost their lives to the flames. The deadly skill killed 30~40 knights! The rest of the knights rushed through the flames. And they used all their strength and weight to thrust the spear.

Weed stood in place and moved his sword. It was so fast that it was hard to see with his eyes. It struck the attacking Royal Knights with each movement.

Puhihihing!

The horses received a huge shock and collapsed.

Weed used basic sword techniques and overwhelming power to block the assault of the knights. He could even ignore the onslaught of the knights!

His sword surpassed the reach of the knights' weapons. He diligently intercepted the sword techniques of the knights. The other Royal Knights were assaulted by Weed's flames.

Of course, Weed collected all the japtem they dropped. This instinct was uncontrollable even in the warring period.

“Ohhhh.”

“The king of the barbarians isn't a human like s.”

“He is the type who would cut the author's neck before being forced to marry the princess!”

Weed fought using basic swordsmanship. Even so, the sight of a master swordsman wasn't common. The assault of the knights was simple swept away.

“I'm not surprised. This is like receiving a roasted bun as a bonus after ordering sweet and sour pork.”

“Kill that arrogant person!”

Someone from among the senior nobles ordered. A flood of magic and arrows rained down on Weed.

A warrior fighting alone on the battlefield without any allies!

-Absolute Defense has minimized the continuous damage.

A colossal number of attacks were concentrated on Weed but he didn't receive much damage. The magic was cancelled or the arrows fell nearby. In addition, there was also the great sight of arrows flying through the air being destroyed by fire.

This was the spectacular protection effect of Undulating Flame Mark!

His health reduced by 2000~3000 but there was still a lot remaining until he would die. His high health was due to the blessing of the earth goddess Mi-ne, who gave him the quality of an ogre. Common soldiers and magicians couldn't possible kill him!

Right now he even had the ability to make Bardray cry.

“Let's make this more fun. Black Knight's Strike!”

Weed plunged through the cracks of the army.

“One, two, three, four....ten!”

Kwaaang!

A wide area skill cause successful continuous attacks! The ground was disturbed. And soldiers of the Beiner Kingdom were lying everywhere. There was death in every direction.

Weed switched between attack and defense, especially in regards to the arrows and magic being fired at him. He combined the most efficient skills for offense and defense.

Now defense wasn't necessary but if he didn't block some attacks, mana would be consumed at a rapid pace. Some knights would've died before even completing their attacks.

“I could comfortably hunt Bardray. Especially if my offensive, defensive and wide area skills can be used.”

Weed muttered as he ran around the battlefield. He didn't worry about the location of his allies, the desert warriors and the undead army. Instead, he just focused on getting rid of the enemies.

Suddenly, he saw 100 magicians wearing white robes and chanting a spell.

“Those guys are the Wisdom of Thunder.”

It was the magic unit of the Beiner Kingdom!

They had quite a bit of history and didn't participate in border disputes. Their levels were 300~400!

When considering the profession, the power of the magician unit exceeded it. There was a fierce competition for survival in this era so the professions like merchant, artist, architect etc. had low levels while knights and magicians had high levels.

“I need to get my hands on them before others get hurt.”

The Red Knife desert unit was one of Weed's most powerful subordinates. A common goal of the knights, archers and magicians was to target them. He needed to catch the magician unit before they swept away the desert warriors.

Weed was 1 kilometre away from them so he was quite far away. The magician unit was on a hill overlooking the battlefield in order to see the enemies to cast the magic spell.

Once they cast their magic, the wind, lightning etc. would fall upon the slaves and desert warriors. All types of things were happening in the skies above the battlefield.

“End of the Day!”

A tsunami of flames destroyed the spear unit in front of him!

Weed ran towards the magician unit. He used mana much faster than before. He broke through the barrier of soldiers and horsemen.

“He is aiming at us. That swordsman doesn’t feel fear.”

“Block him.”

“Aim magic attacks at him. Circular Lightning!”

“Flow of water, emerge as a mighty stream.”

The magicians cast a long spell.

Weed surpassed the magic with his body. He broke through hundreds of metres of magic attacks.

-Magic has continuously hit you.

Your skin is healthy like a dragon and damage has been reduced.

Current health remaining is 69%.

The tremendous health of a boss class monster had caused Weed and his colleagues great pain in the past. But now his resilience was at the level of a boss class monster so Weed didn’t need to worry.

The places where Weed passed were burned by flames. His footprints caused a deep imprint.

“I really am like a playing child!”

Playing with fire! The audience ratings of the children would surely rise in this scene.

He slaughtered through the spearmen, infantry and magic attacks. Even the fearless knights retreated.

He used the Black Knight's Strike to tirelessly get rid of black magic and strong enemies.

Chapter 5: Darkness, Fear And Plague

Meanwhile on the wide plains in front of Jonas Castle, the undead army was facing against the Mapon Kingdom.

“Rise. Receive the power of the abyss and fight the enemies.”

The skeleton warriors undead Van Hawk's ran amok at his command. The skeletons grabbed the shield of the infantry and slashed with their bones. They weren't human soldiers so the skeletons were informal in battle.

“Kill!

“Cut off their limbs. Kukikikikit!”

They gathered together and recklessly rushed. There wasn't a coherent tactical moves as they just haphazardly ran through 7~8 horses. Arrows, magic and the sword of the knights shattered the bones until the skeletons collapsed to the ground. But after a while, they just rose again due to the power of the abyss.

“Legs, where are my legs?”

A skeleton with only the upper body attached started looking for its leg bones.

“Legs, my legs.”

Another skeleton that woke up was also looking for its legs.

“Give me an arm bone.”

“Ehh, I only have 2 arms.”

“Both of them are right arm bones.”

“Eh, really? I originally had two right arms.”

The skeletons even fought among themselves over the bones. The undead army became a mess after 5 minutes but the Mapon still couldn't face them easily. Skeletons that obeyed Van Hawk's commands were Death Knights or higher. They managed to reduce the soldiers of the Mapon Kingdom.

Moreover, Van Hawk directly led half of the undead knights in an assault unit! The Undead Knights consisted of Doom Knights, Dullahans and Death Knights. The Mapon Kingdom had to mobilize their magician units to block the Undead Knights.

A superpower like the Mapon Kingdom in the warring period also contained a number of highly acclaimed knights. The soldiers responded quickly and had a tight discipline. It was a kingdom that had already destroyed an undead army.

The priests could also mobilize various holy powers to block the Undead Army.

“Food is everywhere and I can freely partake in blood.”

Torido had created more than 600 vampires from residents in Jonas Castle before the battle. Moving in the middle of the night was the charm and characteristics of vampires. This was a large battle in broad daylight so they had no choice but to be weakened. Vampires fought while mixed in among the combat slaves. Their sharp teeth and fangs would cause the enemy to let go of their swords. A vampire who succeeded in drinking blood would gain significantly higher health and mana.

Simple magic was cast at the humans fighting. The Vampire Queens also brainwashed and confused the enemy. The vampires were attacked with an onslaught of arrows, magic and knights who passionately rushed there. The almost 20,000 desert warriors were fighting relatively freely. Weed hadn't given them direct orders so they moved freely among the Mapon and Beiner armies.

In particular, they acted to reduce the number of knights. But each kingdom had heroes in this age of war! Just like the Kallamore Kingdom, there were a considerable number of NPC heroes. The Mapon Kingdom had Rohadram! The wise magician Andre from the Beiner Kingdom!

Knight Commander of the Royal Knights of the Shar Kingdom, Rockstar who participated with the allied army! These heroes were very strong.

Just Rohadram alone was a sword master while Andre was also a master in wind magic. The powerful forces on the side of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms were still waiting and hadn't participated in the battle yet.

“Fire at will!”

“Ugh!”

The crossbow troops of the Mapon Kingdom aimed at a target and dropped the desert warriors from the camels. The desert warriors on the ground were killed by the follow up magic, arrows or knight attacks.

The scale of the battle on the plains was far too huge. There was a time when he led 1 million orcs in the Yurokina Mountains but not all the orcs had fought at that time. Only 300,000 orcs had fought directly against the Immortal Legion.

The breadth and speed of the battle on these plains couldn't be compared. Just a little mistake would turn the advantage towards one side. His strategy was to use the regular troops and desert units as bait. He planned to use this opportunity to throw away the fanatics of the Embinyu Church.

The soldiers and citizens left behind were watching from the walls of Jonas Castle. It was a spectacular sight!

Weed had expected this to some extent but was determined to fight alone. It helped that many elite forces focused on him. In addition, he wanted to beat the high level knights in the warring period.

“Come. If there are any knights in the Beiner Kingdom with courage then they should come challenge me!”

Weed shouted out loud. He used all his dignity and charisma to make the battlefield focus on him. In addition, his infamy was so high that it even frightened dogs and chickens in rural areas.

Weed had 41% health remaining.

Weed continued to receive interference from the magicians who caused walls of thorns to grow from the ground. He forcefully broke through all the obstacles and approached the magicians escorted by knights on horseback.

Furthermore, some magicians didn't learn attack magic and completed short range teleportation magic. A magician could escape at a rapid pace once someone approached. He took care of the knights and waited for the next opportunity to catch the magicians. Weed was in a pleased mood now.

He was an unparalleled force on the battlefield where hundreds of thousands were fighting. The enemies were weak but it gave him great enjoyment to systematically fight them.

A true God of War who could sweep away more than 100 soldiers with one blow! He used all his power with no regrets.

“Knight Omata of the Beiner Kingdom. I am the lord that rules the Yallem Castle in the Benopi area.”

A knight riding a black horse approached.

Weed didn't know it but he was a celebrity in the warring period with a level of 500. He was almost a master of his combat technique. However, he wasn't a master so the gap was quite big.

Weed could sense that he was strong and willingly accepted the challenge.

“Brave knight of the Beiner Kingdom, come.”

The knight rode towards him like a sharp arrow. He swung his long spear in a long series of continuous attacks! Weed felt a heavy feeling as he parried with his sword.

“Not bad considering that you are a barbarian. But the price for going against the Beiner Kingdom....”

“Beiner Exciting Sword Technique!”

“Keheok!”

The knight suddenly suffered great damage. The horse was immediately killed and the knight fell to the ground.

“That is our imperial sword technique, how....”

“I learned it a little while ago.”

“That isn’t possible!”

“No, it is possible.”

Weed was a sword master so he could easily learn techniques.

The Beiner Exciting Sword Technique accumulated the power of the enemy’s attack before releasing it in an explosion. If the attack power was strong and fast then the other side would lose their balance.

Weed used this exact opportunity to take care of the knight. The magic armour indicated that he was a knight with noble birth but he was defeated in a short period of time.

“It is my complete defeat. It is a honour to fight such a strong person.”

“Goodbye.”

An immediate attack with no mercy!

Weed felt the need to conserve his mana. His recovery speed was fast but he had many techniques that consumed a lot of mana. Based on his strength and vitality, he only needed to use basic sword skills to cause plenty of mass destruction.

He slipped into the heart of 500,000 troops. Usually strong individuals needed to be lured deep into enemy territory but Weed came by himself.

“Phat!”

“Fire. My body has caught on fire. Help!”

Undulating Flame Mark caused fire to sweep over 5,000 soldiers. The general soldiers weren't an existence that could stop him.

Weed only paid attention to the knights, magicians, priests and shamans.

The Beiner and Mapon Kingdoms had invested a significant amount of their power into this war. More than half of the kingdom's military power were placed at the border area. Despite that, they were just like rice to Weed.

However, Weed did receive some damage and his health was reduced to 30%.

“I don’t feel any tension.”

He was significantly harmed but it wasn’t enough to drop his combat capabilities. The Beiner Kingdom was also annoying. The archers and magicians active on the battlefield focused their attacks on Weed.

No individual would be okay when dealing with such a concentrated siege warfare. However, the magicians ran out of mana and Weed was still standing.

“Dispatch the Drake troops!”

“Lion Knights scramble!”

The pride of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms, the flying Drake unit and Lion Knights started to move.

The higher ranking knights were rushing towards Weed. It was all for the sake of catching Weed who was the ruler of the desert.

The goal of the war was Weed and the desert warriors, not the combat slaves.

“Summon the Vine Roots!”

“Mud puddles, rise!”

“Faruin’s Curse!”

The magicians and priests used magic to block him rather than attack magic.

-The thick resilience of your skin has weakened.

-A curse has captured your feet and movement has slowed.

Strength has reduced by 4% for 20 seconds.

-Faruin’s Curse!

A priest’s curse that uses a lot of holy power and faith. Faith has to be insufficient for the curse to afflict the target.

-Diminished muscle strength!

Your muscles have relaxed so strength and vitality was reduced. Strength has declined by 6%. Maximum vitality has decreased by 3%.

Countless curses were poured on Weed but they were quickly released.

However the priests and shaman’s magic that weakened power,

vitality and concentration was applied. It was for a short amount of time but 11 magic curses were applied.

“Valhalla!”

Weed gave a loud roar.

-You have yelled a shout from ancient times.

8 of the curses that dwelled in your flesh has been alleviated. Your physical ability has strengthened.

And he wore the Golden Mask of the Pharaoh. The physical defense wasn't great but it increase leadership, fame and protection against magic. A symbolic item worn by the ruler of a great empire.

“This is good enough to loosen my body. Now comes the real beginning.”

10,000 soldiers had already died because of Weed. He had also entered Van Hawk's territory where many people had been turned into skeletons.

“Now let's make it merrier.”

Weed pulled out a sculpture. Pulling out a sculpture in battle had two meanings. It was to either increase his stats with Sculptural

Destruction or to cause a disaster.

Unfortunately for the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms, it was the second option. He commanded the desert warriors to withdraw.

It wasn't Weed's concern if the undead army, the vampires or combat slaves were involved in the disaster. He was also confident that his sculptural lifeforms level and defense was high enough for them to survive.

"I hope that they all die. Great Disaster Nature Sculpting!"

-A Masterpiece Sculpture.

A fearsome havoc will be exerted that can kill you. Even so, do you want to use the skill?

"Yes"

-You have used Great Disaster Nature Sculpting.

20 Art stats have permanently disappeared.

20,000 Health and Mana has been consumed.

All stats have been temporarily reduced by 15% for 3 days.

Affinity to Nature has fallen. Great Disaster Nature Sculpting can only be used once a day.

When a great calamity is called upon, fame or infamy can be increased depending on the damage. It is possible to die in the middle of the disaster so be careful.

There had been many disasters in the meantime but this occasion was special. It wasn't a fire, lightning strike, flood, earthquake or storm.

The proficiency of Great Disaster Nature Sculpting had risen so he could now mix two disasters together. The nature of the disaster this time was a thick darkness that caused fear and a plague.

Darkness came down and quickly covered the entire army and Jonas Castle. Suddenly nothing could be seen.

It would've been okay if this was a peaceful place to relax. But this was the battlefield where anyone could die. Arrows were in the process of being shot or enemies were fighting against each other when the darkness descended.

Chang chang!

“Aaack!”

The sound of screams and fighting could be heard in the

darkness.

“We’re on the same side!”

“Who are you?”

“Embinyu Church, forever!”

“The glory of the desert will cover the continent.”

“Strike!”

“Archers, don’t fire your arrows.”

“Come to me now!”

The Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms had been entangled with the combat slaves. They were all close to the enemy.

“Nobody move!”

The knights tried to take command but it didn’t work. They couldn’t see so could only depend on their hearing. The knights couldn’t blindly swing their swords or fire arrows.

“Uaaack!”

Screams spread through the battlefield like wildfire. A few people swung their swords because they were scared by the screams and attacked their own colleagues.

‘Kill....!’

‘I need to kill in order to live.’

‘Kihhi, I don’t hate things like this. It is an opportunity. Who will know?’

Their chests started hurting as the fear rose. And some heard unknown voices.

Weed destroyed a Masterpiece sculpture of colleagues being attacked by invisible soldiers. Evil spirits were attached to the soldiers and whispered mischief. The spirits could easily effect those with weak mentality and concentration. They would become berserk or harm themselves.

An unknown plague spread quickly. The knights and priests had high resistance but the common soldiers quickly collapsed with red spots all over their body.

“Don’t miss out on this opportunity, Undead Army!”

Van Hawk gave a majestic command. His image when

commanding the undead was completely different from when he was being hit by Weed. The skeletons started shaking.

“Oh scary, scary. They think they can kill me!”

“I believed in humans. It is tough to live in this world alone.”

“That’s right, that’s right.”

“But we are already dead.”

“Ah, your words are right.”

“That’s right, that’s right.”

The skeletons weren’t as affected by the feeling of fear. They weren’t alive so their feelings were frozen. They didn’t fear plagues or death.

“My vision. Why can’t I see anything?”

“Why do you need to see?”

“Isn’t there a veil of darkness?”

“But we don’t have any eyeballs?”

“Wait a minute, let me touch... None?”

Anyway, the skeletons weren't panicked but they still didn't follow commands. The biggest disadvantage of the lower ranking undead was their bad intelligence.

Van Hawk ordered again.

“Skeleton archers, fire your bone arrows!”

“Shoot?”

“That's right, that's right.”

“Where should I shoot?”

“Wherever I feel life. Just shoot the living?”

They were frozen so they could feel the warmth and vitality of humans.

“What about our allies?”

“What does it matter?”

“Ah, yes. Hihhi.”

“Attack.”

“Anybody is fine.”

The skeleton archers pulled out bones from their bodies and fired. The bones flew up and hit the bodies of the soldiers struggling in the darkness. They didn't distinguish between the slaves, Mapon Kingdom or Beiner Kingdom. The humans tried to respond but they couldn't find the right direction in the darkness.

“My ribs are empty. There is no leg bone. Finally I have to shoot my skull.”

“Bye everyone...”

The skeleton archers that fired all the bones in their bodies were destroyed! Half of the dead bodies rose again due to Van Hawk's power. The skeleton archers attacked humans in the vicinity.

“Hihhi, this body still has a lot of bones left.”

“Die, just die.”

“That's right! That's right!”

The skeletons in the middle of the battlefield caused more confusion. In addition, the soldiers and knights were wielding swords against each other. Even the magicians and archers attacked randomly.

The slaves and undead were fighting among themselves. It was like everyone gathered on the plains were attacking each other in a fit of madness.

The sight made Weed sigh deeply.

“I think I was too short-sighted.”

He could tell how severe the damage was just from the noises. But the core of this calamity was that nothing could be seen on screen.

“I need to consider the audience!”

This would be a considerable hindrance when it came to broadcasting it. But sometimes this could stimulate the imagination instead. A tremendous amounts of casualties had already occurred among the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Merchant Gamong and Merchant Mapan!

They were the two most famous merchants in the north.

“Mapan’s trading company is the best.”

“No. It is my pleasure to be considered a symbol of the north.”

“Mapan’s company has luxury goods. I’m surprised at the level of the equipment.”

“You are the owner of Gamong’s trading company! Nobody can beat Gamong when it comes to low-cost quality goods.”

The two players compared their companies.

Mapan had invested in farms, ranches, mines, restaurants, stores, inns, smithies etc. since the early days. He greatly contributed to the growth of the Arpen Kingdom.

He had fixed contracts with many tailors and blacksmiths and constantly maintained a supply of high quality goods. It was expensive but the features were worth the price! Gamong started the period of freely trading in the north. Starting from Vent Castle, she actively helped develop trade routes between cities and villages with no strings attached. Her level was low but she was unchallenged when it came to food deals. She dragged 4 ponies and hundreds of novice beginners to trade.

“Now, let’s go! Be careful not to fall to the rear and get lost!”

-You have brought a large quantity of food to Pegi that was suffering from a poor harvest.

The stagnant population growth has been alleviated as birth rate increases by 400%.

Bring dolls that children love and a festival will take place in the village.

“I heard the story about your visit to Pegi Village. Other merchants wanted to do business with me but I was looking for Gamong. Do you have any olives?”

“Ah, thank you very much. I’ll add two more as a service. And if you are in a hurry then you can purchase it from other merchants first.”

Her wonderful reputation spread widely through the NPCs more than the users. Therefore a huge amount of NPC guests came to the outskirts of Morata to shop. Gamong also managed to open up Vent Castle and the population grew until another village was opened.

Gamong could even be found in stores in out of the way coastal villages. They were small villages with huts that would require adventurers to wander deeply in the mountains for a few days. There were tears in the village whenever Gamong discovered them.

“This is a real merchant.”

“I’m envious of her popularity. A merchant is a profession like a resident.”

“Successful trades can built intimacy and eventually you can become as famous as adventurers.”

Even other merchant users respected Gamong. It was thanks to her that starving villages disappeared from the north. Gamong played a huge role in the rapid development of the Arpen Kingdom.

“That is my target. A merchant with a keen eye and credit rather than level.”

“I will sweep away all the money in the north and then brag as the money piles up!”

Users received inspiration about how to raise their merchant character by looking at Mapan and Gamong. The arts, tailoring, adventures, elemental magic and necromancy were all taking off in the north. As people who received envy from users and were considered the representatives of the merchants, Gamong and Mapan had a fateful encounter. The Earth Palace and surrounding plains there were established in the Arpen Kingdom!

Two people who came to see the land and open a store stood

facing each other.

‘Mapan-nim is the best merchant in the north. His magnificent jaw and stomach is indeed wonderful.’

Gamong was envious of Mapan. Mapan’s reputation had already been established when she started in the north.

-Mapan has a lot of money.

-Mapan is the land speculation expert.

-Mapan who doesn’t receive bribes or kickbacks.

Some people were jealous of his relationship with Weed but it was mainly his massive investments. Mapan already owned many stores when Gamong had just finished her 4 weeks in the city.

‘I am a customer who will buy goods from here later.’

The dream of being a merchant while working in a grocery store. She felt like Mapan was a fairy tale prince.

‘That triple folded neck fat is my ideal type!’

‘Ah, pretty cute....’

Mapan also had similar thoughts.

A number of complex reasons wasn't needed when a man fell in love. It was enough if they looked good in his eyes!

Hwaryeong, Irene and Bellot. There was a wide variety of beauties around Mapan that he didn't like. He didn't care about overly flashy appearances with a pretty face. If he did then he would've liked Hwaryeong or Bellot! Like a man, Mapan spoke first.

"It is a pleasure. I've heard a lot of stories. I am Mapan."

"Ah....yes, yes! I am Gamong. Pleased to meet you."

"Excuse me, would you like to go have a drink? I'll buy it."

"No, I have delicious wheat porridge. Would you like some?"

Gamong pulled out a steaming packed lunch from her bag. Mapan thought this made her look even prettier.

"Tasty. Wookeok wookeok!"

Gamong and Mapan glanced into each other's eyes before quickly eating the porridge.

‘That type of neck really looks as good as I imagined.’

‘Ah, prettier the more I see her....’

This was the beginning of love.

Chapter 6: Van Hawk's Dignity

Darkness and fear swept through the battlefield.

A countless number of soldiers and knights had collapsed on the plains. He couldn't tell but he guessed that the number of dead and injured had crossed 100,000. The battle between the army and the defense had only occurred for a short time but there were casualties everywhere.

It was a situation where they unconditionally attacked without worrying if they were the enemy or defense. The complete darkness made it impossible for the priests to give treatment.

“Hmm, is it finally over?”

“It hurts, my whole body hurts.”

“No. I'm scared. I want to go home.”

The morale of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms had hit the ground. They didn't know if the soldiers beside them were colleagues or not. The darkness was cleared and they stopped fighting among themselves.

“This knight dares strike me....”

“Spare me, Knight-nim.”

“I didn’t know it was you. Forgive me.”

“Shut up! Hand me your neck.”

“Huck! Please spare me life....!”

“Dammit! This knight? If I’m going to die then I will burn all of this away!”

“Ahell, why did I stab my friend from my hometown?”

“It was a mistake but I originally hated you. You married my first love so I will kill you.”

Even after the darkness cleared, the bad sentiments continued. The knights took command quickly but there were still many who were undisciplined.

The battle against the slaves and undead army took place again. The skeletons in the middle of enemy territory couldn’t last for long against the concentrated attacks.

The power of the Mapon Kingdom was badly damaged while the Beiner Kingdom’s leaders were temporarily paralysed. The desert warriors who had retreated started approaching again while furiously shooting arrows.

The soldiers collapsed under the skilled attacks of the desert warriors. They swept through the enemy like they were monsters in the desert. They had originally been circling the outskirts of the disaster to prevent anyone from leaving. Any knights that exited would be killed. And they went back to shooting their bows. This petty and despicable method was the effect of Weed!

And the slaves were assaulted by cavalry. The battle had reached the climax.

Meanwhile, Weed used the darkness to arrive at the magician unit that called themselves Wisdom of Thunder.

He used the darkness to breach their stronghold. The magicians were shocked as they saw Weed who had already penetrated through their escorts.

“I’ll tell you in advance but I personally don’t have any bad feelings towards you.”

“Coward!”

“That is original.”

The magicians close to him died from the Undulating Flame Mark. It was sudden so they hadn’t been able to deploy their magic shields.

Weed swung his sword towards a senior magician. He was a well-known magician with a level of 400.

Andre, the wind magic master was next to the king. But Weed could take Andre's life at any time. The magician was very scary but he was confident about taking care of him.

It was hard to overcome such a significant difference in level, no matter how excellent the magician. The magic would cause considerable damage but it wasn't enough to take his life.

“End of the Day!”

The Wisdom of Thunder unit tried to wipe him out with a thunder storm. As he closed in on another magician, the escort knights belatedly ran up to him.

“You are 15 years too early. Even my subordinates don't dare.”

He used the Black Knight's Strike on the escorts. He took care of the knights and magicians. The frugal life he learnt even took hold in this battle.

He pinpointed the vital spots of the magicians and knights but didn't use his full power. Weed wielded his sword with maximum efficiency in order to conserve vitality. Just one light blow would kill the enemy! The magicians tried to get away but they eventually turned into grey light.

Even the knights couldn't help feeling envious of Weed's great performance. The magicians and archers capable of long ranged attacks were brutally killed.

“Try to block him. Get rid of him no matter what it takes!”

The Beiner King became terrified and issued the command. Weed was approaching the king and nobles so they wildly looked for a place to retreat.

The Mapon Kingdom was mainly battling the slaves and undead while the Beiner Kingdom's army was kept busy by the desert warriors.

And magical attacks were focused on Weed! The magician Andre waved his hands and blades of wind would fly.

“This isn't good enough.”

According to Weed's judgement, being hit by it wouldn't be a huge hindrance to his life. His level, equipment and techniques meant he was bullying everyone. Weed moved quickly through enemy territory and the Beiner Kingdom knights became the victims of the wind blades.

But Andre's attack was just a prelude. He had completed a spell that caused four huge whirlwinds to start appearing in the sky! Weed and 1,000 other people were damaged but Andre didn't care.

He didn't pay much attention to other human lives on the path he walked on. He was a senior noble in the Beiner Kingdom so he had the power to silence his victims.

“That looks a little bit dangerous.”

Weed searched around the perimeter and found magicians before they could complete a spell. He hadn't viewed it directly but he knew a lot about magic spells through the history books.

The magic wasn't completed yet but wind was blowing arrows in crazy directions. The universal formula was that the longer a spell took to prepare, the stronger it was.

“I don't need to go that way. Phoenix's Health!”

Weed cast a spell.

This was a Sun Warrior skill obtained when crossing the desert! When under the sunlight, for 3 minutes his health wouldn't drop from any attacks. Of course, the penalty was that the recovery of his health, vitality, mana and movement speed was so slow that it was impossible to run. Simply put, it was a skill that would allow him to stand firm against any big attack.

The problem was that he could only use it once a week. Weed fought the enemy in the vicinity and waited for Andre to complete the magic spell.

“This is taking longer than giving birth. I’m sure it will be effective.”

Soon the spell was completed. Heavy winds blew the bodies of soldiers into the sky. The wind lodged arrows into trees, caused soil to fly up and soldiers to drop their swords and shields.

It was possible for a sword to cut the wind but the magic power was too strong. The faster and most thorough way to catch a boss class monster was to just magicians to carve away at their health. Weed was pushed back 100 metres from the power of the wind but he still remained calm.

“I’m going to start.”

It was like a scene from a new Hollywood blockbuster movie.

“No, I need to get out.”

“Spare me, spare me just once!”

The Beiner Kingdom soldiers and cowardly knights started pleading to Andre. In fact, a knight typically didn’t have a good relationship with magicians. Weed saw magicians busily trying to perform protection magic in order to live. And finally, whirlwinds appeared in the sky from four directions. Bows, arrows, swords, axes and clamouring men started floating into the sky. Weed wasn’t fully affected by the wind so he only floated a few metres.

“Waaaaack!”

The heavily armoured knights on horseback passed by on the left and right. And they were smashed into rocks and died. Screams could be heard from everywhere. The parties involved naturally felt a strong fear of death. The people swept away by the magic lost their fighting power.

It was like being scared when sleeping outdoors in rural areas. Weed thought about it from a different angle.

He washed things by hand for a year. And he felt much easier using a 12 year old washing machine bought at a discount store. He cleaned his clothes, towels and underwear with detergent but felt cheated when he needed to hang it on the rack.

But the station officials had given him a high-capacity laundry machine for his house. The price was more expensive, there were special motors and he could wash his duvet! The rapid rotation of the water caused boundless excitement. There was no happier feeling then turning on the washing machine on a sunny day.

“The capacity of the washing machine is important but it also needs power.”

This wind storm was like a washing machine. Weed was scratched by the whirlwinds but his health didn't decrease at all.

-Due to the wind, durability of your cloak has decreased by 7.

The durability of his equipment had fallen but he could get the blacksmiths in Jonas Castle to repair it later.

“Cool. It is the summer so this wind should blow well.”

Relaxing while eating jajangmyeong and drinking a glass of coffee. The spell Phoenix’s Health still had 1 minute and 20 seconds remaining. Maybe the spell would last longer than that but by that time, it would already be weak enough that he could handle it. The desert warriors weren’t agitated or damaged by the great magic. Warrior-1 said yesterday.

“You shouldn’t die in minutes. Persistently survive in tough situations.”

Warrior-2 also agreed.

“It doesn’t matter if it is a poison trap or a fearsome attack from a monster.”

The desert raised their survival potential. Weed relaxed and waited for the magic to end. Once again, there was some waiting time on the battlefield. The Beiner Kingdom used that time to form dozens of layers of encirclement around him. More than 10 knights and cavalry surrounded him. The magicians were preparing to cast a spell again. Weed was the strongest human but no matter his power, he couldn’t ignore the armed forces of the Beiner Kingdom.

The reason for his confidence was that he had created a sculpture of a Beiner Kingdom soldier. If he needed to then he would use Sculpture Transformation and escape.

“I’ll eat well.”

The wind storm had reached its culmination. And there was an unexpected additional effect.

Weed’s Undulating Flame Mark was still active.

It was an unquenchable fire that wouldn’t disappear until the mana was gone. Weed’s fire mingled with the wind and ended up being sucked in by it. The wind storm spread the caught flames in every direction. Flowers made of fire and fireballs blew through the air and hit the kingdoms. The fire spread uncontrollably and caused an unexpected scene of destruction among the ground troops.

“I also need to be careful of the fire. Looking at the fire... Always lock your gas valve when going to sleep.”

Andre of the Beiner Kingdom collapsed as a result of the spell. The morale of the soldiers had fallen while Andre who had exhausted his mana was escorted away by the knights.

Weed stood on the ground and the undead army gave a great shout. It was closely followed by the sound of humans screaming and undead laughing.

“Hihihihit.”

“Kyahahahahat!”

Weed investigated the situation and found that Van Hawk was giving a great performance. Van Hawk was surrounded by Doom Knights and the Mapon Kingdom. The sword master Rohadram of the Mapon Kingdom had come out to deal with him.

“Human knight, I am Van Hawk who came back from the abyss.”

“It is surprising that an undead has its sanity intact. However, I won’t allow the undead to besmirch hallowed ground.”

Van Hawk and Rohadram had a one-on-one confrontation.

The two who rode a ghost mount and a white horse competed. Both thrust their swords at each other. It was the wonderful scene of a close duel on horseback. Sparks flew as the swords were parried and they maintained their exquisite balance.

Van Hawk’s level was higher but Rohadram was superior when it came to techniques.

The duel wasn’t easily finished so Rohadram became impatient. He was the best knight of the Mapon Kingdom and was used to blowing away enemies quickly. Van Hawk skilfully parried and

counterattacked, causing a serious injury while Rohadram fell from his horse. The knight was obviously defeated. The knight that came to save the Mapon Kingdom was killed so the morale of the army fell extremely low.

“Rohadram-nim was defeated... As expected, it was too much.”

“Hik, the Abyss Knight will turn us into skeletons.”

The NPC soldiers received a huge impact to their morale. Morale could increase power as high as 200% but sometimes low morale could cause them to be entirely wiped out. In fact, this didn't just apply to NPCs as sometimes human also won wars based on morale.

“Hooray Abyss Knight Van Hawk!”

“Undead Army Commander Van Hawk!”

The combat slaves and even the Embinyu fanatics gave frenzied cheers. And Weed's eyes shook slowly. While he had been suffering damage in the middle of the Beiner Kingdom's military camp, Van Hawk had been putting on a glorious performance.

“This guy made of bones, I refuse to believe in him.”

Weed was deeply grieved without being jealous. The battle wasn't over yet.

“I have to eat a lot from now on. The magicians also exhausted their mana so they are in bad shape. This is a chance for a truly outstanding performance.”

The true God of War would now descend to sweep through the enemies. Weed touched his hands to the ground.

-Vitality has been restored with the help of the Earth Goddess, Mi-ne.

He accepted the energy of the earth and quickly recovered. The regular soldiers and knights didn't dare attack him for fear of death. The moment his body was prepared!

“This is a war that can't be won. Everybody retreat.”

“This is His Majesty's command. Retreat to Dulmore Fortress.”

The Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms who suffered enormous damage abruptly retreated.

When the dead and wounded soldiers were added up, they lost 150,000 soldiers. That was in contrast to the desert warriors who were almost all alive and the undead that hadn't seemed to be reduced at all.

More than half of the combat slaves had died but that didn't have

a great significance.

“No! I absolutely won’t let you retreat.”

It was easiest to raise achievements when the army was retreating. Many materials were left behind while the Mapon and Beiner Kingdom rapidly tried to escape the battlefield. The cavalry fled while the infantry threw away their shields to retreat. They weren’t concerned at all about defense while running away.

“Attack, undead troops!”

“Kuhihihit!”

Abyss Knight Van Hawk led the undead army to chase them. During the battle, it was common for many Doom Knights and Death Knights to be generated. It was the best combination to cause damage to enemies when chasing.

“Spirits of the desert, let’s show the weak fellows of the continent a bitter taste!”

“Wahhhh!”

Warrior-1 drove the desert cavalry after the enemies. They shot arrows and threw their axes to literally slaughter the infantry.

“All my suffering... This can’t be!”

Weed quickly chased after the undead knights and desert warriors. However, he couldn't catch up and stop them. Weed found a horse that lost its owner.

“Run right now!”

The horse followed the knights.

He entered the military camp of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms and chopped up many knights and nobles. The enemies were too busy trying to flee to fight back so a one-sided slaughter took place.

But then he heard a cry!

“Warrior-7 has captured the heir to the Beiner Kingdom!”

“Unbelievable.”

“Warrior-2 has sliced the leader of the magician unit!”

“No. That is mine!”

Weed was in an area that only contained ordinary soldiers and knights. He was in a bad mood despite gaining easy victories.

But tens of thousands of soldiers appeared on the road where the

Beiner and Mapon Kingdoms were retreating.

“Are they here to support the army or were they pretending to escape to set up an ambush? Then this will be war!”

Weed’s body was still in good condition and he liked that he could continue fighting. However, the army that appeared didn’t belong to the Mapon or Beiner Kingdoms.

“Wahhh, Hestiger is back!”

“Hestiger-nim has returned after destroying Opus Castle and he has blocked those guys!”

The odious Hestiger who always had good luck follow him!

Every time Weed thought Hestiger would die, he always returned with almost no loss of troops. Weed grew during the Nodulle’s Growth quest but he wasn’t the only strong one. The NPC subordinates had grown together with him and earned great achievements in battle.

Weed had no choice but to envy the NPCs.



The Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms trying to retreat suffered a crushing defeat!

The remnants withdrew to Dulmore Fortress that had several layers of defensive magic. There was a river mixed with silver flowing through the fortress. The holy property of silver meant that the undead couldn't invade the grounds.

But only half of the troops managed to reach the fortress alive. The Beiner and Mapon Kingdoms had ordered a retreat because they were scared of Weed. He had caused great damage and overwhelmed them with his power.

“I'm still hungry despite winning so it hurts.”

Weed led the army that chased them and took prisoners from nearby cities.

Civilians and soldiers were secured. The soldiers weren't much help in the war but they could be used to maintain the size of the undead troops.

The Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms had a firm military policy. Dulmore Fortress was a gateway to the capital. The southern barbarians and undead could not be allowed to pass through.

In the end, the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms abandoned half their cities.

“The military should prepare for the next battle.”

The kingdoms in this warring period was just a starting battle!

The real challenge was facing the Embinyu Church. The biggest war in this era hadn't occurred yet! A war with the Embinyu Church didn't even exist in the history books. Weed gave a command to Warrior-1.

“Prepare armour and weapons for the prisoners.”

The amount of prisoners this time was 100,000 people. The soldiers that tried to escape ended up surrendering.

“How is it?”

The regular residents were different from trained soldiers. There was no chance of them revolting.

“Okay. They realize that they have to face the Embinyu Church in order to survive.”

The Embinyu Church was leading a great army that surpassed imagination. Even if the best soldiers surrendered, it would be difficult to survive.



Korea University.

Lee Hye-yeon was very famous because of her brother. Weed's little sister! People gazed at her from far away.

“I can't believe it. Is she really orc Karichwi's sister?”

“You have a strange orc mania but she really is Weed's sister.”

“How can the appearance of a brother and sister be so different?”

Lee Hye-yeon was known around her university to be cute and pretty. Seniors had a crush on her even when she was simply dressed in blue jeans and a t-shirt.

“Hello, Hye-yeon. Do you have time?”

“I'm sorry. Sunbae-nim. I have a task in the library.”

“What is it? If I can help....”

“I should do it alone so that my capabilities increase. See you next time.”

She spent a lot of time in the library. She steadily attended the lectures at university, obtained A in most of her classes and received a variety of scholarships.

When she arrived at the school cafeteria, she only needed to look

around once.

“Sunbae-nim!”

“Hye-yeon, do you want some of this rice?”

“Yes!”

“Do you want to have a meal together?”

“Yes, sunbae-nim!”

Her charm was deployed when it came to the school cafeteria!

“Sunbae-nim, did you learn foreign and diplomatic studies last year? I don’t remember which textbook... Where can I buy it?”

“You are taking it this semester? I have the textbook.”

“Wah, thank you very much!”

Food, tuition and books were all free. She always kept a record of her schedule on her phone.

“Kim Jin-sik sunbae fed me two days ago and Ho-joon sunbae two weeks ago. This can’t be missed.”

She had a special system for the seniors who bought her food. However, she didn't go to MTs or drinking parties.

“I'm sorry. I need to study.”

“You can gather people to do the assignment afterwards. It is just one drink.”

“My brother told me not to drink with men. Men are animals that absolutely can't be trusted.”

She thoroughly avoided drinking. She had heard many stories of university students so she was wary of drinking. But she also encountered a crisis.

“Why are you always rushing off? The professor is attending this time.”

The president of her association forced her.

“Hye, this time it is hard to refuse.”

Lee Hye-yeon followed her department to a meeting at a bar. The story of her attendance had spread so many juniors and seniors were there.

“Now, drink!”

The professor handed her a beer.

In fact, drinking until the person was drunk was more common in the older generation. Nowadays, it was common to drink in moderation and finish early. Of course, there were still plenty of stories and confessions when drinking.

Lee Hye-yeon drank beer and soju. Her features when holding the cup was like a professional.

“Give me that? Sunbae seems weak to alcohol.”

“No. I’m going to drink.”

And coolly downed the shot.

“Kyah, so good.”

“H-Hae-yeon, I thought you couldn’t drink alcohol?”

“Drink? It isn’t because I can’t drink. I just think it is expensive and a waste of money.”

Successive cups of alcohol entered her mouth.

“Eat snacks while drinking.”

“I don’t like the taste of wine.”

Lee Hye-yeon strictly stuck to drinking. The professor of the department also paid attention to her.

“Hye-yeon, have you drank some alcohol before?”

“Yes, I used to play around a little when I was younger.”

“Haha, did you chew some gum as well?”

“No, I used to go drinking with my friends and chewed on razor blades.”

“.....”

Lee Hye-yeon was drinking alcohol after a long time so she felt talkative.

“I acted thoughtlessly when I was young. I drank all night and fought with teenagers passing by.”

“You played dangerously. Hasn’t an accident ever occurred?”

“There’s nothing much. One time my friend got into a motorcycle accident and fell into a coma? Ah, that’s right! I heard

she woke up some time ago and I've been planning to contact her. I should call her now."

"....."

"I played and was caught by my brother."

"Did your brother get angry a lot?"

"Yes. The first time I broke my leg. I had a thought when lying down in a room for 3 months. I was caught and my limb broken. I couldn't do that to my brother... My spirit has woken up since then."

Her older brother was the one who derailed Lee Hye-yeon's violent youth.

Chapter 7: Eternal Colleague Zahab

Geomchi, the instructors and the trainees fell into a deep anguish.

A number of people were worried in Royal Road.

‘How should I proceed with this quest?’

‘ Find the mushrooms in the Yulun Mountains... It will be dangerous with my skills.’

‘What direction should I raise my attack skills in?’

A character’s growth and quests. Royal Road was like real life and had many choices. People would encounter crossroads that would cause struggle.

But the concerns of Geomchi, the instructors and the practitioners wasn’t at such a high level. They didn’t live a complicated life. If they were hungry then they ate and they fought strong opponents.

Geomchi-2 had a psychiatrist as a girlfriend but there were still things he didn’t understand.

‘Insomnia? Why can’t I sleep at night? Can’t I just close my eyes

after lying down and snore?’

‘Am I stuck in a depression while hating the world? It isn’t a complete lie. I would commit suicide if I needed to roll around in a field of dog poo.’

If psychiatry was used on them then the result would be that they were suffering because of Weed.

“Teacher-nim, I’ve realized that we’ve been too lazy after seeing Weed’s adventure.”

“I am ashamed that I haven’t caught a dragon first. We have no pride as teachers.”

“I understand, Teacher-nim. This is all our fault. We didn’t properly support Teacher-nim.”

Geomchi and the instructors were upset by Weed’s adventure.

It was common sense since Weed had played Royal Road longer. In addition, he invested more into it over a long time. They praised him after he founded a kingdom but succeeding in quests with complex conditions annoyed them.

It felt like going to catch a strong monster for a quest was just a simple errand.

There was no need to distinguish between the good and bad guys. In the past, they made money during the days of poverty from the quests but now they weren't enthusiastic about it.

But...

“Weed is fighting the Chaos Dragon...hrmm.”

“He hasn't won yet Master-nim.”

“Even so, my body is itching.”

Geomchi and the students envied the thought of fighting against a dragon. They had already been melted by a dragon's breath so they knew how reckless it was. No matter how good they were with a sword, they couldn't fight a dragon. They were aware of the limitations of a swordsman in modern times and quietly raised their power.

However, now they heard that Weed had a quest that required going to the past and fighting a dragon. It was a thrilling thing.

“Dragon slayer. I was aiming for this title from the beginning.”

“Sob, I missed the chance at greater glory.”

Geomchi, the instructors and the trainees felt like they had been complacent and lazy.

“What have we been doing so far?”

“The Martial Artist Master Quest.”

“That....raising the disciples.”

Geomchi and the instructors were teaching their skills to NPC disciples. They needed to pass on their martial arts in order to pass through an advanced dungeon.

“Swung your sword.”

“Until when?”

“All night until it seems like you are going to die. I will kill you first if you stop.”

The teachers weren't caring or understanding and became irritating when inspecting the students' skills. Nevertheless, there was a discerning selection of disciples.

They might have plenty of experience but couldn't endure the training. Talent was important but they would rather teach those who would die by the sword.

“My parents are bandits....”

“I need to be strong in order to get revenge.”

“I just want to become like Teacher-nim.”

“Do you want to join your parents?”

The disciples grew like sprouts and passed a dungeon. After that, their lives were their own.

Some joined the Arpen Kingdom as knights while others decided to wander the world as mercenaries. Some decided to switch directions from a swordsman to a merchant.

“You want to be a merchant?”

“Yes, sorry Teacher-nim.”

“No, a merchant is also a good profession.”

Geomchi-101 allowed the disciples to deviate from the path. He knew the benefits of a merchant. Merchants familiar with a sword could go hunting.

Geomchi-5's disciples were beaten too much and fled as soon as they escaped the dungeon. And they became famous bandits somewhere.

“The disciples I raised learned a few skills.”

Geomchi-3 recalled the last few days. He had taught his disciples martial arts for a month. It strengthened their skills, enhanced their body, expanded their vision and gave them superhuman health.

The skills were raised again and again over the course of the training. The skills would disappear if they didn't reach advanced level 3 within 3 months. In addition, they wouldn't be able to proceed with the Martial Artist Master Quest.

The Swordsman Master Quest could be delayed at any time. The Martial Artist one couldn't. If they made even one small mistake or failure then their master qualification would be discarded. It could be considered quite an unfair penalty.

Geomchi and his intern disciples were rather satisfied.

“Martial arts isn't the same as other professions so this treatment is appropriate.”

“Yes of course, Master-nim!”

Each one of them had their own pride and entered the mountains for 3 months. The mountains had an atmosphere where the disciples could quickly cultivate their martial arts.

They trained their skill proficiency upon the branches and animals in the forest. A variety of unique training courses were designed to train their newly acquired skills. Once their levels became higher, their combat skills would become stronger. The result of their swordsmanship also differed.

In fact, it was hard and boring for humans to swing their sword for 3 months. However, Geomchi yelled at them to swing their swords every day.

“I’m can still continue....Geomchi-505 handpicked me.”

“Why are they so tough? I just want some rest.”

During to the competition in the mountains, their swordsmanship rose at a tremendous rate. Each one of them achieved at least advanced level 9! Their bodies were completely trained and special stats and achievements were added.

“We have just been playing around.”

Geomchi nodded heavily.

“It can’t end here if we want to save our pride.”

“Teacher-nim has the right idea.”

“Normal monsters are like chickens and can’ be compared to the

strength of a dragon.”

“Yes.”

Geomchi and his disciples had already caught a variety of monsters in the north. They ran furiously through dungeons and defeated monsters, but they placed no value in it.

“We should create a group of knights.”

“That is a great idea!”

Geomchi thought weren’t sympathetic to his disciples. Being a great teacher made him feel better. Geomchi often displayed erratic behaviour and this time he spoke after thinking deeply.

“After looking at Weed’s battle, knights are the ones who fight systematically and can increase the effect by dozens of times. Winning or losing a battle can depend on the performance of the knights.”

“Yes, that’s right.”

“And the fight of those children on the Central Continent is spreading.”

“Yes.”

Rumours spread that the Haven Empire was going to invade the north. The users who volunteered for the military and the Grass Porridge Cult of the Arpen Kingdom started formulating battle plans.

“We should organize a proper troop of knights and how properly show those guys. Then we can catch that bastard called Bardray.”

“Your disciples can’t keep up with Master-nim.”

“After completed a perfect victory, we will then move onto a dragon.”

“Yes, as you command.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Weed had left the Arpen Kingdom for a long time and would be amazed when he returned.

“Won’t they perish with no king?”

“Yes, we should go back.”

If a kingdom was left unattended by the king, security would worsen due to bandits or thugs. Therefore, residents would quickly escape.

However, the security around Morata and Vargo Fortress was very good. There were a few burglars in the commerce area but there was a great revival of the economy.

Currently the Arpen Kingdom had almost extended through their entire north. Even residents living deep in the swamps or mountains were dependent on the Arpen Kingdom's economy and culture.

Adventurers and warriors belonging to the Arpen Kingdom received requests to fight monsters. Merchants completed business deals and miners developed the mines. Residents were thankful to have work.

The Arpen Kingdom established a large army to fight against all the monsters in the northern area. The birth rate in the north miraculously increased and it wasn't just humans living on the spacious land....

“Chwik!”

“I can build a house here. Mother chwi chwik!”

“If we buy this cave then there will be no place to lie down. Chwi chwiik!”

The orcs that came from the east by the north flourished in the north! The orcs had settled around Vargo Fortress and orc users could start there. They mainly chose appearances that resembled

Karichwi.

The orcs reproduced quickly and became an iconic feature around Vargo Fortress. The orc troops consisting of 20,000~50,000 could face any tough monsters.

They didn't conquer the inside of dungeons but there were no large scale monsters wandering around the mountains. The orcs migrated to the far mountains. And the orcs continued building houses around Vargo Fortress.

“This deer leg tastes chwi chwit delicious. Chwik!”

The orcs didn't burn it over fire and liked the taste of blood flowing from the leg. Plenty of users liked the wild life of the orcs. And the fortress was overflowing with orcs.

“Get out of the way. Chwi chwit!”

“Chwi chwit I was first!”

The orc leaving the fortress clogged the roads like workers commuting during rush hour. One orc user led a minimum of 100 baby orcs out of the fortress.

“This fat pig chuchik!”

“That orc is ugly chuchichik!”

Orc users lived separately from each other in order to hunt and seek food. It was easy for the orcs to be comfortable in the fortress. They purchased bad food from merchants and used it to raise their children.

The occasional passer-by could watch a cute orc baby one day only to have it grow 2 metres and 30 centimetres the next day. The orc families formed a large force and could go to larger hunting grounds to face stronger monsters.

The dream of an orc user was to become an extremely strong orc warrior. Eventually they would lead a tribe containing tens of thousands of orcs.

“Leave for undeveloped land, chwi chwi chwik!”

Orcs and their children discarded their stable hunting grounds and good to look for remote areas in the north.

In fact, high level orcs didn't necessarily prefer life and death adventures. But it could be difficult to settle a tribe consisting of thousands of orcs. Due to the nature of an orc, they could only establish a habitat quickly with strong forces.

The orcs left Vargo Fortress to find more dangerous areas and many orc villages quickly formed in the Arpen Kingdom.

But the internal affairs of the Arpen Kingdom was solid.

“I’ve never seen that road before.”

“Yes, it was made by an architect.”

“Did a bridge always connect that river?”

“I don’t know. It wasn’t there a few days ago.”

“Let’s adventure further north. I know a good hunting ground and ruins.”

“Is there a supplies plan?”

“Before there was nothing in the wilderness but now there is a city.”

A colossal civil construction project!

Now the Grand Buildings were only local events. Every city had a population of humans, dwarves, orcs, avians and barbarians so there was an unthinkable development.

“How is all of this possible with our taxes?”

“Then all this is the king’s money?”

“I don’t know but the Arts Centre possesses at least 890,00 works of art.”

“There is also an operation to restore Mordred, the capital of the Niflheim Empire.”

“Villages are also being built by the ceramists.”

“It really makes no sense.”

“I’m glad that we live in the north. We never would’ve been able to see it change so quickly if we hadn’t.”

It was determined that the prestigious guilds were the losers in the Central Continent and that the Haven Empire would invade the north. The prestigious guilds didn’t dare try to become lords in the north. The users and residents unconditionally protected the Arpen Kingdom. If anyone tried to build an independent village in the north then the residents and users would wage a vicious war of aggression.

In fact, there practical reasons for the Arpen Kingdom to forget about the Haven Empire for the moment and just devoted themselves to trade and hunting.

The quality and quantities of the users kept on increasing. The tax income of the Arpen Kingdom was very large but it was difficult to afford the expenditure.

In fact, all of this was due to the combined effort of the users. Merchants sold grains to farmers that they then planted. Miners dug out silver, gold, iron etc. Adventurers explored ruins and unearthed antiques and treasures. Tailors and blacksmiths became busy as orders kept on increasing. The beginner avians that had no money willingly pulled out their own hair to be sold. No matter how many feathers were pulled out, they would just grow back again.

And all the taxes were gathered at the capital of the Arpen Kingdom to be distributed. It barely changed after Weed had become king.

“Be careful of aides or family ties in politics.”

Deceit still existed in an era like this. Therefore Goldman, Yellowy, Bingryong and the wyverns monopolized the positions of power in the kingdom. They were silent in front of the dictator but exercised their rights when Weed was absent.

“Gol gol gol, gold is gold!”

Goldman received the tax money and invested it in different areas.

“Money shouldn’t rest. Gol gol!”

He didn’t deposit it in any savings and made immediately investments! Goldman permitted the important development

projects in the north.

Areas like great architecture, urban road construction and expansion, military establishment, large granary and mine development were all worked on.

Money was generously poured into these projects.

“The money remaining in the kingdom is o, gol gol gol. I worked hard today gol gol.”



Weed harnessed the Mapon and Beiner cities around Jonas Castle.

The Embinyu Church was approaching so he was running out of time.

“But we are the good guys.”

“.....”

“Things like compassion and generosity isn’t useless. All of this... We unconditionally destroyed cities and killed civilians. We also have prisoners of war. There is no justification for it.”

Warrior-1 still hadn't been corrupted by the evil mentality and desire to destroy.

“Aren't these actions really bad?”

“It is in order to deal with the upcoming large battle. The entire continent is in danger of being subjugated by the Embinyu Church. This is a sign to save the world but it is too hard without your cooperation. If you fear small sacrifices then you can't protect the peace.”

“I understand.”

Weed used saving the world to scam the warriors! His subordinates had absolute loyalty so they would believe in anything. Weed destroyed the infrastructure of the cities in order to damage the Haven Empire.

“I like this a lot.”

Funes was the capital of the Beiner Kingdom. The canals resulted in a city with a beautiful view. Boats rode around the canals for a picturesque and beautiful scenery. The city still existed in the Haven Empire but the scale of it was a little smaller.

“Living in a village in this place would be nice.”

He could relax and enjoy life.

“There is no doubt that the value of this land would climb in the future.”

A craftsman asked the commander.

“I think this is a beautiful city....should we really let the soldiers loot it?”

“Block off the canals with stone and dirt.”

“Then all the water will overflow and be lost.”

“Exactly. That is my aim.”

Weed was unmatched when it came to planning wickedness!

This was an unexpected side effect of what he studied in school. He would read maths and English books at night before closing his eyes because he was sleepy. However, his eyes cleared of the fog when he thought of bad things. All his sleepiness fled and curiosity burned inside him. Thinking of bad actions increased his concentration and enhanced his imagination!

“Break the large buildings in the city. Built a large statue in the middle.”

“Yes, I understand.”

He forced the residents and artists to build a bronze statue up to 65 metres. A statue of a bald Weed holding his thumb upside down! It was a work that celebrated the tyrant Weed.

“My mood will climb when thinking of this.”

Weed didn't care about angering the Hermes Guild now. He had already shattered the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms so there was no restoring their relationship.

“Over time, this bronze statue might remain in the city and I can see it at a later date.”

He had plundered so many riches that there was no place to put them. Necessary things were snatched and battle equipment used. Trading with merchants for combat supplies weren't necessary anymore as they looted most of it.

The most emphasis was placed on forced conscription. A training centre for the soldiers was opened at Jonas Castle. The young men trained with swords and shields.

“You need to fight the Embinyu Church in order to survive.”

The residents were used to increase the headcount of the soldiers.

“Let go of my father. My mother is sad.”

A pretty, nine year old child grabbed a soldier's leg and begged for her father to be returned. A pretty woman wailed from behind. She was the wife of a man forced into conscription.

The scene that Weed passed by was enough to touch the heart.

“Attendant.”

“Yes.”

“Bring that child over here.”

The soldiers caught the child and dragged her over. The soldiers had become cruel after so much looting.

Weed said in a friendly tone.

“Child.”

“Please save my father.”

“The world is at risk so I can't accept your request.”

“Give me back my father.”

“Your father is fighting with us for world peace.”

“No, you are a bad person.”

Weed was notorious throughout most of the continent. The Embinyu Church did bad things but they were hidden actions. Weed was a brave warrior with the task of saving the world.

“I am like a lonely hero in the movie who is always misunderstood by the people around me. I suppose this is evidence of that.”

“You are just like fungus.”

“Yes, I understand little girl.”

“Gleaming baldy.”

“This is evidence that I’ve lived my life with frugality.”

He had unshakable spiritual strength.

The Embinyu Church was still quite far away because their advance was slower than expected. They didn’t want to arrive until the tower was completed and the Chaos Dragon summoned. This was the decision of the high priests.

The fanatics fell asleep in broad daylight. Then they would secretly march through the mountains and forests in the middle of the night. In the evening, Weed could see the videos about them and calculated that they would arrive in approximately 16 days.

Another reason was that they avoided going straight through cities and villages. The Embinyu Church captured troops defeated by Weed and turned them into fanatics.

“There is quite a variety of choices.”

Thanks to that, Weed had time to prepare for the war. This was a different time zone so there were a large number of the variables that could affect the fight. The power of the Embinyu Church was enough to dominate the entire continent.

But Weed and his subordinates' abilities were also strong. They could compete to become the strongest power on the continent.

“The Embinyu Church is approaching to cooperate with us.”

“Rubbish! Their army is coming to make a blasphemy of the Atrock Temple.”

Weed sent troops to the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms to ask for cooperation against the Embinyu Church. He wanted to coerce some priests to face the advancing army. Weed led the troops directly to the Atrock Church in the Beiner Kingdom.

“I am fighting against the Embinyu Church.”

“Don’t try to lie. We know that you are leaving the desert to occupy a fertile land.”

The volatile atmosphere around the Atrock Temple indicated that it would soon be a battle. His infamy had risen due to the repeated conquest war.

The temple had combat priests that were very brilliant at battle. Of course, Weed and the desert warriors didn’t want to start a fight.

“It isn’t a lie. I have received the blessing of Atrock. That’s why we should fight together!”

Weed shouted within Atrock’s Temple.

-Your absolute charisma has overwhelmed the army.

Leadership has strengthened and they will listen to any command.

The soldiers have become full of courage. They won’t feel fear under any circumstances.

The soldiers will become calm without falling into chaos.

The high loyalty means that betrayal or defection on the battlefield won't occur.

The soldiers' experience will greatly increase after battle.

Atrock's Cry wasn't a skill he learnt but a blessing received by the god.

"That person has God's blessing... The Embinyu Church is our enemy as well. We will fight together."

The situation was reversed in an instant and he could obtain the cooperation of the priests of the Atrock Church. He used this method to gain support from the paladins and priests of the 7 large religions like Tyr, Mi-ne, Freya and Lugh.

There were other kingdoms but they were too far away so he didn't ask them for help. He also failed to enter to pass through Dulmore Fortress to reach the capital of the Beiner Kingdom. Therefore he concentrated on gathering other people.

The patron god of the barbarians. He headed to the temple and recruited 200 barbarians who were decent warriors! The defensive capabilities could be comparable to the desert warriors. They were useful in battle even if they couldn't gain any large achievements.

The Hagar Church dealt in lightning magic. Weed had discovered traces of the Hagar at Montvertruria. Excellent magicians had built the church themselves but only existed in the warring period

before disappearing shortly afterwards.

The Hagar Church ran to join him as soon as he arrived.

“God Hagar has told us to fight along with you.”

“Eh? What is this?”

“The Hagar cannot be excluded from going to fight the Embinyu Church.”

They cooperated in order to raise their reputation. This choice might cause their destruction to come faster.

And Weed had a really unexpected visitor.

When looking at the date, it had been a long time since he arrived on the Versailles Continent in the past.

Zahab the sculpting master visited the camp on horseback.

“After we parted at Portu Castle, I heard rumours that you were alive and came to confirm it.”

“I’m glad that Zahab-nim is still alive.”

Weed hadn’t expected to see Zahab again.

He had already been quite old even in the original time. After spending 22 years on the Versailles Continent in the past, his hair had turned completely white. But his eyes were still clear and his physique sturdy.

“A tremendous change seems to have happened as you are now leading a great army.”

Weed was far inferior to him in the past but now Zahab couldn't even defeat him.

“I roamed around the world after escaping with you. I feel like this world is really terrible.”

“In what way?

“The definition of justice is ignored in this era. I wanted to fight to correct this but realized the limits of my strength. I was too weak to freely help others.”

Zahab was extremely strong but he was invincible in the warring period. All the kingdoms had above average military power. If he touched the wrong army then even a sword master would have his throat cut.

“I collected many talented people and taught them swordsmanship and sculpting.”

“Ah, I can see that.”

“There are 100 people but their skills aren’t as reliable as yours.”

Weed thought it was a waste and would rather just teach sculpting. But having Zahab’s group join without do any harm.

Weed said in a complex voice. It was his typically voice when trying to flatter someone.

“In fact, I have something to tell you.”

“What is it?”

“I tried not to let other people know this but... I believe I can tell Zahab-nim. Did you know that the Embinyu Church is even hiding in this world?”

“What?”

Zahab was a genuine man. He didn’t forget his first love Queen Evane for his entire life. Apart from that, he only cared about the sword and art. This type of human was the easiest to target.

“The Embinyu Church right now is much mightier. It can’t even be compared to the future. So I am preparing for a war to stop the Embinyu Church.”

It was a typical pattern when bragging about what a great guy he was!

“Think about Queen Evane who you always longed for. The lonely queen protected her land from the Embinyu Church by herself. I won’t hold it against Zahab-nim if you say no, but... Do you want to fight with me?”

Weed reached out hand to Zahab. If he refused then Zahab would’ve abandon his first love Queen Evane for a comfortable life. As expected, Zahab grabbed his hand vigorously.

“I’m willing to fight.”

The bald Weed laughed. He would make the old man Zahab work until his spinal cord was removed.

Chapter 8: Python Going To The North

The blacksmiths at Jonas Castle decided to process the leather and horns of the Fire Salamander King.

“If I don’t make it with my own hands then I will spend my whole life regretting it.”

“There is no need to hand it over after we complete it.”

“I would rather hide or dispose of it than hand it over to a villain.”

They might have ulterior motives but the dwarves sincerely worked on it. The horns of the Fire Salamander King were as hard as a diamond so they were difficult to dent. “I didn’t realize something this hard existed.”

“Morul Hand, you will only start to know it from now on.”

“Yes! Dwarves can’t give up so easily.”

The dwarves encountered some difficulties. They were so focused on the horns that they forgot about Weed. The humans worked on the leather. They tried to use sharp swords to cut up the leather.

Swords had an effect on it but magic was no use. The leather

would simply absorb the magic and become cold.

“Even loosely cutting it has produced a perfect piece. The armour made from this leather would outperform any equipment by a dozen times.”

“The smooth texture is good and there is magic defense. Isn’t it possible for us to wear this to hunt monsters?”

The tailors could imagine facing strong monsters with armour made from this leather. They would be astonished if they knew that Weed could hunt such monsters with his own ability. Weed would use the leather and horns to fight against the Beiner Kingdom and their allies. The residents devoted themselves to the sword and armour. The goods weren’t specifically made to damage the Beiner Kingdom due to the war with the Embinyu Church in the future.

“What is the Embinyu Church?”

“I don’t know. But they seem to be a group trying to destroy this world. And he is a warrior trying to save the world.”

“Do you believe that?”

“The goddess Hestia showed up in my dream and told me everything.”

“The dream of a dwarf is real.”

Weed had a special bond with Hestia, the Goddess of the Forge.

A grand building, Hestia's Forge was built in Morata and he made a considerable donation to the church. Hestia existed in this time and unexpectedly had many followers.

Magicians with faith would go to school to learn fire magic. The Blacksmith God was in charge of minerals rather than fire so not all dwarves worshipped him. Some didn't care about the gods and just drank beer heartily and slept while snoring. Only heroes in the world would receive the attention of the gods.

Hestia helped Weed a little bit. The dwarves needed a way to work the horns from the Fire Salamander King.

"This processing method isn't working. There isn't one scratch."

"Should we leave the circular handle attached like that?"

"A length is beyond 5 metres... It will be big and beautiful but handling it might be inconvenient."

"Somehow we need to process this properly. The pride of the dwarves is hanging on this."

The 100 blacksmiths at Jonas Castle were stuck. In fact, they had only previously handled iron so they were apprehensive about it.

The form or length of a sword didn't really matter to a sword master. They could basically beat small opponents with just their power. If he took advantage of Sculptural Transformation to turn into an ogre then his physical power and agility would be sufficient. Sculptural Destruction could also be used to handle the horns.

However, the dwarven blacksmiths had their own pride and wouldn't give up. They used numerous methods but couldn't physically cut or break it.

“The last resort is to place it in the furnace.”

“Are you sure? If it melts then we'll have to discard it....”

“This level of strength won't melt it. Do you see any other way to try?”

“Let's just give it a little try!”

There was a long horn in the middle and two small ones on the side. The dwarven blacksmiths placed a small horn in the furnace as a test.

“It is starting. Remove it immediately if there is some type of accident. Hrmm, it seems to be working well.”

“Now I'm starting.”

However, there was little reaction from the horn.

“Morul Hand, this seems to be too weak so raise the power of the fire.”

Wood was tossed on the hearth to enhance the power of the fire. And there was a change in the furnace. The horn of the Fire Salamander King glowed with a white light and started eating the flames.

“Is this something?”

“I don’t know. Continue lighting the fire!”

The furnace had been turned off due to the horn absorbing the fire. The dwarves continued stoking a new fire. But no matter how big and strong the fire was, it was soon gone. The dwarves were immersed in the work and continued lighting the fire until it was finished.

By the time Weed came to Jonas Castle, the tailors and blacksmiths were almost like corpses.

“The things?”

“Here.”

The humans handed over the leather armour first. The material

was leather but the structure was as solid as steel armour. The red leather was soft and warm to touch. It also wasn't heavy as it was light in his hands.

“Um.”

Weed was satisfied in his heart. It felt like choosing clothes at a luxury department store!

But he still needed to check the quality of the clothes even if it came from a luxury brand. But his eyes didn't notice any shortcomings in the armour.

Weed used his Sewing skill but couldn't find any faults. The buttons were made from gold clam shells and there was no lint on it. But Weed didn't show any satisfaction on his face. The tailors seemed to notice and said.

“The pattern of the leather will be revealed with heat.”

“Hrmm, is that so?”

Weed decided to check the information of the armour. If there was something wrong then the tailors would be dead immediately.

“Inspect!”

-Majestic Leather Armour for a Conqueror:

Durability 189/189

Defense 195

An armour made from the leather of the Fire Salamander King that the tailors of Jonas Castle risked their lives to sew.

The finest armour created in the warring period. It was made with far too precious materials and lined with natural linen so that it won't touch the body. Specially tailor made, only those qualified can wear it.

Restrictions: Level 790, have a status comparable to a king.

Options:

Fire resistance 89%

Minimize physical damage from all weapons by 91%.

Strength +130.

Additional 31% agility.

22% increase in maximum health and mana.

The best charisma and dignity.

Arrows won't pierce it. High magic protection.

Ability to deal with fire +3.

Increased mana recovery speed when the wearer has a fire associated profession.

67% of the mana used will be reclaimed.

Defeats the darkness.

“Hrmm.”

There was no need to talk about how impressed he was with the armour. Weed already had absurd combat capabilities and defense so they were just like extra wings. In particular, he had never worn tailored clothes since middle school. Weed could take advantage of the armour when activating fire skills in battle. Then the armour would reveal a glamorous and elegant pattern. Even if he had no interest in the options, he would feel better while wearing such good looking armour.

“This is worthwhile. Good work.”

“Thank you.”

“Attendant, reward these people.”

“How much?”

Weed felt good so he only hesitated for a moment. Then he said in a small voice.

“Give them 200 gold.”

“Yes!”

His stingy spirit was unwillingly to part with more for the labour cost despite the sweat shed and effort. The tailors were just glad they could keep their lives and didn't complain. His overwhelming dignity and infamy meant they naturally accepted it. He had already gained the most infamy on the continent that no human could compete with him. Weed wore the majestic leather armour. The shiny bald head and fierce eyes gave him a cruel and vile impression. But the clothes suited him well.

“Then let me see what you made.”

This time it was the dwarves' turn. He had high expectations for the dwarves so he would kill them all if it wasn't met.

“We...hrmm, you should see it directly rather than with words.”

Morul Hand took out three unusual looking swords. The swords

were made to be connected with each other in accordance to Weed's command. The hand of the dwarves trembled as they handed it over.

‘It looks fine.’

The colours seemed normal on the surface. It shone with colourful hues in the sunlight. The sword that seemed to be made of a black diamond chunk had a clear lustre. The dwarves explained the work.

“We were able to process it once it absorbed ultra-high heat. Of course, it wasn't easy to be shaped with a hammer. The strength required gradually went down as the flames were amplified. We managed to reduce it to the form of the current sword now. It was impossible without a lot of power so us dwarves drained ourselves.”

The secret to processing the horns of the Fire Salamander King as to apply heat. The explanation from Morul Hand was brief but it couldn't express the amount of effort the dwarves put into it.

Despite the sweat, elbow grease, innate arm strength and the natural blacksmithing skill of the dwarves, they were barely able to change the shape of the horns. It required at least 2,000 hammers to shape it into a sword. It was a work created by the combined efforts of the blacksmiths!

“Ah, it was like that.”

Weed had many thoughts after listening to Morul Hand's words. If he didn't like the work then the dwarf's words would just confirm it.

“Inspect!”

-Appraisal has failed.

It had to be an excellent weapon if inspection had failed. Usually there was magic hidden if Inspect failed.

Only good magicians could release the seal. Normally he checked usual items so it was rare that Inspect would fail. It sometimes happened when identifying unique items. Weed's mouth became thin.

“Inspect!”

-Extermination Sword:

Durability 204/204

Attack 175~226

The sword made from the horns of the Fire Salamander King. The dwarven blacksmiths processed the sword using the essence of fire.

A beautiful sword that could be considered a treasure of the continent. Anyone can use this sword but only the right owner can exert its full ability.

Restrictions:

Level 815 or more.

100% resistance to fire.

Strength 2,000.

Ate the Heart of the Fire Salamander King.

Artistic Value: 5,386

Options:

Very light.

Tiredness won't be felt when swinging the sword.

Strength +20%. Art +155.

Fame will increase to the maximum level in battle.

Very strong immunity to curses that weaken weapons. Repair is not possible. Durability won't decrease unless it meets a weapon with a stronger, opposite attribute.

Due to the fire attribute, there is a chance to melt the enemy's weapons and armour and can also cause 'burn' when touching the skin.

When fire resistance is less than 20%, there is a 100% chance of being burned by fire. The range of fire based attacks will be extended by 3 times.

The power of fire will be 100% amplified.

“Well!”

Weed confirmed the contents a few times. It was like a person who won the lottery looking at the numbers on the piece of paper again.

He really wanted to fight something after seeing this weapon. It was like giving the best football shoes to a barefoot football player. There was a level limit so Weed could barely use it.

Then he had a thought.

‘This weapon will disappear when I return to my original world. I will use it to my heart's content in the meantime.’

Weed's face suddenly hardened! His eyes trembled and his mouth thinned.

“The light is deceptive.”

The dwarves were now so frightened that they didn't dare move.

“Attendant.”

“Yes!”

“Give the dwarves 30 gold.”

The dwarves didn't even rest properly at night in order to make the best weapon and only received 30 gold in return.

It was at that moment that Weed became even more infamous. The march of the Embinyu Church! Weed knew they were approaching so he assembled the captured soldiers from the nobles that surrendered in front of Jonas Castle. The soldiers that were forced to conscript increased the army to 650,000 people. Weed and the desert warriors had overwhelming skills but the rest of the soldiers also weren't ordinary. This was the warring period so the soldiers and nobles had a higher than normal level. The conscripts on the battlefield had some capabilities but he couldn't expect a lot from them. In addition, there were 300,000 soldiers that could only hold a sword.

“They are prey that I will throw towards the Embinyu Church.”

Weed planned for himself and the desert warriors to play a key role in the war. He would conduct the strong, armed forces.

So he was willing to throw the victims into the fray. He had also demonstrated the efficiency during the previous battles.

“But it won’t hold out long.”

Weed looked down at the plains from the archer’s tower in Jonas Castle.

Despite the fact that a huge 650,000 troops were gathered, everyone was nervous and frightened. The citizens’ training wasn’t high and morale wasn’t good because they were forced to become soldiers. It was unclear how long they would endure once the Embinyu Church started using witchcraft, brainwashing, confusion and other curses.

Weed viewed the current army like cheap junk food.

“They should at least make the magicians consume their mana before collapsing. Having a large number of troops isn’t always good. If they do something wrong then the desert army will catch their ankles.”

He didn’t plan to use the walls of Jonas Castle against the Embinyu Church. He had found a much better place to fight. The

Mapon and Beiner armies had retreated to Dulmore Fortress! Then the day after tomorrow, the Dulmore Fortress would encounter the Embinyu Church.

It was natural for the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms to be drawn into combat. It was a plan that would take care of the Embinyu Church and two kingdoms at the same time.

“This strategy is good.”

Weed was perfectly satisfied with his plan. War heroes in the past would've probably had a similar plan. A sneaky and wicked operation that succeeded would be enough to cause admiring glances. In particular, it would be best if the Embinyu Church thoroughly smashed the Beiner and Mapon Kingdoms.

“Everybody move.”

Weed ordered the army to march towards Dulmore Fortress. There was no end to the number of supply wagons.

They contained all the loot and supplies plundered. The humans and dwarves in Jonas Castle watched the troops leaving.

“It is good that we are alive.”

“Yes, his infamy might be high but that human kept his promise.

They were just praising Weed when white smoke rose from Jonas Castle.

“Fire!”

“The castle is on fire!”

Flames rose out the windows of Jonas Castle. The flames spread quickly and soon the entire castle was engulfed in fire. The fire also broke out in the city around it.

“Bring water to put out the fire!”

“No. The wells have been blocked!”

The fire spread through the entire city. Weed had made sure to clean it up.



Tailor Drago.

Doll eyes, buttons, clothes etc. He finished every new stage of the Master Quest successfully.

“A white wedding dress... It is necessary for a tailor to tackle this challenge.”

The most beautiful bridal dress. It was good to achieve fame as a tailor. The Central Continent was engulfed in a fierce war so sewing related occupations were very common.

Wealthy merchants and nobles came to request dresses for royal parties. Making dresses for high ranking nobles had a lot of benefits. Drago was already experienced with making many different types of dresses.

“I need to make a dress that will reach the climax of pure beauty.”

The finest cloths were brought to Morata and modified at a nearby smithy.

“Attach these crystals to the clothes.”

In the past, he received a huge quest to attach 10,000 crystals to a dress. He focused while sewing each piece to the cloth with stitches. He had many feelings as a tailor.

“I became a tailor in vain.”

Drago thought this occupation was seriously broken. In addition to the Master Quest, he couldn't relax due to other orders. Cadmus was his competitor in the north but he still needed to steadily provide high level users with leather armour, boots, etc.



The land of the farmer Miretas was enough to occupy a huge 3% of the Arpen Kingdom. He achieved a tremendous harvest and continued to invest in and buy land. Grains were grown on spacious, flat land and herbs on the hills and mountains.

The farmer Miretas had the nickname of Golden Hands because any seeds he planted would grow into huge money. But these days, Miretas's waist seemed to be broken.

“There seems to be no end to this farming.”

So far digging the gravel and rocks to create a granary was good but he needed to manage a large area. For example, he needed to make a reservoir that connected to the farmland in case of a drought. He also needed to keep a lookout for swarms of locusts. Miretas knew how much work was involved in ripening just one piece of grain.

“There is no time. I can't do anything outside of farming.”

The first mission of a farmer was to prevent hunger.

Food production was essential for a place like the Arpen Kingdom that had a quick growth. Lack of food would cause the price of food to rise and population would stop increasing. Disrupting the food supply would cause a setback to areas like trading, adventuring, economic development and technological development.

Miretas needed to continue cultivating the land to feed the exploding growth of the population. He also owned rice paddies and bulk purchased cattle from Morata. When the time came for the Haven Empire to invade, there would be enough food to ensure that no one would starve in battle.



The warrior Python. He had become stronger after conquering the monsters in Averian Forest. It was broadcasted and his popularity rose but he had thoughts about the wider world.

“I can’t just continue catching more monsters.”

There were senior monsters inside dungeons that could use spells like anaesthesia, fainting, confusion, stun etc. so it was impossible to win against them alone. Python realized the limitations of fighting alone.

It was no joke as he watched the broadcast of Weed and the desert warriors rising about level 400. Python’s chest started burning as he watched them risk their lives during the growth quest.

“I need to explore more places to discover the meaning of a warrior.”

Python was also part of a prestigious guild with tons of friends.

In fact, back in the day he had joined a social guild but they had disappeared due to the war in the Central Continent. He was a warrior seeking a place to fight. This time he decided to go to the north. It felt good to walk the path to the north as a warrior.

“I think that many people will recognize me due to the broadcast. I shouldn’t wear armour and my sword in the city and should hide my face.

Python wore a straw hat on his head and wore tourist attire. And he rode a wild horse towards the north.

Call of the Wild Horse! It was a somewhat unusual skill that allowed him to catch and ride wild horses.

As he passed through the Central Continent to the north, he saw many scenes of devastation caused by Draymond’s resurrected legion. Cities were left in ruins and many residents were migrating.

“If you go a little further then you will arrive in the Northern Continent.”

Unlike what he expected, Python didn’t encounter many monsters while heading to the north but saw countless merchants travelling back and forth. There were horse drawn carriages that contained 30~100 people.

“Unlike the rumours, the north is very productive and requires

many things.” The reality was somewhat different from Python’s thoughts. In the past, merchants had sold imported goods from the Central Continent to the north. Trading was accomplished and increased due to the number of beginners.

The Central Continent was engulfed in war so now many beginners of Royal Road started in the north.

From a merchant’s point of view, there were greater benefit in the north so they travelled there from the Central Continent.

In the Central Continent, they could sleep in the square all day and might sell a few things if they were lucky. But in the large cities in the north like Morata, there was no need to wait in the squares and could see things near the gates.

There was a demand for intermediate products and luxury goods.

In the past, there was a huge consumption and a market was born. However, the north was also starting investigations, terrain exploration and mining development. Although Hestia’s Forge and other Grand Buildings were created, there was a temporary lack of materials because of the distance.

The north’s internal trade started expanding.

“When looking at the economics and technology, there is no end to the north’s growth.”

“The population doesn’t match the reported statistics. I only came once and unconditionally sold everything. There is no need to talk in this situation.”

“The orc merchants in the area is a joke. They are selling it for 10 times the market prices so won’t it be easy to sell for a good price?”

The merchants headed to the north to chase their dreams.

“The Hemir River is coming up... Is there a way to go around it?”

Python pondered for a moment while looking at the map he purchased. The easiest solution was to swim against the river. But he would have to let the wild horse go and start walking.

While he was being distressed, the merchants just headed straight toward Hemir River. There were also merchants with empty carriages coming from the opposite side so something was strange.

“Are there boats that will cross the river?”

There wasn’t a city around here.... Anyway, he was glad. But when Python arrived at Hemir River, there was an immensely long bridge crossing both sides. The width was at least 3 kilometres and built with sturdy stone.

“Unbelievable! Is it possible to create such a bridge?”

Python became numb after seeing the grandeur of the stone bridge.

Stone was often used as a building material but the limitations of it were clear. The heavy volume meant it was almost impossible to use in large buildings. Furthermore, the bridge wasn't just created from stone.

It was flattened and finely inscribed with images. The pillars were carved with phoenixes, bulls and the northern cities. The centre of the bridge was built high enough that cruise ships and fishing boats could comfortably pass underneath.

Python rode the wild horse towards the bridge and saw sentences engraved at regular intervals.

-Welcome to the North. Come to Trivan Village and see our engineers! Transportation to the core of the north, Morata is free.

-Keatu will distribute land that needs to be cultivated for free. Come at once if you want to dig at the land. Shovels will also be given for free.

-Special packages will be given for travellers who want to explore cities in the north. Taste the representative grass porridge of each region!

Phrases were written to promote cities and villages in the north

to travellers. The name of the users who carried the stones were carved on the top.

“This bridge can’t be built alone... How many rocks were required to build just one bridge?”

Python continued staring blankly at the outrageous bridge.

“Tsk tsk, it must be the first time that horseman has come to the north.”

“Yes. There have been many who stood and stared at the bridge.”

“It still isn’t over. Isn’t this a symbol of the ideology of the north? There are days when hundreds of people just stand around.”

Merchants spoke as they hurriedly pulled the carriages past.

It was common for users to look up as they entered cities in Royal Road. But Weed started a culture of wearing simple tourist clothes when travelling around the north.

Initially high level users headed to Morata but it was impossible to compare them to Weed. In addition, there was a surprising number of high level users and warriors quietly adventuring in the north.

Dark Gamers drank at the cheapest tavern. The Dark Gamers that came to the north experienced an unexpected prosperity at the hunting grounds. There was a never ending list of requests that involved things like ruins exploration, treasure excavation and helping the public.

A considerable amount of beginners also struggled in the north. Level 60 or so. They were overconfident about their abilities. It felt great when stats like strength and speed rose.

The dispute in the Central Continent also caused magicians around level 420 to head to the north.

Therefore, these days the users didn't dare attack any travellers wearing ordinary clothes. Because they could be high level users. Of course, there were ways to tell if they looked closely at the boots, cloak, rings, necklaces etc.

In Python's case, he was carrying a large sword and riding on the back of a wild horse so people soon discovered he wasn't a beginner.

"I've never seen a bridge like this while wandering around the Central Continent."

Python crossed the bridge on horseback. The bridge was wide enough that there was plenty of room for carriages to pass in both directions.

“Wow, this is the Northern Continent!”

“Is Morata beyond here?”

“No, you have to go further. How wide is the north?”

“I want to go quickly.”

“Run!”

The users coming from the Central Continent continued making a fuss. They were heading towards the north in anticipation of a new life.

Merchants could be seen enjoying the scenery in the middle of the bridge. And after crossing the bridge, Python finally learned the name of the bridge.

-Grand Building, Sturdy Stone Bridge!

It is common to take the long way around rivers, lakes, cliffs etc. This stone bridge can relieve the fatigue and suffering of travellers.

Earthquakes and flooding will never break it.

Built by the architect Keio and the power of the northern users.

Grand Buildings that were hard to find in the Central Continent!

The culture and economy of the Central Continent was originally developed so the Grand Buildings were already built. However, many were destroyed due to the wars. When the owner of a castle changed due to the siege, there were many cases where the defensive areas were destroyed.

Architect was the most envied occupation in the Arpen Kingdom. Architects could make a name for themselves through Grand Buildings, especially if the work involved thousands of users.

There were 6 Grand Buildings that were bridges in the north.

The Arpen Kingdom gathered the money in order to create Grand Buildings. The buildings weren't just a financial waste as they were important resources for the north.

Users hunted, adventured, took part in production and erected Grand Buildings. The connecting bridges helped spread the culture and technology of each region. Now it was the lifeblood of the north.

“For the name of a Grand Building to be Sturdy Stone Bridge, this is a truly fun place.”

Python crossed the stone bridge and entered the north.

-You have crossed the Sturdy Stone Bridge.

Fatigue is reduced and vitality has recovered by 80%.

Endurance has permanently increased by 3.

Agility has permanently increased by 1.

Luck has permanently increased by 2.

The chances of a disaster occurring while adventuring will be reduced by 41%.

Any discoveries while adventuring will increase fame by 35. If no other people in the north has discovered it then it can be reported.

“Ohh, there is also this effect!”

He had dedicated himself to hunting in the Averian Forest so he wasn't aware of matters in the north. Now he received a real surprise.

Gone were the days where there were no users in the north. It was an era of prosperity for the north.

Chapter 9: Embinyu Army

“Life is like a garlic. No matter how close, it is too spicy.”

Weed nodded as he convinced himself.

He was leading his troops towards Dulmore Fortress but was worried about the hard quest. In the early days, he thought he had been really unlucky. But not that he looked back on that time....

“It wasn’t that much. I must’ve sold a large country in my previous life.”

People liked solving important affairs but Weed wanted to live a comfortable life while eating sweet fruits. But he had to suffer through every significant event on the Versailles Continent!

“This is the difficulty of suffering alone.”

Weed continued complaining with dissatisfaction while marching.

As the ruler of the desert, he had ruled over the desert warriors with fear. The sculptural lifeforms were also mistaken about Weed’s nature.

Weed was vicious and brutal but they viewed him as a hero. The

desert warriors followed his orders as he was the ruler.

Weed had complained when he fell into the desert.

“I tried to live moderately in a good place. I don’t like the desert because it is annoying to save water and only fire attribute monsters wander around.”

People never really thought about living in the desert. Of course, people who were born there couldn’t help suffering discomfort. Therefore, it was rare to find many users in the southern desert area.

There were more visitors since Weed’s revival of the desert region but none of them wanted to live there.

“I’ve raised the tribes like sheep yet I can’t even sell them for money.”

Weed kept on complaining in the midst of moving. His hobby was complaining about money in order to relieve the tension of war!

He had calmly analysed the revealed power of the Embinyu Church.

‘They are a little bit stronger. And in the worst situation...I will completely fail the quest.’

He had to throw away the illusion of winning unconditionally. It was worse than the time he had to fight the Immortal Legion alone. In this case, if he failed then he would fail the final secret sculpting technique quest.

“I need the Embinyu Church to sweep through the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms first.”

Even if he didn't want to use the desert warriors, the Embinyu Church would just sweep through the continent later. But history had somehow changed so a great expedition might appear in order to take care of the Embinyu Church.

“I almost made a big mistake. The devil inside Seo-yoon can't wake up.”

Even bad actions required delicacy!

If the quest failed then the pressure of taking care of her would disappear. Due to the endorphins secreted while thinking about bad behaviour, he was in the best physical and mental condition.

Warrior-1 who was leading the march asked.

“There is 2 kilometres left to Dulmore Fortress. Should we shatter any enemy cavalry that comes to scout?

The Mapon and Beiner troops stationed at Dulmore Fortress will know they are being attacked and will become nervous.”

“No, leave it alone. And we’ve arrived early so we shall take a break here.”

The Embinyu Church would come in the night. They had undead and used magic to move a long way quickly. Even if they failed to arrive today, the latest they would arrive would be noon tomorrow.

‘Then it will be the optimal time to fight.’

The Embinyu Church didn’t care and would even attack in the night. The great plains near Dulmore Fortress was a great place for battle.

Night was also a favourable time for the undead. Well, Weed had thought of different means and methods no matter when the battle would take place. He didn’t have a troubled or hesitant nature.

The Embinyu Church was quite unlucky. Currently Nodulle was a brave warrior who stopped evil from being revived again on the continent. But after Weed came to the past, it became a huge fight to the death.

Unlike Nodulle, he didn’t move for reasons like justice or moral obligations Weed could even deal a large blow to the Embinyu Church in the future.

That evening, there were no incidents so the night passed comfortably. The plains were filled with bonfires and torches as the soldiers set up camp. Those far away were sitting or standing in the darkness.

The advance of the Embinyu Church was a little slow so they would arrive at Dulmore Fortress tomorrow. Weed would make sure all their hope disappeared.

And the next day.

Weed generously fed the soldiers.

“Eat heartily.”

“Yes, Great Emperor.”

“There is a lot more.”

The slaves were in a good mood despite the risk in battle. Weed at least had enough conscience to feed them before sacrificing their lives in battle!

Weed observed the Dulmore Fortress on the next day. The soldiers of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms were preparing for war.

“This will go down in history as a great battle.”

History would describe Weed’s actions as an established fact!

As predicted, the Embinyu Church arrived around noon. And finally, the battle to determine the fate of the Versailles Continent was initiated.



The Embinyu Church’s army was overwhelming as they revealed bronze giants and giant, flying creatures. The ground was filled with so many fanatics that it would take a while to pull them.

However, the bronze giants and flying creatures had archers, knights, witches and priests on-board.

The high priest of the 4th sect, Motuls had jurisdiction over the bronze giants and flying creatures.

Igrig, the leader of the 6th sect led the dark army.

The Embinyu Church was like an overextending large conglomerate.

“W-what?”

“Strange people have appeared.”

The combat slaves were surprised.

“Oh, the Embinyu Church has found us. Destroy! Destroy! Destroy!”

“Come to me. All the humans are gathered here to be killed!”

The fanatics of the Embinyu Church cheered enthusiastically.

In the meantime, Weed had thrown the fanatics he captured towards the enemies or changed them into vampires and the undead. Nevertheless, they were tough like cockroaches!

More than 10,000 people among his army cheered. Weed shrugged without saying anything. Then the desert warriors quickly took care of the fanatics.

Apart from the 20,000 desert warriors, Weed was worried about the other soldiers being corrupted by the Embinyu Church.

“Everybody listen carefully!”

-Atrock's Cry has been used.

The soldiers have forgotten all the horrors.

The army will receive good luck related to combat.

Trained soldiers will perform their duties superbly.

Atrock's Blessing is given to the knights.

He needed to use his skills at the appropriate time.

If he didn't exert his leadership at the right time then the army gained from the surrendered nobles would scatter. Even the combat slaves might try to run away during battle.

"They are the Embinyu Church! They appeared to destroy the land we live on."

Weed pulled out his sword and gazed at the Embinyu Church.

"The fanatics' humanity has disappeared! They only know death and destruction! Their only purpose is to kill for Embinyu. They will trample the crops, burn cities and brutally execute children. Use your swords to fight them with everything you have!"

"Waaaah!"

The desert warriors and combat slaves shouted loudly. The desert warriors thought that fighting with Weed was important. The combat slaves also had no freedom anyway. If they die even if

they didn't fight!

The people in the Dulmore Fortress felt like it was absurd.

“He is the head of the barbarians. Are they fighting among themselves?”

“I don't know. Your Majesty. Anyway, he is a shameless person.”

From the viewpoint of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms, Weed's speech pointed towards himself as the invader. But the Embinyu Church was approaching so the Dulmore Fortress was in a dire crisis.

“Get ready for battle!”

“Attacks will come from the air so be prepared with plenty of arrows!”

“Prepare for combat!”

Weed watched as Dulmore Fortress prepared their defenses. Weed's army was still quite a distance from Dulmore Fortress.

Arrows and magic could be shot from the walls and the undead couldn't access the fortress because of the river flowing through it. The terrain around the fortress was a little bit difficult to defend but they could overcome it.

“Fight. Prepare the battle formation!”

Weed commanded his army to prepare to confront the Embinyu Church.

The desert warriors were placed in the middle, left and right wings. They could respond immediately to any attacks depending on the circumstances.

The recently drafted combat slaves were placed in the front. They were troops he wouldn't be reluctant to lose. The army of the nobles were used to fill the headcount in the centre.

The priests and paladins from each religion were packed in the rear. And Weed rode Bactrian Camel at the head of the army while watching the approach of the Embinyu Church.

‘I don't belong in this place.’

Naturally he wanted to be in the safest place in the rear. The front was the primary target of the various magic curses and magic attacks cast by the Embinyu Church.

Of course, he also had his pride as a man. He was the tyrant of the desert so he couldn't change his personality to express fear!

The Embinyu Church didn't stop and approached continuously.

Weed had plans to have a nice argument with the enemy's high priest. He would've justified this war but criticizing them harshly. This would then raise the morale of the troops.

It was hard to compare this battle to anything in terms of scale and it would play an important part in changing the future. The stations would also be broadcasting this live so he needed to look good.

Of course, it would also be good if he could find their weakness or more information. Weed coolly wanted to show he was on the side of justice.

“Yes...good work on coming here in the first place.”

A gentle tone was used by Atrock's Cry caused it to ring out through the battlefield. However, the Embinyu Church continued their march without stopping.

Now the two sides were close enough for arrows and magic attacks to hit. The army of the two sides were so close that there was almost no difference between them.

“Embinyu Church, the contents of your conspiracy has been revealed. I have come back in time in order to protect the peace of the continent....”

Weed unleashed a series of loud criticisms but the Embinyu

Church didn't care at all. It was like Dogmeat was barking but no one was listening.

Cheolkang! Cheolkang! Cheolkang!

Then one of the bronze giants lifted its hands. It was holding an enormous rock approximately 5~6 metres.

“Don't tell me...”

The bronze giants threw rocks! Hundreds of rocks flew towards Weed and the combat slaves.

“Absolute Defense, Summon Another Sword, Power of Birth!”

Weed hastily used his skills and used Extermination Sword on the rocks. The rocks were turned into tofu while others melted.

Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwang!

However, the remaining rocks that Weed didn't eliminate hit the combat slaves.

The battle had commenced without saying anything! The Embinyu Church didn't need to raise the morale of their army.

It was followed by a shower of arrows from the flying creatures.

The arrows were cursed by Embinyu and those hit by it lost their lives. These attacks had a tremendous effect on the combat slaves.

“Uaaack!”

“Ahh, spare me. I vow allegiance to the Embinyu Church!”

“Raise your shield while running out of the attack range!”

The formation of the combat slaves quickly broke down. In fact, it was natural for something like this to happen when the enemy was overwhelming. They also clamoured to avoid the area that the creatures were flying around.

Kukeok kukekeok!

“God! Believe in God! God Embinyu is equal to all. He will be fair to all of you and kill you painfully!”

“Glory, destruction, death!”

The monsters, knights and fanatics of the Embinyu Church screamed as they ran forward. However, Weed still maintained his composure.

“This much was expected. There is still the possibility of winning.”

The all-out offensive of the vanguard of the Embinyu Church smashed into the combat slaves. But the best part was Weed's analysis of the power!

He had experienced countless battlefields so he could get a rough estimate of the enemy.

As expected, the Embinyu Church was a powerhouse in this warring period. The Embinyu Church had naturally prepared the best power in order to cause harm. The number of combat slaves was only enough to annoy them.

Weed hadn't joined the battle yet and the desert warriors were also waiting. The scale of the fight hadn't become large enough for him to actively take part.

“...In the name of God Embinyu. Gates of Hell, open!”

Right then, the witches that belonged to the Embinyu Church chanted a spell and their hands flashed. And a dark hole with a red aura pierced the sky.

Kwarururung!

Thousands of lightning fell all over the place and monsters from hell emerged through the hole.

“Kuriririk. Why are we visiting the human world?”

“Eat everything!”

Thousands of lower ranked winged demons poured out en masse. Weed gave a loud sigh.

“My damn fate....”



Weed’s sea adventure reached an unprecedented audience ratings.

The users were amused yet envious of Weed’s charismatic desert tyrant. Since then, the contents of his adventure eventually became a hot topic.

Then came a variety of reactions.

-Nodulle and Hilderun’s quest in the past is romantic in itself.

-Those two people are good.

-I want to go to the warring period. If I was a man in a place like that.... The reality is that I would’ve fled from the dungeon because I could never win.

Dedicated and brave men were traditionally very popular.

-The rugged arm muscles of the desert warriors. Kyaah!

-Hestiger's slender and handsome face, doesn't he look really good? The beard raises his grade to that of a real actor.

-It is unfortunate.

-He should just die.

-His sweaty look after battle is really handsome. I feel like crying since he is a NPC.

-Bactrian Camel is cute.

And the bulletin boards were filled with a myriad of articles and risk analysis associated with the adventure.

Title: Kingdoms that exist during the warring period.

Title: Historical changes to the Versailles Continent?

Title: Another warning of the dangers associated with the Embinyu Church

Title: If the quest in the past fails then a catastrophe will happen

Weed’s adventure having a major impact on the continent was a huge topic. Everybody’s attention was on his adventure.

The Embinyu Church was also related to the present as damage kept occurring to the Haven Empire in the Central Continent. Users that received direct damage unleashed their criticism on the bulletin boards.

In addition, they wrote new information about the kingdoms that fell to the Embinyu Church in the warring period.

And finally, the war against the Embinyu Church was broadcasted live. The stations had wanted to slow down the broadcast schedule but they were paralysed by protests from the viewers.

In fact, this adventure wasn’t simple Weed’s fight. It was a battle to decide the fate of the Versailles Continent. Whether they liked or disliked Weed, everyone hoped that he would win the battle.

The viewers cheered Weed on but also showed concern.



Hwaryeong and the others in the group learnt about the contents of Weed’s quest.

“To leave me and take another woman...sob sob sob.”

She cried while connecting to Royal Road. Zephyr and Bellot tried to comfort her as she cried.

‘Unni liked Weed-nim this much...no, she loved him?’

‘Hwaryeong-nim has a pure side like this. It doesn’t seem like it but she is a lonely person.’

Everyone decided to wait quietly until her tears stopped.

“Sob sob sob sob! I-I really wanted a bag from the warring period.”

“.....”

“I’ve been really stressed due to my last overseas schedule! A sweet trip to the past.... I could try on many shoes.”

“.....”

Pale thought that Hwaryeong was completely thick-skinned as she expressed the words in her heart. The words she spoke while tears were pouring down her face was like a joke.

She wasn’t upset about Weed. Hwaryeong was more upset about

the potential bags and shoes she missed.

“I should get along well with Weed-nim. He can buy me an expensive bag in the future.”

“.....”

“Thanks to a scheduling accident, I could only reserve the new products...sob sob sob!”

“.....”

Hwaryeong cried heartily.

She originally had a direct personality that expressed her feelings without a filter.



The chairman of Hosung Group, Jeong Deuk-soo organized his spacious mansion.

“I have no more regrets.”

The chairman of the conglomerate that once dominated the business community now had to leave the wealthy neighbourhood.

Hosung Group had been acquired by various creditors and Baekhwa Group. The entrepreneur branded as incompetent by the media needed to go somewhere far away.

He still had many real estate and villas overseas in places like the United States and Italy.

“But there is a place my heart really wants to go.”

He would feel lonely if he left his mansion and hid in another country.

Up until now, he had been busy due to corporate management. Looking back at his past, he realized that he had been lonely for a while. He was a middle aged man with only money.

The chairman had a large amount of company shares so his wealth was considerable. But there was an emptiness in his heart that money couldn't buy. None of his relatives would be glad to see him and Seo-yoon was the only close family member he had left.

“I will live near my daughter. It would be good if I could occasionally pass her on the streets.

He went to a real estate agent to look for a single house.

“Sir, what are you looking for in a house?”

“I just need a house where I can live alone.”

Jeong Deuk-soo didn't want to talk about complicated matters with the real estate agent.

There were many people who lived alone. In addition, the real estate didn't recognize Jeong Deuk-soo as a company chairman. In fact, it was rare for the public to know the faces of company chairmen.

“Okay. Then would you like to look at the leases available?”

“Lease?”

“Huh? Oh, the current price of real estate has increased a lot these days. So many lease a residence. The fact that you'll be living alone means there should be some with a good rent.”

“Let's just see what is for sale.”

“Yes. Then what house are you specifically looking for? This neighbourhood is good but there aren't a lot of houses for sale... although this is now moving season so there are some for sale.”

He wanted a house near Lee Hyun and Seo-yoon's, despite how difficult it might be. He also didn't want a house on a main road that would disturb his privacy.

“A common two-story house would be nice.”

“Ah, a two-story house? Then the number of choices has decreased.

“Have many trees in the garden would be troublesome. A lake where I can raise some fish as a hobby would be good. Room for an indoor gold range and a movie room...ah, a place for my fitness equipment as well. The living room should be separate from the study and have a large structure.”

“...Anything else?”

“Stairs are cumbersome so an elevator would be good. Also a garage with automatic license plate recognition would be convenient.”

“There is no such house in this neighbourhood. And even if there is, do you know how much the price of that house would be?”

“Is 5 billion enough? I am willing to spend 100 billion on a house.”

“.....”

The real estate agent was in a panic as there was no such two-story house in the neighbourhood.

This was a middle class area so the houses were only built in a small 140 square yard area.



Bart drank cheap beer at a tavern in Morata.

“Ahh, how good.”

Many people were gathered in the tavern.

“Everybody threw their hunts and quests.”

This was the day that Weed’s adventure was being broadcasted so the cities were filled with people. This matter didn’t affect just the Northern Continent but the Central Continent as well. It was also popular in the territory of the Haven Empire.

It was difficult for Bart to find a spot in the tavern. The stores didn’t have fixed customers and some couldn’t even sit down to drink.

‘I guess I can’t say that she is my daughter and my daughter’s friend.’

Nobody would believe that he had a relationship with Seo-yoon and Weed.

‘I never through the virtual reality would turn out like this.’

Weed was the king of the Northern Continent so he could easily squash Bart. He was also indebted to the Grass Porridge Cult living in Morata so he didn’t want to leave the north.

“Hey, is it going to start now?”

“Let’s quickly eat the chicken.”

“It would be best to eat slowly.”

“There are 5 more. Eat a whole bunch.”

“Good job!”

The merchants with large bellies sat down while talking.

“Hrmm.”

Bart looked at the merchants with an envious glance.

In the early days of the north’s development, the merchants had small and skinny bodies. It couldn’t be helped since they were all low levelled. But after the development of the north, it was common to see merchants with fat bellies. A regular user had faith in fat merchants.

The northern merchants had high popularity due to the mass selling of materials at affordable prices. Security surrounded carriages as they moved through large areas and ignored words calling them cowards. They didn't have a combat profession but pushed carts filled with leather or iron ores up to mountain villages.

However, merchants weren't unconditionally fat as those with combat capabilities or traded over long distances would become skinny again. But it was embarrassing to trade without the necessary weight.

“Should I change? I’m not suited for a combat profession.”

Bart decided to become a merchant.

Unlike a warrior fighting monsters, he had lived as an entrepreneur for his entire life so being a merchant would be fun.

His level was also low so it didn't have a significant impact if he changed professions.



The leaders of the Hermes Guild that conquered the Central Continent.

The Allied Forces had lost and the Imperial Army occupied different places. They seized important fortresses, castles, cities and even small villages in the mountains and on islands. After 1~2 months, the flag of the Haven Empire was flying almost everywhere on the Central Continent.

Securing the dwarf kingdom Thor and the elven forests was under control. It was much easier for them to conquer the dwarves and elves because there wasn't a systematic, organized resistance.

Money and manpower was committed to places territories under the influence of the Haven Empire.

Lafaye was holding a great meeting in the Imperial Palace of the Haven Empire. The outcome of this meeting would determine the future direction of the war and their method of ruling the continent.

“The large war on the Central Continent is finishing up. As we move forward, Weed and the Embinyu Church are the only obstacles left.”

Lafaye had a headache as soon as he heard the words from the leaders.

The Embinyu Church was expanding in a terrifying manner. The religious influence was expanding and it was difficult to block the fanatics. The Embinyu Church was challenging the obedience and loyalty in the territories of the Embinyu Church.

And Weed was adventuring in the past. There was no way for them to respond. The aftermath of the destruction of cities was reaching the peak and important commercial or military cities had become obsolete.

So far it wasn't an irreversible blow to the Haven Empire but it created anxiety that couldn't be ignored. The Central Continent was the loser and suffered considerable damage from Weed's adventure so their interest turned there.

“As we all know, the current Weed will soon be fighting the Embinyu Church.”

Lafaye held the meeting when the battle between Weed and the Embinyu Church was just starting.

Each station was broadcasting it live so there was a keen interest in it. Even the players who were part of the Hermes Guild felt their chests boil with excitement when watching Weed's adventure.

“If Weed achieves the quest and obtains the final secret sculpting technique then I don't know what effect it will have on us.”

“Is there no way to stop it?”

“We can't stop the progression of this quest. But the quest doesn't seem easy so he might fail. And we must be prepared for any possible situation.”

“Preparations?”

The leaders waited for Lafaye to continue. Lafaye was a crucial reason behind the Hermes Guild being able to easily take control of the Haven Kingdom without any resistance.

He had planted spies among the prestigious guilds for long time mischief. Of course, the emergence of Weed was a big variable but Lafaye believed he could solve it.

“The staff has analysed Weed’s quest. And the conclusion they came to is there is a vastly larger chance of the quest against the Embinyu Church failing.”

“That....”

The faces of the leaders had frowns on them. It would be bad for the local lords if the Embinyu Church spread even more. The lords started complaining with dissatisfaction.

“This time I made a big investment in a vineyard....”

“Won’t all my money from my small business disappear?”

The early members of the Hermes Guild all occupied territory, including Dain being the lord of Evaluk Castle in the Kallamore Kingdom.

There was no resistance at Evaluk Castle and the population and economy of the Kallamore Kingdom was developing. After the post-war reconstruction and development, it was being referred to as the second capital city.

Otherwise, the lords that suffered under the Embinyu Church asked.

“What is the expected damage?”

“It is difficult to fathom the current degree of the Embinyu Church. Seeing the importance and contents of the quest, it might be 2~3 times larger.”

“If so....”

“The history of the kingdom might disappear and all the citizens would turn into fanatics. Then the Haven Empire will need to go to war with the Embinyu Church. So we have to be prepared.”

The Haven Empire needed to prepare to confront the Embinyu Church.

The stakes were high so knights were secretly gathered to eliminate the threat to the continent. They were armed with weapons and armour imbued with holy power and prepared to hit the Embinyu Church.

But it was difficult to predict the forces of the Embinyu Church

so it would inevitably be a struggle.

The entire Central Continent was in danger of being wiped out from the Embinyu Church and returning to the basics. Fighting them might give the Allied Forces a chance to recover and risk the Haven Empire's reign.

“The might Haven Empire. We have the power to defeat the Embinyu Church. And public opinion will be positive. Weed will fail to handle the Embinyu Church. In other words, he will damage their power.”

Due to the risk of Weed's adventure, the Haven Empire widened their plans. They completely dominated the Central Continent and prepared for war with the Embinyu Church.

“What if Weed succeeds in his adventure?”

“History states that the Embinyu Church was much more substantial in that period. If he wins then there is no need for us to fight the Embinyu Church. In that case, the troops we have prepared will head north for a war.”

“You mean....”

“The destruction and subjugation of the Arpen Kingdom.”

Once the Haven Empire conquered the Central Continent, they had no competitors except for the north. They would become the

complete ruler of the continent.

No matter what direction Weed's adventure went in, Lafaye and the Haven Empire were ready for it to bring benefits to them.

‘I am just afraid that....’

However, Lafaye didn't tell the lords something.

Weed was on an impossible quest with no chances of success. It was an objective evaluation of his ability. But if his quest failed then the Haven Empire would be in the worst position.

‘Weed's quest has been seen up to here. I'm already aware that history can be changed thanks to the destroyed cities. If the quest fails then it will be a platform that raises the Embinyu Church tremendously.’

Historically, there was a disconnect between the Northern Continent and the Central Continent. The Embinyu Church would completely decimate the Central Continent but the north would be untouched. If Weed didn't do his best then there would be major side effects for the Hermes Guild.

‘What if he deliberately fails?’

Lafaye's body trembled with anxiety.



Weed watched the evil pouring down from the sky.

“Monsters are coming down like rain!”

The witches the opened the Gates of Hell! The hell demons with enormous power couldn't pass through this door. But a numerous amount of monsters was pouring down into the world.

The world suddenly became darker and evil poured down en masse like water.

-The Gates of Hell have opened on the Dulmore Plains.

A great crisis has arrived on the Versailles Continent.

The witch Pechet is a very dangerous woman.

She is proficient in all types of black magic and evil tricks and created new creatures through experimentation.

She has created a passage connected to the 'Ring of Hell.' The monsters will continue coming through the Gates of Hell until she is eliminated and the Ring of Hell removed.

If the gates are open for a long time then it will be dangerous to

the human world....

The battlefield is filled with heavy fear and morale has decreased by 60%.

If the Gates of Hell are open for a long time then those with weak will and determination will become insane.

The effects of faith are temporarily reduced.

The efficiency of black magic on the Dulmore Plains has increased.

The soldiers literally froze from shock as the evil demons emerged from the Gates of Hell. Large masses fell from the sky and landed on the ground.

“Kkueeh, kueeeeh!”

The fat body opened its mouth and ate anything it saw, including the grass, rocks and trees. The twitching fat approached the soldiers and swallowed them down in one gulp.

The demons also shot knives from their bodies. There were armed humans on the plains as soon as the creatures passed through the Doors of Hell. It was like seeing a buffet full of their favourite foods.

Before the battle, Weed had believed in his abilities that he gained through Nodulle's Growth quest.

“The remaining quests... I can just fight moderately. How strong can it be? I won't compromise or concede anything.”

Therefore he had willingly proceeded with the Embinyu Church quest. He didn't worry about being unable to handle large quantities of enemies. But this time doubts grew in his head.

He was unlucky and the difficulty level had exponentially increased.

“It turned out like this. I definitely shouldn't buy lottery tickets. I will never win even when buying it for my entire life.”

He needed to stay vigilant until the end. Weed's life would never go moderately smoothly.

“These guys are really unruly.”

Weed sighed and used Atrock's Cry again.

“Concentrate on defense!”

It was absolutely impossible for the combat slaves to fight the demons! It was sufficient if they could last for a few minutes. The core attack power would be the desert warriors, mercenaries and

priests of each religion.

“Get rid of all the non-believers!”

“Painful death.”

“It will be delicious to eat them alive.”

The fanatics of the Embinyu Church engaged in a fierce battle with the combat slaves. The fanatics used things like ‘eating young children,’ ‘draw blood with torture’ and ‘pagan sacrifices’ to harass them!

Ordinary fanatics were level 100 while those with special abilities were level 200. Due to the nature of the fanatics gathered, the effect was insignificant.

The main forces of the army, the dark knights, priests and witches smashed into the combat slaves. Furthermore, the Embinyu Church’s flying monsters and bronze giants were like an impenetrable fortress.

The Brotherhood of Punishment and Knights of Atrocity actively participated in battle. There were all the boss level monsters in the witch Pechet and the Embinyu Church’s Motuls and Igrig.

The combat slaves didn’t only fight due to Atrock’s Cry but because they believed in Weed. Weed had shown that he could reverse a battle after it started. They were dragged here to fight

with that belief.

“How amazing. This feels like a luxury department store.”

Weed’s chest trembled as he imagined it. He couldn’t shrink back in front of his sculptural lifeforms. This was the honour and pride of the desert. He needed to show his courage and abilities!

“Well, I suddenly remember something old. I went to the department store but the prices were so expensive that I couldn’t sleep at night.”

The slaves fighting were dying almost cruelly.

“One pair of underwear cost 100,000 won.... It really was a source of fear.”

Weed’s escapism! However, he soon had to accept the reality of the Embinyu Church’s army.

“Still, the Embinyu Church isn’t a fur coat at the department store. Give me a try, Embinyu Church!”

Weed drove Bactrian Camel and ran to the front.

“Human, you look delicious.”

The demons felt like he was prey and leapt at him. The monsters of hell could become stronger by absorbing humans. Otherwise, they would quickly weaken and die in this world.

In the past, Montus was a devil with the strongest power. Despite that, he was now incomparable to Weed who had passed the limits of the sword.

“Fire Sword!”

Hwaruruk!

Weed swung the Extermination Sword and literally burned all the demons around him. The attack range had increased by 3 times and the damage was no comparison. And the demons dropped jewellery, steel, smelting tools and other items hard to find in the human world!

“Let’s play properly!”

Weed’s battle spirit rose quickly. Bactrian Camel rushed towards the enemy. He had just received the Extermination Sword but it was an easy weapon to handle.

The amount that he needed to shift his weight for each weapon was different. Weed’s hands quickly adapted to the new sword. Dwarves had created the weapon so its features were impeccable. Weed’s senses were outstanding when it came to things like this.

Flames occurred everywhere the sword passed. Once cut, the demons didn't get back up again. The damage was too huge and the creatures were completely burnt to ashes.

“Run!”

Weed and Bactrian Camel continued moving. The demons were continuously cut or stepped on. He used his skills to reach the entrance of the Gates of Hell!

“Black Knight's Strike!”

The demons continued appearing. Once the wide area skill was used, all the demons turned into a grey light.

The witches drained their mana to make the Gates of Hell but the majority of the demons disappeared due to Weed.

However, he couldn't close the Gates of Hell so stronger demons continued pouring out. Weed's actions might seem meaningless at first but they weren't.

“An incredibly strong human!”

“Humans like these are better to eat.”

“But how? He is as strong as a devil.”

He had immense popularity among the demons. Weed rose Bactrian Camel through the waves of demons falling from the sky.

“Let’s go!”

He stepped on the creatures that landed on the ground.

Puhuhung!

Bactrian Camel could even jump off a cliff so this was nothing.

“Let’s go, Bactrian Camel!”

And he boldly rushed towards the Embinyu Church!

The bronze giants threw rocks at him. Bactrian Camel ran exquisitely while avoiding damage and Weed cut the enemies with his sword.

He recklessly stormed the Embinyu Church’s army alone! The desert warriors hadn’t been dispatched so he couldn’t receive help from them.

“Hu...man! I will take out your heart and offer it as a sacrifice to God Embinyu!”

“Followers of the Great God Embinyu, kill him!”

Motuls and Igrig growled out commands. The fanatics and dark knights responded in unison.

“Kill! It will be an honour to tear him up with my hands!”

“My Darkness Sword will chop you up.”

Weed was surrounded by dozens of layers of enemies.

“This should be interesting!”

Weed didn't panic.

He worried a lot before the battle but felt no fear once he actually moved. Even in the worst case situation where he lost his life and failed the quest, the Central Continent would still be turned into a mess.

As a result, his stomach didn't hurt from thinking of the consequences. It was like an athlete facing tremendous pressure before the final game but then showing his skills. In Weed's case, he didn't care about what was coming.

“You aren't worthy of facing me. You are all screwed. Bring it on!”

Weed's hands spun the Extermination Sword round and round!

The dark knights were all struck by Weed's sword.

-Black Knight's Strike!

An irreversible attack against the surrounding enemies.

Weed was surrounded by enemies.

The demons landing on the ground fought the weak combat slaves while the Embinyu Army's primary goal was Weed.

"This world is ruled by darkness and destruction...."

"Bound with suffering and pain...."

Witches also changed curses and suffering spells. No matter how strong and high levelled Weed was, he couldn't take multiple curses at once without his combat skills falling.

Weed had predicted the actions of the witches.

"It tickles my ears. I guess it is time for me to eat."

He took out the Yurbusika Frost Bow and aimed towards the witches. A white ice arrow flew straight past the dark knights towards the witches kneeling down.

“Avoid it!”

“The arrow of a non-believer!”

The witches hurriedly cancelled the magic they were casting and used protection magic. Weed’s ice arrow was so strong that it pierced through several layers of the protection spell.

However, Weed pulled his bowstring continuously and fired hundreds of arrows.

Surging Arrow.

After mastering the Rapid Fire skill, his archery had an absurd speed.

Bactrian Camel moved through the enemies, making it easier for Weed to shoot the arrows. The witches’ shields eventually broke and they were frozen by the ice fragments.

“Kuwik!”

The dark knights and magicians were turned into chunks of ice. The magicians with low health died! The dark knights could possibly move again once the ice melted. And the ice arrows completely penetrated the bodies of the witches.

But after a short moment, the witches turned into smoke and ran

away.

“You still haven’t managed to strip the human’s things!”

Pechet had come out to help the remaining witches. The air experienced spatial distortion, causing the ice arrows to change direction and fly to the wrong place.

Meanwhile, the dark knights and creatures attacked him. He ignored the incoming attacks from the dark knights because they didn’t hurt.

-The Majestic Leather Armour for a Conqueror has absorbed the enemy’s attack.

-You have been hit by the tail of Hecate who lives in hell.

The energy of hell has penetrated your body.

Health has been reduced by 1,393.

If you are hit multiply times by the demons’ attacks then it will be hard to dispel the curse.

The sculptural lifeforms Alverun and Alveren could heal this but it would consume unnecessary time and holy power.

Now that there was a curse that reduced health, Weed couldn't ignore attacks anymore and aimed his sword at nearby enemies.

“Witches and magicians, make sure you take care of the priests.”

There were at least 1,000 witches and only 100 had been damaged by the arrow attacks.

Advancing into a group of monsters early in battle wasn't an opportunity that would come easily. Numerous magicians gathered to block Weed and the various dark magic made the situation increasingly unfavourable.

“It is regrettable.”

He needed to cleanly process the dark knights.

The number of monsters continued to grow but not as quickly as before. Only the strong demons from hell showed up. And they even swallowed the fanatics. As a result, the battle became more complex and he couldn't compromise with the stronger enemies.

In order to reach Pechet who was holding the Ring of Hell open on the Versailles Continent, he needed to get through the demons.

“God Embinyu says to take care of that human.”

“Tear that human to shreds!”

The hostility of the Embinyu Church was the worst towards Weed. The combat slaves were just dying in vain so the Embinyu Church didn't care about them. Weed attacked alone and became their only target.

“My popularity never ends. End of the Day!”

Weed didn't save his mana and used the strongest skill of the Sun Warrior. The fire spread like a tsunami and turned the dark knights near him into ashes. The scope of the attack and the damage was amplified by 3 times due to the Extermination Sword.

The Embinyu fanatics screamed as they were covered with flames and died. A wide area attack that damaged anyone nearby! However, this was a colourful and exhilarating moment for Weed.

“I'll make you regret your rashness!”

The bronze giants threw boulders. The dark magicians and witches aimed magic bullets at Weed and summoned lightning and poison gas.

-You have been hit by 161 magic attacks.

Your nimble agility has avoided 59 attacks.

Health has decreased by 95,831.

His high resistance, resilience and armour meant he could withstand the lightning storm. The flames rapidly supplemented his mana and health. However, this was just the beginning of the enemy's offensive towards Weed.

The bronze giants now strode forward with huge spears and the followers of the Embinyu Church rushed over on horseback.

Weed supplemented his health in battle but it was still declining. So far he had wandered the battlefield and hadn't felt any risk of death.

However, now he felt some regret as he turned around.

“This much is enough.”

Bactrian Camel nodded like he agreed.

End of the Day was a wide area skill but the camel didn't get hurt by it. Bactrian Camel was considerable thankful that Weed rode him after seeing the horrors inflicted on the enemy. Bactrian Camel's emotions were expressed from the slyness of his mouth.

“It's time to conduct the 2nd stage of the operation. Let's go back!”

Weed ran away from the Embinyu Army on Bactrian Camel.

A bronze giant threw its spear and it landed deeply into the ground.

“Don’t slip away. I will make you feel pain that you won’t ever forget.”

Dark knights tried to block his path. The dark knights weren’t opponents capable of blocking Weed’s escape. He lightly brandished his sword, picked up japtm and continued to run away.

“Tie up his feet!”

“He is moving too fast.”

The witches and dark magicians tried to change an incineration spell. However, he was quickly fleeing so it was difficult for the curses to catch him. He had been prepared for a chase!

“Pursue him until the end!”

High Priests Motuls commanded the ground and flying troops of the Embinyu Church.

A flurry of arrows came flying after him. But waving his sword through the air had so much power that it literally blew them away.

He couldn't avoid all the arrows so his health still declined. However, Weed's health still remained at 89%.

"I still need to be vigilant. It will be dangerous if I receive a concentrated magic or arrow attack."

Bactrian Camel raced forward as quickly as possible. However, he couldn't avoid the arrows as well as the incoming army of the Embinyu Church.

The archers on the flying creatures concentrated on Weed. Weed was the most tempting meal because he was the strongest human on the battlefield! They aimed for a crucial moment when he was weakened so they could pounce and eat him.

The Embinyu Army nearby came to chase him intensively. A colossal amount of enemies rushed towards Weed. But the desert warriors and mercenaries didn't come to rescue him.

"Move to the east as planned."

"We have to go to the west."

Warrior-1 split the army he was in charge of into two.

It seemed like Weed was fleeing from the battlefield. Weed headed towards the fortress while being pursued by the enemy.

Bactrian Camel raced down the dirt road leading towards the fortress with the flying units, knights and bronze giants closely following. There were also 1,000 demons sticking to him.

Weed and the Embinyu Church's army headed towards the heavily guarded fortress.

"I'm satisfied that the barbarians are fighting the monsters, Your Majesty!"

"This is a good thing. They can die while fighting among themselves."

The leaders inside Dulmore Fortress gloated at the situation.

"Shoot! Shoot recklessly!"

Magic and arrows headed towards Weed and the Embinyu Church. Bactrian Camel unleashed his evasive techniques and avoided the attacks while still running ahead of the Embinyu Church. The bronze giants caused the land to shake as they walked.

Weed and Bactrian Camel arrived in front of a moat and a closed gate.

"A high jump!"

Bactrian Camel kicked the ground and leapt forward.

Normally he was lazy and ate carrots but Bactrian Camel could run as fast as the wind in the desert! He instantly leapt up the 10 metres high wall to where the Mapon and Beiner Kingdom's defense was waiting.

The soldiers had a shocked expression due to the abrupt change in situation. Weed ignored the soldiers and looked back at the Embinyu Army coming towards him.

“Well, it became a bit twisted but things are working out as planned.”

It was the pleasure he felt when picking up 100 won from the ground. Weed stood on the walls and shouted loudly.

“Embinyu Church, attack if you dare! The Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms have been waiting to defeat you for the sake of justice!”

The Mapon Kingdom and Beiner Kingdom guarding the fortress thought this was absurd.

Book 37: Destination Point

Chapter 1: Dulmore Fortress's Misfortune

The final secret sculpting technique quest required him to go back in the history of the Versailles Continent.

This was the warring period.

He had the heavy task of leading the desert warriors against the Embinyu Church! Weed was armed with the title of Master Swordsman and a large armed force. He also used his knowledge and experience in the fight.

“Life isn’t something where honest people who study hard are always successful. You have to compromise as well!”

Life was a battle!

Weed stood on the walls of Dulmore Fortress while riding Bactrian Camel. The Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms were greatly shocked at his sudden appearance.

They had fought a battle against him a short time ago so they didn’t want to see the leader of the desert army again.

“Kill.”

“Kkiyot! Embinyu will eat all those that disobey.”

The army of the Embinyu Church chased Weed to the fortress. The Embinyu Army was quite large.

The size of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdom’s army was smaller than the desert warriors, with only 300,000 soldiers! This scale was small compared to what the kingdoms could mobilize in the warring period.

However, the creatures from another dimension were those that ate humans for breakfast, lunch and dinner.

The bronze giants were also larger than the 30 metres high wall. The fanatics that received Embinyu’s Dark Aura blessing were able to literally tear a man apart with both hands.

There were also various large monsters flying around in the sky! They were dozens of metres large and could spit acid down to the ground.

The legendary large turtles, Barates was also flying in the sky. 5,000 elite archers were on-board the turtles and prepared to fire their arrows.

Among the Embinyu Army were the Priests and Knights of Atrocities that were prepared to convert anyone who surrendered to fanatics! The priests and bishops of a religion could pass on their verdict with holy power. Those branded with the stigma of

Embinyu would be cursed and die in agony.

“Humans have no value in life. Kill, kill.”

“I will make you feel endless pain.”

“Advance forward for Embinyu!”

The bronze giants and flying creatures that followed Weed focused their attacks on the fortress. Thousands of arrows flew towards the Dulmore Fortress.

The Mapon and Beiner Kingdom armies gathered to suppress Weed’s desert army were reluctantly forced to stop the Embinyu Church.

“We are not affiliated with him!”

The knights shouted as enemies attacked the fortress but the Embinyu Church didn’t care about the circumstances. They were the worst opponent to have a conversation with!

“What should we do, Captain?”

“They are trying to capture the fortress.”

“Quickly attack them!”

The soldiers shooting arrows towards Weed now aimed at the fanatics and monsters of the Embinyu Church.

Syuuuuuh!

The bronze giants threw their huge rocks and struck the walls. The fortress was located on a rugged terrain with cliffs and rivers that acted as protection. However, they couldn't outlast the offensive.

Archers on the flying creatures poured arrows towards the walls.

-The fortress is protected by magic.

Area of the Wind, Shield and Steel Wall has been triggered.

There was a colourful effect as the magic defenses were triggered and the arrows and rocks were blocked. But sparks rose from the walls as the bronze giants continued attacking.

“Attack the enemies trying to conquer the fortress!”

The King of the Mapon Kingdom ordered the commanders.

“Fire!”

“Slay the enemies!”

“For His Majesty!”

The soldiers of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms fired arrows towards the bronze giants. They focused on the Embinyu Church because they were more threatening than Weed.

Then Weed who was just watching shouted louder.

“Embinyu Church, look at this. The King of the Beiner Kingdom is moving against you!”

The fanatics below the walls started shouting.

“Kill the infidels! God Embinyu will let you taste endless suffering!”

It was enough to just listen. It was an exquisite response.

“Hmm, God Embinyu will curse the King of the Beiner Kingdom. Especially at night, it will pass in an instant.”

“Rip apart the body of the Beiner King!”

A perfect harmonious play between Weed and the fanatics of the Embinyu Church. It was like a scene where a woman slapped her

hateful mother in law! Some of the defense forces also shot arrows towards Weed.

Tititing!

However, the arrows just bounced off and didn't even scratch Weed's armour.

-There is minor damage from the arrow attacks.

Health has decreased by 3 due to the high resilience and defense.

-You have been hit by arrows in close succession.

The attacks were so feeble that he didn't need to pay attention. The arrows were perfectly blocked by his armour. His high defense and armour meant that the arrows couldn't damage him. Weed generously forgave the soldiers for attacking him.

“Well, it might be a little punishment for my bad actions.”

He still had a minimum of conscience. It would be annoying and burdensome if all the defenders jumped towards Weed.

If the heroes of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms, Rohadram and Andre attacked Weed along with the Embinyu Church then it would be troublesome. It would be best if he waited for the Embinyu Church to take care of both sides.

Rohadram and Andre were busy commanding the soldiers to block the Embinyu Church.

‘For my own self-interest....no, for the sake of the declining Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms. The guards here need to fight well. And I should help prevent the Embinyu Church from taking over the fortress.’

Benefiting from both sides was an absolutely effective tactic. It was common in history for great strategists to take advantage of this. He would then hit them on the back of the head. Not missing an opportunity to strike in the back was a good tactic.

“I am a bad guy.”

Weed praised himself.

Bringing the desert army to fight the Embinyu Church would just be in vain. The power of the enemy meant there was no guarantee of victory. And even if he won, he would suffer tremendous damage. Those waiting in Dulmore Fortress would identify his power and determine how to attack.

He needed to learn from history. A hero's sentiment would just cause him to lose his life.

“Charge!”

“Open the door so that the believers can enter.”

“Pilgrims of destruction, march forward to the death!”

The fanatics grabbed poles and attempted to break the gates of Dulmore Fortress. The pure silver in the flowing river meant those with an evil alignment couldn’t easily enter. But rocks and mud were used to fill up and block the river.

Monsters flew through the arrows and magic to snatch guards up into the sky. They endured the pain from the magic protection and continued to hunt humans.

“Kyahahat, delicious.”

“I’ve missed the taste of chewing on a head.”

The humans were delicious meals for those who came from hell. Perhaps the demons felt like they were tourists visiting a restaurant.

Dulmore Fortress became a scene of chaos due to the demons!

It had gained a reputation as an impregnable fortress in the warring period. However, it seemed like the fortress wouldn’t be able to hold out against the Embinyu Church for long.



“Ah...it has started.”

“Troops of the Embinyu Church are approaching. It is like that. We thought it would be a real battle but now it seems to be even more profound.”

The hot competition between the broadcasting stations continued. All the stations were showing the battle of Dulmore Fortress.

The viewers weren't deprived of channel choices but each station had different circumstances. The broadcasting stations that didn't relay Weed's adventure! They had the feel of second-rate stations.

The stations weren't comfortable discarding the events of Weed's adventure that affected the fate of the Versailles Continent. There was no guarantee their broadcast would gain higher audience rating than other stations but they had no choice but to sell advertising spots. Besides, Weed's adventure was really popular so there was unlikely to be any criticism.

The video started showing on the screen and the massive arm of the Embinyu Church appeared. The number of troops was many times larger than any war seen in Royal Road so it was extremely rare to see such a fierce war.

Bronze giants that seemed like mountains shook the land as they walked and flying creatures covered the sky.

“This...judge the pagans.”

“Your punishment will be unbearable pain.”

The Royal Road users shuddered at the sight of the Embinyu Army. Weed and the Embinyu Church's power in the warring period was horribly inflated. The Embinyu Church was enough to eat the Central Continent and destroy the Haven Empire.

That wasn't all.

Witches opened the Gates of Hell so demons fell down en masse. Despite being broad daylight, the sky turned a dark red. This was the decisive battle to decide the fate of the Versailles Continent.

KMC Media's Shin Hye-min and Oh Joo-wan.

The station had a team of 100 people working on the live broadcast.

“It is an overwhelming video from the start. It is thrilling to see what happens next. Oh Joo-wan ssi, what do you think?”

“It is really interesting.”

“Ah, you are trying to moderate your words.”

“Was I like that? My hands are sweating because of the battle. Weed’s armed forces have been seen a few times throughout the quest but can they really fight against the Embinyu Church? However, Weed always shows scenes that surpass our expectations. We can expect a cool showdown to unfold in the future.”

“It seems really desolate and scary over there. But the viewers really like it when Weed experiences this type of hardship.”

“I think so as well. We are really happy when Weed attempts a difficult quest.”

The station officials and viewers naturally wanted Weed to struggle. An adventure that would affect the entire continent! It was natural for interest to arise when one person caused so many changes to Royal Road.

“Oh Joo-wan ssi, what do you think the outcome will be for the war between Weed, the two kingdoms and the Embinyu Church?”

“I can only give a possible explanation. The possibility is high that it will be the end of the fortress.”

“I feel really sorry for the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms. Omo, now the gate is being destroyed.”

“It was just broken! The Embinyu fanatics are pushing in. The

battle will return shortly. It is now time to see some short ads.”



Weed directly participated in the battle by firing the Yurbusika Frost Bow at the Embinyu fanatics.

They weren’t mere ice arrows but arrows that froze a small area! Dozens of fanatics gathered near the gates were killed at once.

“This is the fun of a massacre. Though I am still disappointed. That is a bunch of japtem.”

The fortress’s defenders didn’t attack Weed now.

Of course, they had a hostile relationship but their current priority was pushing back the attacks. They greatly feared the Embinyu Church’s cruelty. They could withdraw but then the two kingdoms would be a target.

The bronze giants were throwing large rocks without hesitation in order to destroy the fortress. The fortress was protected by magic but the rocks still slowly hit the wall.

Furthermore, the magic effect wouldn’t last indefinitely. The pure silver river was filled with dirt so the fanatics and demons entered through the narrow gate and climbed the walls.

It seemed like the fortress was in a real crisis. Serious fear spread among the soldiers. The demons that came through the Gates of Hell would snatch away humans or eat their flesh.

Weed used Atrock's Cry.

“The cruel Embinyu Church will not spare us! If you want to live then fight until the end!”

The Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms weren't allies so it didn't have the effect of increasing their power and ability to follow commands. But it slightly affected morale.

“N-no. I want to go back home.”

“Let's go. It is better to run away and live.”

“Our kingdom is already ruined. Angela. I will go to her.”

The morale of the soldiers fighting the creatures fell sharply. Once morale hit the floor, the soldiers would run away and the army would crumble. The leadership of the army's commander would make a significant difference.

“They will trample on our souls even after death. The land where millions of people settled with become barren and the cities turned into ruins. Your family members in your hometowns will have cruel things done to them!”

The soldiers of the Mapon Kingdom were bewildered.

“What nonsense is that savage saying?”

“Yes. Aren’t they all actions that he committed as well?”

Weed had forgotten his own behaviour as well as that of the desert warriors. Looting, scorching the city and slavery were no different from the Embinyu Church. But there was a difference from the viewpoint of the person involved.

“I do bad things but it is for the sake of justice so it is okay. Shouldn’t you commit to actions in your life?”

A positive self-rationalization!

Currently, all the residents in the warring period existed because of Weed and Seo-yoon’s quest. Once Weed returned to his original time, this world would disappear like dust being blown by the wind.

So he didn’t feel any remorse. In fact, Weed’s actions would’ve had a large impact on the future even if it was a peaceful era. But they were residents of a warring period so they might’ve died even without Weed’s actions.

It was a time where they would either develop or perish. A

continuous cycle of destruction and recovery. Therefore, Weed's damage to the Haven Empire and Central Continent was less than expected.

‘The difference in power between the Embinyu Church and the army is too severe, even if the soldiers are fighting properly. It won't be easy to push them together.’

In the midst of shooting his bow on the walls, Weed could also observe the entire battlefield. His ultimate purpose wasn't to protect Dulmore Fortress but to win the battle.

The desert army was moving like Weed planned in advance. They would wait at a suitable distance until the right time to hit the Embinyu Army. The sculptural lifeforms, Hestiger who wouldn't die and the old Zahab led the troops.

The undead led by Van Hawk was already attacking the Embinyu Army from the side. The undead could continuously get up so it was better to use them early.

The assault of the Abyss Knight Van Hawk and the doom knights! The undead could improve their quality but in many cases, it was better to create undead from high level corpses.

Of course, Van Hawk wasn't the only one who could summon undead. The magicians of the Embinyu Church could as well. But the undead heading towards Dulmore Fortress consisted of fanatics and a dwarf species.

“Kuhit!”

“Kuhihihihit!”

The dwarves were 1 metre tall. They could travel a short distance with magic and the sharp nails were a tricky threat to deal with. They also thought that users were a good snack.

“The gate is broken. Brothers of the Mapon Kingdom, block the enemy.”

“Spear units, don’t retreat even one step. The kingdom wants your blood. Fight for His Majesty!”

The bronze giants smashed the gates and waves of monsters and fanatics entered. The knights of the Mapon Kingdom used spears to painfully block any enemies that came in.

Weed stood and shot any enemies approaching or climbing the walls. Sometimes the creatures would be hit by an arrow or dagger and would fall to the ground while shrieking.

“They are piling up fairly quickly. Can this really be called an impregnable fortress?”

Despite its fame, the desert army could easily take over Dulmore Fortress. Weed’s ability to command troops in combat was at a level that no one could reach.

The gate was already breached so Weed concentrated his arrows on the enemies crossing the river.

Chaechaechaechang!

The arrows exploded in every direction and hundreds of enemies in the attack range froze.

Usually when the fanatics died, they would spread things like 'spread nightmares,' 'body made of deadly poison,' and 'tear up a child.' The aura of darkness given by Embinyu was also frozen.

Once in a frozen state, 40% of the fanatics and monsters died. Of course, those who survived had their health reduced and movements slowed. Freezing the enemies rushing across the river was very effective.

The archers in Dulmore Fortress shot arrows relentlessly. There was the sound of incessant screaming and yells encouraging attacks.

"I can't feel the military power of the two kingdoms. Are the royals already trying to escape the fortress?"

Weed had that dangerous thought and looked back to see what the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms were doing.

Fierce battles were taking place on the main street near the gates. Flying creatures were in the air while fanatic archers and siege weapons were used to break and burn buildings in the fortress.

The large flying turtles were especially scary. The Barates spewed venom and literally melted the soldiers and buildings. That wasn't their only means of attack.

The demons that emerged through the Gates of Hell had a remarkable ability to learn.

‘We can't eat that human.’

‘He is not our share. He is as strong as a demon.’

‘Ruthless feeling. It will be a bother if he catches us.’

Weed completely scared the demons so they changed targets to the human soldiers. The winged monsters kidnapped soldiers from Dulmore Fortress.

The magicians on the ground aimed ice, wind and light attribute magic towards the flying creatures but the efficiency was poor. Magic attacks randomly soared towards the sky.

The fortress was wide and spacious and the knights were busy getting rid of the invading enemies. Dulmore Fortress was a mess filled with explosions and screams.

There was a limit to what humans could do against the Embinyu Army.

“Well, I guess I can’t complain. I need to be a bit more active.”

It was now urgent to take care of the gates. If the gates were blocked then the archers and magicians could reduce the numbers of the Embinyu Army.

Of course, the bronze giants throwing rocks towards the fortress was also a large headache.

Weed stroked his camel.

“Bactrian Camel.”

“Pururung!”

“Hide until I call.”

Weed got down from the camel and took out the Extermination Sword while Bactrian Camel quickly hid somewhere safe.

“Then where should I play?”

His health and mana recovery was very fast so he had returned to

a perfect state.

Weed could block up the gates so that not even one monster and fanatic could enter. However, guarding one place would be boring.

Mere fanatics weren't enough to stop the great desert festival. He was capable of casually burning hundreds of people at once. Weed almost dreaded returning to his original time zone.

But there was no meaning in blocking the gates when the bronze giants would eventually destroy the walls.

“I'll play in the air.”

Weed raced along the wall like the wind. He lightly swung his sword towards dozens of monsters climbing up from the walls.

“Flash Leap!”

Weed ran quickly and cast a skill. It didn't consume his mana but high agility and strength were needed. It was a technique that allowed him to jump high if his running speed was fast enough.

Kwa kwa kwang!

A huge shock was delivered to the walls and archers fell down. Weed flew over 100 metres and landed in front of the enemy on a large turtle.

The archers and magicians on the Barates turned towards him.

“T-the enemy!”

“We must kill him.”

However, Weed just swung the Extermination Sword towards the archers. Violent flames stretched out from the Extermination Sword. It was a pillar of fire. The fearsome flames reached the archers who screamed and collapsed.

“Puhuhung!”

Bactrian Camel inched closer to the wall while watching Weed’s battle. Then his body changed into dirt and was sucked into the wall. The only thing left of Bactrian Camel was a pattern left on the wall.

This was Bactrian Camel’s defense skill of hiding within objects.

-Cursed iron has been acquired.

-382 poison arrows have been acquired.

-A book of offerings for the Embinyu Church has been acquired.

You can earned a bit of knowledge and experience.

Weed recovered the japtem left behind by the archers.

“How do I kill this guy?”

He needed to handle the large turtles as well.

Kuooooong!

The large turtle felt the crisis and started twisting its body while flying. It leaned backwards and turned upside down in an attempt to drop Weed.

He could experience a thrilling feeling! The ground approached but his health was so high that he wouldn't be hurt by the crash.

Other magicians in the area shot flames at him. The Barates also spat acid while furiously flipping in the air.

“This amount of force isn't enough to kill it. I should handle it individually.”

Weed cast a skill.

“Wrath of Fire!”

Fired burned from the Extermination Sword. The flames were very rough and violent. It needed direct contact with enemies to deal damage but once it did, it would melt away the leather and bones of monsters. In particular, stabbing would increase attack power by 5 times.

Weed jumped across several turtles in a row without bothering to verify the results. This time it was possible to leap to other turtles without using a jump skill. The archers were overpowered while the large turtles engulfed in flames crashed into the ground.

“It worked out well!”

He continued jumping in the air and attacked the turtles. The knights and archers screamed as the turtles fell to the ground.

“Scatter!”

“Another is falling.”

“Over there....”

Large fireballs consisting of turtles fell from the sky and hit Dulmore Fortress. The towers and buildings collapsed while many soldiers and nobles died.

Chapter 2: Advance Notice Of An Outstanding Performance

“Wake up. Cry out according to your original wild nature.”

More than half of the sacred river at Dulmore Fortress had been filled with stones and soil. The priests of the Embinyu Church walked forward with their wands while chanting spells. It was then hurtled towards the troops defending the fortress.

“Hey, are you okay?”

“I don’t know. My head itches and my body aches. It feels like my flesh is tearing.”

Suddenly, long hairs sprouted out between the armour that the soldiers were wearing.

“What is this?”

“I don’t know. This can’t be. My body is changing.”

Their limbs became thicker and their skin was peeled off. They couldn’t endure it any longer and took off their armour.

“K-kill me!”

“Call the priests.”

“No. Before that...ah, it is too late....”

Hair grew from their stomachs and faces and their fell to the ground on all fours.

Grrrrr!

They became medium sized wolves with murderous eyes. The priests of the Embinyu Church used spells to change a human into a beast. The wolves jumped around and bit the necks of any humans in the vicinity.

They had been fighting alongside their colleagues but their instinct and reason had been influenced towards the Embinyu Church.

“Your eyes and ears are sensing the wrong things. You must only serve Embinyu!”

And they were also enveloped in brainwashing magic. The enchanted soldiers instantly defected and joined the Embinyu Church. The archers on the walls turned their arrows towards the soldiers inside the castle.

“Wake up!”

“Captain, trust in the Embinyu. He will lead us to a comfortable and happy world free of pain.”

“Jyado! We shouldn’t forget the favour His Majesty has done for us.”

“Huh, the king? What has he given to us? Heavy taxes, causing a war because of greed for territory or capturing and killing any refugees?”

“It was unavoidable. Joining that side isn’t the answer!”

“The king is deceiving us. He wants to maintain his authority in front of the nobility. You have felt more pain as time passed. You can rest if you join Embinyu.”

The captain tried to stop the soldiers but he soon feel victim to the brainwashing spell.

“Kukukut, you are right. Then I will follow Embinyu.”

The revolt of the soldiers took place everywhere. The knights weren’t caught but the soldier with low loyalty were brainwashed.

While Weed was playing in the air, the defenders in Dulmore Fortress were crumbling. The defense forces fell victim to the brainwashing and the number of Embinyu troops increased.

“These ugly bastards.”

Weed who was running around on a turtle could guess the situation simply by looking down at the ground.

“I can’t leave it to these people. They won’t last for long.”

He grumbled as the soldiers suddenly changed positions to the Embinyu Church. However, the fortress didn’t fall to the Embinyu Church straight away.

The magic devices and siege weapons of the fortress was still working. The elites arranged in the archer towers fired steel arrows. The magicians of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms gathered on the walls also counterattacked by the enemies. The attacks were effective in delaying the advance of the fanatics and the demons.

Weed wanted at least that degree. He could play around to his heart’s content.

“You are already the last one!”

He ignored the resistance of the archers and caused the remaining large turtle to fall down. He rode the flaming turtle as it fell to the ground.

The viewers watching the broadcast sometimes felt like they were watching a scene from an action movie.

‘A positive appearance will come out!’

His cloak waved as he stood on the back of the turtle that crashed into the central square of the fortress!

-You have crashed heavily into the ground from a high position.

Your necklace has absorbed the shock.

Health has been reduced by 37,838.

The collision has caught a slight shoulder injury.

More mana will be consumed when using a sword skill.

This will last for 961 seconds.

If a priest heals you then health and mana will recover quickly.

An explosion took place and Weed slowly emerged after the dust subsided. The decline in health wasn't so bad but the shoulder injury was a little worrisome. But he wasn't in a dangerous fight at the moment so he could endure it.

‘It was really cool. I am the best.’

The stations and viewers were being sent this scene in real time.

There was a fuss on the bulletin boards.

-Fighting in the sky is really fantastic but he seems a little ignorant. Why did he fall? Surely he had enough skill to be able to escape?

-His eyes seem like it hurt quite a bit.

-The sight of Weed escaping from the turtle just before it exploded caused my heart to pound.

-Did you see his form? I am invigorated by the sight of it.

The viewers focused on his appearance and actions. They were hoping that Weed would show them an electrifying and exciting battle! An excitement similar to when the orc Karichwi led an army against the Immortal Legion.

The viewers didn't like the scene of Weed falling from the sky on a large monster without any resistance. It was like taking money from a pre-schooler.

The Barates had poured acid and arrows towards the fortress. But Weed took care of them surprisingly quickly. Of course, the

damage of the large turtles crashing into the fortress was calculated separately!

Weed's eyes flashed around the vicinity as the smoke cleared.

“Cough! S-somebody help me!”

The knights and nobles were injured. Not long ago, they were wearing garish jewellery or swords encrusted with gem.

‘Quietly abandoning the items...ah, there are quite a few soldiers. Now is a bad time to attract attention. Throwing it away is good.’

The magic shield protected the fortress but the demons could still enter thanks to the river being blocked. Monsters and demons entering through the gates were being taken care of.

There was also 12 magic towers defending Dulmore Fortress. The magic flowing into the ground was important to activate the protection so the defenses would weaken when a tower was destroyed. The bronze giants and monsters focused their attacks in the direction of the magic towers. When he looked up, 3 large rocks thrown by the bronze giants were flying through the sky.

Anyway, there was a new wave of attacks from the Embinyu Army. The bronze giants wouldn't stop throwing rocks until the fortress was completely broken.

“The enemy troops will soon capture the fortress.”

The most urgent problem was the Gates of Hell. The size of the Embinyu Army was fixed but the Gates of Hell meant that more demons could appear.

He needed to destroy the witch Pechet to get rid of the Gates of Hell but that was a really difficult goal to achieve. Pechet was in the heart of the enemies.

Even if Weed fought her alone, she had a special ability.

The knights of the Keltun Kingdom had written many stories about her.

[A group of brave knights attacked her with their swords.

Magicians risked their lives to complete their magic attacks.

The priests used their holy magic.

Apparently, all the attacks just passed through her....

A cursed witch that could wipe the world clean.

The Keltun Kingdom fought her nine times and were defeated.

The witch even managed to reach the royal palace of the Keltun

Kingdom.

The remaining magicians analysed the ability of the witch.

The ancient magic 'Dimension Release.'

A magic that hid her true flesh across 2~3 dimensions.

It was impossible to kill her until her body completely entered this world.

The witch Pechet could also absorb the life force of others that were dying.

Many knights lost their health and mana to her.

The only way to force her body to show up was to aim for the moment when she was absorbing.

Until then, any attacks were obsolete.

In addition, a premature attack would cause her body to flee again.

A person called Jerkel learned the forbidden necromancy magic.

'Corpse Explosion!'

He was a citizen loyal to his lord and exploded his body while she was absorbing his health. He left the rest to the other knights.

The blood and corpses of the knights that defended the kingdom.

Ohh, this is the glory of the Keltun Kingdom.]

This was data he had asked Mapan to find in Morata’s library.

Pechet was known for her invulnerability in combat. A witch that couldn’t be caught without a noble sacrifice.

Weed’s thoughts went up to there.

“I should move quickly. There are empty rooms in the fortress. Can’t I even take a little nap?”

He was in a hurry.

Weed’s thoughts didn’t reflect that at all.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“This will be the last day for Weed. Although he might have a heavenly talent, even he can’t escape death today.”

Yoo Byung-jin meticulously looked at every detail of the Embinyu Army's power. He couldn't stop smiling as he looked at the list of their main power.

There was the big turtles, the Baretas that could break down the enemy's fortress. They would overcome the height of the walls. Arrows shooting down from the sky would slaughter the enemies. The turtles would also fly out of the range of magic attacks from the ground and the turtle's shell was a natural defense. The only drawback was that their flying speed was a little slow.

Taking care of them wouldn't be easy.

"But that is just the beginning. The Embinyu Army's main power hasn't even emerged yet. Kukuku."

Yoo Byung-jin could see on the monitor that the high priests and Knights of Atrocities hadn't even moved yet.

The core power of the Embinyu Army consisted of boss level monsters.

More than 300 species of rare monsters, fanatics with blind loyalty and bronze giants! That power alone was enough to make Dulmore Fortress fall.

He was filled with tension as he watched the monitor.

The real power was with the high priests, Igrig and Motuls.

The power of the Embinyu Church was beyond imagination and it was enough to conquer the continent. According to the analysis of the AI, the army that Weed mobilized was only 23% of the Embinyu Army. Even if the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms joined in, that only increased to 26%.

Military troops trained in the kingdom revealed their vulnerability to black magic and brainwashing spells. A witch's spells could also invoke a collective illusion, making it difficult to defeat the army. An overwhelming amount of allies were destroyed by friendly fire.

Due to the nature of the Embinyu Church, it was close to impossible to beat them. An ability to reveal and take advantage of weaknesses in the opponent was a reason why the Embinyu Army was close to invincible.

It would be interesting to see if Weed's army that swept over the south and central continent would fare.

Weed had a variety of combat experience so he could guess the various capabilities of the Embinyu Army. If he clumsily attacked then the desert army that had been overwhelming so far would be completely wiped out!

The power of the Embinyu Army would be enough to march over the weakened kingdoms. Being clever and wicked wouldn't be enough for defeat them.

“It doesn’t matter how strong he is or if he doesn’t make any mistakes. The Embinyu Church’s real strength will be revealed with this.”

Yoo Byung-jin knew everything about Royal Road and was repeatedly dissatisfied that the Embinyu Church was underestimated.

The users on the Versailles Continent hadn’t suffered a real crisis yet. They only fought by themselves without paying attention to the forces of evil. They foolishly allowed the Embinyu Church to spread in the shadows of the continent. The Versailles Continent wasn’t a stable place where peace was guaranteed.

Weed was able to have considerable success in quests relating to the Embinyu Church so far. After changing into Nodulle, if he failed then history would change completely and the Embinyu Church would rampage.

“The Hermes Guild trying to control the continent...this is the best conclusion.”

Yoo Byung-jin knew that users were unfortunately prone to greediness. As the creator of Royal Road, he had observed hundreds of things a day that he didn’t like. The last moments of a couple swarmed by strong monsters.

“Uhh, this death...but I am happy that I can die together with you.”

“Deok-bae ssi, I love you.”

A melodramatic scene commonly seen in movies or dramas. Many couples lived in the wonderful world of the Versailles Continent.

It wasn't common for those with strength to help others. Laughter filled cities and passion lit up the faces of people who wanted to go adventuring.

Yoo Byung-jin thought it was quite annoying.

“Weed will die if he is defeated in this battle.”

-Should I calculate the probability of Weed's death?

“What is it?”

Yoo Byung-jin was interested in the words of the AI.

Every time he managed to overcome the difficulties, but this time common sense dictated that Weed would fail.

Even if the desert army consisted of elite warriors, the rest were conscripted soldiers. They would be pushed by the monsters and fanatics of the Embinyu Church. There was also the confusion and brainwashing magic.

These troops were worthy of taking first place in the history books. Even with the 20,000 desert warriors, Dulmore Fortress would only be able to withstand it for a few hours. The overall power different was so large that the desert warriors would die one by one. Including the sculptural lifeforms, everyone who followed Weed would lose their lives. And finally Weed's death would be a perfect and neat finish.

The final secret sculpting technique would disappear. Even Weed's incredible resourcefulness and leadership skills wouldn't enable him to win. If the battle lasted a long time then Motuls and Igrig's power would come into place, making it the Embinyu Church's absolute victory.

“Hrmm.”

Nevertheless, Yoo Byung-jin was worried enough to calculate the probability.

“Do it.”

-The probability of survival has been calculated. You should rejoice heartily. Looking at the odds, the probability of victory is unlikely. There is only a 3% chance of victory.

“It is hardly likely that he will be successful.”

It was common sense that Weed would be defeated by the Embinyu Church but something unexpected might happen.

Yoo Byung-jin's mind could accept it but his heart believed one thing.

‘Maybe Weed can pull it off.’



Dulmore Fortress was under siege but Weed was strictly calm and impersonal.

The bronze giant were throwing stones everywhere and the battlefield was a scene of confusion.

“The wave of attacks is starting.”

The outer walls were instantly taken by the Embinyu Church. The fortress's defenders, the soldiers of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms tried to recapture it but it wasn't easy.

“Receive the righteous judgement of God!”

“Kuooh, no. My head hurts.”

“Embinyu will ease the pain.”

The priests and inquisitors continued their brainwashing. The

soldiers taken by the Embinyu Church killed their allied troops.

Embinyu's divine judgement!

Join the church or resist, those were the only two options. Accept a painful death or follow the Embinyu Church.

But the knights of the kingdoms thoroughly resisted it. The kings, nobles and knights all had high resistance.

The wide shields and iron swords were used by the knights to block the monsters. The interior of the fortress was like a complex maze so losing the external walls wasn't as significant.

"The Embinyu Army will have to shed quite a lot of blood in order to occupy the fortress."

It was useful just watching the battle in order to experience the tactics of the monsters. And Weed aimed to weaken the power of the Embinyu Church.

He needed to take care of the witches and priests actively brainwashing people. Getting rid of the magic would weaken the Embinyu Army. Although it would give the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms an opportunity to exit the battlefield.

"It can't be helped. Sculptural Destruction! Everything into strength."

For phase 2 of the battle, Weed used a sculpting technique. The target was a Masterpiece Sculpture!

He couldn't make a lot of sculptures on this quest. This one was based on Bactrian Camel, the sculpture called 'Diamond Encrusted Male Camel.'

The artistic merit was rather low but because it was made by the Great Conqueror Weed, it was a piece with a lot of prestige.

He created 2 Masterpieces and 3 Fine pieces so there were several opportunities to use Sculptural Destruction.

It was time to make an important contribution. At that moment, an intense light surrounded Weed's body. The light was a bright contrast against the darkened sky.

-You have used Sculptural Destruction.

The pain of destroying a Fine sculpture! The grief!

The Art stat is permanently reduced by 10 points. Fame has decreased by 200.

The Art stat has been converted to Strength for one day.

Your Art stat is too high. You will acquire skills associated with

strength.

1,660 Strength has been converted to 'Severe Blow.'

When hitting enemies with the exact amount of power, enemies will be blown away.

Probability of causing paralysis and confusion has increased.

1,320 Strength has been converted to the skill 'Piercing Spear.'

The opponent's shield and armour will be smashed by the powerful attack.

1,980 Strength has been converted to the skill 'Momentary Herculean Strength.'

Power will triple for a short amount of time.

Enormous vitality is required.

2,880 Strength has been converted to the skill 'Will of a Brave Warrior.'

Can acquire the skill of a brave warrior. Colleagues within range will be blessed and have their concentration increased.

There will be complete immunity to curses that will weaken power.

1,450 Strength is utilized to maximize the sword's base damage.

The durability will decrease quickly but the sword's offense will increase by 62%.

Weed felt like he was boiling with power.

“This delicious taste!”

The feeling that he could crush or break any enemy! This was the feeling of joy that could only be felt in Royal Road. Moreover, his strength was already strong enough to cause a pile of enemies. All of the Embinyu Church members in the area were like rice that Weed could eat.

“My strength is good enough so shall I play in earnest?”

A thorough preparation would ensure a stable retirement. Instead of rushing immediately into battle, he pulled out another sculpture.

A barbarian warrior Tor!

They were divided into clans but this barbarian was associated with giants in the myths. They were 6 metres tall and the whole

body had a muscular strength.

A species created for combat.

Young women would stare at the body with disgust but his eyes shone like lanterns when looking at the shape.

It was rare to see barbarians on the Versailles Continent because they lived in lands filled with the strongest monsters. Therefore, the users hadn't explored those areas yet. However, their appearance and combat skills were known from murals painted in caves and history books. The aggressive fighting spirit meant they were always depicted hunting or struggling against a monster.

After changing into the large race, it would consume more vitality and physical strength. However, he was confident that he would be able to maintain the barbarian Tor's fighting power.

“Sculpture Transformation!”

-Sculpture Transformation has been used.

The infinite affection for sculpting makes the sculptor and statue resemble each other!

Weed's growth was incomparable to children who had a growth spurt after drinking milk. His skin changed to a healthy, tanned appearance and his whole body changed. He had spacious and solid shoulders and abs like a washboard. The sturdy muscles of his

thighs was the best.

Compared to the dwarf Art Hand or the orc Karichwi, this was a terribly handsome appearance.

In fact, Weed initially thought that an ugly face would give off an intimidating feeling. But the statue needed to have a balanced harmony of face and body. When using Sculptural Transformation, he normally used at least 1~2 knife scars, a thin nose and a gaping jaw.

However, that face alone would look awkward with Weed's body. There was a disharmony between the face and the body so Weed settled on Hestiger's face as a compromise.

But his pride as an artist didn't allow him to simply copy the face so he thickened the nose, eyes and eyebrows. And he also widened the forehead.

Thus a handsome warrior was born! A face and body that would remove the souls of women.

-The size of your body has grown so you can't wear the current equipment.

You have learnt 'Understanding Sculptures' due to Sculpture Transformation.

Due to sufficient strength and understanding of the species, you

can use the special skills of the barbarian species.

-Iron Wall Body: Barbarians don't wear cumbersome armour.

Their bodies are harder than the best steel armour.

The blessed flesh will weaken all magic.

If a wound occurs then it will just heal like nothing happened.

-Rock Echo: A warrior's cry that seems to endlessly ring out.

The sound will overwhelm the enemies.

Those with weak characters will have their soul slip away.

-Earth Shaking: A punch to the ground or stomp of the feet would cause the earth to shake.

A wide range of enemies will fall and buildings will be destroyed.

What can withstand the shaking of the earth caused by a barbarian?

The fallen enemies will be stunned, confused or immobile.

Please Note: Casting the skill will consume a lot of strength and vitality so it should be used carefully in a short period of time.

-Deep Breath: Barbarians have a similar but slightly different structure to a human body.

Their lungs are wide and their hearts throb wildly.

Any excessive movement won't cause your breathing to fall.

A barbarian will have to constantly battle for a week in order to become weary.

-Recovery of Joy: Barbarians believe in the God of Bravery, Bardger.

Bardger is an almost non-existence god to human beings.

Barbarians known for their bravery would go to the Altar of Victory.

The God of Bravery, Bardger is known as the guardian of a warrior's tomb.

Bardger will give special powers to barbarians screaming in pain and suffering.

“Barbarian, your work doesn’t end here. Don’t stop fighting even when the winner is certain.”

Recovery of Joy will eliminate all abnormal states and restore depleted health and vitality.

In addition, resistance to various attributes will change depending on the strength and vitality.

However, this can only be used once a month.

The skill Recovery of Joy can turn things around to achieve a great victory.

-The influence of Sculpture Transformation has significantly increased agility and vitality.

The effectiveness of attack skills will increase by 25%.

Endurance will be enhanced.

This will last until Sculpture Transformation is released.

“Ohhh, this is good.”

Weed marvelled at the power of a barbarian. It was like eating soup with a variety of perfect seafood like crab, abalone and

shrimp.

However, users couldn't select the barbarian species yet. Just like the necromancer occupation, users might be given this opportunity in the future.

Of course, it was still unsure what penalty would be applied when selecting that species. In any case, Weed had the ability to sufficiently digest the abilities of a barbarian.

This was the biggest advantage of a secret sculpting technique like Sculpture Transformation.

“This is now my world.”

He looked around with remarkably large eyes. The soldiers inside Dulmore Fortress were frightened as they saw him.

“Monster! It is a monster!”

“God, why did you send us a demon like this?”

The soldiers couldn't remove their fear. In fact, not one scratch would appear if they attacked Weed. A rare attack might hit on a rainy day.

Weed didn't want to fight humans. They didn't even reach his waist. He somehow felt like a superior being standing over tiny

children.

“My strength is bursting out quickly.”

He felt the ground shake as the bronze giants threw rocks. He wanted to quickly go out and smash the bronze giants but he had to urgently find a weapon. Usually he got japtem related to the species but it was extremely rare to find a barbarian weapon.

Items wouldn't drop without a relevant reason. Scimitars were easily obtained in desert areas while fishing bait and rare shells could be found on the coast. The equipment of barbarians would probably drop near the stone forest where they lived.

“I prepared for this in advance.”

Weed squatted and pulled out all 3 pieces of the Extermination Sword from his backpack.

Chalkak!

It was a special order he requested from the blacksmiths. The Extermination Sword pieces connected together like a long spear.

It was an oversized sword but he could wield it comfortably as a barbarian. The third piece especially was thick enough to be held comfortable in the hands of a barbarian.

-The Extermination Swords have been connected together.

Damage is multiplied by 1.4 times.

The characteristics of fire is further strengthened.

Additional stats have been given.

“That’s it.”

Normally a sword would look like a thin skewer in a barbarian’s hand. Swords were tailored to humans but barbarians would rather use an axe or mace. However, the Extermination Sword contained the power of fire.

Hwaruruk!

Thick flames licked the sword! It was a weapon completely befitting a barbarian. And he felt the heat through his hands.

The best body and weapon!

The conditions for using the Extermination Sword was a resistance to fire. Although the characteristics of his species had changed, the basic resistance as a sword master still remained.

He also had the fighting spirit of a barbarian. Weed’s thoughts

were only focused on quickly going to fight.

Chapter 3: Emergence Of A Bad Warrior

“Strip the walls of the enemies. If you can’t then step down immediately!”

“Fight. We will die here. For His Majesty!”

“I don’t want to. I don’t want my body to be eaten by demons. I’m going to run away!”

“Anybody who joins the Embinyu Church are blasphemers. Just kill them. We will implement the 27 new torture types on the Embinyu followers. Then we will put them out in the sun to feed the trees.”

“It is the demon. The demon from hell that took my friend. Ohh, I’ve grieved since it happened. My friend’s head has probably been digested by now. He hasn’t repaid the money he borrowed from me. Of course, I might not survive this place but....”

The bronze giants were seriously attacking and destroying the walls of Dulmore Fortress. The fortress’s defenders were fighting the fanatics and monsters but there was an influx of attackers towards the fortress.

“God, why are you giving us so much suffering.”

The soldiers were locked in grief. It was impossible for the

kingdoms to prevent the invasion of the monsters and demons. The elites of the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms couldn't persist.

Weed appeared with the Extermination Sword at that time. He slowly walked from a passage connecting buildings in the fortress.

Kung! Kung! Kung!

The ground made a heavy sound every time he walked. The military fortress didn't have wide passages. So he felt very full.

In fact, it would be faster jumping in the air but there was no need to rush. And he wouldn't look cool. A man's pride couldn't give up on looking cool!

“Ehh.”

The soldiers were panicked and astonished as they watched Weed. An immense stature with muscles born for combat and the Extermination Sword radiating flames. The brightness despite the darkness caused by the Gates of Hell and the rainclouds.

“What is that bald giant?”

“.....”

The desert had stripped him of all his hair so he was bald. He had a handsome face and body but the lack of hair made him look wild.

A male that gave off a bad and evil feeling!

“I see a lot of rice.”

He crashed onto the battlefield but moved slowly after that. Nearby, a giant spider from the Embinyu Church was catching humans in its web and eating them.

Weed walked up to it and grabbed one of the spider legs.

Kuwawang!

“Stay away! My sticky legs will make you unable to hunt for weeks.”

It didn't matter how the large spider struggled or what it said! The giant spider was thrown hundreds of metres and squared the army members of the Embinyu Church.

He only used pure force, without any skills.

“Ah! Thank you for your help.”

The human soldiers caught in the web thanked him. Weed ignored the thankful soldiers and walked towards the walls. He honestly didn't care if the soldiers were killed or not. He just didn't want to wait until after the spiders ate them.

The soldiers fell back to the Dulmore Fortress. They didn't dare attack since Weed would probably just kill their colleagues. Many had the good judgement and low morale to run away instead of fighting.

“How dare monsters of the Embinyu Church come here without my permission! The worst are those who don't give experience or money!”

Weed grabbed and threw the monsters.

“Wahhhh, get rid of the enemies!”

The defenders of the fortress had their morale swell at the sight. However, there were dozens of places where the walls had collapsed so the enemies came in frequently. The archers of the Embinyu Church were also pulling their bows while aiming at the defenders.

Despite Weed's efforts, there was an overwhelming amount of human deaths.

“I have to use my power properly.”

Weed leapt over rubble and climbed the walls. His large body was visible as he climbed the walls.

“Get away!”

He grabbed the monsters on the walls and threw them at the Embinyu Army.

“That power....”

“He threw that heavy monster!”

The Embinyu priests and brainwashed guards were astonished at the sight.

“Kuwooooh!”

Rock Echo that overwhelmed the battlefield! Weed used a strong voice to call the Embinyu Church.

“It is silly to fight the humans of the fortress! Come up to me. I will let you know what power is!”

A large explosion occurred at the same time there was a burst of light. A cry that lured the enemy. A barbarian was big and hulking so he had a very large voice.

“A wicked spell took us.”

The archers on the walls suddenly recovered their spirit. The brainwashing spells of the Embinyu Church were broken by his cry.

“We will fight together.”

The archers announced their intention to cooperate and before the real battle started, Weed began to sing.

[Black clouds are surging

Weak characters trying to preserve the peace will be broken

I live in a deep, dark place under the ground]

The viewers popped into his head. In the past, Weed had sung songs strange lyrics. Even so, it gave the battle an epic feeling.

The Embinyu Army marching under the darkened sky had an atmosphere that would fit well with a song.

[I can't do the laundry without feeling angry

The damp floors and wallpaper

The miserable, musty smell!

I hate rainy days the most

Waking up in the morning with a dense fog in my room

It is a nightmare to get rid of fungus in the middle of summer

Heating, heating, the hellish cost of heating]

The song's title was <Fall of the Basement Room>!

Weed sung a song filled with his extremely angry emotions. The grievances of living in a basement room. There was only a single futon, a small television and plastic cabinets. He remembered suffering while trying to pay the monthly rent to the landlord.

Other people were fighting with their friends or listening to their mother's nagging. However, Weed had to hold his tongue or risk being kicked out by the landlord. He hadn't yet achieved his dream of owning a house at that time. The cosy underground room that caused fear as well.

"I'll kill you all!"

Weed's original plan was to wait a little longer on the walls. The defenders of Dulmore Fortress were still alive so there was no need to leave early.

Van Hawk was also leading the undead so there was no need for Weed to jump into the battlefield. But his anger changed his plans.

Weed came running out of the fortress. He wielded his Extermination Sword in the midst of the Embinyu Army.

Kkuek!

“Damage. Run away!”

More than 100 fanatics were turned to ashes. It was the same for the monsters of the Embinyu Church that besieged him. All those within the range of Weed’s attacks were burned to death.

“Die. Die! Die!”

-Black Knight’s Strike!

An irreversible attack against the surrounding enemies.

Consecutive wide area skills that succeeded!

Weed was surrounded by a sea of fire. Giving monthly rent to lease a house wasn’t a bad thing.

However, he would occasionally watch enviously as the family of the landlord ate pork belly in the yard. He was accompanied by his pure hearted sister who wanted to eat the meat but they could only watch like beggars.

He also felt agitation when the boiler failed or the door wouldn't open. A room that required a lot of repairs.

He had countless sad memories living under a landlord. He couldn't remember the Pythagoras maths taught in childhood but remembered the exact name of his landlord.

“Undulating Flame Mark!”

His species had changed but he could still use the same skills.

Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwang!

A series of explosions occurred in the surrounding area. Weed ran alone into the Embinyu Army. Approximately 3,000~4,000 people lost their lives.

Suddenly, the sound of faint screaming from the soldiers at the fortress could be heard. The river filled with silver had completely lost its strength so the monsters' advance started.

100 flying demons flapped down and targeted Weed. They were cunning and pounced at the moment when Weed was distracted.

“Those who don't follow Embinyu will be destroyed!”

The troops of the Embinyu Army didn't fear death and continued advancing. Priests and magicians crossed the river. Their biggest

goal was to take care of Weed.

“Kill him.”

“I have grasped his true existence. We must get rid of him for the sake of Embinyu’s aspirations.”

“All those faithful to Embinyu, he is our goal.”

The Embinyu Army focused on Weed. Their original mission was to destroy the fortress but now all the ranged attacks were hurled towards Weed.

“Wedge Blast, blow!”

“Beads of Cold!”

The magic attacks from the Embinyu Church flew towards Weed on the battlefield.

“Summon Another Sword, Absolute Defense, Close Eyes Tightly!”

He used his defensive skills!

Nodulle had learnt Close Eyes Tightly from a useless quest a while back. A flying sword defeated the magic in the air.

However, a large number of spells failed to break and they struck Weed's large body. He received a carpet bombing of hundreds of magic attacks.

Weed was prepared for the shock and pain and closed his eyes.

“Huh?”

He was thrown by a big shock but didn't collapse to the ground. He had prepared his body but it surprisingly felt like he was being tickled! His health hadn't even decreased by one tenth. The high priests Igrig and Motuls didn't join the attack so he didn't receive any major injuries.

Weed had a formidable level and skills and he could now display this ability after changing into a barbarian. Barbarians had a very high resistance to magic. In addition, the health that was reduced filled up very quickly! His recovery ability wasn't like a troll but this much was tremendous.

Weed neatly ended his calculations.

‘A barbarian is indeed strong. I can feel a little reassured. Of course, it would be dangerous if this attack repeated a few more times....’

The flying monsters sensed that Weed was weakened and flew to him. It would be difficult if his health was reduced to the half way

point.

After the dust subsided, Weed casually roared.

“Stupid bastards! Is this the extent of Embinyu that you believe in?”

He moved quickly before the magic attack could fall on him again. He rushed to the place where magicians and priests were.

There were plenty of magicians and priests within the Embinyu Army. Normally there were a limited number of magicians in each kingdom. But the Embinyu Church had a number of magicians that could use the fanatics' faith as holy power.

Sometimes priests or inquisitors would kill human soldiers in combat and be promoted.

“The popularity of these guys....”

Weed ran in a hurry. His large bulk was enough to tear up a monster and display tremendous strength but his size was also a disadvantage.

Even if chanting the spells took a little time, it was impossible to avoid hundreds of arrows fired at him. He threw his body towards the side that had less attacks.

“Catch him for Embinyu!”

“He must be captured. Skin him alive and place him in boiling oil.”

The dark knights jumped towards him. Weed punched them or slashed them with the Extermination Sword.

“I encourage you to come to me, trash of the Embinyu Church!”



The viewers felt their chests boiled as they watched Weed’s adventure.

In the meantime, they had been enjoying the fun and thrilling adventure but this time they prayed for his unconditional success. The outcome of the world depended on this adventure.

Those who weren’t fans of Weed didn’t want the Embinyu Church to grow any larger. In addition, the users had a large impression of Weed who went back to the past to stop the Embinyu Church causing a crisis on the continent.

The influential stations like KMC Media and CTS Media focused on making Weed into a hero.

“The peace of the continent is being endangered by the Embinyu

Church. So far, Weed has come forever and resolve the problem every time the Versailles Continent was at risk. He has shown off his great sense of justice.”

“Weed has also developed the Versailles Continent quite a bit. In particular, his contribution for the production and art occupations is quite large.”

The influence of the broadcast was so huge that there was an obvious change in the children of the families watching.

“I would like to become an adventurer like Weed!”

“I want to be live nicely like an artist. And marry an orc male like Karichwi.”

Weed’s popularity was like a character in a fairy tale book. A human defeating monsters with an ice dragon and wyverns.

Yellowy helping out in the fields, Goldman handling money and a hungry heroine eating noodles. These were cliché but popular developments. Anyway, the viewers didn’t want to see Weed defeated by the Embinyu Church.

“Today my heart is so nervous that I can’t eat chicken.”

“I’m not in the mood for pizza.”

The ratings continued to hit unprecedented records. The stations focused on Weed and abandoned the Hermes Guild's war to secure the continent. In a sense, Weed was recognized as the last remaining hero of the continent.

And Weed was now participating in a quest that had the highest probability of failure.

“Ah, why did he recklessly rush out of the safety of the walls?”

“He is sweeping everything away. How cool.”

Viewers felt uneasy.

The future of the world would be divided into two depending on the result of this adventure. The Hermes Guild would either unify the continent or it would be destroyed by the Embinyu Church.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The enemies gathered around Weed.

“Bring it on. I will smash all of you!”

He finished off hundreds of enemies rushing at the same time.

“Embinyu bastards, do you only have this much? You are far

from destroying the continent!”

He provoked the temper of the enemies. The dark knights, fanatics and monsters clung to him. The magic attacks of the enemies exploded all around him.

-Health is decreasing.

Current health remaining is 68.7%.

It wasn't a serious injury but he was surrounded by numerous enemies. He fought for a long time in the middle of enemy territory. The recklessness of a hero trying to save the world!

The soldiers at Dulmore Fortress had a greater chance of preventing the invasion the more Weed played with the enemies. The demons emerging from the Gates of Hell and the Embinyu Church focused on Weed so the charge to the fortress had decreased.

Weed grabbed the monster's head and threw them into the air.

Kwarururung!

The lightning bolt hit the monster instead of him. He flung the enemies towards magic and arrows whenever there was the chance. Sometimes he would throw the monsters towards the dark knights and roar.

“Weak. Too weak to become my food. Come towards me en masse!”

He was the most intimidating human on the continent. He was alone against an army from the Embinyu Church.

But his mind was constantly calculating coldly.

‘The magic attacks have hesitated a little bit. They are preparing something big.’

A simple ice bolt would be hard to scratch the body of a barbarian. He realized that the magicians of the Embinyu Church were preparing a strong spell. And the priests used sacrifices to curse Weed.

The combat power of knights and warriors was overwhelming. But they had the worst resistance against curses and spells from shamans, warlocks, witches etc. Their strong power would weaken, defense would break down and their body movements would become slow and heavy.

The priests of the Embinyu Church who could use high level curses were the worst enemy for a warrior. It was the reason why dungeons with evil priests were the most unpopular hunting ground. The group would meet death without the presence of a priest. This was the reason why he couldn't say which side was better in a battle between a warrior and priest.

‘Some time has passed since the last attack. It will soon be time.’

Weed moved within the bulk of the Embinyu Army. He trampled, beat and threw them! He got rid of dozens of enemies with each step.

Fortunately, his bulk was so large that he could easily move through them.

-A really good looking human.

-I want to eat him, kuhelhelhel.

-That head is mine. I will bit his head and eat his brains.

Demons cried out as they flew down. Despite the hectic situation, Weed didn't lose his spirit. More than 1,000 demons had already passed through the Gates of Hell into this world.

“We can't let him stop the priests.”

“Karl's Judgment.”

The dark knights frantically tried to stop his rapid breakthrough. But the Embinyu Church was scattered around.

There were troops besieging Dulmore Fortress and the rear was fighting the undead led by Van Hawk. Weed had a huge force surrounded him but they were those swept along earlier by his rapid breakthrough.

‘I need to get a little closer. Some damage can be ignored.’

Weed ignored his declining health to boldly trample through the enemies. His large bulk was hit by arrows, magic and the spear of the knights. A situation where he was hit in many places.

-Current health remaining is 51.3%.

This is the result of the joint damage.

The message window flashed. This was a significant crisis when considering the Demons of Hell. The senior priests and magicians of the Embinyu Army were still 1 kilometre away.

Weed’s increased size meant he could move quickly but tens of thousands of enemies were hindering him. Curses, various monsters and bronze giants also gathered to attack and stop him.

Therefore Weed could see that the priests and magicians were on the verge of completing their magic spell.

“Now. Earth Shaking!”

He stepped on the land with his right foot.

A barbarian's unique skill.

-The skill Earth Shaking has been used.

Current health remaining is 87.46%.

Using the skill has consumed 7.1% vitality.

You can temporarily use excessive force. Maximum strength is reduced by 10% for 15 minutes.

Jjajajak!

Weed stomped on the ground and there was a horrible sound as it split open. Then a vibration spread through the ground as it sloshed like moving water.

The dark knights fell and were swept back and forth while monsters rolled around after losing their balance. The 20 metres tall bronze giants staggered and crushed numerous soldiers.

A skill that maximized the increase in strength caused by Sculptural Destruction! Apart from Weed who was the only one standing, the surrounding areas were turned into a mess.

“Uuuugh, this can’t happen.”

“This destructive power is due to the grace of Embinyu.”

However, the number of deaths was limited to the fanatics. It was an exceptional skill so it wasn’t to blame for the effect and damage. The shaking of the earth waned the further the distance was.

But the magicians and priests in the distance either fell or jumped up in the air to avoid the shaking of the ground. It was natural for the magic they were preparing to be interrupted.

Weed’s eyes shone as he seized the opportunity.

‘Now.’

He ran towards the fallen enemies in the centre of the Embinyu Army. A place where the important magicians and priests were! The dark knights hurriedly got up from the ground.

“It is impossible, you savage!”

The knights had no way to block his skills. They were powerhouses ranging from level 300~400 but they fell with one punch from Weed. He pierced towards the senior priests of the Embinyu Church in a straight line.

“Riot of Black Wind!”

High Priest Motuls quickly chanted a spell.

Out of nowhere, a flock of crows surrounded Weed. It was intended to make it difficult to attack the magicians and priests. Weed saw nothing except for thousands of crows.

“This isn’t the method. End of the Day!”

He used all the mana he conserved for the Sun Warrior’s strongest skill. His current location was very deep inside the Embinyu camp. Therefore, he would cause some damage even if he couldn’t see the senior priests.

“Divine Protection!”

The senior priests used protection magic to guard against the hot fire. But those too close to the flames were turned to ashes.

The dark knights and magicians near Weed also unfortunately lost their lives. He caused considerable damage in the centre of that Embinyu Army but that didn’t mean he could feel at ease.

The fallen priests, magicians and monsters of the Embinyu Army were all gathered together. There were also flying demons in the sky who were using the chance to come closer.

“A poisonous rat has come inside!”

“He came here thanks to the grace of Embinyu. Those who have been victimized, rejoice. Today our work will be to kill that huge obstacle!”

Motuls and Igrig encouraged the troops.

Weed had used up all his mana and was isolated in the heart of the Embinyu Army.

Chapter 4: Eye Of The Storm

“Kill!”

“That body will receive Embinyu’s punishment. Bring the soldering irons!”

“Cut off the limbs and mince the flesh!”

The fanatics clamoured furiously.

Weed had nowhere to escape! Only followers of the Embinyu Church were nearby and the desert army couldn’t be seen at all. There was also a considerable number of experts blocking the path to the fortress. And of course, the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms wasn’t going to come rescue him.

“Well, it is only one army.”

Although others might panic, Weed just looked curiously at the Embinyu Army.

The battlefield was filled with priests, magicians, witches and elite monsters. The worst appearance was a monster with dark green that was dripping saliva.

Embinyu had improved the monsters so they had a variety of

combat skills, high resilience and could also spread diseases. They were strong compared to the fanatics but there were only thousands of them.

Weed gave a deep sigh.

“I haven’t done anything wrong. Just look at what is going to happen in this world.”

“.....?”

“Fanatics might believe in Embinyu in this warring period but later a great kingdom called the Arpen Kingdom will be created.”

“.....!”

A comparison to distinguish which one was better!

The residents of the Arpen Kingdom were suffering from hunger and poverty until King Weed brought them culture, commerce and adventure.

In fact, loyalty when managing the Arpen Kingdom wasn’t required. However, the taxes set were quietly increased under various pretexts. It was currently a peaceful period but sooner or later they would need to compete with the Haven Empire.

Weed felt a pain that could be compared with people suffering

from terminal cancer! He hoped that the kingdom would survive and he could raise the taxes later. If the Haven Empire suddenly met its downfall and the taxes rose then residents of the Arpen Kingdom would be eating potatoes, sweet potatoes and bean sprouts.

“Don’t listen to the savage!”

“That big body has no respect for Embinyu.”

The fanatics held small swords as they threatened him. The senior priests and monsters prepared to attack him. Igrig and Motuls had just been watching the battle at Dulmore Fortress but now they approached Weed. A statue of Embinyu wearing a purple necklace was drawing in power. The witches flapped their wings and hissed with snake like tongues. They had prudent characters so they didn’t want to attack first.

Fighting against such odds was difficult. There were excessive numbers of them. Weed didn’t know how long he could hold out against all these enemies.

However, Weed hadn’t lost his rationality when he entered deep into the enemy’s territory. Rather than fighting efficiently with minimal damage, he had fought recklessly.

This was all part of the plan. The operation name was Dead Rat!

“Even a rat can bit back when cornered by a cat!”

In order for his plan to succeed, he needed to be in the middle of the enemy. It was a risk but it was the best way to maximize Weed's sculpting skill.

"Let's die together. You should try to survive the sky."

Weed pulled out a sculpture! It was a sculpture with a flat, eerie landscape. A thick whirlwind was moving while rain fell from the sky. The earth also had deep cracks. It was a work that expressed a complex disaster. It looked more destructive than the wind magic that Andre of the Beiner Kingdom used.

The magic only impacted a narrow area and could be adequately controlled. However, the wide range of the disaster made it difficult to predict. In addition, the wind magic was weaker than the disaster. Andre was a wind master but the spell consumed his mana. The benefit was that it could be used with the chant was completed and it was safe.

In contrast, Great Disaster Nature Sculpting depended on his art stat and affinity to nature as well as a proper sculpture! Weed had superior art and affinity to nature values so he could cause a disaster with astronomical power.

"Great Disaster Nature Sculpting!"

-A Masterpiece Sculpture. A fearsome havoc will be exerted that can kill you.

Even so, do you want to use the skill?

“Let’s see who can kill me!”

-You have used Great Disaster Nature Sculpting.

20 Art stats have permanently disappeared.

20,000 Health and Mana has been consumed.

All stats have been temporarily reduced by 15% for 3 days.

Affinity to Nature has fallen.

Great Disaster Nature Sculpting can only be used once a day.

When a great calamity is called upon, fame or infamy can be increased depending on the damage.

It is possible to die in the middle of the disaster so be careful.

“Catch him!”

The monsters and fanatics launched their attacks after he triggered the disaster.

“This world is doomed. Get rid of the illusion that they can stop

us.”

“He absolutely can’t escape!”

Weed swung the Extermination Sword at the incoming enemy. The knights and fanatics were like dealing with young children but the monsters needed a few hits to kill them. They had high health and the blessing from Embinyu meant they wouldn’t fall quickly in battle. He used the power of fire to burn away the flesh perfectly.

Meanwhile, the Knights and Priests of Atrocities were being rapidly deployed. With the exception of Motuls, Igrig and Pechet, the remaining enemies had surrounded Weed so that he couldn’t escape.

-Blood Curse!

An unknown energy has entered your body.

Whenever blood is shed, health will recover more slowly than normal.

-Dark Zone of Hatred!

An area of darkness has been declared.

The dark aura will restrict movement and decrease your resistance.

Curse magic will be more effective.

-Drooping Body!

Strength and vitality has decreased by 14%.

Movement is reduced.

The power of the curse has weakened 'Will of a Brave Warrior.'

-Innate Weakness!

You have fallen victim to the priests' punishment magic.

The middle of your chest has weakened and a red dot will appear, luring the enemies to you.

You will be attacked up to 15 times more.

Extermination Sword increased his resistance to curse magic but it didn't protect him perfectly.

The effect of curses had decreased up to 64%.

The curses fell on him!

He was so busy fighting the enemies in front of him that he didn't bother identifying the curses nestled in his body.

The dark priests opted for weakening curses rather than attack magic. Weed had items with a basic resistance to curses but the priests kept trying.

“We promised to dedicate our blood and lives to Embinyu. Forgotten Pain!”

The sacrifices meant the magic had a very high hit rate. Weed felt his fighting condition rapidly deteriorate. His movements changed from a young man to an elderly person. The barbarian’s survival skills and recovery was significantly slowed.

The scary thing was that the priests also blessed the fanatics and monsters. The Embinyu magic that could change the potential of a living being. The side effect was that it would only last for 10 minutes and might cause death. But they would become like elite bosses.

The level of the dark knights and atrocity knights changed. The originally strong boss monsters were transformed even further!

“I encourage you to bring it on. I will wipe you all out!”

Weed wielded the Extermination Sword among the enemies. The curses on his health and vitality was continuously being removed and reapplied. It was the worst situation but he confidently greeted the enemies. Flames stretched out dozens of metres with every swing of the Extermination Sword.

He drew closer to the Priests and Knights of Atrocities. They hadn't let their guard down but was assisting Igrig and Motuls in a ceremony to maximize their divine power. An attitude of waiting until the ceremony was complete!

However, the remaining enemies were constantly attacking him. Weed couldn't avoid receiving injuries. A barbarian was large with strong damage but the size made it impossible to avoid the small stings from the dwarves. Even a barbarian had natural enemies.

-Health has been reduced to 51%.

"Embinyu is nothing. No one can stop me!"

Weed cried in a loud voice.

"The savage is quite brave!"

The priests of the Embinyu Church couldn't help praising the courage of the enemy.

"You are the only one who can stop us now. The world will be destroyed after your death."

"I will defend the continent from the Embinyu Church. On behalf of the elves, orcs, dwarves, humans and all the species that live on the continent."

Weed gave a brusque reply to the priest's words.

He was seen many blockbuster movies where the hero confronted the enemy. He laughed at the hero's embarrassing words but secretly thought it was pretty cool. Now that day had arrived for him!

‘If this is broadcasted then I will be an idol to all kindergarten and elementary school students.’

Royal Road wasn't only popular in Korea but all around the world. In other words, Weed would be the idol of children around the world. Adding toxic chemicals to the dreams of young children! The probability of them dying in dangerous battles would be higher because they wouldn't shrink back in fear.

He hadn't calculated any of this. He just wanted to look cool while fighting as a barbarian.

Then fat raindrops started falling.

“Now!”

Weed looked up at the sky like he was welcoming rain after a drought. The shower of raindrops suddenly changed into a heavy storm. A vortex of wind started forming and the earth shook wildly.

“It worked well.”

Weed smiled wildly.

The great power of the Embinyu Church was gathered together so he could kill them all at once. The scene of a massacre due to a Great Disaster Nature Sculpting created with a masterpiece sculpture! The monsters were affected by the heavy rain.

“But there is still something lacking.”

Weed felt like lukewarm water had emerged from a broken boiler.

“The monsters have high health so they might be able to survive the disaster.”

Even if there was a disaster, their high health and resilience meant that many were likely to survive. Weed’s level was very high so he didn’t need to worry about dying from the disaster.

“A number of high ranking officials in the Embinyu Church will also survive. Not to mention the elite monsters and demons.”

Demons were still pouring out of the Gates of Hell. The Great Disaster Nature Sculpting wasn’t enough to deal with all of them.

“The level of risk should be enough to kill me. Otherwise it will be boring.”

Weed pulled out a slip of paper. It was an old and crumpled paper but it contained the ultimate magic spell.

Summon Meteor!

A large meteor would fall that was enough to completely wipe out a capital city. No one had ever experienced it so he wasn't aware of the full extent of its power.

“I will judge it now.”

Weed ripped the Summon Meteor scroll.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Myeongdong's loan sharks!

They thought hard about why there were in this situation.

“Wrong. There must be someone with a grudge against me. Did President Choi hit me in the back of the head? Or is someone in the company trying to get rid of me?”

They became suspicious of everyone in the world. It needed to be someone with the power to mobilize the prosecutors and the IRS. The principle rule they followed was being strong against the weak and acting weak towards the strong.

“I don’t know the reason.”

The loan sharks were still optimistic that someone would come to save them. They were afraid that someone would show up to kill them so initially they sought a way to escape. But they couldn’t find a secret passage no matter how much they looked at the ceiling and walls in the small room.

“Anyone passing by is good. If only they can save me....”

They were trapped 300 metres underground. It was an area made of natural rocks. They couldn’t dream of any escape and was eventually resigned to just survive in that place. After 3~4 months, it was inevitable that they would become familiar with captivity.

Their only interest was watching the television. News were of no interest but they enjoyed sports and dramas. The loan sharks unexpectedly fell to the charm of morning dramas.

They found the provocative material of the human world exciting. Dying, fighting the enemy, reconciliation, fighting again, birth secrets and other contents of Hollywood movies were interesting.

And Royal Road! They were trapped in a narrow space so the loan sharks were envious of the wide world of Royal Road. Royal Road was a medium that lifted the happiness of people. The loan sharks also sat in front of the television and watched Weed’s adventures.

“Weed is now causing a disaster. Weed the God of War is using his trademark disaster in the midst of the Embinyu Army!”

“The disaster doesn’t seem to be wiping out all the enemies.”

“His combat style is really bold and aggressive. Where is his courage coming from?”

The CTS Media commentators were heatedly discussing it.

It was the climax of the crisis where Weed had entered the midst of the Embinyu Army. It was natural for them to receive the highest ratings since the audience intuitively sensed the climax was coming.

It wasn’t just CTS Media but all the other broadcasting stations were like that as well. The voices of the commentators became agitated whenever they witnessed a great scene or crisis.

And then Weed pulled out a slip of paper.

“That is a magic scroll.”

“A peculiar looking red paper. It seems to be a fairly advanced magic.”

“It is natural for a user like Weed to be able to pull out a high ranking magic scroll.”

“Did he obtain it in the desert? Or while conquering and looting?”

“I’m guessing it is a teleport scroll in order to escape.”

“The magicians of the Embinyu Church won’t permit it...it is unclear if the spell will be successful.”

The television commentators said quickly. They didn’t have any information so they could only speculate based on the situation. The emotions and interest of the audience was heightened.

“The red paper indicates that it is a magic scroll in the fire series.”

“Ah, Weed matches that really well. He seems to be unleashing a great magic attack.”

“It is common sense that it would be a rain of fire magic but....the situation needs to be taken into account. That isn’t Weed’s answer.”

“If a very strong fire spell is used then the rain will affect it. There won’t be explosive fire magic.”

“Ah...now I have received information from a reliable source. The identity of that scroll is the ultimate magic Summon Meteor!”

“Summon Meteor!”

A disaster that would cause unknown effects. Even if the disaster just swept past, it would decrease the Embinyu Army by half. The commentators knew that heartily praising Weed would gather the attention of the viewers.

The reaction to the broadcast of Royal Road was very important. But this time the commentators sincerely freaked out. It was like their cousin had won the lottery!

“S-something absurd is happening. The ultimate magic Summon Meteor! Just like the name, it is a magic that summons a burning meteor. The result is the same.”

“He is really summoning a meteor? If the magic scroll works properly then it will be the first time the Versailles Continent has seen a meteor being summoned.”

“It is an honour that I can even see such a spectacle. A magnificent view will be produced. It is difficult to imagine.”

They never thought he would summon a meteor when facing the Embinyu Church. Each of the stations had an emergency meeting. All the employees were prepared to broadcast realistic images of the summoned meteor.

“This is crazy!”

The loan sharks watching television were so shocked that the barley bread fell out of their mouths.



-The scroll with the magic spell Summon Meteor sealed in it has been activated.

Please set the location where the meteor will fall.

Weed had carried the scroll without using it. He had a suspicion that the magic scroll might be a defective product. If the scroll was valuable then the magician Roderick wouldn't have forgotten it while travelling.

“I hope it works properly. Nevertheless, it is still a luxury. The characters have bad handwriting and it is folded like a ticket.”

There was a large chance that there would be an error with Summon Meteor.

“I need to decide the location. So that it will miss me. Huhuhu, I am really smart.”

Weed placed his foot where he decided the meteor would fall.

-The location has been specified.

The meteor will fall after a while.

Once it hits the ground, the impact will be over a wide area so you should be careful.

“I’ve decided that this is the best method. However....I feel uneasy for some reason.”

A chill could be felt through his entire body. But he decided to just wait.

The rain and whirlwind swept through the battlefield. There were screams as fanatics and monsters flew around in the air. Numerous members of the Embinyu Army were swallowed up by cracks in the ground.

“Hihihihit, I am dying!”

“I am falling towards the distant bottom. I am very honoured!”

Unlike the regular soldiers, the fanatics didn’t have their morale reduced by the disaster. They regarded Weed’s disaster as a sign of the end of the world.

The bodies were caught by the whirlwind and carried in different directions. Other monsters and fanatics pushed back and forth in order to fall into a hole in the ground.

There was a scary sound as the earth became like smashed tofu. It

was a terrible disaster for humans to experience. Weed's conscience was slightly pricked at the scene of people trying to die.

Weed was large so he had a lot of resistance to the wind. His resilience of a barbarian was also weakened due to the curses.

“Weeeeeek!”

He leaned his upper body forward and endured as monsters rolled into him. It wasn't like the arrows as he had no way of avoiding the numerous monsters swept by the wind.

“N-No!”

Weed's massive body started to be scooped up like a fly. He was caught up in the wind with the fanatics and monsters. His hands couldn't catch anything and he spun round and round in the sky. He couldn't do anything! He became involved in the disaster.

Phoenix's Health was a skill that allowed him to withstand any attack for 3 minutes but he couldn't use it in the sky. Weed spun so fast that his view of the earth and sky kept on reversing.

Monsters crashed against his body while flying at a scary speed. The collisions didn't decrease his health to a dangerous level but he was in a precarious state.

“Absolute Defense, Close Eyes Tightly!”

He mobilized his defensive skills!

Kwarururung!

Thunder struck in the immediate vicinity. The whirlwind raised him high into the sky. The power of the disaster that allowed him to pierce through the clouds! He suddenly didn't feel the wind pushing against his body as he saw a bright light.

“Eueuum!”

His eyes saw the clear sky and the sun. He had broken through the dark clouds into a calm world. However, that only lasted for 2~3 seconds! The whirlwind pulled his body back again.

“Kuwaaaaah!”

This time he was dropping at a fearsome pace towards the ground. It felt like he was riding a roller coaster in an amusement park. However, a roller coaster only dropped a few hundred metres at best and he didn't have any safety devices as he fell from the clouds.

“I don't need to see. Close Eyes Tightly!”

Weed re-used the defense skill. The whirlwind cut at his flesh and many fanatics and monsters crashed into him. Some flying

swords and spears also pierced him.

Kkuuuung!

There were even monsters that latched onto Weed's legs. The long, sharp teeth within a monster's mouth bit into his legs.

Pepek!

But in the end, Weed's kick connected and it flew far away.

‘This disaster is lasting for a long time.’

He didn't know how long he was embroiled in this but it felt like a very long time. It was like being in the army and waiting for a vacation!

‘A long time. Shouldn't I have hit the ground by now?’

Weed cancelled his defense skill as he opened his eyes to look for the ground. He was falling towards a deep gap in the earth.

A stunning speed. And his body was still turning in circles.

“Momentary Herculean Strength!”

A skill that consumed vitality to exert an enormous power! The

5~6 curses still remaining in his body were removed.

‘I need to catch something.’

Weed started looking around. A monster with a long, thick tail and limbs flew headed towards him.

“Severe Blow!”

Kwaaek!

The monster had been swept by the wind so it didn’t have a lot of health left. It died immediately after one hit. Weed used the repulsion force to decrease his speed a little bit.

‘This isn’t enough. I need a few more.’

The wind was blowing in one direction so he could search everywhere. He continuously attacked flying monsters, fanatics and stones! Sometimes Weed’s attacks missed but they hit far more often.

His speed and direction changed a little bit but he was still falling towards the crack in the earth. The situation would end if he was sucked into the ground!

‘I was careless about this disaster.’

He belatedly regretted it but it was useless. Just as Weed was near the ground, he suddenly received a tremendous shock.

“Keheok!”

He bumped into a bronze giant. But the conflict meant he crashed into the precipice of the deep crack.

-Health has decreased by 19,374 due to the reduced impact.
His health wasn't an issue but he was falling down again.

“I've got to live!”

Weed stretched out his hand and grabbed an overwhelming rock.

Sususuk!

The rock couldn't bear the weight of a barbarian and was crushed like tofu. He fell a few dozen metres before barely stopping.

“A-alive.”

Weed sighed with relief. If the quest failed then his final secret sculpting technique would fly away. He looked at the top as fanatics and monsters continued falling into the gap. The wind continued howling loudly.

“I almost died coolly. Well, this is good for me.”

Weed climbed up the cliff. He didn't want to get caught by the wind again so he didn't climb up to the ground. He stopped 10 metres away and relaxed.

-The earth goddess Mi-ne has blessed you.

The energy from the earth has restored your health and vitality.

He placed his hands on the wall and supplemented his health and vitality. This recovery ability and his high resilience allowed him to enter the heart of the enemy.

“How many millions of people have suffered damage? It would be nice if many witches and priests died in the chaos.”

Weed organized the work he needed to do in the future while waiting for the disaster to stop. Then he had a sudden thought.

‘What about the meteor I summoned?’

The disaster was a trailer while the meteor was the main event. If it fell in the wrong place then it would be impossible to properly measure the intensity.

A disaster at the level of a calamity!

‘I barely survived the disaster so it will be difficult if the meteor

falls here. The Embinyu Army will perish.'

But Weed couldn't give a smile of satisfaction. Who knew where the meteor would drop! There was no guarantee that Dulmore Fortress and the desert army wouldn't be wiped out.

The raindrops falling from the sky decreased and the wind calmed down slightly. However, the sky suddenly shone a blazing red. The dark clouds were helplessly scattered like fog melted by a hot sun.

"Is this the meteor being summoned?"

Weed raised his head. There was suddenly a small stone in the sky.

"A small meteor means the magic scroll was successful. But isn't this level close to defective?"

Disappointment filled his chest. But the small stone fell at a dreadful speed.

When he first saw it, the stone was half the size of his finger but now it was as large as his palm. Specifically, he was seeing the size when it was still a colossal distance away and it expanded exponentially.

Weed's instincts warned him.

‘This isn’t a joke. Just passing by will be enough to leave a trail of death.’

The hairs on his body stood up as he felt a sense of crisis.

Nevertheless, it wasn’t easy for him to move. The disaster wasn’t over yet and he didn’t know where the meteor would crash.

‘Go somewhere else. Go away.’

Weed became desperate as the size of the meteor increased. He couldn’t be calm.

‘I need to check the facts again. It will continue to grow bigger as it approaches closer. It is natural for the meteor to crash into the earth. And what does it mean if it moves above my head?’

It meant the meteor would fall exactly here! It wasn’t aimed at Weed but the area he was in was within the range. Weed had placed the location of the meteor in the centre of the Embinyu Army.

The worst case situation might really happen. His luck meant he was also suffering misfortunes.

“Somehow I need to avoid it.”

Weed checked the surroundings. Even the deep crevices didn't seem safe. The destructive power of the meteor would be enough to devastate the whole area. The meteor was going faster and faster so he didn't have a lot of time to think calmly.

“Sink or swim.”

Weed jumped out of the crack in the ground. The rain, whirlwind and ground shaking resembled a dance. But the power of the disaster was weakening so it would disappear soon.

Weed could already feel the hot burden overhead. The blazing fire from the meteor burning in the sky could be directly felt. There was no other way.

“Sink or swim. Wind Sprint!”

Weed blindly ran forward. The barbarian had long legs so he had a good speed.

The good news was that no one from the Embinyu Church interfered with him. They had seen the meteor and was trying to escape.



Warrior-1 and Warrior-2.

The sculptural lifeforms commanding the desert army watched the fight from distant hills.

“As expected from the Great Emperor.”

They couldn't help admiring Weed's superior combat power. He even turned into a barbarian at Dulmore Fortress.

Weed used mysterious sculpting techniques to fight. And a disaster took place as promised. The desert army were waiting for the disaster to finish before starting their assault. The combat slaves, elephant troops and vampire forces were ready to fight.

The desert army had swept through the continent but they had a low chance against the Embinyu Army.

Weed drew in enemies to Dulmore Fortress. A plan to drive them together and use a disaster!

“Ready for the assault. Mount the horses and camels.”

But they decided to stop after seeing the sky turn red.

“Retreat!”

Rather, they moved further from the battlefield. A colossal meteor was heading towards Weed and the Embinyu Church.

Weed thought it was meaningless to preserve all his power when trying to save the continent. A big impact hit the camp of the Embinyu Army!

It was like they were seeing the sun as stones, wood and sand started surging. Wind blew strongly enough to push back their bodies.

Some combat slaves with low vitality died but the damage wasn't severe.

“Did the Great Emperor survive?”

“I don't know. He isn't visible.”

The sky turned red again before they could confirm Weed's fate. Warrior-3 pointed a finger to the sky.

“It is coming again!”

Meteors were pouring from the sky. Surprisingly, the Summon Meteor magic didn't call one meteor but dozens of them. The impact caused clouds of dust as the long, burning tail of meteors fell.

The land was astonished. It was a vivid scene as the earth became like ice cream.

Warrior-1 spoke after a while.

“Did the Great Emperor die in peace?”

Warrior-2 replied with confidence.

“He would’ve been in pain.”

Chapter 5: Weed's End

Weed felt a chill down his spine 10 seconds before the first meteor hit.

‘I really might die.’

His increased defense had no meaning against this immense power. It was enough to call Summon Meteor the ultimate magic attack. A strong magic attack couldn't even compare to it!

A minimum of 3 Master Magicians were required to summon a meteor. It wasn't magic that just anyone could use. The individuals would also require a long time to cast it and the accuracy was low, therefore it was taxing to use in battle. If they were lucky it would fall on the enemies. If not, their allies would be the ones damaged.

Weed had thought it was similar to a skill when he used it. Even if the meteor headed towards the desert army, they could just run away on the horses or camels to reduce the damage. There wouldn't be a large impact even if 200,000 combat slaves died.

So he had a rough idea of the area where the meteor would fall.

“Get out of the way!”

Weed wasn't the only one running recklessly. The monsters and demons were fleeing in shock.

“Ohh, God Embinyu! Finally this land will be destroyed.”

“Come and kill me. My wish is death!”

But the fanatics bowed on the ground and said prayers of thanks.

“By the grace of Embinyu....ack!”

Weed stepped on them as he passed by. He couldn't see it but he felt like the meteor wasn't far away. His back felt hot.

‘In the next 5~6 seconds.’

He roughly estimated the time that the meteor would fall. He didn't know if it was accurate but just 0.1 seconds could mean the difference between life or death. The rain and whirlwind disappeared as the meteor fell to the ground.

Weed ran through at least 1 kilometres of land. He was fleeing in the same direction as the priests of the Embinyu Church but he didn't have time to kill them.

His entire field of vision was filled with a bright light. This meant the collision was imminent!

Anyway, he was positive it would fall down behind him. He would still experience the destructive power no matter how far

away from him it fell.

“Aigoo, I will die. It would be good if I live in order to help others.”

Suddenly he noticed another crack in the earth nearby. But it was too narrow for his current body to enter.

“Sculpture Transformation release!”

Sculpture Transformation was released and he shifted from the bulky barbarian to his original form. He plunged towards the crack in the ground while hurriedly equipping his armour.

“Close Eyes Tightly, Absolute Defense! And this as well. Steel Skin!”

It was a defensive skill he used in the early days of his growth in the desert but he hadn't used it lately. It was a scene that demonstrated his great survival instinct.

And the meteor crashed into the ground. The location wasn't very far from the crack that Weed had initially fallen into.

There was a huge earthquake after the meteor crashed. The debris was swept away and a huge flame storm occurred. Shortly afterwards, a shock wave passed through the ground like a tsunami.

-Health has been dramatically reduced due to the tremendous impact to your soul.

Absolute Defense has ensured that you won't lose consciousness.

You have lost 48% health at once.

The serious injury to your body has significantly lowered the effects of your combat skills.

Your leg has suffered serious damage. You will limp due to the pain.

It was difficult to see the message window that flashed in front of him. Beginners would run with fear when seeing such messages.

Weed's 354,000 health was reduced all at once. In the meantime, he had also been swept away in the disaster so he only had 38,000 health remaining. If he hadn't supplemented his health with Mine's blessing then it would've been really dangerous.

Weed sighed within the crack in the ground.

"It seems like I barely survived. This is all because I have no luck. I need to work harder to exploit others. I have to return unharmed to the Arpen Kingdom."

A shock wave and hot wind swept past him. Huge flames covered

the ground.

-Health has been supplemented through the aura of fire.

-The earth goddess Mi-ne has blessed you.

The energy from the earth has restored your health and vitality.

Health is below 20% so recovery rate is 4 times higher.

Weed recovered his health and vitality using the fire and Mi-ne's blessing. This was a situation where his life would be at risk if caught by the enemy!

'The meteor should've killed a lot of them but some will be dreaming of a counterattack. It was a surprisingly devastating attack. The enemies outside should be roughly broken so I can easily sweep through them.'

Weed's expectations of the amount of deaths grew by 10 times.

'It is regrettable. I should've save this magic scroll for the Hermes Guild.'

He regretted consuming the scroll in a moment like this. It wasn't easily obtained but he used it too easily.

'Although it is important to finish the quest.'

Weed stuck his head out of the gap after recovering his health to 6%. His body still wasn't healthy but he wanted to take a glimpse at the enemy.

“Embinyu's protection is superior and he was save us from all the destruction.”

“Destruction! Destruction! Destruction!”

The impact of the meteor falling wasn't as wide as he thought. The senior priests had used a special protection spell.

-Divine faith has negated the destruction.

The shield also temporarily protected the monsters and fanatics inside it from the attack. A fraudulent skill! The disadvantage was that it took a long time to chant the spell but the Priests of Punishment completed it to defend themselves.

As a result, many priests survived but the Embinyu Army suffered disastrous damage. The meteor struck in the heart of the army so many troops were instantly changed to dust. The power of the fall was so great that the terrain itself was shattered and many troops completely destroyed. Many were disabled and couldn't fight anymore despite surviving.

Just like Weed, they couldn't avoid being involved in the large disaster. If it hadn't been for the priests' protection magic then the core power of the Embinyu Army would've been wiped out. In particular, the demons that came out of the Gates of Hell were decreased by one third. The gate was still open but the meteor

meant the demons weren't in great shape.

Weed was quite close to the edge of the shield. The Knights of Atrocities and monsters caught his eye.

“A sacrifice! Hiding over there!”

“H-hello?”

Weed tried to dive down into the ground again like he was playing whack-a-mole. His health was low so it was be a burden if he immediately resumed fighting. But a short moment passed and the Knights of Atrocities and monsters didn't head over.

‘What are they doing?’

He noticed that they didn't want to exit the boundaries of the protection magic.

‘If the attack is over then the divine magic would be turned off. It is questionable.’

The destruction that the meteor brought still hadn't disappeared. A sea of fire was still covering the ground like flowing lava. Despite that, the troops were cautiously wandering within the divine magic.

Weed's instincts was as sharp as a knife.

‘These people aren’t crazy.’

The Embinyu priests wouldn’t collectively act stupid.

‘Don’t tell me...’

He looked up at the sky to see it turn red again. And numerous small pebbles could be seen! They grew as they approached at a rapid pace.

“It didn’t end with just one!”

The effect was different from when a Summon Meteor spell was used. In most cases, only one or two medium sized meteors would fall.

A magician’s power was important when summoning but it also depended on luck. That’s why a meteor shower could only be summoned when the magician was older and their power was at its peak. The biggest meteor would fall first but dozens of others would follow suit.

Weed’s brain worked as quickly as a computer. And the calculations were complete! The situation was bleak. The quote that emerged wasn’t good.

The Summon Meteor scroll was just bait for him to kill himself.

He blamed the magician Roderick. His conclusion was that it was best to blame others!

“It is really difficult to survive.”

However, he couldn't just give up. Weed exited the crack in the earth and headed towards the direction where the desert army was waiting since it was also furthest away from the meteors. He only had 6% health left so a similar impact would kill him.

‘I will unconditionally die.’

That's why the Embinyu Army didn't try to stop Weed. They were just looking and staring. The monsters that didn't receive the protection of the priests were just spread out in every direction like trash.

The new meteors would collide with the Embinyu Army. It was almost impossible to reduce the damage.

‘A lot of dead. Those fellows won't be alive for long.’

It was like Weed taking the milk from an elementary school friend. He limped uncomfortably through the flames. His health recovered faster thanks to the flames.

Of course, he had to give up the appearance of honour and dignity necessary for the Great Emperor of the desert.

“Everybody rejoice. God Embinyu is showing his will.”

“The strength of Embinyu is coming down from the heavens.”

The Embinyu followers were pleased. Dangerous meteors were falling from the sky but they didn't blame Weed for it. The Embinyu Church were just cheering.

Three or four meteors fell from the sky at once! They hit the ground in different directions. One fell a fair distance behind Weed, one near the flowing river and one to the right.

The Embinyu Army was also distributed close to Dulmore Fortress in order to attack it. The meteor falling near the river accurately hit the troops of the Embinyu Church.

“Where should I go to avoid damage?”

His eyes could clearly see the flaming meteor so there was no time to hesitate.

“Hell, I don't know.”

Weed threw his body into a crack. And he grabbed onto the cliff while falling. After a while, a huge impact was delivered into his body.

“Keheok!”

-A heavy shock has been received in succession.

Health has decreased by 48,973.

Absolute Defense has prevented the damage caused by aftershocks.

Currently the ‘Curse of Pain and Cruelty’ is lowering your maximum health.

You have 1.6% health remaining.

The durability of your armour has been reduced.

The leg injury has worsened.

There is damage from bleeding. Health will decrease by 974 every second.

“I-I lived. Nonsense.”

If he hadn’t limped through the fire then he would’ve died. Weed clung to the steep cliff and stared up at the sky.

Six meteors could be seen in the sky. He was already sick of the Summon Meteor ultimate magic. The good news was that this

time, four meteors went in a completely different direction. They were headed towards the location of the Beiner Kingdom's capital city.

And two were approaching Weed from the front. He didn't know exactly where it would drop but the damage would occur over a large area.

“Let's go.”

Weed emerged from the crack again. This was the first time a meteor was heading this way. It wouldn't kill him if he walked a little more. There would be a colossal explosion but he could absorb the energy of the fire.

If the Embinyu Army suffered huge damage and he somehow survived then he would likely win the war. The biggest problem was that the chances of his survival wasn't very high.

-Health is continuing to decrease.

The curse 'Blood Legacy' will reduced health recovery rate by 19.7%.

The curse 'Black Skin' has weakened your resilience.

The curse 'Dark Hallucinations' has weakened your magic resistance.

Weed's injuries were too severe to heal quickly. Some persistent curses on his body still hadn't disappeared. His sturdy body and vitality meant he could walk instead of just dying.

The Embinyu Army were just waiting to chant congratulations after he died a painful death. His injury meant he couldn't even fight the knights or monsters if they emerged from the shield.

And Weed started to truly despair.

"I can't go any further."

The terrain changed a lot from the impact of the meteor falling to the ground. The gaps in the earth became even larger. Weed avoided the meteor and replenished his health with the fire but couldn't cross a 20 metre wide gap. It was impossible to cross the bottom or go backwards.

"It is over."

The damage from the bleeding was still continuing. The meteor would fall to the ground soon and he still needed to replenish his health. Weed stared at the sky with melancholy eyes. A giant, flaming meteor was clearly visible.

"The quest will fail and my life will disappear after 30 seconds."

In their last few moments, memories would pass through a person's mind like a kaleidoscope.

That also happened to Weed to a certain extent. The Nodulle and Hilderun quest in the desert and sea that he experienced with Seoyoon. Only the memories of sweeping across the continent with the desert army remained.

“This is a decent stage to greet my death. I’m not lonely.”

Weed calmly accepted his death. Not much health remained so he couldn’t survive the shock of the meteor. Even if he survived that danger, he would be in the heart of the Embinyu Army.

“This will be the most memorable death.”

Weed lay down on the ground and blankly looked at the sky. He wanted to watch the meteor fall and die beautifully.

The sky was completely red and dozens of large and small meteors were falling towards the ground. This sight was difficult to see anywhere else.

Weed suddenly felt something moist touch his nose.

“Puhung!”

There was a musty smell that was difficult to endure.

“Bactrian Camel, go away.”

“Puhuhuhung!”

“Bactrian Camel, you are smelly. You should wash out the smell.... Bactrian Camel, why are you here?”

Weed jumped up and saw the dirty Bactrian Camel standing next to him. Hope started to burn again in the eyes that had been filled with despair.



Bactrian Camel hid in Dulmore Fortress in accordance with Weed’s command.

‘Well, it is hard to fight against them.’

It was fun to watch the battle at the fortress but his gaze turned towards Weed. He had helped Weed during combat in the desert.

Warrior-1, Warrior-2 and the other sculptural lifeforms fought separately but Bactrian Camel and Weed moved as one. He would kick with the back feet while fighting monsters. He also observed the stars and smelled water to find a route through the desert.

“Faster! Faster!”

Weed would also make him run nonstop in order to arrive at the

destination in the shortest time.

“Very good.”

It was great whenever Bactrian Camel received a compliment. He could eat 2~3 extra carrots, Therefore, he always followed Weed despite his face not being able to show emotions.

But while watching Weed’s growth in the desert, he thought that Weed’s life was more important than his own.

‘What is that?’

Bactrian Camel sensed danger when the dark sky turned bright red.

‘Master is in danger.’

He knew that the meteor was falling and ran in Weed’s direction. Bactrian Camel became the target of dark knights and monsters.

“Embinyu will give you a special mercy. Burn and eat that camel.”

“Capture that camel and eat it!”

The Embinyu Army leapt towards Bactrian Camel.

He rushed past the enemy but couldn't help receiving some injuries. He safely avoided the impact of the meteor and searched for his master.

And after finally discovering Weed, he casually gave a nose kiss.



“Well, I told you to wait but you must’ve been bored and came here.”

“Puhung!”

“Anyway, it is great.”

Weed mounted Bactrian Camel.

“Go as quickly as possible!”

Bactrian Camel took two or three steps back before running and jumping past the 20 metres wide gap. This was just an insignificant obstacle to Bactrian Camel.

“Faster! Run like this is the desert sand!”

Bactrian Camel knew that meteors were falling. There were only

10 seconds left.

The camel carrying Weed ran at a frightening speed that overtook the wind. He jumped over gaps in the earth, rocks and the Embinyu Army.

Bactrian Camel's vitality was replenished while passing through the fire. Weed's health was also filled!

Weed turned around and looked back as the camel continued to run. The meteor with a long tail was falling towards the Embinyu Army.

“Go over there!”

“Puhuhung!”

Weed and the camel arrived at the fire zone where the first meteor had fallen. The meteor had left behind a huge trail in the ground.

A 400 metres deep pit had formed. And there was a sea of fire around it!

Weed and the camel's body shook as there was a shockwave. The next meteor had landed on the ground.

-It is difficult to recover from the shock.

There is a severe reduction in health due to the shaking of the earth.

Bactrian Camel has absorbed some of the damage.

15,838 health has been lost.

Absolute Defense has blocked any additional damage.

You have suffered a critical injury throughout your body.

The damage from bleeding has worsened.

You are unable to walk.

Maximum health will be reduced by 14% for the next two days.

It was a situation where he was barely living! Weed was almost devoid of life so his body was in a half dead state.

Bactrian Camel also fell helplessly to the side due to accumulated fatigue and injury. Even so, his facial expression was satisfied because he had saved Weed's life. Bactrian Camel closed his eyes and waited for death.

He still had 13% health left but his right front leg and left hind leg were injured, making him no longer able to walk. A camel no

longer being able to walk just meant death. At least he had saved Weed's life.

"I can't stop here."

Earlier, Weed had given up on his life. He honestly hadn't seen any ways to survive.

"I survived at least two times so there is no reason I can't now. Life isn't something easily obtained."

He used the goddess of earth, Mi-ne's blessing in an attempt to restore his health.

-Thirty-one bones in your body have been broken.

You will feel the pain every time you move so normal behaviour is impossible.

Health will recover slowly.

"I am like a vegetable."

Weed couldn't even get up. He received a very serious injury and was on the verge of death so his recovery speed was affected. It was unfortunate but he couldn't move while meteors were dropping on the Embinyu Army.

"I will die when a meteor falls."

He only had a few minutes so it was a very short amount of time. He needed to somehow survive.

The most important thing about the Dead Rat operation was Weed's ability to survive in any environment. He reached the limits after the disaster and the crisis caused by the summoned meteors.

Although the Embinyu Army was somewhat to blame, his pride also caused his result. It raised some questions about himself.

‘I did my best.’

There were some quests where Weed had struggled. He had used sculpting or anything in the vicinity to respond to the enemy.

He led an army of dark elves and orcs to defeat the Immortal Legion and joined the Northern Expedition to defeat the Bone Dragon.

Then he experienced significant growth in the desert and proudly confronted his enemies. Of course, he had fought the Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms but Weed hadn't really faced any strong opposition.

Such honesty wasn't normal for Weed.

“I’ve been wrong.”

Weed became cool-headed. He didn’t find anything missing while analysing the situation. He would use any favourable opportunity to survive. Then he had a realization like he had been hit in the back of the head!

“I still have this left.”

Weed took out something to eat.

Mana Heart of the Fire Salamander King. The heart of the Salamander King beat like it was still alive. It would have a better effect if he cooked it properly. If he tinkered with it while cooking then adverse effects might occur!

So far, he had just brought it along as food. But it could act as a restorative in a dangerous situation. There was no guarantee his condition would get better and it might even worsen.

“Well, I’m going to die anyway. My mother used to say that eating before dying is good to get rid of demons.”

He simply sprinkled salt on the heart. It was a bit jarring that the heart still seemed alive but he could endure it. He was also willing to eat snakes, frogs, insects, flies or mosquitoes if it was good for his body.

“Well, it should taste similar to a giblet. That savoury taste.

Eating it lightly grilled with red pepper paste would be tasty.”

He put it in his mouth and it literally melted as he chewed.

-You have eaten the Mana Heart of the Fire Salamander King.

Maximum mana has permanently increased.

The ability to deal with flames has increased by 3%.

The flame compression technique has strengthened. It will affect the destructive power and range of a particular skill.

You have gained immunity to flames.

There will be no damage even in a very hot location.

The skill World of Fire can be used.

Vitality has mostly recovered.

Some health has been regained by absorbing the energy of fire.

-Skill World of Fire: The Mana Heart of the Fire Salamander King contained highly concentrated fire spirits sleeping.

The senior spirits of fire can be fully released.

It is extremely rare for World of Fire to be used. The mana nestled inside the heart means that World of Fire can be used three times.

However, if you use it two times within a week then the flame mana will disappear. Once used, World of Fire can increase maximum mana by 45,300 for six months.

The maximum mana value will decrease the more that World of Fire is used.

“World of Fire!”

Flames started to spread uncontrollably around him. It was like the god of fire had descended to earth.

“It is good that I ate that thing. My body will become more sensitive as I become older.”

-The earth goddess Mi-ne has blessed you.

The energy from the earth has restored your health and vitality.

Health is below 20% so recovery rate is 4 times higher.

Health started to recover normally again. Weed's current health was 5%. He regained 30,000 health after eating the mana heart. But he still had various combat injuries and other abnormal states.

-Bleeding has stopped.

His tough body that lived in the rough sands of the desert had overcome the crisis again.

The recovery speed of his health now accelerated. He could gain energy from the fire so recovery became more active. If he hadn't hunted the Fire Salamander King during the Nodulle's Growth quest then he wouldn't have obtained this recovery method. Nevertheless, monsters and fanatics were still around him.

"I have to go before they come."

Weed stood up from the deep pit caused by the meteor. His leg wasn't completely normal but he needed to get away from the Embinyu Army. There were also the demons from hell. If they knew his status then they would attack.

Bactrian Camel lay quietly as he felt the warmth of the flames.

"Hey, Bactrian Camel!"

"Puhuhung!"

Bactrian Camel just grunted. It seemed like he wanted to be left alone with his huge injury. He didn't want to open his eyes to see his master's last appearance.

"Hey, are you there?"

“Puhung!”

“Don’t go to sleep.”

Weed hit Bactrian Camel on the shoulder.

He wasn’t going to leave his sculptural lifeform to die there. Bactrian Camel had many injuries and his health was low.

Weed started to walk towards the location of the desert army while carrying Bactrian Camel.

Chapter 6: Embinyu's Power

The Embinyu Army was caught up in the meteor disaster and smashed! The land itself was smashed by the fearsome meteors falling on it. The core power that the Embinyu Church was proud of collapsed and many fanatics and monsters were killed.

Motuls, Igrig and the priests were safe due to the protection magic but their control over the monsters had collapsed.

Kyaung!

The monsters attacked and ate the fanatics without hesitation. Meanwhile, a fight was still ongoing between the monsters and humans at Dulmore Fortress.

“All soldiers of the Mapon Kingdom, raise your swords!”

“All knights, cut the monsters. His Majesty wants you to win!”

The humans at Dulmore Fortress had surrendered to their fear. They were full of despair as they fought the monsters while the king escaped.

“God, save our Mapon Kingdom!”

Rohadram led the knights against the monsters. However, the

earth shook as the meteor fell near the river.

Although it was fortunate because the advance of the fanatics were stopped, many defenses and facilities in the fortress collapsed along with the soldiers.

“Ohhh, no. We were wrong.”

“Hanson, why would you say that? The enemies are now approaching. Go ahead and shoot the arrows!”

“No. Why has the king abandoned us? I will now follow the Embinyu Church!”

“Knights, raise your swords for the Embinyu Church!”

Due to the influence of the inquisitors and priests, the soldiers became fanatics. A situation that was rapidly deteriorating!

Powerful curses were inflicted on Dulmore Fortress by the Embinyu Church. The Priests of Punishment near the fortress planted vicious curses as the soldiers were engulfed in madness.

But after the sky was cleared of the meteor shower, Motuls and Igrig regained control of the Embinyu Army.

-Aura. That person is going against Embinyu. The will of God. Kill everyone who stands in our way.

“Igrig is calling.”

“A command has come from God Embinyu.”

The fanatics and monsters recovered. And the troops were ordered out of Dulmore Fortress and changed targets according to Igrig’s command. In order to fulfil Embinyu’s will, killing Weed was more important than the insignificant Dulmore Fortress.

The monsters and fanatics who survived the meteor shower were only 120,000. It was a situation where they were wild with rage and the Dulmore Plains would eventually be renamed as the Distorted Plains.

Of course, the remaining humans at Dulmore Fortress weren’t persistent opponents. The sacred river had been completely dried up and the 12 magic defenses at the fortress were all broken.

The monsters protected by the magic shield ventured out after the meteor shower was over in order to boldly hunt the humans. Unfortunately, the 1,000 demons had only been reduced by less than a tenth. Half of the monsters had their bodies destroyed while others were scared by the meteor shower and left the battlefield.

“Those who manage to kill Weed will be given special powers by Embinyu.”

“Don’t miss out. Chase him. His footprints are over here.”

Nearly 140,000 troops searched the plains for Weed. The Knights of Atrocities started to chase after him.

“We will knock him down.”

The ground also shook due to the bronze giants. Among the 1,000 bronze giants, 700 were still safe!

The bronze giants from the Embinyu Church had a special power. As long as their heads weren't destroyed, their bodies would eventually be restored. Of course, this was at the speed of a slug but it still meant they didn't die.

The bronze giants caused thumps due to their huge bodies. The bronze giants that didn't avoid the meteors were completely smashed. Those attacking Dulmore Fortress were injured by the meteor hitting the river. They picked up boulders and roared in an attempt to get revenge for the fire.

‘All of them are my enemies. My life is like this every time.’

Weed was carrying Bactrian Camel on his shoulders so his movement speed was slow. This was why he wasn't far from the place where the meteor had fallen. Flames and smoke meant the enemy couldn't see him but the wind was blowing the smoke away.

“Puhung!”

Bactrian Camel cried out.

“Shut up. We will be discovered by the enemies.”

“Pururung!”

“It is also hard for me since I am giving you a piggyback.”

There were clear tears in the Bactrian Camel’s eyes. He had been running through the desert sand shortly after being given life so his chest warmed at this event.

He had acted as a bad man many times so Bactrian Camel was greatly impressed by this good deed. His master was using his strength and vitality to save him. If they could survive here then he would follow his master anywhere with a willing heart.

“It is dangerous if you continue having that illusion.”

“Puhung?”

“I will throw you towards the enemy as bait. And you will be used as protection against arrows. Well, I will take care of it.”

He didn’t want to die together with Bactrian Camel. It was passed off as a joke but Bactrian Camel was likely to suffer!

Weed and Bactrian Camel walked through a deep, smoke filled place. There were many deep holes in the ground due to the meteor shower. Flames and smoke were rising but that wouldn't last for a while.

‘My health is over 8%. I don't need to be concerned about the fanatics but....’

Weed calculated that he needed to moderately increase his health in order to escape.

Kwaaaang!

While he was lost in thought, a chunk of stone was deeply inserted into the ground next to him. The bronze giants were throwing stones through the fire.

“He is hiding somewhere there.”

“Smash everything!”

The priests of the Embinyu Church used ice magic that would extinguish the fire. Stones pillars and wide area curses were blasted in the area.

“They aren't giving me a break. They are continuously attacking.”

Weed complained as he stared at the flame zone stretched out in front of him. He couldn't even stop to breath as that would just cause his death! He was surrounded by monsters as soon as he exited the smoke.

Wooooooo!

The monsters gave a huge cry. And the other monsters close to one another started to cry out as well. The Embinyu Army scouring the plains for Weed's movements started heading towards his location.

A bronze giant found Weed.

"You killed my brothers."

"Rip him apart while alive!"

The bronze giants were far from being calm and rational. They threw rocks right towards Weed.

"Pururung."

Bactrian Camel sensed his death the moment the rocks were thrown. He had been quietly waiting for death but his heartless owner had dragged him out to be killed be stones. The moment the camel's short life was about to finish!

Weed watched the rocks and used a skill.

“Undulating Flame Mark!”

He had already experienced the fall of the meteors so this didn't frighten him.

Kwa kwa kwang!

Only bits of the stone fell around Weed. The ones directly aimed at him were melted by the power of the flames. The bronze giants were roaring.

“That man is mine. I will tear him apart with my own hands!”

They gave a warning to the other monsters! Weed's Undulating Flame Mark blocked all the stones that the bronze giants threw. Outside the fire zone, 10 bronze giants were encircling him.

“Foolish human, there is no place to escape.”

There was an angry voice as the witch Pechet floated in mid-air. She was unharmed but quite a large number of witches failed to withstand the impact of the meteors and died. Weed sighed as he gazed at the enemies around him.

“My damn popularity....”

Weed's popularity among the monsters and followers of the Embinyu Church surpassed that of a Hallyu star! They grinded their teeth so much from anger that a dentist would need to be hired to fix the teeth of the fanatics. Of course, he was used to the Hermes Guild or regular users hating him.

“Kill me.”

Weed just continued walking forward while carrying the Bactrian Camel.

“Of course you want to kill me.”

“He is my share! I won't give him to anyone else.”

“I will extract the value of the witches' lives from you.”

The bronze giants and witch Pechet competed with each other. Unfortunately, the bronze giants were ignored of any ranged attack methods outside of throwing stones or spears.

Their siege was good but their attack methods weren't effective against a much smaller human. They tried to step on him or brandished a spear!

The witch Pechet gathered a red energy between her hands and threw it at him. Her ability to absorb the strength of others!

Weed jumped forward first so he wouldn't be weakened.

“That is impossible, witch!”

Weed put Bactrian Camel and wielded the Extermination Sword. But his attacks just passed through her like she was a ghost.

-The enemy's body has been cut.

No damage has been caused.

-Movement has been reduced by 3% due to the paralysis effect.

You have been scratched by Pechet on the side and health has fallen by 4,382.

Despite Weed's heavy attacks, he couldn't cause any damage to Pechet's body. He couldn't break the encirclement and dozens of curses hit his body.

It was the worse situation! But Pechet's attacks were slow and obvious.

Weed linked his attack skills together and predicted his opponent's follow up actions. His physical attacks against the enemies were obsolete but he could block or repel Pechet's sharp claws.

But his movements were awkward when he had to move in front of Bactrian Camel. He needed to protect Bactrian Camel so he

couldn't possible leave!

‘This is his true heart. He is my master.’

Bactrian Camel was so impressed that he shed tears.

“I will do anything to save Bactrian Camel. End of the Day!”

And he prepared to catch Pechet with a big skill.

“Ohoho, you're caught!”

-Your body has been paralysed.

The skill has been forcibly cancelled.

-Life force has been absorbed!

1,390 health, mana and vitality will be forcibly taken away every second.

The power of your skills have been forcibly suppressed by 79%.

Small amount of the stats you've acquired through successful training or adventures will be permanently taken away every 10 seconds.

If health and mana is completely drained, you will experience death and the side effects can last for 3 days to 1 month.

The witch Pechet literally sucked other people's auras. Weed was already aware of this.

However, he had no intention of using a spell like Corpse Explosion. He couldn't use a necromancer's magic and he wouldn't save the world at his expense.

'I need to eat all of this!'

Pechet's face became a little clearer as she absorbed his life force. Her long hair was like a sharp sword and a red aura radiated from her entire body. Her flesh was entering this world from another dimension.

-43,756 health is remaining.

Strength has permanently reduced by 4.

Honour has permanently reduced by 4.

Weed waited quietly. A chance wouldn't come twice so he needed to wait for the perfect moment. When his health fell to 30,000 and he lost 17 stats...

Weed was barely able to turn his head and blinked his eyes at Bactrian Camel.

'Ah, Master is giving me a final goodbye.'

Blink blink.

Bactrian Camel closed his big eyes before opening them again.

‘Goodbye Master. I will follow soon.’

Weed frowned even more.

It was an expression of regret like he had to eat barley bread for his entire life!

Bactrian Camel was impressive and noticed something very quickly. He understood that it was a nagging expression, not a compliment.

‘He only gives me that look when he thinks I am being stupid or lazy.’

Meanwhile, Weed was nearing death. Then Weed suddenly smiled widely like it was his happiest moment. Just like when Bactrian Camel was eating a fresh and delicious carrot!

Weed desperately conveyed his intentions. Bactrian Camel was able to understand after remembering the past.

In the early days of the desert growth, Weed’s level had been low so Bactrian Camel had fought with him. There was a risk with

every hunt. The moment Weed was in danger, Bactrian Camel would kick the monster and be rewarded with a carrot.

Weed had helped him come here so Bactrian Camel could move slightly. He staggered upwards and headed towards Pechet. And gave an intense rear kick!

“Kyahh!”

Pechet who was attached to Weed fell with a scream.

-The paralysis has been released.

End of the Day could now be used as originally planned but he did something else.

“World of Fire!”

-The mana contained in the Heart of the Fire Salamander King has been released into the world.

Senior fire elementals have gained the necessary nutrients.

The noble spirits will descend in order to devour.

The air started to heat up as soon as he used the skill. The temperature that had fallen since the meteor shower started to steadily climb. The sudden heat was reminiscent to a fire pit. And all of a sudden, different types of fire elementals appeared everywhere!

-The pure energy of fire is overflowing here. Summoner, what do you want?

Weed ordered decisively.

“Burn it all. Clean everything!”

-It shall be as you desire.

The rare fire elementals that never descended to the ground was going to cover this world with flames. The flames swallowed up the monsters, knights, priests and bronze giants.

“Kyahaak!”

The witch Pechet was rolling across the ground in an attempt to get away. She had a high ability to not get caught. Even if his attacks hit, she couldn't be damaged because her flesh was in another dimension. But now the circumstances had changed.

“Summon Another Sword.”

The sword of light that Weed summoned immediately cut Pechet's body.

“Kyaah!”

Magicians and witches had exceptional capabilities in curses. Therefore Pechet didn't die despite having low health. Weed got up as Pechet tried to run away.

He couldn't miss this opportunity to get rid of the witch. Pechet's body became slightly transparent as she tried to return her body to another dimension.

“Black Knight's Strike, Moonlight Sculpting Blade!”

The light from Sculpting Blade continuously went through Pechet's body.

-You have dealt a critical blow!

-You have dealt a critical blow!

-You have dealt a critical blow!

It thwarted the spell being chanted.

-Black Knight's Strike!

An irreversible attack against the surrounding enemies.

There were numerous enemies in the vicinity but Weed didn't care about them at all. All his attacks were focused on Pechet.

“Kyaah!”

Pechet screamed as she persisted in not dying.

“A human like you won’t be able to escape. Death is close to your side. Your corpse will be buried here....”

The witch started chanting an attack spell. Weed’s health was already in a vulnerable state so the attack would unconditionally kill him!

-The attack has grazed you.

-The attack has powerlessly passed you by.

-You have cut the enemy.

If Pechet’s body half disappeared then it would’ve all been useless. Weed needed to stop the magic from being completed or die! Weed continuously stabbed straight in the heart area.

-You have dealt a critical blow.

96% damage has been added.

-You have dealt a critical blow.

283% damage has been added.

-You have dealt a critical blow.

485% damage has been added.

-You have dealt a critical blow.

721% damage has been added.

A series of one point attacks!

He had used Sculptural Destruction so his damage was terrific. Finally, Pechet's body cracked like a broken mirror and she turned into a grey light. And hundreds of mana lights scattered.

-Your level has risen.

-The ruler of the Narut Valley and a wicked alchemist, the witch Pechet has entered her eternal rest.

-Fame has increased by 19,238 due to the great achievement.

-As a special reward for the fight, all stats have increased by 6.

Once Weed returned to his original world, his level and skill proficiency would be reduced again. But the battle achievements and additional stats gained was completely his own.

The witch Pechet also dropped some amazing items. Dragon Bone Flute, Ring of Hell, Cloak of Space and Everlasting Arm Shield.

Weed bagged all the items but couldn't verify the information as he raised his Extermination Sword.

The demons had stopped falling down.

-The Gates of Hell has been broken.

The connection between Embinyu and Hell has been broken.

The passage associated with hell will be closed.

-The moral of the soldiers that had been reduced by the Gates of Hell opening has been restored to the original state.

Hope has temporarily reached 140%.

-The effects of faith is working properly.

-Black magic won't be strongly expressed.

"This is my resolve."

Weed immediately collapsed to the ground. Health, vitality, mana. He didn't have a lot remaining. Pechet's absorption had been stopped shortly before he died.

-Health has been supplemented through the aura of fire.

World of Fire was currently active so Weed's health was quickly restored.

Meanwhile, many monsters and bronze giants clamoured as they died. But World of Fire could only be maintained for a short time.

It didn't change that fact that he was surrounded by the Embinyu Army. Weed needed to replenish his health as much as possible.

"There is still hope. Pechet and a large number of the Embinyu Army has died."

Their fighting spirit should be decreased by the meteor shower disaster and World of Fire. Weed had dealt a great amount of damage to the Embinyu Army. Then the high priests Motuls and Igrig exchanged glances.

“That pagan has some capabilities.”

“However, Embinyu is the God of Destruction.”

“Of course.”

And Igrig started chanting a spell.

-Servants of the faith, your soul hasn't entered hell even if your flesh is rotting. Freedom, rest and tranquillity isn't allowed by our sacred promise. Embinyu is immortal and has arranged a festival of carnage and destruction!

Igrig's divine magic spread through the plains and Dulmore Fortress. The flesh of the dead monsters and fanatics got up and started moving again. Those who were buried deep in the ground by the disaster also came back up again. Even those without any traces left due to the meteor shower were returned. The bodies of the bronze giants regenerated.

-High Priest Igrig's fanatical army!

The fanatics who pursue destruction have been granted immortality by the god Embinyu.

The spirit and flesh subordinate to the god won't completely disappear.

High Priest Igrig has fulfilled this promise of immortality and have revived the army to lead the world into destruction.

In order to prevent the promise of immortality, return Igrig to his eternal rest.

Apart from the witch Pechet, the monsters, fanatics, priests and knights would endlessly revive. Their bodies were different from the undead as they were revived in their original state.

The turtles that crashed in the early stages of the battle also flew back up. Even the archers on the backs of the turtles were intact and they flew towards the plains at Igrig's command. The entire army was revived at a frightening speed.

Weed was appalled as he watched the spectacle.

“This is the first time I've felt like this.”

Normally difficult quests was like crossing mountain after mountain but he felt a sense of achievement at completing it.

Weed finally realized that this quest was like crossing a mountain, acidic lake, the deep sea, underwater caves, underwater canyons and then a crater spewing lava.

Chapter 7: Destination Point

Weed's eyes indicated that he wasn't dead yet. An unyielding spirit like a weed!

"I need to go somewhere. Well, what is dying once more? If I am killed then the quest would just be ruined. Anyway, this is life."

A desperate plan!

The odds for completing this quest wasn't very high. The Gates of Hell was broken but the immortal fanatical army had appeared. He had even used a huge disaster like a meteor shower.

It was difficult to predict the likelihood of success. He had been caught off guard but it wasn't the first time that had happened in his life. Just as there was a ray of hope, Igrig used his magic to revive the Embinyu Army. Several hundred people were resurrected sequentially so it hadn't been completed yet.

"It will be finished quickly."

Weed limped as he walked with Bactrian Camel. He absorbed health thanks to World of Fire but his physical condition wasn't good after facing the witch Pechet. There were dozens of curses hanging on him so he couldn't flee quickly!

Bactrian Camel cried out.

“Puhuhung!”

The shaking of his head obviously meant ‘just leave me here and go on alone!’.

“Don’t worry. Do you really think I will leave you and go on alone?”

“Puhuhung!”

“Don’t be scared. I can do it.”

Weed walked carrying Bactrian Camel again.

The fire elementals burned the enemies in front of him as they opened the way. Once he walked approximately 200~300 metres, the power of the fire weakened. The mana supply to the advanced fire elementals was running out.

“I don’t have time.”

Weed increased his fleeing speed.

World of Fire had inflicted damage to the Embinyu Army but they would just be resurrected again. The turtles flying in the sky were approaching as they wanted to get revenge on Weed. Weed’s leg was injured so his pace was uncomfortable.

Due to the land distortion caused by the disaster, even riding Bactrian Camel wouldn't be that fast. Bactrian Camel had received serious injuries in the meteor collision and they wouldn't heal properly without treatment magic.

Weed absorbed as much as he could from the flames.

-Summoner, I am happy receiving all that mana. I will wait for you to call me again.

The summoning of the advanced fire elementals was released! The flames had spread widely through the Embinyu Church.

“There is someone over there.”

“He is a sacrifice. Kill him!”

The Knights of Atrocities came running. The monsters were also running behind the Knights of Atrocities. The demons that had already descended prepared to attack.

But he felt more reassured about the demons. Those that were killed didn't have access to the divine power to revive.

Weed put down Bactrian Camel again and grasped the Extermination Sword.

“This place will be your grave.”

He wasn't looking at the knights but the turtle unit in the sky. The bronze giants continued throwing a myriad of rocks on the battlefield.

“You will die like last time.”

Weed left Bactrian Camel behind and swung his sword towards the Knights of Atrocities. The Atrocity Knights fell as a tremendous power was thrown at them!

This was true swordsmanship. All the soldiers and knights in front of him were knocked down. The enemies couldn't prevent the attack and died due to severe injuries.

“Ohhhh.”

“Pagan, you are challenging the will of Embinyu!”

A Knight of Atrocity said after killing 150 of them. He was a level 600 intermediate ranked boss in the Embinyu Army.

-Health remaining is 5.8%.

His physical state continued deteriorating as he fought in an unstable condition.

“I encourage you to bring it on!”

Weed righteously exclaimed.

His health had fallen to the floor again but the situation couldn't be reconciled at the moment! The Knights of Atrocities continued attacking and bodies piled up.

This wasn't a situation with a fair and square victory. To make matters worse, Igrig's magic meant the bodies of the Atrocity Knights rose again.

An endless fight!

Weed used minimal movements to avoid the attacks from the tireless attacks from the knights. The Extermination Sword felt like an increasingly heavy burden.

‘This is why I shouldn't be a hero. I should've lined up on the side of the bad guys.....’

The seed of justice in this world! At that moment, a faint rotten smile crossed his face.

‘This much effort is enough for the viewers. Even if I die, there will be praise that I fought well.’

The beautiful death of a hero. The sad conclusion would resonate with the viewers for a long time.

‘This situation is pretty good. I will fight until the end.’

Once Weed died, the Embinyu Church would certainly destroy the Central Continent. The fate of the nearby Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms would also be decided. The cities would be completely destroyed as the Embinyu Church swept through. This wasn't Weed's style but it soothed a little of his disappointment and regret.

“Sword of Mass Slaughter!”

The Knights of Atrocities swarmed him like they were flies jumping into a fire. He was constantly forced to deal with the enemies' attacks so he welcomed the final attack.

It was then that the situation changed.

“Puhihihing!”

Bactrian Camel who was lying down and pretended to be dead jumped up and ran over to him.

-Running rapidly in a sand storm.

A technique that will run until the strength is exhausted.

Bactrian Camel's body still wasn't healthy but it was a situation where he could run. Two forelegs and one hind leg! He wobbled

but made a final sprint. Bactrian Camel run through the encirclement of monsters with Weed riding him.

“Chase, all knights!

The Atrocity Knights immediately pursued.

“You have come.”

Weed felt much better. Unlike his normal body, Bactrian Camel couldn't run in a straight line. He wouldn't be able to leave the plains even if no one interfered. The Knights of Atrocities were quickly catching up.

“I can still kill one more.”

He used the Yurbusika Frost Bow! Ice arrows were showered towards the knights chasing him.

Their advance slowed down but there were too many enemies. And monsters were coming at Igrig's command. Furthermore, the bronze giants were trampling the monsters as they approached.

He had no hope for his life as he viewed the enemy's serious offensive! The incident happened at that time.

“Lowlifes of the Embinyu Church, you will not pass here.”

Knights with their entire bodies made of bones. Van Hawk, the commander of the undead army and his doom knights showed up.

It wasn't just them. The dark shadows hiding in the ground were vampires! They had been quietly lurking in the heart of the enemy and struck as their sharp fangs entered the necks of the monsters and priests chasing Weed.

“Kyaah!”

Van Hawk and Torido.

They had been shocked by the meteor fall. The 100,000 undead army but the vampires weren't daunted.

Abyss Knight Van Hawk led half of the undead forces to quietly rescue Weed.

Torido was unable to show off the power of a Vampire Lord in this place. A frontal attack wouldn't work so he waited for a chance to ambush the Embinyu Army. Their goal from the beginning was the delicious priests.

The blood of priests were delicious but paradoxically, they were also fatal to vampires. However, the priests that followed Embinyu had the power of darkness so it acted as a restorative to the vampires.

The sudden appearance of his subordinates caused Weed to be

considerably impressed. When a business failed, the presence of friends was like a ray of light in a dark world.

A spontaneous cry of joy emerged.

“These incompetent, unlucky bastards!”

Contrary to expectations, it was a stream of criticism!

Van Hawk used the power of an Abyss Knight to block the Atrocity Knights.

“I am Van Hawk, the commander of the dark army and I will teach you the true laws of darkness.”

“Embinyu doesn’t care about the undead! Embinyu will let you known what death and evil is like in this world!”

Van Hawk demonstrated his strong skills against the Atrocity Knights.

In Torido and the vampires’ case, they had average fighting power but superior intuition. They harassed the priests and prevented them from using curses and attack spells.

“Bactrian Camel, let’s go.”

“Pururung!”

Bactrian Camel continued forward despite being exhausted. Van Hawk and the doom knights were combat specialists so they bravely faced the bronze giants. One hit from the bronze giant's fist would break bones but their bodies were quickly reform.

The undead were proud of their immortal health. The Embinyu priests could send them back with purification spells but couldn't due to the vampires constraining them.

Igrig revived the monsters and fanatics but Van Hawk and the undead were quicker. The undead were hastily made so they weren't pretty but there were many of them. It didn't matter if there was a skull defect.

“Excellent!”

Although he threw away his attachment to life, Weed rose again like a flame. It was like having a stock investment at Han River fail only to win the lottery. Igrig approached with a convoy and cried out.

“Eliminate all of Embinyu's enemies!”

Van Hawk and Torido intercepted a lot of enemies but many more escaped to pursue Weed. The turtles flying through the sky also chased him. Igrig and Motuls' troops were closing in so Van Hawk couldn't block them for long.

Weed fired ice arrows towards enemies in close proximity. He rode Bactrian Camels backwards as he searched for monsters. Walls of ice were built to block the monsters but they soon caught up.

“There really is no end to this.”

Several monsters lost their lives from the ice arrows. Weed was very strong thanks to Sculptural Destruction!

However, the monsters were only obedient to Igrig so they didn't care about the deaths of their colleagues. They just rushed past those frozen by the ice arrows.

“Pururung!”

“I know!”

He aimed the ice arrows at the ground in order to disperse and reduce the number of enemies. To make matters worse, Bactrian Camel couldn't run properly and was getting smaller.

Weed said pitifully while firing the arrows.

“Bactrian Camel, a little bit more. I will feed you carrots for the rest of your life.”

“Puhihihing.”

The ice arrows shot in the sky pierced through seven monsters. But then what could he do?

He would get caught in a few seconds. The enemies were only dozens of metres away.

“Run a little more. This is a crisis but if all my money....”

Weed didn't have a lot of time. A flying demon that got 10 metres close to him whipped its long tail. Weed was firing another arrow so he couldn't deal with the attack. Bactrian Camel also couldn't avoid it!

Kuwek!

But just before it touched Weed, the flying demon suddenly crashed into the ground with its life lost. Thousands of arrows flew in the sky and hit the monsters of the Embinyu Army.

“What?”

Weed looked back to see the familiar dust storm of the camel cavalry.

“Kill everyone who threatens the Great Emperor!”

“The Red Knife desert unit, defeat the enemies.”

The soldiers specialized in archery pulled their bowstrings. The arrows of the desert warriors fell skilfully. They focused on hitting the enemy in an area that they wouldn't survive. The arrows were also aimed to neutralize the movements of the opposing army.

The superior manoeuvrability meant the camel cavalry flew past Weed. A brutal power that would be displayed in the long term! The monsters that they broke through were subdued.

Warrior-1 who was temporarily in charge of the army came up to him.

“Great Emperor, we have come as promised.”

If it had gone as Weed originally planned then the desert army would be fighting on a good terrain. However, the desert army hurriedly ran away and suffered a headache because of the meteor shower. They didn't receive the brunt of the blow but the deep furrows in the ground delayed their movement.

Anyway, they arrived at the perfect moment to defeat the chasing enemies. Of course, they were also arriving at the centre of the Embinyu Army.

Weed looked at Warrior-3 and his troops fighting the bronze giants. The arrows and spears were fiercely thrown. The bronze giants were knocked down by the passing desert warriors.

A close battle!

A man would want to intrude. Of course, those who cared about their own survival wouldn't.

Weed dismounted from Bactrian Camel.

“These incompetent bastards! Why did you only come now?”

“.....”

“Anyway, it is done. Help Van Hawk and Torido and focus on defense.”

“Yes, I understand.”

Warrior-1 secured the area around them and Weed touched his hands to the ground.

-The earth goddess Mi-ne has blessed you.

The energy from the earth has restored your health and vitality.

Health is below 20% so recovery rate is 4 times higher.

“Hrmm.”

It felt superb to feel his health start to rapidly rise. In addition, Weed was more eager to return to the battlefield after refilling his health.

Bactrian Camel squatted down with no power.

“Puhuhung!”

The leg injury was severe so he needed a very good rest. Nevertheless, Bactrian Camel blinked and watched Weed.

Weed had said a while ago.

If they escaped from a crisis then he would part from a treasure. He had a curious mount. Weed felt dismay as he saw Bactrian Camel’s eyes.

He had a list of terrific treasures from the desert. It was enough to even buy one country.

“Hrmm, anyone can do the things you did so you don’t need to be proud.”

He immediately said!

“It is meaningless but I will still give you 20 gold for the achievement. That is enough money to build a nice barn in the

middle of the desert.”

An amount possible to construct a barn in a place with water and sand! Bactrian Camel’s lips looked like he was laughing. He had a certain level of intelligence but still maintained absolute loyalty to Weed.

While the desert army and slaves fought, the army of the surrendered nobles and priests arrived.

“Bodies with a wicked aura are approaching. Goddess Freya bless us.”

-The debilitating curses on the bones have been relieved.
The weakening of the bones will disappear.

Health recovery speed +27%.

-The curse of Mirror Destruction has been alleviated.

The probability of receiving reverse damage when attacking the enemy will disappear.

“Recovery!”

“Round Hill!”

-Atrock’s holy magic has restored health by 3,872.

-Tyr's holy magic has restored health by 3,872.

Blessings and healing was concentrated on Weed to relieve the curses. His body's condition rapidly shot upwards.



The Embinyu Army and the desert army!

The desert warriors thrust through the monsters and fanatics.

“Keep moving. In accordance with the law of the desert in regards to dealing with enemies.”

“The first priority is to break through the enemies. If the priests pursue then kill them all!”

The Knights of Atrocities were no match for the desert warriors. The Embinyu Army was strengthened with magic but the desert army used sophisticated, group strategies. They threw arrows and axes towards the enemies as they approached. And they used the thick scimitars to hit the enemies. Then the following camels would then trample on them!

The strength of the desert warriors also lay in the camels they raised. In the case of knights, armour clad horses could influence the battle. But for desert warriors, camels were essential to cross the desert plains. They needed to track down the enemies or sources of water. Weed trained the desert warriors to utilize the camels in this chain method of attack.

In addition, the desert mercenaries that Seo-yoon raised were also adept. The mercenaries solved commissions in the harsh desert so they knew how to fight with multiple weapons.

The situation of the combat slaves and prisoners were different.

“N-no. We will die if we go in there.”

“Why do we have to fight? I don’t know what I am fighting for. I want to go home.”

Their training and morale was low so they were hesitant to head into battle. At that moment, Weed yelled using Atrock’s Cry.

“Fight! If you fight the Embinyu army then you can return to your homeland. If they win then this world will end in destruction. Defeat the enemy in order for your families to survive!”

As soon as Weed recovered, he felt the need to send more troops to the desert army. The slaves’ terrified expressions changed dramatically.

“We have to finish those guys off.”

“I’m looking at that big monster for the first time. It seems kind of cute. I will mutilate them!”

Atrock's Cry caused a change!

The power was enough to sweep away the weak fanatics. The combat slaves' mission was to subdue the ridiculously strong Embinyu Army. Their fighting style didn't show any training at all. Their purpose was to use their spears and shields for create a fortified wall.

The desert army acted as bait in order to give them time to fulfil the mission. The priests that weren't disturbed by the vampires used the brainwashing technique.

"You will truly believe and only follow Embinyu. What has this world done for you? If you believe in Embinyu then you will gain strength and power. You will be able to deliver pain to others."

"No, we have already submitted to the Great Emperor Weed-nim. If he is on our side then we will be able to defeat the enemy. No humans can fight him and win."

Atrock's Cry had raised the troops' resistance to brainwashing.

"Embinyu will liberate you from all pain and suffering."

"Ohh indeed, God Embinyu!"

"It is strange that you are suddenly talking about Embinyu."

“Kill him!”

“I shall receive the power of Embinyu...kek!”

“Those people are talking about Embinyu. Kill them all!”

The traitors were immediately executed by other soldiers! The priests' magic only caught weak soldiers so it felt like a waste of magic.

Of course, the desert warriors didn't fall victim to the lure of Embinyu. They had a resolute will but also obtained many powers and treasures from looting across the continent!

The meteor disaster had caused fatal damage to the Embinyu Army. The dead troops might've been revived but those who survived had decreased strength and vitality and numerous injuries! The Embinyu Army wasn't at full strength.

“This is a great opportunity. There might not be another chance to beat them.”

Weed ventured back to the battlefield after his health reached 68%.

The Embinyu Army had tremendous power and the situation wouldn't be resolved until he killed Igrig and Motuls.

Weed used Sculpture Transformation to once again turn into a barbarian. He couldn't finish the whole thing alone. He would consider it after drilling through the vanguard towards the desert army.

His only complaint!

“I am an apostle of justice that will protect the peace of the continent. So this is good motivation.”

Through the numerous adversities and doing bad things, his men had developed a firm commitment. When he looked at it in the long term, the Embinyu Church was a competitor.

“Warrior-2.”

“Yes.”

Warrior-2 still hadn't fought.

His mission was to organize a convoy of 1,000 desert warriors for Weed! 200 of the desert warriors in the convey were those that grew along with Nodulle. A single, small group that boasted the best power on the continent.

Weed felt reassured as he looked at them. In the worst case situation, his subordinates would be strong enough to escape.

“Let’s go. Stop the priests.”

“Yes!”

The desert warriors were in charge of taking care of the Priests of Punishment. They shot arrows at the priests. The free spirited methods that the warriors used to fight in the desert.

The desert warriors followed tactics that Weed gave them but they also bravely jumped behind enemy lines. Their unmatched resistance and survival strength allowed them to be reckless on the battlefield!

In fact, their actions were ignorant when dealing with groups of magicians, priests, shamans or knights. They would be weakened by spells or curses and eventually killed.

The deserts warriors were proficient in using their mobility to break through but their real advantage was melee combat when they split up.

“It isn’t too late even now. Rotten corpses are wandering around the battlefield. If you follow Embinyu then you can go back home.”

“Shut up. Don’t give me those dirty words. My child is from an affair my wife had with the man next door!”

“Home? I’ve only roamed the battlefield so I have nothing left. I have nothing to do except kill you.”

The desert warriors advanced into enemy lines and scattered to take care of the priests. Weed was a huge barbarian who broke through the centre. He smashed the monsters with both arms and kicks.

He stopped before Van Hawk and Torido's troops who were on the verge of collapse. It was especially bad in the case of the vampire army that had been reduced by one third. They returned to Weed in order to recover.

“Master!”

“It seems like you are safe.”

His subordinates just wanted to hear a few words of praise. Weed advanced towards the Atrocity Knights and wiped them out with the Extermination Sword before saying.

“Tsk tsk, I have to clean up your mess.”

“.....”

“Van Hawk, you are the great commander of the Army of Darkness.”

“.....”

“Torido, so far you’ve only drank one or two drops of blood. Anyway, I am suffering because you are insufficient.”

A tactic that swallowed and spat out his subordinates! A way for his subjects to learn their natural positions in the hierarchy.

However, the Embinyu Army also properly demonstrated their strength.

Igrig squeezed a heated response from the priests and knights. The priests were in charge of barriers, curses and holy magic while the knights with high morale attacked without any hesitation.

The desert warriors were capable to using spectacular strikes to defeat them but Igrig’s infinite resurrection magic meant they would eventually tire.

Motuls also had enormous special skills.

“This is the land ruled by God Embinyu. No pagans can come through this area. Declaration of Sacrosanct Territory!”

-Declaration of Sacrosanct Territory.

The destruction power of Embinyu is spread over this zone.

All followers of the Embinyu Army will have their combat related stats increased by 70%.

The destructive power of their skills have increased by 120%.

All those who don't belong to Embinyu will have 3,892 health absorbed every 5 seconds.

The absorbed health will be changed into mana for the high priest Motuls.

Please Note!

A barrier will form around the sacrosanct territory.

In order to break through the solid barrier, true heroism is needed to kill the high priest Motuls.

Igrig and Motuls!

The high priests of the Embinyu Army had levels exceeding 700 and special abilities. It was enough to make a level 700 warrior feel weak. Their health was also high so they wouldn't die easily.

Magicians and priests had special abilities so they would wreak havoc when commanding subordinates. While within the sacrosanct territory, the desert warriors would have their health absorbed and they also couldn't retreat.

“Bone Destruction, Devastating Wrath and Deep, Dark Poison Fog!”

Motuls embarked on a spree of magic after using the mana absorption spell. A high priests with an infinite supply of mana could freely use advanced magic. There should be a limit to how scary a priest and magician's special abilities could be.

"I need to hurry and take care of them as quickly as possible."

Weed had more fun the stronger the enemy was.

Igrig and Motuls. This was a great opportunity for the two high priests to show their special abilities. It was beneficial if they dragged out the time.

Weed's eyes quickly looked around the battlefield. He found Hestiger and Zahab who were positioned with the slaves. The meteor shower had devastated the land so flames burned everywhere.

"Break through. Don't let the valour of our enemies stop us."

"Waaaah! Follow Hestiger-nim!"

Hestiger led his troops to slay the monsters. A sturdy, tall and good looking person with a considerate nature towards his subordinates. His swordsmanship couldn't be questioned and he always gained great achievements on the battlefield. He gave off a stylish appearance as he drove his camel forward for an assault.

The Master Swordsman Zahab was currently using a sword of light to cut an enormous monster in half. He had also used Sculptural Destruction to convert his stats into strength. His art stat surpassed Weed since he lived for a long time. Therefore his sword and attack skills had reached the peak, making the monsters no match for him.

He deflected the fireball a priest shot at him with Moonlight Sculpting Blade. He recreated the beautiful dance in the moonlight that was a legend in the Rosenheim Kingdom.

“Okay, they will be sufficiently useful. I won’t go alone.”

Weed gave a loud shout.

“Hestiger!”

“Yes!”

“Bring your troops along and fight with me.”

“It is an honour.”

Hestiger was always polite to Weed. He was humble yet elegant.

“Zahab-nim.”

“I know.”

Zahab had already wanted to target the high priests. He had mastered swordsmanship so he was one of the strongest people.

“Warrior-2, prevent the other troops of the Embinyu Army from interfering.”

“I will dedicate my life to it.”

Weed decided to target the high priest Igrig first. Both of them were opponents that couldn't be left alone for a long time. Igrig continued to revive the Embinyu troops while Motuls inflicted massive damage on the desert army.

Igrig was chosen because he was closer.

“Let's go.”

Weed ran towards Igrig with Zahab and Hestiger. He brandished the Extermination Sword and stormed through the monsters! Igrig was one of the leaders so he had strong looking monsters and knights around him. The bronze giant in the convoy made it an absolutely untouchable defense! He needed to slay thousands of enemies before eliminating Igrig.

Weed stomped on the ground.

“Earth Shaking!”

The solid earth shook at least 1 metre up and down so the monsters and bronze giants couldn't stay standing. The bronze giant fell, causing the monsters to fall one after another. The priests that were chanting spells also lost their balance.

The troops in front of him were devastated! Weed thought it was highly risky but was willing to make a concession to obtain the opportunity.

“Now Hestiger!”

“Red Lion! Go!”

Hestiger's troops ran like the wind. And arrows and magic attacks immediately flew around in the vicinity. They ignored the Embinyu Army and focused attacks on Igrig.

The Punishment Priests out of range of Earth Shaking aimed curses towards the enemies heading towards Igrig. Hestiger and the Red Lion broke through the barrier and pounced like a hungry lion.

The bravery and recklessness of the desert army was clearly shown. Each person was a great warrior with leadership abilities. There were no useless movements as they broke through the enemy. They received countless attacks but the damage was minimal and they were unstoppable.

“Zahab-nim, go!”

Weed followed behind Zahab. Whether it was one on one or one on ten, none of the knights could stop them. Zahab lightly cut the enemy with Sculpting Blade while Weed just overwhelmed them with force.

“Get out of the way!”

The Extermination Sword struck them to the side! The shields or swords couldn't block it so those hit would fly away more than 100 metres. There was an exciting feeling similar to hitting a baseball or golf ball.

Those watching Weed from the side found it an overwhelming spectacle. After a few knights were thrown away, the barrier had collapsed.

“Igrig, this is your last day!”

Weed cried out as he arrived 70 metres in front of Igrig. This was a good distance for barbarians. His size that made the Dulmore Fortress and its plains seem narrow!

“Curse of Blood in the Lungs!”

A dark red mana gathered around Igrig. The curse hit the knights

that Weed had thrown.

“Kyaaaak!”

Blood poured from the knights as the curse hit and they died.

‘There will be no chance for 10 seconds.’

Weed calmly read the situation.

The knights that fell to the ground were immediately woken up by Igrig. And the centre of the Embinyu Army contained priests chanting curse magic.

A barbarian had the highest attack power but curses would half their capabilities. If he missed the right timing then the desert army would be wiped out by the Embinyu Army.

Weed alone couldn't deal with the constantly resurrecting Embinyu Army.

“Zahab-nim, this is your opportunity.”

“Yes!”

Weed threw Zahab towards Igrig. Zahab flew straight like an arrow!

“Radiant Sword!”

Birds of light appeared from Zahab’s sword and hit the knights guarding Igrig. And Zahab jumped over their bodies before landing in front of Igrig.

“Evane’s enemy!”

Well, he seemed like a genuinely good man but he still dreamed of an affair with a married woman.

“Who are you?”

Igrig picked up a staff and blocked the attack.

“You are quite good, human.”

“I will kill you.”

“I represent God’s will so how can a human kill me?”

There was a current of mana every time the sword and staff clashed. He was a high priest but he still had significant close combat power. The eyeball in the skull studded staff had the ability to absorb the enemy’s energy.

“You are strong enough to see the skills of the Embinyu Church!”

“Shut up. I have received the value of Evane’s life so I will stop you.”

Of course, it was unfair since Queen Evane was born and died many years in the future. Zahab was old but Weed couldn’t even guess his age anymore.

Anyway, Weed was able to aim him at an appropriate opponent.

“Sculpting Blade!”

Weed also took action while Zahab charged at Igrig. He wiped out the bronze giants and priests that were affected by Earth Shaking. The rest were blocked by Warrior-2’s troops so no one interfered with Weed’s actions.

“The priests will fulfil the will of Embinyu!”

The bronze giants ran amok with their ranged attacks but Weed knew their weakness was close combat! He ignored the curses hitting him and just attacked the monsters and bronze giants.

Weed also joined Zahab in fighting Igrig.

A barbarian’s oversized appearance made it seem like someone bullying the weak but the reality was different.

Igrig attacked him with a staff filled with darkness. In addition, Motuls was approaching Igrig with his troops.

Zahab blocked the staff while Weed chopped Igrig's body.

-Igrig has been cut.

The energy contained in the Extermination Sword has caused 16% fire damage.

The Curse of Health has a 87% chance to repair the damage.

-A critical hit!

The Evil God has applied an immunity to confusion.

A critical hit had been continuously struck.

Igrig was too busy dealing with Zahab that he often left weak points for Weed. Weed's damage was real but Igrig's body had all types of blessings on it! A priest was vulnerable to close combat but a high priest of the Embinyu Church wouldn't simply die.

It was a fight against time. The bronze giants and monsters gathered like vultures but he just ignored them or brushed them aside to focus on Igrig. Motuls and his troops were also being blocked by Warrior-2. If they didn't handle Igrig now then his special abilities would continue resurrecting the troops.

“Van Hawk, Torido!”

“I have been waiting, Master.”

“I am very curious to see what blood steeped in evil will taste like!”

Van Hawk and Torido quickly joined the battle. Several people were being used to beat just one!

Chapter 8: Traces of History

Igrig was a priest so his health wasn't high.

“Check the status of the enemy!”

-Crazy Igrig

A high priest that follows the evil god Embinyu.

In the past, he was an ordinary farmer until he discovered a slab left behind by Embinyu and became a fanatic.

He commands the army with the promise of immortality.

Health: 51%

Mana: 79%

Igrig had 430,000 health! He wore rare robes inscribed with special characters that gave him a sturdy defense.

However, he couldn't afford to ignore Weed, Zahab, Van Hawk and Torido's attacks. A priest was adept at blessing their colleagues or cursing their enemies. They were the most vulnerable when it came to close combat.

-I'm asking you. A crisis has fallen upon a faithful servant, Igrig. All members of the Embinyu Army, come here!

An ability to command the entire army! Suddenly all the monsters and fanatics on the battlefield came running. Even those fighting the desert army ignored them and attempted to get to Igrig. The monsters died as they tried to escape.

Weed moved behind the bronze giants and used a powerful skill.

“Heavy Explosion!”

The bronze giants weren't killed. Weed poured out large scale destruction magic but they had high health so several accurate attacks were needed. Weed targeted the legs in order to destroy the bronze giants' balance. The fallen bronze giants greatly hindered the entry of the monsters.

Igrig was concentrating on defense but his health was rapidly falling. A high priest of the Embinyu Church that was trying to destroy the peace of the continent! Weed and his group was trying to save the world.

Abyss Knight Van Hawk was ignored while Torido would rush in to suck Igrig's blood.

Zahab was Weed's slave for life due to the woman he loved! He had been enjoying life in his old age until he was forced back to the warring period.

It was the best combination to deal with a high priest of the Embinyu Church.

‘He won’t last long!’

Weed instinctively felt that Igrig was reaching his final moments. His curses were continuously cancelled by Zahab and the aura of darkness was disappearing.

Weed felt something unusual as Igrig started chanting a spell.

“Oh Holy One, in order to fulfil the promise of immortality that your faithful servant Igrig....”

Weed didn’t know it but Igrig could use an immortal flesh spell on himself once his health fell below 20%. If his spell was successful then he would be in an invincible state where his health wouldn’t fall anymore. However, the promise of immortality hanging over the Embinyu Army would be turned off! The monsters and fanatics wouldn’t survive but Igrig’s health couldn’t be reduced for two days.

Weed instinctively perceived a serious threat. A similar tension to when a friend called after several years!

“Van Hawk, go ahead. He has to die! Okay!”

“Understood!”

Van Hawk emitted a dark aura and brandished his sword at Igrig. Unlike other occasions, Igrig’s spell chanting wasn’t interrupted by the attacks.

“I will sacrifice all live that lives on this land so that your enemies can feel pain and bitterness....”

The chanting continued. Weed also attacked Igrig rather than the bronze giants.

He focused on battering the head, chest and belly! The series of continuous attacks caused terrific damage. Igrig was hit all over his body yet he still chanted his spell. Now Zahab swung his sword of light while Van Hawk summoned the power of the abyss.

Currently, the ones with the best attack power on the continent was gathered in this place. And...

-Kuwaaaaaah!

Igrig spread his arms wide open and screamed.

Kurururung!

A thunderbolt fell from the sky and struck the ground. Dozens of forked lightning burned Igrig’s body.

-The crazy high priest Igrig of the Embinyu Church has entered his eternal rest.

Due to his sins, his soul won't be able to rest but he will feel free for the first time since being captured by the evil god.

-The monsters and fanatics of the 6th sect of the Embinyu Church are in turmoil.

-Fame has increased by 32,392 due to the great achievement.

-As a special reward for the fight, the Faith stat has increased by 120.

-One god has strongly blessed you.

Hestia, Goddess of the Kitchen!

Her blessing will increase fire damage by 135% for a week.

“Now there is only one left.”

Weed had a rotten smile on his face!

“No!”

Motuls gave a sad scream.

Of course, Motuls was also a high priest. Weed needed to be careful on this quest or he could lose everything.

But Pechet and Igrig were dead so the burden on his mind was significantly lightened. It was a blessing that the fanatics and monsters that the desert army swept through wouldn't revive again.

In addition, the divine power causing resistance when Van Hawk tried to make undead from corpses disappeared. Skeletons, dullahans, low grade death knights etc. were being created everywhere. The movement of the fanatics were hampered.

Weed set up an organized plan. Until now, he had been urgently responding according to the battle situation.

“Torido.”

“You called.”

“You go over there first.”

“.....”

Motuls was inside the sacrosanct area! The intruders would lose their health so Motuls' protection was very strong.

Therefore he should throw Torido in such a place! He was the weakest in combat power but he had the high health characteristic of a vampire lord.

“I don’t want to.”

“Why?”

“It looks dangerous. How come I have to go?”

“I will give you a choice. I will kill you. Or do you want to go over there to die?”

“Uhh, I think it is better to go there to die.”

Torido entered the sacrosanct territory and even duelled with a knight. He was pierced by a several Atrocity Knights and barely escaped by transforming into a bat.

“It is somewhat tricky. He is different from the others.”

Weed made a plan and left his position.

Operation Steel Lunch Box!

The promise of immortality was broken so the monsters and fanatics were removed by the desert army. The power of the Embinyu Army was definitely exceptional. The 20,000 desert army that didn’t know defeat was rapidly reduced.

However, many priests also died. That was because the desert

warriors breaking through the enemy focused on the priests. The damage sustained from the meteor shower and the battle at Dulmore Fortress meant their current power was 80,000.

“I need to take advantage of the undead and the vampires should eat more actively. The supplies are sufficient....the desert warriors don't get tired even after fighting all day so I don't need to worry about that.”

The arrows are focused on the bronze giants and Motuls. They threw stones while the desert warriors dodged and counterattacked with fire arrows.

His sculptural lifeforms also knocked down a group of enemies. The Embinyu Army were packed together so the desert warriors hit them quickly.

1,000 warriors would hinder a giant monster and would attack and retreat while firing arrows! They divided into groups of 20 and danced like a butterfly around the enemy. The barrage of blows from the desert army caused enemy lines to collapse.

The desert army showed a successful tactic against the Embinyu Army! This demonstration of the group tactics wasn't due to numerous experiences but Weed's nagging.

The Embinyu Army retaliated using magic and curses but the desert army just scattered in every direction. They had high health and were also supported with healing from the priests.

The Embinyu Army was strong but they were honest and simple when it came to fighting. The main army just headed in front of them while the large monsters were slow and lumbering.

The manoeuvrability and ranged strikes annihilated the main army! The desert army was overwhelming when it came to tactics. They were children that learned all types of tips and tricks from Weed.

They had no chance to fight within the sacrosanct territory. The desert army fought outside the range of Motuls' control. Every time there was a volley of arrow attacks!

It wasn't just their combat power and manoeuvrability. Their ability to win was also based on their ranged combat.

Of course, Weed was in danger due to being alone in the Embinyu Army but he was fairly relaxed. The Embinyu Army had been decreased by 30% since the desert army first appeared. And he was at the final goal to defeat Motuls.

Despite that, there were still quite a lot of monsters, knights and priests remaining in the Embinyu Army.

“Warrior-2.”

“Yes!”

200 desert warriors in Weed's convoy had died while he fought

Igrig. This was one of the toughest troops so 200 casualties were a huge loss. The people that survived would be able to last a long time in Weed's empire.

"It is time to hunt the biggest guy. Support me."

"Yes!"

"Warrior-1!"

"Speak."

"Don't let anyone interfere."

"I will obey."

Warrior-1 and his troops kept out the surrounding monsters and fanatics. If the interference was minimized then he could just focus on the enemy inside the sacrosanct territory.

Weed still wasn't in his best condition.

"Zahab-nim! Hestiger!"

"I know."

"I have been waiting for your orders."

Now Zahab and Hestiger marched into the sacrosanct territory! The Knights of Atrocities were attacked by arrows from their escorts. The desert warriors stayed outside the sacrosanct territory and continued to fire arrows like lightning.

“Severe Blow!”

Even so, Weed blew back enemies with an intense blow while entering the holy area.

-You have entered the divine territory of Embinyu.

Health is reduced.

Defense has given high resistance.

Health will be reduced by 2,138 every 5 seconds.

Sacrosanct territory would convert this to mana for Motuls. If Motuls had an unlimited supply of magic then he could continue using his advanced magic.

He was like a mountain standing in Weed's way.

“Finish it quickly.”

“Yes!”

Weed threw Zahab at Motuls. When looking at the side effects, there was no guarantee of his safety. But due to the fact that he was a genius in swordsmanship and sculpting, he flew through the enemies and ended up in front of Motuls.

“Hestiger, you too.”

“It is an honour, Great King!”

In contrast to Zahab’s loyalty, Hestiger followed Weed due to his selflessness. He was handsome, humble and had plenty of popularity among his subordinates. A nice person would built achievements through hard work!

Bung bung buoung!

Weed also threw Hestiger towards Motuls.

‘If everything goes well then this might be a jackpot.’

Hestiger was a nice person but he also raised his level within 3~4 of Weed during the Nodulle’s Growth quest. Hestiger unleashed all his accumulated resentment on the Knights of Atrocities.

He somersaulted and lightly landed next to Motuls! Two knights were attacking from both sides but he jumped up and swung his sword at both of them. Of course, the enemies didn’t die but they

were knocked down a while.

“As expected from Hestiger!”

“That is the Red Lion troop led by Hestiger.”

Weed's ears kept on hearing Hestiger being praised. But now wasn't the time to be jealous so Weed jumped straight at Motuls.

Kurururung!

Suddenly, a wall rose up from the ground. A wall of demons! A barrier protecting Motuls.

Weed passed through the barrier using the power of his body. The knights and monsters were easily knocked down with Severe Blow. He deliberately knocked them out of the sacrosanct area so that the desert warriors could take care of them.

“Those who go against the will of Embinyu, you will die and this earth will be destroyed!”

If Motuls was an ordinary priest then the outcome would be decided with one punch. Even Igrig couldn't survive a series of continuous attacks. But Motuls was a monk, not a typical priest! He used fists to strike the enemy while chanting spells at the same time.

“Blood Fist of Atonement!”

He swung his fist at Weed. Weed moved to the right side to avoid it.

‘This is a little risky.’

The Blood Fist that he avoided rather than blocked headed in a straight line towards the Atrocity Knights behind him.

“Kyaah!”

The Blood Fist hit the Atrocity Knights in the surrounding area and 4 of them were killed. This was the sacrosanct territory so Weed couldn’t afford being damaged.

The nature of a monk meant that Motuls had better health and vitality than Igrig. To make matters worse, he had protection magic and high magic resistance. It enabled him to fight Hestiger and Zahab.

Additionally, the Atrocity Knights had huge stats as well!

“Weight of Repentance!”

Motuls used a skill to add a heavy weight to all friends and enemies within range.

-You have received a curse.

Movement speed has slowed by 24%.

Pain has been received.

There is a chance of damage every 10 seconds.

Curses of hatred will cause additional damage.

The divine magic that didn't care about who it affected.

“Don't worry about the curse and fight! The colleagues outside will help!”

“I understand.”

Weed could endure a little longer but Hestiger and Zahab had less than 15% health left. The monsters and knights near Motuls interfered by defending him. Dealing with their attacks in a limited space was quite tough.

“We will take care of it.”

The sculptural lifeforms plunged in. Zahab and Hestiger were the subject of intensive treatment from the priests.

“High Priest-nim is in danger.”

“No! If High Priest-nim dies then we will stay in the pits of hell forever.”

Warrior-1 and the widespread desert army completely blocked any reinforcements! The bronze giants occasionally threw rocks but all access from the land was blocked.

Weed focused on the Knights of Atrocities in the sacrosanct territory. His kick wiped out the enemy's defense and then he would strike with the Extermination Sword.

-Health is decreasing.

Current health remaining is 17.8%.

You have been caught by 7 curses.

“There is no need to kill all of them.”

Those Weed threw out of the sacrosanct territory were left to the sculptural lifeforms. Aside from the priests, Motuls was also protected by 20 Atrocity Knights.

“Complete Recovery!”

A pillar of light rose up from Motuls' body. The high priest offered up some of his mana to recover his health. The injured knights escorting him were also healed.

“No way. A scam!”

Weed thought it was ridiculous. Motuls could use the mana stolen by sacrosanct territory to heal himself. The close combat power of the high priest also couldn't be ignored. The sculptural lifeforms also had their defense and attack power weakened due to curses.

“There can't be more than 30 troops protecting him. Warrior-1 can thoroughly block them.”

Then Motuls used another spell.

“Guardian's Vow!”

Light pillars shot up once again in the sacrosanct territory and 4 bronze giants appeared! More than 100 Atrocity Knights were summoned.

“It is starting from the beginning again.”

Weed jumped back into battle when his health reached 67%. He once again blew through the barrier made from knights! The amount of resistance wasn't unexpected.

They were damaged by the desert warriors but the Embinyu Army's defense formation was strong and stable. Weed was only

aiming at Motuls.

“The will of Embinyu won’t be broken.”

“They are naive. You can’t believe anything in this world.”

“Take my hand. I will lead you to the correct path of faith. You will receive great strength and power.”

“Money is the best thing in life!”

He also got into an argument with Motuls as the battle resumed! Zahab, Hestiger, Van Hawk and Torido joined him. They would be switched with sculptural lifeforms once their health was low.

Weed and Motuls both had their health fall. The knights were assaulted by arrows from the desert army and their number decreased by a third.

“Kuhuhu, this pain and suffering. If you believe in Embinyu then he will solve all your worries with his infinite power.”

Motuls’ fist was quite intimidating. Aside from the damage, there were also the bizarre curses. Motuls’ attacks hit a wide area so Weed avoided it and wielded the Extermination Sword. Both sides engaged in a fierce battle but Motuls had 50% health left while Weed only had 16%.

Weed would be the first to die. He noticed that Motuls focused on divine magic while attacking. He didn't care as long as Weed was killed.

“Kill him. It is Embinyu's will.”

“Yes!”

The Atrocity Knights also focused their attacks on Weed.

“I don't care as long as he dies!”

A fight where the person who died first would be the loser! Weed pushed through 10 large Atrocity Knights in order to damage Motuls' body. It was a crisis as his health fell sharply.

He had 3.4% health remaining. All the effort he made would disappear in vain.

Motuls who was vigorously attacking still had 35% health left.

The Knights of Atrocities' attacks were focused on blocking Weed from running out of the sacrosanct area.

At that moment, Weed gave a large shout.

“Recovery of Joy!”

-The barbarian's unique ability, Recovery of Joy has been used.

Bardger, the God of Bravery will return a barbarian's body to its normal state.

It is a shame for a barbarian to lose against a strong enemy.

A barbarian's pride won't allow the enemy to win.

You have to take down the enemy!

-Health has been completely restored.

Curses hanging over your body have been completely removed.

Resistance to curses and magic will rise by 370%.

Weed's body returned to a normal state. And his movements suddenly accelerated as the curses were eliminated.

‘Just one chance!’

He moved past the Atrocity Knights and wielded his sword towards Motuls.

“Kueok!”

Motuls was cut up with the Extermination Sword. Despite that, the injuries were smaller due to the protection magic.

Weed didn't care. He was much stronger in a one-on-one battle. During the Nodulle's Growth quest, he had evenly balanced his offensive and defensive growth. His level was high but he also mastered many skills associated with combat.

It was like a tiger regaining its spirit!

“You dare disobey Embinyu!”

“What can Embinyu give me? Well, it might be blamed on the fact that I'm too handsome!”

Weed continuously moved the Extermination Sword. He tirelessly swung his sword at Motuls. He also used Power of Birth and Black Knight's Strike to hit the forces.

The Knights of Atrocities screamed and tried to protect Motuls but they were just ignored! Motuls was forcibly pushed back while the continuous attacks disabled his divine magic.

“Is this world working correctly? If you believe in Embinyu then you shall realize the true light.”

“I never trusted this world in the first place.”

“Embinyu’s wrath is terrible.....”

“I only fear the landlord!”

Weed had a strong faith that Motuls couldn’t shake. He learned that money was the first priority in modern society! Motuls’ health was drastically reduced to 10%.

“Complete Reco....”

“I’ve been waiting for this. Go!”

-You have dealt a critical blow.

68% damage has been added.

-You have dealt a critical blow.

149% damage has been added.

-You have dealt a critical blow.

261% damage has been added.

-You have dealt a critical blow.

442% damage has been added.

A continuous one power attack that caused critical hits! Weed used his keen combat senses to find weaknesses in Motuls. Weed’s countless combat experiences meant Motuls’ health would keep on

decreasing once he was caught.

The battles he fought became easier and more comfortable due to his sharp eyes and intuition. His milk deliveries and newspaper deliveries meant he could look at the door or walls of a house and determine if they wanted strawberry or chocolate milk.

‘Then lastly....’

Motuls had attempt to use his divine magic for recovery. Weed struck his chest 3 consecutive times.

-Texture Sword was successful.

You have dealt a critical blow.

The opponent’s defense has been neutralized and 284% damage has been added.

-Texture Sword was successful.

You have dealt a critical blow.

The opponent’s defense has been neutralized and 516% damage has been added.

-Texture Sword was successful.

You have dealt a critical blow.

The opponent's defense has been neutralized and 837% damage has been added.

An exponentially growing attack! The damage from a barbarian wielding the Extermination Sword was incredibly huge.

Motuls' sacrosanct territory didn't last much longer. Motuls' body shattered like glass and a dark energy started to flow.

"You...your days are numbered. E...mbinyu...always...."

-Motuls, the high priest of sacrifices and bribes has entered his eternal rest.

Due to his sins, his soul won't be able to rest but he will feel free for the first time since being captured by the evil god.

-The monsters and fanatics of the 4th sect of the Embinyu Church are in turmoil.

-Fame has increased by 42,138 due to the great achievement.

-As a special reward for the fight, the Faith stat has increased by 130.

-The dark energy covering the Embinyu Army is gone.

-Advent of the Conqueror has been completed.

A young conqueror that set off from the southern desert has rattled the world.

Disobedient nobles will kneel down with every step he takes as he expands his territory.

His soldiers are brave and full of loyalty.

His desert territory has widened and the residents recognize him as a Great Emperor.

The deeply disturbing shadows cast by the servants of Embinyu have disappeared. The greedy kings have repeatedly caused wars and drew this world into a feast of blood.

One of the greatest conquerors is looking down on them from a high place!

- Fame has increased by 51,282.

- A large footprint has been left in history.

- Bonus time compensation has been given for this quest.

The time bonus will be given to the final secret sculpting technique once you return to your original world.

- Due to the miracles achieved in this adventure, all stats will gain 15 points.

The acquired stats will be retained even after you return to your original world.

- Please set the name of your Empire.

The empire will exist in the history of the continent and will disappear after like a fixed trace behind.

“Hrmm, the name of my empire.”

Weed often thought of names. He was experienced with naming his sculptures but never thought about ones for an empire.

“Anyway, it doesn’t matter because my relationship with the empire will vanish after a while.”

Lots of money wouldn’t be coming from it so he gave it a simple name.

“Pallos Empire.”

-Pallos Empire is correct?

“That’s right.”

The name Pallos. It was the name of a candy in his distant memories. He wanted to eat the candy but it was too expensive so he couldn’t. Sometimes he would take some when he saw little children eating it. The name suited an empire founded on looting and destruction.

-The name Pallos Empire has been decided.

-Please select the governance system.

A monarchy ruled by an emperor, a feudal system, a republic or a senate ruled by chief nobles.

Please note.

If you choose a monarchy then you need to immediately establish a heir that you can hand over all your power to. A smart emperor would lay the foundation of the empire for a long time. Of course, the opposite could be true if the emperor selects an incompetent heir.

If you choose a republic then the citizens of Pallos Empire will select the emperor themselves. Each emperor's power will be constrained and they will be replaced at regular intervals. Trade will grow quickly and there will be less resistance from the occupied territories.

If you select a feudal governing system then each region will be ruled by a lord. It is a good system to govern distant areas in a vast empire but the lord will have more power than the emperor in that area. There will be no rebellion or tax evasion.

A senate will consist of those with the most fame and strength in the Pallos Empire. They will rule on serious matters in meetings.

“Hmmm.”

His mind wanted to just select a monarchy.

Absolute monarchy! An emperor that rules over the entire territory and could exploit the residents was a perfect fit for Weed. God might say killing was rule but the emperor of an empire had all the power!

“But I don’t have anyone to hand the empire over to.”

A republic was more difficult. Weed’s desert army had the absolute force and authority on the Versailles Continent. However, a republic meant a NPC would be selected. Then it was likely that Hestiger would be selected as the Emperor of the Pallos Empire.

A feudal system was even more ridiculous. He couldn’t give full control of different regions over to other people.

“I will decide on a senate.”

The political system chosen wasn’t perfect but the people selected wouldn’t be a problem. The Pallos Empire would leave a deep impact on the history of the Versailles Continent but Weed just made his decisions roughly.

-The governance system of the Pallos Empire has been decided as a group senate.

Chapter 9: Pallos's Power

Changes occurred to the Versailles Continent.

There were changes due to Weed's success in the past. The ice covering the north where the undead army lived disappeared and cities were discovered. New ordinances sprang up, great architecture and cities were built that would leave a great impact on the Northern Continent.

A myriad of users living on the Versailles Continent encountered the changes that Weed caused. Once again, the Versailles Continent would also change if the Embinyu Church was victorious.

Arud River in the Rosenheim Kingdom.

The place where the Sphinx and Pyramid used to be was just a pile of stones after being destroyed by the Embinyu Church. Users were crouching down and hiding in this wasteland.

“Shhh! Quiet.”

“We have to remain unnoticed until the end. Let's go slowly.”

They were users that lived in a land dominated by the Embinyu Church. They couldn't bear leaving their hometowns in Rosenheim Kingdom. Hunting was difficult and it was impossible to live a normal life.

Users would immediately lose their lives if they encountered the inquisitors and religious fanatics. Users hid in the forests during the day and only moved at night.

The charred and blackened wastelands suddenly had flowers bloom. The entire land was recovering. The power of the Embinyu Church disappeared and the land was changing back to its past fertile state.

Grains that millions of people could eat were grown and flowers bloomed along the Arud River.

“What is this?”

The users marvelled at the strange sight and sent whispers to each other.

-Really?

-Yes. I don't know what is going on all of a sudden.

-You don't know? Today Weed is fighting the Embinyu Church.

-Then it is because of that?

-I haven't seen that part on the broadcast yet. But this likely means that his adventure is successful. A real jackpot!

The pyramid was also slowly restored.

Due to the changes in the past, the deep wounds that the Embinyu Church left on the Rosenheim Kingdom, had disappeared.

Serabourg Castle returned to its original state and the massacred royal family were revived. Villages were also restored.

The changes were just confined to the eastern part of the Versailles Continent.

The Central Continent!

It was the land with the largest number of users and residents. The conflict with the prestigious guilds ended with the Haven Empire's victory.

As their territory widened, there was an increasing number of destruction and rebellion due to the Embinyu Church. The fanatics lived in the cities while several villages were changed into the monster production bases. The kingdoms of the Central Continent were taken over by the Haven Empire but were also prone to self-destruction from the Embinyu Church.

The Haven Empire was tense due to the Embinyu Church and were prepared for a war.

The Central Continent upset by war started recovering! The devastated cities and land were restored. The residents that followed the Embinyu Church or were killed by them once again appeared.

“I hope there is a good harvest this year.”

“Yes. I will make a donation to the Church of Lugh.”

Cities were prepared and residents lived again. Technology developed, culture flourished and the economy blossomed.

Weed's actions in the warring period had caused damage to the prosperity and development of the continent.

The Central Continent was very spacious.

The Versailles Continent was divided into the north, south, east, west and centre but the central area had a larger territory and population than the others.

The barren south beyond the Desert of Tranquillity, the frozen land of the north and beyond, the sea and islands of the east but the Central Continent had a larger population than those areas combined.

The fairies of the forest, the forest of elves, the dragon's territory and ruins of the giants. There was a wide variety of terrain for adventures and hunting. The land dyed by the Embinyu Church's

corruption returned to normal.

The users initially had no idea of these changes.

They were gathered in the taverns to watch Weed's adventure. But they started receiving whispers from other users.

-I've been on a quest to find materials at Inep Castle.

-Then?

-The Embinyu Church here was wiped out and Inep Castle returned to its original state from 3 months ago.

-Really?

Once the change was known, the users started seeing other changes.

"Please help me!"

"If you don't follow Embinyu then you will suffer a painful death!"

The novice users were captured by the inquisitors! They closed their eyes tightly as they waited for the inquisitor to deal a fatal blow. The brainwashed knights were nearby so they didn't even

dare dream of escaping from the Embinyu Church!

But the bodies of the inquisitors suddenly turned into a grey light and disappeared like they had died.

“Why are you speaking like that?”

“Huh?”

The knights that had been brainwashed had their faces distorted from the evil. But now the knights had returned to their original appearance.

“The ground is cold so I don’t know why you are lying down there. Get up.”

The knights gave the novice users a warm hand. The number of Embinyu Church members in the Central Continent dropped sharply. Once this fact was known along with Weed’s success, the users on the Central Continent were filled with frenzied joy.

-Weed is like a real dog. The house that I owned was blown away because of him. The residents also disappeared. The damage that I suffered...sob sob.

-My shop! The city is a mess due to the demon Weed. The residents disappeared so the economy and technological development decreased. The only good thing is that it reduced the number of thieves. A hairy crab. Does he need to do this?

The users of the Central Continent criticized Weed on the bulletin boards! His activities in the warring period had affected numerous cities and users.

There was always a risk of invasion or damage in Royal Road so the users had no choice but to accept it. The conflicts between the prestigious guilds caused numerous wars and deaths. The secondary damage was limited hunting grounds and less business.

The users in the Haven Kingdom, Kallamore Kingdom and Britten Alliance Kingdom were used to adapting to a changed world. They could understand war but found damage caused by an individual's adventure unfair.

While the Hermes Guild was originally negative towards Weed, the users of the Central Continent thought of him as an idol. The users that lost their livelihood or stores posted angry criticisms of Weed.

-That Weed bastard, that dirty and lethal....when I think of the damage....

-Once again, I don't like Weed. He is someone who made me go swimming in the middle of winter. I spent the entire time in Royal Road hating him.

-I will kill Weed when he comes back. Looking for people to kill Weed!

Then the changes on the Central Continent became known to the users. The cities that fell had their population reduced by more than half.

The influence of the Embinyu Church was reduced as commercial cities were restored to its former glory as stable and safe tourist cities. The cities returned to their prosperous state from the early days of Royal Road and the development of swords and magic advanced. There was a flow of inhabitants over the entire continent as 100 new cities sprang up.

And all the users in Royal Road had a message window flash in front of them.

Ddirring!

-The Pallos Empire that ended the warring period!

Historians defined the warring period as a time where trickery, betrayal, war, slander and violence dominated.

The greedy kings and nobles meant there was never a shortage of battles in that period!

Innocent residents died on the battlefield and those who resisted the excessive taxes were killed.

Instead of acting honourably and loyally, the knights weren't ashamed of their cruelty and violence.

However, there weren't many who knew that the Embinyu Church was deeply embedded in the warring period.

A conqueror raised in the cast and barren land of the south destroyed the dark clouds on the continent and formed a new empire.

The Pallos Empire!

A country built on the scimitars of the camel warriors. The desert culture and traditions formed a powerful empire in the warring period.

The might armed forces dominated the continent for 80 years while maintaining order in the world.

Despite the dispute between the desert tribes, they were able to occupy the territories for a long 80 years with their simple and effective preferential treatment of the strong.

The excellent desert warriors acted as the kingdom knights. They established commercial roads that connected the continent, suppressed the monsters and firmly managed the safety of the area.

If the senate hadn't fallen apart due to infighting then the Pallos

Empire would've reigned for even longer.

The power of the Pallos Empire.

0 years: The Mapon and Beiner Kingdoms unconditionally surrendered.

The dark clouds on the continent, the Embinyu Church was crushed.

All kingdoms felt respect and fear towards the Pallos Empire.

Weed stepped away from the seat of the Emperor and delegated the rule to the senate.

2 years: A rebellion occurred in the occupied territories. Six cities belonging to the Noah and Ruprea Principalities were involved.

The desert warriors overflowing in the Pallos Empire lightly took care of them.

The brutal destruction contained any further rebellions.

3 years: Monsters increased due to the deteriorating security in the warring period.

The Pallos Empire annihilated any enemies that tried to invade

their borders.

The kingdoms felt fear and paid tributes.

The golden period of the Empire began.

5 years: Famine caused by severe drought.

The Pallos Empire didn't suffer because they were overflowing with food and riches.

6 years: The great desert warrior Mobis was born.

He was the second Sun Warrior that the desert respected after Weed.

9 years: The senate declared they would expand the territory.

The Pallos Empire destroyed the Mapon Kingdom.

Due to the severe destruction during the war, diplomatic relations with other kingdoms worsened.

15 years: The desert areas experienced a surge in the birth rate.

The advanced agricultural technology of the continent increased food production.

Laos was selected as one of the top 10 cities on the continent.

The residents lived in luxury and abundance.

Tobacco became a local specialty of the desert and its popularity spread across the continent.

21 years: A large scale civil war occurred between the Brukan Tribe and the Kusilli Tribe.

43 desert tribes formed an alliance.

There were countless corpses before a cease-fire occurred.

34 years: The generation of desert warriors changed.

The desert warriors who followed Weed returned to the soil.

52 years: The invasion of the warlocks.

The Pallos Empire engaged in a 3-year war.

Mobis captured the warlocks and executed them.

However, the oasis in the desert were poisoned and many died.

It was too late to detox the oasis and 6 cities were closed.

66 years: A conflict occurred inside the senate.

The war between the Brukan and Kusilli Tribes continued.

The civil war was aggravated as most of the desert tribes participated.

69 years: The storehouses of the Pallos Empire were emptied.

Due to the preferential policies involving production and commerce of the desert warriors caused the craftsmanship to fall behind other kingdoms.

The trade imbalance with the other kingdoms worsened.

71 years: The senate had a dramatic reconciliation.

They decided to invade other kingdoms to restore their depleted gold.

72 years: A backlash occurred in the occupied territories.

The desert warriors were involved but the fortresses had high magic resistance.

The Dagan Kingdom was reconstructed.

74 years: The great desert warrior Mobis retired.

77 years: The number of kingdoms resisting the Pallos Empire increased to 6.

The Keltun Expedition failed.

81 years: Revolts occurred in most of the occupied territories.

The desert warriors were outstanding but couldn't win against the armed soldiers.

The Pallos Empire decided to abandon the occupied territories and withdrew to the desert.

83 years: The desert tribes started fracturing.

The Pallos Empire was officially dissolved.

* New history books about the Pallos Empire has appeared. Related adventures have been created.

* The Southern Continent will continue to develop economically and technically.

* The culture of the desert is introduced to cities in the Central Continent.

* More warriors are likely to be born in the desert area.

The children of the desert areas dream of becoming outstanding warriors.

When looking at the history books, the Pallos Empire didn't leave a large footprint behind. But the warring period had ended ahead of schedule.

Therefore, the world was more prosperous and stable. This was an achievement that the great Weed of the desert achieved. His heroic path in the past changed the current continent.

Users rushed to delete their posts on the bulletin boards that blamed him. Whether they liked it or not, they also lived in the Haven Empire. Numerous cities that weren't originally there sprang up although some were less civilized. In some cases, the destroyed cities came back even larger.

-Weed the God of War!

-Kyah, Weed really is out there.

-Thank you. Let's live well in the future.

-My one-bedroom house that I used all my money on...it now turned into a manor. I don't know how to repay this grace....



“It is ridiculous that he really succeeded.”

Lafaye had considered hundreds of possibilities for what might happen. It was most likely that Weed would fail the adventure involving the Embinyu Church. It wouldn't be bad even if he failed the adventure.

-The army of fanatics in Frompen has been destroyed.

-The Embinyu worshippers in Rangken Castle have returned to normal people.

The Embinyu Church that they were prepared to fight just faded away. Lafaye had watched the television broadcast of Weed's quest and was amazed at the astonishing scene as Weed's fortitude and effort led to his victory.

“It is outrageous. Outrageous.”

Weed had succeeded in a hard adventure but there were consequences. The Embinyu forces that had been threatening the Haven Empire had been reduced early on. As long as big variables

didn't occur in the future, the Embinyu Church wouldn't be able to cause any more damage.

“Really stupid.”

Lafaye gave a big large.

People should make an effort. It was the reason why a person lived and ate well.

Weed once again became a celebrity due to the success of the quest but the Haven Empire was the one who reaped the sweet fruit.

“It is like making gruel for a dog only to have something else eat it first.”

Users whose name was famous in the Haven Empire were gathered. The famous knights and users of the cities! They gained achievements in the Hermes Guild and were given high positions in the occupied territories. The so-called elites of the Hermes Guild were prepared for battle.

“We will now go to the north.”

There was a brightness at the end of Lafaye's thoughts. The Embinyu Church or conquering the north. He thought it would be one of those two options.

He thought it was better to attack than to defend the territory and cities of the Haven Empire. He skipped the hassle of a civil war with the Embinyu Church and could concentrate on conquering the Versailles Continent.

The Hermes Guild had thought about unifying the Versailles Continent since the moment they started and there were only a few steps left. If the north was properly occupied then it wouldn't be difficult to secure the east and west. They might even surrender before the army arrived.

“12 corps will be sent to the north.”

Lafaye and his staff meticulously created a plan for the northern conquest.

In the past, they faced the bitter taste of failure when trying to invade the north but they had obtained considerable data from it. There was considerable resistance from the users and their supply chain had been disrupted. The conclusion was that they shouldn't try again with insufficient troops.

Each corps was made out of 300,000 troops so 12 corps was a tremendous force of 3.6 million! The Haven Empire consisted of 20 corps so it was more than half of their troops.

Only the Haven Empire could afford to train so many troops. It consisted of 350,000 Hermes Guild users that dominated the Central Continent and the rest were NPC soldiers. The Hermes

Guild users had a variety of professions and were familiar with all types of combat. Each corps was made up of knights that raised the power of the soldiers.

When considering that they normally mobilized two or three corps to conquer a kingdom, Lafaye had gathered a very large force to invade the north. The 12 corps consisting of knights of the Haven Empire could be called an invincible army.

“Is this much required?”

“The Arpen Kingdom should only have 100,000 troops.”

Those words came from a corps commander, Bolmensori. He thought the number gathered to conquer the north was too excessive.

“We need to deal with the users of the Arpen Kingdom.”

“Even so, they are just a mixed bag of rubbish....”

In the past, Rensullot had only let 70,000 troops to the north. They didn't return to the Central Continent unharmed but hundreds of thousands of users were killed in the north.

The Northern Continent couldn't compete with the power of the Central Continent. Especially if they needed to fight the elite troops of the Haven Empire led by Bardray.

“It can’t hurt to be ready to fight for the unification of the continent. The north is our goal. Finish the necessary arrangements and be prepared to march in three days.”

The star players of the Haven Empire that would participate in the conquest of the continent were gathered in front of the Imperial Palace.

The Hermes Guild all had the same thought about the war. They never supported the war. The size and quality of the troops was completely different compared to the north.

Bardray was directly leading the army and Weed wasn’t there to be their opponent.

‘We will always win the fight.’

‘It is good belonging to the Hermes Guild.’

The Hermes Guild users would always win the fight. Through discipline and obedience, the hierarchy of power efficiently maximized their victory.

They personally liked Weed’s adventures but understood how to divide those aspects of their lives.

Despite the great achievements Weed made in Royal Road, the

Hermes Guild was obsessed with destroying the Arpen Kingdom.



Yoo Byung-jin drank hot chocolate as he watched the exciting adventure.

“In the end he managed a victory.”

He thought it would end after the meteors were summoned but Weed persistently survived like a cockroach.

Weed’s biggest asset was his ability to survive in any environment! And his ability to govern his subordinates.

Deep wisdom and insight, trust in people, strategies and tactics. Of course, it was difficult to find any sense of responsibility.

Sometimes he was stingy but other times he showed a brave and bold imagination and he wasn’t discouraged by hardships. The quest or battles might turn out unfavourable but he never hesitated.

In other words, he was no different from a human cockroach.

“It is really hard to kill him.”

The viewers saw somewhat edited videos. Magnificent music would play or a scene would be nicely framed! Even if it was a live broadcast, there would be a time lag as it was sent from the capsule and the stations would be ready to insert advertisements.

In contrast, Yoo Byung-jin watched Weed's raw videos and saw his struggle to live. The recorded history of heroes wouldn't mention all of their struggles.

Life might be hard but people needed to clench their teeth and overcome it.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“The Haven Empire moved as we expected.”

“Those guys are really quick.”

A meeting of the Grass Porridge Cult! The representative of each unit, village and cities were present.

The Haven Empire contained the top ranked players of the Hermes Guild but the Grass Porridge Cult had a wide range of people of all shapes and sizes.

When looking at it from the view of the Central Continent, the level 100 users that attended the meeting would be considered beginners.

The Toadstool Porridge unit was willing to welcome a glorious death.

The users that started in the Arpen Kingdom had the opportunity to grow up with the place. But quite a few lords and guilds had migrated from the Central Continent to the north.

After the founding of the Arpen Kingdom, the nobles and lords had grown on a large scale. Culture expanded in most of the areas due to the will of the residents and many users who participated in the direct growth of the kingdom were promoted to lords.

The users would participate in village development activities, public donations, bribes and completion of certain quests. High level users who recently came from the Central Continent were greedy for a higher position.

‘We will build a new home for our guild in the north. There will be many opportunities for the development. Mountains where mines are likely to exist and wide fields where grains can be grown.’

‘I’m not interested in war so I will become a lord through achievements. And once I become a lord, I will invade other lands.’

‘Well, that is cool. Can’t I earn money if I become the lord of a city?’

There were many myths about the north and it didn't have any civil wars. The Arpen Kingdom was self-regulated but the general users didn't allow this.

A lord who waged war over land would have the lowest popularity! Even novice users would avoid their village. There were numerous development opportunities so there was no benefit to cause a war.

Moreover, the users in the north was extremely complex and diverse. Level 300 users rapidly grew in the north while level 400 users could be found around Morata and other areas. The Haven Empire had swept through the Central Continent so many users came over.

The high level users could lose a lot of levels and fame in the war. For that reason, the lords of the Arpen Kingdom developed cities, towns or villages according to their preference.

The rapid development of the Arpen Kingdom was due to the effort of the regular users as well as the lords. It was a miracle how ruins around Morata could change into a village in just one week or a month.

“How many people has the Haven Empire mobilized for the invasion?”

“There are at least 11 corps moving.”

“Hrmm, that is a lot.”

Lafaye and the members of the Hermes Guild went through a lot of effort to gather intelligence. But there was no need for the Grass Porridge Cult to do that.

It was easy for regular users to see the movement of the army. The Grass Porridge Cult members had already reported the activities of the Haven Empire.

Apart from their bad relationship with Weed, the Haven Empire was trying to conquer the continent. The north knew that they would someday invade and were prepared.

“It isn’t easy to deal with them, even if they are only moving half of their troops. Those troops could be called the flagship of the Haven Empire so we need to gather as much people as possible to fight.”

The users that crossed from the Central Continent talked about the defeats they experienced. The Haven Empire would generally win by mobilizing more troops and equipment.

Lafaye’s general tactic was to overwhelm the opponents with the scale of the army as the battle progressed.

The betrayal of the Allied Forces was also ridiculous. They said they would do their best before the fight but someone became helpless after being fooled by excellent tactics.

The Hermes Guild didn't just have strong users. The leaders also knew how to display their abilities to the best potential.

“They systematically analyse the whole picture. In the end, we were forced to admit defeat as they weren't an opponent we could face in the first place.”

A user from the Haven Kingdom said.

He had once been a fairly active and recognized member of a prestigious guild in the Haven Kingdom. But after it was occupied by the Hermes Guild, he couldn't endure it and moved to the north.

The users of the Haven Kingdom revealed all types of dirty tricks and sneak behaviour that was used.

“They are really dirty and lousy bastards.”

“I couldn't live my life!”

They gossiped about the Hermes Guild for a while before the meeting progressed again. They already came to the conclusion that they needed to fight for the north.

“What if we intercept them on Rupoi Plains like before?”

“Those guys will also be thoroughly prepared. It won’t turn out the same way again.”

“In my experience, they will chose various paths to reach us.”

“Thousands died just against 70,000 troops. But this time, millions of people are coming. The strongest users of the Hermes Guild will be heading here.”

“How many people can we gather to face the Haven Empire?”

“Even if we give a total mobilization order, not all of them can gather.... In fact, I don’t even know how many people belong to the Grass Porridge Cult.”

“A decisive battle on the plains will only benefit the enemy.”

The meeting continued to heat up! As it continued, only the strength of the Hermes Guild was displayed. They were exceptional in battle so that only Weed could defeat them.

However, Weed was currently on a quest in a different time zone and it didn’t seem like it would conclude in a short amount of time.

“Let’s see how many users we can gather.”

“We should at least stop the Arpen Kingdom from being decimated before Weed-nim returns.”

The next morning, posters were placed at every gate in the north stating that the Haven Empire was going to invade.

Chapter 10: Invasion Of The Haven Empire

“The war....”

“Huhu, the day has come.”

“Those guys won’t stop until they unify the continent?”

The Bandit King Steiner that ruled the mountain regions of the Haven Empire!

The shadow of death Seasoned Crab!

Thief Jackson!

They heard that news that the Haven Empire was moving. The influence of the Haven Empire meant that every small action would quickly spread among the users. Especially something like a colossal movement to conquer the north.

“This is the best chance for bandits.”

Steiner grinned as he carried a large axe.

It was quite fun to be a bandit hiding in the mountains. The

bandits in weak countries weren't that dangerous.

But the quality of the Haven Empire meant the bandits were fairly large. Treasure, magic items and gold could be obtained from the lords of the commercial cities. Furthermore, it was also good for obtaining human personnel.

Competent knights wandered around after the Haven Empire took over other kingdoms. It was easier to recruit them as subordinates. The bandits actively recruited wandering knights with ideals like justice, recognition or a combative spirit.

Regular citizens also followed the bandits. The residents that lost their kingdoms, were subjected to extreme conditions or needed to feed their families were willing to go through tough training to become stronger.

The best and brightest quickly adapted to the mountains. They obtained the delicious taste of raising their power.

The reason Steiner settled in the Haven Empire was because it was more risky and he had great ambitions. One day he would go down from the mountains and plunder the cities.

The rangers and soldiers of the Haven Empire couldn't catch them so they dominated the mountains and forests.

It was empty words but he was crowned King of the Bandits!

“There are so many to kill.”

Seasoned Crab wandered around the Haven Empire and assassinated users and knights. A large number of people lost their lives but it was easily blamed on the Embinyu Church.

The most outstanding assassins in the Hermes Guild couldn't see his trail and he waited for a perfect chance to kill them. Sometimes there were opinions that an assassin was behind it but then he would wander around areas domination by inquisitors and dark knights of the Embinyu Church.

Seasoned Crab was distressed at the thought of the Haven Empire conquering the north.

“Should I continue to kill in the Haven Empire? The gathered lords shouldn't be too difficult.”

There were many NPCs among the lords. The lords collected taxes in order to raise soldiers of the Haven Empire. The tax rate and ruling policy depended on the lords. It was simple for Seasoned Crab to penetrate through a small hole in the castle to kill the lord.

“Killing those without any resistance is no fun. I guess I have to go to the north. The really challenging opponents will be those heading to the north with the army.”

Seasoned Crab decided to hunt the users of the Hermes Guild

heading to the north.

Jackson didn't have multiple goals. He drank cheap beer in a tavern at Aren Castle, the capital of the Haven Empire and waited.

“The world has helped me. Soon it will be time for me to take action.”

He didn't want his name known in battle or to complete a grand adventure. He only sought one thing.

The seal representing the emperor of the Haven Empire! Bardray and the Royal Guards were heading to the north so the security around the Imperial Palace would be more lax.

Jackson's purpose was to secretly enter the Imperial Palace for the seal.

“I will steal it properly. Kilkilkil.”



Weed wasn't happy even after completing the quest.

“It is like giving gruel to a dog!”

The Pallos Empire didn't leave a large footprint in the history

books. If he was a monk living detached from the world then money wouldn't matter.

But his actions ended the warring period early so this assisted in the development of the Central Continent later on!

“I should boil the dog and make soup from it.”

He had been a great help to the Hermes Guild. But they weren't grateful and decided to go conquer the north.

Weed thought the situation was unfair.

“But I can't stop the quest to go back and defend the Arpen Kingdom.”

If Weed returned to the original time zone then Bardray would just kill him.

In the past, it had been a close fight but they were disturbed by uncontrollable factors. The stats difference from hunting and questing had just become larger since the Melbourne Mine. If he met Bardray then he would need to attack with 3~4 other high level users.

He couldn't catch a strong enemy like Bardray in a one on one fight so it was better to meet him with dozens of high level users.

Ordinary users thought of Weed as an invincible God of War. He was really powerful in the current time but that would all fly away when he returned to his original era.

Not long ago, he had been making and selling sculptures in cities in order to earn money.

“I have a really bad luck on this earth. The difficulty of this quest is enough to threaten the peace of the continent and I have to be afraid of users that are my enemies.”

He was constantly having to work hard!

Nevertheless, even Weed enjoyed occasional moments of happiness. Buying a 5,000 won t-shirt and not having the neck increase after being washed or the joy of washing dishes with a new scrubber. Putting on new socks or enjoying a clean bathroom were some moments of happiness in his life. He was also in a good mood when eating jajangmyeon with radish.

Life would've been difficult to bear without such minor joys.

“Well, I have no choice but to continue the final secret sculpting quest until the end.”

He couldn't afford to worry about the Arpen Kingdom. There wasn't any large power great enough to prevent the Haven Empire's invasion.

“And speaking of which, I should’ve failed the quest.”

He felt a belated regret. His success in the quest gave the Hermes Guild a golden opportunity to unify the continent.

“Anyway, Van Hawk.”

“Go ahead, Master.”

“You did good. A trustworthy and loyal subordinate.”

“.....”

“You helped win this battle. Thank you.”

Van Hawk’s ribs trembled. Normally Weed would think up some fault in order to hit them. But contrary to Van Hawk’s fear, Weed didn’t have any intention of doing that. He determined that it would be good if Van Hawk returned to the original time period.

‘Yes, the Arpen Kingdom still has a chance if I finish this quest quickly and return.’

A plan to protect as much of the kingdom as possible!

“Zahab-nim.”

“Hrmm?”

“Thanks for your help.”

“No. Of course I need to crush the Embinyu Church.”

Zahab, his lifelong slave was being worked well before he died of old age.

‘This world involves personal connections. I will make them work once I catch their weakness.’

He killed the high priests so the Embinyu Army was significantly weakened. The aura around the fanatics faded until they were ordinary humans and the bodies of the monsters fell apart. The Barates flying in the sky crashed into the ground.

It wasn't difficult for the desert warriors and combat slaves to annihilate them.

“Waaaah, we won!”

“Hooray the Beiner Kingdom!”

Great cheers could be heard from Dulmore Fortress as the incoming monsters were crushed.

The rain cleared up and a bright light appeared on Dulmore Plains. The corpses of the Embinyu Church vanished as they were purified by the light. Only the smashed earth from the meteor disaster showed how intense the battle was.

A pillar of light fell from the sky and an old man with a long white beard showed up. He gave a long sigh as he gazed at the battlefield before turning towards Weed.

“Emperor who built an empire on blood and corpses, congratulations in winning he hard battle.”

“Are you Saint Ahellun?”

“People who know me have called me that name.”

Weed had guessed that the old man was Saint Ahellun from the moment he appeared.

His body was exuding a white aura that brimmed with divine power. Van Hawk, Torido and the undead were also uncomfortable as they avoided him. But humans touched by the divine aura had their wounds healed and health increased.

‘He should’ve come and helped a little sooner.’

Weed had that thought about Ahellun.

“Emperor, my mind thinks that you are far too cruel.”

“This era made me like this.”

“In this age, swords speak louder than words and you only know how to kill.”

“If you hesitate to kill the weak than thousands of others will suffer.”

“You have committed excessive killing and destruction. Innocent souls will drift to their gods.”

“The gods have blessed me.”

A fierce quarrel broke out between Ahellun and Weed.

In this warring period, Weed’s actions were recognized as severe.

King of Barbarians, cruel slaughterer and a tyrant. It was natural for the strong to trample on the weak in this era.

Other rulers would naturally act to stop his behaviour. In addition, those that secretly followed the Embinyu Church had no choice. He killed the secret followers of the Embinyu Church one by one.

Weed wasn't under the illusion that he was nice. He wasn't reckless enough to hold a knife to someone and attempt to persuade them with words. It wouldn't be good for his mental health.

Furthermore, this was the precursor to the prosperous continent in the future. He felt like it was unfair to be criticized by someone for the result.

“I am saving the world from the shadow of the Embinyu Church. I didn't want the weak to be swayed by them so I needed to kill them all.”

“We should protect the weak.”

“But those good humans would be dropped into misery and pain. No matter how pure hearted they are, tragedy won't stop occurring. I'd rather clean the evil and cut off the knot of tragedy.”

“This is why you are called a tyrant. A new power will be built on the ground wet with blood. Millions of people in the future have obtained their salvation so I can't say your actions are wrong. Being a tyrant in this age might be appropriate so I don't blame you.”

Ddirring!

-You have been recognized by Saint Ahellun.

Your infamy among the loyal soldiers will drop.

Ahellun then hurriedly said like he was pressed for time.

“You have to quickly act to stop the Embinyu Church. You will be busy.”

“Eh?”

“Emperor, you must be aware that the Embinyu Church has this huge plot to destroy the world.”

“Of course.”

“They are building a tower climbing to the sky in order to wake up the Dragon of Chaos...and their goal will be fulfilled in ten days.”

“Ten days?”

Weed’s infamy meant he delayed meeting Ahellun. Maybe Nodulle had a lot more time. But the Sky Tower was almost completed and then the Chaos Dragon would wake up.

“I thought there would be enough time to disrupt the Embinyu Church.”

“In this world, they have caused numerous blood to flow. Prisoners had been captured to complete the Sky Tower and after today’s defeat, they will try to wake up the Chaos Dragon despite it being incomplete.”

“Hrmm.”

Changes had occurred to the quest after defeating the Embinyu Church. Their power was now significantly cut. Of course, the Embinyu Church still had an enormous force remaining but everything was being rushed.

“There isn’t enough time. Go right now. Emperor that owns a vast amount of treasures and territory, will you put all those things down to complete the noble mission of stopping the Embinyu Church?”

Ddirring!

-Unit of 7 People Leaping towards a Dragon’s Mouth

The Embinyu Army has been removed by the Emperor. It is an unbelievable achievement but the danger isn’t over yet.

The 1st sect led by high priest Heuller. It is unknown when he started or ended but he lived a long time while planning this conspiracy.

His body doesn’t show his age and he is gripped with deep

wisdom, greedy and a desire for destruction.

After hearing about the Embinyu Army's defeat, he has hastened the construction of the Sky Tower to speed up the Chaos Dragon's awakening.

You have to stop them. For all life living on the continent...

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Objective: Collapse of the Sky Tower.

Destruction of the Chaos Dragon Ausollet.

Quest Restrictions: You have to safely survive the quest.

The quest will fail if you die.

History will change if you surrender or are brainwashed.

Please note!

If you accept the quest, you can choose a further 5 people along with the NPC Ahellun to help you.

The continent will receive much damage if the quest fails.

“Hrmm, a dragon isn’t a boiled chicken.”

In the end, his last quest was to get rid of the Chaos Dragon. He felt like the sect of the Embinyu Church led by Heuller was much stronger. And he needed to finish the mission with only 7 people so it was indeed a murderous level of difficulty!

Despite that, Weed had no choice but to accept the quest. His guts was the only thing remaining.

“The world is calling me. I will accept the mission to defeat the Embinyu Church on this continent.”

-You have accepted the quest.

You can choose five people to set off for the quest.

However, they must participate voluntarily.

“You have good judgment. Move quickly if you want to stop the Embinyu Church.”

Ahellun urged him to rush.

If his human relationships were bad then maybe only two people would go on the quest.

‘I need people I can trust. Fortunately I’ve raised quite a few subordinates.’

Weed started with Zahab.

“Will you go?”

“Of course. I need to get revenge for her.”

-Zahab has been included as a colleague on the quest.

The negotiations for one old man filled with revenge was complete. And the rest was the problem.

He had plenty of subordinates to pick from but recruiting 5 was a little tough. He needed to configure the party while thinking of the various characteristics.

Ahellun was a saint who could heal while a thief or magician would fly away with one blow.

“The problem is...picking someone who will be useful.”

Weed’s eyes looked for other professions. Those that were level 500~600 seemed so fragile that it was like they would die with one touch.

“Warrior-1, Warrior-2 and Warrior-3!”

“Yes!”

“It is an honour.”

“I will go anywhere with you.”

-The desert warriors Warrior-1, Warrior-2 and Warrior-3 have joined the quest.

And now there was only one person left!

“Hestiger.”

“I knew you would call me. This is a holy mission that I should complete. I will go with Great Emperor-nim.”

“I don’t like it.”

“I know you will take me. You don’t have to worry about me.”

“Yes. Well, I will take you.”

-Hestiger has been included as a colleague on the quest.

Weed hated Hestiger for two reasons.

He found Hestiger's excellent abilities unpleasant. While he provided generous support during the Nodulle's Growth quest, Hestiger seemed much stronger than himself.

He had a genius talent and made a sincere effort. Hestiger completed monster hunts and quests with him so Weed had to acknowledge his abilities.

And for the second reason, Weed found it hateful how well he ate and lived. He helped repel the Embinyu Church and would lead the Pallos Empire into the future. His stomach ached as he thought of Hestiger receiving all the gold and treasures.

‘This time I’ll kill him properly.’

Ahellun nodded at those gathered.

“Now let’s go. All those who would perform the sacred duty has been assembled. The Embinyu Church is in an area where darkness rules and divine magic doesn’t work properly.”

Ahellun lightly tapped the ground with a white cane. Then a door consisting of bright light was created. Ahellun entered first with the sculptural lifeforms, Zahab and Hestiger behind him.

Finally, the moment when Weed had to go through the door. If he went through this door then perhaps the founding and wealth of the Pallos Empire would disappear.

After completing the quest involving the Embinyu Church, it was likely that he would be prevented from coming back here.

“Warrior-4, Warrior-5, Warrior-6, Warrior-7, Warrior-8, Warrior-9, Warrior-10, Alverun, Alveren.”

“Yes, Great Emperor.”

His sculptural lifeforms thought that he was going to say goodbye.

“I made you struggle so I want to set aside good things for you.”

“.....”

“Once the empire is founded, everyone should take up high positions and live warmly.”

“.....”

A naked expression of gratitude for everything they shared!

“I will never forget your grace.”

“Yes, of course.”

“So everybody come closer.”

Weed spoke closely to the remaining sculptural lifeforms. It had the smell of an insidious conspiracy.

And he stroked Bactrian Camel’s head before entering the door.

“Stay well in the future.”

“Puhung!”

Bactrian Camel looked off into the distant land. A cynical attitude! Bactrian Camel was soothing his disappointment in his own way.

“Looking back, it has been really hard on you. You are the best along with Wy-3.”

“.....”

Weed proudly disappeared through the door after saying goodbye.

“Great Emperor!”

“Your Majesty!”

“Puhuhuhung!”

And the mournful cries of his subordinates could be heard behind him. Thick tears flowed from Bactrian Camel’s eyes.



Weed arrived in an unfamiliar area as soon as he passed through the door.

The land consisted of brown, cracked rocks and deep gaps that had smoke emerging from it. Something red rushed out from the earth and it turned out to be lava!

“Where am I?”

Weed hid next to a rock and quickly moved his eyes to assess the situation. There were thick walls dozens of metres high in some places and ruins here and there.

It was teeming with monsters and peculiar sounds could be heard.

Kkurukruruk.

Kuwook!

And a few kilometres away, buildings similar to a fortress were being built beyond a barrier. In the heart of the buildings, a colossal statue of Embinyu was soaring up. There was a tower that spun round and round like a snake as it rose into the clouds.

He had seen a video of it in the past when receiving the Embinyu quest. Maybe the Chaos Dragon was sleeping somewhere as well.

‘There were many watchtowers when I previously saw the video. There is also a river in the middle that emits poison and I have to be careful not to be detected.’

He needed to properly grasp the situation in order to make a plan. It was different from when bringing his desert army to sweep through the continent. Furthermore, the time limit to complete the quest was very short.

To make matters worst, he couldn't see any signs of Ahellun and the others who went through the door before him.

“There is no dog poop. I am abandoned...it can't be right?”

Weed's ability to predict misfortune was beyond that of a fortune teller.

Ddirring!

-You have arrived at the Barren Howling Ruins.

This is a hidden area of the continent that only exists in the warring period.

The worst cult, the Embinyu Church has spread its evil power to disrupt all teleportation methods.

Ahellun and your other colleagues are somewhere in the large, spacious area.

You can find them but they might die if the enemy notices them first.

Survival is entirely dependent on the ability of your colleagues.

The ability of Weed and his subordinates could be called the best. The combat capabilities of the sculptural lifeforms he created was undeniably excellent.

In this situation, it was impossible to guess how many would survive before they could meet up again.

‘We didn’t decide a place to meet up and it is difficult now that we are all scattered. If I look for them one by one then the tower’s construction might finish and the Chaos Dragon will wake up.’

So far, it was an extremely hard and challenging quest. In the worst case situation, he wouldn't be able to find his sculptural lifeforms or they would be dead and he would need to fight alone.

‘I don't have time to worry about the others. I might make a mistake.’

Weed moved back to a larger rock. His subordinates arrived first so they were probably hiding but he could only see old skeletons.

‘Now what should I do? Should I infiltrate them?’

Quests couldn't only be solved with fighting and killing. This quest required Weed to use all his trickery. Weed carefully hid while watching the barrier.

‘This quest is the most important thing right now.’

All the struggles he went through was almost finished. After finishing this quest, the only thing left was the Hermes Guild.

He had a higher possibility of winning if he could obtain the final secret sculpting technique. If he lived he would complete many quests and monster hunts until he became as strong as he was in the desert.

In fact, the final secret sculpting technique was probably a

fraudulent skill that wold boost his abilities. But if he failed the quest then all that time would be wasted as he returned to his original time.

‘It is urgent but there is a bright side.’

The Embinyu Church would sweep through the Central Continent again. The Haven Empire would suffer great damage and might not be able to conquer the Arpen Kingdom.

‘Now I should start.’

Weed was really worried about the success of this quest.



The 12 Corps of the Haven Empire moved quickly.

Each corps was in the best condition to conquer the Central Continent.

“Go to the north.”

“There is only a little bit left until the continent is unified. March!”

The Haven Empire’s army had been tempered from constant

battles against the prestigious guilds. They had been prepared to face the Embinyu Church so heading to the north didn't require any additional preparation.

“This might be the last battle so don't be careless. Aim for a perfect finish with a victory.”

Lafaye and his general staff decided to move with the army.

The army moved across the Haven Empire and headed towards the north. Each city that passed through had a set of supplies prepared ahead of time.

It was impossible for the invasion of the Haven Empire to be unknown. They didn't move quickly in order to preserve their best state.

The merchant groups within the Haven Empire followed the army with materials so supplies for the war wasn't a problem.

Lafaye and the other staff made sure that each corps was comfortable before the fight.

“Gather these 7 corps in front of Poros River.”

Rensullot boldly led the army over the river to the north! More than 2 million soldiers were gathered to attack the enemy.

Of course the counterattack from the Grass Porridge Cult in the north would begin. But they were a bunch of beginners that used human wave tactics so the Haven Empire wasn't worried.

The 7 corps moved to secure important terrain while destroying any enemies that pounced. The 2 million elite army had confidence that they could win no matter how many northern users attacked.

Numbers didn't mean anything. The combat power was in the millions so there wasn't much meaning in seeing how many troops the north gathered. In fact, an army of 2 million was enough to display the power of the Haven Empire to the world.

Many rebellions could occur once they unified the continent. Minor resistances were already occurring in the occupied territories.

So they would show it to them. Look! The mighty power of the Haven Empire!

They would trample on the Arpen Kingdom in the north. They were familiar with getting rid of the initial disgust and resistance to the occupation. Later people would start joining the Hermes Guild after a few months.

“We will win great battles and destroy the north.”

Lafaye spoke to a lieutenant in the army.

There was no doubt when he spoke. They would take care of the north no matter how reviled they were or how many people needed to be wiped out.

The Hermes Guild had always been invincible. They experienced a toxic defeat with Weed but they didn't need to worry about that now.

The remaining 3 corps advanced through the Nudullan Mountains and onto the Nadallia Plains. They were the main troops of the Haven Empire that would destroy Morata and the Earth Palace of the Arpen Kingdom.

Going through the hilly terrain was chosen in order to accomplish a prolonged strike against Vargo Fortress.

The Haven Empire wouldn't let the north hope for even a moment. The main troops would gather and destroy Morata and Vargo Fortress.

And 2 corps were organized for a separate occupation. They would spread out and obliterate the north. Even the smallest villages would be destroyed.

Tyrant Weed? They would show a destruction beyond what he did in the warring period. The Great Buildings that were the pride of the north and the cities would be wiped out without trace.

Lafaye intended to imprint true strength and fear into all the

users.



Geomchi and the students sometimes had simple thoughts.

‘I hope that we can fight.’

If they tried to study then they would fall asleep or get headaches.

Simple paperwork was enough to make them tired. Even if it was a clerical job, it would be too mentally tough for them to endure. Instead, they felt more refreshed after working at a construction site.

Geomchi-2 came running with a poster.

“Teacher-nim, it is a war.”

“The day we’ve been waiting for has come.”

Geomchi-3 added hastily.

“We will take action depending on Teacher-nim’s words. I don’t know what Teacher-nim wants to do.”

Geomchi who was watching the sky seemed to already be prepared for war. It was like someone patiently waiting for a long time only to stand in the rain once it arrived.

‘Can I fight properly again soon?’

The students had been waiting for the day they would fight the Haven Empire so they focused on hunting and training their skills. They also aimed to complete their Weapons Mastery quest. Special stats and skills were obtained during the training. Now they were focusing on strong monsters in order to raise their level.

Geomchi-2 was excited about a battle but his position meant it was impossible for him not to worry.

The instructors and students weren’t weak but it was unknown if they could fight against the powerful forces of the Haven Empire.

“It is hard. It is hard to know. We’ve seen them fight on television so we have an idea of the extent of their skills. If we avoid the magic then we can face them in close combat. It will be a good experience to face a strong army.”

“Yes, even if we are unfortunately defeated in the end.”

Geomchi-2 nodded his head.

An inevitable fate. They couldn’t change the fact that they were weak and that the enemies were strong.

Of course, that didn't mean Geomchi and the students were weak. It was impossible to find a group on a similar level in the Versailles Continent. They had a minimum level of 400. Advanced level 9 swordsmanship. The limitation was that their group was unique.

This time Geomchi-3 asked the question.

“Then what will the north do?”

“They just need to endure until the maknae (youngest) returns.”

“Will the maknae come?”

Geomchi-5 asked with a questioning expression.

The invasion of the Haven Empire! No matter how much they loved to fight, this was a huge matter. If a fight occurred then they could kill hundreds of enemies in front of them.

However, only Weed would be able to win against the colossal military power of the Haven Empire.

“Last time I asked Weed if he could defeat the army of the Haven Empire. Do you know what the answer was?”

“He could win?”

“He can’t win. Stopping the ultimate power of the unified Central Continent is a daunting task. No matter how vigilant he is, there won’t be enough time to prepare.”

“Then it will be destroyed?”

“Maybe in a fight but a war isn’t that simple.”

Geomchi laughed like he found something interesting.

“We can’t keep blocking the enemies. We don’t need to smash the enemies to death. Weed will be the one to tear apart the Haven Empire.”

“What do you mean?”

“I literally mean what I said.”

The hearts of the instructors starting beating faster. The charisma that was overflowing from those comments.

Tearing apart the Haven Empire!

It was enough to make them heated up.

Weed might die in a fight but it was completely different in their

eyes. Watching the struggle heated up their fighting spirit.

Of course, Weed said something similar but it from completely different from Geomchi's mouth.

-Ah really, those fellows are really annoying. They are like gum stuck to my clothes. This isn't a problem that can be prevented...I will tear them apart when that time comes.

Book 38: The Will Of Great Emperor Weed

Chapter 1: Scattered Subordinates

Monsters were wandering around the Barren Howling Ruins. There were non-violent zombies that walked around absent-mindedly like they had lost their souls.

‘Well, they look like they are level 300? But there seems to be a suspicious aura flowing around here.’

Weed hid behind a rock and analysed the monsters.

The features of high ranking monsters became clearer over time. For example, the skin would be a special colour or the monster would be ugly but it gave off a feeling of elegance.

However, here the monsters were just ugly. They were large and brutal. But the monsters were ugly due to the magic of the Embinyu Church flowing everywhere. The proportion of their body, head and arm wasn't normal or they seemed weirdly threatening.

‘The level is low but there are plenty of them.’

Bizarre creatures were leaping.

Kkiyaaak!

Weed saw a crow flying from a distance towards the collapsed barriers.

When he first saw it, the crow was relatively normal despite being large. But soon its hair started falling like a bald eagle. The canines in its mouth grew to resemble those belonging to a vampire bat and the claws grew longer.

The moment it reached the barrier, it became a weird mix of a crow and dog. And it lost its spirit as it just roamed around the place.

‘It is quite dangerous. It is because of the aura of the Embinyu Church but... Anyway, this place is quite uncommon in the world.’

Weed waited quietly at the corner of the rock. A slow moving monster suddenly stopped and sniffed its nose. There was a lot of ground to cover so it would be tough to cross the barrier without being caught.

‘I need to clean up the ones near me as quickly as possible. So that no monsters will be drawn.’

The monsters wouldn’t move in a collective group like orcs or goblins. But they would immediately gather once there was a battle. They were tinged with the power of darkness so the creatures were instinctively hostile.

‘I need to wait for an opportunity and move slowly. Scout, move,

hide, move, hide and repeat. I don't know whether my subordinates will be able to do this well.'

Weed tried to grasp the terrain and atmosphere of this place. He had ten days for the quest so that was quite a short period of time. This was the final stage of the epic adventure to obtain the secret sculpting technique quest!

The quest difficult had gone up with every stage so this certainly wasn't a lot of time. Even if he toiled for 10 days, the slightest mistake could cause him to fail in minutes. It was like a student studying for an exam tomorrow!

'Anyway, I need to move. I need to go to a higher place to see the whole view. And the highest thing in the vicinity... That barrier.'

Monsters walking slowly!

Weed waited until a monster passed by. And he dealt a surprise attack with the Extermination Sword.

If a knight hit from behind then they would experience a penalty to their fame and honour. There were also knights infamous for their 'backstab' attacks. But other professions didn't care about dignity and could freely attack from behind. The thief profession made it their career to stab from the back!

-You have dealt a critical blow!

Kuwek!

Instant death.

Weed's level meant that an ordinary creature couldn't withstand his strike.

Kyak!

Kwaack!

Keuk!

He handled the monsters while moving a short distance. Wide area skills were used to quickly get rid of 6~8 gathered together.

“What?”

“I...I heard a sound.”

If there was a disturbance than monsters would gather together. Weed sped off and hid again for another 10 minutes. The monsters here weren't smart so they just moved according to their instincts.

Another loud sound would make them gather again like zombies. Whenever there was a collapsed barrier, he would deliberately cause a noise and then moved without making any sound. All their

basic instincts were removed except for eating and killing.

‘The simple reactions can make this the best hunting ground.’

However, he couldn’t be careless. Things that moved on instinct could be really scary. They forgot their reason for living and would just bit and claw after pouncing.

If he made a fuss when fighting one monster then a whole group of enemies would come. There was no guarantee that the Embinyu Church wouldn’t come investigate. If he couldn’t grasp the topographic map then he might end up fighting knights.

‘I have to think of worst case scenarios.’

He didn’t fear fighting under any circumstances but Weed had no intention of fighting earnestly yet. His goal wasn’t the monsters around here.

‘I need to check for anything familiar!’

He moved carefully and climbed up the half collapsed stairs of the barrier that was his target.

-You have arrived at an unknown barrier.

The barrier makes it impossible to feel comfortable.

Health will be exhausted by angry monsters.

If your health falls below 50,000 then you will immediately change into a monster.

The energy inside your body will be reduced by 23%.

When vitality falls below half, it will cause damage to your health.

An unexpected penalty!

“Hrmm, this isn’t good. And this is the worst terrain.”

A groan automatically slipped from Weed’s mouth as he passed the barrier. There were many monsters below in the Barren Howling Ruins.

A river flowed in the direction of the Embinyu Church that contained dead bodies floating on it, causing a deeply rotten river where monsters swarmed. They gathered near the blackened river like ants swarming to honey.

There seemed to be hundreds of thousands of monsters along the river bank. It was like a monster fair where they raced to take the best place. There were various types of monsters here that couldn’t be seen throughout the entire continent.

He could fly through the sky but he needed to pass the rotten river. A poison mist was spread densely from the river. Flying monsters trying to cross the river would be touched by the poison mist and fall into the river.

Beyond these obstacles, arriving at the Embinyu walls was also a problem. Just like a sand dune, the walls of the fortress was higher than anything else. It wasn't just rock but lined with thick steel as well. This made the walls so thick and firm that even a bronze giant's attacks wouldn't pulverize it.

The watchtowers that monitored the boundaries were also an issue. There were troops placed on the staircase of the tower that almost touched the sky. He didn't know how he could invade under such tight surveillance.

This was a shrine for the Embinyu Church as well as a production base to make new monsters. It wasn't visible but there were training grounds for monsters inside. The moment he was discovered, there would be a hornet's nest of monsters ready to pounce.

“I'd rather go to the Bank of Korea to get rid of my gold bars.”

He felt a lot of misery. He was one person going against a country of a massive scale.

“If I won the lottery three times in a row then I wouldn't need to worry about money.”

He could only think of common sense methods that wouldn't work! Even though Weed was the strongest human, he still suffered from a lot of limitations. The curse of the weak was that he couldn't fight for a long time without a break.

He was proud of his power but it was unsure if he could face the Embinyu Army gathered here. And the enemies had the ultimate weapon, the Chaos Dragon. Ausollet was said to be especially strong and dangerous that even other dragons didn't want to deal with him.

‘I have to stay calm. There has to be some options. And ten days. I need to use this time very well. I can only depend on myself.’

Weed looked around in other directions. The barrier continued to the left and the right. He was curious about how far it extended but there was no point in following the barrier.

There were many collapsed parts where monsters roamed. Weed looked towards the rear of the red wasteland. There was probably a kingdom filled with humans beyond the wasteland.

‘The exact location of this place... Judging by the location of the sun and the moon, it is the Wasteland of the Lost.’

The Wasteland of the Lost was a huge maze that connected the Central Continent to the Western Continent. Those that entered this place would endlessly wander until they died.

It was rumoured that legendary swords or armour were buried here along with riches so many adventurers lost their lives. That's why the Wasteland of the Lost was one of the continent's 10 Forbidden Zones.

“Uhh, no. I can't stop here.”

Weed wanted to protect his reputation and this adventure was being broadcasted so he wanted to be successful.

An astronomical advertising revenue! He could make money by selling items obtained through adventuring and hunting but it wouldn't compare to the profit made by the broadcasts.

Putting aside the money. Weed was now familiar with the rich and generous lifestyle so he didn't want to be reminded of his hungry past. He recently earned a lot of money so luxury had permeated his body.

“I am no longer the same as I was in the past. I know how to spend money and my expenses have increased.”

He used to eat a spoonful of rice with ham and now he was eating like a middle class person.

He washed with warm water from the boiler and even bought seasonal fruits from the market, an extravagance that would've previously caused an endless amount of criticism.



Ten days was both a long and a short time.

Weed spend a few hours moving along the collapsed barriers of the Barren Howling Ruins and arrived at the river.

Using the quiet!

“I have to find a way.”

A way to avoid the monsters, destroy the Sky Tower and get rid of the Chaos Dragon.

“I can do it. An idea has emerged. Calling Death Knight Van Hawk!”

-The suspicious energy has prevented the summoning.

Abyss Knight Van Hawk has returned to the original world. Van Hawk and Torido had already returned to the original time zone.

“The usable ones are gone.”

Then he needed a quicker way to navigate so that he could find his subordinates and Ahellun.

“A monster. I don’t need to continue killing them while moving.”

Weed finally decided to use Sculpture Transformation.

Kang! Kang! Kang!

A piece similar to the monsters around here.

The right eye was unusually large and the thick jaw curved inwards. Running on four legs was faster so he developed specially muscular hind legs. Now he could escape through running if needed. The ears were large and spacious so he could hear the sounds around him.

-You have completed The Pony.

A roughly made, presentable pony.

Unfortunately, the pony lives an unhappy life because it can’t be free.

A piece made by a sculptor that travelled through time and space.

Artistic Value: 30

If you keep this work then enormous historical value will be given.

Special Options: Luck will decrease by 65 when people look at his sculptor for more than 5 seconds.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-The skill proficiency of Handicraft has improved.

A sculpture with special effects!

It wouldn't be eating food so he made a skinny body that wouldn't attract attention from the other creatures.

Weed had created a piece with a bizarre appearance but it closely followed the shapes of the monsters around here.

"I had plenty of time to master sculpting after my adventure. However, the Hermes Guild won't leave me alone. Life is too short to be twisted like this. Sculpture Transformation!"

-Sculpture Transformation has been used.

The infinite affection for sculpting makes the sculptor and statue resemble each other!

As a Sun Warrior, his body itself was beautiful and sturdy. He wore the best equipment obtained from the Salamander King that anyone would envy yet he was suddenly changed into a pony.

The form meant he couldn't exert much combat power. Among the means of attack, the fatal blow was always a kick to the rear!

Weed curled the lips of the pony.

‘Well, it sounds good. I want to eat a carrot. I can finally understand Bactrian Camel’s mind.’

The pony stealthily descended the stairs of the barrier.

Kuhung!

The monsters only glanced at him before turning their heads away.

‘That appearance is one of us.’

‘I don’t want you near me.’

Weed proudly walked along the barrier.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Warrior-2.

He had been given life by Weed and proudly fought for the desert.

When he was just born, many terrifying enemies threatened the safety but later it was calm. He obtained dozens of records of bravery while following Weed's desert festival!

He was confident even after coming to the Barren Howling Ruins to defeat the Embinyu Church.

‘I want to obtain recognition for killing a high priest.’

He was a bodyguard and the loyalty of his subordinates was second to none. He came here alone but Warrior-2 bravely held his scimitar while staring at the enemy.

“Everybody bring it on!”

Kurung?

“I am Warrior-2 and I will kill all of you.”

He deliberately raised a fuss in order to attract the attention of the monsters.

Kurung. Kurrrrrrung!

As a result, hundreds of monsters concentrated their attacks on him! As an honourable desert warrior, Warrior-2 would clean up all the monsters in that place. He held an axe in his right hand and a spear in his left as he continuously struck the enemies. However, the increasingly loud uproar caused all the monsters nearby to gather.

-You have been battered in the chest with horns.

Health is reduced.

A paralysis effect has occurred but try to overcome it.

-You have been bitten on the shoulder.

Attack speed is reduced.

The continuous group attack of the monsters.

Despite Warrior-2's pride in his health, he was forced to get tired and have his health reduced after fighting for a few hours.

Poison was spat and monsters damaged his body. He could defeat thousands of soldiers alone but the monsters here were severe.

Humans had overwhelmingly strong skills but their will could break easily while monsters just cared about attacking. And they spat poison. In addition, more monsters came constantly running

out of the barrier to attack.

Beyond the barrier, the monsters that drank from the rotten river were level 400. And 5~6 of them jointly decreased Warrior-2's health. Some of them ate the bodies of other monsters and quickly became stronger.

“As a warrior, I am happy to die fighting.”

He could run away but Warrior-2 stubbornly persisted in struggling in that place. The fighting spirit that wouldn't subside despite being wounded by thousands of enemies! The dying Warrior-2 kept on attracting more monsters.

“Ah...there is no anger. However, I want to see Great Emperor before I die....”

Something happened when Warrior-2's health fell to 10%. A pony was running at full speed in the distance. Another monster had found him.

‘This pathetic person! He doesn't think at all. I gave you life yet you haven't even eaten seaweed soup yet.’ (A traditional dish that Koreans eat on their birthdays).

Puhihihing!

The pony's running speed was incredibly fast. Weed's changed stats meant he had absolute ability in track and field.

He reached the place where the group of monsters were gathered and leapt up, jumping over the monsters' heads. The front and hind legs pushed against a head, moving dozens of metres every time.

“Grrrrrr, where... going.”

An enormous monster suddenly blocked the path in front of him and he jumped over it.

“Not yet... Fight... My strength...remaining.”

Weed was right in front of Warrior-2. Warrior-2's body was full of wounds after hours of fighting and his knife was bent due to low durability.

A few more fights and the knife would be broken. Warrior-2 was a great warrior but he couldn't endure without any weapons. The transformed Weed looked at Warrior-2 and grumbled.

“This is a really a place with all types of misfortunes. I became a ugly, monster like pony!”

Puhuhung!

“Eh? That rotten expression is very familiar... Don't tell me you are Great Emperor-nim?”

Warrior-2 got on the transformed back. He briefly looked around and saw that they were surrounded by monsters.

It was close to impossible to find a place with no enemies in order to escape. Now both Weed and Warrior-2 would probably be buried here. Weed snorted and stomped his hind legs.

‘I need to believe in this lacking body.’

Pababak!

His heel kicked hard against the ground! He jumped into the air between the monsters. The superior agility enabled him to jump 4 or 5 times!

The extraordinary Weed moved like a horse with wings by stepping on the heads of the monsters. He broke through the encirclement of the monsters.

“Cha...se.”

“Don’t miss the prey.”

The monsters pursued. It felt like a long distance marathon consisting of monsters was occurring!

Weed ran along the barrier while pricking his ears. He needed to

be on guard for any potential monsters in front that would attack. In addition, there were some monsters chasing that wouldn't give up. He avoided the large and small monsters as he ran through the Barren Howling Ruins.

It was 4 minutes until he found a pit under a wall.

‘Here.’

Weed entered the pit while carrying Warrior-2. After a while, the monsters that had no intelligence just passed by. They had no instincts so they just stumbled around in vain.

“W...why aren't they here?”

“I don't know...”

“I...’m hung...ry.”

The monsters lost motivation and started wandering around like a zombie. Weed had fully grasped the nature of the monsters here.

‘Dull and slow. But still dangerous.’

The level of the monsters was high enough to be a burden for general users. It wasn't unreasonable for the kingdoms ruled by the prestigious guilds to lead a force here to subjugate the area.

In many ways, even the Hermes Guild would find it tough. Weed's body in his original time wouldn't be able to face hundreds of them.

The health of the monsters was low but they attacked abnormally because they didn't care about their bodies.

‘Well, despite that I’m not going to die.’

Even if he fought the monsters, Weed could still escape. The situation would become complicated if a bunch of monsters from the river moved or knights and priests emerged.

It would be an enormous combat power but Weed's nimbleness meant it would be easy to escape if his life was in danger.

Weed cursed with the mouth of a pony.

“You incompetent bastard! Your life doesn't belong to you. I don't need a subordinate that insists on unnecessarily dying!”

“I'm sorry Great Emperor.”

“But the future is dark. The reaction of the others won't be significantly different from yours.”

Thanks to all the dungeon exploration and hunting, Weed knew that the sculptural lifeforms have a fearless nature that wouldn't

back down.

He knew their versatility and the limits of their ability so apart from Zahab and Ahellun, he became gloomy at the thought of his subordinates, except for Hestiger, dying.

It was like a senior citizen worrying about their children living to an old age.

‘I can’t bring this guy around on my back.’

Creatures didn’t care about Weed after he became a pony. Once they approached within 30 metres, there would be a rancid smell so they backed away.

He was inconspicuous compared to the wandering monsters so he could roam around with ease. However, if he carried a human warrior on his back then monsters would aim at him.

‘I wandered around so much and only found one person. I should try to find the other subordinates.’

Weed left Warrior-2 in the pit and continued searching. He searched until the sun went down but couldn’t find his other subordinates.

There were traces remaining of the monsters fighting someone but he couldn’t be sure if it was his men. Time was running out as he already searched around the barrier and passed by the rotten

river.

‘This is the fate of my subordinates.’

He could only hope that his subordinates found each other instead! He also didn’t know what to do with Warrior-2. Even with Warrior 2, he still couldn’t invade the location of the Embinyu Church.

“Well, I still have this!”

Weed took out the Sands of Time. If he looked at Nodulle’s adventure then he might obtain a good strategy.

Of course, just because he had an idea didn’t mean it would succeed.

“I need to make sure of the timing. If I save it then I might end up being bitter later. Sands of Time!”

The Sands of Time flowed down Weed’s hands.

-Sands of Time.

Sands of Time, a mysterious sand that can recollect things.

A treasure from the southern desert that can look back in time.

It is possible to return to your original time to bring goods or people.

Just possessing it can give references to the past.

Ddirring!

-The Sands of Time can't be used due to the encroaching evil magic.

The Sands of Time have become useless. It will disappear forever.

Chapter 2: Sky Tower's Workers

“Cough.”

The treasured card he had been saving didn't work! He really could trust in no one in this world.

Weed's brain worked frantically.

‘What should I do? I wanted to understand how Nodulle and Ahellun completed the quest so I don't have to waste time wandering around like I did today.’

A sigh naturally emerged.

Nodulle's quest had already changed.

The configuration of Nodulle's colleagues had changed so the same situation couldn't be repeated.

Ahellun might perform a similar role but each person would display different types of behaviour and abilities.

Especially since Weed wasn't Nodulle. He saw things differently so he needed to find his own methods to complete this mission.

“A person won't come along. I can only believe in myself.”

He couldn't live life depending on someone else. So Weed needed to open a path in this quest in his own matter.

Weed sighed deeply.

It all depended on how he spent the next ten days.



The Haven Empire in the Central Continent.

7 Corps crossed the Poros River that was the gateway to the north.

An enormous 2.1 million troops!

The number of horses, carriages and merchants following behind was at a terrific scale. They belonged to the Hermes Guild of the Haven Empire so the users' steps were light.

“We will seize and twist the neck of the north.”

“Will we see a fight soon? I don't know if they will dare attack.”

The united power of the 7 corps was so great that a battle seemed pointless. They felt pleasure rather than tension before the war.

The largest power on the continent would sweep up the Northern Continent at once.

The soldiers were also given all types of food delicacies during the expedition. Their treatment was excellent whether they were users or NPCs.

Due to the repeated wars of conquest, the Haven Empire contained a high percentage of elite soldiers.

“The other 5 corps have also arrived in front of the Northern Continent.”

“Then let’s march.”

The soldiers advanced like Lafaye planned.

The first 7 corps entered the north from the front. The remaining 5 corps would invade through other routes to avoid the eyes and ears of the north.

The 7 corps would split apart the north like a spear while the remaining 5 would smash it like a hammer or tear it apart like a knife.



Buzz buzz.

Morata's Bingryong Square!

It was always bustling with novice users. People could start Royal Road in Arpen Kingdom so the stores and streets were always filled with beginners.

“How much is this fruit?”

“I am selling it for 2 copper.”

“Wow, that is expensive! I'll earn the money later and will come back to eat it.”

Novice users who didn't know the world grew up in Morata.

‘There was a time when I was also like that.’

Although some users could obtain leather and meat from rabbits, they would hide with fear when meeting goblins in the forest. Any beginner who started Royal Road would suffer from that.

The starter villages of the Arpen Kingdom were bustling with beginners. The mountain villages might be inconvenient but they sold herbs and leather that were normally expensive so they were crowded with users.

Even novice users who emerged from the kingdom would be

filled with energy and adventure and would actively pioneer the north.

The farmers were also stable as there was a wide land untouched by monsters and bards entered uncharted territory for the sake of stories.

Due to the development of Morata, the birth rate throughout the north increased and many children were born. There was no doubt that they would be the future cornerstones of the north.

The development of the Central Continent was easy but the north was able to evolve into a unique culture and economy. It wasn't a vast region but the adventure, creation of legends and growth potential was enormous!

So users in the square normally exchanged stories of commerce and adventures.

“Fight in order to keep our home, land and freedom!”

“They don't have to be trampled, just repelled. We will struggle until the end!”

“The Arpen Kingdom is ours. This is our place. We can't crawl for our entire lives. We will create our own world!”

The northern users were filled with rejection for the Haven Empire.

The fight between the Haven Empire and the prestigious guilds had been confined to the Central Continent so the northern users protested the invasion. But the most important reason was that the north had been soaked with the users' blood and sweat.

They had grown the rural villages along with Morata and opened up the northern frontier. Even users that just recently logged into Royal Road were filled with pride from living in the north.

“We might live in the slums while conserving even 1 copper but isn't there a high potential in the north? It would be foolish if we let the Haven Empire invade this place.”

“The war in the Central Continent is already over and the taxes are so high that some people have wandered to the north. This place might be underdeveloped but it can evolve quickly.”

Morata was the capital of the Arpen Kingdom but it was also the hub of transportation. The northern users continued to gather to hear news of the Haven Empire's invasion. Of course, King Weed hadn't seen it yet but there were many users at the Earth Palace.

Users were mobilized in the small villages, large villages and cities of the Arpen Kingdom in order to fight against the Haven Empire.

“I came. Where is Sloan-nim?”

“The warrior Hasuller is looking for a party. All warriors level 350 and over can participate!”

“Eh, didn’t you party with me in the bat cave a year ago? The full set of Bandit Armour! I’ve raised my level a lot in the meantime.”

“Hah, me too. I just lived and ate in the hunting grounds.”

There were welcome encounters between players in the city. Meetings were conducted throughout Morata and the north, with information being shared between adventurers.

“Bones with a little flesh sticking to them are good.”

“These have the characteristic of being half rotten. So just using a little power will be enough to break them.”

“But it is hard to find good, rotten bones...”

“I heard that Jeanne’s Summon Skeleton Archers skill has reached advanced level 6.”

“Huhuhu, I reached advanced level 8 not long ago.”

“Ohh, then at least 200 skeleton archers will sweep through the hunting grounds!”

“I am escorted by 3 zombies and 200 archers but my skill to summon a death knight is a little low. Isn't Otem-nim ahead in this area?”

“I really like the death knights.”

Jeanne, Harian, Otem!

The necromancers held a meeting after a while.

It was hard to hunt with many users due to the nature of their profession. The summoned undead troops would often be disruptive or a nuisance to other users hunting. The undead summons weren't alive so they would often intercept monsters already being hunted.

If it was that much then the general users would understand. From a general user's point of view, hunting with undead troops meant they didn't need to worry about defense so they could relax.

But the necromancers needed to collect materials required for the summoning! They couldn't help being aware of the eyes of other users when digging up graves or rummaging through bodies.

“Hey, are you looking for a good body?”

Grave robbery was necessary for a necromancer! However, encountering other users while digging out a grave with a shovel....

People couldn't ignore the sight of them drinking water from a skull. But this wasn't an insurmountable problem to high level necromancers because the north had many remote places.

"Necromancers can use rib bones that aren't chewed on in order to make the undead."

"There are rumours about a tomb near the haunted house so I'm heading there."

People still didn't have a considerable knowledge of the rituals. Necromancers were well respected in combat. Apart from the professional misconceptions and prejudices, people didn't find it fun to go hunting with an undead army.

"I've recently heard a story about the east. It seems to be a fairly good adventure...."

"Well, you can chase it if you want. I'm going to an island."

"There isn't anything to see on an uninhabited island."

"No way. Isn't there a city with a population of 40,000?"

The adventurer's flame erupted as there were arguments among adventurers. Unlike warriors and knights, adventurers didn't quarrel over hunting monsters or clearing dungeons.

Skill proficiency was very important but they didn't boast about it. They talked proudly about things they found or excavations. An adventurer would just the slightest clue to correct distorted history or would find historical artefacts! They wandered around the boisterous taverns of the continent and didn't care about getting a full night's sleep.

Adventurers scattered all over the continent. There was no such thing as a fixed home. They found occasional colleagues to fulfil missions but didn't need to participate in sieges or be affected by the policies of the lords.

Rather than compensation from quests or hunting, adventurers preferred to find gold, silver or hidden treasures. Adventurers were proud of being able to overcome any challenges.

“Break a bridge. Will it be a nuisance if we break any of the bridges?”

“Let's keep in mind the critical buildings. The Art Centre, Goddess of Freya Statue, the library and the Tower of Light. In the worst case scenario, they can't be allowed to fall into the hands of the enemy.”

“Is it too late to move everything? And if there is a safety zone where the war can be avoided.....”

“We can't even move to an island. We need to act to fortify the best buildings and cities. There are many things that architects can

do in this war.”

The architects burned with patriotism.

Their talents had flourished in the north. Grand Buildings were constantly being created, roads through mountains and rivers that connected the north were just some of the government project.

The population of architects exploded as they participated in the urban construction and expansion.

Plenty of shelters, parks, markets were made using gold from hunting along with comfortable roads in commercial areas and residential areas! It was important to decorate features such as hills or rivers in order to create a space where people could get rid of their stress.

The views of the cities needed to be considered so the architects' ability to coordinate and cooperation was important. No matter how beautiful the building was, it would be considered a failure if it didn't match the architectural features around it. Some distinctive architect would be a terrible mess when looked at from a distance. Architects needed to create harmony between the buildings, river, streets and trees.

A profession respected by the general users! After making the decisions, thousands of novice users moved to help them build it. Architects had a very promising career in the north.

“I will join the Toadstool Porridge unit. I am tired of bland food and like the taste of porridge that can cause death.”

“I would rather eat sumptuous seafood than die. The taste of various seafood directly obtained from the sea! Seafood can also raise the loyalty of a dead crew.”

A meeting of chefs also took place.

The entire north was filled with the Grass Porridge Cult so it wasn't an exaggeration to say that they mobilized all the users to stop the Haven Empire's invasion.

Currently there were 71 units of the Grass Porridge Cult. It was impossible to count how many people had joined!

The novice users focused on the Bamboo Shoots Porridge Unit since it accepted an unlimited number of people. They would go around with bamboo shoots attached to their head or chest. There was even a small village of Bamboo Shoots members that ran around to nearby dungeons.

“What about the northern users who aren't part of the Grass Porridge Cult?”

“I don't know. There are also the residents as well.”

Grass porridge restaurants, grass porridge cafes, grass porridge hotels, etc. The popularity of the grass porridges were so high that

there were chains of them. And the scary thing was that the entire Grass Porridge Cult was burning to fight against the enemies invading.

Their source of loyalty wasn't their loyalty to King Weed but their own happiness in the north. The Haven Empire destroying this kingdom was like catching their girlfriend cheating.

Of course, this couldn't be a comparison in the first place. Because many of the men in the Grass Porridge Cult didn't have girlfriends!

“We have to fight.”

“Let's go!”

Huge crowds of users in the northern cities showed a willingness to fight. They were willing to die from cuts or arrows to stop the invaders.

However, there were many users who had experience with the Central Continent in the past.

“That's not possible. No matter how many people flock there, it will only be a case of suicide.”

“The Haven Empire is different from any opponents so far. They aren't easy. They have an overwhelmingly flawless strength.”

“We can’t just give them our lands or cities without any resistance!”

“We can win. If we are determined then we can win!”

The opinions of the mobilized users were split as they panicked. Some wanted to fight but the more prudent high level users were concerned.

High level users would lose a lot if they died. Level 300 or 400 users would lose skill proficiency after dying so it could cause quite a bit of frustration.

People sat at the city’s central fountain and sighed. Even though members of the Grass Porridge Cult were willing to fight and die, other users hesitated.

The members of the Grass Porridge Cult were aware of the advantages they had. Quantity rather than quality.

They unconditionally wiped out the enemy with their numbers. Their unity and tactics were poor. The opponent would become annoyed with the constantly surging numbers. Even a strong enemy would eventually be overwhelmed by numbers.

But these were the elite troops of the Haven Empire. The army that unified the Central Continent wouldn’t lose to such recklessness. It was the strongest army that could possibly conquer

the entire continent.

“We won’t know until we try!”

“Let’s drive them out of the north!”

In the end, the vocal opinions prevailed over the cautious users. They decided to repel the Haven Empire at the Rupoi Plains like in the past, so a large number of users migrated there.

Apart from hunting and levelling up, the northern users enjoyed a wide variety of fun activities.

There were some users in Morata who started early but their level still hadn’t reached the late 200s.

There was an enormous growth in population but they focused more on economic power than increasing the individual ability of a person.



“Lafaye’s opinion really is like a psychic.”

Porcal, leader of the 3rd corps of the Haven Empire nodded. He could see users walking beyond the northern ridge. Setting aside the weak and strong, there was an overwhelming number of people.

“I know why Rensullot was defeated.”

The users of the Hermes Guild respected Rensullot.

He was able to defeat enemies inside a fortress using courage and resourcefulness. So quite a few commanders in the Hermes Guild were shocked when he came back from the north with a devastating defeat.

They didn't know why Rensullot would suffer such a defeat. Looking at the number of northern users now, he could see why 70,000 troops lost. No matter how high the level of the soldiers or their training, they had no choice but to be swept away by the deluge of enemies!

The large number of people couldn't be ignored. The users had the vengeful thought of pushing them back to the Central Continent! There were high level users mixed in among the beginners.

The Hermes Guild had 200,000 users. Among them, the ones that participated in the northern expedition reached 50,000.

The players were eager to fly into combat! The high ranked users in Royal Road were like celebrities as they walked through cities with people envying them. Even those elites would mentally shrink back after seeing the scale of the enemy.

“Morale is important in a war.”

It was true for both users and NPC soldiers. But the Hermes Guild had constantly prepared for war after conquering the Central Continent.

The Haven Empire had been training to come to the north since Rensullot's loss. The users were united even if they had to go against these numbers. They set up tactics for quick, sharp and impossible to stop assaults.

The Haven Empire had the strongest army so there was no need to be afraid. Furthermore, they would wide area magic that wouldn't consume a lot of mana and a large number of arrows in advance. The best quality troops of the Haven Empire would slaughter the weak beginners.

“We are going to win the fight this time. Despite using the crowd psychology, their tactic is relatively simple. We will set a record for the most number of people slaughtered.”

The commanders had deployed advance troops to specified areas in advance.

“I want to try out the wide area magic.”

“Kyah, today I will kill at least 1,000 people. I can built up some combat achievements.”

The users of the Hermes Guild among the army were excited.

“Uhh, what should I do?”

“It is really hard. How should I attack?”

The northern users didn't know what to do after arriving in front of the enemy. The Haven Empire's heavy infantry were stationed at the front holding spears and shields while the archers were concentrated behind them.

They hesitated due to the instinctive fear of an egg hitting a solid rock but more northern users continued gathering on the left and right.

“Let's go! The Toadstool Porridge unit will be the vanguard!”

“We will burn our bodies in order to win the battle.”

“I will fight until I die.”

The Toadstool Porridge unit that enjoyed death were in the vanguard. There was a cloud of dust as more than 100,00 users ran forward. And...

2 corps commanders gave an order to the right side.

“Show those fearless people a taste. Units 1-4 archers, fire! The fire magicians will use wide area attacks.”

The archers of the Haven Empire fired arrows towards the Toadstool Porridge unit.

“Cough!”

“Ugh!”

“There are too many.”

“Unbelievable....”

Arrows rained down upon the helplessly dying users! Flames then covered the area and spread widely.

The Toadstool Porridge members in the area couldn't survive the attacks and collapsed. The Haven Empire were correctly using the archers and magicians in a war. The archers belonging to the 6th unit aimed separate arrows at the users that survived.

The Toadstool Porridge members were still running but were hit by the enormous attacks of the Haven Empire once they entered range. The areas that received the attacks were filled with grey lights that disappeared.

The northern users could only watch with astonishment at the

scene of the Toadstool Porridge unit literally melting away.

“This can’t be. The intrepid troops of the Toadstool Porridge unit....”

“The wide area fire magic killed several hundred at once.”

“Did they use this attack method so that we won’t be able to fight?”

“We can’t just leave it like this. We have to all go at the same time.”

“Don’t give them time to harm us.”

The northern users didn’t lose their courage despite the shocking sight!

“Waaaaaah!”

They start rushing forward simultaneously like a tsunami. From left to right, there was an infinite number of users. Perhaps this was the beginning of the counterattack.

But the Haven Empire’s army had the perfect response.

“They are no different from scarecrows. But we will show them

some courtesy as this is the first battle. Show them the horror of the Haven Empire!”

They massacred the users with arrows and magic. Tens of thousands and then hundreds of thousands failed to get close to the Haven Empire’s army. It was a mighty firepower that wiped out the counterattack.

The elite archers had gained experience through training and experience in the conquest wars while the magicians were given the best treatment in the Haven Empire.

NPC archers wore expensive accessories and longbows that increased their range while magicians were given magic books and tools to grow their magic. The Hermes Guild focused on war so they deliberately strengthened their archer and magician units.

Of course, there was a significant number of high level users among the northern users. They expected to play a significant role when the fighting became confused!

But before the superior firepower of the Haven Empire’s army, they could only watch and die along with the novice users.

The flimsy northern users were useless in front of the Haven Empire’s long range tactic. There were some users fortunately enough to reach the troops and swung their swords. They intended to harm the archers but neglected to block the follow up attacks.

There was also a wall of armoured infantry so the northern users lost their lives as they bumped against it.

“How did this happen?”

“I don’t know. Can we go on?”

“We can’t fight the enemy.”

The onslaught of northern users stagnated. Plenty of users were still running but they just suffered pointless deaths.

-A curse has slowed your movements.

Movement speed will decrease by 35% for 40 seconds.

-The truth of the disastrous curse has been revealed.

94% of your mana has been consumed.

Curses were hurled towards the northern users.

The Haven Empire had donated to many religions with their vast riches. Money was used to mobilize priests for the war and the priests of the Hermes Guild also participated.

Even so, only one tenth of the gathered northern users had been

damaged. The users waiting behind continued to thrust forward.

The corps commanders of the Haven Empire had been given instructions in advance.

“We will start the 2nd stage of the operation to teach them despair. Armoured infantry advance! Knights move forward. Cross every 400 metres.”

The Haven Empire abandoned the current situation and finally ran forward.

They didn't want their victory in this battle doubted. They wanted to prove they could devastate the northern army without using ranged attacks.

The soldiers and knights ran up to the users with their swords and spears.

“No way. My sword broke!”

“Cough! The equipment I obtained from conquering the Goblin Dungeon....”

The skilful soldiers that were a hundred times more battle tested lightly cut the users. The weak users were in front so the result was already decided.

And high level users were mixed in among them. But they didn't have enough time and space to play an active role.

After the devastating ranged attacks, they were trampled on by the knights of the Haven Empire. The novice users weren't an impediment to the knights' rush and the high levelled users died in vain.

There was a limit to how much individual ability a person could show in a war. Those that were hiding received the worst results.

The scattered users couldn't resist the scale of the knights' operation despite their numerical advantage.

“Let's kill at least one person.”

The level 200~300 users set such a goal.

They reduced the numbers by sacrificing their own lives. Then their colleagues would take care of the rest.

A strategy using their numbers!

But the Haven Empire didn't have the myth of invincibility for nothing. The knights scattered apart. And they would join together again at a fixed point. The high level users mixed in killed a few but they couldn't effectively assault the knights.

The imperial soldiers that followed behind the knights seized the area that was a mess. The archers and magicians unit slowly advanced while aiming at the northern users.

The 7 corps marched methodically as they captured important areas. The army deployed by the Haven Empire lured the users and crushed them. The armoured infantry specialized in defense so they trapped 100,000 people inside and slaughtered them.

The northern users had no leaders or separate plan so effectively controlling such a large force was impossible! The northern users kept the same battle plan but the Haven Empire's army changed battle formations as scheduled and killed them.

Of course, there were still northern users waiting for an opportunity. High level users such as thieves or warriors were waiting for the enemy to approach! But they could only kill 1~2 soldiers before being hit by ranged attacks or the knights. Eventually the northern archers and magicians just recklessly attacked the Haven Empire.

“Take this!”

“At least a few of you should die!”

However, it was blocked with already prepared magic or shields and they just lost their lives.

The infantry with their cutting ability, the power of the magic

units, the shield units, etc. The power of the Imperial Army was enough to cause others to feel despair.

“How?

“Nonsense.”

“But we can’t step back.”

Rumours started to spread as the northern users died. Even so, they bravely continued the assault and died!

The fighting capabilities of both sides in the war couldn’t be compared.

The priests continuously poured out healing magic so the Haven Empire’s army didn’t get tired.

Overall, the solid and organized army felt like a devil.

Chapter 3: Eyes Of A Landlord

Lee Hyun saw the battle on Rupoi Plains on the television.

“They were properly crushed.”

After half of them fell victim to the Haven Empire, the northern users retreated. He felt sorry seeing them retreating.

The novice users that survived until the end scattered only to lose their lives behind chased down by the cavalry. No matter how many troops there were, the quality and war skills of the Haven Empire overwhelmed them.

And fear and helplessness spread among the users after the defeat.

“What should we do?”

“Ah, this thing probably....”

“Our strength is lacking. We can only accept the outside rule.”

The Haven Empire’s army had experienced multiple wars so each corps could fight calmly. The flow of troops, attack and defense when appropriate, deployment of troops and knowing the terrain all played a large role in allowing them to unify the Central

Continent.

The Hermes Guild used tactics that had grown through all the wars. A collection of the so-called elites!

In contrast, the northern users had no tactics.

This was the crucial weakness of the northern users. There was no military commander so they were easily swept by a herd mentality. There were no tactics or proper deployment of troops when facing the enemy.

Once those points were perfectly identified, the troops with outstanding combat power could take advantage of it.

Lee Hyun realized the importance of leadership in big battles. Even with the same subordinates, the outcome of every fight could be different depending on the battle tactics and proper conduct.

The Haven Empire wouldn't have conquered the Central Continent if they just smashed in recklessly.

“Well, it makes sense.”

Lee Hyun nodded.

He didn't have any hope from the beginning. He had expected something like this. People with a smart mind would somehow

succeed. Ordinary people would end up participating in large events.

Things like loan fraud scams, bad accounting, stock price manipulation and financial companies suffering bankruptcy in the billions of won was common. People were easy pickings for scams.

Those middle class people hadn't experienced true adventure. The world was only a really good place to live if someone had money.

Force was an essential element in Royal Road if you wanted to trample on others.

The Hermes Guild named this war 'Operation Treading on Ants.' They would step on the northern users like they were ants. Of course, Weed would be the greatest ant.

Lee Hyun sighed.

"I'm glad I didn't have any expectations."

If he was expecting to win the lottery or rooted for the northern users then he would've felt even deeper disappointment!

It was the definition of bad guys eating well!

He didn't expect that they would manage to hold off the army.

“Today, some rice has fallen.”

Even so, he wasn't in a good mood. His important rice bowl was on the brink of collapse due to the Haven Empire's invasion. He knew the worst thing might happen so his mood fell to the bottom.

Weed's character didn't exist in the current time zone so he couldn't fight against the Haven Empire.

Lee Hyun's eyes shone coldly.

“Let them try it. I have to lose one... No. I should've tried to act more moderately.”

The Arpen Kingdom trying to stand up to the Haven Empire seemed insane. To be honest, he never seriously thought about any methods.

It was easy to live life in moderation while cringing away from the strong. But he wouldn't be able to fight if he used that method.

Lee Hyun came alive when challenging impossible quests or breaking through the enemies.

The northern users were currently helping him. Millions of people going against the Haven Empire meant that his party consisted of millions! Once he returned to his original time zone,

he would like to work with the northern users. He could check the emotional damage.

He needed to quickly finish the final secret sculpting quest first. Lee Hyun’s rice bowl was very large.

“I will keep my rice bowl, soup bowl and side dishes. Wait a bit. I will show you. You’ve pulled the beard of a sleeping mad dog.”



Weed logged into Royal Road and appeared at a puddle near the barrier.

“Umm Great Emperor-nim, that urgent look....”

Warrior-2 studied his shining eyes. He had bandages around him and seemed well rested.

Weed welcomed him and said.

“A useless person who only eats rice is useless.”

“.....”

A very familiar nagging.

His sculptural lifeforms were accustomed to it. The blunt remarks and jealousy! If Weed was a mother in law then the divorce rate would be several times higher in Korea.

“Anyway, you’ve recovered so don’t fight recklessly and search for your colleagues.”

“Yes! Great Emperor-nim isn’t coming with me?”

“It is better to move separately. Head to the Embinyu Church after meeting your other colleagues. Meet me in there.”

“I’ll be sure to see you again.”

So Warrior-2 left the place.

His quest needed to proceed but finding his subordinates was also important. Weed gave instructions to his subordinate to sneak around and find the others.

Of course, he didn’t have great expectations.

“I’m more comfortable moving alone.”

Weed’s task was infiltration!

Sculpture Transformation meant he could somehow mix in with

the monsters. Figuring a way to pass through the middle of the rotten river caused him a slight headache. He needed to figure out the narrowest portion of the river and cross there.

But he couldn't avoid the Embinyu Church's watchtowers as he got closer. There would be a massive fight if the knights discovered Weed.

-Embinyu has delivered a diving message stating that an enemy has appeared.

It was like rubbing honey on his body while entering a tiger's den! More enemies would continue to come out while fighting the knights. No matter how strong he was or if he transformed into a suitable creature, Weed wouldn't be able to fight alone without suffering.

If he tried to run away then the group of monsters around the rotten river would also be a hurdle. Even if his health managed to survive like cockroach, his mana would eventually run out.

"I need to observe. Find a gap and take advantage of it. A shortcut or shallow work is always necessary in life."

Weed no longer wandered around the barriers as he walked around the rotten river. He was a virulent pony so no monster touched him.

"The smell is unbearable. It doesn't seem like the usual poison."

The monsters that drank from the river naturally emitted a poison odour. Typically it would be really challenging to hunt them.

“I don’t think it will be difficult to cross the river. Monsters pass through the river really quickly. Sculpture Transformation means my body is resistant to the poison fog.”

After thinking about it, Weed shook his head. Any immediate solutions were useless unless he figure out a path.

After crossing the rotten river, he would be subjected to the scrutiny of the Embinyu Church. He needed a plan that didn’t require fighting alone.

“Uhh, there must be a more reliable way.”

Weed continued walking towards the rotten river. The monsters that smelt him ran away so his path was smooth. It was like a thoroughbred steed proudly walking down the street.

He seemed like he would fall down at any minute despite his four legged stride. It was natural to be worried when seeing so many monsters.

Sya sya sya sya syak.

He moved sideways like a crab living in the mudflats! Weed acted like this while secretly looking for any gaps in the monsters.

And he found a stone bridge connecting the rotten river banks.

Ddirring!

-A special hazard has been discovered.

A bridge built by impoverished slaves in the Barren Howling Ruins.

The poison gas means not everyone can use the bridge to cross the river.

7,600 members of the Nord species was sacrificed to accomplish this task.

The bridge is built on top of their blood and bodies.

-Fame has increased by 485.

-Health has permanently increased by 640.

He was pleased since this health and stat increase would remain after returning to his original world.

“I can just pass using strength.”

He had no need to use the bridge anyway! But the opposite side of the bridge was heavily guarded by 100 Embinyu knights. Any rotten creatures that wandered over the bridge were killed by the spears of the Embinyu knights. This was just a bridge so the knights guarding it didn't give off a strong impression.

Then he had a sudden idea!

‘I wonder if I should turn into one of them?’

The first ones that popped into his head were the Embinyu fanatics, priests, knights or monsters. He needed a member they wouldn't fight.

‘If it is their priest... No. It won't work.’

Sculptural Transformation didn't give him the ability to use holy magic. Weed's faith was quite high but he couldn't use the holy magic that priests were permitted.

Each religion had a religion or baptism that would enable the priest to use the holy magic of their god. If he disguised as an Embinyu priest that couldn't use holy magic then there was a high possibility he would be killed.

He couldn't imitate a high priest, inquisitor or priest. But his options weren't just the Embinyu followers.

‘No. It’s not just one or two of them.’

Virgins would be offered as sacrifices while animals disappeared to become cooking ingredients. If there was a problem than all lives would die! Once gripped by the Embinyu Church, most of the creatures would die.

But there were still creatures that wouldn’t die straight away.

‘The builders of the Sky Tower!’

It was built by slaves.

While scouting the Embinyu Church, he had noticed members periodically dragging slaves over the bridge.

‘That is my conclusion.’



The nord species with small, protruding eyes.

They didn’t have a sturdy physique like orcs or the bravery and combat power of barbarians. They didn’t like gold coins or jewellery. Instead, they were a peaceful species that ate grilled fish and berries picked from nearby trees.

They were similar to an endangered species in this warring period.

A plain and slightly smaller nord was walking along the rotten river.

“Mother. Mother.”

He seemed to have come looking for his mother as he glanced around with an anxious expression while stumbling. There was a heavy limp and short arms like he was a young child.

He seemed tired from a long walk but if someone looked closely, they would be able to see the quickly moving eyes.

A typical crafty type! A face that would typically engage in embezzlement and fraud if they were born in a feudal period.

The nord hesitated a little bit before crossing the bridge.

“Stop!”

“You are unfortunate. You dared to enter without permission from Embinyu so you must die.”

The nord was surrounded by the Embinyu Church members. They raised their weapons with contemptuous looks.

“W-why?”

The nord stared with such pathetic eyes that he could star in a morning drama.

“Excuse me, is my mother here? I’d like to see my mother.”

“Hrmm, I am hungry.”

“The taste of a nord. The meat can be given to crows and the blood used to nourish the vampires.”

“Good idea.”

A tendon rose on the nord’s forehead.

‘These ignorant bastards.’

The identity was Weed who had used Sculpture Transformation. His behaviour would depend on the actions of the Embinyu knights.

“I really don’t taste good. And my mother was taken over there by some knights.”

The bored Embinyu Church members accepted his word.

“Is that so? When?”

Weed thought quickly. It couldn't be too long ago but it shouldn't be too short.

“Six months ago.”

“Kilkil, then the bones will still remain.”

“I don't know. She might've been swallowed whole and digested....”

The knights teased the innocent child about his mother being eaten.

“This is a critical time so we need to thoroughly protect the boundaries. Let's just kill him and go back to guarding he boundary.”

“Then should we eat him? I am hungry.”

“The inquisitors said they need more slaves for the construction of the tower.”

“Oh, he won't be able to endure the harsh labour and will die. But isn't he too young and weak?”

Weed could hit the ground with his fist and cause a crack dozens of metres long but he was pretending to be a weak nord. In fact, the appearance of a human actually caused a greater loss in combat power.

“It doesn’t really matter since the tower will be completed in a few days.”

“Once that time comes, the great power of Embinyu will descend to earth and we will become much stronger.”

“Yes! On that day, we will no longer need slaves and the festival of blood will occur.”

“The humans look really delicious.”

Among the knights of the Embinyu Church, there were many with the vicious habit of cannibalism.

The knights made a decision and said to Weed.

“Kid.”

“Yes?”

Weed asked with feigned naivety!

“Do you want to be taken to your mother?”

“You know where my mother is?”

“I know. Ajusshi will take you to your mother. But there are conditions.”

“What is it?”

“You need to work hard if you want to see your mother. Can you do that?”

“Yes!”

Weed bravely nodded. Of course, the Embinyu knights had no intention of following through with their words! No one could scam Weed.

“Then you can meet her in the end.”

“I really want to thank you.”

Weed pretended to be sucked in by the knights.

“I will go for a while.”

“You can’t leave if you change your mind in the middle.”

“Huhu, of course.”

Instead of running, Weed rose a horse with one of the Embinyu knights.

-You have entered Embinyu’s Holy Land.

All those who follow Embinyu will have their resilience strengthened.

Those who deny Embinyu will have their vitality, health and mana regeneration decreased by 49%.

In addition, the divine power of other gods will be weakened by 89% in this space.

This effect will be maintained as long as the sanctuary of faith isn’t destroyed.

“Aigoo, it is like a mountain.”

The Embinyu knights looked back at him.

“What do you mean?”

“It is nothing.”

“Let’s go. Stay quiet or I will tear you apart and eat you.”

“Yes, I understand. I don’t have any taste.”

The horses accepted the evil magic so they didn’t get tired despite running fast. But unlike Bactrian Camel, there was more shaking while running quickly. It was like the difference between a city bus and a taxi.

‘Bactrian Camel is good.’

He already miss Bactrian Camel. He had become used to his sculptural lifeforms so he suffered after parting from them.

He wouldn’t be able to meet those sculptural lifeforms in the future. After finishing the quest, he would return to his original world and likely never see the sculptural lifeforms again.

He had become familiar with them through quests and battles but now only memories would remain.

He felt sorry for the wyverns but he had placed more love into the creation of these lifeforms.

‘Maybe this is because I created the wyverns really roughly. It is like the taste of bad food.’

Vague memories would deepen after having to say goodbye.

“This is where you will work.”

The Embinyu knights had taken Weed to the construction site of the Sky Tower.

Nords, humans, orcs, dwarves, elves and all types of species had been caught and were doing forced labour. Many people were digging stones from a nearby quarry and carrying them up the stairs.

“Aaaack!”

There were no safety measures so quite a few people fell from the tower. Weed smiled like he was accepting candy from a child abductor.

“It seems like a wonderful place. I originally liked high places.”

“That is great. It is a great honour to be able to die here.”

“Can I really meet my mother if I work here?”

“Of course. But if you run then we will kill your mother.”

“Uh huh! I will never run.”

“If you work around the clock then you can quickly meet your mother. In the distant... Kukuku....”

The knights left and then the tower guards shouted at him.

“Hey there, little boy! Don’t just stand there, work!”

“Yes!”

Weed shouted and vigorously carried the rocks.

He transformed into a nord and the basic stats were high so he could easily carry the weight of the rocks.

Of course, he was going to spend a day or two here so he needed to pretend to have a tough time.

“Then let’s get started.”

He had safely arrived at the tower and a construction site was familiar to him.

Weed carried the rock up the stairs.



'20 thousand 6,237, 20 thousand 6,238, 20 thousand 6,239...."

Weed counted the number of columns while he climbed the Sky Tower. The staircase that rose into the sky was enough to make someone dizzy.

The workers rose and descended so the height of the stairway was quite low. It wasn't good for the short legs of an orc or nord as one stair had a height of 30 centimetres.

A high rise apartment had 1,000 stairs so a tower with more than 10,000 stairs would be much higher than a mountain. Once it was 20,000 stairs, it had continued through the clouds.

From then on, the ground looked like a small toy from the tower. His eyes could see the entire Embinyu camp, rotten river and Barren Howling Ruins.

'There are at least 1 million monsters and fanatics.'

Although that wasn't a specific head count, the earth and sky was overflowing with medium and large monsters. He needed to break down the walls of the stronghold of fanatics and knights!

'They failed to destroy the continent with these numbers. Those incompetent bastards.'

Rather than being frightened, Weed thought it was pathetic. The bad guys had strong forces but the knights were careless when fighting.

‘Indeed, society really compensates for stinginess. Is this a reward for the effort of the villains?’

There was also a landing where slaves could rest briefly.

“What should we do?”

“I don’t know. All life will die.”

“Did you see the nord a few days ago? He was thrown alive into a boiling pot.”

“Wasn’t the flesh melted away and the bones given to the birds?”

The slaves didn’t have useful information and only told cruel and gloomy stories.

“Heuller-nim? We can’t recklessly talk about him. If we gossip anywhere then we will be devoured.”

“There is an omnipotent person. Do you see that elderly elf over there? He has been here for 100 years. According to what he said, Heuller-nim looks younger than ever.”

“The weather will change and it will become dark. A might magic is also contained in this tower. Isn’t that enough to call him a god?”

There were guards every 4 or 5 floors in order to whip the slaves who were sitting around.

“Go up faster. If you delay then I will throw you to the prey.”

“Please, please spare me!”

“Ohhhuk!”

The slaves made groaning noises while carrying up sand and stones. The tower was filled with a gloomy atmosphere of fear and death.

Any impressionable person might shed tears of empathy when seeing the situation!

‘Hah, I’m bored and sleepy. The stairs are really long.’

Weed quietly climbed to the top of the tower. He felt breathless as he reached approximately 40,000 steps.

“It is a really tremendous height. I didn’t realize the tower was this high.’

He had gone beyond the clouds for a while and there were no strong winds. He didn't usually come up to this height even when riding the wyverns. Looking down at the ground from the tower was enough to make someone afraid of heights and it felt like he was floating in the sky.

The area of the upper floors of the tower decreased until it was only the width of a small room.

Perhaps this was the tallest building on the entire Versailles Continent.

From now on, only stairs with no railing endlessly rose into the sky. The stairs heading towards the end of the sky!

‘Hrmm.’

Weed could see the top part of the tower. Like the eyes of a devil, looking down on the dismal earth. The top of the tower was built to resemble dark, red eyes.

There was 600 metres remaining until he reached that place.

‘It resembles my landlord's eyes when he looked down at me from the 3rd floor.’

The landlord didn't just watch a person's face.

He calculated whether the person could pay this month's rent, the security deposit, whether he should raise the rent, damage or vandalism, stealing, eating and various other things!

The confidence of a predator at the top of the hierarchy looking down on a herbivore.

Weed felt nervous whenever that door opened to collect the monthly rent. Of course, he would never dare use the washing machine on a sunny day and would wait until it was overcast to use the clothesline in the yard.

The eyes of the tower reminded him of the landlord's gaze that dug into his bone.

"Come down when you are finished!"

"Yes."

The guards urged him so Weed left the stone behind and descended the stairs.

This was sufficient for a brief reconnaissance.

Chapter 4: People Of The North

Northern users who lost their lives in the battle connected back to Royal Road.

Contrary to expectations of a sombre atmosphere from the loss, they were actually jubilant. They had experienced death and their minds were filled with thoughts of revenge on the Haven Empire.

“Let’s drive them back.”

“Let’s go. Show our patience!”

The northern users rushed back to the Haven Empire coming to invade.

“Let’s go, Toadstool Porridge unit!”

“Don’t say our deaths have no meaning. We will die!”

The reckless tactic that had no effect was repeated! It seemed completely crazy.

But Lafaye expected that after a few defeats, they would give up and he could conquer the north.

“We are the Grass Porridge Cult. We might be defeated in battle

but our hearts won't turn."

"Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge! Grass Porridge!"

The stubborn northern users consistently fought day and night.

As the king of the Arpen Kingdom, Weed had captured the hearts of the users. A mysterious adventurer with good governance. There wouldn't be a high tax revenue in the future but the result was that the users felt deeply about the Arpen Kingdom.

Still, the fundamentally strong firepower of the Haven Empire meant they couldn't even approach or do much damage. Magic shields, placement of warriors with high health and defense and ranged attacks meant there was no possibility of killing the Haven Empire's army.

Even if groups of soldiers were killed, the overall degree meant it could be ignored. Although the soldiers of the Haven Empire decreased a little bit, the experience from winning the war meant their power was supplemented.

The difference between regular soldiers and elite soldiers tempered by war was like the difference between heaven and earth!

Morale, class skills and levels went up quickly.

"We need to use a wide variety of ways to stop them."

“Let’s find a weakness. I will protect what is mine.”

The high level users and high ranking members of the Grass Porridge Cult started thinking of different angles while the reckless battle was continuing.

Nevertheless, they realized that their tactics were increasingly limited. Even if they won against 50,000 soldiers of the Haven Empire, they would just be smashed by another 100,000.

The operation aimed at finding any gaps in the Haven Empire. And the players of Royal Road had a wide variety of careers in reality.

Lafaye used excellent strategies and tactics but there were also users in the north who understood his movements.

“They stick together well. But if we don’t continue to attack, they will disperse to quickly occupy the north. This is where we can significantly delay the conquest.”

A former sergeant cried out confidently in Morata’s square. The Haven Empire was like evil villains so his spirit responded.

“They will head towards the east and Vargo Fortress. The major cities that are the heart of the north will also be destroyed.”

“We have a lot of land with nothing there. Many users have been focused on mine development so there are many empty lands.

The weapons and armour dropped in battle is a huge loss. We should arrange ways to recover that.”

“If they advance then the blacksmiths can take refuge. And let’s respond by dividing the units in an organized manner.”

A captain who graduated from the military academy and finished the military service came out.

“When looking at the topographic view, their march to Morata will deal the most damage. If we have a fortress then it will be easier to block them... Unfortunately, now it can’t be helped.”

The gathered users then spoke.

“We just need to create a fortress!”

“Why have you given up already? The only thing we have left is the people!”

Thanks to the Haven Empire’s invasion, the users doing quests, hunting and dungeon exploration all returned to the city.

“The Sesame Porridge unit has arrived just now.”

“The Black Sesame Porridge unit has been organized. All members are welcome.”

“Bamboo Shoots Porridge unit, we are too weak to participate in battle but we will support in any way.”

Currently the 1st, 2nd and 3rd units were fighting against the Haven Empire. All the northern users wanted to resist the Haven Empire but only the essential people gathered at the squares.

“Architects should build and install defense facilities at the fortress.”

“Is it possible for those guys to persuade people while marching?”

“What persuasion! Simply making a fortress with high walls is enough to make it last a day! I carried at least 50 stones while participating in the construction of the pyramid!”

The northern users specialized in labour thanks to King Weed!

They immediately started construction of defensive fortresses. Widely scattered glass pieces and iron were picked up on the march.

It was difficult to collect things after the battle but bringing along even 1 cooper would make things pile up like a mountain! Cheap labour was the driving force behind the north.

Meanwhile, the users with tactical knowledge examined the terrain to form a systematic defense plan against the Haven Empire's invasion.

“We can't win even with this. It might slow down the advance but it isn't enough against the powerhouse Haven Empire.”

“What if level 300~400 people fought in the army?”

“They are a bunch of strangers so a unit of NPC soldiers would fight better together. War is like that. And they are marching in a tactical and orderly manner so there is no telling what will happen.”

“Our power will continue to weaken unless they make a crucial mistake....”

“How long can we hold out? A week? A month?”

“If Morata is destroyed then it will have repercussions for the entire kingdom and the palace is likely to fly away as well.”

“Even if the users continue to fight, we still have our greatest weakness.”

Morata was the hub of production, commerce, religion and adventure in the north so it was an important symbol. The area

was near grain fields and if Morata was turned to ashes then all traffic throughout the north would be paralysed.

The Haven Empire's primary goals were Morata and the Earth Palace.

“The whole plan should be designed around Morata. We must keep the city even if a few million players have to die daily.”

“We can make the Royal Palace again if it crashes. But protecting Morata is a must. At least until Weed-nim can get back.”

“Will things change if he comes back?”

“I don't know. But he should show up even if it is just before we are defeated. Weed the God of War will leave behind hope. Isn't the Haven Empire also afraid of Weed succeeding in his quest which is why they're attacking now?”

“The Haven Empire is definitely strong. However, the north will be kept with our hands while we wait for our hero.”

“I accept. It was impossible for us to gather in the north if it wasn't for Weed. Now Weed is the hope of the north. And we have to hold out and weaken the Haven Empire until he gets back.”

The Grass Porridge Cult's war command centre didn't have a formal configuration. Apart from the leaders in battle, 100 people were gathered to discuss the defense plans.

The plan was immediately conveyed to the northern users. There wasn't a forced command as users followed on a voluntary basis.

“Architect-nim told me that we should build walls 20 metres high where the river connects.”

“During the day?”

“Yes.”

“The amount of time doesn't matter. 20 metres is a little low so let's put it at 40 metres.”

The cities continued to organize combat troops to stop the Haven Empire.

“The Dawn of Martyrdom combat troops will gather in the court over there.”

“We will attack in the morning. It is limited to the first 1 million people.”

It was difficult to measure the scale of the northern users but it was common to see hundreds of thousands in a unit. It was due to the number of beginners starting Royal Road! More than 70% of them started in the north so there were roughly 10 million beginners gathered outside Morata!

The roads and inns were full of people making the journey for the war. And while a heated discussion was occurring in the northern command post, an elderly man arrived.

He was a warrior wearing shabby level 150 equipment. In the informal atmosphere of the north, a person's outfit didn't signify their true level. He wore common products rather than equipment and many people were surprised when they saw the old man's face.

“Huck! Chief of Staff-nim!”

The Chief of Staff of South Korea who honourably stepped down! 10 years ago! The north contained multiple users from Korea and other countries.

Among the elderly were former aircraft carrier captains, air force commanders, defense ministers and other high ranking officials.

“Hulhul, this is the age where we fight for our freedom.”

“My blood is boiling at the thought of fighting against the Empire.”

“We are weak but shouldn't we try properly? Is there anyone who specializes in guerrilla warfare?”

“I will call a call a special warfare commander. He has retired for

1 year.”

“Bring some people from the special forces and intelligence.”

“Call some people form the logistics support group to take care of the supplies.”

Due to voluntary participation that was beyond imagination, the north was being reconstructed into a true display of tactics.

This completely overturned Lafaye’s prediction.

Of course, the majority of users were beginners even if a plan was established. Compared to the might Imperial Army, the inexperienced users were just a weakness.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

The Central Continent branch of the Grass Porridge Cult!

They suffered under the rule of the Haven Empire.

“Our brethren in the north.”

“I know they will fight. We can count on them.”

“The resistance should be fun.”

The Grass Porridge Cult did a lot in the Central Continent.

There were many unstable regions in the Haven Empire so it was inevitable that rebels would form in the cities. Important fortresses were stations throughout the Haven Empire to prevent an army's rebellion since any movement above a certain scale would be cut off.

The former capital of the kingdom had a central fountain, sculptures of Emperor Bardray and government offices. The residents of ruined kingdoms were oppressed.

The existing Central Continent only poured forces into the war. If they won then it would be a jackpot while it would be their downfall if they were defeated!

Of course, there were users in the Hermes Guild that had a prominent role in long-term affairs.

Security was good, there were strongholds for production and trade and unstable areas were turned into training grounds for soldiers. Commercial facilities, cultural buildings and tax cuts were all designed to raise the people's loyalty.

But there were some tricky areas ruled with force. They deliberately destroyed cities to force the city's residents to relocate or cut off the food supply to leave them starving to death. They ruled with fear and whips so there was minimal failure in the wide territories of the Haven Empire.

The original users and residents of the conquered Central Continent suffered greatly so they were worthy of praise and admiration.

The reign of the Haven Empire was sophisticated.

In the beginning, the Haven Empire wasn't as experienced when they occupied the Kallamore Kingdom! There were large and small resistance armies that periodically ran amok to annoy the Haven Empire.

The Haven Empire was filled with users who disliked the Hermes Guild so they needed to place troops to monitor and control so there wouldn't be any accidents. Their tactics meant there was no hope for the dissenting opponents!

Only outstanding users like the Bandit King Steiner could flow against the Haven Empire's rule.

There would be a notification whenever the rule of the Haven Empire was consolidated. Numerous users on the continent were resigned and accepted the situation.

The Hermes Guild used a myriad of effort and strength in order to conquer the Central Continent and eventually the entire Versailles Continent. The combined anti-Hermes Guild who resisted were defeated.

They waited for the prestigious guilds to weaken through disputes with each other before the Haven Empire swept in. They used the endless turmoil to unify the continent.

When looking at the urban planning and troop deployment, it was clear that they had been prepared for the conquest.

Recently, the Embinyu Church that had undercut their power had disappeared. After the conquest of the Central Continent, the balance had returned to a more stable state.

The Grass Porridge Cult branch in the Central Continent could only watch without anything to do.

“There is no work to do here.....”

“Do you want to go hunting?”

“I don’t know. Should we just go to the north?”

“What will we do there?”

“I want to see it before it is destroyed by the Haven Empire. We can also see the battle up close.”

“We don’t know if it will be finished by the time we arrive.... Anyway, let’s just go.”

Users from the Central Continent started moving to the north. There were a few beginners but also a significant number of level 300 and 400 people.

They really wanted to see the end of the fight.



Unsung heroes!

“The military installations from the Haven Empire continue to be an eyesore.”

“Even the north has become a little boring.”

There were users in Royal Road who liked to hunt alone.

Some did it for money like the Dark Gamers while others were office workers or self-employed with no time to play.

Anyway, a significant number of them had natures that liked being alone!

If a party was urgently needed then they would obtain it from the square. But unless they were high level, a random party could create a crisis with just one small mistake. It was also common for disputes over items to occur.

While some people enjoyed hunting in a party and making new friends, others couldn't help feeling angry due to their natures. There were those who would receive serious damage in Royal Road due to their colleagues.

They could just curse and terminate the connection when they could overcome a problem. Furthermore, they could take all the loot after suffering through a dungeon.

Whether a person hunted in a party or alone, there was a difference in the amount of time wasted.

Depending on the class and the growth of specific skills, some people weren't suited to hunting in a party. For example, it might not be useful for a warrior to bring an archer with fast running skills while hunting.

'Well, I don't need friends. I've been alone for my entire life.'

'Girlfriend? Hmmm... Probably not for me. Once I earn a lot of money and grow old, I can enter a nursing home....'

There were some with no girlfriend or friends in the world. Even if they couldn't find a girlfriend in reality, there was enough time in Royal Road.

It was common for those who hunted and adventured alone in the Central Continent to cross over to the north.

Users who succeeded and caused the residents to talk about them were sometimes called unsung heroes!

Whether it was raising levels or important adventures, they enjoyed Royal Road in their own way. So they normally had high skill proficiencies and a high level.

“I will go see the fight.”

“A long war would also be okay. I worked as a mercenary in the Central Continent and the money....”

“I hated the Haven Empire originally.”

“There are many pretty girls in the Grass Porridge Cult. Perhaps I might just end up as cannon fodder.”

Thus the users that normally moved alone also gathered in the north.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

Geomchi-3 rubbed his palms together.

“Teacher-nim’s insight is really excellent.”

If there was a flattery competition then Geomchi-4 would be the

master.

“Can you really predict the outcome of the battle?”

Geomchi had already predicted the outcome of the battle between the northern users and the Haven Empire.

The one-sided defeat of the northern users! He was literally correct.

“What is your secret, Teacher-nim?”

Geomchi-5 said with a look of sincere respect. He had been scared of anything since his teens.

After being terrified, he started learning the sword until he became so good that people would suck up to Geomchi-5.

Geomchi watched the Haven Empire beyond the ridge and said naturally.

“Watch the people below to see how they will start moving.”

“Ah, yes!”

“Amazing, Teacher-nim!”

The disciples that had overcome adversity in their decades of life were deeply moved.

“But are we just going to watch?”

“The calibre of those troops are enough to loosen my body. I will show those arrogant bastards the bitter taste of this world.”

“We will soon move.”

The instructors and trainees were also training. They used a myriad of swords, axes, maxes, sickles, hammers and bows. The power obtained from using Weapons Mastery was very diverse.

Geomchi-2 ate meat when excited but he was the successor so he needed to pay attention to his position.

The instructors and students weren't weak but it was unknown if they could fight against the powerful forces of the Haven Empire.

“Wouldn't we have been unable to win even if we took action last time? The Haven Empire has 3 million troops combined.”

“It is hard. It is hard to know. However, we can't miss this great fight. And how will we get stronger if we can't fight lots of enemies?”

“Of course!”

Geomchi-2 and Geomchi-3 were calm and dependable hyung-nims but now their eyes were burning with a desire to fight.

Royal Road was a place for them to experience enjoyable battles. Swordsmanship wasn't a considerable help in reality so it caused them considerable irritation. Their hearts didn't fear death and they had a strong fighting spirit.

‘I will smash them all.’

‘I need to beat at least 800 warriors.’

‘I can't breathe until I have hit enough people.’

They actually welcomed the powerful army of the Haven Empire.

A man should draw their sword to wield it against an enemy. The efficiency of their muscles surpassed the movie <300> and <505> was now born.



“Chwiik!”

The orcs at Vargo Fortress were filled with complaints.

“My children are too many, chwi chwik. There should be less people in my family, chwiik!”

The orc males complained about the females Usually the females lacked influence but this wasn't the case.

“Yesterday I gave birth to seven and today is nine, chwichichik! My family is bustling, chwichik!”

“It is too hard to feed, chwichik!”

“They are playing in the mud-hut! Go out and hunt, chwikchwik!”

The number of orcs in the north increased exponentially. The day after baby orcs were born, they would be dating in the village.

“I like you, chwi chwit.”

“I often hear that I am pretty, chwiik!”

“Your hips are really large. Cwik, cwik!”

The orcs dated, got married, had children and the cycle repeated. Children were born in an infinite loop! A pair of orcs would have an unfathomable number of children after 3 months but this was just the nature of the orcs.

The early orc settlements that had come across the sea quickly expanded. Most of them settled in the vicinity of Vargo Fortress and flung themselves at the animals and monsters present in the surrounding forests and mountains. They persistently killed monsters so Vargo Fortress could be called the capital of the orcs.

-The orcs are so funny. I can feel a completely different taste from common games.

-I've had experience as an orc for 6 months. I can experience happiness when seeing their family. The excitement of seeing my first baby orc. The number of family members increasing.

-Since then, babies are born at breakfast, lunch and dinner!

-I can now understand my parent's hearts. Shouldering the heavy burden of my family members....

-Should I take the young orcs in my family to hunt and grow as warriors? To humans, honour and intimacy are important but orcs are different. They unconditionally care about their families. Betrayal? That would never happen among the orcs. The downside is that they can't choose many professions but it is the strongest species to relieve stress.

-Won't they grow during careful and slow hunts and adventures? I just need to watch a fight. Then the orc will give birth again....

-Do orcs really own 100 spoons each?

-If how dishes would be washed a day?

The orc species could be chosen so the number of orc users increased until it couldn't be ignored. The orc village was lively compared to the dark elves and the barbarians!

The area around Vargo Fortress were bursting with orcs. It was a little exaggerated but orcs could be seen running around or climbing steep cliffs. And orcs were scattered throughout the mountains around Vargo Fortress to look for monsters.

The promise to settle in the north!

[The Northern Continent, Vargo Fortress is brimming with various other species!

Barbarians, dwarves, elves and orcs all flow through Vargo Fortress.

The dwarves are willing to repair the fortress so that strong monsters can't take it down easily.

And if you want to experience the wide world of orcs and their families, you can eat and rub shoulders with them before leaving.

Once you experience the different variety of life, it is unlikely you will want to leave.]

Even a few orcs would quickly expand their numbers.

The merchants and farmers in the north eyed the orcs.

“The economic scale is based on the population. The future of the orcs....! Sale of food. The real cost of selling! Sell until there is nothing left.”

“I’m envious of the well grown orc villages. They are good at breeding and can be used to guard the crops.”

The merchants increased their fixed customers while farmers brought the orcs into hazardous farming areas.

Merchants would also supply food to the orc village. They could already sell a lot more after just a few days.

There were also the loot the orcs obtained while hunting. The profit from bulk trade of japtem. The system for professional merchants meant that they couldn’t ignore japtem.

New land was pioneered for the purpose of farmers to grow crops to feed to orcs. They started cultivating the land and harvested the crops. There were as many as 4,000 orcs brought to guard the land.

“Chwiik!”

“Chwik!”

The baby orcs that followed clamoured when they were hungry.

The mission of a farmer! This mission wouldn't allow them to see someone die of hunger in front of them so many of the harvested grains ended up with the orcs.

“Chwi chwik, we are indebted to you. We will pay you back.”

Their increased their favour with the orcs. They protected the farmers in battle and saved many necessary things.

A long time ago in the history of the Versailles Continent, the human species was considered inferior to the orcs. The orcs lived scattered over a wide land and defeated powerful monsters in a group. They were free but a series of events caused a number of species to decrease by a lot.

But now the orcs increased rapidly until they had almost reverted to their former glory. And the north was a perfect place for the orcs to live. There was abundant food and strong monsters.

Weed had gone around the continent and reconciled four species as well as appreciating the buildings in Ratzeberg. King Weed discovered the buildings and constructed buildings that the orcs were familiar with. A number of facilities were also built using orc technology.

Of course, the buildings weren't only for the orcs. There were a wide range of structures for dwarves, elves and humans.

Dung! Dung! Dung!

Adventurers found the relic 'Hechwi's Drum.' Orcs could beat it when they were in danger.

Then a telepathic message was be delivered to all nearby orcs.

"Chwi chwit, someone is attacking us."

"The place where I was born, chwi chwi chwi chwit! It is in danger."

"The place with delicious food and females... Chwik! But where is it? Chwi chwit!"

The orc warriors in the north started packing up and moving. Each orc tribe sent their elites towards Vargo Fortress.

They were sent the following day. The next day, the next day....

Chapter 5: The Will Of Great Emperor Weed

“Move faster!”

“If you sit down then I will cut your neck.”

“I know that whipping you will enable you to move faster. Have the taste of Roker’s whip!”

Weed leisurely watched the Sky Tower’s guards while carrying the rocks up.

Attitude and behaviour was important in labour. It wasn’t necessary to run wild but he couldn’t act too slowly either or it would draw attention.

His speed gave the impression that he was working moderately hard. His expression was sincere and diligent while he breathed harshly. His superior stats meant he wouldn’t feel tired but he felt enjoyment from deceiving them.

Most of the slaves in Royal Road had more vitality than humans so they climbed the stairs considerably quickly.

He was bored climbing the stairs for several hours so he looked forward to occasionally looking out the window. The earth was

getting further away as he moved towards the sky.

A pleasant scenery!

He felt refreshed as he started sweating.

“Hrmm, you’re doing pretty well for a young child. Wonderful.”

“Exemplary work for Embinyu.”

Sometimes he unexpectedly received praise from the Embinyu guards.

‘No, this isn’t it. I ended up adapting to the labour.’

Once he started, his hands and feet automatically moved. He felt stupid as one day passed!

When he was younger, he would do simple, repetitive labour like sewing eyes on a doll that would allow his mind to rest. Carrying the stone while climbing the stairs was an endlessly boring and frustrating task. The smell of sweat flowing from the bodies of the other slaves made it even worse.

Weed shook his head.

‘I need to proceed with the quest so I can’t spend too long doing

this job. I also need to find a way.'

It was annoying carrying the rocks up and then heading back down. While climbing down the tower, he noticed the walls were filled with graffiti.

-My son is dead.

-I'm hungry. I have no power to move. Kuku. This place is hell.

-All dead. Parents, siblings and couples have all died in this tower.

-My son is still alive. When will I die?

There was apparently no information. Apart from the humans, the other species also left messages but he couldn't read them.

Adventurers, magicians or historians could learn the language or other species which would help them find clues in quests. Sculptures, painters or people who looked through post-war history or old pieces of artwork could also grasp some things. Language, mastery of emotions and item identification.

In Weed's case, he had the tenacity to soldier through and find clues in his quest.

Although warriors could resolve a quest, it was like stomping on

the ground compared to another profession's delicate solution.

Weed also envied the adventures of adventurers.

‘Sweeping all the treasures in the world....’

Adventurers who found treasures that had been buried for a long time in the north were able to obtain fame and wealth.

‘If I was an adventurer then I would be holding a shovel and sack all day while digging up graves.’

Weed continued searching every bit of the walls and ceilings while climbing the stairs. Only complicated and meaningless phrases were written.

He didn't find any traces of an outstanding talent like a master sculptor in this tower. The Embinyu Church didn't bother to decorate the Sky Tower and the slaves were forced into labour so they didn't feel like any artworks. Therefore, the only thing he saw was the graffiti.

A few days passed. Nothing special happened as the Sky Tower continued rising.

In fact, Weed was so busy working that he didn't know what was going on outside the tower.

‘I need to do something.’

Weed continued thinking. The time left to stop the Embinyu Church was running out while he was carrying the rocks.

There was only a bit of time left in Royal Road to stop the Embinyu Church and prevent history from changing.

‘So far I’ve only helped the construction and the work is almost finished.’

He knew enough about the complicated structure inside the tower. There were 30 large floors with accommodation and a training centre for the fanatics. In addition, they were solidly built with sufficient thickness to withstand the weight of the rocks on the floors above.

Once it started stretching towards the sky, the walls and pillars became thinner and there were special altars designed to absorb mana. This would reduce the weight and even skip certain floors.

Guards and knights of the Embinyu Church were stationed at key points in the tower and they could come running through the narrow stairs and passages if required.

The tower had exactly 1,000 floors. Only the stairs needed to be finished.

‘How should I do this?’

Weed stood at a crossroads of choice.

He could wait until he heard from his subordinates and Ahellun or make a careful plan and move alone. His goals of collapsing the Sky Tower and stopping the Chaos Dragon were quite formidable.

The guards patrolled every moment of the day and night so he couldn't hide in a corner. He had scouted by infiltrating the interior but it was impossible to climb up outside and enter through the window. The ranking knights and priests were also scattered everywhere like pebbles along the road.

Even if there was only one senior priest, their combat power meant it would have a devastating effect. The placement and scale of the enemies. Information was essential in a quest like this.

‘What is life? I will take action tomorrow morning.’



Weed had left in order to stop the Embinyu Church but Seo-yoon remained in the warring period.

After the battle at the fortress ended, Saint Ahellun had freed her from her role in the final secret sculpting technique quest.

Ddiring!

-You have completed the quest.

Saint Ahellun has stopped the summoning of the devil's consciousness.

Your behaviour has successfully accomplished Hilderun's adventure so you will be an unsung hero.

Wisdom, Charm, Dignity and Concentration will increase by 25 as a reward for the quest.

All your infamy has been removed.

Your fame is the best.

Glorious Blessing of Strength has been received.

-Your part in the final secret sculpting technique quest has been completed and additional compensation is received.

Glorious Blessing of Strength: You have been blessed by Ahellun's divine power.

This will remain for 160 days and will give your body a strong protective power.

She has spent quite a long time on Weed's final secret sculpting technique so it wasn't a good compensation. But her stats had climbed during the adventure so it would be a large help when returning to the original world.

'It was nice....'

Seo-yoon was simply satisfied being able to help Weed with his adventure.

And, Ahellun's actions resulted in a quest.

-Despite the warlock Chakujel's ritual failing, the summoned consciousness of the devil is still lingering. He has lined up another victim.

Hilderun carried the planted seed of a sleeping devil as Ahellun's divine power hasn't fully removed it.

"The soul of a devil is very dark and persistent and isn't easily destroyed by divine power.

Once a significant amount of time has passed since the summoning ritual, the soul will completely vanish from your body."

"Will the devil inside me wake up?"

“Once it makes contact with the divine power, the soul would be able to act carelessly. The light of your life will return the devil to hell.”

“I’m glad to know that.”

“If you fight with someone, the devil will be forced to convey power to you. This is because if the human flesh experiences sudden death then the soul of the devil will receive a great impact.”

The power of the devil in your blood can wake up.

In order for there to be no more victims, execute Chakujel and stop the summoning of the devil.

If you accept the quest then the divine power and devil’s power can be used.

Level of Difficulty: Warring Period History quest

Compensation: Combat experience and achievements.

Quest Restrictions: The quest will fail if you die.

You will be returned to your original world.

Seo-yoon accepted the quest.

She couldn't just leave without taking care of Chakujel. He had tried to kill Weed!

That's why she headed towards Duke Alhamd who ruled Reperen Castle. Just like the Portu King, Duke Alhamd was another disciple of Chakujel.

Seo-yoon walked towards the large gates in the middle of the night. The guards saw her and held out their spears.

“Who are you? You're not allowed to enter.”

“Huhuhu, there is no need for you to go inside. If you are sold to slave traders then we can enjoy considerable wealth.”

In Hilderun's role, Seo-yoon only needed to survive so she stayed in the desert area while managing the mercenary guild.

So her formerly ferocious appearance as a berserker had shrunk. But right now, Weed was the only one who could stop her.

Sururung!

Seo-yoon took out a sword with lightning speed.

“Young girl, if you want to enter the castle then you should... Cough!”

A silver line cut across the guards. In the next moment, Seo-yoon grabbed the spear a guard dropped while holding her sword in her other hand.

-The devil Strang has helped you in battle.

3% of the devil's combat power is currently available.

Maximum health has increased.

“This conceited female....”

“Not scared despite being alone. Die!”

The guards immediately hurled profanities at her. Even in the warring period, the discipline of the guards at the gates were a mess. And in this case, they wasted time yelling at Seo-yoon.

Her sword and spear moved, stabbing and chopping at the guards. Those near the gates were devastated!

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

As a berserker, dealing with half a dozen guards was as simple as drinking coffee.

-The devil Strang is satisfied with your combat skills.

4% of the devil's combat power is currently available.

You can use its magic.

Basic black magic has been acquired.

Maximum mana has increased.

“.....”

Seo-yoon picked up the loot after knocking down the guards.

In fact, the loot from the warring period wouldn't remain but she had learned the minor habit of picking up any japtem from Weed. Later she automatically did it without any awareness.

Deng deng deng!

The emergency bell started ringing as the gates opened and troops poured out.

“What are you doing?”

“.....”

Seo-yoon didn't answer as she headed towards them and her sword moved like a gale of wind.

She didn't complain or speak a monologue while fighting like Weed. Just like a berserker, she stuck to fighting and killed everyone who flew at her!

She constantly levelled up and was able to use more of the devil's power.

-The devil Strang is satisfied.

-The devil Strang is lit up with joy.

More magic power has been gained.

-The devil Strang rejoices whenever it sees you fight.

The devil's existence was like a guardian as it found enjoyment like this was a game.

The destruction of Duke Alhamd's castle! The place was emptied but she still hadn't met Chakujel.

“.....”

“Teacher-nim has left this area to find materials. Please spare my life....”

Seo-yoon left Duke Alhamd alive. It was in order to give him a chance to repent.

She left and continued fighting. Seo-yoon continued fighting Duke Alhamd's knights and assassins in order to raise the power of the devil. And she finally fought Chakujel!

“You are the girl from that time, how..... Now I have to go but I'll be back soon.”

Chakujel tried to run away but he was still stuck in Seo-yoon's palm. She pursued him while destroying the castle. And Chakujel finally died after six days!

Seo-yoon completed the quest.

-Terminate the Devil's Summoning Ritual has been completed.

The warlock Chakujel has vanished.

His fleeting ambitions and plans will be buried deeply with his death.

-You have acquired experience in battle as a devil warrior.

A special stat has been acquired.

Once you open your eyes to a dangerous power, there is a possibility that no enemies will remain in front of you.

-You have solved the secret history of the devil in the warring period and earned an achievement.

Fame has increased by 21,394.

Faith has increased by 7.

-The quest has been completed.

You have completed your role and can return to the original time zone.

Do you want to go back now?

Seo-yoon wanted to wait for Weed. But he was busy with his adventure and might not be able to come back to see her.

‘They are there.’

She suddenly wanted to go back to the original time zone because she had something to do.

Hermes Guild!

In order to take care of them, Seo-yoon decided to leave the warring period.

“I will go back.”

Everything in front of Seo-yoon started to blur. Flowers were blooming and there were trees. The stars passed back as quickly as light.

And after a while, she returned to Morata.



Mapan gathered some reliable merchants and the NPC residents at Morata’s library.

“No. It is nothing. This is....”

They were looking for something as they browsed through parchment bundles and history books. There were many people who went to the library to gain knowledge.

It was require for magicians and scholars to raise their knowledge and magic stats and adventurers also visited to find information from Morata.

In the case of merchants, they were less interested in records of the past. Sometimes they would find information about cities to open a trade route but that rarely happened. The daily trading of goods that fluctuated was more important to city merchants.

Mapan was responsible for a massive amount of production and distribution through the north yet he was stuck in the library!

“The Pallos Empire... The Pallos Empire... Ugh, there are so many records that I don’t know where to start. Surely it is in Morata’s library?”

Mapan had received a very important mission from Weed so he was searching through the records. It was a job that exuded the smell of gold and jewellery.

“I can’t miss out on this chance to do a mission for Weed-nim. But if the information isn’t in the library... No, it has to be. This is the information storage centre of the continent so information about him should appear here.”

He read all types of things about the Pallos Empire, the desert warriors and the treasure associated with them. The history of the continent constantly fluctuated so there were many new books in the library.

Even the relevant books didn't have a secret sentence when he looked.

“It is a password that doesn't require the help of a linguist or an adventurer.... Did I miss it?””

Mapan had all types of thoughts. And finally, he got a clue from the story of the Storyteller Drinker in the Kejan area.

[This year's harvest was lean. There was no food or leather for winter clothes.

His Majesty was generous but it wasn't enough so the number of friends I could drink alcohol with in the village decreased.

I couldn't get drunk during the winter.

This morning, I discovered some monsters snooping near the village. They were probably trying to invade to obtain food. The monster soon returned and brought 2,000 of its kin with it.

The guards fought while I climbed up the roof of the tallest

building and opened my remaining alcohol bottle.

“They will probably break down the walls to kill me so should I drink this alcohol quickly?”

I had years of experience drinking so I could probably drink all the alcohol if I poured it into my mouth. I listened to the sound of the soldiers fighting the monsters while slowly enjoying my last sip.

After drinking the alcohol, I would regret it as my life would soon disappear. Maybe a little more was remaining inside the bottle.

But the monsters didn't succeed in their invasion.

Is it acceptable for a village to only have 100 soldiers?

Not at all. I suddenly saw some fellows while drinking my last bottle of alcohol.

Monsters near the edge of the village were completely destroyed.

Only 20 people were able to kill them.

There were 50 men wearing thick coats of armour surrounded carriages that approached the village.

The monsters that tried to invade the village changed directions but were wiped out.

I hadn't drank enough to be drunk so I couldn't help rubbing my eyes at the unbelievable fact.

What would that slightly curved sword be called? Anyway, one swing would take out dozens of monsters.

They didn't miss one monster. Come to think of it, they had been extremely cruel from the first moment they started trying to kill the monsters.

The men that destroyed the monsters approached the village.

The village's closed wooden gates quietly opened. Many of our village's soldiers made the right choice.

They put down their swords that had broken after a few swings.

"It is really cold. Do you have any warm alcohol?"

Winter was already passing to the people in the north but these people seemed extremely cold.

They stayed for a day before leaving with their carriages.

8 large carriages linked together. Marks were left deep in the ground so I don't know what they were carrying.

And I don't want to know. If I'm caught stealing then I would lose my life.

Well, I wrote the story but I still can't believe it.

You don't have to trust a liar and drunkard like me. If I drink more alcohol then I will forget the entire thing.]

Ddirring!

-The story of the Storyteller Drinker in the Kejan area has been read.

-Knowledge has increased by 1.

“This is great!”

Mapan smiled wildly. It took a while but he finally found what he wanted.



“This adventure has finally ended.”

“It was really hard.”

Pale and his other colleagues were completing the last part of a quest.

They wanted to stop the quest in order to participate in the battle against the Haven Empire. But the quest was in full swing so they couldn't stop here.

Therefore they finished the quest after indescribable hardships and reported it to the important NPCs around the north.

The reward was a relic of the great knight Ivanstein of the Niflheim Empire as well as a booklet containing information about how to establish a knights division. The NPCs they reported gathered talented residents and used the booklet to create knights.

Romuna and Bellot were the most delighted.

“I knew it. The title of ‘Elegant Lady like a Rose’ really matches me! It really is perfect for me. Hohoho.”

“Bring adorned with jewels and feathers... Omo, look at these shiny things.”

And one man was quietly crying in a corner.

“Huhuhuk.”

Pale had experienced death three times on this quest. He died so his damage was big compared to his other colleagues.

-I will remain. Run away!

-These guys are strong so can you do it?

-No. I won't give up until the end. I can handle it! I won't blame you if I die.

'I shouldn't be nice. It is a poison.'

Pale received an enlightenment about the hardships of a man in life! Surka was punching the air while Pale was getting his enlightenment!

Surka punched the air lightly! Her fist sparked every time. Her appearance and equipment all over off the impression of a high level user.

"We can now participate in the war."

"I've been waiting for this. My fishing rod will weave them together...."

Zephyr had a bloody smile on his face. He had a quiet presence when hunting or doing quests. However, there were many

opportunities in a war.

“All of them are finished.”

But Pale and his colleagues couldn't participate in the war against the Haven Empire. Mapan called them all to his mansion.

“I have an important announcement.”

“What is it? Have you ever succeeded in another trade?”

Surka asked in a dismissive tone.

In recent years, Mapan had become one of the coolest merchants on the continent. His cool-headed market analysis and bold initiatives while expanding his trade and investments caused him to receive a huge profit.

Combat professions couldn't help feeling envious when seeing a merchant's huge wealth!

“Look at this first before I give an explanation.”

Mapan handed them a booklet one by one.

Ddirring!

-The story of the Storyteller Drinker in the Kejan area has been read.

-Knowledge has increased by 1.

A story that increased their knowledge by 1 when they read it. As a magician, Romuna was pleased because it increased her maximum mana but the others didn't care.

Bellot yawned and asked graciously.

“So?”

“And please look at this as well.”

This time Mapan pulled out a book wrapped in gold cloth.

“This was hard to obtain but it is really important data. If you connect the two materials then you will know what I have to say.”

“What is it?”

Irene took the booklet and read slowly.

[Title: Pallos Empire's hidden secret?

Written by historian Lucrud.

The Pallos Empire was founded in the warring period.

The rough warriors emerged onto the continent from the desert with the hero Weed.

The greedy kingdoms were annexed by the desert kingdom and the territory broadened until it became a great empire.

It was formed in a short time but the military power and level was enough to unify the whole continent.

They defeated the army of a dangerous religious group and made all the kingdoms tremble with fear.

The battle at Dulmore Fortress was especially fierce and historians are still talking about it even after the Pallos Empire was destroyed.

It is rare that the fate of a continent depends on one battle and at that time, there were undead and monsters as well as the incredible event of a meteor being summoned.

Great Emperor Weed.

It is the scholars' opinion that the victory was able to be achieved due to him.

It is really questionable how a human like him could become so strong.

And after the Great Emperor Weed abruptly abandoned the Pallos Empire, it enjoyed a brief golden period before declining.

The camel empire collapsed and the warriors returned back to the wild and barren desert. And after ruling over a vast empire for a while, the southern desert had positive reforms.

Transportation connections between countries, trade and production and technological development.

The Pallos Empire interfered in domestic affairs and received a lot of tributes. The residents in the warring period received severe pain due to the authority of nobles and royalty.

In the history records, there have been numerous accounts of the knights abusing or abandoning the poor.

But after the empire disappeared, there were no traces of the treasure piled up in the warehouses.

The Pallos Empire conquered numerous cities and kingdoms and received tributes from other kingdoms.

Where have all the countless treasures that they collected disappeared to?

All the gold and magic treasures obtained from corruption, extravagance and pleasure was just gone?

I, the historian Lucrud skimmed the confidential records associated with the Pallos Empire and found a significant passage.

-The greed of human beings will cause disaster.

I will come back again when the world is on the brink of a crisis.

The power of salvation is in the north.

After a long time, the desert and the north shall become one.

The writer is unknown but records of the senate and the warriors have frequently appeared in the history books.

The only person who can leave such an impact on the Pallos Empire is the Great Emperor Weed.

Weed's strength is timeless and beyond that of a human. A hero who will open the path to the entire continent.

He foresaw the future and left a will behind?

One thing is for sure, the warriors of the Pallos Empire heeded

his words.

The warriors secretly carried out some actions to prepare for the distant future according to his command.

Perhaps this is the reason why the best warriors headed towards the north.]

Ddirring!

-You have found a significant truth in the history of the continent.

This valuable discovery has increased Knowledge by 5 and Wisdom by 2.

Collecting at least 2 clues is necessary to perform this quest.

You can start the 'Hidden Treasures of the Ruler of the Desert' quest.

Irene's eyes started shining.

"What is this?"

Her other colleagues also started reading the booklet. Mapan couldn't conceal the excitement on his face.

“It is a project that requires the best security. And only we can do this job. Because it is directly related to Weed’s pocket.”

“.....!”

Weed’s pocket! The group’s eyes flashed at that word.

“So what do we need to do?”

“I’ve gathered information related to the Pallos Empire from the library.”

Weed had sent Mapan a encrypted document by email. The password was a word linked with a happy death, dreams, hopes and the whole world.

However, it wasn’t difficult for Mapan to find the password. The password was ‘money storehouse.’

Title: If you want to make big money...

After learning about the Pallos Empire in the library, somewhere in the north there is the daunting task of excavating treasure.

I can’t leave this task to other people so this is your first priority.

Hwaryeong's eyes shone after reading the booklet.

“Then Weed has hidden the treasures of the Pallos Empire somewhere in the north?”

“Yes, that's right. Weed had no time to directly bring the treasures to the north. So before leaving for his quest, he directed his subordinates to bury the treasures in the north.”

“.....!”

The Pallos Empire had vigorously proceeded with conquering. Besides, there was also the Great Emperor Weed. The many riches that it plundered was buried somewhere in the north.

Mapan gave a bit more explanation.

“It would be easy if Weed specified a place or terrain where it is buried but that will be difficult. First of all, at the time the Niflheim Empire had existed in the north. If there is a witness then Weed-nim risks changing the future. That's why he set some rules for his subordinates hiding the treasure. And there is a risk that a quest will be generated, benefiting someone else.”

The group was already not listening to Mapan.

Pale's imagination spread.

‘The best bow and quiver.’

Bellot also had a lot of hope.

‘The clothes and jewellery from that era. It was really pretty on the video so I want it.’

Hwaryeong was already absorbed in combining clothes and accessories.

‘What should I wear? Will the short skirt of the desert tribes suit me?’

Anyone would be filled with greed at the thought of finding the Pallos Empire.

Romuna jumped to her feet.

“Where should we look? Right now, move quickly!”



Defeat at Rubkan Gorge.

Destruction of Ranchio Village. The damage makes recovery impossible.

A sea of fire on the Sonak Plains.

The granaries of Arpen Kingdom were plundered.

The Grand Building at Jiobrande was tipped over.

The construction site of the Grand Building at Delnis was destroyed.

The northern users, the so-called northern troops were routed by the Haven Empire's army. The north tried to stop them but were smashed and the cities decimated.

Defeat, defeat, defeat, defeat, defeat!

The stations of Royal Road gave daily updates. This was the hottest period where the viewers paid attention to Royal Road. The interest was higher than office workers towards the holiday season and students towards vacation season.

“As expected, the Haven Empire is the best.”

Yoo Byung-jin watched the broadcast of Royal Road on the television. He could watch it on the screens with the AI but he wanted to hear the thoughts of the commentators and viewers.

“The north is continuing to be defeated and the Haven Empire is powerful enough to be called invincible.”

“God Bardray and his Royal Guards haven’t even participated in the war yet so it seems like the Haven Empire is looking to unify the continent.”

“They didn’t use all their power in the war against the Allied Forces. What is the end of the Haven Empire’s capabilities?”

“This crisis is difficult to gauge and I wonder if Weed the God of War can really overcome it when he returns.”

“Weed’s quest is soon at an important junction while it seems like the Haven Empire will win against the north unless something big happens.”

“You could call Weed the master of adventures. Most of his achievements have been in adventures rather than war. Well, he fought the Immortal Legion but that was still within a quest. But even if he is at a critical period in his adventure, he still has an identity as a king. Ah, maybe he already gave up on his kingdom. When looking at this situation, that might be called a wise decision.”

The broadcaster’s commentators waited for Weed while lamenting the north’s destruction. Every bulletin board associated with Royal Road was filled with posts accusing the Hermes Guild. But with the repeated defeats in battle, all the voices became increasingly pessimistic.

Even Yoo Byung-jin viewed the Haven Empire’s army as being 4

times more powerful than the north. The number of norther users was greater but their firepower wasn't enough.

The army formation, overall balance, experience and skilled commanders, variety of troops and tactical abilities were all superior. All those elements necessary for war were added up to make the north helpless.

No matter what numerical values there were, the situation had already been concluded.

The Haven Empire also had a number of dwarven blacksmiths that created supplies like arrows and daggers. After unifying the Central Continent, the Haven Empire hadn't become lazy but instead came to invade the north.

The gathering of simple beginners didn't have any meaning. The war between the northern troops and the Haven Empire was like ordinary citizens going against war chariot troops.

The level 400 users of the Haven Empire boasted that they had killed thousands of users.

“Nevertheless, they haven't been defeated yet so are they still waiting for Weed? They aren't afraid to die and even vowed revenge. There really are many strange humans.”

Curiously, the commentators and viewers both said it would be difficult for the north but they still anticipation in their hearts. All

eyes that focused on the already damaged north waited for Weed to return.

Yoo Byung-jin was dumbfounded to realize that people thought Weed could stop the Haven Empire.

“This time it really won’t happen. It doesn’t make any sense.”

-Do you want me to calculate the probability of winning if Weed leads the northern troops?

“No. I got it.”

Even if his head wasn’t convinced, his heart seemed to have a different opinion.

“Is this faith? Do I believe that a miracle can be created?”

Yoo Byung-jin stopped watching the television showing the war in the north. Users were being massacred every day by the Haven Empire while cities were changed into ruins.

Rather, he was more interested in Weed’s adventure with the Embinyu Church that will soon take place.

“Weed is once again facing a difficult environment.”

Usually a common person would only experience a certain percentage of unfortunate incidents. Nevertheless, somehow Weed managed to thrive while be given all these opportunities.

Yoo Byung-jin already knew how Nodulle's adventure had developed in the past.

Nodulle and his companions had been scattered after arriving at the Barren Howling Ruins.

“This is... The saint's holy power led me here. My companions might be confused so I have to meet them as soon as possible.”

Nodulle first went around looking for his colleagues. Fortunately he managed to unit with Luhellun and Brevinsun and they sneaked into the Embinyu Church.

Of course, it was an impossible task due to the arduous terrain and the monsters but they battled through the night and broke in. The result was Brevinsun's death in the middle!

Nodulle was caught and stuck in prison to be sacrificed while Luhellun barely managed to escape.

“This is just before the important ritual. The dragon will eat you once it wakes up.”

Nodulle was destined to be sacrificed in the evening to the Chaos Dragon.

A warrior in the olden days that didn't know the unforgiving world showed his bravado on the edge of death!

But that new power allowed him to dramatically escape successfully.

The barbarians and other humans held in the jail heard the story from Nodulle sacrificed their lives to allow Nodulle to escape. The uproar caused by the escaped slaves extended to the entire prison.

"I have the weight of people's blood on my shoulders. This is for their sake... I will stop them."

Nodulle tearfully broke out of jail and found Hestiger and Ahellun fighting the enemy knights.

"How did you get here....?"

"Are you okay?"

"There is no time to talk. The Chaos Dragon will be awakened tonight."

"Let's stop it. There is still time."

They slipped passed the pursuers and infiltrated deep inside.

The Sky Tower was completed and the Chaos Dragon almost awakened so the security of the Embinyu Church was somewhat lax. And once they entered deeper, they discovered a place created by the Embinyu Church filled with enormous amounts of poison.

It would pollute the rivers and lakes so much that no creature could live there. Nodulle was appalled at the sight.

“How could it be so transformed....?”

“This is good. We can make every guard at important checkpoints eat this poison.

“Hestiger, what are you saying!”

“I was already convinced that their evil couldn’t go any deeper. If we don’t stop them then they will harm the continent.”

“Eueuum!”

While Weed picked up money from the streets in 0.1 seconds, Hestiger would agonize over it for more than 2 hours. He suffered after hearing Hestiger and Ahellun’s suggestion to harm people with the poison.

“Let’s do it. Even if we end up going to hell... For the sake of the world!”

And the fanatics and monsters ate poisoned food. That night, the ceremony to awaken the Chaos Dragon began. Tens of thousands of fanatics in the cult ate the poisoned food and died.

“Drink the cup of blood that God Embinyu has given us!”

“Thank you for the blessing of your destruction.”

The fanatics drank at the same time. The highly purified poison melted the fanatics and monsters.

Nodulle and his colleagues went back to the jail and rescued the various species. Time was tight to stop the Chaos Dragon ritual but they needed to save those trapped. The freed people decided to join Nodulle to fight.

“Knight Vagner of the Keltun Kingdom, I am willing to give me life.”

“It is an honour. We will fight together.”

A warrior led those filled with courage and righteousness. As a result, Nodulle was leading thousands of troops after leaving the prison. And after fleeing earlier, Luhellun appeared at the critical moment to interrupt the Chaos Dragon’s brainwashing ceremony.

He stabbed the Chaos Dragon’s eye with a dagger. High priest

Heuller attacked with rage and Luhellun died laughing.

-I am waking up. Ugh, my head... It hurts. My head seems to be breaking.

The Chaos Dragon awoke from a deep sleep!

Originally the Embinyu Church planned to control the dragon's spirit but now they were destroyed by it. A colossal impact that was 10 times Weed's disaster occurred.

The Sky Tower couldn't withstand the dragon's body and came crashing down. Nodulle, Ahellun and his other colleagues united to fight against the minions of the Embinyu Church.

"Divine Judgement of Sin, God's Sword of Repentance and the Heaviest Hell!"

Saint Ahellun's incredible divine magic! The priests of the Embinyu Church turned into grey light and disappeared. The knights couldn't exert half of their abilities due to the blessings and disappeared like dust.

The Chaos Dragon was recklessly attacking everything around it. The dragon's breath exploded everywhere! It was the incredible sight of more than 100,000 Embinyu fanatics melting at the same time.

The fact, the original Ausollet that was brainwashed had an

oppressive nature. But the pain he felt made him attack the creatures around him even more violently.

Ahellun wrapped the divine magic around the dragon's body and said.

"I can't hold him for long. The dragon seems to have gone insane from the brainwashing."

The dragon would smash the Embinyu Church and then destroy the world. The aggression would break the peace so it wasn't significantly different from the Embinyu Church.

"I brought you here but it seems like our time together will end now."

"Ahellun-nim, what are you saying?"

"I will take on the dragon. He still hasn't fully awakened so I can seal him with the power of God."

"But won't there be a large sacrifice to use that power?"

"As long as the dragon's power doesn't come back, there is nothing to lose. I am thankful that I was able to meet such pure people."

And Ahellun used his life force to seal off the Chaos Dragon as

they disappeared into a dark sea.

“You are the culprit for everything. I will tear up my soul to stop the Embinyu Church!”

Even though the Chaos Dragon that shook off the brainwashing had done tremendous damage, high priest Heuller still had tremendous displays of magic. Black magic as well as magical flames, wind and water in the ultimate form flowed freely. The other priests of the Embinyu Church also showed their skills.

While they were able to finish high priest Heuller off, Nodulle and Hestiger paid the price by dying.

“I know this story but it would be difficult to pull off. Can Weed really succeed?”

Yoo Byung-jin was sceptical.

Weed couldn't stop the Embinyu Church. Rather than actively engaging in battle, looking for his colleagues or obtaining reinforcements from the prisoners, he was helping with the construction!

He was literally a slave worker climbing to the top of the Sky Tower. The guards would whip the workers and health would decline. Maybe even his colleagues would be suppressed.

Anyway, the time limit was also reached so he would soon see

Weed’s intentions.



Weed had a subtle fear of heights.

When flying on the wyverns or climbing high buildings, he only felt vaguely uneasy.

“Is this shoddy work?”

He had that thought every time he climbed up and down the tower.

In order to build the height of the huge tower, tens of thousands of slaves had carried an enormous amount of stones. There were also magic circles installed to strengthen the supporting framework of the construction but it still seemed flimsy.

“I can clearly see areas that look a little rough due to materials being embezzled. Is this the original building?”

Weed nodded like he was convincing himself.

“At least it isn’t raining so I can’t confirm how it would be in bad weather.”

Now his face was familiar enough to exchange a few friendly words with the other slaves. There were many slaves so he could adjust his stride to go up with a group of them. Of course, it was in order to listen to the other group to receive information.

“Since when have you been working?”

“I don’t know. I was captured when I was 10 years old.”

“Your family....”

“They are dead. My wife on the 143rd floor and my son died on the 169th floor. They just threw the bodies out the window so I couldn’t even bury them. They’ve probably been eaten by the crows.”

“.....”

‘I thought that decor was a bit odd... This is why there are windows in the tower.’

The overall atmosphere was depressed as the slaves climbed the stairs like machines due to fear of the guards. The heavy walk showed the struggles and pains in their lives.

Weed dreamed of the world. The residents of the Arpen Kingdom would give a pile of silver and gold for the king to stay comfortably.

“There are no chances to escape?”

“Escape? Don’t even think about such a thing. All the monsters outside the tower and quarry will prey on us.”

“But if a whole group runs away then won’t some of them survive?”

“There is nowhere else to go even if we run away. If I go home then there are only the bones of the dead.... Shush, I’ll only let you know this. Those guys prey on the soul as well as the flesh. Some of the monsters who eat a soul will obtain a person’s face and I don’t want to encounter one in my lifetime. Isn’t it horrible? This place is hell.”

The slaves were full of fear. Weed got some information from the slaves but it was still mostly useless.

“The ones who are freed from here? Of course there are some. There are many.”

“How?”

“There is only one exit here. To believe in Embinyu.”

“.....”

“If they accept the god then they can be free from suffering and will live an immortal life.”

The secret of the fanatics! The slaves who had suffered in life and death will have a more powerful ability to hate.

“Then why don’t you believe in Embinyu?”

“It is because I know their pain. The magic will change me to cause greater pain and suffering to others. In order to obtain the power of eternal life, I would have to sacrifice people like us... How can I do that as a human?”

In order to fight them, he needed to organize all the information he obtained.

‘The more pain and confusion there is in the world, the stronger the Embinyu Church becomes.’

Weed waited for the night to pass. The exceptionally dark night made the moon and stars look even more beautiful. He could only admire the view of the galaxy from the tower.

The Embinyu Church didn’t bother admiring the beautiful sky. Instead, there was a big fire as they sacrificed people and the pained screams rang out. The climb up the tower was filled with grief despite the pretty night sky.

This beautiful sight wasn’t easily visible in the light of modern

cities. It was a view that could only be seen when moving away from civilization.

‘It would be a big hit if I could show this beautiful night sky.’

Weed associated everything with money!

Thus his last night passed like this.



“In addition to Weed’s situation, what about the others?”

-Their locations are displayed on the map and I will relay their situation to screens 2-6.

Yoo Byung-jin had the AI search and display Weed’s subordinates. This information wasn’t known to Weed and the broadcasting stations so he was the only one with the whole blueprint.

“Great Emperor-nim must be somewhere over there.”

Warrior-1 was moving nimbly with the leather of a monster wrapped around him. After arriving at the Barren Howling Ruins, the excellent desert warrior managed to find a hiding place.

And after a few days calmly listening and watching the surroundings, he didn't see any of his other colleagues. He decided to fulfil the goal alone before it was too late so he carefully advanced as secretly as possible.

If a creature or monster was there then his patient and tenacity meant he could wait a few hours for it to leave. He managed to cross the rotten river by wrapping the leather of a monster around his face and body but the poison delayed him.

But he steadily approached again after recovering his vitality and mental strength. However, once he passed through the rock formation there would be constant patrols and also the watchtowers. Therefore he was still observing from quite a distance.

Warrior-2 wandered around after meeting the transformed Weed but returned to hiding after he couldn't find anyone.

“Great Emperor-nim has left me. He asked me to meet him there. So I will go ahead first.”

He killed monsters as he headed towards the Embinyu Church's net! The elite knights and priests of the Embinyu Church were dispatched.

“Human warrior, you can only go up to here.”

“Bring it on! A desert warrior will never show weakness!”

Warrior-2 came face to face with the enemy. He wielded a scimitar emitting strong flames that was slightly longer than a normal sword.

“Flame Scimitar. Rapid Fire Sword!”

The scimitar moved like lightning among the guards.

Seokeok!

The knights with excellent defense caught on fire.

“Stubborn Strike!”

Warrior-2 jumped and slashed from left to right. The shields and armour were crushed by the attack. Even though the opponents tried to block it, a few consecutive attacks killed the enemy.

He blew multiple enemies away at once. The sculptural lifeforms way of fighting resembled Weed. Strong attacks and wide area attacks aimed at the enemies. They were close to Weed and their fighting style spontaneously resembled him.

“Come! I am a proud warrior of the desert!”

The level 700 desert warrior caused the Embinyu knights to fall down like they were autumn leaves. The ground was filled with

flames as more than 1,000 knights were massacred.

However, he was surrounded by knights and had no way to escape.

“Kulkul, you have come to the right place to die.”

“You should’ve come sooner if you wanted to die.”

“Strength is all that you know. Fool, I will let you know the superiority of wisdom.”

After that, the curses that he couldn’t avoid!

His movements, strength and health were sealed as 17 curses hit his body. A weak creature would die on the spot from mysterious diseases and black magic caused disturbing moths to lay eggs in his body where they would hatch.

Thanks to these circumstances, Warrior-2 was eventually forced to his knees.

“How should we do with this guy?”

“He killed Embinyu Church members so that pain should be transmitted to his soul.”

“No. God Embinyu has conveyed his divine will so he should be sacrificed to the dragon when it wakes up.”

“That is a good opinion. We will offer him up as a sacrifice.”

Warrior-2 was thrown into a dungeon.

The jail was a little different from Nodulle as there were chains filled with curses around his neck and limbs. His bones were broken and moths grew in his body.

The reason was that Weed's subordinates were stronger than Nodulle. Of course, there were priests in the Embinyu Church but none of them thought to heal Warrrior-2. His health had dropped to the bottom so he might not live long.

“G...Great Emperor-nim will save me.”

Among the desert warriors, Warrior-3 had the most diverse talents.

He had an interest in assassination and disguise. He accidentally ran into three Embinyu knights roaming and wore their uniform.

“Hmm, I can smell thick blood under that knight's armour. The form and shape isn't sophisticated.”

The sly Warrior-3! He fought with monsters and were discovered

by scouts of the Embinyu Church.

“The knight is fighting on our side.”

“Help him.”

The Embinyu knights ran to fight the monsters with Warrior-3. They naturally won.

“Thank you for saving me.”

“That was a close call.”

“I believe that Embinyu sent you. God is great.”

“That’s right. He might not be formally called a god but this is Embinyu’s grace.”

Warrior-3’s level meant he could easily incapacitate the monsters. His ability to throw knives from 40 metres was particularly outstanding and it had the capacity to even pierce through armour.

Nevertheless, he pretended to be pushed by the monsters so he could team up with the knights. Weed didn’t just teach the desert warriors how to fight.

From time to time, he would show them his tricks and shallow calculations! In the past, Weed had done this alone but now Warrior-3 was acting like Weed.

-Great Emperor-nim is worthy of being admired in this world and he is like a father to me. His behaviour is for justice.

As a result of admiring the wrong idol, he learned bad behaviour! He had now infiltrated the knights but he wasn't given an important role and was left to patrol outside.

Saint Ahellun.

He deliberately was captured and mingled among the elves and humans that would be offered as food to the dragon. Hestiger who Weed disliked also managed to enter.

He met the Embinyu convoy that was transporting buffalo carcasses to be used as food. He hollowed out the buffalo's body and hid inside.

“Why does the carriage seem different?”

“Did monsters attack it?”

“There is no need to worry. The priests are waiting for the food so let's go.”

Hestiger moved before the scouts could find him. He was currently hiding in the kitchen.

“Omo, there is a person here....”

Then the female slaves discovered him! Hestiger was holding a scimitar but he raised a long finger to her lips.

“Do not be surprised. I’m here to fight but I will never hurt you.”

“Who are you?”

“The Embinyu Church is a parasite who has done very bad things in this world. I came here to stop them. Of course you don’t have to believe me....”

“I believe you. What are you going to do? It is too dangerous.”

The female slaves had a crush on the handsome Hestiger. Thanks to his looks and atmosphere, they were 100% convinced.

“I am only waiting for the signal from Great Emperor-nim.”

“I understand. I will help you when the time comes.”

Finally, Zahab was the master of sculpting and swordsmanship so he efficiently utilized their skills.

“There are so many to kill. Evane... She has been gone too long. I’ve lived a long time but I will always think of her with regret.”

He angrily swept through the monsters in the Barren Howling Ruins with his swordsmanship. The aura of his sword extended to slice up dozens of monsters.

They didn’t have the strength to resist!

Zahab was originally strong from mastering sculpting and swordsmanship. After coming to the warring period, he had become more experienced and his level rose higher. He just hunted so his level was almost close to Weed. His genius and perfect battle sense was sometimes enough to make Weed sick.

“The ones I need to kill. There are so many of them.”

He navigated the rock formations while searching for enemies and subdued them. And he finally rested near the walls.

“I don’t know. There are too many strong enemies. He will let me know what to do.”

He decided to wait for Weed to act first.

“Now it is hard to guess what will happen.

Yoo Byung-jin stared at the monitors and found it difficult to predict what would happen in the future.

The composition, current location and abilities were all different from Nodulle's group.

Weed and his colleagues were the crucial factor that would determine whether this quest succeeded. It was impossible for them to hide from the Embinyu Church for a long time so they would be killed one by one.

But even so, Weed was still faithfully receiving praise from the guards at the tower.

Chapter 6: Tower Crashing Into The Ground

In the early morning, Weed was standing on the 140th floor of the Sky Tower.

Looking through the window towards the outside world, the darkness was slowly withdrawing as it became brighter.

“Great. The scene of the night brightening up in the morning always gives me some strength.”

The red sun rose over the distant plains. The land brightened and monsters could be seen roaming around and eating corpses. And hordes of fanatics near the monsters were revealed.

It was a terrible spectacle made visible by the sun rising.

“Is this the view that people living in expensive high-rise apartments prefer? If there was scenery of a river or the sea then the prices would climb more....Hrmm, I don't know if I want to live in a high-rise apartment or not. The monthly expenses are a lot and I can't savour the delicious taste of sweet potatoes planted in the yard.”

Weed placed a stone back on the ground.

“Whether I like it or not, this has to be done.”

The nords, barbarians, elves and humans heading down the stairs just glanced at him indifferently. They were slaves so they didn't care about anything except eating and working.

“What is it today?”

“Crow soup.”

“I haven't tasted meat for a long time.”

The slaves that finished at dawn hurried down the tower for a meal. They only had one a day and it wasn't even breakfast.

Crow soup had a sticky feeling and the crunchy meat stuck to their teeth so the greasy soup was the worst thing to eat. Strictly speaking, it wasn't crow soup but the dead crows fell into the enormous cauldron and turned it into that. The black feathers weren't even removed so it was difficult to eat.

Weed had exploited the beginners to make the pyramid but at least he gave them grass porridge.

“I have a lot to learn from the Embinyu Church. Thoroughly reducing the cost of business while succeeding.”

The strength of the Embinyu Church was their exploitation of

the slaves and followers.

“Then shall I start? This is thanks for my hard work.”

Weed took out a heavy axe.

-Skilled Woodsman's Axe for Logging:

Durability 31/65. Attack: 14~25

An axe that can cut down a tree. It is rusted and someone seems to have just thrown it to the ground.

It is too thick so it isn't suitable to be a battle axe! However, it is surprisingly easy to cut down a tree if the axe is swung correctly.

Restrictions: More than 400 power.

Level 140 or higher.

The axe is easy to handle so no skill is required.

Options: Vitality wasted will be reduced when cutting wood from forests and mountains.

When the swung is accurate, an additional 160% cutting power will be added.

Of course, Weed hadn't taken out the axe for the sake of fighting. The damage was terrible and he wouldn't even be able to sell it in a store!

In particular, the heavy weight of the axe meant that many merchants wouldn't buy it.

"I am going to begin."

Weed struck the axe against the wall of the tower.

Syuuuuuung! Kwaaaaang!

The strength behind the axe was enough to break the wall or split a monster apart.

"Taste this!"

Weed continued to smash the walls with his axe.

"It has to crumble."

After smashing the walls, he struck at the pillars supporting the weight of the tower. The building was quite strong so the durability of the axe fell quickly.

An axe needed to cut against shields and armours so they were quite durable. However, an axe couldn't be used for a long time against walls and stone pillars.

The axe in Weed's hands broke.

-Due to the deterioration of the durability, the Logging Axe has been destroyed.

"I have many axes."

Weed pulled out another axe from his backpack. This time it was a magic axe that increased destructive power! It was an axe obtained from the Central Continent and was a common tool and weapon found in stores.

This was the secret weapon used to destroy the Sky Tower. Weed had this idea when watching the video of the Sky Tower rising.

'How can I make it fall down?'

The top part specifically had its weight reduced by magic but the fundamental architecture were the pillars. Then cracking them might bring it down.

"Remove the stones from the bottom one by one. It would be fun if it collapsed all at once."

This was the strategy he would use to destroy the Sky Tower. He wanted to see the high building collapse due to the pillars!

Kwaaang! Kwaaaang!

Weed dug the axe into the pillar and revealed its bones. Not only were stones piled up but the special mammoth horns and bones inside made the pillar have very high durability. Even so, Weed only needed to wield his axe three or four times before the stem was broken.

“A tree might take 10 tries and I will make the tower collapse even if it takes 1,000 attempts!”

The walls and pillars were smashed with a horrific, destructive power. Even if he smashed 5~6 important pillars, the tower was still fine. But it started to shake slightly.

Now the shaking was only slight but he felt like it was escalating. This fear and imagination was what made people so excited. If he continued to strike with the axe then who knew what would happen!

“When I was a child, I went to the aquarium with my mother and was thrilled when I saw the piranha tank.”

A truly fantastic horror!

Even though this was the 140th floor of the tower, the upper

parts beyond the clouds were already shaking. Due to the walls and pillars collapsing, the guards realized there was an emergency.

“What’s that?”

“Something seems to be breaking.”

The guards started searching the tower. It was a high and wide tower so there were 5,000 guards stationed inside. Every 10 floors there was a manager that was equivalent to a boss level monster.

“I don’t know. Where is that sound coming from?”

“Upstairs!”

The guards couldn’t find Weed’s position immediately. The sound flowed through the building so it was hard to determine the floor and location.

The Sky Tower stretched up to the sky and the interior also had a complicated structure. The stairs were strangely twisted and Weed could instantly come up to the 140th floor from the 137th. Or he could come down from the 144th floor. And the middle 140th floor that connected it was like a remote island.

“He is here!”

“A nord dares go against the Embinyu Church!”

Weed was switching to his third axe when 10 guards found him.

“Triple Swing.”

“Kueek!”

A beginner’s axe skill was used! But the guards were continuing to come up.

“I can’t resist the japtem and experience.”

He was working near the staircase when those guards appeared. The enemy running up the stairs weren’t a problem for Weed. Even the priests emerged and there wasn’t much space to avoid the divine magic.

“140th floor.”

“Kill him!”

The yells of the guards could be heard.

An emergency happening in the Sky Tower! The guards flocked to his location without hesitation. The total number of Embinyu guards kept increasing.

“You are the young nord that was doing a good job! Did you suddenly go crazy?”

The guards unleashed a barrage of criticism on Weed.

“There is no justification for going against the will of Embinyu. You will immediately be sprinkled with salt and thrown to the crows!”

Weed also had a considerable number of complaints piled up.

“It is okay if you make me work recklessly. Difficult and dangerous work is the reality of life. But I can’t tolerate unpaid wages!”

A backlash against unscrupulous employers!

“Seven Swings!”

Ddirring!

-Your Axe skill has increased.

Destructive power of the axe will increase by 130%.

Attack rate is 5% faster.

14% weight will be added to the axe.

Beginner level 3!

Weed might have a high level but the guards weren't weak. Their levels were at least in the late 300s so the Embinyu guards weren't weak.

That's why his axe skill quickly grew as he dealt with them. But the skill level was low and the attack range was short so it wasn't suitable for fighting a large amount of enemies.

“Bad builders!”

Weed disregarded the guards' attacks and continued wielding his axe against them. The attacks from the guards only reduced his enormous health by a small drop. The nord might be weaker than humans but their resilience was better.

The guards continued to floor through the stairs so the destruction of the pillars became more delayed.

Then Weed had a passing thought.

‘The whole building will be wrecked anyway so why do I need to leave the stairs?’

Although the stairs were necessary for him to descend the

building later. But his first priority was handling the guards harassing him.

If the guards continued to interfere then the bosses on the upper floors of the Sky Tower would come down. As he climbed the Sky Tower, the supervisors ended up being senior priests. He had just killed the high priests Igrig and Motuls so he didn't want to waste the results.

“Eh, I don't know!”

Weed ran to the stairs and started smashing them with his axe.

“H-he....”

“The stairs are falling. Aaack!”

The upstairs and downstairs staircases connecting to the 140th floor collapsed at once. The guards on them also fell down. From now on, they could no longer come from downstairs.

The wreckage of the fallen stairs blocked the passage underneath. The guards continued jumping down from upstairs through the spot where the staircase collapsed.

“Tear all his flesh off!”

“He is trying to sabotage and interfere with the Embinyu

Church!”

There were no stairs however the guards showed up even faster. Yes, one or two guards died but the remaining became more ferocious.

“Sink or swim!”

Weed smashed the ground with his axe.

Kuooong!

The guards that landed on the smashed ground continued falling down.

“Waaaaack!”

“Embinyuuuuuu.”

Black or grey stones were piled up and there were various monsters and human bones protruding from them. The tower was originally a prison so the inside still had that type of aesthetic.

He was smashing the floor of the Sky Tower. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that this feeling wouldn't be comfortable for anyone who spent their lives trying to buy a house in Korea.

But breaking it was also fun. He was destroying the tallest building.

“Wow, this is high.”

“Really, seeing the building come down would be a jackpot.”

It was similar to young children marvelling at the sight of the 63 Building (used to be South Korea’s tallest building)!

“It would be fun to smash it down.”

The interference of the guards had disappeared so Weed shattered the pillars without hesitation. It was hard at first but once a small portion of the pillar was broken, it was easy to smash the remaining fragments.

The pillars were holding the astronomical weight of the tower’s upper floors. Once some of them collapsed, the remaining pillars became more vulnerable because they had to carry a larger load.

“Have I grown bigger? The ceiling seems to be closer.....”

Weed thought it was weird that the 140th floor seemed a bit lower. This was an illusion. The ceiling was actually coming closer.

Jajajajak!

Once 30 pillars were destroyed, the ceiling started to seriously crack. Not only that, the pillars holding up the weight of the tower started being squashed.

“I guess I can’t stop now.”

Weed became a little cautious. He couldn’t stretch out in an area and rested while watching. He knew how dangerous this could be.

His risk awareness had risen thanks to Disaster Sculpting but he couldn’t stop destroying the pillars in the building.

“These pillars will definitely fall... That pillar is more urgent!”

He couldn’t waste even 1 second to collapse the tower. Weed planned to pull down the tower rising into the heavens. The so-called eating free pheasants overseas after winning the lottery!

Kukukukung! Kwadududuk!

The ceilings and floors gradually collapsed. The pillars spontaneously twisted and bent. It was a desperate crisis.

If the tower was crushed than not even Weed could survive. Stones were falling down on Weed’s head.

-Health has been reduced by 31 due to the debris.

The damage wasn't enough to affect his health so he didn't worry about it.

‘So far, I’ve done as I planned. My brain is a genius. It wasn’t my fault that I didn’t study in school. I blame the teachers for not being proficient enough!’

Weed had intentionally destroyed pillars on the east side of the tower. But he only had a moment to rejoice as the weight distributed on top of the pillars and a widespread destruction started occurring.

Cracks appeared on pillars of the 140th floor, 133th floor, 121th floor and the ground floor. The weight of the entire tower was added to those weakened pillars and the tower shook like it would fall at any moment. The hundreds of metres high tower was serious shaking.

Weed had only smashed the eastern pillars so it would collapse in that direction but things hadn’t proceeded as planned.



“Ah, he did it like that.”

Weed’s adventure was being broadcasted around the entire world at the same time.

Many viewers were impatiently looking forward to seeing what

would happen on the adventure. All gaming stations and even general stations competed by showing Royal Road.

The Royal Road craze hit foreign countries later than it did Korea but the gap had closed so that it was almost negligible. Many foreigners now enjoyed a variety of leisure activities and enjoyed holidays in Royal Road. It started late but the benefit of hindsight meant it was even more popular.

At that moment, all the architects watching around the world were sighing deeply.

“He shouldn’t touch something like that.”

“If I wanted to calculate the dynamics of the structure then it would take me 10, no 100 days.”

“It is a nice attempt but there are too many variables.”

In order to destroy the tower, precise measurements and calculations were necessary. The tensile strength, accurate design of the building and the weight on each floor needed to be known. Determining the optimal height and position for destruction would take at least a few days.

It was a very high and large building so any destructive power would sink the tower at once. If the person was lucky then it would fall in the desired direction but it was much more likely for the crumbling tower to crush the person.

Sequentially destroying it in the desired direction would require calculating wind speed, the tilt due to the weight change, the speed of the collapse, the structure of the terrain and even the time it would take to fall.

All those things were theoretically possible to calculate through mathematical calculations but it was actually impossible.

The by-products of different monsters were used to create the pillars so the strength of each one was different. Each floor was also different. The architects of the tower didn't use precision measuring tools while designing it.

Holding a stone and intuitively finding the weak points was a simple idea. Even the highest level of architect wanted the experience of taking down this tower.

Of course, common sense stated that such a high tower wouldn't exist in this world. The material surpassed the strength of steel and magic was used or else the building wouldn't be possible at all.

Nevertheless, the architects couldn't help being filled with admiration.

“It is silly and simply but it is a genius attempt.”

The uncomplicated judgement like a pure child. There were many things that could go wrong but he didn't worry about them.

The architects couldn't guess the result. The interior of the building was crashing down on Weed. The ceiling and pillars were helplessly falling. The environment was also scary.

Even those that knew nothing about construction could tell how dangerous the Sky Tower was. It felt like their heart was shrivelling and their hair standing up as they watched Weed's adventure.



Weed looked around.

“The situation doesn't look good.”

A chain reaction had taken place and the entire tower was collapsing around him. He could see chunks of stones falling outside the window. Once everything became worse, a person on the verge of dying would feel like their life was flashing before them.

‘I don't know why this happens every time.’

Intended or calculated, or a wrong action. Or he simply didn't have any luck.

‘This is the worst. The probability of getting out of this is quite

low.'

However, he didn't give up.

Weed realized that his survival skills in Royal Road were excellent. The more extreme the situation was, the more fiercely he would try to survive.

Usually other people's heads wouldn't think quickly but his head was always rotating at a rapid speed. If he studied like this then he probably would've passed the bar examination.

"I can live. I have to live."

Weed looked around rapidly for anything he could use. There were an excess of rocks. There were a pile of stones that people carried and those that fell down from the ceiling. The entire top of the tower was collapsing so stones were still continuing to fall.

He no longer needed the axe as the tower was crumbling on its own. It would be the end if he got caught in the rubble.

"The only thing I can do now is sculpt."

Weed out the Sculpting Knife. The body of a nord wasn't useful for fighting or escaping. In the current situation, he needed to change his body to look like the enemy.

Sasasasak.

Weed's Sculpting Knife moved like it was possessed. He had less time to sculpt during his final secret sculpting technique quest. It was stuck at Advanced level 9 and hadn't climbed the final step.

But this time sculpting would be a huge help. Weed still had many complaints about sculpting.

"Whether it is the battlefield or art, sculpting is really good. I just wish that it would earn me more money."

It was like saving a man from drowning only to be given a free apartment! He needed to finish the work before the tower fell so Weed's Sculpting Knife moved insanely fast over the stone.

Suksak susak.

The speed meant his hands couldn't be seen properly. The rock was smoothly cut like an apple.

His speed was ridiculous but he didn't want to die an unnatural death. He needed to move faster. He was familiar with sculpture so the body shape was being refined. He had made all types of strange sculptures for battles or quests.

An exhibition of works would display the artist's creative and unique personality. The works would contain that philosophy and ideology or deep feelings about culture.

Weed usually favoured beautiful or practical works.

‘Prices are rising every day so my head is full of complex thoughts about how to live. It is useless if it isn’t pretty.’

For a simple reason!

The sculpture he was making was really easy to understand.

Embinyu monster!

Their health was high and the vicious monster also had poison. Its skin was white and wrinkled like it had lived 400 years and there was a long tongue to catch flies and mosquitoes.

The piece of rock had layers of a strange pattern and microscopic cracks that gave it a rugged impression. The sturdy physique resembled a barbarian but the face and body looked closer to a humanoid snake. Furthermore, the soles of the feet were designed to prevent slipping and there were thin wings attached to the underarms like a bat. The head was completely bald and covered with scales.

‘I wish I never created a sculpture like this.’

Weed always thought about money when making sculptures. If the sculptures during his adventures were broadcasted then they

would be a huge hit. The dolls of the wyverns, Bingryong and Yellowy were all sold out in the markets. Of course, some of the proceeds were sent to his bank account.

There was also the toy of the Bone Dragon. Apparently it was tacky to have bones but young children really like that these days.

The origin of the crab cakes. The origin of the seasoned potatoes. This was their source.

There were contracts were confectionary companies. A man and a woman was also collecting the skeleton dolls. All parents would tremble at hearing these words from their children.

“Mother, buy me that one.”

“I never had that before. Weeeeng!”

Weed’s quest meant that children never stopped crying for his sculptures. Every parent might regret the moment they had to give their children seaweed soup.

“The children are making a purse for when I retire. A job that makes a living from young children... It is a reliable stable”

Now even the sculptures Weed transformed into were popular. He always sculpted a tall, handsome piece with features that would sell well.

This sculpture with a snake head and thick limbs like a crocodile was the worst in history. If Karichwi was ugly then this sculpture was horrible enough to raise goose bumps!

“Sculpture Transformation!”

-Sculpture Transformation has been used.

The infinite affection for sculpting makes the sculptor and statue resemble each other!

Your skin and appearance has quickly changed.

It depends on the shape of the sculpture but the physique is similar so you can wear your original equipment.

The influence of Sculpture Transformation has significantly increased Strength and Agility.

Charm has fallen to the lowest level.

Art stat has halved.

Perseverance, resilience and luck has significantly risen.

This will last until Sculpture Transformation is released.

“It was made in a hurry but it is perfect.”

Weed’s Charm stat had brutally fallen.

Charm would make the skin bright and attractive and even improve the overall shape of the body. Especially in the case of women, they were very sensitive to the changes in the body caused by 100 charm or 200 charm.

But Weed lived without thinking of his body or face. A handsome face wouldn’t allow him to eat or live better.

Honestly, his looks were irrelevant after meeting Seo-yoon. Her charm stat had to be at least 200,000 so he absolutely couldn’t match her

“It won’t be a hindrance even if my face is boiled!”

Kwarururururung!

The top of the tower vibrated and Weed could feel it through his legs. It wasn’t surprising anymore that this would happen. Everything was slowly moving towards the point where it would collapsed.

Kukukung!

The movement of the entire tower suddenly stopped like it was struck by lightning. The place that had been filled with loud noises became abruptly quiet.

“What, has it ended?”

But then he heard a squeaking sound like a herd of mice was running around. Microscopic cracks were occurring in the central pillars. The evidence that it was continuing to collapse was invisible but still there.

“Now.”

Weed ran past all the piled up debris and jumped. And he threw his body outside the window. It looked like a cool scene from an action movie.

Weed didn't have a parachute like the main characters in that movie. Weed was also falling from the 140th floor so it would be a huge burden if he crashed.

‘I've managed to escape unharmed so far. Even if I crash into the ground, my enormous health means that I won't die. But there are enemies that will pounce.’

If he crashed into the ground then the Embinyu members would swarm like ants. All the troops of the Embinyu Church were already in emergency mode. There was also the stones falling down from the tower due to the shaking.

“That tower is to greet God Embinyu. We must prevent it from collapsing.

“All priests use their power.”

The priests of the Embinyu Church demonstrated their divine power. The divine magic lightened the weight of the tower, strengthened the structure and joined broken joints together.

Original divine magic couldn't do this but the Sky Tower was constructed to commune with the Embinyu. In addition, there were magic circles placed inside the tower.

The tower was already built beyond the limits that it could physically withstand! The light of the magic wrapped around the pillars and considerably lowered the weight on the pillars.

The medium and large monsters of the Embinyu Church plunged inside the tower. They held up the pillars and ceiling with their shoulders and back.

Kuweeek!

Kwaack!

Despite their bodies being crushed, the monsters prevented the collapse of the tower.

“What? It is a little strange.”

Weed realized that the collapse of the tower seemed to have stopped. The tower was slanted but seemed to have been stopped from falling.

“I really can’t eat things raw.”

Chwararak!

Weed stretched out both arms and flapped the wings covered with a thin film. The speed that he was falling at reduced.

“Eh, I don’t know.”

He then used the wind to change directions and clung to the walls of the tower.

Kurururung!

The effect was weakened but stones were still falling from the tower. Falling rocks! Weed swerved the rocks that contained a terrifying power after falling from a high place.

“I feel like I’m wiping the windows of a skyscraper! I didn’t dare risk it despite it paying well....My sense of adventure was fulfilled being a construction labourer!”

The stones were different sizes and fell in slightly different directions. Sometimes the stones would change direction in the middle so he was quite nervous.

“This damn life... I need to stop swearing. This is why my tough days keep on repeating.”

Weed spat out complaints as he started climbing up the wall of the tower like a spider. His hands and feet easily found windows and niches in the broken stone walls. He avoided the falling rocks by spinning sideways at a perpendicular angle.

Weed soon passed the 140th floor, 160th and then the 180th floor. He would skip past two or three floors with one leap. Anyone watched Weed's adventure would feel dizzy with every leap. The circumstances was enough to call him a human cockroach.

Puyuuuuung!

Weed moved like a butterfly every time the stones fell!

‘I need to think of a method. Something is stopping the tower from crashing down. I need to make it collapse.’

The tower was shaking more severely as he climbed upwards. The strengthening magic of the priests couldn't work properly on the higher floors. If I leave it like this then it won't collapse. But it will be difficult to recover to its original state.’

If he just watched as the tower collapsed then it was likely he could easily fulfil the quest. But he didn't know how many days it would take.

“I've decided. Take this. Moonlight Sculpting Blade!”

Weed slammed the Extermination Sword against the wall of the 213th floor. He was thrown by the force of the skill and fell before opening his wings at the 209th floor.

“I need to go as far as possible!”

Kwa kwa kwang!

He faced the top and furiously slammed his sword against the tower. The shock caused stones to start falling from the tower again. He observed increasingly large stones falling from hundreds of floors above him.

Weed lifted his head and brandished his sword. If there was a situation he couldn't escape then he would briefly enter the tower through a window. In the case of large stones, he would use it as a support to leap dozens of metres.

An exciting aerial action that took place at the collapsing tower! There were some dangerous stones that he barely avoided. Even though his current appearance wasn't very handsome, it allowed him to be like a fly or a mosquito.

Countless monsters and fanatics on the ground and in the Sky Tower died from the stones. The guards were continuing to exit as the tower shook at an alarming rate.

“Power of Birth, Black Knight’s Strike, Summon Another Sword!”

Weed climbed the tower while using his master class combat skills. When he passed the 250th floor, the tower shook and swayed from left to right. He quickly floated in the air but couldn’t avoid being hit by the swaying tower.

“Cough!”

-You have been hit by the Sky Tower.

Health has decreased by 31,386.

It was a rare experience as Weed was whacked by the tower and flew back 100 metres.

Padadadak!

His narrow wings opened as he moved towards the tower again.

“It would be nice if this was an amusement park. I shouldn’t be the only one to suffer through this!”

If it was possible to create the ride without anyone dying then thousands of people could experience it at the amusement park!

“This degree isn’t enough to make it crumble!”

Weed cried in a loud voice.

It was hard to avoid the stones and sticking to the side of the tower was also dangerous.

“Sculptural Destruction! Everything into Strength!”

Weed smashed a fine piece and his strength greatly increased. Anyway, so far he had broken quite a few walls and pillars.

But the tower was shaking so much that he couldn’t determine which way it would fall. Due to the pillars breaking from supporting the weight of the tower, it was breaking in all directions.

He couldn’t imagine what would happen when he looked at the tower shaking. Any ordinary human would have given up here but Weed couldn’t.

“I have to go to the end. I will prove that living ignorantly in this world is frightening.”

Weed held onto the wall and continued climbing up the tower. He had been tired carrying stones up the tower and now he needed to hold onto the wall while avoiding falling rocks.

He reached the 279th and then the 300th floor. At this point, the wind was flowing towards the side of the tower. The feeling of the tower shaking through his hands while he climbed caused a frightening feeling.

-The Sky Tower has struck you in the chest.

Health has been reduced by 13,288.

He would receive damage every time he jumped hastily.

Weed stopped moving at the 330th floor. Every 100th floor was marked but he didn't know the exact location. So much debris was falling from the tower that it was a mess.

In fact, he had intended the tower to fall earlier so it was more robust than he thought. Even so, it seemed like it would take just 1~2 more minutes to crumble. There was there creepy sound of something being split apart.

"A different method... I made it when I was bored but it will be useful here. I hadn't wanted to use this. Sculpture Transformation!"

Weed used the skill to resemble a sculpture. It was a specific

sculpture of a black bear! It was like a very large sculpture had been shrunk to a miniature size. A black bear that would likely crush a city.

-Sculpture Transformation has been used.

The infinite affection for sculpting makes the sculptor and statue resemble each other!

Weed's snake like smooth body started growing black fur. In addition, his size became bigger. Shoulders, chests and legs all grew steadily longer. 10 metres, 20 metres, 30 metres.... Before long, his body had become 230 metres.

He had turned into a hulking version of the sculpture. An extra-large black bear!

It seemed to be the size of Bingryong and the body was enough to make the elves in the forest tremble! The eyes were small and cute compared to the body and gave off the impression that he had been chewing on tree roots since childhood. There was a vivid half-moon pattern on the chest.

Clearly, this work was creating while aiming for popularity among children.

-Your body shape has changed so a number of equipment can't be worn.

-Perseverance, Vitality and Resilience has been enhanced due to Sculptural Transformation.

But all the other stats have been reduced.

The leather of the black bear is like steel and has a high level of magic protection.

Although it has knowledge and wisdom about life, this is instinctive magic and they can't use complex tools.

Just smacking the enemy with the paws will be enough to break the waist.

The skill Understanding Sculpture has granted you an attribute of the species.

When angered by a severe attack, damage will increased by 260%.

In this state, you will suffer less damage from the enemy's attack and you have become twice as strong.

However, you will become vulnerable to ranged weapons like arrows. Once this state is released when health falls below 10%, you will be vulnerable to fear.

When health reaches 30%, recovery rate will be 6 times faster. But once 30 minutes pass, the recovery rate will slow down to half

the normal rate.

“Kuwoooooh!”

Weed shouted as he clung to the tower with his paws. The bear’s thick and sharp claws dug deeply into the walls. His body was much bigger but his high health meant there wasn’t significant risk from the stones falling.

The thick bear fur and leather also played the role of solid armour and shield.

“Shall I try this? This is like when I was playing at the neighbourhood playground!”

Weed was really ignorant so he decided to use this method. The tower started fluctuated wildly as his heavy weight clung to it.

The simplest method to bring down the tower in the desired direction was to use his heavy body! It wasn’t possible to measure his current weight but he would be making a deep pit if he walked along the ground.

The top of the tower started shaking and spun around.

“This is a little weak!”

Weed was very excited. This was at the level of neighbour child

at the playground. These days, there were many scenes in movies where the protagonist barely survived.

Weed felt the need to maintain his popularity.

“Let’s go!”

Weed released his hold on the tower and jumped. The shock caused the wall of the tower to collapse even more. A tremendous sized black bear was jumping in the air.

It could be compared to walking along a sky-high cliff! Weed’s large body separated the sky. And he quickly reached the peak.

“Kuaah!”

The crash of a giant black bear! At that time, the tower came close to him again.

“Acha!”

Weed hugged the tower. Due to his tremendous weight, the place where his paws held on caused the tower walls to literally crumple like paper.

The 4 thick claws furiously dug in and damaged the building. A destructive sound was heard from the tower. If the building was destroyed then it was likely he would lose his life as well!

“I won’t survive the fall Then let’s try this again!”

Weed once again jumped up the tower. The tower shook strongly as the black bear jumped from the tower! This fast paced and reckless thrill was an environment that he would rarely experience.

During the short distance he was in the air, an unearthly sound could be heard. It was the sound of rocks and pillars being furiously crushed by the weight and impact of the black bear!

The tower couldn’t withstand the sudden weight that slammed into it and started tilting in one direction.

“E-eh!”

In the beginning he didn’t feel like it was that tilted. But the angle meant he couldn’t jump. He was forced to cling on all fours while feeling himself tilting.

It wasn’t only the central part where Weed was as the whole Sky Tower was seriously tilting.

‘Success! But what do I do now?’

The result was what he intended but now it was a life threatening situation. An ice cold sensation could be felt on his neck.

‘This isn’t that small?’

His survival instincts issued a warning. He looked down at the ground that could be seen through the clouds.

“It is like I intended. There is just a minor issue....”

Weed was attached to the side of the tower. Now the tower was tilted as he intended. There was a loud roar as something in the tower broke.

‘I need to live.’

Weed dug his claws into the wall of the tower and moved to the opposite side. In the meantime, the angle of the tower was increasingly heading towards the ground. It was like the neck of a giraffe moving towards the ground.

“Aigoo! What is the best method I can use?”

Weed’s brain started furiously thinking. His survival instinct surpassed those of an insect. Weed surpassed a cockroach’s health, tricks and various methods to survive.

‘I can’t fall at this height. If this was my original body then I might be able to survive with my high health. But right now my large size means I will receive heavier damage. I need to use

Sculpture Transformation.'

He quickly took out a sculpture of a dragon fly. It was a dragonfly with a very strange face!

"Eh, I don't know. Sculpture Transformation!"

There was no time to think of the side-effects when he used Sculpture Transformation!

-Due to the heavy shaking, the skill has failed.

"Then Sculpture Transformation release!"

-You haven't perfectly adapted to the current body yet.

Even the mysterious power of sculpting can't change your flesh.

"This doesn't have any soup!"

Young children were also watching Weed's adventure so he couldn't use his worst curses. It was like opening the remaining bag of ramyun only to find there was no soup!

Sculpture Transformation couldn't be used due to the vigorous movement and it couldn't be released. Earlier he was a monster but now he was a giant black bear with a heavy weight hanging on

the wall of the tower.

After a few seconds, he was falling along with the tower. Just like a monkey falling down with a tree, the bear falling with the tower would die!

Weed needed another way to survive.

Chapter 7: Black Dragon Ausollet

‘Die.’

‘He will die.’

‘He is going to die.’

‘Will he die soon?’

Most viewers thought that as they watched Weed’s adventure.

“Boss-nim, I’m taking a vacation for Royal Road. And I also want a paid bonus.”

“Our company is doing well thanks to you. I will give you a few weeks! Look at this corporate card!”

This was the dream of most workers!

In reality, the department chief or director would handle any work without unnecessary remarks. Sometimes there would be social lunches or meals with overtime workers. Even overtime allowances weren’t paid properly so this was more of a dream than reality. A dream that they would have in the mornings or on weekends!

But they could meet others through Royal Road. The workers could have fun through their characters without having to worry about anything. Weed was like a hero to them.

In particular, the users of the Central Continent full of resentment and blame towards Weed had to literally repent.

“I didn’t know Weed-nim’s deep intentions... I was narrow minded.”

“Isn’t this relationship with the Hermes Guild not very good? But now he is saving the people of the world while benefiting the enemy?”

“Now I know why the people of the north respect Weed and think he is a good king.”

“His fans are growing as they repeatedly see his adventures. We know in advance that the results will affect the continent so Weed is becoming more popular through his adventures. Others have chosen to become strong through stable hunting and picking the right quest while Weed freely challenges the world.”

Wonderful adventures while travelling around the continent!



Weed came up with a way to live in a matter of seconds. He heard some valuable information while working in the tower!

“Yes, I’ll believe in Embinyu. God Embinyu won’t save me. Ohh, God Embinyu!”

Schizophrenia symptoms occurred due to the brainwashing magic. There would be a mental collapse like a man forgetting that ramyun was boiling while on the phone!

However, Weed’s eyes sparkled as he sensed a chance for survival.

“It isn’t finished yet. I won’t die!”

Weed sat down on the tilting tower.

Kwadududuk!

Nothing broke but there was the sound of the tower being pressed inwards.

“Let’s go.”

He slipped down the slope of the tower. A very large black bear was sliding down like it was a slide! But it was an almost vertical slope so the acceleration became frightening after a few seconds.

“A person surviving beautifully in a movie!”

The situation was different from what he thought! The walls were literally crushed as Weed slipped down due to his weight. Even though the Sky Tower was very large, the transformed Weed was only riding down a very narrow area.

Weed's butt acted as a terrible weapon crushing the tower.

-A part of your body has been damaged due to the friction.

Health has decreased by 3,742.

The black bear's butt became hot due to the acceleration!

"I need to check my status now before it becomes more dangerous. Health... Phew, there is no need to worry about vitality and my health is still over 800,000."

A large creature had excellent strength and health but its art, wisdom and dignity stat was at the bottom. Its charm was surprisingly high but that was because the bear was cuddly.

'Even if it is like this, will I still be able to survive?'

A thought passed through his head at that moment. His health was high but the huge body going at this speed meant there would be significantly more damage. He might end up being stuck deep in the ground. The fanatics could then indiscriminately attack his

body.

All members of the Embinyu Church had an infinite hatred inside them.

“I usually don’t have any luck. Isn’t this harsh scenario enough?”

But after one moment, the feeling of his butt sliding stopped as it seemed like he was floating in the air.

He wasn’t mistaken!

The tower’s tilt wasn’t enough to allow him to reach the ground. The bottom portion had broken off due to the excessive weight.

“Kuwoooooh!”

The 65th floor and above disconnected from the Sky Tower while the remainder was left intact. Weed had been sliding down the tower but he was still at the height of the 300th floor.

“Aigoo!”

His huge body and limbs struggled wildly in the air. The Sky Tower was collapsing towards the Weed who was flapping his limbs. He didn’t have any wings or skills to prevent the fall.

“Crashing like this is another worst-case scenario. This is definitely something that is likely to happen to me.”



The monsters and fanatics were swarming among the strongholds of the Embinyu Church.

There was tight security to prevent an invasion but they could only stand there helplessly as the tower fell from the sky! The stones that made up the Sky Tower were falling towards the fanatics.

“Kweeeek!”

“Embinyu is punishing us. Let us gratefully accept death!”

A flood of stones poured down as the tower collapsed. The Embinyu Church’s facility to produce demons, sell souls and the demons’ training centre were damaged!

The fanatics and monsters swarming inside were also constantly hit. Now the top of the tower cut off from the lower part fell towards the centre.

“Today Embinyu will accept a new follower and there will be a feast of blood.”

“Ohhhh!”

The Chaos Dragon Ausollet was sitting in front of the huge statue of Embinyu in the Central Square!

The ceremony to brainwash Ausollet was in full swing. 200 Priests of Punishment were focusing divine power on the dragon.

The deeply asleep dragon was covered with a red aura while there were occasional large and small explosions. The Embinyu Church’s efforts against the dragon’s strong resistance was coming to fruition.

Then the Central Square suddenly darkened. The priests looked up at the sky to see the tower collapsing towards them.

“The tower is collapsing.”

“Ohhhh!”

A catastrophe was coming.

“Don’t avoid it. Embinyu is testing us.”

“This is the final test before the world’s illusion of calm and peace ends. We will show them.”

The senior priests said to the fanatics trying to flee.

“Ohh, Embinyu.”

Through blind faith and obedience, the fanatics kneeled and prayed instead of fleeing. Including the elderly and young children ,all those in the Central Square couldn’t leave.

But then a little boy pointed at the sky and asked.

“Priest-nim, what is that?”

A huge bear covered in black fur was falling through the air with struggling limbs.

Even the priests who blindly believed in Embinyu’s miracles were at a loss.

“.....”

“.....”



“Aigoo!”

Weed did everything he could to minimize the impact of falling.

Even though he was falling from the 300th floor, that was still 4,000 metres.

He needed to think positive thoughts.

“People paid money bungee jumping to experience a thrill like this. I got it for free. The bad thing is that there are no safety devices.”

By spreading out his limb and making his body mass wide, he was able to obtain some wind resistance. His paws also pushed off some falling stones.

But he couldn't find any more tricks to use.

“I will be turned into a squid after falling to the ground. Perhaps I will be so smashed up that a bear dish can't be created to the bear's gall bladder used.”

Thanks to the air resistance, the tower was falling a bit late. Even so, there was a heavy wind as it rapidly approached the ground. Falling without any safety devices was like an elementary school student looking forward for the holidays only to receive homework.

Jaejaejaek!

Weed thought he was hallucinating as the sound of birds crying seemed to enter his ear. It wasn't just 1~2 but a chorus of

thousands. In order to apply the cooking skill to meat obtained from hunted, he needed to invest time and attention.

Anyway, he was hearing this crying sound while falling to his death. Weed didn't care about it. However, there was a huge surprise when he looked towards the ground.

All the birds on the ground or sitting on branches spread their wings and flew in unison.

Sometimes he would see birds take choreographed actions like a dance. In an effort to protect their eggs, they would simultaneously fly into the sky like there was an emergency. Weed found it scary as he fell at a terrible speed towards their beaks.

‘These birds with no conscience! No matter how juicy and delicious bear meat is, you should at least wait until I die before eating me.’

Weed needed to conserve as much health as possible so he couldn't afford for the birds to eat him.

But he felt this strange feeling that made him reluctant to act. He had observed the behaviour of birds while on his hummingbird adventure. Those who felt a crisis would chirp loudly in order to protect their children.

Now the birds flying towards Weed were crying out.

‘Should I leave it alone for a minute? The birds won’t even be able to scratch my leather.’

The birds’ beaks grabbed hold of him but they weren’t trying to eat him. They supported his body and head as their wings flapped painfully.

-The Goddess Freya’s blessing has been invoked.

Freya is the goddess of abundance and her grace enriches the land, caused grains to grow, flowers to bloom and trees bear fruit.

Birds that eat the grains and insects are the children and messenger of Goddess Freya.

Goddess Freya has sent 100,000 birds to help you.

-Due to the blessing, your health has been completely restored.

Your hunger situation has changed to feeling full.

You can maintain the best vitality during the day.

“It really is Goddess Freya!”

It was like Weed was overflowing with faith after going to church on Christmas and receiving a gift!

The birds desperately tried to save the falling Weed. There were some eagles but the ones that caught his eye were the small birds like sparrows.

Thanks to all the birds in the vicinity, his falling speed started decreasing. But the giant black bear had a heavy weight so the birds could only slightly slow the speed of his crash, not save him.

Meanwhile, the tower that fell first had completely hit the central area and was destroyed. The impact of a building with a height of a few kilometres crashing down!

The entire ground shook like it was an earthquake Weed created. The buildings were destroyed by the tower falling down on it. The impact of the crash caused a strong wind to blow that scattered the debris in different directions. A dust cloud rose up and covered all the monsters, fanatics and priests.

Weed had been through small and large sieges but it was the first time he saw a fortress being destroyed like this.

“My idea was great!”

And the birds holding up Weed being frightened and scattered at the sound.

“No! Come back!”

Freya's Blessing had gathered the birds but they weren't much help before scattering.

Weed was terrified as the ground once again approached. Now that the small force of the gathered birds disappeared from beneath him, his speed started accelerating again.

And he desperately looked for something that could minimize the impact or reduce the damage. Weed was peering through the dust cloud when he saw something huge.

‘That thing.’

Weed twisted his limbs in the air as he adjusted his falling position. The impact energy contained in this huge body would be like a meteor falling down from the sky.

‘I guess I would be fighting the Chaos Dragon. But this way it is in my path.’

His goal was the Chaos Dragon Ausollet sitting on the ground! He wasn't fighting it with a sword or magic, just bumping into it while falling.

300 metres, 160 metres, 75 metres, 20 metres, 3 metres! The body of the dragon was getting closer at a terrifying speed.

Weed curled up his entire body like a ball.

“Kuweeek!”

And he head-butted the Chaos Dragon.



The Chaos Dragon Ausollet!

The dragon was involved in a ritual when the Sky Tower collapsed and hit him.

-Kuooooooh!

The dragon had been exposed to the Embinyu Church’s brainwashing so only instinct remained.

Ausollet felt a severe pain and peered down at the ground.

“I-I’m alive!”

“Aaaack!”

The spirit of a real dragon would destroy such fragile creatures. The fanatics were rolling around on the ground from pain. The priests focusing their holy magic on the Chaos Dragon had lost their lives to the tower.

Ausollet slowly lifted up its eyelids.

-Where is this place? And why... What is this?

A huge black form! The dragon got up from the ground and spread its wide wings.

-Why am I here?

Ausollet had also suffered damage from the tower collapsing on it so more than one third of its health had flown away. It was an astronomical amount of damage.

Then a powerful vortex of mana was absorbed into the dragon's body. The mana had been the means used to dominate the dragon and use its power for their own will.

The dust cleared and the shape of the dragon could be seen. A 350 metres long body with polished black scales! The foreboding big eyes, sharp teeth and dignified beard that connected the right and left sides. A streamlined muscular body and tail that made it looked very beautiful and also dangerous.

The strongest creature on the Versailles Continent, the dragon opened its eyes and took a deep breath.

Huuuuuk!

Even the breathing was scary. Mana pushed against the dragon was smoothly absorbed into its body. It had woken up early from a deep sleep but now it's body was reverting to its normal status.

The dragon's mouth opened and it roared.

-I don't know why I'm in a place like this. And why bugs like you are here.

The dragon cried out.

The servants of the Embinyu Church that didn't dare disobey screamed with pain. This was the legendary grandeur that had been mentioned in history books.

At the same time, Weed fell from the sky and crashed against the Chao Dragon's body.

“Kuweeek!”

-Kr rarar warara!

Weed and the dragon both screamed from the pain.



Most traffic accidents that occurred weren't able to be predicted. Even though he made some preparations, the collision almost caused him to lose consciousness!

-You have suffered severe injuries due to the crash.

There is a severe reduction in health!

Health has been reduced by 74%.

Spine and neck damage has caused paralysis, confusion and hallucinations.

The right hind leg, left hind leg and right front foot has been broken. You won't be able to walk.

There is a shoulder injury and large wound on your side.

The message indicating the damage suffered from hitting the dragon! It was more difficult to find body parts that were normal. The degree of injuries were okay for being on the verge of death.

Weed rolled like a ball and landed on the ground after hitting the dragon. Weed's body crushed some large and sharp rocks that were the remnants of the tower. The fanatics that fell to the ground due to the dragon's roar were crushed to death by the massive bear!

Weed rolled a few hundred metres across the ground before

remaining still. And he muttered in a small voice.

“My head is spinning. Stat Window.”

Character Name Weed Alignment Extra Large Beast

Level 825 Species Asian Black Bear

Health 813,943 Mana 433

Strength 2,731 Agility 1,695

Vitality 2,184 Wisdom 5

Intelligence 4 Fighting Spirit 3,219

Endurance 662 Perseverance 2,133

Art 3 Charisma 1,293

Leadership 2 Luck 3

Faith 283 Charm 382

Resilience 2,391 Dignity 6

Concentration 445 Courage 621

* Due to the unique characteristics of the bear species, perseverance and resilience is very high.

The glossy leather improves magic resistance. However, this will make you the target of hunters.

As a large creature, you have high health and strength.

Combat skills are only partially available.

Sophistication is required so the proficiency of Swordsmanship will be adjusted to Advanced level 1.

Weed had high stats from the Nodulle's Growth quest in the desert! There was also the influence of Sculpture Transformation and the bonus stats from dungeon explorations.

Weed was proud of what he raised his level to. Among humans, it was difficult to find someone who could be his opponent. This was why the desert army was so imposing when they swept through the Central Continent.

What did he have to fear? Would he meet an enemy so dangerous it would cause him to hesitate?

Weed was a powerful existence but he was willing to prostrate his body for a cheaper price.

‘The remaining health... Approximately 100,000. This isn’t a considerable amount.’

Even if he had hundreds of thousands of health, it was hard to be optimistic about the situation. The curses and magic from the Embinyu Church would immediately cut down his health. The huge bear would be an easy target for the enemies.

Weed had to choose the best tactic among the options inside his head.

“Huuuuem.”

He calmly took a deep breath. Thanks to the fall, he was in a state incapable of fighting.

-The earth goddess Mi-ne has blessed you.

The energy from the earth has restored your health and vitality.

Weed stretched out and took a break while the blessing of the earth restored his health.

-Krarararara!

The dragon's angry roar was enormous.

The Sky Tower had collapsed and Weed needed to kill the dragon. His goal seemed close yet far away. The dragon had wide magic and there was also the range of its breath.

The good news was that the Embinyu Church was attacking the dragon so Weed didn't have to worry about it right now.

"God Embinyu has given us a faithful servant. Catch him."

The fanatics of the Embinyu Church woke up from their shock and quickly followed the orders.

Many lives of the elite troops had been taken by the Sky Tower. But it was still overflowing with troops that were sufficient to destroy the continent. The fanatics and monsters rushed out from the collapsed buildings.

-Strange. Lowly humans, you dare challenge me. I... Kuaah! My head hurts.

Ausollet emitted a breath. A child that wasn't completely aware after waking up!

-I will kill you all.

It automatically stepped on the monsters and smacked the

buildings with its tail.

“Embinyu magicians, attack!”

Hundreds of magic attacks were cast towards it but the high magic resistance meant it was brushed off like flies.

Ausollet had a mysterious healing power like trolls so his wounds slowly recovered. The magic would naturally act to heal it.

A dragon wasn't called a legend for nothing. If Ausollet was fully awakened then his combat capabilities would be many times stronger!

“Use the offerings to complete the brainwashing magic.”

But high priest Heuller already organized a countermeasure against the dragon. The aura around the Embinyu members increased as their movements accelerated and health increased.

“Treat it seriously.”

“The gift that God Embinyu gave to us will be captured through mind control.”

The Atrocity Knights were decoys that attracted the attention of the dragon. Although the dragon Ausollet could fly, it didn't jump up from the ground.

Weed had climbed the Sky Tower. It had an impact but the dragon's body and spirit weren't working properly due to the long term brainwashing.

-This... You are doing something preposterous. This is laughable....

Ausollet blew out a cloud of poisoned smoke as it talked. That meant it was angry!

-You should have perished sooner. This species isn't worth living! You should go around begging for your lives like the bugs you are! Kuoooh, my head hurts. Who am I? I can't think.

“There are many gaps.”

“Switch to magic attacks.”

The priests once again attacked Ausollet with magic. The Priests of Punishment and senior priests under Heuller also took action. The top ranking priests used divine power and cast special spells!

-No. You can't hurt me.

The dragon instinctively covered its body with a protective layer of air! But there were many gaps that allowed the magic to hit it. The archers also fired arrows made of superior steel that could

pierce the dragon.

“Charge, charge!”

The Atrocity Knights rushed over to the dragon on horseback and wielded a hammer and axe.

“Dedicate my two ears, two eyes, two legs and two arms to Embinyu. Give my life so that the great story of Embinyu will unfold!”

The knights even chanted sacrificial magic. A dark aura surrounded their bodies like a halo! They sacrificed their lives to Embinyu but they could exert 5 times the brute power for a brief period of time.

In the case of those knights, their colleagues also chanted additional spells to support them.

-Acting so recklessly.

Ausollet instinctively waves its tail and trampled the incoming enemies with its paws. The dragon also bit the Embinyu monsters.

The knights dealt decisive blows to the dragon's scales before losing their lives. But no matter how strong it was, the dragon couldn't gain an advantage in the fight.

“Capture it.”

The priests chanted the brainwashing spell despite risking death.

-What are you doing? Kuaaaah!

The dragon swung its paw towards the priests. A large fireball shot through the air and exploded where the priests were. Its innate ability to handle mana caused magic attacks to be triggered with the slightest action. Magic shields were used by dozens of Embinyu priests died from the blast.

The dragon's fighting spirit that developed over thousands of years again would awaken once it remembered its past. At the moment, the dragon didn't know its own identity or how to use its techniques. The wide area magic and devastating breath was gone.

The Embinyu knights and priests realized this and jumped to stabilize the dragon through brainwashing.

‘Well, that doesn't really interest me.’

Weed's body was covered by dust and the remnants of the buildings. Of course, he was the one who caused the situation but he was staying silent.

“This person doesn't believe in Embinyu. Those who don't believe in God aren't qualified to come here.”

The inquisitors of the Embinyu Church arrived at the place where Weed was. They were holding glowing iron rods in their hands.

-Stigma of the Unbeliever!

Those who don't believe in God will receive a negative stigma.

Vitality, health and all stats have been reduced by 27%. Good luck is completely destroyed and unfortunate things will happen.

All believers will attack those branded with the stigma until it is cleared.

The stigma of the inquisitors can be fatal.

“Kurururu.”

Weed tried to pretend to be a cute bear.

“A shallow creature that doesn't believe in Embinyu just gives off an dirty impression.”

“.....”

An outright insult! Weed had extensive familiarity with flattery

but he couldn't possibly become intimate with the inquisitors of the Embinyu Church.

Weed looked around and no one was paying attention due to the dragon so he attacked the inquisitors with his paws.

“Kwaeeeeek!”

The inquisitors died immediately! Weed's health had currently been restored to 24%.

‘It is dangerous being too close to the dragon's big battle.’

His paws took out a sculpture of an Atrocity Knight on horseback.

“Surround the dragon so the priests can capture it.”

“It will take a few minutes. All slaves should devote their lives to this task!”

The Atrocity Knights rushed towards the dragon like fanatics.

“.....”

Weed stopped when he saw their huge movements. And after a moment.

Seulgeumseulgeum.

He withdrew little by little.

‘Well, isn’t it important to somehow live?’

He could hear the sound of the fight between Ausollet and the Embinyu Church. The dragon was stressful but it would also be risky if the Embinyu Church noticed him.

So far he had been mindful of showing an elegant appearance on his adventure but now he crawled across the ground. He crawled quickly and accurately like highly trained special forces.

‘Just a little further away. So don’t look back.’

He could hear the loud sounds of the Embinyu Church and the dragon fighting behind him. If someone appeared in the vicinity then they would see a body slowly crawling on all fours.

However, his surroundings suddenly turned static! He didn’t understand the reason so he opened his eyes with regret and looked back. While Ausollet was fighting the Embinyu Church, its dark eyes noticed Weed.

Then Weed turned around and made eye contact.

“ ”

-

Chapter 8: Dementia Dragon

Petrov had his own pride.

“The best profession is one of the arts. My complex and subtle paintings can allow someone to fully understand the world. Well, the sculptor Weed might have more fame and skill than me but there are always exceptions.”

He still couldn't abandon Yurin in his heart. Weed might be a family member but he was still a competitor!

“My future family is developing the north very well.”

Petrov nodded with satisfaction.

In fact, he expected Weed to be quite thankful after realized all the chaos and confusion Petrov created on the Central Continent.

The pictures he painted dealt a blow to the peace of the Haven Empire.

Only a painter could be so exceptional in this area. His works depicting the lords as villains were inspiring and moved the heart. The realistic portrayals caused the infamy of the lords to increase and even created scenes of confusion in some places.

He did quite a bit of damage in the early days of the Haven Empire's occupation so Petrov's name was quite well known among the users.

-Petrov the magician of colour.

-Petrov the mural storyteller.

"A painter who can draw dreams or express the true nature."

Petrov occasionally visited the Painter's Guild in Morata. It was to obtain a chance to meet Yurin.

"Buying paints. Buying natural paints 3 silver or less! And I will draw a picture in those clothes for a cheap price!"

"A poor painter is buying wolf leather. If there are holes in the leather then I will buy it for a cheap price. Please help me and don't sell it to a grocery store!"

Novice painters worked hard engaging in business in the city. When first starting Royal Road, a person couldn't leave the village or city for the first four weeks.

Unlike other professions, novice painters could hone their skills in this time period.

"Ahem, she isn't here today either. She must be drawing all the

beauty in this world. I want to see her face.”

Petrov bleakly turned towards Painter’s Hill.

In the crowded Morata, if a person wasn’t careful then they would always bump into players. A procession of merchants and architects holding shovels caught his eye.

Despite the crisis of the Haven Empire invading the north, the number of beginners in Morata was growing every day. Even the level 1 beginners would lay down foundation stones in the Arpen Kingdom while filled with hope.

“This place has remained unchanged.”

Petrov climbed the hill while looking at Morata’s landscape.

The city that had become the hub of commercial traffic in the north contained high buildings and the streets were filled with symbolic sculptures. It didn’t have a deep historical tradition so buildings of various styles created a culture that symbolized the city.

Architects, painters and sculptors all added decorations. Merchants ran businesses and residents could live their lives. Adventures made friends and relaxed in the city while sharing stories. There would be many losses if the city fell into a crisis so people came forward to fight.

“How is it so well drawn?”

“Maybe they have been a professional portrait artist since childhood.”

“The drawing speed is really fast. There are numerous colours that are mixed well. This isn’t a normal skill.”

The gathered spectators were buzzing.

“It seems to be an artist drawing a picture.”

This sight was common to Petrov so he attempted to casually pass by.

Painters or sculptors working would draw people’s attention. The painters deliberately sat on a street corner while showing an attractive painting.

If an audience was gathered then they could get a higher value when succeeding with the artwork. The audience also consisted of customers such as a warrior asking for his appearance to be drawn.

Petrov wasn’t interested generic users selling paintings.

‘No one will buy my paintings. They aren’t the type of paintings that would be sold for a cheap price.’

He was just going to walk through towards Painter's Hill. Then he heard the clear voice of a woman among the onlookers.

“The value of this picture is 30 gold. Can you recognize how good this price is? I'll tell you in advance but discounts or requests can't be returned.”

“Yes, I understand.”

“If you prepay for a painting then you can increase the paint colours or add options for an additional charge.”

A chill went down the bones in his spine as he heard the voice!

Petrov's eyes flashed.

‘It is her!’

He had met her in the painting of St. George's Castle. The sculptor Weed was the brother of his lifelong companion in the future!

‘It is fate that we're meeting again.’

On the eve of a storm, two opposing families were meeting again on Painter's Hill. They could be like Romeo and Juliet who ended in tragedy or extremely happy lovers like Nodulle and Hilderun.

Petrov stood by waiting while she drew the picture. There were many travellers so Painter's Hill operated until late at night. Then at dawn, users would flock to the Tower of Light to continue painting.

“How about we get rid of this red paint? I will draw it with yellow instead of red.”

“The night fare surcharges are a little... Is it okay? Your equipment indicates that you have a lot of money.”

“I will draw the bridge of your nose more firmly and raise the jaw line. Do you prefer longer bangs? The additional charge will be 35% but it will be indistinguishable from a photograph.”

He listened to her ripping off the guests that kept on coming.

Yurin's hair had grown longer since the last time he saw her. A female warrior cut their hair because it would be a burden in battle but painters or magicians could wear their hair long under pointed hats. Her paint stained clothes only enhanced her pure charm.

‘Wow, a whole swarm of bees. Indeed....’

Yurin finally finished and placed her painting tools in her backpack. He had been waiting for this moment so Petrov swallowed his saliva as he approached her.

“Excuse me... Do you remember me?”

A small, shaky voice! It was filled with longing and affection.

Petrov had shown Yurin his treasured paintings that weren't open to the public. He was certain that she would remember him.

She might have even been waiting for him deep in her heart. If so, today's meeting was a sweet destiny!

“Hey, who are you?”

“I am Petrov....”

“Huh?”

“I am the Aqualight Painter from St. George's Castle.”

“Oh, that disgusting person?”

“.....”

It felt like a spear had pierced Petrov's heart. Yurin then laughed brightly.

“Just joking. Have you been well?”

Weed knew her personality well and that smiling expression occurred when she was manipulating someone. She was his sister but sometimes she acted like a naughty pony.

In particular, if she had a grudge then she tended to not forgive it.

“Of course. I’ve been waiting to meet you again.”

“You should have come see me earlier. Petrov is always welcome.”

“Hmm hmm.”

Petrov coughed and tried to change the atmosphere. In the past, he had criticized her brother so he felt that she was still upset about that.

“Then do you want to talk about paintings? The painting style that is fashionable these days....”

“Are you being cocky?”

Petrov shook his head. This approach didn’t seem to be working.

He had to confess like an honest man. Otherwise, he would regret it for the rest of his life.

“I have always been waiting for the day that we would meet again. I’ve been thinking about your face every day.”

“Stalker?”

“.....”

His preconceived ideas seemed to be bad. Petrov felt like he should improve the situation.

“Don’t you think the cloak I’m wearing is very nice? After meeting the king of the Sprit World and helping the water spirits, I obtained this cloak that has the ability to call down rain. The value of this cloak isn’t cheap....”

“A bean paste man?” (A term that grew to mean a man who values superficial things, is obsessed with appearances or spends above their means)

Petrov was speechless. She wasn’t impressed with his extreme devotion.

He decided to use a wildcard.

“I’ve been waiting to meet you again so I’ve prepared a painting with 300 diamonds embedded in it.”

“Can you go away?”

Yurin had little interest at this point.

In fact, she also felt pleased to meet Petrov after a long time. He had lost her goodwill after criticizing Weed last time. She felt pleasure crushing a man like that.

Petrov removed a hairpin with a water drop on it from a box.

“This is a magic hairpin made of the purest water in the world. I think the brilliant sheen makes it worth more than 300 diamonds.”

“This man is scary, spending valuable money while children are suffering.....”

“.....”



Weed wanted to turn his head.

The dragon Ausollet seemed to be having a bloody discussion with its eyes. It was like a starving carnivore staring at an insignificant herbivore.

‘I don’t know what I should do. Thinking about it positively, I am the one who save it from the brainwashing. Of course I deserve

some financial rewards.'

Unfortunately, the dragon Ausollet's thoughts were a little different.

-You.

There were many implications in that short word.

Weed's eyes trembled.

-This foolish creature that tried to attack me, was your balance distorted or something? I will tear through your body although it will be glory for you to die by my hands.

Weed wanted to give up that glory. His troubled expression returned.

'It really is a corrupt society when an honest person like me doesn't receive preferential treatment.'

He blamed all the absurdity on society!

The dragon Ausollet that had been attacking the Embinyu Church stared at Weed for a few seconds.

A dragon was a monster that would lose its composure!

‘This is.... The dragon will become aware of its identity the moment we say the word dragon.’

Strictly speaking, it was difficult to consider the current Ausollet as a high ranking monster.

But the moment the dragon became aware of it, the dragon would spread its wings and fly. It could then aim the terrible dragon’s breath and other magic towards the ground. It had two or three times the devastation of the summon meteor spell.

A dragon was a creature that could significantly change the world when it became angry. The younger Ausollet was a crazy dragon that committed such terrible actions.

‘I can’t let it become like that.’

Weed had a similar idea to the Embinyu Church. The senior members had no fear of the dragon. Their god Embinyu had given them magic to put down rebellions.

“Internal Rupture of the Unbelievers!”

“Digging through the Heart!”

“Brilliant Judgement!”

“Devastated Paradise!”

The high priest and senior priests gathered magic and struck the dragon. A huge explosion occurred and Ausollet staggered.

-Kuooohhhh, you humans....!

The dragon rose in anger and faced the priests of the Embinyu Church. The dragon seemed to have forgotten about him due to the shock. Weed waited another moment before leaving.

“Keep moving.”

“Only a few minutes remain until it is completely brainwashed. Devote your life to this glory.”

The features of the priests were calm. They moved quickly to use divine magic against the dragon. Atrocity Knights and dangerous monsters continued to flock in order to draw the dragon’s attention.

Weed turned and quickly retreated. But the Embinyu Church had also noticed him.

“That one over there is going against Embinyu’s will.”

“It is the big, foolish bear that smashed our tower. Peel off his skin and eat it.”

The priests and knights that had seen Weed climb the tower pointed towards him. Weed had done something bad so hostility had risen!

“I have to run away.”

Weed jumped up from the ground.

The situation wasn't good so it only took him 1 second to decide to escape. It was better not to fight against the enemy. Instead, he should retreat and hide in a suitable place.

He would only work when he was in the best state! But the high priest Heuller demonstrated his divine magic.

“Restricted Area of the Slaves!”

Ddirring!

-A powerful curse spell has hit.

-The curse has been cast with the power of the ruler of the Embinyu Church, Heuller.

-You will suffer endless pain and reduction of health when outside a certain distance and your weakened soul will suffer.

-The wrongfully dead ghosts will jump on your flesh and you won't be able to control it properly.

-Heuller's divine magic is unavoidable and can't be resisted.

-Travel speed has been reduced by 26%.

-Health will be decreased by 1,293 with every step you move.

Weed's eyes could see a red aura that signified a fixed area. If he went beyond those boundaries then he would suffer from the curse magic.

“This damn curse.”

There was no way to escape.

“It is like a cat pursuing a mouse until it dies and still eating it....”

Weed grabbed a nearby monster with both hands and threw it towards the high priest Heuller. Of course, he gained nothing as it was burned away by Heuller's protective magic.

“I won't forgive him.”

Weed overflowed with anger and headed towards the Embinyu

Church. Of course, a tremendous force was encircling the dragon.

There were fanatics, knights, priests and monsters everywhere after the Sky Tower collapsed. If the tower hadn't collapsed and blocked the roads then there would be an infinite number of troops.

Instead, the production bases continued to produce fanatics and demons. Weed was surrounded by several hundred to 1,000 troops. He couldn't look down on them since he was in the heart of the enemy.

“No matter how I live quietly, this world always tries to kill me. If you are willing to bother me then I will fight.”

The huge black bear wasn't daunted and gave off an overwhelming impression! Although it couldn't be compared to a dragon, the extra large black bear bared its teeth.

-These dirty savages, you should all die!

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Now it is too late. Do I have to just watch without fighting?”

“Aigoo, I will die.”

Warrior-1 continued to scout without getting closer. He saw the

Sky Tower collapsing and the dragon moving. Now all the troops of the Embinyu Church had been mobilized so it was quite easy to invade the interior.

But Warrior-1 couldn't move from his spot at all.

-Your body is rotting.

-Health is constantly decreasing.

-Poison has reduced the vitality in your body to the minimum.

You can't wield your weapon or any other activities.

His body had been rotted by the poison after passing through the river.

Warrior-1 could only lay on the ground. It was a scene that would cause Weed to nag him! In this state, he couldn't even resist if the Embinyu Church stabbed him in the chest.

“Great Emperor-nim won't forget and will save me!”

Warrior-2 was still bound with the chains in the prison.

“I will not give up until the end. I've survived worst situations because I didn't give up hope.”

The guards were talking among themselves.

“It is a little noisy above.”

“The strength of the priests are amazing and the dragon is being brainwashed faster than expected.”

“Then shouldn’t we prepare the offerings?”

“Let’s start.”

Warrior-2 was going to be offered to the brainwashed dragon. The guards sprinkled seasonings over Warrior-2 while he was still living.

“Roasted or boiled?”

“Shouldn’t they be burned with an iron rod?”

“The last thing I tried was delicious. Juicy and sweet.”

“It is delicious when it is a little undercooked.”

“Kuhuhuk, Great Emperor-nim.”

Warrior-3 was pretending to be a knight so he could walk around relatively freely. He didn't go into the combat zone and just searched the buildings. He had learned from watching Weed's actions and was looking for treasure.

"These are things related to curses. There isn't anything normal here and there are even books about black magic."

Warrior-3 threw anything related to curses or the ground or destroyed them.

Hestiger was in the kitchen when the guards dragged down some female elf slaves.

"Make some food. A fellow who is still alive. And I won't cook you in the same pot with that guy. Kilkilkil!"

He might applaud Weed's efficiency but Hestiger couldn't put up with injustice.

"Those bad fellows! How can people like you live under this sky?"

"Who are you? Kueok!"

Hestiger ran out and killed the guards while saving the elves.

"Are you okay?"

“Yes, we aren’t injured.”

They were beautiful elves and high elves. They couldn’t use their magic and even the shamans couldn’t invoke their spirits due to the enslavement.

Hestiger swung his scimitar and freed them. The sight of so many elves being defaced by chains was an insult to beauty itself! In addition to his good looks, Hestiger had the atmosphere of a hero in the movies.

Hestiger’s low voice instilled faith in the people that heard it.

“This place is dangerous. I will guide you out of the temple.”

No matter how dangerous the situation, he was a typical hero that defended women!

“No. We also have to fight. We will fight together.”

“You don’t have a map of this area and you seem tired.”

“We can feel it as elves. I don’t want to imagine all that evil and dangerous magic gathering. If we don’t stop it then the elves won’t be able to live safely any longer.”

“Then it is a good idea. We will go together.”

The high elves picked up guards' bows. It was incomparable to the bow made by high elves but they had two other weapons, magic and spirits. The bow would increase their spirit power by dozens of times.

“There was a big impact a little while ago. We need to rescue the other slaves before the building collapses.”

“Of course.”

Hestiger and the elves quickly seized the building. A high elf with a thin and pretty face called Lunari was stuck next to him. And they discovered a facility that manufactured poison.

“This has a strange smell. They seem to be making something using the rotten corpses of the monsters.”

“This awful smell! Poison. It is a sufficient amount to pollute the rivers, lakes and sea. And if a spell is used to dump this on land then it will be devastated and creatures won't be able to live there for a long period of time.”

“The Embinyu Church, it is a really awful place. I know why Great Emperor-nim is fighting them.”

“I shouldn't say this as an elf but should we use this poison to defeat them?”

“Are you serious?”

“It is already hard to see them as humans. They should be cut away before they get rid of all other living things in nature.”

Weed would have praised the high elves if he heard those words. But Hestiger thought for a moment before shaking his head.

“No. I am a proud warrior of Great Emperor-nim so I can’t use such a cowardly method.”

“But there is no method more effective than this.”

“I won’t do anything unsavoury that will undermine Great Emperor-nim’s honour. I will believe in Great Emperor-nim and wait for him to thoroughly defeat the Embinyu Church.”

Hestiger’s original character wasn’t like this when he was with Nodulle. Nodulle had emphatically refused the poison due to his moral conscience.

But Hestiger’s personality had changed. In order to not be a burden on Weed, he had become a more upright and honest hero.

Weed was stronger than Nodulle so Hestiger had no need to anguish about winning against a stronger enemy. He knew that Weed would sweep them all away.

If Weed knew this situation then he would lament that he trained his subordinates incorrectly. Hestiger should have died sooner or been killed due to jealousy!

Hestiger had the appearance of a grand and righteous warrior. The high elf Lunari looked at him with even more impressed eyes.

“Indeed! We can win this using the right methods. It is like Warrior-nim said.”

“Burn away all the bad people.”

“I will help you.”

If Weed knew this then he would strike Hestiger from behind without hesitation.

And Zahab took advantage of the confusion to run in.

“Sculpting Blade!”

The fanatics that believed for a long time would accept evil into their souls. Nobles that were controlled wandered around with blank expressions.

“All these people... They will all die for Evane.”

Zahab swung his sword without hesitation after thinking of his beloved Evane. His white hair flew around as he cut the enemy with brilliant movements.

“I can get perfect results thanks to Evane. I will give me life here.”

It was simple when he thought about it calmly. Even if the Embinyu Church fully collapsed, it wouldn't change the fact that Evane would become queen of the Rosenheim Kingdom.

He had to watch his first love Evane live happily in the arms of another man. He was now an old man. Maybe it was better for Zahab to die here instead of returning to his original world.

“Kuoohh, God. T-this pain....”

And Saint Ahellun suffered serious injuries. He had been among the slaves in the Central Square when the Sky Tower fell down.

It was said that a saint would only emerge once a century. They were superior to a pope and could use the divine power of God to sustain life.

In Nodulle's original adventure, Ahellun had played a huge role but now he could die at any moment like an old man.

Kung. Kung.

The ground in Weed's immediate vicinity was also shaking due to the battle. Ahellun was trapped in more piles of rubble every time Weed played an active role.

"I am doing this. Saint-nim."

"God...we will take care of you."

Young female slaves were helping Ahellun.

When the tower had been crumbling, Ahellun used his divine power to form a protective shield around the slaves. If it hadn't been for the shield then all of them would have lost their lives the moment the rubble landed.

Chapter 9: Black Bear And Dragon

Weed's high visibility meant the priests found it easy to aim at him when chanting divine magic.

“Twist and pierce through. Wave of Light.”

“Scary memories, the most dangerous things that have happened to you will appear in front of you. Advent of Fear.”

“Flapping its wings. Summon human eating pests!”

“Blood will not stop overflowing. Bloody Eve!”

Weed swept away the fanatics running towards him with both arms.

Kwa kwa kwang!

The fanatics were thrown dozens of metres away with the impact causing a deep pit! No matter how their strength was amplified by the power of faith in this place, it was no use against Weed.

Buildings crumbled and there was a deep pit in the ground every time he wielded his arms.

The pleasure of a giant creature trampling on the small and

weak! His fists could crush anything while the enemies just rolled around the ground and died. This was the fun of being a giant.

“Bring it on. These people will continue to drop japtem.”

It was impossible for regular soldiers in the warring period to go against Weed. There was a large difference like heaven and earth. However, his eyes that showed his charisma and fighting spirit also pressed against the enemies.

The enemy could only submit to his authority and their fear would increase his infamy. The knights died with just one hit from the sword and the Great Emperor of the desert created a new chapter in the history of the continent.

Even so, the fanatics didn't panic or shrink back. Soon the various spells of the Embinyu Church focused on Weed!

Weed bent his upper body to avoid some but most of the magic hit. Of course, the thick leather meant the maximum magic damage was reduced by half and he didn't feel much pain.

“Act in moderation. I don't know what I did to become an enemy.”

“Shut up, you are the culprit that destroyed the Sky Tower! You have already forgotten your sins!”

“Yes, it is my fault for living for this world. I was always like

this!”

He even used the wreckage of the building in combat. The giant black bear ran around and threw anything he could get his hands on. The large and small remnants of the tower were everywhere. He used the buildings as cover to take out enemies one by one.

Many of the priests were dealing with the dragon so that was a large advantage. Many priests were directing their brainwashing magic towards the dragon so they couldn't attack Weed.

Heuller only glared at Weed.

“You will surrender to God Embinyu. Don't resist. Blasphemy!”

-The high priest Heuller has used Blasphemy on this entire region.

You will receive a blow to your health and mana, depending on your faith.

Health has decreased by 4,394!

Blasphemy can't be resisted.

Your faith stat has temporarily been replaced by 0.

For 4 minutes, all corpses of Embinyu knights and priests will exert constraints.

Weed hasn't received much damage despite currently didn't have any faith. However, all his resentment exploded out after Heuller used the technique.

“How am I supposed to fight like this?”

The memory of fighting Bardray in the past resurfaced. Even back then, he had to fight through all types of disadvantageous conditions.

Blasphemy would be decisive in a large scale war. Even if he brought regular priests, they wouldn't be able to help. The priests wouldn't be able to use healing magic unless Heuller was killed. This situation was like an unfair competition between a wealthy son and a rebellious son!

Heuller tapped the ground a few times with his staff.

“Embinyu will burn everything. Summon the Fire of Destruction!”

-The Fire of Destruction has been summoned.

The identity of the magic hasn't been fully revealed.

This black magic is considered among one of the worst attack magic against humans and the method to use the magic has become a secret.

An enormous health will be the nourishing for the flame that will burn people's flesh.

The Flames of Destruction won't burn out.

When it moves around a certain radius, it will burn people except for the one who summoned it and will become hotter.

After finally filling up the required health and vitality, the flame will return to its summoner and be activated.

“This isn't acting moderately at all.”

But the high priest of the Embinyu Church continued to use his divine magic. A huge fireball was slowly being formed in the air.

He could fight using direct physical combat but Heuller's holy magic and protection spells were on another level. Even physical attacks like the dragon swinging its paws or tail were easily blocked by a protective barrier.

“My subordinates are invisible at this important moment. It would be nice if Hestiger was here.”

Weed moved to a location where there was a huge pile of rubble from the collapse of the Sky Tower.

Heuller and the priests of the Embinyu Church needed to be near the dragon. Weed couldn't leave the area due to the curse magic but he could enter deeper into the enemy.

Meanwhile, the Fire of Destruction had hit the dragon.

Weed stepped closer due to this.

“God Embinyu is a man right? It is difficult to tell so I need a small reminder.....”

“Kill him!”

The Embinyu knights led the attack against him. Usually they were a fairly scary existence. They were rush at utmost speed and crush the enemy with their swords or spears.

The charge of the knights maximized the power of their formation. It was possible for a few thousand knights to slaughter thousands of monsters on the plains. But it was impossible to charge due to the debris so they had to surround him. The ground was also a mess so the knights couldn't move quickly. Without the charge then they were a good meal for Weed!

-Anger has increased due to the repeated attacks.

Power will greatly increase.

Resilience will be enhanced.

Maximum health has increased and the temporary increase will rise with your percentage of anger.

A state where his anger had risen. Weed smashed the knights into buildings or their colleagues.

“Kuaaaah!”

The roar of a giant bear!

This was the pleasure of being a large creature!

-Kwarararararara!

Another massive roar was heard that rocked the land and buildings in close proximity.

“I should fight quietly.”

He blushed as the dragon responded to his yell.

“Come here. I will thoroughly smash all of you!”

Weed fought against the fanatics even more fiercely. Buildings were demolished and he threw rocks at the approaching knights.

There were monsters flying in the sky. Monsters soared up and the sky was filled with a variety of them. They flew towards the dragon but dozens headed towards Weed.

Weed caught any flying monsters that approached and hurled them to the ground. And he roared in a small voice.

“Kuaah!”

When he was younger, he had watched a movie where a huge beast rampaged. People yearned to become a giant creature for the same reason. A King Kong like creature among modern buildings!

Weed was a creature like that as he smashed with his limbs. The evil people gathered around him made him feel very unpleasant!

“Go!”

“It is impossible to jump over on horseback.”

“Abandon the horses.”

“That bear is watching us. Keeook!”

The large bear took advantage of the terrain that he had changed himself. He cracked the ground with his fists and the knights fell from their horses.

Everywhere Weed walked, he would cause a deep pit in the ground due to his weight. He also smashed entrances and alleys to make it difficult for more enemies to appear.

“Don’t get too close and just throw your spears.”

“Call the ranged units. Deploy the archers.”

The Embinyu Church mobilized a massive number of soldiers and knights. The priests were almost not visible as they continued to try and control the dragon. The knights covered the ground while archers climbed onto the rubble to fire arrows towards Weed.

“Those are awful shots for soldiers.”

It was inevitable that the spears and arrows from the enemies would hit Weed’s body.

-The glossy fur and leather has exerted its defensive capabilities.

“Kuweek!”

“A-arrows....”

“Continue attacking! Search for those who go against the will of Embinyu.”

The archers fired their arrows. They were aiming at a large target so even arrows fired roughly couldn't be avoided. But some also went over the target and hit their colleagues.

The arrows and spears that couldn't penetrate Weed's thick skin bounced off and damaged their colleagues.

“Throw the spears. All monsters won't survive in front of the great Embinyu.”

“Let's go hunting. We can taste the best meat.”

The knights continued to raise their morale with encouragement. The fanatics eagerly jumped to give their support and loyalty so the knights' fighting spirit didn't fall.

The advantage in strength and physique that Weed gained as a huge monster was tremendous. Just using his arms would be a long ranged weapon that could assault a group.

More than 30 enemies lost their lives every time Weed attacked. Just one fist would break a building and the knights holding

shields would fly back into their colleagues!

“Being large is truly funny.”

He enjoyed the enormous damage and flinging debris. But the spears that the knights threw and the arrows caused him a headache due to his high visibility.

Weed didn't stop at all as he punched and kicked. The knights that came close grabbed his fur and tried to attack. And he couldn't do anything against the archers.

He threw rocks and swung his arms at the archers but more would come from another place. He killed the enemies but more Embinyu members continued to appear.

-Health is reduced.

The number of arrows inserted in you have exceeded 2,600.

Resilience has increased by 1 due to this great record.

Health will continue to decline due to the many injuries.

“Die!”

“He is weakening!”

Weed was dealing damage to the enemy but it didn't seem to matter as more of them kept appearing.

“Kuoooooh!”

The roar of the giant black bear inflicted fear but the enemy didn't even hesitate. The frightening growl didn't express any tiredness as he continued to kill the knights. His health continued to decrease as the arrows kept piercing his body.

It was impossible to defend all his body parts from so many attacks. He had a lot of health but it was gradually reducing. Moreover, the high priest Heuller was clever. He sent troops towards Weed while concentrating on brainwashing the dragon.

If the Embinyu Church's brainwashing of the dragon was successful then everything else would be meaningless. The large black bear would just be like a cute teddy bear or food in front of the dragon!

‘It would be a great honour to die... No, it won't be tamed in this way. It isn't a total loss yet.’

Eliminating the Embinyu Church troops and monsters that constantly popped out wasn't an appropriate method. No matter how much he fought, it had virtually no effect.

‘Should I not deal with these guys?’

Weed gazed at a building that was on fire. But he didn't know what was happening inside.

Nodulle had used poison in the past but Weed was unaware of its existence. He didn't know that the poison had already been burned by Hestiger!

He was struggling against the forces of the Embinyu Church alone. The number of troops he saw in the video of the Sky Tower's construction was impossible for 1~2 people to overpower. Even if he had dealt a huge blow by collapsing the Sky Tower, there was still an enormous number of troops remaining.

-Kuwooooooooooh! It hurts! Selfish humans, recklessly giving me pain. I will exterminate your species. Head... My head is breaking!

The dragon suddenly screamed. The dragon was the absolutely strongest creature but now it was making pained groans.

Heuller and the Embinyu Church's senior priests had firmly grasped the dragon's head! Just like Weed, the dragon was a large creature with high strength and vitality. That alone meant it could exert a tremendous ability that would prevent it from dying.

But the Embinyu Church had sufficient capacity to brainwash the dragon with their divine power.

“There isn't much remaining. Once Heuller-nim's work is

completed, this world will crumble.”

“The dragon will be a servant of our church.”

The sound of the archers rejoicing reached Weed’s ears. The collapsed buildings around him meant he could hear a considerable number of sounds from the monsters and knights.

But his sensitive ears would hear those words anywhere!

“Is that right?”

Weed turned around and started to run. Of course, it wasn’t to escape. There was no possibility of him using that method.

Weed jumped over the wreckage and headed towards the dragon. Strands of divine power emerged from the priests and wrapped around the struggling dragon. No matter what the dragon tried, it couldn’t escape from the divine power surrounding its body. And the high priest Heuller continued chanting spells towards the dragon.

The dragon’s tail and wings were still free. It was encircled by dozens of knights.

Weed attacked those Atrocity Knights instead of the troops that emerged. In fact, it was a situation where the troops were dispatched towards the dragon instead of fighting Weed!

Heuller had captured the dragon so they thought Weed was trying to stop it.

“The enemy has appeared.”

“Stop him!”

The Embinyu knights tried to block him but he just broke through them. Weed knocked the bodies of the knights everywhere.

“Ausollet!”

-Who... Who is calling me?

The dragon blinked at Weed with large eyes. The eyes changed from an intense gaze into blank eyes.

The Embinyu Church’s brainwashing was showing its power! Under normal conditions, the dragon wouldn’t be so easily brainwashed. But Ausollet had been brainwashed by the Embinyu Church for a long time before waking up so it would only take a short time to tame it again.

Weed ran through the knights and the magic attacks from the priests.

“I am going to save you!”

-You... Who are you?

Ausollet had been roaring with aggression towards Weed a short time ago. But now it just asked the question like it had forgotten all about it. A dragon with dementia was the luckiest situation!

“I am your friend.”

-Frie...nd?

“I am going to save you now.”

Weed kicked the priests who were chanting the brainwashing spell.

“No!”

The priests shrieked.

It was like the Embinyu Church were preparing dinner all night only for the table to be overturned! Half the red lines of brainwashing around the dragon disappeared.

“Do not interfere. Glacier’s Breath!”

High priest Heuller pointed his fingers and the temperature in Weed's vicinity declined in 1 second, forming transparent ice cubes. An unavoidable attack!

-You have been shocked by the broken fragments of ice.

Health has decreased by 36,212.

Movement speed has slowed down and additional damage will continue to be received as the ice melts.

-You have been continuously hit by the broken ice fragments.

Damage is added.

Glacier's Breath was a powerful magic attack that continuously hit him ten times. His reflexes were quick but it was impossible to avoid the damage with his large body. He was able to endure it thanks to his angry state.

-Movement speed has slowed by 58%.

The other priests also used divine magic attacks but by that time, Weed had already released all the red lines of the brainwashing spell.

Some of the red lines hit him instead.

-Embinyu's Mark of Faith has confined you!

The soul attack has dealt a direct impact to concentration.

Once concentration is completely reduced, you will be a willing slave to Embinyu.

Current mental power status: Dizziness (87/100).

Weed always experienced curveballs on his adventures. The remaining attacks from the priests were aimed at his health!

As a human sculptor, Weed needed to manage his health well. If his health was low then he would just be slain.

Whether he had 500 health or 1,000 health, he needed to take advantage of everything in order to survive. But now he was huge so the attacks weren't as dangerous.

Nevertheless, he couldn't freely move around to kick the priests due to the dragon. Ausollet gazed at Weed who was almost the same size as it.

-Friend....

“Yes, friend.”

-Calling you friend is a little awkward.

“We are very close friends. There is no need to be ashamed.”

The inspirational feeling of a pure friendship.

Dragon and extra-large black bear!

Just standing near the two giant creatures was intimidating as they gave off an enormous pressure. The dragon with dementia was deceived while the black bear was a scam artist!

An absurd number of magic attacks were poured towards Weed and the dragon. The destruction magic that stopped due to the brainwashing started flying again.

In any other circumstances, Weed would have no choice except to die. No matter how high his level was, dozens of destructive magic attacks were enough to drop his health in an instant.

-Attack. Stop it.

“No, my friend. You can do that. Unfold your shield.”

-Shield?

“Yes. You have a really good protection spell. And it is urgent so

you should use it quickly.”

-I don't know how to use it.

“Command the mana that is flooding your bones and heart. Stop the attacks.”

-I will stop it.

Then a thin protective layer was created from the dragon's body.

“Is this it? Both of us should be protected. Spread out the shield as much as possible!”

-Block all of it.

Dozens of protective shields wrapped around Weed and the dragon.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Despite all the destructive magic attacks, they only pulled down 2~3 of the protective shields. The absolute magic power of the dragon!

Of course, Ausollet was especially strong among the dragons. However, the hastily unfolded shields managed to defend against

the magic.

Weed was busy thinking as the shields were maintained for a while. Ausollet had been severely injured by the brainwashing but the healing powers of its body meant it was slowly recovering.

Of course, Weed collapsing the tower had decreased its health by half. Weed and the dragon were now at risk!

“Friends, would you mind healing me?”

-I'd like to but I don't know how. What should I do?

“This person, no this bear is very important to you. So I think you should treat the injured areas. Don't you remember anything when looking at me?”

-I don't know.

“As expected. On shouldn't have too many friends. I have to make it work as much as possible.”

-What?

“No, nothing.”

Ausollet thought of Weed as a friend so it used the healing magic

on him. The treatment that only a friend of a dragon would receive!

The good news was that the brainwashing operation slightly purified its arrogant nature.

“He can’t obtain freedom. All knights attack!”

The troops of the Embinyu Church headed towards the dragon. Priests and inquisitors cast their magic. The sight of Ausollet’s shields blocking the might attacks was spectacular.

But even a dragon’s mana wouldn’t last forever! Ausollet’s shields decreased one by one. He swung his claws and tail at the enemy before swallowing them. The calibre of the dragon’s attack was different.

Weed was considered a friend so Ausollet didn’t aim at him.

“Are you eating?”

-I’m hungry. Although they have a crude taste.

A dragon grumbling about its food!

‘Now, what will happen.....’

Weed's brain worked as quickly as the latest computer.

'A dragon is strong even if it doesn't use all its battle methods.'

Ausollet damage the people and buildings with its tail. Weed could do that after turning into a black bear but the scale of destruction was different. He could only break the buildings one by one. The armoured knights also held their durable shields.

"Sacrifice our bodies so that Embinyu can completely cleanse this fallen world."

Despite the shattered troops and wreckage, the Embinyu troops steadily advanced.

-Go away!

The dragon gave a powerful scream, causing air to compress and pushing back the troops and arrows.

The relatively weak fanatics were in agony and died. It was a great monster with unimaginable abilities but the Embinyu Church started counterattacking.

The senior priests starting chanting the brainwashing spell again. If Ausollet continued sitting like this then it would be easily caught.

‘It will be bad even if it isn’t caught by the Embinyu Church’s brainwashing. After a short time, it will remember its past and the peace of the continent will be at risk.’

Ausollet’s presence itself was enough to cause fear. The Embinyu Church was also dangerous as they had a unique strength. A dragon was one of the most majestic creatures so they would quickly crush the continent if they could control it.

It would be disastrous if the worst dragon in history exerted its power. And Weed had an idea while sticking closely to the dragon.

‘Will it think bear meat is delicious?’

He could only hope that the dragon didn’t decide to eat him.

“It is like feeding a tiger.”

-Friend, I don’t understand what you saying.

Ausollet spoke after catching a roc flying in the sky and eating it. Ausollet was relatively friendly to Weed because it thought they were friends. Perhaps they would have needed to invest money dozens of times in order for Weed to call them a good friend.

“It is nothing. Have you filled your stomach?”

-A little... I’m still hungry.

“Will you eat more monsters?”

-Right now I'm fine. I can't eat too much at once.

“Then I'm glad.”

In the meantime, Ausollet had devoured 100 monsters. The dragon's head moved back and forth among the monsters without stopping.

Weed was bored while watching next to the dragon. It was like having no soybean paste in soybean paste stew or no kimchi in kimchi soup! He restored some health but it was quite slow.

“It is no fun since only the monsters are coming out.”

His body was stuck next to the dragon so he couldn't contribute to the battle.

‘It might be crazy but I won't know until I try.’

“Spread your wings.”

-What do you mean?

“Spread your two wings and fly into the sky. You can fly.”

Its friend said it so Ausollet spread its wings without any doubts. In the meantime, it had only spread its wings to defeat the onslaught of monsters. The elegant and perfect figure as the dragon spread its wings hundreds of metres wide.

-A familiar feeling.

Wind started blowing from every direction towards the dragon. Ausollet held its head high and lightly flapped its wings. Then its body gradually lifted from the ground.

10 metres. 20 metres. The dragon accelerated and flew into the sky!

The Embinyu Church aimed all types of magic at the dragon but it was blocked by an air shield.

A dragon that would dominate when flying in the sky!

“Flying is too easy.”

Weed kicked against the ground and jumped. The ground started shaking when he moved. Weed grabbed onto the dragon’s ankles before rotating and landing on its back.

-This impudent thing! A foolish creature being on top of me....

“I am your friend. Have you already forgotten?”

“Is that right?”

The dragon easily accepted it!

Well, its mind wasn't completely awake so it was easy to create a feeling of intimacy. No one knew how long this would last!

“Fly up higher.”

-Understood.

Weed looked at the Embinyu Church as the dragon flew up high.

The speed was on an entirely different level from the wyverns. It was like comparing a three-year-old child to a surprisingly quick motorcycle!

Despite the weight of the huge black bear, the dragon didn't seem to notice it at all and just kept flying. If he didn't desperately hold onto the dragon's neck then he would fall headlong into the ground.

-This is high.

“Yes, that's right.”

They were so high that the ground was barely visible. It was hard to even fathom the altitude.

The wind was as cold as ice. Weed would have died if he didn't have such high resistance. There was a gleam to the dragon's polished black scales that made it look beautiful. The proportions between harmony and danger made it absolutely beautiful.

Of course, the dragon was beautiful so the enormous bear that had its fur torn from fighting and dirty from rolling around on the ground didn't match it.

-Now what should I do?

“It is obvious. Get revenge!”

-Revenge.... The humans who live meaningless lives have decided to choose the path of self-destruction?

The dragon aimed its nose downwards while talking. No matter how confused it was, Ausollet's original nature still shone through.

“That's right.”

-I'm glad. Then I will head down to the ground.

“By the way, there is one thing that I want you to practice.”

-What is it?

“Take a deep breath. As hard as you can.”

He was teaching Ausollet like it was a kindergarten student. Its mouth widened and it took a deep breath through its nose and mouth. The dragon's torso became bloated with air.

This was the dragon's strongest attack. Black Dragon's Breath.

-Like this?

“That practice is good enough. Then let's go down. Your greatness.... No, I will show them that justice will win.”

Book 39: The Final Step

Chapter 1: Dragon's Crisis

Weed came closer to the Embinyu Church on the back of the dragon.

He was riding the strongest monster, the dragon! The sight of a huge black bear with a half-moon pattern on its chest riding the dragon was an amazing spectacle.

Of course, this combination was a catastrophe for the Embinyu Church.

“Check the status of the enemy!”

-Chaos Dragon Ausollet

The black dragon looking at the world below it.

One of the most powerful creatures to exist in the natural world.

The continent was almost destroyed by it in the past until it was sealed away by heroes and other dragons. It has appeared in the world again due to the Embinyu Church's excavation.

* The dragon's flesh will reduce all physical damage by 97%.

* The ability to rearrange and dismantle mana has increased

magic resistance to 98%.

- * Elemental summons will fail to attack the dragon.
- * Complete resistance to magic curses.
- * Mana will be absorbed from nature.
- * It is seeking the memories lost from the brainwashing.

Health: 47%/100%

Mana: 36%/100%

“This is excellent.”

Weed was happy after checking the status of the black dragon.

The dragon had less than half its health left due to the collapse of the Sky Tower on it. The fact that the dragon survived that encounter with half its life left made it clear how amazing the dragon's health was.

“The ones disobeying Embinyu are coming back down!”

“I will say this to all of you. That black bear is the culprit behind all these events. He destroyed our cherished Sky Tower and seized

the servant Embinyu has given us!”

“Kill. Forgiveness is not necessary. Pull out his soul and torture it for 30,000 years.”

The vast area was infested with monsters, priests, knights, fanatics and inquisitors. They all hurled fierce criticism towards Weed. Their hostility shot to the top!

But from Weed’s viewpoint, it was just like a cuter kindergarten student grumbling about being deprived of their candy! Weed spoke in a villain like voice.

“Hey, friend.”

-How dare you climb on my back! This dirty and uncivilized species, get off straight away!

“I am your friend. Have you already forgotten who saved you?”

-Ah, that’s right.

The dragon Ausollet had gone insane from the Embinyu Church’s brainwashing.

“A man must be have a sense of honour. No, dra.... Anyway, you should give as much as you receive. Or else you can’t live in the world.”

Weed absolutely couldn't say the word dragon. If the dragon came to its sense then Weed would be killed along with the Embinyu Church.

-I have received your help so I will pay you back. What do you want?

“I'm not greedy. I saved you because you are a good friend, not because I want something. By the way, do you remember being in pain due to those people on the ground?”

-Of course. They all deserve to die. I will strike and slowly melt their bodies.

“That is something I want as well. Get rid of those people for me.”

-I agree.

The dragon suddenly changed the direction it was flying in.

Typically the wings of a bird would be affected by wind but a dragon's movements transcended common sense. Mana could control gravity, allowing it to accelerate quickly. Its acceleration overcame the limits of the laws of physics.

Rather than heading towards the ground at a reasonable speed,

the dragon plummeted down at a 90 degree angle.

“Kuwoooooh!”

It felt like his body was riding a roller coaster. Weed’s black fur was filled with tension.

“T-this is too fast!”

The dragon banked with its wings as the ground came closer.

Kwarururung!

There was a tremendous noise as buildings crashed down! The gust created from the dragon’s flight shook the buildings. The monsters and fanatics close to the area didn’t survive.

-Primitive species, this is your destiny.

The dragon slowed its speed as it passed and struck the archers on the buildings. Naturally the buildings were shattered by a tremendous force. The black dragon’s claws caused the buildings to shatter into thousands of fragments while its tail whipped the knights on the ground.

“You’re doing well. But you can only kill a few of them like this. Smash the buildings!”

-I think so as well.

At first glance, the battle style seemed the same but now it wasn't constrained to the ground. It could fly at amazing speeds and destroy the buildings.

“The temple is under threat from our sacrifice. All followers, unleash the power of your faith in Embinyu!”

“Shoot. Fire the arrows until it hits!”

The Embinyu Church tried range magic attacks and arrows to little effect.

The dragon dived with great speed towards the building before moving explosively again. Weed could clearly feel the power while riding the dragon.

The dragon's range of attack was the entire area!

‘Modern warfare is an air battle...jet fighters must feel like they can destroy the world.’

He shivered at the terrifying physical abilities Ausollet must have when it was sane. It was a dragon. The spells and arrows helplessly bounced off Ausollet's shields.

“You're doing well! Well....those fellows are moving. Break the

adjacent buildings to make it a dead end for them!”

-Are you asking?

“Of course. I just thought my idea would be useful.”

-I think so as well!

The collapse of the Sky Tower and subsequent battles caused a considerable number of injuries to the dragon but its natural healing abilities meant it was recovering.

In comparison, Weed’s health hadn’t even halfway recovered despite using the earth goddess Mi-ne’s blessing.

Right now, he had the best ride on the dragon’s back but it was impossible to predict what would happen in the future.

Naturally he prepared some plans. But a normal plan wouldn’t work while he was riding the dragon!

Just like a proverb!

A person can do work but they had to entrust the rest to the sky. When he was a child, he couldn’t understand Sino-Korean no matter how much he learnt in school. But as he got older, he started to understand the meanings through direct experience.

‘If an accident occurs later then I can only blame it on my bad luck.’

Weed interpreted it in his own way! It was like a tiger riding the back of a dragon so it would be difficult to make countermeasures.

The dragon Ausollet used the momentum to continuously inflict attacks on the fanatics and priests. The sight of it was good but it somehow made him feel restless!

But the Embinyu Church wasn't helpless. There were plenty of flying rocs summoned.

Kiiiik!

The roc had a fierce looking face, a large beak and loved to eat humans. They usually ate dead bodies but could kill humans by swallowing them whole. Their presence was the most terrifying thing to the workers of the Sky Tower! If they rested for even a little while then the rocs would peck their eyes or tongue.

Kuwek!

Kuwaaaak!

Tens of thousands of rocs covered the sky but didn't dare approach the dragon. The monsters with keen senses didn't attack the dragon and fled. The Embinyu Church had raised them as pets to kill ordinary humans so they were no help now.

But Weed and the dragon flying at a high speed kept on crashing into the rocks and their vision became obstructed. It became harder to find the Embinyu priests.

-How annoying. These uncivilized beings....

“Don’t be so patient! If you endure it then your nature will become worst. I won’t be able to endure it if you become worse.”

-What do you mean?

“It is a compliment!”

An operation to destroy the entire area!

Behind the buildings, there were layers of divine protection spells. It was a refuge from the attacks of the dragon as Heuller and 40 senior priests chanted a holy spell.

“Embinyu’s tolerance of merciless destruction, I give these useless vitalities in order to provoke the powers of darkness in your avatar....”

While the ceremony was proceeding, hundreds of priests were using similar spells. As the buildings collapsed, the powers of darkness slowly formed something as large as the dragon.

‘That is really dangerous.’

Until now, Weed hadn’t seen any truly awful divine magic from the Embinyu Church. In particular, he hadn’t been able to see the extend of Heuller’s capabilities.

The contents of the quest stated that he had been alive for a long time. It was understandable that he would have incredible magic and divine power.

The ability to brainwash the dragon didn’t deserve to be called the worst magic. That’s why Weed hadn’t expected this magic from the priests when he was riding the dragon!

“I should start playing. If the world was going to perish tomorrow then I would warm the room with wood from an apple tree. Sculpture Transformation release!”

Weed turned Sculpture Transformation off. And he returned to his original human form as a Sun Warrior and Human Saving the World.

“Friend, don’t be surprised about my body.”

-I don’t care. Just don’t be annoying during the battle.

Ausollet didn’t care if his size became smaller. It was currently in an insane state and didn’t care if Weed was transformed or not!

-You have equipped the Yurbusika Frost Bow.

Weed took out one of the best weapons he obtained in the warring period. Then he became worried that the dragon would lust after it.

“Isn’t this not desirable?”

-I want it.

“What should I do? I can’t give it to you, my friend.”

He had to be careful about refusing the dragon because their relationship might deteriorate.

-It is too bad since I wanted it to clean between my teeth.

“.....”

Even a legendary bow was just a flosser for the dragon.

Just like a rich person hiding money before they perish, it was a bourgeois dragon!

Weed aimed an ice arrow at the ground. He had almost reached the master proficiency so each target turned into a zone of ice.



Yoo Byung-jin slowly drank his cocoa. It was in order to maintain a calm spirit. Just looking at the monitor would cause his heart to beat faster.

Weed smashing the Embinyu Church while on the back of a black dragon.

“....Great.”

A fabulous sight was being shown. It was an amazing spectacle but anyone who knew the situation would be dumbfounded.

A dragon was the ultimate threat that could lead a world to ruin. A quest to destroy the Embinyu Church hiding in the darkness! They would burn and destroy all species, including humans. A dragon had massive capabilities and also gave off an intimidating appearance. Yet Weed came up with the idea to use this legendary dragon!

The speed of its flying was dazzling and he couldn't take his eyes off the monitor. The coordinators of the stations broadcasting Weed's adventures were also frozen with their mouths open.

“Yes...so Weed got on the dragon.”

“Riding a dragon. And flying.”

“The viewers might think it is a lie but we are really seeing it. It is hard to believe that this is the actual situation.”

Usually the television broadcast would cut out all the boring parts of the material. Weed’s adventures were never screened and they didn’t even dare analyse the monsters. After a while, the commentators regained their spirit and injected more power into their voices.

“I can’t really explain the situation right now. A little while ago, there was a crisis as the dragon woke up and now Weed is using the dragon to fight against the Embinyu Church.”

“Will it turn out well once the ally becomes an enemy?”

“If the dragon regains its senses then the situation will completely change.”

“Oh Joo-wan ssi, won’t that take quite a long time?”

“Can we really say that it won’t take a few minutes? It is difficult to say without knowing the dragon’s mental state. All I can say with certainty is that if the dragon becomes self-aware, the peace of the continent will irreversibly change.”

“Ah, even the Embinyu Church won’t survive if the dragon wakes up.”

The Royal Road broadcasts had sensational popularity. When lunch time arrived, the workers would talk about the Versailles Continent, Morata or Aren Castle.

The Versailles Continent contained famous resorts, beautiful castles, cities etc. so it was popular during holiday season. It was hard to find someone in the real world with no interest in Royal Road.

In some cases, even the general public who didn't know about it would occasionally see Royal Road broadcasts. Stunning scenery or monsters would emerge on the television screen.

Once a son, daughter-in-law, grandson or granddaughter fell into Royal Road then the rest of the family would be dragged in. Even the mother or grandmother were deprived of their channels for at least two hours!

“Sang-gook, who are the good guys?”

“Grandmother, that guy swearing over there.”

Still, the main audience were people who actually played Royal Road. Weed's adventure was a special quest that would affect all the users so they cheered him on.

At first, only a minority of people knew Weed from Continent of Magic. But now everyone knew about the sculptor Weed who came

from Serabourg Castle.

Weed’s growth caused users in the north to become fervent believers. Whether they viewed him as a friend or someone who all adventures would envy, he was a hero that shook the continent! Weed’s popularity was as hot as a furnace that melts steel.

Above that, there was the scene of him riding a dragon on television. It was impossible for those watching the television to not become immersed.



All employees at Unicorn Corporation’s headquarters stopped working to watch the television.

“How wonderful and mysterious. The world we dreamt of is being expressed in this way.”

“Hrmm, Weed the God of War is really not an ordinary person. The quests are open but I expected it to take 4 years after Royal Road opened for users to face a dragon.”

The employees of Unicorn Corporation continued admiring him. Weed’s presence was making their world outstanding so they were filled with pride The company that oversaw Royal Road realized their pride through this adventure.

“He has a complete monopoly of the Hall of Fame for 3 months.

There is also the possibility of more users joining Royal Road....”

“Let’s develop a new marketing strategy.”

“There are people who will want to recklessly hunt a dragon so posting details about a dragon’s abilities on the website should be a fun element.”

The public relations department needed to watch Weed’s adventures to prepare for any important events. Weed’s popularity was soaring into the sky so the employees of the PR department had to watch all the trivial things occurring on the continent. E.g. the novice clothing that Wed wore, the colour would run out of stock in the grocery store.

Unicorn Corporation’s strategy department had to analyse situations.

“The forces of the Haven Empire and the Arpen Kingdom....”

“The movement of the army?”

“There hasn’t been any significant rebellion or resistance in the Haven Empire’s army.”

“The loyalty of the local residents in the occupied territories?”

“The military force is powerful so it would be difficult for the

populace to revolt. The basic necessities are being supplied but the Central Continent is busy constructing fortresses and city walls as well as training bases. A good portion of the loyalty has increased due to this.”

Currently the forces on the Versailles Continent was quite simple. 70% of the Central Continent was eaten by the Haven Empire. Population, technology and development as well. Only the remote regions of the continent weren't overtaken.

Ever since Royal Road started, forces had been working to unify the continent. Of course, legends and events were occurring all over the place so there was no telling who would take control of the continent.

But the Hermes Guild had a long term plan and was quickly calming the anarchy in the centre of the continent. The conquest of the entire continent was right in front of the Haven Empire. The control of the Haven Empire was quickly growing. The lives of the residents living on the Versailles Continent and the millions of users would change.

Unicorn Corporation's strategy department wouldn't intervene no matter what happened on the continent. The power structure of the continent or the history would be decided by the users themselves.

The sun and moon rose on the Versailles Continent while people would continue living their lives. The strategy department just prepared for the future of Royal Road.

Director Son Il-gang and the members of the executives board of Unicorn Corporation were interested in reports about who would be the first emperor to unify the continent.

[When considering all the current variables, it is likely that Bardray will become the emperor to unify the continent. ... Omission...a substantial amount of time leading up to the military...based on the commercial influence, it is expected to take place in less than 3 months.]

Director Son Il-gang received the report that hundreds of analytical staff had prepared.

“Hmm, I don’t like this.”

There were many members in the strategic department. They were exceptional employees with outstanding minds that analysed the Versailles Continent.

People were either greedy for power or ambition or hoped to fulfil their dreams in another world.

But when watching from the strategic department, it was difficult to foresee the future of the Versailles Continent.

People were selfish or laughed with care. Merchants that accumulated a lot of wealth lived near the Imperial Palace and laughed more frequently.

Justice didn't always win and greed firmly tied people together.
The hearts of the people flowed towards the gods.

“Somehow they will find a way. People will live their lives the way they want.”



Weed shot arrows towards the ground whenever the dragon flew past.

The arrow pierced through the armour of 5 knights, killing them as well as freezing the priests. It was a considerable achievement but it was incomparable to the dragon.

-Grrrrrrrr!

“Is it hard?”

-My legs and tail are sore but I can still endure.

“They can't be allowed to win. You have great power but you can't be careless!”

-I know. My head hurts. I have to completely handle them.

Originally the dragon couldn't use its body effectively. It slept for a long time and didn't do much activities even when awake. But the dragon had destructive and explosive physical skills.

However, the dark power flowing from the Embinyu Church was becoming increasingly strong. The dragon crushed buildings with priests hiding in them and Weed fired arrows at the priest but the dark power barely slowed as the dark shadow formed a huge face, arm and legs.

Heuller and the senior priests had completed the divine magic!

“The holy symbol of Embinyu! His power will descend from heaven in order to control the arrogant and impudent.”

“Ohhhh!”

Weed shot a few arrows at the dark power but it couldn't break through the priests' protection magic.

“Smash that body!”

-It is an enormous amount of dirty power. Even I can't do anything.

Even the dragon was reluctant to approach the dark power.

Instead Heuller and thousands of the surviving senior priests

mobilized their divine magic. The combined power of darkness formed a huge avatar of Embinyu that started to move. It had 8 arms like the stone statue of Embinyu and each one was carrying a weapon.

The huge dark power gathered was enough to even overwhelm the dragon. The avatar of Embinyu shook the heavens and earth as it said.

-You are my new servant. Do you want to resist the fate already determined for you?

-I will not obey your commands.

-You will. In the great name of God, I will tear the wings you are so proud of and trample on your limbs.

-How funny. You will be destroyed by me.

The dragon arguing with the incarnation of Embinyu! The dark form approached as the dragon flew higher into the sky.

“At this rate it won’t be able to chase us. Isn’t that right?”

But Weed was startled by a frightening sight as he glanced behind him. The 8 arms holding a bow, spear, sword, axe, chain and whips were coming closer as the body soared into the sky.

“Don’t run away. Go back!”

-Run away! I’m not running away.

“It is complicated. Our operation will be no substance if you withdraw. How about we try a pre-emptive strike first?”

-I will do so.

The dragon turned towards the Embinyu Avatar. It gathered its speed and physical power to try and destroy the crystallized power of darkness!

The Embinyu Avatar moved its arms and shot the bow, pierced the dragon with the spear and struck with the sword and axe. It was a joint attack at tremendous speed. The dragon was chained up and 7 lightning bolts struck in the blink of an eye!

And it passed through the 5 upper layers of the dragon’s shield.

-Your entire body is tingling from the electric shock.

Health is reduced.

Strong concentration has overcome the need to faint.

The dragon staggered and swerved past the crystallized darkness

as it lost its balance. Weed's health was reduced by 27,000. The target had been the dragon Ausollet but Weed had been hit as well.

The dragon was already badly injured so Weed was worried about it.

“Are you okay? Can you continue to fight?”

-A strange hot aura has pierced my body. Dirty magic. It is unacceptable.

The dragon staggered but turned back around to snap at the Embinyu Avatar. But the Embinyu Avatar threw its spear and accurately pierced the dragon.

-Kyaaaak!

A spear was stuck in the dragon's abdomen. It flew at a shallower depth but the impact on the dragon's total health was small. The reason was Ausollet's high resilience and also his layers of shields.

Kwaaaang!

But then the spear from Embinyu broke into pieces, giving the dragon a secondary shock.

“Ugh!” Don't fall to the ground. It will be more advantageous for him.”

The dragon wobbled but stayed in the air. The Embinyu Avatar didn't stop and continued chasing them. The dragon crossed the avatar dozens of times but it was the only one to receive damage every time.

-Painful. It hurts. That magic is really strong. It is too shameful to be attacked like this.

Weed also had no current method for dealing with the Embinyu Avatar. The only thing he could do was shoot arrows but they were easily blocked by the shields.

Every time the dragon's claws or tail hit the avatar, it would just scatter like fog only to reform together with no damage to the health.

'Even a dragon is having difficulty fighting such amazing magic. The last magic of the Embinyu Church. But there must be a weakness.'

If Weed fought alone against the magic then the situation would be even gloomier. Even after receiving the blessings of the gods, his physical skills were no match for the dragon or the Embinyu Avatar.

-I am angry. This is unacceptable.

"Then do you want to get rid of the humans on the ground?"

-I can't avoid it just because of my pride.

“Of course, but it would be more advantageous to descend to the ground. That magic is chasing us but then its allies will be at risk. That thing will keep pursuing us!”

-Then let's go down.

A cloud of poison started emerging from Ausollet's mouth as it talked.

Ausollet's attitude changed after that discussion. Some time had passed since its brainwashing and the pain had awakened some of its spirit. Once its arrogant personality was revived, it no longer acted kindly towards Weed.

-Do something. Your arrows should hit the bigger fish properly. Or it might be better if you drink the poison and die.

“Don't talk like that. I am the one that saved you.”

-Is that so? I can also escape by myself. It is ludicrous to suggest that I'm obliged to you.

The enraged dragon headed towards the Embinyu Church while Weed fired his arrows.

The rotating arrows pierced through the vulnerable part of the priests' shield and changed them into ice. The priests of the Embinyu Church became their main target!

The dragon's magic resistance and physical resistance was a good shield for Weed. Numerous attacks flew towards Ausollet but most of them were blocked by the shield. Even the ones that hit the body only caused it to shake.

“Don't worry about those fellows over there, just kill the scattered priests!”

-I will note your useless opinion.

The movements of the dragon was enough to be reminiscent of the best fighter planes. Fast, smooth and terribly aggressive.

The Embinyu Avatar continued chasing the dragon as it cracked the buildings and trampled on the priests.

There was a spectacular display of magic and arrows as the dragon flew close to the ground.

Most of the attacks were blocked but the red light from the brainwashing spell passed through the shield and caused the dragon pain. The red whip was an attack to the soul so the dragon couldn't avoid it and it was extremely painful.

“Take care of the priests. Tracking Arrows!”

The arrows of Weed riding the dragon pierced through the smoke and hit the priests. The dragon might be treating him harshly but the abilities of Weed who became the Great Emperor of the desert couldn't be disregarded.

The arrows that accurately hit the priests caused them to instantly lose their lives. It was difficult to fire arrows on a fast moving dragon but he aimed at an area densely populated with priests.

Ddirring!

-An enormous military merit has been achieved.

Your arrows have taken the lives of the enemy 31 times in a row.

Fame has increased by 721.

1 Agility has been obtained from the experience.

The title 'Someone who Never Misses' has been acquired.

He simply shot among the fanatics and priests. Despite killing some of the priests scattered all over the place, the Embinyu Avatar didn't show any signs of weakening.

The dragon suffered a rapid succession of large and small wounds

every time it encountered the Embinyu Avatar.

And 5 minutes passed while he fought alongside the dragon.

Ddirring!

-The special class quest 'Dragon's Companion' has occurred.

-Dragon's Companion

An aloof dragon doesn't want the help of a human. It is close to impossible to obtain their trust as even talking to them is difficult.

Humans with exceptional imagination can't shake off the constant temptation to tame a dragon.

A dragon knight that fights with a dragon!

It is a class that only exists in the legends but people will lay down their lives trying to achieve it.

The question is whether there is any chance of success exists. A human has to be recognized by a dragon!

If you admire the dragon more than 5 times in the battle then he will tell you a story.

Level of Difficulty: S

Compensation: ‘Heart of the Dragon’ quest.

Quest Restrictions: Level 790 or more, combat related skills at the master proficiency, magic master, relationship with a dragon.

-Class Description: Dragon Knight

Just like the name, it is a knight that rides a dragon in battle.

The Dragon Knight’s specialty might not be obvious in small battles. The reason is that the dragon won’t open its large wings against worthless opponents.

But a large scale battle is when the dragon can be called your friend.

Originally dragons will stay out of the disputes in the world but the mental rapport means it won’t hesitate to fight for its friend.

The dragon has its own standards of good and evil. The extent that it will help its friend will depend on the intimate relationship.

You will learn 5 specialized combat skills at a level close to the ultimate stage, giving you a strength that any monster will fear.

If you become a dragon knight, you will have more fame and honour than a human king. As a dragon knight who pioneered the limits of human destiny, kings will bow their heads to you.

A quest with a S-class difficulty appeared!

It was a chance to obtain the profession Dragon Knight. A chance to obtain glory had appeared in front of Weed when everything had been dark.

‘This is just mean. It was like entering a fire with explosives stuck to my body only to have samgyeopsal (grilled pork belly meat) appear in front of me. Then sesame oil is poured on my body.’

Being given a chance to become a dragon knight was something to be proud of. Weed was also greedy. It was just a coincidence that his chances overlapped like this.

During this quest, the dragon Ausollet somehow became indebted to him. But he couldn't comfortably enjoy the dragon as he could be caught between its teeth at any time.

There would also be problems in the future if the quest succeeded. If he brought the Chaos Dragon Ausollet back to his original time then he would receive a daily barrage of criticism.

“I will reject the quest.”

-This opportunity will only be given once.

Are you sure you want to reject the quest?

“Absolutely.”

-The Dragon's Companion quest has been refused.

Combat fame has decreased by 8,329.

Intimacy with the dragon Ausollet has decreased.

It was inconvenient that his fame had fallen but Weed just drank seaweed soup.

The Embinyu Avatar didn't stop chasing after the dragon but he also created a wave of mana that spread out over 100 metres.

There was a sound as it even hit the Barren Howling Ruins.

“What is this....”

“I am afraid. A fearful power can be felt.”

The creatures said as they lifted their heads.

There was thunder and lightning as the sky shook like an

earthquake was occurring there. The power of darkness that formed the Embinyu Avatar and the dragon was fighting. The monsters couldn't help feeling the impact.

And their lives had no choice but to be distorted the top level predator that was the dragon! Just like a herbivore feared a carnivore, they had to accept being dominated by the dragons.

An unknown barrier hid the Embinyu Church from the rest of the world. It was the reason why the creatures that made contact with the barrier distorted into monsters.

The flesh mutating wasn't an accident.

Jjojojok!

The unknown barrier started to crack thanks to the surge of mana. The barrier broke down at an accelerated pace and turned completely into dust. The concentrated energy was released and the animals soon became monsters.

They turned and looked in one direction.

“Ohhhh!”

“There...I need to go.”

The monsters wandering around the Barren Howling Ruins

started moving with purpose. It was the large scale migration of unique monsters. They hesitated at the rotten river before crossing over to the opposite side.

Originally the poisoned river would melt flesh but that was neutralized by the dragon Ausollet. The dragon absorbed mana from nature so it obtained a vast amount of energy from the poison.

As a result, the rotten river was now just an ordinary, dirty river.

“G...o.”

“I need to go there....”

An infinite number of monsters splashed through the river.

Chapter 2: Embinyu's Avatar

-The common shadows are coming at me over and over again. It is strong and painful. There is nowhere on my body that is unscathed.

“I'll make a gap so target the right side!”

-Don't you dare command me. Humans can't dictate things to me.

“Come on, don't say such mean things between friends. Now I am sad.”

-Why is it important that we are friends? If you try to command me again then I will kill you.

“Then if I see a chance, can I make an opportunity for you to attack?”

-You might be lacking but your opinions aren't bad. I will permit it.

Weed shot an arrow that exploded and caused flames to rise in front of the Embinyu Avatar.

The 8 arms assaulted the dragon with continuous attacks from

different weapons. The enemy was on the ground but Ausollet couldn't be careless because the huge weapons had a long reach.

The Embinyu Avatar was made with divine power and the power of darkness so its attacks caused excruciating pain to the dragon.

Of course, if Ausollet fully awakened then the battle efficiency would completely change. Its defense and offense would coordinate to give them for its recovery magic to work and the combat power would rise greatly.

However, right now the Embinyu Avatar had the advantage. The chasing speed, attack range and continuous attacks overwhelmed Ausollet.

Weed tirelessly shot arrows towards the Embinyu Avatar fighting the dragon.

Pushushuk!

-An arrow has penetrated the chest of the Embinyu Avatar.

Damage has been inflicted on the avatar.

The power of darkness had minimized the damage.

The divine power has healed it.

‘Hmm, I should’ve dealt with the priests. It was a mistake to allow this divine magic to be completed.’

Heuller and the priests continued to give strength, health and divine power to the Embinyu Avatar. The Embinyu Avatar didn’t even pay attention to Weed’s arrows and persisted in chasing the dragon.

The dragon ripped through its body dozens of times but the problem was that the avatar didn’t have a physical form. The power of darkness restored it and the divine power healed it. Hundreds of senior priests continued to increase its health and vitality so the situation remained at a standstill!

The dragon’s flying movements and speed became more persistent and stubborn. The terrible sight of the avatar formed from dark power coming right behind them!

The Embinyu soldiers on the ground were also holding spears but their attacks hardly landed. The Embinyu Church suffered severe damage for a moment due to the dragon but now Ausollet had no way to deal with the avatar.

“Follow me. Move to higher ground after passing through the following buildings!”

-This human seems to have forgotten that I said I would kill you if you gave me a command. I am also getting annoyed that you are riding on my back.

“That is a lot of words. Your dirty nature means you will just forget this memory anyway.”

-What?

“Those dirty fellows can’t recognize Ausollet-nim’s greatness. If order to prevent such despicable methods, shouldn’t we pass those low buildings and rise higher?”

-I think so as well.

The dragon passed between the buildings and then angled its wide wings in order to fly towards the sky.

This was an urgent situation so Weed had to prevent the dragon from throwing him off its back! Flattering its pride was the only thing Weed could do to settle the dragon down.

The dragon soared into the sky carrying Weed but the priests cast a spell that gave the Embinyu Avatar a greater speed.

“There is definitely a weakness.”

The divine magic was so tremendous that not even the dragon with near infinite resilience could deal with it.

“It is too much fighting against something like this!”

The reason Weed suggested flying into the sky was to have some time to think about a way to escape the crisis.

But the Embinyu Avatar's speed increased so it swung an axe, stabbed a sword and cut the dragon's tail with a knife.

-Kuoohhh!

A series of continuous attacks on the dragon!

The dragon had changed directions but the avatar persistently followed and didn't miss an opportunity. He turned his head and was able to see that the avatar was in close proximity.

The avatar's face was made of black smoke. Deep blue smoke radiated from the eyes while red smoke like hot pepper paste emerged from the mouth. A fearful look that would appear in a dream!

-It hurts. I can feel the pain. This impact. Kuwaaaak!

The dragon let out a scream. The noble dragon was now no different from an oversized lizard. If the dangerous attacks continued then it wouldn't be able to endure.

-Friend, what should I do?

“What are friends? The logic of the world is all the same. People

only use the word friend when they need something.”

-What?

“I’m thinking about what to do!”

This was the first time Ausollet had asked for Weed’s opinion. This was evidence that it was fairly tame!

‘This is how to educate a naughty child.’

He could see that the dragon had been taught the wrong philosophies while growing up. Weed’s mind raced before he finally found the answer.

“I have a way to kill it.”

-What is it? Tell me right away.

“The easy or difficult way, which one do you prefer?”

Actually, there was only one method but he deliberately asked a useless question to waste time. This was the consequence for the dragon disregarding him!

The Embinyu Avatar was still chasing and dealing large and small wounds. Weed deliberately wasted time in order to weaken the

dragon a little more. Its health was originally very low.

-It is painful. The easy method.

“Will you be able to believe me and follow my words?”

-Naturally. I am being attacked now. Tell me quickly.

“Faith is an important value in this world. The method is simple. Just take a deep breath like you practiced earlier.”

-And?

“Aim towards that thing!”

The Embinyu Avatar was attacking Ausollet quite harshly. The multiple arms and weapons were simultaneously striking it.

The anger and sense of crisis caused the dragon to take a deep breath the moment it heard Weed's words.

The strong sound of wind came like a storm was going to occur. The dragon's chest swelled up as it took a breath.

Ausollet folded its wings and turned towards the Embinyu Avatar before blowing out the breath.

Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!

A stream of fire emerged from the dragon’s mouth!

The Black Dragon’s Breath hit the Embinyu Avatar.



At this moment, everything seemed to fall silent.

Black Dragon’s Breath!

The powerful stream covered the sky, the Embinyu Avatar and the ground. The source of the mana was the poison!

All the materials within range of the explosion melted. The Embinyu army near the gates were destroyed instantly. Even those not directly touched by the breath melted as those nearby suddenly emitted poison gas. The land and buildings also dissolved.

-Kuoooh! Ah, no...I haven’t released all grudges...

However, the Embinyu Avatar was enduring the breath attack. At first, most of its body and head had been lost but Heuller and the priests were constantly replenishing its health so it managed to survive.

“This damn bastard!”

Weed cursed from the back of the dragon.

What the hell was the identity of this divine magic? The tenacity that could even endure the dragon’s breath! Perhaps this was the most treasured weapon of the Embinyu Church.

Ausollet continued to breathe in the direction of the Embinyu Avatar.

-U-unbelievable....

The Embinyu Avatar started to melt. The recovered body areas started disappearing again like snow melting from the hot sun. Finally, the cruel eyes were the last to go as the Embinyu Avatar was completely destroyed.

-The Embinyu Avatar has disappeared.

The Embinyu followed remaining on the earth will have their souls broken.

The divine power of the Embinyu Church has decreased by 13%.

This effect will last forever in the future.

Participating in the historic battle has raised your achievements.

All stats have increased by 6.

You will receive respect as a warrior from all tribes on the continent.

The title 'Killer of an Evil God' has been acquired.

All divine magic and curse magic harming you will have the effect decreased by 16%, the duration decreased and you will soon return to normal.

Fame has increased by 23,989.

Over time, the influence of the Embinyu Church will be reduced throughout the continent.

There were changes on the ground after the Embinyu Avatar was killed.

“Kyauuk, our faith has been broken....”

“The end, this is the end....”

In order to create the divine magic, 1,000 priests had joined together. Heuller and 400 senior priests also combined forces with

the regular priests.

However, they couldn't withstand the damage caused by the Embinyu Avatar being destroyed as they were supplying their health to it. Therefore, some priests collapsed and lost their lives.

“I believed we could destroy the world....”

Heuller and the senior priests didn't die but received enormous damage to his health and magic.

-More than half of the major buildings have been destroyed.

The buildings meant for God have been destroyed by the Sky Tower's collapse and even the Sanctuary of Worship had been melted by the dragon's breath.

The divine power of Embinyu filling the area has weakened.

The Holy Land can no longer fulfil its function.

The Embinyu followers that had their strength and resilience enhanced have returned to normal.

Those who have their flesh and spirit weakened by Embinyu will return to normal.

Now the effects of Embinyu's Holy Land had disappeared.

Meanwhile, Ausollet was calmly staring up at the sky like it had an epiphany. Ausollet lifted its head up high and roared.

-Kuoooooh!

The cry would cause life all over the world to feel a chill. The dragon's presence was enough to make even another dragon shrink back!

All the knights and monsters stopped their movements and looked up at the sky. The sense of oppression when looking from the ground and seeing a dragon in the sky. It felt like a grim reaper was rushing towards them.

-Everything is confusing. Where is this world and who am I? But now it seems like I will find the answer. I....I.....

Weed had been prepared for this moment since the Embinyu Avatar was destroyed.

The world might be eternal but there was no eternal friends. A one-time friend might become a competitor or you might one day meet up with an old enemy for a friendly cup of coffee.

When a raised hound had achieved its purpose, it would die quickly. Weed didn't miss the precise moment when the position changed.

Weed was already holding up the Extermination Sword. It was obvious what he would use it for!

“One point attack!”

The Extermination Sword struck a blow to the back of the dragon's head.

-The dragon Ausollet has been hit in the back of the head.

Most of the impact was absorbed by the dragon's scales so 4,314 damage was inflicted.

The Extermination Sword has caused 2,118 fire damage.

His hands tingled and was pushed back. But there were consecutive strikes!

-The dragon Ausollet has been hit in the back of the head.

Most of the impact was absorbed by the dragon's scales so 8,642 damage was inflicted.

The Extermination Sword has caused 3,329 fire damage.

-The dragon Ausollet has been hit in the back of the head.

Most of the impact was absorbed by the dragon's scales so 11,314 damage was inflicted.

The Extermination Sword has caused 8,118 fire damage.

-You have dealt a critical blow!

23% damage has been added.

4% reduction in the opponent's intelligence.

A slight confused state has been caused.

The Extermination Sword has caused 3,838 fire damage.

His level, stats and use of Sculptural Destruction from the ongoing quest meant that his attack power was enormous.

The dragon still thought of Weed as its friend and didn't use mana to protect the body. Therefore, the shock went deep into its bones.

-Stupid human, what are you doing?

“You don't know you stupid lizard? This is the bitter taste of society! You will be swallowed and devoured.”

-Stop it right now!

“Would you stop? Once a betrayal occurred, you should follow it through to the end.”

-If you stop now then I will forgive you for your sins.

“Don’t lie. Do you think I am stupid enough to fall for such clumsy flattery? Especially when you are the one to blame, you stupid lizard!”

Weed continued with the one point attack even while talking. The dragon tried to twist its body violently in the air but Weed still had amazing accuracy.

His concentration increased further as a result of the dragon’s anger. A person who endured a lifetime of violence was finally given a chance to beat his boss to his heart’s content.

Of course, the dragon couldn’t counterattack so he just focused on dealing damage.

-The dragon Ausollet has been hit in the back of the head.

Most of the impact was absorbed by the dragon’s scales so 11,314 damage was inflicted.

The Extermination Sword has caused 11,219 fire damage.

Exponentially increasing damage!

When looking at simple combat power, Weed was much superior than Heuller.

-You have dealt a critical blow!

318% damage has been added.

4% reduction in the opponent's intelligence.

Some dragon scales have been destroyed.

The Extermination Sword has caused 42,382 fire damage.

His one point attack succeeded 20 times!

Weed aimed for the dragon's scales. At this point, he was just attacking without worrying about defense. Ausollet shook its head furiously in order to dislodge Weed. But Weed grabbed the dragon's horns with his left arm and held on tightly.

-Kuoohhh!

The dragon's pained moans filled the sky.

-I can't believe in any humans.

“Don't blame the humans. Will blaming others relieve your mind? Open your eyes. The world is originally like this!”

Weed continued to damage the weakest area in the back of the dragon's head but there was still a long time before Ausollet would die.

Even if the one point attacks continuously succeeded, it wasn't enough for its health to reach the bottom.

However, the dragon's health was below 26% due to the Embinyu Avatar's attacks. It was like water droplets falling on rocks so the dragon would lose its life if the attacks last longer than 5 minutes.

‘I can abandon any areas of the dragon.’

The scales were the best material for armour. If he put it up for auction then he couldn't even guess the final price.

If a sword was created with the bones then it would be a precious sword with destructive cutting power and the ability to recover mana.

The blood could be used to create magic reagents. The scarcity meant it was valuable for research so any magician would thank

him.

The teeth and whiskers were useless but if the dragon's core, the heart was processed then it would tremendously increase the blacksmith skill.

If he wore equipment made from dragons then his attack power will increase another dimension.

Of course, if he could kill a dragon then he would no doubt be reward with combat achievements and a decisive title.

Millions of users were enjoying Royal Road but he would be the first one to get the glory and reward that came from killing a dragon!

-Why would a friend betray..... My head seems to be breaking. This pain is unbearable.

Ausollet struggled before started to fall to the ground. Weed had wanted to beat it up in the air until it died but there was a limit.

“Aigoo!”

-Kuaaaaah!

The enraged Embinyu Church was waiting on the ground.



Seo-yoon heard loud noises as soon as she returned to the square in Morata.

“Let’s go, to Romud Forest!”

“Gather the Octopus Porridge guerrilla members for a meeting at 11 pm.”

“Today 13 volunteers will go to reinforce Vargo Fortress. The merchants that decided to provide support are gathering their carriages at the western gate.”

Morata was being restructured due to the war.

While Weed was busy on his adventure, the northern war was continuing. Many cities had been destroyed in the war but the northern troops kept fighting.

Rather, more people started to gather with every defeat! Their spirits were derived from Weed. Continuing to fight against the strong enemy. He showed everyone on his adventures that he would never run away or accept defeat.

Users were drinking beer in the tavern.

“Frankly, we are weaker than the Hermes Guild.”

“Look at the overall situation calmly.”

“But will they occupy the north? Hell no! It will be impossible to conquer us even if they win the battles. The north was made with our sweat, effort and mental strength.”

They thought that the Hermes Guild wouldn't last if the users continued resisting. The Hermes Guild wouldn't keep the territory even if they conquered it. All users would instantly revolt. If the Arpen Kingdom was destroyed then they would just build it up again.

“Our profession is a thief. That's great. Let's go to the areas that the Hermes Guild occupied. We will plunder to our heart's content and give support to the people.”

“Forming a bandit group is also fine.”

“Oh, that is a really good plan.”

The northern users came up with plans to constantly haze the Hermes Guild. News about the Hermes Guild's army was constantly being heard.

The disciplined army of the Central Continent was on a winning streak as they headed towards the Earth Palace. In addition, the army bypassed Vargo Fortress where a frightening number of orcs were gathered.

“This land belongs to the orcs, chwiiiik!”

“It is too narrow for us. Chwi chwik!”

There was nowhere in the north free of the shadow of war and the fate of the Arpen Kingdom was at risk. However, the users couldn't place their hopes in Weed.

Weed was experiencing a paradoxical crisis because as his name grew larger, more users gathered in the north.

It was unknown when Weed was coming back but people gathered like clouds under the name of the Arpen Kingdom to fight in the war. When the time came, all the sculptural lifeforms would aim their wings at the enemy.

The northern users just wanted Weed to succeed in his quest and return early. The northern users were suffering a crisis so they couldn't truly cheer for Weed.

‘It is still crazy.’

Seo-yoon had just returned but her clothing was similar to a beginner.

“Excuse me, what killed you?”

People asked after seeing her standing in the middle of the square.

“I....”

“Do you want to join the Bean Porridge unit?”

“.....”

“Looking at your expression, you want to join the Bean Porridge unit right? My sister is also going on the battlefield as part of the Bean Porridge unit. Won’t you fight the Haven Empire?”

Seo-yoon had been living alone for a long time with just Weed due to the quest. There were other humans around but most of them had been NPC residents.

All of a sudden she encountered users burning to fight against the Haven Empire so she nodded.

“That’s great. Then let’s go together.”

The user grabbed Seo-yoon’s hand and headed towards the Bean Porridge unit.

Morata’s squares that were the heart of commerce, hunting and adventures continued to be filled with users shouting against the Hermes Guild.



In a shabby grave in the cemetery, a skeleton opened its eyes! The pure white bones shone with a brilliant light in the darkness.

“This is....”

The identity of this skeleton was the Abyss Knight Van Hawk. The ultimate undead born in the midst of a deep abyss of despair.

He took a deep breath and looked at the city that seemed far away. A previous area of the Kallamore Kingdom, the city of Reinstadem was now part of the Haven Empire!

“I came back.”

Van Hawk activated his dark power. The power of darkness gathered and became his armour, sword and cloak. The sound of crying insects stopped and the tree branches stopped waving in the wind.

He had been abused and beaten by Weed in the warring period but he was still an Abyss Knight! In the past, he had served Barkhan as the commander of the dark army and now he was even stronger.

“I summon my fellow kin.”

Van Hawk called out towards the graves.

The mud started to split apart as rotten skeletons rose. It was an old cemetery so the owners of the graves didn't even have any monuments erected.

A long time had passed so the bodies had weakened but they seemed like newly dead bodies due to their deep resentment.

The former Imperial Knights division of the Kallamore Empire that Van Hawk commanded!

The skeletons turned towards Van Hawk and spoke like they knew him.

“Kilkil, Vice-Captain-nim, it has been a long time.”

“You came a long way so did you have a pleasant trip?”

“The beer wasn't too bad. Although the drink keeps on leaking from my jawbone.”

Van Hawk and the skeletons encountered each other after a long time.

“Everyone listen.”

“Yes!”

The skulls marched and formed a line. The strict discipline experienced through their lives allowed the skeletons to stand at accurate intervals in the moonlight.

“The glorious Kallamore Empire is no longer on this earth.”

“What does that mean?” Has the name of the Kallamore Empire changed?”

“The 3rd Imperial Prince Creksiad, don’t tell me that fellow sold the Imperial Palace....”

“The Kallamore Empire has been invaded by other countries and disappeared.”

“What?”

The skeletons were shocked and their shoulders started shaking at Van Hawk’s words. It was a comical sight but the skeletons tried to wipe the tears with their bony fingers. Instead of tears, the fingers caught leaves, dirt and weeds instead.

“We need to get revenge for the Kallamore Kingdom.”

“Revenge!”

“This is an era where the weak prevail through deception. Let’s show everyone what a Knight of the Empire is. Raise your weapons!”

The skeletons simultaneously raised their hands above their heads. Then the dark aura created swords, spears and axes. The dark aura even clothed them in armour.

“Go to war.”

“Oh, war! War, war!”

“I can smell the fragrant smell of blood again.”

Van Hawk led the skeletons towards the city of Reinstadem in the Haven Empire.

-A special event has occurred.

Abyss Knight Van Hawk is leading a troop of 800 Imperial Knights of the Kallamore Empire to attack the Haven Empire.

Their goal is the reconstruction of the Kallamore Kingdom that is currently being occupied by the Haven Empire.

The anguished ghosts of the Kallamore Kingdom will continue to join them.

Abyss Knight Van Hawk obtained power from the abyss of despair so he will return to a common Death Knight if he loses.

Chapter 3: Choice Of A Thorny Path

Weed continued attacking the back of the head while falling together with the dragon.

-The dragon Ausollet has been hit in the back of the head.

By attacking the weakness of the dragon, 126,381 damage has been inflicted.

The Extermination Sword has caused 32,382 fire damage.

The blow has temporarily decreased the opponent's agility and wisdom.

Recovery will be delayed from the confusion.

An enormous increase in damage! The dragon's magic shield and solid scales became obsolete. Weed's attacks were finally dealing solid damage. Every attack filled with special abilities reduced the abilities of the dragon!

Ddirring!

-The accuracy and continuity of the attacks has set the most outstanding achievement among humans.

Weed and the dragon fell to the ground in a tangled mess. At the last moment, he threw his body in order to not be caught by the dragon's attack.

“Cough!”

Weed fell through the roof of a building and down the stairs.

-Your entire body has received a big shock.

There will be a tingling around your body and paralysis will last for 25 seconds.

Health has decreased by 12,938.

Unlike when he was a huge bear, the damage from the crash wasn't that large. This was one of the benefits of returning to a human sun warrior.

Weed raised his body.

“I have become familiar with falling.”

He looked around and it seemed to be the laboratory of the priests as there were the corpses of young babies. The priests had been suddenly mobilized to fight to there were many things still inside.

Weed instinctively searched the laboratory for items.

“Inspect!”

-Vitality Water

Water made from grinding up bodies for a long period.

Combined with Embinyu’s divine power, it can bring forth an incredible energy.

Minor side effects can be caused by the mutated cells and you can transform into a monster. Those that become a monster will have their health decreased and will suffer a big shock until their death.

Effects: More than half of your health and vitality will recover no matter what the circumstances are.

Faith will be permanently reduced by 4.

Can’t receive blessings from any god other than Embinyu.

“This...it is okay to feed it to other people instead of drinking it.”

A item that gave a big impression. The other goods in the laboratory had similar side effects. Great power couldn’t be obtained without great sacrifice!

He looked out a nearby window to see the Embinyu priests and knights attacking Ausollet. Ausollet couldn't move normally after such a severe crash. The priests had been greatly weakened to 100 people but they were still capable of tying up the dragon with the red whips of the brainwashing spell.

But the grounds and buildings were a mess when Weed took a closer look. The fanatics were dying due to the influence of the dragon's breath and the poisonous fumes were melting everywhere. The buildings affected by the impact were pulled down as the frames corroded. The result of the enormous power contained in the dragon's breath!

Weed had just fought with the dragon and called it friend but he didn't feel like saving it.

“I shall give it back to you.”

The brainwashed dragon had a short expiration date so he could leave it briefly in their hands. Spitting out the weak and keeping the strong was a desirable philosophy in life!

“The enemy is attacking!”

“Someone has appeared to obstruct us. Stop them!”

But suddenly there was a huge fuss. A white haired old man jumped among the Embinyu priests and cut them with a sword of

light. Eagles seemed to explode from the sword and swirled around the knights.

Weed was too familiar with a scene like this.

“Heinous Embinyu Church! I will now pay you back for killing Evane!”

The sudden appearance of the master swordsman Zahab! He didn’t fall into a panic as he lurked like an assassin and headed to the location of the priests.

Even Zahab flinched back while the dragon was running amok. But now that everyone was silent and interested in the dragon, he suddenly jumped out to the battlefield.

“Another unbeliever.”

“Take care of him so that he doesn’t interfere with the cause.”

“I have received a divine message to deal with that rebellious subject!”

The Atrocity Knights jumped to catch Zahab but he just continued gliding among the priests.

A master swordsman had gone to the warring period with Weed and his sword of light had become even stronger, causing the

Atrocity Knights and the senior priests to lose their lives in vain.

“N-no! Embinyu’s will....”

“The brainwashing isn’t finished....”

The dragon was defenseless against the divine magic of the senior priests.

There were a number of Atrocity Knights and monsters but Zahab moved quickly to catch them.

The priests of the Embinyu Church neutralized more than half of the dragon’s breath but 350 of them still lost their lives. Weed had killed quite a few of them with his arrows. The priests only made up a small number of the Embinyu Church members but they played a key role. Therefore, it was hard when so many of them died at once.

“Ohhhhhh, defeat the villains!”

“Kill all those who have lost their humanity!”

“Get revenge for Ralph.”

Prisoners wearing shabby attire stampeded out of a large building while holding weapons. Warrior-2 walked out proudly behind them like he had rescued the prisoners.



Warrior-2 was to be a sacrifice so his entire body was covered in spices.

“Kuuuuk, Great Emperor-nim will get revenge for me. It wasn’t honourable to die by becoming food. I will make sure whoever eats me regrets it when I give them an upset stomach.”

The guards laughed at him.

“The spices smell really good. I want to bake him and eat him. He will melt in my mouth.”

“I prefer him roasted. The fellow will die soon.”

“Yes. Hey food ingredient, what brings you here?”

“I came to defeat you for the sake of Great Emperor-nim. And I don’t taste good.”

“We won’t know until you are eaten.”

At that moment, a group appeared to save Warrior-2.

“You are here.”

“Hestiger!”

Hestiger had rescued the prisoners and seized control of the prison with the help of the elves.

Originally they intended to occupy the important buildings but that changed due to the activities of the dragon. The ground was filled with Embinyu troops and the roads blocked due to the debris.

Instead they found the stairs down to the dungeon.

With the help of Hestiger, Warrior-2 was freed from his thick chains.

“Ahem, I came all this way alone so please take care of cleaning by yourself.”

“I’m sorry.” Have you met Great Emperor-nim?”

“Of course. I am a loyal subordinate so I already met Great Emperor-nim who told me his plan. He told me to come inside here.”

“You came earlier than me.”

“Yes. Now I am just waiting for Great Emperor-nim to call.”

The sculptural lifeforms thought that Weed's behaviour towards Hestiger was slightly uncomfortable.

He was a man that would do brilliantly on any dangerous mission!

Hestiger's smile was like a gem but it didn't lose any civility. Thick eyebrows, white teeth and large clear eyes. His whole body was in perfect balance and his proportions was like a beautiful statue. There was no difference between the body and muscles of Hestiger compared to the sculptural lifeforms. But this muscular body was completed with the attractive face!

Hestiger's chest and arm muscles attracted the attention of the elves. On the other hand, they didn't show any interest in Warrior-2 who was still oiled up. They blocked their nose as he came close and regarded him as food garbage.

"If I knew Warrior-2 was here then I would have come earlier."

"No, of course."

"The ground is shaking fiercely. Great Emperor-nim is making his move."

"We should prepare to go out."

“Yes! I will explore a little more with the elves.”

Warrior-2 decided to strike the Embinyu Church with the released prisoners.

“Finish them all!”

“If we take care of all these people then we can return to our hometown!”

“Kuwaaaaah!”

The slaves that had been trapped for a long time armed themselves with weapons and rushed towards the Embinyu Church.

Weed had honourably destroyed kingdoms that were secretly devoted to the Embinyu Church. The priests would receive magic goods from the royal families and their tyranny would continue.

The prisoners of the Embinyu Church contained dwarves, elves, descendants of giants, warriors and tribes that only existed in legends. The Embinyu Church grabbed them as experiments or sacrifices to increase their magic power.

Weed observed the prisoners for a moment before shaking his head.

“They won’t be able to fight for long.”

Due to the long imprisonment, they were injured and their vitality had dropped a lot. The rocs that scattered also gathered again to catch and eat the humans. At least the prisoners could disrupt the forces of the Embinyu Church a little bit.

Heuller and most of the priests had been incapacitated. The divine power of the priests had been wiped out in a single attack by the dragon. They couldn’t tame the dragon and now even the prisoners had escaped so the Embinyu Church gave a command.

“The value of the prisoners have now disappeared. Embinyu’s third and fifth arm. Offer their flesh and blood to this land!”

One of the senior priests gave the command.

Monsters were dispatched while archers of the Embinyu Church aimed in the direction of the prisoners. The Embinyu army had 8 arms with different characteristics.

The prisoners were fighting with the knights but the archers didn’t hesitate to shoot the arrows in that direction. The prisoners and knights were turned into a hedgehog by the Embinyu archers. The prisoners had no armour or shields and quickly lost their lives to the arrows.

Then the sound of Hestiger yelling was heard.

“Now. Let’s go help them!”

Arrows flew from the tallest building towards the archers and priests. The gleaming silver arrows were exceptionally fast and accurate.

Fire elementals caused a big explosion and water elementals a flood. The monsters were swept away in a torrent of water, easing the situation of some of the priests.

Weed was deeply impressed by the sight.

“I should catch some elves as subordinates.”

The desert warriors were skilled with the sword and brave enough to never back down. But the elves were agile and optimized for specific battles.

The sight of Hestiger leading the elves to deal great damage to the Embinyu Church’s archers was invigorating. Up until now, Weed had gained the most combat achievements with Hestiger right after him.

“I haven’t seen Warrior-1 or Warrior-3 yet.”

Out of the 5 colleagues Weed brought on this quest, he only saw Zahab, Warrior-2 and Hestiger. They had managed to come here safely.

And soon his sculptural lifeform Warrior-1 also appeared. Warrior-1's behaviour was noticeable strange! He staggered like he would collapse at any moment. Warrior-1 was filled with a powerful poison so his life kept on flickering. Divine power could save his life so he came to look for Ahellun.

Weed could see the light of Ahellun's divine power among the rubble. And he gave a grudging compliment!

“Incompetent bastards! Now only Warrior-3 is left.”

It wasn't just his colleagues that arrived. The barrier had broken and the monsters walked over from the Barren Howling Ruins. They were distorted by the magic of the Embinyu Church and jumped in without hesitation.

“Go away. No!”

The monsters pounced on the priests and fanatics while tearing into and eating them. They obtained more magic from the Embinyu members and their bodies were strengthened. The infinite number of creatures continued flocking from everywhere.

“We must defend this Holy Land.”

“Stop the creatures that are outside the gates!”

“They are continuing to flock past the collapsing walls. I can’t see an end to them!”

-Kuoohhh!

The control of the priests had weakened so the dragon tried to get up again.

Ausollet tried to gain its freedom but it was seized again by the priests of the Embinyu Church. One day it looking down upon everyone else and now it couldn’t even use its breath attack.

“Mmm, this is a good sight. The buildings of the Embinyu Church are collapsing.”

The Embinyu Church was now in a horrifying situation. This was all due to Weed!

-Who are you? Why are you attacking me? It hurts, it hurts! This pain.... Kuaaaaang! I can’t endure it.

The priests that were attacked by Zahab and elves were forced to hurriedly retreat. Warrior-2 had opened the protective screen but it was now difficult to find anyone in the middle of the priests.

Meanwhile, Ausollet who was being restrained by the brainwashing roared and ate any enemies close to it. The continued loss of health meant its big body slowed down and it kept stumbling.

The dragon was the strongest creature on earth and this was the worst day it experienced since it was born. Weed had destroyed the scales and the protection magic was removed but if he left it alone then the enormous damage would slowly recover.

The elves were somewhat confused after the first attack. They had a deep grudge against the Embinyu Church but the dragon needed to be killed before it recovered.

Hestiger had decisively attacked the priests but now he hesitated as he glanced at the dragon.

“The first priority is to handle the dragon.”

Weed jumped out the window.

At his current level, he could easily leap forward 100 metres. But instead of hitting the back of the dragon, he looked around the area for Warrior-1.

The Atrocity Knights were swinging their swords towards Warrior-1.

“A subordinate that doesn’t take care of their own life is useless. It is time for the Embinyu Church to die. Cough!”

“You still have many lessons to learn. The villains are going to

suffer.”

A villain who had previously hit the back of the dragon’s head and now attacked the Atrocity Knights from behind.

Warrior-1’s face that had been puffed up by poison changed as he welcomed Weed.

“Great Emperor-nim, you have come to save me.”

“Uh, yes.”

Weed casually answered as he blasted away the debris. And he was able to rescue Ahellun and the slaves trapped in the rubble.

“Ohuhuk, I almost died. Emperor, thank you for rescuing me.”

“I didn’t know that Saint Ahellun-nim was over here. How did you get trapped?”

“I was watching the celebrations among the prisoners while waiting for a chance to interfere. Then suddenly the tower collapsed on top of me.”

“.....”

Ahellun had almost become a carcass thanks to Weed!

“Hrmm hrmm, if I knew you were in danger then I would have saved you earlier.”

“My lungs are troubling me. I gathered the divine power hoping for a miracle as the weight of the crumbling building pressed down on me every time the wind shook it.....”

Speaking of which, he had bumped this area a few times when fighting together with the dragon. He was glad that the buildings broke since it would interfere with the movements of the enemy.

“Right now there is a situation. There is work to be done so straighten your body quickly.”

“I understand. God hasn’t taken this body yet so I can still move. Radiant Recovery!”

A radiant light covered Ahellun’s body. One of the ultimate divine magic that could heal himself to a perfect condition!

“I-I....”

Warrior-1 who was severely poisoned was trying to ask about treatment. The reason he came here was to receive healing from Ahellun.

Weed sneaked a glance towards Warrior-1 before saying.

“I need to hurry and return to this war. Please give me a strong blessing.”

“He looks very sick so shouldn’t I treat him first? A bit of time is needed for the blessings.”

“He won’t die straight away. He just needs to sprinkle a little bit of saliva on it.”

“It looks like it really hurts....”

“He is just exaggerating. I’ve been duped many times. And he is a tenacious person.”

It was like pouring cold water and then hot water.

In fact, Weed didn’t really care about rank even in modern society. However, Weed had thoroughly established the hierarchy in the desert. If they wanted to eat beans then they needed to use their own power!

“I think Emperor-nim is right that you have to rush back into battle. Emperor-nim is the only human that can get through this impasse.”

Ahellun gathered his two hands together and started to chant a divine spell. A divine spell that the gods directly told humans in

ancient times.

“Grant strength, wisdom and determination to this human. A deep, dark evil has appeared in this place so awaken the unlimited potential.”

A halo of light seemed to emerge from Ahellun's body. Normally the light would flash after a short chant but this blessing seemed to be much longer compared to others.

“Your hand will wield the sword of god and your body's pains will be avoided with the thick armour of god. In addition, all the difficulties in the divine name of Pahwe....Divine Advent!”

Ddirring!

-The effects of Divine Advent will be applied differently depending on your faith.

Your body is fully recovered.

The potential of your mind and body has been fully opened.

Maximum health, vitality and mana will increased by 3.5 times.

Natural recovery will be faster like a troll.

Cold and heat. Your resistance to the above phenomenon will be close to 96%.

Complete immunity to poison.

When it detects an attack, magic resistance will automatically activate.

Weak undead of the 1st stage will be destroyed regardless of their health.

All stats will increase from a minimum of 250 to a maximum of 469.

The divine effect is granted to attacks and defense.

Can use God's weapon.

Can use God's Armour.

"This is...."

Weed had expected favourable blessings for the fight but the power of the divine spell shocked him.

"As expected from a professional saint. He is off the hook."

It was like arduously climbing from a shabby toilet only to encounter a bidet. Then a complaint came quickly.

“I wish you had given this boost to be earlier.”

It was like saving a man from drowning only to take his bankbook! If he had such a blessing then he wouldn't have suffered so much.

So far Weed was using the Fire Extermination Sword and Majestic Leather Armour for a Conqueror made from the materials of the Fire Salamander King.

But a clear, transparent sword and shield appeared in front of Weed while armour was placed around his body. A full set from the shoulder pads, belts, chest plate, boots, etc.! In particular, areas such as the boots had pure white angel wings.

“There is no need to hesitate. Good equipment is needed in order to become an excellent villain.”

Weed was wearing armour while holding the sword. The weight made him feel like he was almost wearing nothing and it gave a warm feeling.

“Inspect!”

-Sword of the God Thor:

Durability 210/210. Attack: 232~766

A sword given by God in order for humans to eliminate an unbeatable enemy.

A saint can only summon it with God's approval and only those with the blessing can use the sword.

It will hide in the world for a minimum of 100 years before appearing again.

Restrictions: The strongest human.

Options: When attacking the demons steeped in evil, attack damage will increase by 4 times.

They are natural enemies and can be killed by attacking the weak point, regardless of the health.

In addition, there are nine attributes that are impossible to determine.

It is unknown due to the lack of information.

“Eueuum!”

A groan emerged from Weed's mouth that sounded similar to when he found out the price of the luxury bags sold in department stores. It was outrageous like a loan fraud!

He didn't even dare check the armour. Each armour part would have different attributes that he couldn't even remember all of it. The effects of the attributes could all change due to the quality or attack pattern of the monsters. But for now, the easiest method would be to determine it with his own body.

Ahellun said.

"May God continue watching over you. Emperor-nim, good luck."

"Of course. The enemies will be overpowered with this sword. But can I keep this sword in the future? I don't have any other intentions. I just want to keep it as a souvenir...."

"God's items can't wander around this world. It will be reclaimed at the end of the battle. It is unfortunate but you should focus on the battle in front of you."

Weed felt like a child being deprived of his New Year's money.

"Ah well, then I'll do so."

"And be wary of Ausollet. If the high priest Heuller takes control of the dragon then the Embinyu Church can destroy the balance of

the world. If the dragon regains its memories then I will risk my soul and body to seal it.”

“Really?”

“I will only do such a thing if it is needed.”

“It is truly commendable.”

Weed obtained important information. Ahellun was a safeguard to stop the dragon from rampaging. After achieving Weed’s objecting, Ahellun finally treated Warrior-1.

“I have to go. Now, my goal is....”

He had a broad view of the area.

The Embinyu troops were fiercely clashing with the slaves everywhere.

There had been a large number of slaves in order to maintain the buildings and shrines. Many of them had been strong warriors in their tribes and they unleashed the rage in this battle.

Warrior-2 and Hestiger had divided them in half and led their own units. Weed didn’t need to fight the Embinyu monsters and troops for a while. There was no end to the fanatics and monsters that kept on showing up.

There was an enormous pile of debris from the collapse of the Sky Tower. Other buildings that collapsed or fell on its side acted as obstacles. If the favourable terrain was seized then the monsters and knights couldn't recklessly attack.

Weed's gaze alternated between the dragon and the Embinyu Church.

This would be his one chance in a few years to hunt a dragon. If the power of Heuller and the Embinyu Church was significantly weakened then it would be favourable to him. The Embinyu knights were originally no match for Weed and now that he had the blessing, they didn't even enter his eyes.

The quest's success might hinge on his choice right now.

"In the worst case scenario, Ahellun can take care of it if I die."

Weed lightly flew across the ground towards Ausollet.

His maximum speed was similar to a wyvern flying in the sky without any obstacles. His experience with Sculptural Transformation meant he didn't take that long to adapt to the wings.

-Everything, I will eat all of you.

The dragon Ausollet!

His hatred toward the Embinyu Church and humans were simmering over. Its entire body was covered with injuries and it had slightly recovered, but its current state wasn't significantly different from earlier.

The Embinyu priests continued trying to brainwash the dragon despite the enormous damage they suffered. But even with Heuller, the priests' brainwashing operation wasn't going smoothly.

The red whips kept on breaking from the dragon's vigorous movements. Many Embinyu knights were being killed by the dragon.

“Now.”

Weed quietly moved among the Embinyu Church as he moved behind the dragon.

-You, you must die!

The dragon suddenly turned its body and cried out with anger as it saw Weed. It knew exactly who the bad guy was in this situation!

“Him! He is the main culprit behind this!”

“God Embinyu has given us a message. We will tame the servant God sent us later. Kill the one behind all of this!”

The Embinyu Church had the highest hostility towards Weed. From their position, he had sprinkled ashes on their rice.

The Embinyu archers and knight simultaneously turned their weapons towards Weed. The dragon also caused the ground to shake as it moved on two feet.

“My damn popularity!”

Weed rose dozens of metres above the ground and flew towards the dragon’s chest. But Ausollet seemed like it was expected and stomped its feet down towards him. At that moment, the wings on Weed’s boots flapped fiercely and he accelerated faster. He was barely able to avoid the dragon’s legs.

Although the dragon was big and quick, its attacks were simple.

“Strengthening of pain!”

“Sticky Breath.”

The priests aimed curses at Weed. The curses were the wide area type so they were difficult to avoid. Ausollet had the immunity to curse magic that was a characteristic of the dragon but Weed was vulnerable to curses accumulating.

But....

-The curse magic that weakens defense and increase magic damage has been overridden by the blessing.

-A curse that consumes vitality faster in order to exhaust the body has been made obsolete due to the power of Thor's boots.

He didn't need to worry about curses thanks to Divine Advent and could rampage around the environment.

In his previous battles with the Embinyu Church, he could exert his full skills but now that heavy burden had been eased.

'The archers and magicians are attacking from the right. I don't need to pay attention to them.'

Weed was fully concentrated on the dragon. With its magic and flying sealed, it was just a simple lifeform!

The black dragon Ausollet glared at him from a short distance away.

-I will kill you all!

He avoided the claws and tail attacks as he clung tightly to the side of the dragon.

“It isn’t always good to be huge. No matter how strong it is, there are many gaps.”

He had a close up look at the dragon’s combat style. By clinging to the body, he could predict the attacks and avoid them to a certain extent. Then he climbed up the dragon’s body like he was rock climbing.

-Human, humans! Humans like you deserve to die.

“Noisy. You shouldn’t worry about humans. Instead you should despite the flies, mosquitoes, moths and fleas. They are more annoying.”

The dragon frantically swung its tail towards its body but hit the building. The power of the dragon that caused devastation all over the place!

Weed climbed aboard the dragon. He had survived climbing the collapsing Sky Tower so the body of the dragon was easy. He could even put some kimchi in the refrigerator while completing the final secret sculpting technique quest.

He used the red whips from the Embinyu Church’s brainwashing spell as a support. The dragon’s scales were smooth, polished and glittering with a dim light.

-You are a faithful servant of Embinyu.

-The reason you don't believe in Embinyu is the pain.

-Repent. Repent. Repent. Repent. You will enjoy the rest. Repent.

-High priest Heuller-nim has prepared everything for you. He is willing to take care of your miserable life.

He heard whispers that caused exhilarating feelings in his head as his hand touched the red whips. Flattery that acted as brainwashing!

“Do you believe that I will follow Embinyu? Not a chance. The only ones who have my respect are the aunties at the market. If I buy 3 fresh fish then I will be given 1 more. And the prices have been discounted by a lot!”

The red whips that indoctrinated people to the Embinyu Church would cause hallucinations and delirium.

But Weed's sword, armour and shield blocked all of them.

-N-no!

The dragon struggled as Weed arrived at its neck.

Even though it didn't know how to use its mana, magic water bubbles would spontaneously burst.

-God's armour has mitigated 87% of the damage coming from the heavy pressure.

Health has decreased by 3,489.

7 defensive magics will automatically activate.

-Flexibility Technique: Agility will increase by 87% to avoid the enemy's attacks. Inaccurate attacks will be deflected.

Magic Attack Detection: You will notice in advance if dangerous magic is used.

Coercive Power: Ignorant species in the world like the giants will follow you. You can face other strong forces.

Normalization: Those who follow God won't waver, no matter the bizarre magic. Negative states will return to its original state 95% faster.

Subtle Recovery: Every time you attack your opponent or you are attacked, you will absorb 4% of its health to heal your body.

Emergency Escape: Use magic or vitality to escape from physical restraints.

Tremendous Dignity: Nothing is required. Defense will increase

by 2% every second. It will combine with your armour to increase defense by 300%.

His increased defense was dumbfounding.

This armour from god truly made up for the shortcomings of the human species compared to other species.

Weed's original body and armour meant he wouldn't be able to withstand even one hit from the dragon. But now he was the Great Emperor that conquered the desert and Central Continent! He had the resilience and health to endure a strong crisis.

Weed soon rose to the top of the dragon's head and aimed at it. Black blood was still flowing from the back of the head. The crucial weakness of the dragon hadn't been treated yet.

The dragon currently had 17% health remaining. It seemed to be a plentiful amount but it didn't have much health left. Moreover, the current Weed was the most powerful human and coming out completely armed.

The dragon shook its head as it felt a crisis.

“This is a refreshing feeling.”

Weed held on to the dragon's horn and looked at the fierce battlefield going on like he was on top of a mountain.

The trapped prisoners were fighting the Embinyu Church! Flames and smoke were rising everywhere.

In fact, all the people fighting were conscious of the dragon. The prisoners and sculptural lifeforms were shocked to see that Weed had ascended the dragon's head.

“Warrior-2!”

“Warrior-1 hyung-nim, you are alive.”

“Great Emperor-nim....”

“He is up there.”

“Uhh, finally....”

“I’ve made a gravestone and coffin for Great Emperor-nim.”

It was a situation that really caused electrifying goose bumps! Currently, arrows and magic were flying towards where Weed was standing. There were still Embinyu archers and priests available for combat. They all attacked Weed.

A brainwashed and weakened dragon facing a human wearing god's armour and weapon was something that couldn't be imagined. The dragon might die. Weed's position was that even if

he didn't finish the fight, Ahellun would complete it.

The Embinyu fanatics, sculptural lifeforms and prisoners! All the people here were watching but it wasn't just them. Through the television, millions of people were watching this adventure.

‘Will this suffice?’

It was an opportunity.

Of course, it wasn't easy to reach this point. He had overcome many crises in the final secret sculpting technique quest, including Roderick's Labyrinth.

Weed's competencies had just grown in the desert quest. It might seem simple but he had found the best secluded places to grow stronger quickly. Getting information from residents wary of outsiders and risking his life in every fight.

The path of struggle in order to become stronger. But a distinctive characteristic of Koreans was to go around shouting and roaming off-limits areas. It was to the extent that the wicked curses and magic from the Embinyu Church that had been difficult earlier now only made Weed bored.

Weed had a rotten smile on his face. The possibility of an accident never even crossed his head.

“This problem here should disappear. So should I kill all the bad

guys here?”

He came to a conclusion and convinced himself.

Even with the help of Zahab, the sculptural lifeforms and the prisoners, it would take a few days to kill all of the Embinyu Church.

The time limit on the quest ended today as well. In addition, it was almost impossible for Weed’s allies to survive after the battle.

“Ausollet!”

-Don’t call me with that rotten tongue!

“I know your name. Do you want to know about yourself?”

-I won’t be fooled by your lies anymore. If you don’t come down from my body then I will tear you apart.

“It is very thoughtful that a lizard would care about my funeral.”

-Lizard? Is that my nickname?

“That’s right. An oversized lizard.”

-I am offended!

“Of course you are. Your identity is the most expensive ransom in the land, the dragon!”

Wed yelled out Ausollet’s identity.

The weight of the word dragon was enormous. At that moment, static seemed to flow through the battlefield.

The Embinyu Church’s priests, fanatics and prisoners. Everyone knew the weight of his words and the risk of saying it.

“How can he say that.....”

“Reckless, too reckless. A truly fearless human in this world.”

“I wish I could have one last drink of beer before I die.”

The dwarves were especially afraid of the dragon so they dropped their heads to the ground and begged for their lives.

Both enemy and allies had to be careful because of the dragon. They were trying to kill each other but there had been a tacit agreement not to say the word dragon!

However, Weed had just let Ausollet know it was a dragon.

-I've heard of this. A dragon with great honour...a predator that can cross the world and determine the beginning and end of life.

Ausollet was lost in thought for a moment as its body shrank in fear. Then its body became significantly larger!

-I am a dragon? It is familiar. I remember eyes looking up at me with fear. That's right, I am Ausollet the dragon that tried to destroy this world!

A fierce surge of mana moved in the dragon's body.

Kukukukung!

It seemed like an earthquake was occurring as dust flew up into the air. Buildings in the distance were collapsing due to the shock. The remaining Embinyu shrines and buildings became completely devastated.

The eyes of the dragon Ausollet gradually changed. The blurry eyes became sharp and full of dignity.

Arrows and magic flew towards it in vain. The arrows and magic just floated in the air like something had caught it before decomposing.

With the return of its ego, the unique defensive capabilities of its species was coming back.

There were a large physical and mental change once the dragon learned about itself. It would soon remember the large scale magic attacks that would decimate the area without leaving a trace.

“It wouldn’t be fun if my heart didn’t beat as fast as this.”

Now Weed felt like it was truly fun.

“Let’s get started!”

The Sword of the God Thor was slammed down onto the dragon’s head.

Chapter 4: Eons Of Erosion

“Kuwaaaaaah!”

“Father, how is this happening? It seems like a real dragon is going to die.”

“Don’t talk. You are disturbing my concentration.”

The father and son watching television couldn’t conceal their excitement. At that moment, everybody was watching Weed’s quest in Royal Road with doubtful eyes.

The famous black dragon Ausollet better known as the Chaos Dragon! The elegant dragon that caused fear and awe everywhere it went.

Weed wasn’t afraid of it.

“Joo-wan ssi, is this really happening?”

“I can’t explain it in words. Anyone would use every little trick to send it to a different place but he actually woke up the dragon to fight.”

“As expected, only Weed the God of War can show something like this. He greedily chose a thrill in a stable moment instead of going

for something stable!”

“When considering Weed’s military power from the quest, fighting the dragon.... Ugh, I don’t even dare think about it.”

“It would probably be a wiser choice to surrender.”

The hosts of the broadcasting stations were excited. The situation had changed dramatically even if they didn’t add comments or compliments.

Oh Joo-wan was truly impressed.

“Isn’t the final secret sculpting technique quest a once in a lifetime opportunity? It is like choosing between further employment or studying without any hesitation. Weed really isn’t an ordinary person.”

The success of this quest was important as the final secret sculpting technique could be gained as a reward. No one would have blamed him if he decided to reliably achieve the goal.

However, this dramatic and bold actions could truly be called a God of War. It was the reason why he could sometimes create miracles, even though some of them were accidents.

“As a fellow colleague of Weed who participated in his adventures, what does Shin Hye-min think of his decision? He must have really decided to hunt the dragon.”

“In my opinion....”

Shin Hye-min thought back to the various times she saw Weed in Royal Road.

Whether it was disappearing like a ghost before he needs to pay at a restaurant or picking up every japtan while hunting. Sometimes he got lucky and picked up items that could be sold at an unusually high price.

“He did it without thinking.”

“Are you saying he dares to fight the dragon without an specific plans?”

“Yes.”

“How can that be?”

“Weed-nim is originally like this.”

“.....”

The station’s ratings were once again rising exponentially. It wasn’t simply the viewers but topics about Weed’s adventures continued to explode enormously.

So far users had never fought against dragons like this.



-The dragon Ausollet has been hit in the back of the head.

The weak area of the dragon has been struck, inflicting 59,291 damage.

The Sword of the God Thor has absorbed the enemy's health and mana through the divine power in the wound, dealing an additional 93,282 damage.

2% reduction in the opponent's intelligence.

Mana recovery ability has been suppressed.

Weed once again continued the one point attack in the same area.

Even without studying, his memory was unusually excellent. He didn't remember the grades he got as a child but he could accurately remember the location where he buried money in the ground!

-Stupid human. This is just accelerating your own destruction.

Ausollet's attack was filled with rage.

-Reverse Gravity!

All people and buildings in a 1 kilometre area will be turned upside down. The destructive power was so high that it could be called a dragon's pure havoc rather than magic.

Every time Ausollet took a step forward, it would emit a poison mist that dissolved the buildings nearby. A blazing fireball would rush out in the direction that the dragon points its claws.

-Rock Explosion, Summon Black Poison Mist, Seething Steam, Group Paralysis.

As expected, thousands of people were devastated by Ausollet's magic. A dragon depended on its magical ability to attack and defend.

"It has recovered. Priests should pour out more divine power."

"Sacrifice for our faith is required. Only our hands can completely destroy the world for Embinyu. Execute that dragon!"

The Embinyu priests chanted sacrificial magic in order to kill the dragon. If they temporarily destroyed their souls then divine power would be increased by 12 times.

The knights' faith won over their fear and they continued rushing towards the dragon. And they were melted away by the wide area destruction magic.

-This is ludicrous. Humans, know your place. Even if you become angry, it won't change anything.

Ausollet trampled on them without mercy and melted them with its magic. Hundreds of people were frozen and broken into pieces while others were dropped from the air. The dragon was showing an amazing spectacle as it was attacked.

-Miserable human beings! I will take great joy in destroying your species...keek!

-The dragon Ausollet has been struck in the back of the head.

The weak area of the dragon has been struck, inflicting 59,291 damage.

The Sword of the God Thor has absorbed the enemy's health and mana through the divine power in the wound, dealing an additional 113,959 damage.

The opponent's defense has weakened and the next attack will deal an additional 4% damage.

The sword of the God Thor has absorbed 0.6% of the opponent's oppressive strength.

Despite the scene of destruction and carnage, Weed continued beating down on the back of Ausollet's head.

-You!

The dragon shook its head as it realized but Weed clung on like a leech. A large number of magic also flew towards Weed.

-Fragments of ice have been scattered.

The small but dangerous pieces of ice swirled above Ausollet's head. Weed's body was torn by a myriad of ice pieces.

The thing that warriors feared the most wasn't arrows or another sword opponent, it was magic. The magic of the dragon caused the worst havoc and suffering!

The large area was turned upside down and burning. The human magicians were barely able to chant spells while the dragon just needed to mutter to cast advanced magic. It was unknown how much mana was consumed but the destruction it caused was dozens of times stronger.

Among the living creatures here, none of them could withstand the dragon's magic. But the God's armour was invoked in response to the magic.

-The finest magic has been weakened.

The aftermath of the impact has been minimized.

The solid ice fragments that were as hard as steel kept on pouring down like rain. Weed automatically moved but he didn't get wet.

The quality of God's armour was more than expected.

"I can believe in this armour as well."

-Stupid humans. There is nothing you can do. My attack has begun. Dull Shock, Dislocation, Wind Strike, Incurable Disease, Heavy Blow, Stopped Breathing.

The dragon used its magic in succession. Although the surrounding area was filled with enemies, its only goal was Weed!

Weed could see dozens of magic heading towards him. It was like a rainstorm or tsunami of advanced magic. The variety of magic reminded him of all the kimchi kept in his refrigerator and it was a really unpleasant sight.

-The god Thor has been watching you, a great human warrior.

The power of God's armour will be maximized.

It will counteract the magic.

Subsequent magic damage is reduced by 96%.

Depending on the loss of health, the recovery magic in the armour will be triggered.

A divine energy flowed from Weed's pure white armour and resisted the magic. Some especially strong spells were eliminated by the Sword of the God Thor.

The dazzling light that occurred on the dragon's head looked like a hero's story or a myth. In particular, the black dragon Ausollet had a magnificent but oppressive appearance so the contrast was more effective.

In order to save the world, Weed was fighting the dragon! The sight would be so gorgeous on television that elementary students watching would shed tears and have a runny nose.

Naturally no one would recognize the Weed who wore old sweatshirts with holes in them and slippers when heading to the supermarket in the neighbourhood.

The magic couldn't move Weed so the dragon shook its head vigorously. The shaking that moved dozens of metres.

Weed had grabbed the horns but it was impossible for his body to remain stable. The dragon bumped its head into the buildings and

the ground so Weed was lucky he wasn't thrown. In such circumstances, a one point attack was naturally impossible.

Then ropes emerged from Weed's hands!

"I've had enough!"

This was a treasure he had acquired after the desert invaded the Central Continent.

A slave's rope. It seemed ordinary but magic increased the length to 1 kilometre and it couldn't be broken.

The rope emerging from Weed's hands wrapped around the dragon's neck 35 times. The dragon struggled so hard there was a possibility of it breaking. But it couldn't break 35 layers of rope.

"Taata!"

Weed quickly tied the rope around the horn and fixed his own body to it. The skills he used to sew eyes onto the doll hadn't gone anywhere.

But there was even more. He didn't worry about using the items he obtained as the Great Emperor of the desert.

"Take this!"

The dragon lifted its face to the sky as it struggled. He threw a crystal towards the open mouth. It was the Crystal Leading to the Fire Sanctuary that he obtained from the Fire Salamander King!

Obviously it was an item related to a new adventure but he would obtain remain in this time until the final secret sculpting technique quest finished.

Paseok!

The dragon reflexively bit down on the crystal that entered its mouth. Then flames hundreds of metres long shot out from its mouth.

-M-my mouth....!

Fire elementals had appeared in the dragon's mouth after the crystal had broken. Weed could easily guess that it was in pain. It wasn't enough to eat freshly baked sweet potatoes. He knew it was like drinking boiling hot oil.

Due to the pain, it stopped shaking its head to try and drop Weed.

“The value of that was too expensive.”

He kept using the one point attack on the dragon's weakness. No matter how high the dragon's health and defense was, it quickly became a wreck.

Ausollet's mouth was a wreck.

-Dis is not the answer. Chu will pay for dis sooner or later.

The tongue seemed to be melted so the pronunciation was twisted!

"I'm not trembling with fear. People start complaining every time their lives started deteriorating. And I am called the Great Emperor!"

Weed didn't stop attacking.

Villains who prepared for a long time could have their reward taken away by a moment of laziness at the end. Diligence was essential even when doing bad things!

Weed's one point attacks reduced the dragon's health to less than 9%. The flames inside Ausollet's mouth had gone out. But the fire elementals had gone down to the stomach and dealt more damage.

The dragon's body shook from the enormous damage.

-I've never encountered a human like you!

The dragon's pronunciation was once again fine but the pained countenance was obvious.

“You deserve it. No, it is okay if it was just once. But you were born without any worries while I had to dream about becoming rich and living better in this dirty world!”

-Gather turbulent winds and blow!

Ausollet's magic created a blast that was 200 metres in high.

The Embinyu knights attacking the dragon were caught by the severe winds and were blow back a few hundred metres into buildings! The dragon unleashed its resentment towards Weed upon the people on the ground. It was really dirty!

The tightly bound Weed continued attacking. The role of the dragon's scales weren't working so every hit reduced a large amount of health and triggered special effects.

-Kuoooooh! This is...this!

The dragon that was the best presence above the ground was in severe pain due to Weed. Any other monster or human would be melted away by its poison. It turned its head towards the sky and shot poison at itself.

But Weed was wearing the God's armour with Divine Blessing. Even if his health was reduced, it would just be cured by Saint Ahellun's treatment magic.

“Great Emperor-nim! I knew that Great Emperor-nim could do it!”

“Endure until the end. According to providence, the dragon must disappear. God has really selected a great warrior. I will continue to help. The power of healing will help you beat all the trials!”

Warrior-2 directed the escaped prisoners to prevent the Embinyu Church from interfering.

Ahellun continued using magic from far away to supplement his health. Like a cycle of breathing, Weed’s health would be filled up every time it fell. His power had been greatly enhanced by the blessing so his attacks were vastly stronger.

With the help of the saint, the dragon became even more confused.

“We have to help Great Emperor-nim, even if it is only a little bit. This will be the chance to defeat the dragon.”

Hestiger and the elves shot arrows towards the dragon. The steady damage got on the dragon’s nerves. Of course, the arrow didn’t reduce its health but it was enough to annoy the dragon.

The fire elementals continued to hinder the dragon from using magic.

-I never thought it would end up like this. You deserve

punishment for your sin that will be paid in blood.

The dragon that had suffered helplessly spread its two wings wide open. And it started to fly towards the sky like earlier.

Despite the huge physique, it rose sharply in a deliberate attempt to drop Weed.

-Get away from my body.

“I will never do that!”

It rotated dozens of times in the sky but Weed's hands didn't stop moving.

The one point attacks continued to decrease the dragon's health during the flight. The one point attack was a very difficult and tricky technique during combat. However, the large body meant that more than half the attacks still hit.

Even if the one point attacks missed, the lowered defense meant that large damage would still be dealt.

-At least I won't die alone, human!

Ausollet attempted to dive towards the ground. They descended through the clouds and the ground was suddenly closer.

Heuller, the priests and the prisoners lifted their heads with surprise as the dragon appeared over them.

The dragon was risking its own life on a suicide attack! The wind fluctuations was scary as it aimed down towards the ground in order to die.

“Good. Yes, I’m going to die anyway!”

Weed didn’t stop moving his hands until the end.

A desperate plan. Even if he was frightened, he couldn’t give up this chance now that he finally obtained it. The dragon was damaged and quite weak but even the Great Emperor with his high level couldn’t accomplish it easily.

If it was a dragon then humans would have already been wiped out by the wide scale magic. A half-hearted attack wouldn’t deal damage to the enormous health. It might be impossible for humans to hunt the dragon but a high level, definite plan, special items and equipment meant it could be challenged.

These types of quests could show a bit of his dignity.

-Go away!

“I don’t want to! We should have a comfortable death.”

-Human, isn't your life worth anything?

“It is worth a lot. I will end this unfair and regretful thing. But I won't miss!”

-Think about it rationally. If you let me go then I promise on the name of a dragon that I will never be hostile to you.

“I've thought about it a hundred times! Eating and living well, I really hate you! And believing your words is like trusting a politician.”

Although Weed's goal was a stable life as a civil servant, he wouldn't give up the prize if he won the victory.

His goal was to strike it rich and money was more important than his life! If he lost his life along with the dragon but obtained huge riches then the result wouldn't be bad.

Weed was caught by this greedy and Ausollet was obviously unhappy with the discussion. Ausollet hesitated as it dived towards the ground before eventually changing directions when it was 20 metres away.

“Kkuek!”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Monsters were thrown back and buildings collapsed. The wind aftermath of the dragon's flight caused 400 people to be knocked out. Ausollet said him to die but not enough to commit suicide.

"I thought so. Fellows like you are originally like this!"

Weed continued using the one point attacks on the dragon. It was all or nothing so he didn't think about it! Ausollet continued suffering and gradually decreased its movements.

-This is....

Now it only had 6% health left.

The one point attacks were perfect but Weed's powerful offense meant the dragon was weakened. The divine power also wound through the injuries on the black dragon's body.

It was a fast and furious battle that would never exist in real life!

-Humans...especially a cowardly liar like you, it is unacceptable.

"Humans are vicious and have toxic consciences. That is how they are successful in the world. And you reap what you sow. It is good that you did bad things so that I can hit you even more."

Weed didn't even take a millisecond to think about it. The dragon was a creature with high intelligence. In other words, it

was possible to inflict psychological damage.

-Things won't be as simple as you think. Destruction is approaching you.

Ausollet started using a spell. And Weed struck it powerfully in the back of the head.

-You have dealt a critical hit.

The spell that the opponent is chanting will be cancelled.

-All of this will end. No one here will survive. All life that dwells in this land, the deep darkness will descend....

-You have dealt a critical hit.

The spell that the opponent is chanting will be cancelled.

No matter how many times Weed interrupted the magic, Ausollet continued to use it while floating in mid-air. It didn't try to run away from the attacks and kept on chanting the spell.

‘What is this? This magic seems to be different.’

Weed felt the seriousness of the situation but other than trying to cancel the spell, he had no other way to respond.

The magic of the dragon was very quick compared to the humans. The dragon persisted in trying to chant the spell.

“This guy!”

A vast amount of mana surged towards Ausollet like an ocean. The colossal amount of mana that swarmed to the dragon was enough to cause goose bumps.

The hairs on Weed’s skin started standing up.

-Your attacks have been blocked by the stacked layers of mana.

-Your mana has been affected by an abnormal, external force.

The Moonlight Sculpting Blade skill has been cancelled.

And the spell was completed.

-Complete destruction will come to this land. Eons of Erosion!

Ausollet cast the ultimate destruction magic, Eons of Erosion!

“Eons of Erosion?” Then it must be related to the ground.”

Weed thought about the ultimate earth magic for a while.

Usually magic involving the land wasn't used frequently in combat. The power was weak and there were no immediate effects during the battle. Normally it was used to create a wall to obstruct monsters or cause them to slip.

‘But a dragon’s ultimate magic is on the same level as Summon Meteor.’

He had obtained a magic scroll containing Summon Meteor that was on a colossal scale. It would completely destroy the monsters in the targeted area. Last time, the impact of the meteor meant the city hit by it was gone. It also caused an immense shock wave. There was a deep pit 1~2 kilometres wide in the ground.

Of course, the Embinyu Church survived due to the divine power but Weed almost died.

‘Wait a minute! I’ve seen Eons of Erosion somewhere before.’

Weed belatedly remembered. Eons of Erosion was written in a booklet he obtained during his activities in the desert.

[Bizarre terrain of the Versailles Continent #8.

The Eskehae Archipelago.

An archipelago contained 17 stone islands that looks like it rose from the sea.

Once upon a time, notorious pirates lived on Pandes Island.

A pirate ship carrying mermaids attracted the wrath of the sea dragon, Leviathan and the magic hit Pandes Island.

Eons of Erosion!

At first, the earth shook like an earthquake was occurring but it quickly started swirling. A terrible vortex was occurring in the ground.

Dirt, rocks, people and plants

Nothing could block it.

Everything was swallowing up by the ground and even birds flying in the sky were sucked in.

After that, the Pandes Island was completely shattered and disappeared.

The only thing that remained are 17 stone islands consisting of the beach and strange cliffs.

Animals don't live on the small islands but occasionally the singing of mermaids could be heard.

Magicians with a little knowledge of death have gained significant experience and insight by analysing the soil.]

Eons of Erosion was only briefly used but it had smashed the terrain itself.

“If I don't stop it then everything will disappear.”

Weed understood what Eons of Erosion would do if he didn't stop Ausollet's spell. It had used a large amount of mana so the dragon's movements were dull.

-Stop, stop it now! Listen to my story. There is still a chance for you to live.

Weed asked as he continued with the one point attack.

“What is it? I'm listening.”

-I am tired and hurt from fighting after waking up from a long sleep. As a human, you can easily understand that death is ahead.

“So?”

-If we stop fighting and reconcile then we can get out of here quickly. Human, nothing in this place will survive Eons of Erosion. Don't you want to save your precious life?

“Okay. Thanks for your worry but I don't want to live that much.”

-Make a wise decision. If you think calmly and rationally about it, you can save your life. It is useless if you die in this battle.

“Shut up. Tomorrow you will just destroy the continent and kill me.”

The earth magic was slow to activate.

But there was no telling what would happen one Eons of Erosion occurred. Even so, he didn't worry about it and just continued taking care of Ausollet.

Weed repeated his attacks, lowering the dragon's health.

-Kuoooooh! It was resentful and mortified. Ausollet who was qualified to destroy the continent was humiliated that a human could do something like this.

If it could get Weed away from its body then its lost health would recover. Ausollet gave a rough scream and soared high into the sky. It soared vertically through the clouds into the endless sky.

-You have dealt a critical blow!

413% damage has been added.

The opponent's strength and resilience have been reduced.

The Sword of the God Thor has dealt 92,939 holy damage.

-25 consecutive, successful attacks in a row has decreased the dragon's agility by 2.

Weed no longer paid attention to the messages that arose with every hit. Ausollet's energy was reduced as it started dying from the attacks.

He didn't consider the issue of survival after killing Ausollet. The top priority was hunting Ausollet!

-I don't want to die like this. A dragon, forcibly experiencing death....

“Thank you for dying at my hands!”

The black dragon Ausollet.

With absolute power, the dragon was an untouchable existence.

Ausollet's vertical movements into the sky suddenly stopped. And the magic barrier protecting the body slowly started to lift as wind blew slowly.

A grey light spread over the dragon until it enveloped the entire body.

‘This is surely....’

Even Weed couldn't believe it himself.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-The Chaos Dragon Ausollet that would lead the continent to ruin has entered its eternal rest.

-Fame has increased by 79,398 due to the great achievement.

-The dragon that threatened the order of the continent has been killed!

-The combat experience that no one could surpass has increased all stats by 8.

In particular, Fighting Spirit has increased by 10 and a special skill has been acquired.

Dragon Opposing Anyone its Faces: The dragon slayer's fighting spirit is something that the weak can't withstand. Scared monsters will be weakened by 10~60%.

-Due to the triumph in the tough battle, all skills related to combat have risen by 27%.

All combat skills stuck at beginner level will rise by 4.

-The great combat victory has created the state Insight.

Insight: Originates when wisdom and knowledge is very high. Sometimes obtained when discovering hidden secrets in ruins, learning incomprehensible spells, improving magic spells or winning great battles.

This stat will have a positive impact across many areas.

There is a chance to turn the enemy's magic attacks upside down, easily find traps and know about a monster's ambush in advance.

Certain senior magic requires insight so it will affect the

acquisition of high level, special skills.

-Insight has been obtained during the final secret sculpting technique quest.

This achievement will be applied after you return to the original time zone. However, all stats obtained will start at 1.

Weed's mouth trembled with emotion.

“Today is really my day.”

The first person to hunt a dragon! The value of the fame would be hard to replace but Weed didn't realize how much he would gain from killing Ausollet. He was already level 825 but the experience points had increased his level by 4.

It was a brief moment of joy but Weed still had work to do.

“I can't miss!”

Sya sya syak!

His concentration was at the maximum after hunting! He used his personal experience to collect the loot in the air.

-The map showing something buried at the Mysterious Grey Lake

has been acquired.

-The Mirror of the Silver Dragon Yuskellanda has been acquired.

This is an item associated with a special quest so it won't be lost when transcending time and space.

-68 unsealed mana stones have been acquired.

If used correctly then the colossal amount can open a new area of development.

-208 black dragon bones have been acquired.

-3,494 black dragon scales have been acquired.

-43 black dragon fur have been acquired.

-The dragon's heart that is the source of life and mana has been acquired.

This fresh heart contains a high density of mana. The heart can be used in all areas of advanced magic.

Most of the items were materials except for the heart! It would be difficult to process but nevertheless, it was still overwhelming. If he had billions of won in his bank account then obviously he would

be generous with a few won.

“I might not be able to take these things back to the original world.”

Shortly afterwards, he felt a massive sense of loss. The sword and armour of Thor were treasures that would disappear when the quest was over.

The scales and bones from Ausollet that he couldn't recover starting falling to the ground. Weed was also plummeting towards the ground.

A cool breeze hit his face and his fall slowed down. It wasn't noticed during the battle because Weed was soaring into the sky with the dragon but the moment Saint Ahellun noticed the fall, he immediately used flying magic.

The duration would last for 2 hours after Weed proved his qualifications to Ahellun so he could freely act. The Embinyu monsters and escaped prisoners made the earth seem like hell while the sky was a paradise to Weed.

Ddirring!

-Unit of 7 People Leaping towards a Dragon's Mouth has been completed.

The tower built by the Embinyu Church to gain power from their

god has been badly broken.

The Chaos Dragon that would cause fear on the continent has been unbelievably removed by a human warrior. This is the first time a dragon has died in combat on the continent and no one could imagine it.

The high priest Heuller and the Embinyu Church will use any evil means necessary to stop you.

The quest will a close to impossible difficulty has been flawlessly completed.

The reward of the final secret sculpting technique will be given.

“Yes!”

Weed had a greedy smile on his face.



Bardray and the leaders of the Hermes Guild were gathered at a tavern in one of the areas they occupied in the north.

They only received victory reports as the northern conquest continued. The central area of the Versailles Continent was firmly grabbed so they didn’t feel any tension.

-The gold mines in Asdemend have been discovered. We will proceed with the development.

-The Treasure Dungeon has been verified. An appropriate hunting level is the mid-400s.

-A relic related quest has occurred.

Precious treasures and hunting grounds in the Central Continent were used to raise their power. The Hermes Guild already had unprecedented power but it was being built up even more.

‘This is my way.’

Bardray also didn’t proceed any further on his master quest. It was a lengthy quest that caused headaches rather than giving any definite benefit.

He took his forces to the best hunting ground and passed level 510. He used his outstanding information network to acquire skills associated with the Black Knight!

Even the Black Knight’s professional attribute ‘Day of Rebellion’ was obtained. It could only be used once a month but it improved the abilities and indomitable strength of his subordinates by more than 2 times. In addition, if a certain amount of mana was used then all ranged attacks will be made void.

Bardray also prepared the Hermes Guild.

Scholars and magicians read books related to quests that were housed in various palaces. Important secrets of the continent were sometimes hidden in libraries and palaces. Adventurers obtained information about unknown sword masters by examining underground walls.

If Bardray and the Hermes Guild could obtain the secret skills of the sword masters then their combat abilities would grow much stronger.

‘I can choose the easy and fast way to get ahead of others. I need to increase the gap. This is my way.’

Bardray found his path as a king.

His greed grew as he found competition in Weed’s abilities. But he decided not to compete with Weed’s fame on quests.

If he raised the national power of this empire then he was untouchable. After becoming an emperor, he was on the path to become the true ruler of the Versailles Continent.

Dominate the continent and solidify his power so that no one can attack. The Hermes Guild would rule with a powerful force that would never be broken.

In fact, the Hermes Guild only contained 200,000 people but only 50,000 were sent to the north. They commanded the soldiers and

knights belonging to the regular army and utilized the power of the magician units to decimate the north.

Of course, that alone was a power enormous enough to make fun of the north. From the perspective of ordinary users, just having a level high enough to join the Hermes Guild was enough to make them feel special.

An operation to cause complete despair.

They would make the northern users kneel down in front of them after losing hope. All cities and villages would be demolished and the land pillaged, making it hard for people to live.

Once the devastated northern users succumbed to the Hermes Guild, they would come live in the Central Continent.

“Retro is in these days. Today I am playing well.”

“I heard that state of affairs at Pandros Castle is great. Will you have time to visit it sooner or later?”

“The ranch operations near the vast grasslands is going well. Well-bred horses are being raised.”

The lords and senior nobles of the Haven Empire exchanged friendly conversation. A war was going on but those with the best abilities were idly drinking beer in the rear.

“What do you think of Weed’s quest today....?”

“He is greeting his end. And once he returns to this era, he will be pushed back by the Haven Empire.”

“Haha, of course this is also my opinion.”

Bardray and 200 other people were gathered at the tavern.

They were the army commanders and users nominated to key positions in the Hermes Guild

Users brought wrapped gifts to give to Emperor Bardray.

“In contrast to what I expected, the north isn’t giving a formidable resistance.”

“They are just going in circles. They should just give up.”

“But the forces of the Haven Empire isn’t even half a day away. The allied forces in the final battle of the Central Continent were strong so they couldn’t be ignored. This is just stepping over them.”

“Haven’t there been some attacks on the supply carriages in the occupied areas?”

“We’ve significantly increased the number of personnel escorting the supply carriages.”

“Gee, that’s not good. Can’t Lafaye solve it?”

“There are many supplies heading towards our army so gaps can’t be helped. It is also difficult to fortify the occupied territories. The supplies lost won’t cause a strain on the war. The distribution of combat materials is very generous.”

Users quietly talked among each other in the rear of the tavern.

They were users invited after the Hermes Guild became larger so they had a special type of loyalty. They wanted to live among the strong forces.

Their aspirations caused them to join the Hermes Guild and were satisfied to be involved in a coherent plan.

If the power of the Haven Empire was 10 then the north was only 1 or 2. The economy, military power, cities, land area, population and road development couldn’t be compared.

Many of them had surrendered in the face of real power.

“This is the beginning of an adventure, huhuhu. Everyone is watching Weed’s downfall.”

“Of course!”

“It will be a funny sight before the north is occupied and devastated.”

“Hooray Hermes Guild!”

The Hermes Guild users drank wine and enjoyed the entertainment. They were already a mighty force and it was only a matter of time until the continent was unified.

The Sky Tower collapsing caused them to be full of laughter.

“Hahah, he is struggling. That ignorant fellow has the worst luck.”

“I don’t see the reason why Weed is popular. Struggling in vain will give them false hope.”

“If he rampages like that then Bardray-nim will kill him with one single sword strike.”

“Well, he is showing tremendous ability but the quest will end soon. He won’t be capable when he returns.”

Users ranging from the early to mid-400s kept flattering Bardray. The ability to be good at flattery would smooth a person’s social

life.

However, there was also a feeling among the users of the Hermes Guild.

‘Is this really not a joke?’

‘Hey, is the quest really proceeding in this way? The scale is so big! I want to see it. But it’ll probably never happen.’

‘Is there a chance of survival? This is a quest with a time limit. Then he will be broken.’

‘An amazing jackpot. The ratings will be very high. He will become a hero and there will continue to be reruns.’

The Hermes Guild users pretended to be casual while watching the broadcast.

“The commentators are praising Weed too much. This is nothing.”

“That’s right. If anyone here was given the chance then they will be much cooler than Weed.”

“This is the end of the God of War. Conqueror of the continent? That is just due to the quest.”

Bardray had considerable authority over his subordinates and they all revered him. Many people made the bold decision to follow him after seeing his strength.

Bardray calmly drank beer and watched Weed's adventure on large, magic crystal ball.

‘Weed's combat sense is much greater than mine. It is useless. Although his one point attacks are accurate, there won't be much of a gap when I fully learn it. The other special skills? I can also learn them.’

If he watched the broadcast and analysed Weed's actions then he could compare himself and get ahead of Weed.

Maybe the idea was a little pathetic. In the adventures in the distant past, the Embinyu Church had caused the Hermes Guild a huge headache.

Weed's fight would be very beneficial for the future. If he returned to the devastated north then there was no doubt the Hermes Guild will be labelled as villains.

‘I will step on him. Justification or reason doesn't matter. People will eventually succumb before power.’

Bardray and the Hermes Guild members watched the broadcast with joyous hearts.

Weed riding on the back of the dragon until it was awakened.

‘He is blocked.’

‘Indeed. He is doing something nice by himself.’

‘Ah, the God of War is real. He is shooting arrows from the dragon’s back.’

‘Is that possible? I was originally an archer and couldn’t do that. But it probably won’t last long.’

The tavern was filled with thoughts that were envious of Weed.

And the moment Weed won the fight against the dragon, it was so quiet that the sound of ants crawling could be heard.

Chapter 5: The Final Step

The dragon lost its life to Weed.

While everyone was astonished at this sight, some users were diligently moving.

“Will this place be right this time?”

“There is no doubt.”

“Isn’t this the 12th time you are saying those words?”

Zephyr, Romuna, Irene, Surka, Hwaryeong and Bellot were wandering around looking for Weed’s wallet that he hid. The treasure trove was somewhere in the mountains so they couldn’t be lazy.

Zephyr looked around and sighed.

“But it will be hard to find anything hidden in this terrain.”

“No one would come to a place like this.”

A place in the northern continent where no one would come. They crossed swamps and deciduous forests for more than 3 hours.

Well, this was likely to be the place. It would be a headache if the location of the treasure was surrounded by monsters.

But Wed had left this problem to the desert warriors.

-A place no one can find...it would be better if humans are infrequently found there. And no one can know about this treasure.

These were the words of the Great Emperor so the desert warriors faithfully followed it.

“It can’t be villages or cities.”

“It can’t be in a common mountain.”

“What about a river?”

“This is a good opinion but it will be difficult if the items are swept away in a flood.”

Humans, orcs, elves or goblins might find them on the road. They passed by volcanoes blowing black smoke and wandering through caves in mountains. And the desert warriors decided on a lake deep within the mountains.

“This place is good.

“No one will find this place.”

“Of course. Several species including humans won’t live around here.”

They didn’t know the name of the lake but the desert warriors placed the entire treasury of the kingdom there. Corruption was rampant in the later stages of the Pallos Empire so many real treasures were diverted here.

After a long time, the lake water turned into dry mud. Bellot raised the hem of her skirt and complained.

“This feels like a tidal flat. It seems like clams will come out.”

The others in the group agreed. They sunk to their knees so it wasn’t easy to move in this wide land.

Pale had specifically not come along on this adventure. A reliable man like that would only be used for labour.

Surka explored and surroundings and said.

“This landscape is terrible. It even seems like demons will emerge.”

There were sparsely grown trees without any leaves. There was

an eerie sound every time the wind blew through the tree branches.

“Aigoo, not here?”

Romuna dug furiously at the ground with a shovel. Her vitality was weak as a magician but she didn't give up. A woman's obsession with treasure was no less than a man's!

“Well, the treasure is rumoured to be somewhere in the vicinity so let's continue to dig.”

“Of course!”

The trail of the desert warriors clearly led here.

The treasure had been buried in the lake but it was impossible to estimate the specific location because the terrain had changed considerably. So they could only dig and see.

The sound of wind blowing through the branches.

Hwiririt.

There was a strange sound like laughter as the win passed through gaps in the rocks.

Uhihihihihi!

Everyone was so busy digging to find the treasure that they didn't notice white ghosts had surrounded them.

-Why are humans.... Cass, do you know why?

-I don't know. I think they are looking for something.

-Do they know about us?

-Maybe.

The ghosts were wearing jewellery like earrings, necklaces and rings.

The ghosts attached to the old treasures! In the Pallos Empire, they valued weapons and armour. The treasures seized from enemies or used in combat had been buried and generated large quantities of ghosts.

“Wrong. Not here either.”

“Irene-nim, you have been doing well so far. We just need to search with a little more power.”

“Acha!”

Weed’s colleagues dug with shovels as they searched for treasures in a remote area.



Wy-1 and Wy-3.

The wyverns, Weed’s sculptural lifeforms were resting well at the cliffs near Morata.

In the old days, users would be surprised when seeing them in remote locations. But now the wyverns were celebrities and could often be found on broadcasts.

Especially in the north, the wyverns could often be spotted.

“Mother, it is Wy-3!”

“Wy-3, hello!”

Young users travelling Royal Road with their mother or father would wave towards the wyverns. And the wyverns were moderately friendly with users.

Of course, they originally suffered from an identity confusion.

“Aren’t we originally flying monsters that would grab and eat humans?”

“Wy-6, do you think humans are delicious?”

“No, I heard they are delicious. The meat acquired from beasts are fine.”

“So we don’t need to eat humans. We are wyverns with picky taste buds.”

The self-proclaimed wyverns learned this!

“Do you want to eat this?”

But they would come down to the ground when users threw them food like sausages, ham and tempura. Some famous chefs would throw them cooked meat or fish so the wyverns were in heaven.

Their warm nest defended against the cold. They fought here and there and slept until late in the morning.

The war in the north didn’t matter to the wyverns as they hunted moderately and grew.

They had received advanced notice from Weed.

“Even if war breaks out, stay in the background. You don’t need to defend the Arpen Kingdom.”

“Master, what is the reason?”

Wy-1 who was the eldest and most dependable wyvern asked.

Weed’s answer was simple.

“If you come forward then other humans will handle you first. And there isn’t much you can do against a crowd of people.”

A convincing logic!

Thus, Weed commanded the wyverns and all the sculptural lifeforms to stay in the background of the war.

If they emerged in the war then it would be like children collecting money from relatives without their mother present, increasing the danger.

Bingryong, Goldman, Yellowy, Silver Bird and the other sculptural lifeforms needed to be kept safe. Even the sculptural lifeforms obtained from Jigolaths were waiting for one person to appear.

Existing in the current era, the sculptural lifeforms that only followed the founder of the Arpen Kingdom. A job that only

existed in legend, the one who inherited the noble lineage of Emperor Geihar!

“I would like to see Master, gol gol gol!”

“Ummoooooooo. Clearly he isn’t bringing us delicious food on purpose.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

In the midst of his slow fall, a new message window popped up in front of Weed.

Ddirring!

-Kill Heuller the High Priest of the Embinyu Church.

Heuller is an ageless human alchemist and magician who has been alive for more than 1,000 years.

Heuller is behind numerous plots to spread the Embinyu Church through the continent.

Now is the time to punish his misdeeds.

If high priest Heuller disappears then the Embinyu Church will go deep into the darkness and will be hard to wake up again.

Level of Difficulty: Final Secret Sculpting Technique Quest

Compensation: The final step in this quest.

After completing the quest, you can acquire Time Sculpting.

Quest Restrictions: You have to safely survive the quest.

“Owaahhh! The quest is really ending.”

A scream emerged from Weed’s mouth.

The final secret sculpting technique quest was really long!

“It is like spending half of my life sewing eyes onto dolls. Or being force to walk a path with one thousand directions.”

He just needed to finish this quest to obtain Time Sculpting. He completed the quest in a different manner from Nodulle but it was too excessive even without knowing the significant information.

“Well, whatever. There is a story hidden. And it doesn’t matter if I don’t know the way forward.”

This was the result of the training in Korea! He would become satisfied after gaining Time Sculpting.

There was still a huge battle occurring on the ground but Weed felt like he had received 3 servings of well-grilled marinated pork.

He had hunted the fearful dragon so the Embinyu Church no longer worried him.

“This really feels like the last quest. There is no reason to be a labourer. A labourer isn’t a traitor.”

Weed slowly descended to the ground. He was still at least 700 metres above the ground. But his joy was short lived as he returned to his original self before touching the ground.

“I can’t release my tension. If I’m too relaxed then a mistake may occur at the last moment.”

Many villains failed at the last moment before they received their compensation. Weed had learned countless lessons from them so he armed himself with the Yurbusika Frost Bow.

Purururu!

The arrows that Weed fired made a clear sound like a musical instrument. The sound of his archery skill was different because it was at advanced level 9.

The arrows that shot out with great speed and power took the

lives of priests and knights. The Embinyu followers on the ground attempted to avoid it but the colossal arrows didn't allow it!

“Keeek! God Embinyu, give us your will and determination.”

“God, save us!”

The priests were still shocked by the dragon's poison.

Those who were directly touched by it were destroyed and the Embinyu priests lost quite a lot of their power due to the destruction of the Embinyu Avatar. The dragon's breath had a widespread impact on the entire area.

The poison smoke didn't distinguish between friends and foes.

On the other hand, the prisoners including the humans and elves were detoxified by Ahellun's divine power. Ahellun would treat those in danger, give blessings and even powerful protection spells.

However, the Embinyu priests had fought the dragon and had received rare damage. They couldn't cure the poison or block any attacks heading towards them.

The equipment and strength of the escaped prisoners was pathetic but they used their numbers to defend against the approaching Embinyu monsters. Meanwhile, the elves were shooting arrows at the enemies.

“Have strength. Our victory isn’t far away. Just a little more and we can protect the peace of the continent with our own hands. Take care of your colleagues while fighting. We will go back home alive!”

Hestiger served as the leader of the elves during the fight.

“Great Emperor-nim is victorious against the dragon. We have to handle these guys!”

“Hyung-nim, let’s finish them up.”

Warrior-1 and Warrior-2 ran forward with their scimitars.

There was an outpouring of arrows as Weed came increasingly closer to the ground so the Embinyu Church didn’t know what to do.

The prisoners were escaping and endless amounts of monsters were coming from the outside. The full scale destruction of their Holy Land was enough to break their morale and faith.

High priest Heuller cried out.

“Our original dream won’t be trampled on! All the silly people living on this fallen land will have their flesh torn off and killed!”

The Embinyu Church started moving again at Heuller's cry. Weed fired an arrow at Heuller.

“Now it is time for the Embinyu Church to disappear.”

“All your attempts at glory will be blocked. Joy of Crushing!”

The high priest Heuller used some of the divine power he regained to form a protection shield that deflected the arrows.

“Let's test it out!”

Weed shot the arrows while using the Rapid Fire and Penetrating skills.

He was quite a distance away from the ground but the heavy arrows aimed straight at Heuller. Arrows hit it 15 times before the protective magic finally broke like glass.

The protective magic would break depending on the skill and level. Thanks to Ahellun's blessing, Weed couldn't be affected by any curses and was currently in the best physical condition.

Weed had been established as a Great Emperor during the warring period because he was a brutal warrior. When he used force, few people in this era could stop him.

“Kueeok! God Embinyu will protect this body against a mere

human....”

As Weed came increasingly closer to the ground, the Embinyu archers and priests aimed attacks at them. A burst of attacks towards the sky that seemed like fireworks!

“Close Eyes Tightly!”

He had obtained this skill again during the quest as Nodulle. His body was also wearing the God’s armour.

“Open yourself to God’s meaning and he will endlessly take care of you. Divine Protection!”

Ahellun helped by casting a protective spell.

-Flawless protection magic has been triggered.

Your body’s resistance will increase by 600% for 4 minutes.

The God’s Armour has reacted to this protection magic.

Defense has increased by 4,938.

There is a 37% probability of reflecting the enemy’s attack.

Weed’s body shone with the splendour of Divine Protection.

“Once again.”

Weed opened his eyes again.

The attacks were melted down or returned by the splendid light in front of him. Weed saw at least 1,000 archers fall like collapsing straw from their own attacks.

The situation automatically caused a hum to come out.

“It will be hard to die.”

Weed continued to concentrate on Ahellun, Warrior-1, Warrior-2, Hestiger and the escaped prisoners.

Right now, Zahab had been severely wounded by several curses but he wasn't in urgent danger due to Ahellun's treatment.

Alverun and Alveren were sculptural lifeforms similar to Alveron but he didn't dare bring them along despite their growth. Everything couldn't be a perfect situation.

“I need to take better care of Alveron after returning to the original world.”

A long term plan to make Alveron work!

He was envious that he didn't have a well-trained saint as a subordinate.

Once Weed was 50 metres above the ground, a significant number of people looked up at him. His charisma, leadership, fame and honour meant he could exert a more powerful strength in his subordinates.

“Our lord is the desert lion who conquered the continent and hunted down a dragon.”

“Ohh, unbelievable...! I can't believe how strong he is.”

“A mighty warrior sent by God to punish the wicked.”

Among the prisoners, some were so overcome with emotions that they prostrating themselves while crying.

Weed proudly raised his head like the director of a company meeting his sub-contractors. The jaw that developed from drinking cider and eating well-roasted pork belly and the droopy eyes that came from waking up late in the morning!

“Handsome.”

“With an appearance like that, women will follow him to the end.”

Warrior-1 and Warrior-2 were filled with admiration.

The winged clothing, God's armour and God's weapon gave Weed a cool appearance. In particular, the brilliant light that lit up his body gave him a better appearance!

Weed received praise for his dragon hunt, an experience that would be difficult to repeat twice in a lifetime.

Then he heard the sound of Hestiger yelling.

“Don't relax! We have to defeat them to return home alive. And we need to save those still trapped or caught up in the fight!”

“Of course!”

“We will follow the words of Captain Hestiger who saved us!”

The prisoners cried out as they confronted the Embinyu troops. Hestiger had given a command with the perfect timing to interrupt Weed. In addition, he managed to get the proud elves on his side.

He was like a typical hero of an action movie who overcame adversity and obtained the pretty woman. But at that moment, Weed had a generous heart so he didn't feel jealous of Hestiger.

“No one is to blame. It isn't my fault that he failed to be killed

early.”

The Embinyu Church had captured a large number of prisoners. They were captured to construct the Sky Tower, as sacrifices, for the sake of experiments or to be mutated into monsters. The prisoners continued running out of the buildings to clash with the Embinyu Church.

The monsters in the Embinyu Church such as ogres were modified. The buildings were unable to withstand the impact as a 9 headed ogre with 5 arms appeared.

“Kuwak! Return my old body!”

The ogres used tremendous force to kick and attack the Embinyu followers.

The Embinyu Church were driven into a corner but they still had a large number of troops remaining.

The confusion caused by the dragon hadn't settled yet and there was still the Eon of Erosion spell. Once Eons of Erosion occurred, they would all be erased.

Once Weed thought about it, he instantly wanted to run outside the area.

“But they might find a way to survive. Villains are sturdy so I need to finish Heuller first.”

The goal was Heuller!

Weed cried out in a loud voice.

“All my subordinates, listen carefully!”

“Yes!”

“Master-nim, did you call?”

Warrior-1 and Warrior-2 replied with lightning like speed.

“Please speak, Great Emperor.”

Hestiger placed a hand on his chest and bent his knees slightly.

“We don’t need to kill all the fellows overflowing in this land. They will soon disappear from here so we just need to aim at high priest Heuller!”

“I understand. Let’s go!”

The desert warriors immediately headed towards Heuller after hearing those words. The reckless assault of the desert warriors!

Weed wanted to finish the battle without wasting any more time.

“You won’t pass us!”

“That’s what you think!”

Warrior-1, Warrior-2 and Hestiger struck the Embinyu knights with one strike of their swords.

As soon as Weed gave a command, they increased their speed while fully exerting their true abilities.

Even the elves were helping with the arrows and elementals. Their focus was on protecting Hestiger.

“It is my turn!”

Weed glanced at Ahellun.

“Excuse me...”

“Don’t worry!”

Ahellun replied like he read Weed’s mind and strengthened his body with more blessings. It was like a restaurant lady bringing 3 servings of cold noodles before he even ordered.

Chapter 6: Nodulle's Ending

Weed rushed towards Heuller after coming down from the sky.

He was the most important and dangerous person on the battlefield so the Embinyu Church poured magic attacks towards him.

The armour of God spread its wings and turned him upside down or moved backwards to avoid the attacks. He was flying through the sky almost as an afterthought and arrived near Heuller before the desert warriors.

Heuller spoke to a fellow priest called Notangte standing next to him.

“Kuhuhu, they are getting closer.... Will we die in this place?”

“Hyung-nim, shouldn't you escape now?”

Notangte and his sworn brothers.

The meaning of the name wasn't a big deal but Notangte was born in a small village and committed all types of bad actions. He made a huge name as a swordsman in the warring period.

With an armed troop of 100 people, he did outrageous things like

trafficking, stealing and oppressing others. They hit the Central Continent and were won over by the Embinyu Church. Of course, the strength of these 100 people were only confined to the Central Continent!

In the southern desert, it was difficult to top the hierarchy unless they were strong. The Red Knife unit was the best elite troops of the desert and they could easily slay knights of the Central Continent!

Currently, Notangte was just like a goblin to Weed.

“End of the Day!”

Weed used one of the most powerful skills he had. The aura of red flames covered the priests and Heuller like a tsunami.

Notangte and his sworn brothers were just destroyed in vain!

“A fire attack. It isn’t enough. Embinyu will not allow it. Protection of the World.”

The priests chanted a spell in order to resist. The tsunami of fire hesitated before the powerful shield.

The flames that could even burn mountains, forests and city walls stopped before the divine power. But End of the Day raised its power. The greedy flames grew larger and rose over the protective barrier.

It was because the power of the sword significantly strengthened attack skills.

“I-I can’t bear it....”

“This attack.....”

The bodies of the priests were covered with flames from End of the Day. The shield only blocked direct attacks and couldn’t withstand the heat.

The flames of End of the Day leapt over the shield. The health of the priests kept dropping. Even the ground and rocks were dissolved by the ultra-high heat.

The shield was weakened as the flames engulfed the priests, knights and all enemies within range.

“Stop him. The Embinyu Church can continue on this earth if I’m alive.”

Heuller thought the situation was turning bad and started running away. Using his subordinates as shields while escaping!

Ddirring!

-An important junction has occurred on this quest.

If Heuller flees unharmed then the quest will continue until you capture him.

Weed plunged towards the escort knights.

They were different from the other Embinyu knights and had a high level of 500~600. Nodulle had struggled with them but Weed was the ruler of the desert.

“Summon Another Sword, Black Knight’s Strike!”

He used the sword skills that he had mastered. Attacks with locked with the summoned sword while Black Knight’s Strike was a wide area attack skill.

“Kuuuk!”

The Embinyu followers that Weed passed through collapsed. An efficient way of using his combat power. It didn’t matter to Weed if they kept their lives or not.

His only goal was Heuller. Heuller was a priest wearing long robes that couldn’t run quickly so Weed was catching up.

“Listen all faithful believers! If you stop him from coming after me then Embinyu will give you a generous reward!”

“Follow the command!”

The escort knights flocked towards Weed like vultures. Even the priests that lost their divine power threw their bodies to stop Weed.

“We will handle this. Great Emperor-nim, go ahead and take care of the bigger fish!”

Warrior-1 and Warrior-2 rushed up with their scimitars. Weed and Hestiger maintained their running speed. Heuller moved between the heavily fighting monsters.

Kuowoooooh!

Beyond the monsters was the wide entrance to an underground passage.

“I will take care of these ones.”

“Understood.”

Hestiger dealt with the monsters as Weed broke through!

However, even jumping over monsters reduced his time by a few seconds. Weed was an incomparable warrior but Heuller used divine magic to increase his speed to that of an athlete.

“An enemy of the Embinyu Church! The dream to destroy the world isn’t over yet. I will return all of you to the abyss of despair.”

It was unknown what would happen if Heuller entered the underground passage.

“No!”

Weed ran with all his power.

He quickly broke through the enemies that were approaching but couldn’t block the passage.

Weed was approximately 40 metres away while Heuller only needed 2~3 more metres to reach the entrance of the passage. To make matters worse, there were a group of Embinyu knights standing at the entrance.

“Block him!”

“Yes!”

The knights moved to stop Weed from entering the underground passage!

Sururung.

An Embinyu knight pulled out a sword and the situation suddenly reversed. Heuller was cut down by a fellow knight.

“Kueeok! How did this....”

“I’ve been waiting for this time! Great Emperor-nim, I knew you would come so I’ve been waiting.”

The Embinyu knight removed his helmet to reveal the face of Warrior-3. After infiltrating the Embinyu Church, he had been placed to guard the area of retreat.

“This is a sword of the desert. Hot Sandy Wind Sword!”

Warrior-3’s sword rotated like a windmill while cutting Heuller.

The proficiency of Hot Sandy Wind Sword was still growing but it was a success. The desert warriors had basically mastered the sword.

Heuller was hit more than twenty times before Warrior-3 ended up being surrounded by the Embinyu knights. But Weed also arrived before the Embinyu knights could attack.

“Undulating Flame Mark!”

Fierce flames rose from Weed’s body onto the knights.

It was a technique that acted as a defense but could also destroy weak enemies! The Embinyu knights were fairly strong but were still affected. The knights in a cursed state were just like moving japtem in Weed's eyes.

The knights couldn't even resist and their bodies turned into fireballs. The attacks aimed at Weed were overwhelmed by the fire. And Heuller!

"Today, you won't last even 1 minute longer!"

Weed couldn't make any concessions at this moment. He was in his best state after dealing with the dragon.

"Moonlight Sculpting Blade!"

Heuller might use a defense skill but Moonlight Sculpting Blade neutralized any resistance.

Weed's long sword spun round and round like a toy. He slashed dozens of times in a row.

-Moonlight Sculpting Blade has passed through the protection spell and hit the enemy.

There are cries of distress from the opponent as they try to reduce the damage but it is hopeless.

The opponent's health has been decreased by 15,492.

“Kuweeek! The pain is gnawing at my soul!”

-The attacks have succeeded 5 times in a row.

The durability of Heuller's robe has been reduced by 26%.

-A critical hit!

Severe Blow!

Heuller's health has decreased by 9%.

Unlike the dragon, a large amount of concentration was needed to hit Heuller.

-The advanced magic of the Embinyu Church, Life Absorption has been triggered.

Heuller will absorb the health of all life within a 300 metres radius.

You have resistance to this divine power.

Heuller has forcefully absorbed the health from other creatures to recover 42,482 health.

“You’re not a zombie!”

Weed cut him with the sword but Heuller’s health was being filled again at a rapid pace. A red line connected him to the Embinyu followers that he was extracting health from. This was why a priest boss was one of the hardest to kill without the help of others.

“I won’t take this lying down. You shall be split apart and distorted. Rupture of the Sacrifice!”

-The Armour of the God Thor has neutralized the magic curse.

You have resisted the twisting and pushing force.

The small effect has decreased health by 4,929.

His resistance was high so Heuller’s attacks weren’t enough to damage Weed.

“He recovered just now. It looks like the last few minutes have been wasted. I have to beat you until you die!”

Weed cut Heuller with his sword. Heuller retreated whenever he was hit by the continuous swings. Weed alternated between small, large and wide area attacks. His aim was to resolve it all.

The scene where the brilliant light of the sword sparkled with every swing was beautiful.

“All knights, rescue High Priest-nim.”

“No way! We will stop it! Great Emperor-nim, we will handle this!”

Warrior-1, Warrior-2 and Hestiger blocked the attempts of the Embinyu knights to rescue Heuller.

“Gushing Lava Column!”

Weed caused lava to surround his body, preventing the knights from reaching them. He succeeded in keeping Heuller away from the entrance of the underground passage.

“Euuuk, for my grand dream to end like this....”

“Touching my rice bowl was your mistake.”

-The sword of the God Thor has cut the divine body of Heuller.

The opponent’s divine magic has been temporarily reduced by 267.

The power of the divine magic has decreased by 6%.

The opponent believes in an evil god so faith has been permanently reduced by 29.

Health has decreased by 73,399.

Weed's attack caused massive damage. Heuller's health was steadily recovering but he couldn't escape being damaged.

And the sky was turning red. The ground started to vibrate.

"The world is moving even though I am standing still."

"This enormous flow of mana.... It is over! We are all going to die!"

"Ahhh, Penny! I couldn't see you before I died."

The ground started flowing like a river. A building suddenly passed by.

Weed felt that Eons of Erosion was causing a change in this area. Of course, he couldn't miss killing Heuller even if Eons of Erosion was occurring.

"It is time to finish this."

“This...it can't end this way!”

Despite the ongoing Life Absorption, Heuller's health continued to decline.

The Embinyu knights in the area were dying due to Weed's subordinates. The injured knights offering their health to Heuller were dying. Thus Heuller was rapidly collapsing under Weed's powerful offensive.

The end of a long, long quest was finally ending. Tens of millions of people were watching on the screen while Weed relentlessly struck.

“Spare me. I will give you all the worth I've collected so far and my enormous troops.”

-High priest Heuller of the Embinyu Church is begging for his life.

If you accept his offer you will obtain a pile of riches but your soul will forever belong to Embinyu.

Do you want to accept Heuller's offer?

Instead, your ongoing quest will fail.

“I don't want to. It isn't worth it!”

-You have refused the offer.

Fame has increased by 14,292.

Faith has increased by 17.

He wasn't shaken at all by the temptation. If cash was pulled out in front of him then Weed might hesitate but only using words was Heuller's mistake.

Heuller's enormous health was sharply reduced over time. He was hit despite trying to avoid it. Weed unleashed all the difficulties he experienced in the meantime on Heuller.

“Kuweeek! The hundreds of years I lived is in vain. I wanted to get rid of all the imbalances and distortions in this world....”

“High Priest-nim!”

The Embinyu knights continued to struggle to reach Weed but were blocked by the column of lava.

And finally, a black energy started to pour out from Heuller's body. The protective ability and health had reached its limit. The body couldn't endure it and collapsed.

Heuller's face rapidly aged as it became filled with deep wrinkles

and age spots. After a while, the black energy popped and Heuller's soul escaped from the body.

-It won't end like this. If I have a chance...I will come back and achieve my unfulfilled dream. Kuhwahwahwahwa!

-High priest Heuller of the Embinyu Church has entered his eternal rest.

His soul will go to hell and taste the pain he dealt through his life.

Fame has increased by 32,291.

-You have survived a dangerous battle and maximum health has increased by 1,200.

-Your successful adventure has increased all stats by 5.

-The mission granted by the gods has been completed successfully. The Faith stat has increased by 11%.

-Heuller's Magic Staff has disappeared before it can be acquired.

-The Cylinder Pants has been acquired.

-Kill Heuller the High Priest of the Embinyu Church has been completed.

Heuller who had his mind distorted by greed has lost his life.

The mighty achievement has changed the flow of history but this event won't be known because it took place on barren soil.

If any adventurer finds the truth buried here then you will gain the true respect of warriors.

Compensation: If an adventurer discovers it then you can obtain the related fame, authority and items.

-The quest associated with the final secret sculpting technique, Time Sculpting will result in the final story of Hilderun and Nodulle.

-The Embinyu Church has lost their strength through the death of the high priest.

They will disappear into small fragments of history.

“This is really....”

Weed hadn't been able to say that for a while. So far, he didn't believe himself that he would complete the quest.

A sculptor who started off carving wood was finally going to obtain the final secret sculpting technique.

The history of the Versailles Continent had been reversed by Weed.

“The leader of the enemy is dead!”

“We won. Hooray!”

The prisoners started cheering.

The colossal army of Embinyu knights, priests and monsters lost all strength and fell to the ground. The monsters that came running from the outskirts continued trying to eat them.

Weed looked down at the ground while this complicated situation was going on. There were ants, cockroaches and other insects moving. The earth was crumpling up like paper. The ebb and flow of the ground was moving the people and buildings.

“It is time to leave.”

It was imperceptible when fighting Heuller but now the ground was moving.

“If this continues then it is the end.”

He had saved the continent from the evil Embinyu Church. Weed couldn't enjoy the afterglow.

Of course, his subordinates were also worthy of praise. If it wasn't for the desert warriors then it would have been impossible for him to conquer the Central Continent. Weed's affection towards them had piled up in the process.

'I need to look after my own survival!'

Weed was just about to run off.

"Assemble everyone here. The dark power that the enemy wrapped around here has weakened. This place is risky so we will escape from here."

Saint Ahellun spoke. Whether it was fortunate or unfortunate, the brave warriors could save their lives.

Ahellun spread both arms wide as a pure white divine light spread out. It felt like when they were heading towards the Barren Howling Ruins.

The elves, dwarves and surviving prisoners came closer to Ahellun. Weed had worked hard and reached the top position.

The prisoners directed their praise towards Weed.

"Great Emperor-nim, thanks for the good work."

“A miraculous victory. I’m honoured to fight together with a warrior like you.”

“Evane, I finally got revenge for you.”

Zahab, Hestiger and his loyal subordinates all gathered together.

However, Weed’s face wasn’t very welcoming.

It was because he felt complex emotions seeing three high elves attached closely to Hestiger. His charm was increased even more by the attractive elves!

“Now I’m finally leaving!”

“Let’s go back home.”

“Huk huk, I can finally go back after living in a place like this....”

The light burst out from Ahellun and surrounded Weed, his subordinates and the hundreds of survivors.

After a while, they all disappeared from the spot while the remaining Embinyu troops continued fighting with the monsters attacking them.

Kurururung!

In a short amount of time, the buildings started collapsing.

Weed leaving didn't stop the battle between the Embinyu Church and the monsters. But the ground started to be sucked in and formed a whirlpool. All the buildings and existences in that area were gone and only a huge hole was left behind.

Weed grabbed his sword tightly as Ahellun teleported him somewhere. The resolute will not to let go of the God's sword!

Splash.

Caw. Caw caw.

Weed appeared in a place where he could hear the seagulls and the peaceful sound of the waves.

‘This is....’

Weed didn't feel his body land.

Instead of stepping on the ground, he was flying in the air like a ghost. The armour and sword from god had disappeared without him noticing. But the sun was warm and the white sand grains looked like jewellery so he couldn't feel any tension.

Weed floated around until he found a small wooden house. A

middle-aged couple was eating a fish dish.

“This is delicious. As expected from Hilderun, your cooking is amazing.”

“Thank you.”

They were Nodulle and Hilderun, the protagonists of the quest.

‘What the hell, am I just supposed to watch like a movie?’

They had suffered a huge hardship in the warring period and the fight against the Embinyu Church.

Since then, Nodulle and Hilderun settled in their home near the beach.

‘Well, that grilled fish is shocking. At first I thought it was sweet potato burned black....’

The grilled fish made a sound like a cookie every time they chewed on it. It was a situation where he could grumble about the food but Nodulle indeed found it delicious.

Once the two of them finished eating, they leisurely headed to the beach with fishing rods. Meanwhile, stone was stacked around a small field behind the house to protect the garden from strong winds.

‘When looking at the sea, it seems to be the coastline on the eastern side of the continent. It is close to the north-east coast.’

It was the instinctive need to understand the terrain developed from quests! There were monsters and beasts nearby but they didn’t wander around so it was a peaceful beast.

He roamed for 10 minutes before he suddenly had a question.

‘Strange. It was just noon a little while ago.’

Nodulle and Hilderun were turning off the power of their house.

Awooooo!

The sound of wolves howling could be heard from far away.

‘Something like this....’

He watched the stars in the night sky quickly change to the sun rising. A majestic sunrise! The sea was being shrouded by fog.

Weed was quite familiar with seeing a sunrise.

In the old days, he would see the sun rise during his milk and newspaper deliveries and when he stayed up all night hunting

before heading back to the cities on the Versailles Continent. He was full of pride from a backpack full of japtem and would sell it at an overpriced value to customers despite the accumulated fatigue.

And the sunny beach day began again.

Nodulle and Hilderun gathered seafood or caught animals such as rabbits for food. The shining sun gleamed on the endless waves like a jewel.

It once again became an evening sky full of stars before the sun rose the next day.

This tranquil routine was repeated.

‘What am I supposed to do?’

Weed watched idly as ten days passed. All this time had only taken 30 minutes.

In the beginning, he looked around for dangerous presences or even hidden treasures. Maybe Nodulle and Hilderun had a reason to live here so there might be treasures concealed!

Weed’s thoughts were like that. But the days just kept passing.

They weren’t interested in hidden treasure nor did they covet power. Weed knew that Nodulle’s sword skills could conquer any

kingdom. If he was a little more ambitious then he could become the king.

“I didn’t expect this day to come.”

“I am very happy now.”

The time they spent together was more valuable after facing all types of adversity again. They looked like they most loving couple in the world as they laughed together.

One day, two days, one month, two months.

The passage of time was even faster. It was like the daily routine was being repeated. The final stage of the quest just required watching Nodulle and Hilderun live comfortably.

‘Does that mean I can’t miss any of the scenes? They might hide Time Sculpting somewhere here and then I will have to come find it again later. And I would be able to find it if the excavation is successful.’

Weed was filled with doubt so he memorized and analysed their behaviour.

Spring, summer, autumn, winter.

Seasons changed and years passed as Nodulle and Hilderun

became older.

They had been teenagers when fleeing from Borota Island but after living in the desert and crossing the continent, they were already old.

Nodulle's face that had been handsome when he was younger was now filled with scars. They were young at one time but now that was just their precious memories.

Time flowed faster and they turned into elderly people. Sometimes 1 month or 6 months would pass in an instant and other times it was a few seasons.

Nodulle became increasingly decrepit as he carried firewood and Hilderun's waist was also bent.

Weed started to feel something when looking at the changes. Nodulle and Hilderun's happiness.

'The view looks good. Don't tell me that Nodulle and Hilderun lived happily ever after like an old children's book after defeating the Embinyu Church?'

Storms and snowfall also occurred on the beach. The scenery was the best but he actually felt uncomfortable. Nodulle and Hilderun went on living with each other until they were elderly people.

Weed couldn't help feeling impressed.

‘That is love.’

His parents had died early so he couldn’t remember them well.

There were many things he didn’t know but he could see his parent’s love. Rather than feeling joy at the love, he felt scared by the enormous sense of responsibility.

He wasn’t an official couple with Seo-yoon but he knew her mind after suffering so much together. Therefore, he decided it was time to accept.

‘Can I really have a happy family? There really are many complex things in this world. I just want to live an ordinary and loving life with my family. It is indeed hard.’

Time continued to pass but it felt like more time was being given. Enough time passed that the two elderly people should be dead already.

Hilderun was the first one to close her eyes. She wore a pretty dress like she knew she was dying and closed her eyes.

“I’m sorry. I’ll go first.”

She had no regrets so she died calmly!

Nodulle buried her in a grave behind the house.

And time flowed on once again.

Nodulle cleaned fish and ate rice alone. He was lonely but he went on living life as usual. The very lonely Nodulle occasionally muttered to himself.

“It was a really interesting life.”

He had lost many things after choosing Hilderun. His wealth and status on Borota Island was discard and he experienced many things that threatened his life.

Nevertheless, Nodulle was happy because it was the life he chose for himself. He was a man who achieved everything he wanted!

Nodulle sat next to Hilderun’s grave and quietly closed his eyes. He knew this was the end.

Nodulle’s little finger touched Hilderun’s grave and lights emerged and tangled around each other like lovers before shooting up into the sky.

The light soared deep into the night sky and were difficult to distinguish from each other. Nodulle and Hilderun’s stars!

The meaning of the two stars were now revealed. The stars

symbolized time, fortune and love. They enjoyed eternity together even after death.

Weed felt appreciation after watching their story.

‘This could be called a happy ending. Although I would have preferred becoming rich from successful land speculation.’

Ddiring!

-The wandering sculptor has found the true expression of radiant beauty!

You have learned the secrets of time through an eternal love.

Time Sculpting has been learnt.

Time is eternal and those happy memories can flow quickly or slowly.

The power of this mysterious sculpting technique can accomplish miracles by freezing the world.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-You have accomplished the achievement of a century.

A grand way of sculpting has been pioneered.

The highest level of achievement as a sculptor.

The effect of all sculptures has increased by 4%.

“Hah.”

The poignant scene of the quest being completed made Weed want to cry but the tears seemed to be stuck.

A man’s tears were very precious. In particular, the scene would be broadcast later so he couldn’t be seen crying.

“Ahahaaam.”

He neatly yawned to hide the tears.

“Time Sculpting skill window!”

– Time Sculpting Beginner 1 (0%).

Beginner: Age Sculpting.

This skill will add a long amount of time to a sculpture. Sometimes this time will add value to the sculpture.

It will also stop the sculpture from being naturally damaged over time.

Intermediate: Moment Sculpting.

The world will stop. Light, wind, people. In front of Time Sculpting, everything will stop.

The beauty of that stopped moment will consume a lot of vitality and concentration.

In order to spread the reach of Moment Sculpting, a special energy is required. Energy can be obtained when a moment makes people happy.

Energy of the Moment will be quickly consumed.

Continuous use in a short amount of time will consume a vast amount of vitality and mana.

Advanced: Travel Sculpting.

Chase the traces of time to travel to a specific point in time.

You can proceed with special quests.

However, accepting random quests not related to sculpting that would change the past will incur a huge penalty.

Energy of the Moment-o.

-An additional time sculpting skill has been acquired.

Museum of Time: Once Time Sculpting reaches intermediate level, you have one opportunity to permanently stop time in a specific area.

The flowers in that place won't wither and raindrops will be stopped in the air.

Only the sculptor can be involved in this space and combat and destruction isn't possible.

If you create an exhibition of your works then you can invite other people.

The final secret sculpting technique! Depending on the proficiency, various attributes of Time Sculpting could be produced.

Weed looked at Moment Sculpting first.

“I can stop the world and move myself, huhuhuhu.”

There was a warm smile on his face.

Time Sculpting could lead to many beautiful moments but he was only thinking about how he could profit from it.

“If time really stops...I can steal money from others. And it is also very useful in battle.”

An invincible technology that could stop the fight! If the situation was dangerous then he could use it to avoid deadly attacks.

“But I still don’t know how effective it is.”

It was common sense that a price needed to be paid for such a colossal skill.

Currently the broadcasters had promised not to relay this scene. It was a measure intended to stop Bardray and the Hermes Guild from knowing the information.

“Wait a bit. I will return!”

Chapter 7: Time Sculpting

“Stop them! Have the priests hit the enemies with divine magic!”

“They’ve been wiped out! All dead.”

“How did this happen?”

“The enemies emerged from the shadows and assassinated them. They swept through before we could stop them....”

“We ran out of silver. We only have steel and regular arrows so what should we do?”

“Gates, block the gates! We are finished if they breach the gates!”

The city of Reinstadem in the Haven Empire!

The access point and quality wine production meant it was embroiled in sieges every day when it belonged to the Kallamore Kingdom. After being taken over by the Hermes Guild’s Haven Empire, it was subjected to heavy taxes and occasional attacks by rebels.

But the rebels were blocked by the walls and scattered after being shot by arrows. The city never imagined it would be attacked by the Abyss Knight Van Hawk and 800 Imperial Doom Knights.

Major figures in the city were assassinated in the darkness.

“The support of the cities around here?”

“I don’t know. There is no contact!”

“Such a thing....”

Most of the communication was through the guild chat or whispers. The complex tactics in a war could be implemented through such a rapid delivery system.

But Van Hawk’s dark aura spread out and scattered all types of mana, blocking teleportation and whispers.

The Doom Knights passed through the walls like ghosts or jumped dozens of metres like they had wings.

Cheolkeol cheolkeol.

Beyond the wall, there was an army of undead wearing rusty armour that was created by Van Hawk. Reinstadem was full of many ghosts due to the constant wars. They rose up and were turned into troops.

Using the power of Van Hawk, the anguished remains of the Kallamore Kingdom rose.

The users who experienced death here also triggered a quest!

-Abyss Knight Van Hawk is calling you.

You have lost your life at Reinstadem and the chance to get revenge has finally come. Do you want to become the undead to participate in the war to rebuild the Kallamore Kingdom?

If you accept the quest then you can participate in the battle as an undead for a period of time.

There will be no penalty for death and you can be summoned again as an undead in the future.

The experience acquired during the battle can be kept.

The access rate of Royal Road was considerably higher because of Weed's adventure.

“What is this? Should I accept the quest?”

“I don't know. It sounds like something fun.”

Users from every region of the continent, including the north accepted the quest and rose as an undead near Reinstadem. The undead suited their level as the users looked around with amazement.

“Ouuwooo?”

“Kuowaaaat!”

Their tongue or jaw was rotting so they couldn't articulate properly. The beginners became zombies with a bad smell and flies swarming around them.

However, the users with quite high levels become Death Knights and could move around somewhat freely.

‘What is this?’

‘Ah, special. It is a very special event. There is a 100% chance of being shown on the broadcast. Maybe this is a chance to become known as a combat genius.’

‘Will there be compensation if I fight well? But it is a siege. It is also against the Haven Empire!’

‘Hmm, there is nothing to lose even if I die. I’ve always been passive about the loss in skill proficiency and experience. It is why I get cursed at in dungeon hunts. Okay, let’s try it. Kill everyone!’

‘Ah! I’m a priest but I’ve become an undead. I’m also a skeleton. Huh, there’s a flame on my hand?’

The users that had become the undead laughed as their jaws clattered.

Anyway, this was a fresh and fun experience. The users weren't slow so they had roughly determined the situation.

Reinstadem of the Haven Empire! They had died in the vicinity of the city in the past.

‘Huu, all I need to do it fight. Even without a plan?’

Anyone with infinite life could fight heartily.

The undead users were chuckling as Doom Knights emerged to conduct them.

“...This...two...kill...this...place...all...land...”

“...In between...life...over...clothing...bow down...new life...evil sin...luck...bones...ear...live...go...!”

The Doom Knights that defended the gates of hell led the undead forward and breached the walls.

‘Let's go. I will miss the fun if I'm too late.’

The undead users passed through the gates and launched a fight

against the troops of the Haven Empire.

“Defend this place. Stop them at the gate!”

“I can’t endure. We will all die...cough!”

Despite blocking the Doom Knights’ attacks with their shields, it still dealt havoc to their health and spirit. It meant their souls would be lost even if they weren’t killed by the Doom Knights.

The undead users dealt with the Haven Kingdom’s soldiers that fit their level.

“This is taking too long.”

Van Hawk who had been silently watching the Doom Knights finally moved. The 2 metre large bone sword that was raised into the sky showed the dignity of Van Hawk! Van Hawk might always be beaten up by Weed but know the charisma of an Abyss Knight was overflowing from him.

The darkness of the abyss protecting him gave off an intimidating feeling. The general users at Reinstadem watched with curiosity.

“The real deal. Isn’t that right?”

“The city will be occupied in a matter of minutes.”

“Doesn’t it look like it will take 1 hour?”

The city’s defenders would be wiped out in a few moments. The humans that lost their lives were revived as the undead.

Reinstadem was fully conquered by Van Hawk and his Doom Knights. The warehouses were burnt and the main facilities of the city were completely destroyed. Fortunately, the residents, users and general store wasn’t affected.

“These people are the poor citizens of the Kallamore Kingdom. The Haven Empire hasn’t protected them. We are sorry.”

“Kukukul, our children are here somewhere.”

Van Hawk and the undead army didn’t stay long in Reinstadem. Early the next day, they exited through the broken gate.

“Let’s go. We need to reclaim the Imperial Palace. For His Majesty, we will take back this land and we can’t be stopped.”

“Yes, Captain-nim.”

The undead moved.

“W-what?”

“These are....”

The users that bumped into them on the side of the road were surprised.

In recent years, beginners started in the north but there were still users that preferred the commerce and stable development of the Central Continent.

Most of the beginners were merchants dragging their carriages so they were shocked when the undead army appeared and couldn't move.

The undead were monsters frequently seen in dungeons or cemeteries. They were mainly at the level of ghosts or skeletons but users were familiar with them due to Weed's adventures. The users were able to classify the undead so they were startled to see an advanced undead army.

“Kulkulkul.”

“Kihihihit.”

The undead users were looking forward to the next battle and couldn't stop laughing. But after the sun rose, they disappeared like they were never there. They could only be active at night when the sun wasn't there.



Lafaye and the leaders of the Hermes Guild held a meeting to discuss countermeasures.

Weed's quest was a success! In the future, Weed would be commanding the northern users directly!

And the invasion of the Abyss Knight!

Lafaye laughed calmly.

"It is surprising but variables are always expected."

The Hermes Guild had 50 leaders.

Bardray led the army while the leaders played key roles in the Haven Empire. A sudden adverse event like this occurring in the Haven Empire couldn't be ignored because the minor damage might turn bigger.

"Weed has fairly deep ulterior motives. Did he deliberately raise an Abyss Knight for today's purpose?"

"Since early on in his quest, we had been preparing for any damage he might try to do to the Haven Empire."

“According to the reports from our intelligence network, Van Hawk was an undead of the Kallamore Kingdom. When looking at the circumstances, isn’t that story fuelling this event?”

The leaders were divided into multiple departments in order to grasp the state of the vast Haven Empire. Jenis of the military department checked the map and said.

“The battle report has come from Reinstadem. The number of undead are between 3,000 and 5,000 and they will increase further in the war.”

“That number isn’t difficult to face.”

“Yes, the Abyss Knight might be a necromancer but there is a limit to how many undead he can raise. However, some users have joined this event and there are 700~1,000 Doom Knights.”

“The Doom Knights are high ranking monsters.”

“That’s right. Their individual levels are high and they are challenging to handle. However, the Imperial Knights can subdue them.”

There was a flood of high level users belonging to the Hermes Guild. They had mobilized people for the war against the north but there was still a surplus in the Central Continent. Most of the troops that the Haven Empire dispatched to the north were regular NPC soldiers. Bardray was the commander but he had stayed out of

the battles.

There were many late 400s in the guild who had no work to do. In the meantime, they had competed many high level users from the other prestigious guilds in the Central Continent. The early members were the heart of the Hermes Guild but they were careful not to reject others.

The steady increase of high level users was intended for this purpose. It was meant to prevent the emergence of hostile forces.

“But one unit of the Imperial Knights contains 2,000 people so can that stop them? The Abyss Knight will continue to raise the undead.”

“I’m aware that the undead are quite strong but they are fairly easy to deal with compared to other creatures. Each religion has spells to weaken undead so they will be supported by knights. Each area will also have divine relics sent to strengthen them in advance. One unit of Imperial Knights and high level users will be mobilized.”

The huge territory of the Haven Empire also had a lot of treasure. If divine relics that increased divine magic were placed then the power of the Abyss Knights would be weakened.

It could be said that the Abyss Knight was the worst monster the Haven Empire faced so far so many high levels users were interested and would go running.

Lafaye analysed the information and made a decision.

“We are free. Let’s show them the grandeur of the Empire. 3 troops of Imperial Knights, 20,000 users from the guild that are at least level 410 and 4,000 knights will be dispatched. And offer a reward for any ordinary users that want to give support.”

One of the lords gave a dissenting opinion.

“Isn’t that too much? The security and internal affairs in the occupied territories still isn’t perfect. It is inevitable since we are using so much power to conquer the north.”

“It is worth it to conquer the north early on. The Embinyu Church means there was a delay in sending troops to the north but there has been steady results. This is required in order to stabilize the areas affected by the event. We will show that the Haven Empire doesn’t budge even after an Abyss Knight appears.”

It would be difficult if the power of the Haven Empire weakened. The vast amount of territory meant there was bandits and rebels but they had a minimal influence on the Empire.

Lafaye wanted to make the fight with the Abyss Knight a festival in order to show off the power of the Haven Empire.

“This is a good opportunity so prepare Bardray-nim.”

“Of course.”

Bardray decided to take part in the fight against the Abyss Knight.

The damage to 3~4 cities in the Haven Empire wasn't insignificant. The grand battle between the Abyss Knight and Bardray would provide the best results.



The day that Weed's adventure ended, each broadcasting station recorded unbelievably high figures.

The total audience ratings was 19.8%. It was higher than a popular drama being aired.

And even more surprising was the audience ratings from the moment he rode the dragon. 34.1%.

Of course, Royal Road was gaining sensational popularity around the world but they hadn't expected such great ratings. It was due to the overwhelming scale and fun of the scenes showing Royal Road.

Users that watched the screen could really feel like they were exploring or on adventures.

The wind blew through branches in an eerie forest and there was

the sound of leaves breaking. The fantastic natural scenery and scary monsters became the trend as the ratings increased.

“The ratings achieved by our station is unbelievable.”

“Head Director-nim, there is a storm of demands for reruns on the bulletin board!”

“Start the reruns immediately....”

“Head Director-nim!”

“Is there something else?”

“The advertisers are inundating us with requests for meetings. There are calls asking when the next broadcast of Weed will be!”

Weed’s adventure didn’t end just like that.

Significant changes occurred to the Versailles Continent that made the broadcasting stations work all night.

And the next day, the office workers and students’ eyes were bloodshot red.

“Kya, did you see it?”

“Yes. Cool!”

“Very cool.”

“By the way, I didn’t sleep until 2 a.m. yesterday so what happened to the Embinyu Church?”

“They are completely gone. Not a single trace remains.”

Weed had finished the final secret sculpting technique quest. But the quest information meant a lot of people knew that the Embinyu Church would be eliminated. They couldn’t see any traces of the Embinyu Church on the Versailles Continent.

Including the Rosenheim Kingdom that had been destroyed, many areas of the Central Continent were fully restored to their former glory.

People waited for the end of their day. And connected to Royal Road as soon as they got home. They first headed to the market in their hometown to hear the news.

Horse drawn carriages were moving through abundant, golden fields that had previously been a dark red colour from curses.

That wasn’t the only impressive and exciting thing.

Residents met beloved people that had been in cities destroyed by

the Embinyu Church.

“Hey, it is Grandfather’s grocery store! It has been a long time.”

“Huh, you are talking nonsense. I’ve sold to you just a while ago. Did you want anything good today? My child is to be married in a few days so I need some money. Don’t be particularly cheap, yes?”

The residents sold products to the users like nothing had happened.

Users also returned to Serabourg Castle in the Rosenheim Kingdom that had been completely destroyed by the Embinyu Church. The Embinyu Church were like bandits living in forests or caves so it was no longer necessary to worry about them.

“Eh, I gave you a simple errand but you came back so late!”

“Ajusshi, I finished it early on but you left to become a fanatic.”

“What are you talking about? Did you have a weird dream? Anyway, you came back later so I will decrease the reward from 5 gold to 3 gold. If you are late again then you can forget about being asked to do any special errands!”

Rewards were received for quests that couldn’t be completed in a long time. A number of users gave up in the middle of the quest but those with high intimacy could receive some time of reward.

The pyramid and sphinx that Weed and the users had built also returned.

The users who received a lot of damage from the Embinyu Church couldn't get rid of their smiles.

“Will Weed-nim come back now?”

“It seems so. Won't he be greeted by a huge crowd?”

“The final secret sculpting technique! I wonder what technique he received.”

“The stations are a mess because of that.”

“But what will happen now? A huge quest was finished so will he now defeat the Hermes Guild?”

Chapter 8: Treasures Of The Sea

Lee Hyun checked every corner of his house.

“A lot of construction techniques in South Korea is clearly insufficient. We need innovation in the construction industry.”

As time passed, the houses would keep growing older.

Rain would leak, wind would decrease heating efficiency in winter and electrical devices would malfunction. In order to live in the house, it was required to periodically apply waterproof paint and check it once a year.

“A house built 700 years ago needs to be maintained to preserve the history and tradition. This level of technique, tsk tsk.”

Lee Hyun thought that the construction industry was too lazy. It was only interested in driving up the prices of the land so they recklessly sold it.

The house should be made of new materials that kept it warm in winter and cool in summer, a 400 metres underground water supply, its own electricity production and devices that automatically removed harmful dust. The house should automatically fill the car with oil and a plastic greenhouse would be nice for those who preferred organic yards.

“A house shouldn’t just be built with cement.”

Lee Hyun grumbled yet there was a rotten smile on his face.

He looked at the small repairs around his house with joy. There was a fresh coat of paint on his gate and a new bench made out of wood.

“This year I should plant pear and apple trees. If I plant it now then I can get value for the fruits later.”

Despite receiving plenty of incentives and bonuses for the ratings from the broadcasting stations, he was still strict about spending. Lee Hyun was already rich when looking at the considerable amount in his savings!

The bank staff would periodically call him about promotional products or send him gifts like ginseng. Weed was pleased whenever he received a phone call from the bank’s branch manager.

-Customer-nim, this is a special sale so if you buy the product then you can get a prime rate.

Prime rate!

“Let’s see. In recent years I’ve obtained a bit of money but.... Well, shouldn’t I check if it works before spending?”

The change compared to the last few years suffering from debt collectors.

‘This is an area that I’m better in.’

Praising himself!

Lee Hyun cleaned the yard and found Dogmeat’s empty bowl.

“I’ve been busy so I didn’t take care of this properly. Well, it has still been eating well.”

The wall between his yard and Seo-yoon’s had been torn down. Lee Hyun had faith that she wouldn’t do anything bad. Another reason was that she wouldn’t have any desire to take things from Lee Hyun’s house.

So it was natural for Dogmeat to go and sit on the porch of Seo-yoon’s house for a meal. The dog was happy when Seo-yoon stroked it with a soft gaze and fed the dog!

Lee Hyun felt the charm of eating pork chops as a huge family. But he thought differently after seeing Seo-yoon feed the greedy Dogmeat different types of food.

The dog was becoming plump as it enjoyed its life.

“I have hot rice leftover from breakfast that I specifically saved for you. Here! Eat a lot.”

Lee Hyun gave Dogmeat the remaining rice and filled its water. It was a bowl of rice topped with pork and some vegetables.

Grrung.

Dogmeat yawned before arrogantly turning away and lying back down. It didn't bat an eye because Seo-yoon had fed it excellent glazed lamb from Australia.

Lee Hyun's eyes trembled.

“A mongrel dog shouldn't refuse to eat rice.”

He firmly tied a leash to Dogmeat's neck.

“You aren't going anywhere. If you don't eat then you will starve. I've applied sesame oil to your fur to make it glossy and smooth. Rice with soybean paste is a luxury for dogs.”

He spend a relaxing hour harassing Dogmeat's neck.

Then Lee Hyun looked at Seo-yoon who had come out to the yard.

“Ah, this is a misleading sight. I am just teasing it.”

Dogmeat leapt up and shook its tail eagerly like it was greeting its owner as it saw Seo-yoon. The dog’s loyalty was high and Seo-yoon always took care of it.

Bark, bark bark!

Dogmeat went crazy as it couldn’t jump towards her due to the leash. Then it lay down and showed its charm!

Lee Hyun stared at it with cold eyes.

“Dogs these days....”

Now he had raised Dogmeat for 2 years. Lee Hyun vowed to take measures as he left Dogmeat on its leash.

Lee Hyun and Seo-yoon sat on chairs in the yard as the midday sun shone on them.

Seo-yoon asked in a clear voice.

“Did you sleep well?”

“Yes.”

“Little sister?”

“She went to the library.”

Seo-yoon always cared about Lee Hye-yeon. She was Lee Hyun’s sister and a potential sister-in-law in the future.

Lee Hyun hesitated for a moment before opening his mouth.

“Then...ask me for a favour.”

“A favour?”

“You helped me out on my quest.”

“Yes.”

Lee Hyun wanted to give Seo-yoon something for her help with his sculpting quest. He couldn’t just have his mouth wiped without giving anything in return. He had promised to pay Seo-yoon back for all the effort she put into this quest!

‘I suppose it will be money. She will ask for money. Money. No money.’

Seo-yoon’s face became more flushed as she thought of something. Lee Hyun’s face also turned red.

‘I need to think of everything in advance. Indeed, money. How big a sum...everything in this world is influenced by money.’

Seo-yoon hesitated before saying.

“Date.”

“Huh?”

“You might be busy but I want a date.”

Seo-yoon wanted to leave the house with Lee Hyun.

‘Leaving the house requires money...what should I do?’

Of course he didn’t have a plan. He was seriously agonizing over it.

“Where do you want to go?”

“I don’t care. But anywhere is fine.”

“Hrmm.”

The burden of an ordinary man dating!

When looking at dramas, many of the heroes were rich. The tall and handsome man would bring his girlfriend to a department store and buy her exclusive bags and clothes. Furthermore, those dramas had surprise events where a gift would be given before they embraced.

‘Movies and dramas should end there. They are fictional stories. Scenes like that would never occur in reality so there should be subtitles stating that.’

Seo-yoon was the daughter of a tycoon so the reality was daunting.

There were many people who wanted to go to a hotel restaurant but were forced to eat gimbap from a convenience store.

Lee Hyun released his breath and asked.

“Are you hungry?”

“A little bit.”

“Well, let’s go out for a meal. But is it okay if I decide where to go?”

“Of course.”

“I’ll tell you in advance but it isn’t that expensive.”

“I don’t care.”

Seo-yoon didn’t feel bad at his words. They mainly ate at home so being able to eat out with Lee Hyun warmed her heart. She could feel warm just being next to Lee Hyun.

“Then I will specify the menu. Let’s go and eat jajangmyeon!”

“Do you know a place?”

“There isn’t any place that I don’t know in this neighbourhood.”

He was visiting a Chinese restaurant after a long time. The Chinese restaurant in the neighbourhood had an efficient delivery service and a clean establishment.

Lee Hyun went to the Chinese restaurant and was in agony before finally ordering bowls of jajangmyeon.

“One...Sichuan sweet and sour as well. Please give many side dishes.”

A huge spending! But this treatment was for Seo-yoon’s sake.

“Jajangmyeong becomes more delicious when using a strong

pressure to eat it.”

Hurururup!

Lee Hyun’s mouth was like a vacuum as he sucked up the noodles. The scene of seasoning covering his lips!

In contrast, Seo-yoon ate the jajangmyeon gently.

“Don’t worry about your clothing while eating. Horororum!”

Lee Hyun made some calculations after eating the jajangmyeon.

“Let’s drink coffee. I’ll pull it out.”

Lee Hyun proudly pulled out some coffee from the vending machine in front of the Chinese restaurant that was free for their customers.

“Cherish any moment when you can save money. Free coffee is the romance of workers. In the past, I was really envious of workers.”

Seo-yoon tilted her head in confusion.

“What?”

“A group can eat at a restaurant, the meal will be paid with their company’s credit card and they can have free coffee on the way out. It would be nice to be an old person who can have free meals thanks to the pension.”

“.....”

Seo-yoon had a sharp premonition.

She knew everything regarding Lee Hyun’s nature. He hardly ever talked about his past. It felt a little strange that he was telling a story about his past but she pretended not to notice.

“Do you want to go on a hike after eating?”

“Hike?”

“There is a mountain over there!”

Lee Hyun pointed to the mountain that was in the centre of the city. The stairs were a bit steep but many citizens climbed to the peak of the mountain to decorate it.

Lee Hyun and Seo-yoon climbed up the stairs. There were ordinary lovers and people playing rock paper scissors.

‘There is no point in playing rock paper scissors because no money can be made.’

‘It is okay to slowly climb the stairs.’

They leisurely climbed the stairs for 30 minutes before reaching the top! On top was a memorial where lovers and visitors would tie locks to the wire mesh.

Lee Hyun headed to a location that overlooked the city and said.

“In the old days, I would sometimes come to this mountain.”

Lee Hyun’s voice was low as he recalled the past.

“It wasn’t to observe the scenery or exercise like the others. I was just envious.”

“Did you envy the people who came to this mountain with their family and friends?”

Despite it being a weekday, there were many families visiting the mountain. There were street vendors selling cotton candy and drinks.

However, Lee Hyun’s gaze was turned towards the buildings in this city.

“No. I just looked down at the city and felt envious.”

“.....”

“There are many houses and buildings. All the people living at home, going to work or school and living their dreams. Wasn’t I envious of how they lived?”

Lee Hyun had these thoughts while looking at the beautiful night scenery of the city from the mountains. The lights were turned on and sharp even when rain fell so he could assume that people were doing something.

He was hit by the rain on the bleak mountain and felt envious of the ordinary people eating delicious food in their warm houses.

The world was absolutely not equal. Despite working hard their whole lives, an old man might only earn a few thousand won or a grandmother had to sell vegetables at the market.

“It felt like some things that people naturally experienced in the world were too miraculous for me. The lights looked too good so I was jealous. At that moment, I had the idea that I really wanted to make a lot of money. Having a lot of money seemed like a really good thing.”

One of his early lessons was that money was needed if he wanted to live.

“Every time I came to this mountain, I was filled with thoughts

about wanting to live like an ordinary person. Now, I've achieved my dream to some extent. It isn't a lot for retirement but it is money that I earned."

Tears flowed from Seo-yoon's clear eyes.

It was evening so the sky had darkened. Lee Hyun watched the city's lights turn on as he turned his head. Seo-yoon crying next to him was much prettier than the city lights at night.

'If this was a drama then a kiss would occur now. Well, no. I'm not going to. I'm not a nice person like a character in a drama. I shouldn't misunderstand the tears. Those tears are just filled with pity for me.'

He thought that he understood Seo-yoon's tears.

'It is similar to when people who eat rice with silver spoons feel sorry for those eating with wooden chopsticks. For example, when a dog is wandering the streets. So they cry.'

All of a sudden he assumed the worse!

'This world is money and power. She is pretty and has money so why would she like someone like me? She will just leave after she meets a great man who is handsome and is educated.'

This was the current fear in Lee Hyun's heart that was associated with Seo-yoon.

Unless there were in a position similar to each other, someday she would have no choice but to move on. It was fine if he wasn't familiar with them. But the emptiness of someone that grew large in his mind suddenly leaving really scared him.

'Someday we will be parted. Damn. If I knew this then I wouldn't have bought the sweet and sour pork.'

Lee Hyun said bleakly.

"Let's go down."

It was completely night when they reached the streets. There were people watching a movie or drinking on dates but those passing by were looking at Seo-yoon.

"Look over there. Is that a doll or a person?"

"She is immensely beautiful. But why is she crying?"

Seo-yoon's looks meant she received attention when she was just standing on the street. Her face and simple yet luxurious clothes meant that men couldn't help noticing her.

It was common for the men that saw her to freeze and wonder if she was a dream or not. Despite having their girlfriends beside them, the sight of Seo-yoon crying was enough to make them

willing to give a kidney transplant.

Lee Hyun and Seo-yoon arrived at the street next to their house. It might be embarrassing but this was sometimes called the special course at the end of a short date.

“Well, shall we go in?”

“Yes.”

“Then I will see you again tomorrow.”

“.....”

Lee Hyun and Seo-yoon continued standing and looking in each other's eyes without saying anything.

‘The moment a girl's eyes is at its prettiest. It looks like that moment right now.’

She just stopped crying so the eyes with well-drawn make up were slightly swollen. The eyes of the other person was clear and beautiful.

Lee Hyun felt something strange about this atmosphere.

‘Why does it feel like I will be kissed again?’

Seo-yoon's eyes and expression didn't seem to deny it. Rather, it felt like her expression was waiting for it.

‘And I saw something similar before.’

During the time he had been a statue in Royal Road due to a quest, Seo-yoon had unexpectedly kissed him.

Lee Hyun remembered that moment because he had been logged in. He had always been curious about whether Seo-yoon knew he was that statue or not when she kissed it.

That past event suddenly came to mind again today.

Seo-yoon closed her eyes.

‘A kiss. It can't be. Isn't this strange? Yet the atmosphere seems to somehow fit it. I'll be honest. I am willing. However, the important thing is determining the other person's mood. I can't just kiss her if it is ambiguous.’

Lee Hyun had many thoughts as he looked at Seo-yoon's face. His mind was a whirlwind of thoughts.

1 minute passed!

The two people were standing there in a static state. If a spoon

with rice on it floated into their mouths then they would just automatically chew.

Yoo Byung-jin was watching the monitor and found Lee Hyun wandering the streets.

“Hoh, he seems to be going outside after being in his house every day.”

The artificial intelligence mainly observed key figures on the Versailles Continent but the robots and drones meant it could even observe people in real life.

“The wind is blowing....”

Then he discovered Seo-yoon walking alongside Lee Hyun.

“He came out for a date. That female is the one who helped him on the quest. Really beautiful. She could be called a top notch beauty. I don’t know how a woman like that became friendly with him.”

Yoo Byung-jin felt a deep sense of grief as the two of them headed to a Chinese restaurant. He ate in an extremely ugly manner and he didn’t even hold her hand as they walked up the stairs to the top of the mountain!

“Even a guy like that has a girlfriend.”

A heartfelt lament emerged. The atmosphere was ripe when he talked about his hard life on top of the mountain but he didn't do anything.

“T-that dumb bastard!”

Yoo Byung-jin truly couldn't believe it.

Although he was dull, a certain amount of flexibility meant that Lee Hyun would succeed with his love life. Yet he acted like they were complete strangers and didn't even console Seo-yoon when she was crying.

There was no need to sugar-coat it as this was the optimum timing for a kiss. Even an awkward hug wouldn't be so bad.

“He doesn't miss a single change during battle but this guy is really frustrating right now.”

Yoo Byung-jin felt like exploding with killer rage. Then there was a strange atmosphere again just before they entered their houses.

Seo-yoon was standing with her eyes closed.

“Why is he just standing there, that guy!”

However, Lee Hyun couldn't hear so he didn't take any action.

Lee Hyun and Seo-yoon stood there for 1 minute but it felt like 10 minutes for Yoo Byung-jin.

“This can’t be. Versailles.”

-Yes, please speak.

“The street lamps are too bright so please turn them down. Do it for all the streetlights in the neighbourhood. They might be surprised if it all turns off at once so do it gradually.”

-Your command has been received. Forced intervention of the city system has been completed. After 2 seconds.

The street lights in the streets surrounding Lee Hyun and Seo-yoon gradually turned off. The street lights turning off brought back the darkness. The street lamp shining above Lee Hyun and Seo-yoon also turned off.

Nevertheless, the moon had risen and the lights from the signboards meant they could see each other’s faces.

Lee Hyun still didn’t move from his position.

“Even this is insufficient! That guy....”

Yoo Byung-jin had his own pride so he was upset. At this point, it felt like he would vomit out rice if it was fed to him.

“Play romantic music from a nearby shop at a volume that they can hear.”

-A private system is difficult to access with force. However, the observation robots have a sound system.

“How many observation robots are there?”

-Currently there are 32 unmanned aircrafts and 22 small robots around them.

Lee Hyun played a large role in Royal Road so Yoo Byung-jin had many robots observing him.

“Spread the music!”

An unmanned aircraft flying above Lee Hyun’s head came down closer in the darkness. In addition, small robots disguised as birds, insects and rocks started playing sound. It began with orchestra music and soon surpassed it!

Despite the 3D surround sound, Lee Hyun didn’t move and kept staring at Seo-yoon’s face.

“Is he sleeping right now?”

-No. His heart is beating faster.

He isn't asleep. Lee Hyun was standing there staring at Seo-yoon's face.

No man would dislike a beautiful woman. But all the memories of the time they spent together rushed through his head.

An impulsive desire entered his mind.

Lee Hyun slowly approached Seo-yoon and kissed her.

★★

Splash. Cheoooool seok!

Waves climbed up as they bumped against the reef. Grains of sand were busy receiving the sunlight.

After the completion of the quest, Weed returned from the ghost state to his original body. Of course, the sword and armour of Thor was still missing!

The big blue light in front of him was probably the portal back to his original world.

“Now I can go back.”

Weed didn't have any lingering attachment to the warring period that would prevent him from returning to his original world.

The sculptural lifeforms had received his will and the destiny of the Pallos Empire was fixed. It was slightly disappointing that he took care of the Embinyu Church in a secluded area so there wouldn't be a huge impact on history.

But he had completed the quest and it would leave an impression on the heartstrings of the viewers.

'The toy industry is booming. In particular, I should reap some income from the figurines of the dragon and the black bear.'

Every action was calculated! He had somewhat guessed the current location. He could return to the Central Continent to act as the Great Emperor but it would be a waste.

"But I am a little sad."

The love story between Nodulle and Hilderun left a lingering feeling inside him.

He thought about his parents.

'My father was a good person and truly caring.'

Every time he returned from work, he would play with Lee Hyun.

He created toys to give to Lee Hyun and even spent time together in front of the television. He had lots of friends and the only problem was that he liked to drink a little bit.

Lee Hyun's mother had graduated from a good university. Working and childcare meant she didn't have time to focus on the household.

After his mother and father were gone, the rest of his memories started to fade and disappear.

Not all the memories were like that. Nodulle and Hilderun's story had pulled out Weed's buried memories.

'If they were still alive and in love with each other then I could have another younger sibling.'

His father and mother also had a love story.

His father had a part time job at a coffee shop where his mother came to study. He asked for a date with a letter and they started to meet.

In fact his mother said to Weed.

-It was okay but there were a few old-fashioned aspects. He was a man that didn't like to show any unguarded moments. It took him 2 months to ask for a date. Marriage? If I waited for him to propose then I would die of old age. Don't become like that in the future.

It would be great if he had a happy love like Nodulle and Hilderun and his parents.

“I’m glad I’m not my father. Yesterday I even kissed her.”

Weed sighed deeply.

“However, more people should know about and remember Nodulle and Hilderun. I succeeded in the quest under his name but I feel like our experiences are different. I have to make a sculpture for them.”

He felt like leaving behind a work as a sculptor before returning to his original world.

Weed looked around for materials and suitable rocks in the near vicinity.

‘If I make it out of sand then a storm will just break it down. But it wouldn’t make sense if the sculpture is far away in the mountain.’

Nodulle and Hilderun had lived a happy life by the sea. The sculpture should be built around the sea where they last lived.

“Will it be hard to move the rocks from another place? No, I should find worthy materials nearby. Sculpture materials can be

found anywhere.”

Weed walked around the sandy beach and Nodulle’s house. He could feel the landscape vividly as he walked. Even the threat of a harsh world didn’t interrupt the happiness of the lovers.

Weed’s eyes turned towards the sea.

“That one!”

A large rock in the sea was withstanding the wild waves!

In general, sculptures tended to be carved in convenient locations with no obstacles but that wasn’t always good. The sculpture carved from the towering rock in the sea fit the life of adversity that Nodulle and Hilderun experienced.

“Then let’s do it.”

Weed immediately jumped into the sea. After a few steps, his body was almost completely submerged as it was a surprisingly deep sea!

The rock he was aiming at was 50 metres away from the sandy beach. The white foam of the waves continuously broke over the rock that was higher than the height of a person.

“Let’s do it. It isn’t impossible!”

Kang. Kang. Kang.

He might have been known as the Great Emperor of the desert but he always carried sculpting tools with him. He obtained some of the best products from looting kingdoms. Anvil and chisels made of diamonds that were plucked from a blacksmith!

It wasn't a convenient place to carve a sculpture as the waves made the rock wet and water entered his eyes.

"I can't make a mistake. I can't get the materials back."

He touched the rock to check the strength of the delicate sculpture. The hard rock had endured thousands of years of waves but he had to be careful as he dug deeper. He also needed to get rid of seaweed, starfish and thick moss entangled on the rock while working!

Nodulle and Hilderun were better looking when they were young but he chose to portray them as older grandparents. This was because that was the moment when their happiness reached its peak.

A sculpture of an elderly couple holding hands while watching the distant sea!

The work took him 10 hours before it was completed. The progress was fast because he was constantly drawing out his

emotions while working on it.

-Please set the name of the new sculpture.

“The name should be Nodulle and Hilderun.”

-Nodulle and Hilderun is correct?

“That’s right.”

-Masterpiece! Nodulle and Hilderun has been completed!

A sculpture that reflects the forces of time and nature.

The work of a sculptor that rewrote the history of the continent, a special work has been created. A sculpture that immortalizes a great hero.

When someone finds out about the adventures of Nodulle, historical value will increase by 3.

Artistic Value: 4,392

Special Options: Anyone who sees Nodulle and Hilderun will have their health and mana recovery increased by 34% for three days.

Sailing skills will increase by 21%.

‘Blessing of the Indomitable Warrior’ will be granted.

Monsters within a 4km radius can’t pre-emptively attack.

Those who discover this work will have their Luck stat permanently increased by 2.

The effect doesn’t overlap with other sculptures.

Current number of Masterpieces created: 25

-The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

-The skill proficiency of Handicraft has improved.

-The proficiency of Time Sculpting has increased to Beginner level 2.

The composition and durability of a sculpture will be preserved for a long time, even in a bad environment.

Nodulle and Hilderun gave birth to a masterpiece sculpture.

It was like Weed expected.

Currently, Weed's sculpting skill proficiency was advanced level 9, 94.1%.

He seldom made sculptures during the warring period because he needed to complete the final secret sculpting technique quest. The masterpiece sculpture was a success but there was still a bit more to go before he could master sculpting.

“But I am still a little empty. Nodulle and Hilderun was a masterpiece.... I am still lacking.”

Weed stayed there for 20 more days to make more sculptures. The life of a sculptor was to make difficult sculptures but this was a big operation.

It was a long and difficult operation and he didn't spare even the bones and scales obtained from the final battle with the dragon.

“Now I can leave without any regrets.”

After finishing his task, Weed returned to his original world through the portal with no regrets.

There were no changes to the sculptures on the seashore when he left. The sandy white beach was shining and the sculptures weren't noticeable.

But if people gazed at the rough waves on the horizon then they could see the sculpture of Nodulle and Hilderun.

The view of the sea and sculpture was excellent but no other work was visible. Weed's other sculptures were below the clear, blue sea.

The coral reefs in the deep sea.

Sculptures ranged from a boy running around the narrow streets of Borota Island to a couple riding a raft. Wandering the continent, fighting, living and running away. The battle against the Embinyu Church was engraved on the seabed.

Nodulle and Hilderun. A luxurious statue of the two lovers was made with dragon bones, scales and mithril. The sculptures all showed their biography.

The title of the seabed sculptures was 'The Happy Couple who Missed the Sea.'

Although the lives of the two people were injured by waves, beneath the surface the sea was calm and small, colourful fish were swimming. The effect of Time Sculpting meant that it would last indefinitely with no natural damage occurring.

The magnum opus Treasures of the Sea was recorded as soon as it was completed. It would be hard for humans to easily find them.

-Look at this.

-Omo omo, that is so cool.

But rumours about the sculptures in the sea were spread by mermaids.

-The human world is really scary.

-But isn't it great?

The mermaids visited the sculptures every day and fish swam past it.



“I saw the end of a fun adventure. Isn't that right Versailles?”

-The answer to your question can vary depending on the criteria of fun. Currently the performance of Weed's quest has exceeded the target by 279%. The probability of producing these results was only 0.003%....

“Stop!”

Yoo Byung-jin didn't want to hear any more.

Weed had succeeded in a close to impossible mission. The use of the dragon was critical to his victory but that wasn't necessarily the reason.

In Nodulle's original quest, Ahellun had sacrificed himself to seal the dragon. However, the Chaos Dragon wasn't sealed and the process to defeat it was really unexpected.

Yoo Byung-jin reasoned it out from Weed's standpoint.

"I'm looking forward to seeing what miracles he can cause in the future. A smart head like mine is a disadvantage in this area."

In the end, praising himself!

—

Even the artificial intelligence had no words.

Weed's success had really caused Yoo Byung-jin to feel mean and grumpy. But now the adventure was over and Weed had to return to reality.

"It was fun but the lost opportunities and costs from this quest was too big. He can catch up if given enough time but.... The successor most likely to obtain my assets and authority is still Bardray."

Weed had obtained the final secret sculpting technique but the damage was tremendous.

He used Sculpture Resurrection in Roderick's Labyrinth and created 13 sculptural lifeforms in the desert. In the beginning, that loss of level from Sculptural Bestowal could be made up but it was a fatal blow now that he was over level 400.

Once Weed returned to his original world, it was decided that he would drop close to 20 levels. That would be a huge disadvantage when fighting the forces of the Haven Empire.

Time Sculpting required a lot of training to be fully utilized but the threat to the north was urgent right now.

Yoo Byung-jin checked and there was a difference of 90 levels between Weed and Bardray. The sculpting and production skills would be help but there was a huge diversity in their combat skills. The final technique Time Sculpting also couldn't be used freely right now.

If they fought right now then Bardray would win.

Yoo Byung-jin was aware of everything happening in the Versailles Continent through the artificial intelligence.

The Hermes Guild had dispatched a large number of assassination agents to the north. They were assassinating the high level users in the north.

High level users banned from the Central Continent were given a chance to return to their homeland and a high position if they betrayed the Grass Porridge Cult.

“I’m grateful for the offer but I refuse. Now I have a settlement in the north.”

“The north will soon be devastated by the Haven Empire. After that, you will only get a harsh rule. Think calmly before choosing the north.”

“I have no other place to go. And there are many people I know....”

“The Hermes Guild can give you many things. This chance won’t come again. Only those selected can enter the Hermes Guild.”

The power of friendly and loyalty always collapsed before money and power. In some cases, they yelled and protested but eventually joined the Hermes Guild.

They also actively approached northern users in an attempt to buy them.

The Hermes Guild was horrible but they had established a long term plan early on. Lions were mobilized to devastate and capture the rabbits in the north.

“Weed was a cruel tyrant in Continent of Magic.”

“People have the power to change. Now Weed isn’t like that.”

Rumours continued to spread despite not having a large effect. The northern users were full of unyielding spirit and the desire to fight.

Merchants suspended trade with the north and closed their main base of business, harming commerce. Even so, a vast amount of money was invested into culture, architecture and art.

The war was also eliminating the north’s the driving force between the north’s development.

Lafaye who led the Hermes Guild lacked any heroic traits. But he knew how to diligently perform his role. The north was a seed that could later threaten the Haven Empire so he needed to dry it up.

“I have to meet Bardray at least once.”

-Shall I prepare to conduct the tests for a successor?

All the information about Bardray had been prepared through first hand research. If Yoo Byung-jin received the help of the AI then Bardray wouldn’t even notice meeting him.

“No, not yet. This might be an obvious conclusion but I want to

wait until the end. I will watch Weed's last hurrah."

Chapter 9: The Return Of The King

The place where Weed reappeared was the Earth Palace in the Arpen Kingdom.

The palace built high in the mountains in the form of a crown! The piled up stones were in various colours and large and small buildings around the palace had already been completed.

Ddiring!

-Additional compensation for achieving the goal of the final secret sculpting quest has been received.

A conqueror that swept through the Central Continent from the southern desert like a sandstorm.

You led a group of seven in order to defeat the dragon and the Embinyu Church.

-Bonus time compensation has been given for this quest.

* Time Bonus: Great Emperor Weed of the desert has disappeared a long time ago.

The kingdoms of the Central Continent were eager to erase the shameful traces of the Pallos Empire. Now it is unknown but those

that follow the traces will be able to find the heritage left behind by the Great Emperor.

Those who discover it will have an opportunity to reflect on a 'past life.'

Embracing the special memories will give you experience and expertise.

-Somewhere in the Desert of Tranquillity is a quest to obtain the desert king Weed's skills and equipment.

The desert warrior profession is required and completing the quest will integrate the desert tribes to form a kingdom.

Apart from users, NPCs in the desert region can also proceed on this quest.

There will be a number of threats to your life during the quest.

The reward for completing the quest will be very large.

The desert warriors look up to the Great Emperor so none of them will give up this opportunity.

Once a NPC finishes the quest, they will show a certain amount of respect to you. But that show of loyalty will only be brief and they will betray you unless you show them the power of freedom of a

desert warrior.

-You have arrived at the Earth Palace.

The ruling ability of the King of the Arpen Kingdom will increase by 349% in the Earth Palace.

The influence on residents have increased.

Charisma, leadership, dignity, courage, honour and faith have increased by 120.

Within the scope of the Earth Palace, fame and honour will increase to the maximum.

The application of a time bonus!

This was evidence that Weed had left a larger trace on the world. If his forgotten glory returned then it would be great.

“There is still a deficit. A lot of effort was used to fully complete the quest. More cash would be better.”

The king could receive enormous privileges in the Earth Palace. The users without enough fame might be rejected or not be granted quests by residents but Weed's treatment was completely different.

Weed murmured in a small voice.

“The world is really unfair. Well, it is okay since I can’t change it.”

Others received preferential treatment but they lived a proud life.

A lot of users were busy running around the Earth Palace. The users wanted to use the facilities and shops inside the palace. The merchants were also selling things at their stalls.

“How far have the Haven Empire come?”

“They have passed the Nur Plains and the Grass Porridge Cult are protecting the area.”

“Then it will probably take about three days?”

“Yes. Once they break through the Nur Plains, they can quickly advance here.”

While Weed was busy making sculptures for 20 days, the Haven Empire was on a winning streak.

Players were flocking like bees to the front of the Earth Palace. The unstable hope of the northern users!

-Weed the God of War is our king.

-The situation will change once our king returns.

-The history of the world was changed by Weed. The dragon also lost its life. The Haven Empire isn't his opponent.

The northern users talked like this. Naturally the Haven Empire wasn't silent.

-Weed is a loser. He already fought us and lost his life. Bardray is unbeatable.

-It is just a coincidence that the dragon died on the quest. The Haven Empire is mighty enough to occupy an entire continent. This shall be proven with the devastated north.

Weed ignored the words of the northern users.

“My destiny means that something always happens. Let's see, Stats Window!”

Character Name Weed Alignment God's Warrior

Level 419 Profession Legendary Moonlight Sculptor

Title World-changing Sculptor Fame 192,912

Health 54,830 Mana 23,394

Strength 1,557 Agility 1,178

Vitality 291 Wisdom 402

Intelligence 484 Fighting Spirit 611

Endurance 412 Perseverance 1,230

Art 3,329 Charisma 664

Leadership 932 Luck 255

Faith 711+435 Charm 811+30

Resilience 621 Dignity 519

Concentration 303 Courage 392

Honour 789 Insight 1

Affinity to Nature: 1,829

Attack 9,102 Defense 2,293

Magic Resistance

Fire 49% Water 46%

Earth 48% Black Magic 44%

- + All stats have an additional 20 points added.
- + The Art stat is granted an additional 80 points.
- + All stats will increase by 30% on a moonlit night.
- + Specialized items.
- + All production skills can be learnt up to the master level. Preferential treatment will be applied to the skills of all items manufactured with Smelting. You can learn the best skills.
- + Unusual sculptures or sculptures with high artistic value will increase your fame.
- + All stats have been raised by 312 points due to sculptures, production skills, combat experience and quests.

Level 419.

He had raised his level while hunting in the warring period with Seo-yoon. He was level 438 when he arrived at Boden village and was cursed by the Portu King.

But he gave life to sculptures in the desert and lost a lot of levels.

His adventures in the desert was an incredible success but that all disappeared after he returned to his original world.

“In the meantime, Bardray has been on many adventures and obtained levels, stats and equipment.”

In addition to Bardray, his Royal Guards and the guild have already become stronger.

‘Bardray is the leading person on the Versailles Continent so it wouldn’t be strange for him to be level 500. Or he might have found some good hunting grounds.’

Weed’s rapid hunting and stat gains during his adventure was so fast that it was rare to find a rival.

Gaining levels quickly from hunting was a big advantage for him. Other people suffered for 10 hours hunting monsters while Weed could gain the same levels in half the time.

But that was a story for the future. Right now, the damage

received from the quest was too large.

‘Bardray would just run circles around me. I need to steadily hunt before I can have a one on one battle with him.’

The users around Weed were still chatting.

“The desert king Weed will appear and kill Bardray with one swing of his sword.”

“.....”

“Hey, that is unnecessary. It will be all over once he summons a meteor.”

“Isn’t it? The Haven Empire will lose if a meteor is summoned above their heads.”

Weed wanted to tell them the truth.

The meteor summon was like an allowance a child receives from their mother and he no longer had the scroll. Time Sculpting took a long down to learn so it was like he was broke right now. It was like losing all the good parts in an apricot.

If he was still the Great Emperor of the desert then all the monsters would rush into their graves.

“Well, it’s not the worst thing. I have a lot of properties. Including cowardice, persistence and dirty tricks.”

Weed walked through the grounds of the Earth Palace. The Earth Palace spanned seven mountain peaks so important buildings were accessible.

The palace of the king was located on the highest mountain in the middle. Originally goblins and dwarves lived on this mountain but now people called it the mountain of adventure and prosperity.

Those who weren’t nobles or people with significant achievements weren’t allowed to enter so the palace was being protected by NPC knights. They were knights from Vent Castle that survived the fall of the Niflheim Empire. Morata’s knights grew to over 1,000 people.

Weed had given a command before going to the warring period of the army of the Arpen Kingdom didn’t participate in combat at all.

Normally the king would leave command of the military to nobles but as it was a fledgling kingdom, nobles didn’t exist at all. The king had appointed key positions to his sculptural lifeforms.

“Stop! You can’t pass through here. The only ones permitted into the palace of the Arpen Kingdom is....heok! Welcome!”

The knights wearing armour hurriedly got out of the way in order to let Weed pass.

“Thank you.”

“It is an unspeakable honour to meet you.”

Weed walked towards the Royal Palace.

The main gateways and knights were arranged at 10 metre intervals. They placed their swords on their chest as Weed got closer.

“Come see the holy person.”

“Worship the person who brought this land to us!”

The attitude of the knights were extremely polite. All the knights had sworn fealty to the king. Many knights were betrayed, insulted, criticized or treated badly by kings who didn't care about fame and honour.

But in Weed's case, the northern users highly respected him and showed him absolute loyalty. Even the free knights voluntarily migrated here. Users who were knights and belonged to the Arpen Kingdom would benefit from high fame and honour with soldiers.

The knights that Weed encountered on the way to the Royal Palace all walked behind him. Once there were 30 knights, the users started looking at it with strange eyes.

“What, another event?”

“I don’t know. Did an adventurer discover treasure somewhere?”

In the north, adventure was actively encouraged and there were always new things happening in the city. Those who returned to the kingdom with a huge treasure would be escorted by knights.

Even those that killed monsters worsening the peace would be appointed as a knight or a minor barony. They would be appointed to rule small villages or have their intimacy with knights raised. Those that returned to the palace with glorious actions would have the knights come running.

However, this time every knight was greeting the person with extreme respect. Once that number went over 50, the users became larger and more excitement spread.

“That reminds me, those mediocre starter clothing....”

“Weed the God of War made that type of attire popular. And that popularity has passed so people haven’t been wearing common clothing recently.”

“I also feel like it is time for him to come back. Is this really the return of the king?”

“I will tell me friends. This is really the jackpot!”

“Look at his appearance. The immaculate skin, clear eyes and commonplace face.”

Charm was a stat that was obtained during his adventures and it made small changes to his skin. Those that wore expensive clothes and ate pork belly at the market would have a faint feeling of oiliness from their face.

“Look at the attitude of the knights. It is certain. In addition, he is being sandwiched among them.”

“Ah, I see.”

The users followed behind Weed like the knights. The number of people grew larger like a snowball rolling as they notified their friends and word quickly spread through the northern continent.

It even spread to people hunting in the dungeons, exploring unusual terrain or those protecting the north from the Haven Empire.

“I’m sorry, I have to stop hunting and return to the village.”

“Why? What will happen to the people remaining if the warrior leaves? A complete nuisance.”

“If there isn’t a convincing reason then you won’t be accepted on the next hunt.”

“That....Weed-nim is back. I want to see Weed-nim.”

“Really?”

“Is that true?”

“I heard it from my friend. He is quite a reputable merchant and dealt with Weed-nim in the past. His eyes confirmed it from the Earth Palace directly.”

“You should’ve told us earlier. Let’s all go see Weed-nim at the Earth Palace.”

“What about the hunt?”

“What are you talking about? Do you think hunting is important now?”

It only took 3~4 minutes to spread the news among all the northern users. People talked to their friends who told their other friends.

It also hit the Grass Porridge Cult members who were fighting against the Haven Empire on the Nur Plains.

“Waaaaaah!”

“Hooray!”

“He has come!”

The Haven Empire was puzzled by their sudden shout.

“What are those guys playing at?”

“They are cheering. I don’t know why they are rejoicing before the massacre.”

“Breaking news. Weed the God of War is back.”

“What?”

Weed’s return was quickly announced in the Hermes Guild’s information network. Lafaye and the leaders of the guild rushed to meet after hearing news about Weed.

“He finally showed up.”

“This is the end of the war but resistance is growing again.”

“Prepare the military. In particular, we can never know what Weed’s plan is so be careful of a strike.”

“Should we double the escort troops?”

“Increase it by 3 times when the supply troops depart.”

The leaders of the Hermes Guild weren't negligent at all. No matter how overwhelming their army was, Weed could never be ignored.

In the early days, Lafaye had thought only two or three rounds of combat would be needed to conquer the north.

‘Once they feel the difference in strength a few times, they will be easily defeated and trampled on. There is no one on the Versailles Continent that can rival the power of the Haven Empire.’

But the north kept fighting against the dominance of the Haven Empire. Their plans already went sour.

The dramatic scenes of Weed struggling on the battlefield was constantly being played on the television. His actions gave the people of the Versailles Continent hope and courage. Therefore the resistance in the north became increasingly heavier and now Weed had returned.

The leaders of the Hermes Guild couldn't ignore the power of Weed and the north.

Bardray who was preparing to fight Abyss Knight Van Hawk also heard the news.

“Weed has appeared.”

‘Of course he would come back.’

Bardray quietly pulled out his sword.

The best equipment and hunting grounds of the Haven Empire was provided to him. All the best weapons, armour and accessories.

In the past he had been lacking a lot but he learned from watching Weed. Hunting through the one point attack or risking his life with a drastic thrust towards a large monster.

‘I am certain to win the fight and he won’t win even if he uses his tricks.’

Bardray’s heart had fallen when he saw Weed succeed in his quest. He was afraid of the final secret sculpting technique received as a reward for the quest.

‘I hope it is a pure art skill.’

He could no longer boast about his win in the past. Bardray decided to kill Weed again in order to demonstrate the difference.



Weed walked forward without any hesitation while the users and knights followed. If he took a step back then the shouts of the users could be heard.

“Weed the God of War!”

“Weed-nim, is it really you? Please nod once if it is correct!”

“I wanted to see you. You must remember me, the adventurer Redul!”

“Welcome back. The Merchants Guild is gathering in Bingryong Square.”

“Weed-nim, the other day Goldman borrowed 2 gold from me and still hasn’t returned it!”

The cheers of the users! Almost all the users in the vicinity of the Earth Palace was making a fuss. The escort knights blocked their access but the amount of people was enough for him to feel it.

‘This building is robust and meticulously built.’

This was the first time Weed visited the Earth Palace so his eyes scanned every nook and cranny. He was looking for problems like

cracks, leaks, wide joints or any inferior workmanship!

The architects had voluntarily participated in building the palace so such a thing couldn't happen. Usually the architects were given a certain amount of money to build it in a quick period so complaints would build up.

The architects in the north had a relatively low level but advanced technical skills. Once their construction skills increased, benefits could be obtained such as minimizing the area of the pillars or creating materials that would decrease the weight.

The palace was built based on their wealth of construction experience. The architects with low skills placed stones on the road and even created flower beds. This work was under his name so no mistakes would be tolerated.

The Arpen Kingdom's Royal Palace was started with 2 million gold but was completed due to the contribution and participation of the users.

Weed stood in front of the stairs going up to the Royal Palace. Hundreds of Royal Knights wearing gold and silver plated armour standing on their stairs pulled out their swords.

“Your Majesty.”

Cheok!

The swords were placed at their chest and they bowed.

“It is really Weed-nim!”

“Amazing! Really amazing!”

The power of the kingdom’s knights was enough that monsters would turn and flee. Due to the culture and commerce of the kingdom, he had committed to expanding the military to police the border and secure peace.

When it wasn’t in a war with other kingdoms, the knights would sweep up monsters and bandits. They ensured security from thieves and fought alongside users to save villages threatened by monsters. The population explosion in the frontier villages made it difficult for the knights and soldiers to combat.

Therefore his army wasn’t at an embarrassing level. There were multiple kingdoms on the Versailles Continent but it had proudly established itself. However, it was still unstable and in danger of disappearing in front of the Haven Empire’s invasion.

Weed climbed the stairs of the palace through the path that the knights had opened. The users shouts became louder every time he climbed the stairs.

‘What the hell...am I a person deserving of that much respect?’

“Weed-nim!”

‘I’m pleased that they are acting like this. The Arpen Kingdom is mine and they are my people.’

“Waaaaaah!”

‘It should be fine to raise the taxes. What time would be better, how about the day after tomorrow?’

The spirit of a dictator that connected the cheers with a tax increase!

“Welcome Your Majesty.”

The knights opened the front door once Weed arrived at the entrance of the palace.

The interior view of the palace! The Arpen Kingdom couldn’t be called frugal but the inside was filled with colourful decorations, gold and precious jewels.

It was a huge space for the king made from the enormous tax income of local cities. Of course, this wasn’t a luxury but necessary to deal with users.

Users with production skills made jewellery with gems and as adventurers spread out, relics of the Niflheim Empire continued to be discovered. There were also quality products that had gathered

dust for many years in the warehouse of high end stores.

Weed walked in the centre of the red carpet that had been spread out.

Beads of light were floating like living organisms. ‘The Eyes of the Niflheim Empire’ had been excavated by adventurers in the north. They flew around the palace in high places like birds and seeing them would increase governance of his territory by 4%.

At the minimum, a king was required to use it so the general users donated it.

Ddirring!

-The Royal Palace of the Arpen Kingdom has been completed.

Do you want to designate the Royal Palace as the capital of the Arpen Kingdom?

“I will allow it.”

-The capital of the Arpen Kingdom has been determined.

Important national policy will be decided on in the Royal Palace.

You can recruit the required positions for this country.

You can check the status of each city and exert influence in the internal affairs section.

The king can appoint nobles and lords here and give them unique privileges.

The nobles and lords of the Arpen Kingdom can gain fame and honour appropriate to their position.

It is possible for those with meritorious service to the kingdom to establish a clan. The loyalty will pass from generation to generation and the successor will have excellent pedigree.

National fame has increased by 34.

The diplomacy capacity of the kingdom has increased.

Loyalty of the residents will increase by 43%.

The nation's pride has increased, improving the maximum loyalty of the residents by 20%.

All cities and villages under the reign of the Arpen Kingdom will pay tribute in order to celebrate the completion of the palace.

Royal Knights came along with him. They shouted on one knee.

“Your Majesty, many people will rejoice that you returned after a long time. The people suffering from an invasion from the outside are feeling anxious. Can we light the beacon to inform people that Your Majesty is alive?”

Ddirring!

-The King has appeared in the Arpen Kingdom

The Royal Knights are delighted that you have appeared and asked to notify the other cities. If you accept then the other cities will know that the King has appeared.

Level of Difficulty: F

There were numerous decisions he needed to make as king that were simple. Weed easily gave permission without worrying about it.

“Light the beacon to announce that I am here.”

“Yes, I understand.”

Soon red, blue and yellow smoke started rising from the peaks of the Earth Palace into the sky. And then smoke could be seen from other mountain peaks.

On the wide plains, messengers rose horses to mountains that weren't in the line of sight and they lit their beacons. By the time it was evening, smoke was blowing across the entire Arpen Kingdom.

The news that Weed arrived spread all over the Arpen Kingdom.

The broadcasting stations quickly informed those in Royal Road who didn't know about it.

The armed forces of the Haven Empire were marching towards the Earth Palace. And King Weed of the Arpen Kingdom had arrived on the premises of the Earth Palace.

On the brink of a crisis! The Haven Empire that had taken over the entire Central Continent were moving a colossal amount of troops into the north.

Despite Weed's adventures being like a myth, the majority of users had the opinion that his wings would be broken.

Once Weed arrived at the Royal Palace, there were users who requested discussions with him. They were local lords and well known users in the Grass Porridge Cult.

But the architect called Pavo was the one most urgent to contact him.

Pavo was different from the time he wore several layers of thick clothes to protect against the freezing cold during the Northern

Expedition. Since the time Pavo had been registered as his friend, he had become a great architect in the north.

-We need to meet in order to discuss how to stop the Haven Empire.

“I understand. Come here.”

Several architects including Pavo arrived through a magician’s teleportation. They hadn’t changed clothes and were still wearing dusty overalls.

“You came back safely.”

Pavo grabbed Weed’s hand. The other architects were thrilled to meet a celebrity and greet Weed with wide eyes.

“You have really suffered a lot for the north.”

The architects had dedicated themselves to acting for the north. They repaired fortressed and made the walls higher. Despite it not having a big effect, they placed a large role in dragging out the advance of the Haven Empire.

If it wasn’t for them, the Earth Palace might have already been captured.

“There is no time so I will explain it simply. Can you defeat them

if you fight the Haven Empire?”

Pavo asked with penetrating eyes. The 30 architects that came along with him were also showing signs of curiosity.

In fact, every northern user and even the Hermes Guild wanted to know this answer.

If they just looked at the power then it was natural for the Haven Empire to win. But Weed had reversed adverse fights every time. He overcame absolute quests that most people would collapse at just thinking about it.

This time the comparison wasn't simple because it wasn't just a difference in power between users. But they still wondered if Weed had alternative methods to reverse the situation.

Weed energetically replied.

“I can defeat them.”

“Really?”

“Well, maybe.”

“.....”

A mild attitude!

The architects were disappointed but they soon interpreted it in a positive manner.

‘Yes, it is hard to be sure. The situation is so disadvantageous but he confidently replied that there was a chance. It isn’t arrogance or greed.’

‘He isn’t giving up at all. That is a good thing.’

Pavo hesitated before nodding reluctantly.

“If the Haven Empire continues to march like this then it will arrive in two days. The northern users have already tied them up for three days. They have been reinforced so they might buy an extra half day.”

“I expected that.”

Weed’s return meant that the quality of the northern users would change greatly. The mid and high level users that had been waiting now started to move against the Haven Empire. If Weed led the northern users directly then it was rare to find users not willing to fight.

But when looking at the power of both sides, Weed’s magic over the northern users still couldn’t overcome the disadvantage.

“The architects can stop them for at least three days.”

“Really?”

“In addition, we can give them significant damage.”

“Then the reason you came to see me....”

Weed quickly notice it.

“This means there will be some damage to the north.”

“That’s correct. Do you know about the Alkazar Bridge that the Stone Hammer Guild built?”

“The bridge that connects both sides of the Peshil River. The river is quite deep so boats were used to cross it. The creation of the bridge means that travellers and merchants can easily cross.”

Alkazar’s Bridge was a source of great pride for the architects.

The landscape around it made construction difficult and the stones used to build the bridge were demanding materials.

If someone stood on the Alkazar Bridge on a dark night, they would see the beautiful sight of Yusellin village and the stars

reflected in the water.

It was a highly recommended place to visit for travellers.

“The Haven Empire will definitely cross the Alkazar Bridge.”

It would take a significant amount of time if the army had to build rafts or small boats to cross the river. Pavo said he could stop them for three days but Weed was well versed in shipbuilding and thought it would be at least five days.

The siege weapons and supplies were quite heavy. In fact, any type of disruption wouldn't stop them from crossing the river.

Weed already guessed what the architects were trying to say.

“If we do this on purpose then there is no going back.”

“Once they cross the bridge, you want to break the bridge.”

“Ohhhhh!”

Weed's face was surprised like he was a child that dropped candy on the ground. It was awkward because he hadn't expected such excessive reactions!

Pavo's eyebrows twitched.

“You...you knew what I was trying to say.”

“It is okay as long as we live. Breaking a Grand Building must be stressful.”

“That’s correct. It is something that we passionately built and now we have to tear it down with our hands. Especially since people enjoyed the convenience and everyone became happier.”

“Kuhuhuk, the stone pillar that I built in the river.”

“I ate fish and almost died.”

The architects couldn’t help shedding tears!

Weed had been stuck in the desert but he could understand this scene. The feeling of his sculptures being broken.

‘Of course, breaking it is worth it. Time and money was spent on it. But it is better than being ripped off by a customer.’

This was the tough aspect of Weed’s mentality.

“As King of the Arpen Kingdom, I have made a decision. Break it!”

“Really?”

“Of course.”

Thus, it was easily decided that Alkazar Bridge would be broken.

“Just be careful. The Hermes Guild will notice quickly.”

“Hoho, this is the skill of an architect. We might not be able to hunt well but architects can play a role in a war. Our role is comparable to second place.”

“It is certainly an excellent way to stop them. Go ahead.”

“We are ready to start immediately.”

Weed was feeling refreshed at this point. But the architects' next words caused him heartburn.

“As expected. He really isn't an ordinary person.”

“It seems so. A lot of money went into the Alkazar Bridge.”

“Probably most of the Arpen Kingdom's budget flew into it.”

“I don't know the exact amount but it was probably beyond 2 million gold.”

Burururu!

Weed’s eyes started shaking fiercely like he was watching a sad movie.



Dung dang dung dang!

The architects working on the Alkazar Bridge wore black cloaks around their bodies while working.

“Smash it in moderation. The bridge should crumble with as much of the enemy on the bridge as possible.”

“Of course!”

“We will leave the outside and only work on the inside. Only the important pillars acting as support will be cut...”

“I made the calculations so I know better than anyone. Don’t worry about it.”

Alkazar Bridge was teeming with users but thanks to the Haven Empire, the tourists couldn’t be seen at all.

In fact, there were many users on the bridge that were indifferent to the world. Some of those on holiday from their companies would eat and sleep on the bridge. But they had all flocked to the Earth Palace after Weed's return.

The group of architects were able to work discreetly.

“We need to show those fellows a clear example.”

“But to break a building like this, I can't help shedding tears.”

The architects weren't the only ones being active in the north.

The continent's leading architect, Mibullo.

He had taken part in the construction of the Haven Empire's Imperial Palace. However, he didn't like it and sneaked into the north.

The Haven Empire's Imperial Palace was great but it was the prime example of poor construction!

If there was an event where many people gathered in the building then it would come crashing down. If there was heavy rain that soaked the ground then the foundation would sink down. The splendid building spread over a vast area would fall to pieces.

Mibullo had only heard rumours of the north and this was his

first time seeing it.

“It is amazing. Breathtaking. How can the city look so disordered yet lively?”

Morata had a distinctly different flavour from the Central Continent. It was uncomfortable to move through the entrance of the city due to so many merchants.

“Seeling good, expensive products.”

“A premium merchant in Morata offers you greetings. Right now I am selling luxurious products for level 200 users. Come and see. Looking only costs 2 silver!”

It was more common to see merchants sitting lazily in the Central Continent. Players put up shops and hired employees to take care of everything.

However, the northern users were actively engaged in soliciting customers.

But that wasn't all. After disposing of his horse, Mibullo went to be replenish his supplies. And there was so many merchants that it was difficult to see individual users.

Fruit, fish, iron ore, food, hunting tools, crockery, weapons, armour, magic items, and items needed for quests.

There were many people walking in and out of Bingryong Square. The remains of the small village Morata was developed from still remained.

The Grand Buildings erected as landmarks of the city, the Tower of Light, Goddess of Freya Statue and the Art Centre were all attractions.

A city filled with art, culture, commercial development and the laughter of its people! In spite of the Haven Empire's invasion, Morata was still bustling with people.

"I am a novice just starting. Where can I go work to earn money?"

"There is a part time job polishing apples at the market."

"Hit the scarecrow. Patience and hard work are the basics! You will be able to grow in the future."

The beginners continued arriving. Hundreds of people that showed up in the square during their first time in Royal Road had the same reaction.

"Uwak! My body is moving!"

"Omomomo, the city is so beautiful."

“Ohhh, there is even a smell. Where is this fragrance coming from? My backpack...let’s see, there are 10 barley breads. I’ll eat is sparingly.”

Beginners started to meet friends of family they knew in the city or ran around it alone. After a bunch of beginners left, more users would appear. It was hard not to find beginners in Morata. The Haven Empire’s invasion meant that the north might be destroyed so the wanted to hurriedly start.

“Amazing. This is what living in a city should be like.”

The architect Mibullo absorbed the atmosphere of the city and its people.

Morata didn’t have a long history so many users had been here since it developed. This pride meant that they didn’t know how to give up. They gathered to fight against the Haven Empire and this also raised Morata’s development.

“I have to aid the military!”

He was sick of the lords in the Central Continent. He wanted to see all the Grand Buildings in the north.

In order to do that, he needed to block the Haven Empire.

“I can look around the city later.... There is no time.”

Mibullo left Morata and headed to the place where the Haven Empire was advancing. He was one of the best architects and had special skills.

Landslide!

Ground Collapse!

Mibullo decided to use the skills he gained in the pursuit of art, convenience and design as an architect against the Haven Empire.

Book 40: Great Emperor's Quest

Chapter 1: Internal Affairs Of The Arpen Kingdom

Weed was at the Earth Palace! The northern users had used magic and swords to get to the Earth Palace.

“Is this really the Royal Palace of the Arpen Kingdom?”

“It is built really sturdy. It is also made to match the mountains really well.”

“Wah...there are signs of a huge construction!”

The king had finally arrived and for many northern users, this was the first time they had seen the Earth Palace. The users wanted to see Weed's face but he didn't come out after entering his office at the Royal Palace.

“It is good to be home. I worried so much about money after leaving home.”

He had left the Arpen Kingdom before the Earth Palace had been completed but the warmth made it feel like a home he had lived in for a long time.

Weed had been away for a long time and could finally feel the comforts of home. If Morata was like a 20 storey apartment then

the Earth Palace would be like renting the penthouse of a 160 storey apartment!

“Perfect view and interior decor.... He could now understand the desire of rich people to live in a good house. It is too luxurious.”

Weed’s heart was blacker than charcoal as thoughts filled his mind.

“I would be able to sell houses like this for a lot of money. Hrmm, a construction company would be good. Although the recession means there is no choice but to suffer. I should actively make a construction boom in the Arpen Kingdom.”

The driving force behind economic development was land speculation! The Arpen Kingdom had a large percentage of diverse professions than other kingdoms. It might be vulnerable in combat but it was superior in production and art development.

If the Arpen Kingdom was given 3 years then the north would completely change.

The well-constructed cities surrounded by beautiful scenery, easily accessible roads that stretched across the northern continent like spider webs and a range of creative arts in the streets.

A fledgling kingdom strong in urban planning would actively cause changes. It was highly likely that the northern continent would continue to evolve along with the Arpen Kingdom and its

people.

“Currently, the population of the Arpen Kingdom has significantly increased and the towns and cities are becoming enormous.”

Weed opened the Internal Affairs window of the Arpen Kingdom. There was a tingle of excitement and tension in his stomach. He hadn't felt this much excitement since fighting the Embinyu Church as a Warrior Saving the World or the undead legion as an ugly orc.

<Arpen Kingdom>

A kingdom that rules over a vast amount of territory in the Northern Continent.

The different flags and culture of the Arpen Kingdom has spread through the different terrains and climate of the north.

A country that annexed the territories in a peaceful manner through trade and culture. The territory includes most of the areas of the former Niflheim Empire.

The knights and residents carry out the king's orders with dignity and respect. Most of the inhabitants in the north believe that the king has been selected by the Goddess Freya.

The king and nobles have opened up paths and established the

country with their own hands.

Among the incredible rumours about the king, he is a hero that performed missions for the gods of the Versailles Continent.

The inclination of the inhabitants of the Arpen Kingdom leans towards the pursuit of adventure, freedom and economic abundance.

A sense of satisfaction is felt from the arts.

Despite the invasion of an empire, the king has a diligent personality that inspires belief in him.

The birth rate has increased so rapidly that it is difficult to measure.

This particularly applies to the 400 male and female orcs that settled in the Arpen Kingdom.

Monsters are still around but the amount of security means they can't advance close to the cities.

Military Power: 7,390 Economic Power: 48,291 Culture: 42,092

Technology: 62,380 Religious Influence: 86 Kingdom Politics: 92

Impact on the Surrounding Areas: 97%

Development of the Kingdom: 79 Hygiene: 42 Security: 92%

Residents of the north are happy to belong to the Arpen Kingdom.

Clearing of the plains, wilderness, flood zones and redevelopment of abandoned mines are actively being pursued.

New products are created and the economy expanded.

Skilled craftsmen filled with pride manufactured advanced products and concentrated on expanding production.

Road construction is occurring everywhere and food shortages are decreasing as trade is freely growing.

Sometimes local, small cities are resistant to paying taxes.

“The Arpen Kingdom is amazing despite only having a short history! But if left unattended, the crime rate and thieves will increase.”

“The taxes have to be used properly as the country can’t grow without proper support.”

“What is His Majesty doing? His achievements as a hero won’t be any use if a colossal amount of bandits are allowed to grow in the kingdom.”

The interest in the open sea means that the shipping industry was improving.

Maritime trade routes are becoming stable and fishermen will catch mysterious fish or hungry sharks when sailing.

Young farmers actively grow crops for several different species.

The orcs love devouring rice and wheat.

The value of coffee, tea and herbal medicine are increasing, building up the foundation of wealthy farmers.

Adventurers are finding traces of relics from the Niflheim Empire. Adventurers will also tell endless amounts of stories in the tavern.

The military power of the Arpen Kingdom isn’t well known to the residents. They are mocked as coward for not taking action against the Haven Empire’s invasion.

Monsters are constantly being subjugated at mountain villages or villages near the mountains.

Prestigious knights have gathered from all over the continent to worship King Weed of the Arpen Kingdom.

The radical urban development being accomplished causes the population to frequently gather for festivals.

Kingdom's Total Population: 38,291,029 Monthly Tax Revenue: 21,943,920

Kingdom's Operating Expenses:

Military 12% Technology Development 6% Economic Development 38%

Cultural Investment 6% Commissions and Monster Subjugation 14%

Road Construction 22% Religion 2%

Military: 4,939 knights, 9,720 training soldiers and 162,023 soldiers.

The army of the Arpen Kingdom was finally stepping out of the gate with their shoulders straight.

The knights division mostly consisted of free knights and Vent Castle troops.

The soldiers gained levels and experience from subjugating monsters. At the very least, they learned how to use bows, swords and shields.

“This is my Arpen Kingdom!”

He had been away for a long period of time but his kingdom had continued to grow healthily.

Weed was satisfied with the income and other specific national power.

“It was raised well. It feels very rewarding. Excellent.”

The users living in the north frequently told absurd stories about the Arpen Kingdom’s development.

“A week ago, I saw a thatched house in the vicinity of Herot River.”

“Is that so? Yesterday I saw at least 500 shacks in that location.”

“What do you mean? I just came from Herot River and there was a medium sized town!”

“Hey, a friend of mine who is an orc just sent me a whisper from there.”

“The who one started just now?”

“That’s right!”

The population of the north was growing furiously so beginner users roamed the continent without hesitation.

Steady hunting was important for the novice users but they could dream of a jackpot in the north. They fantasized of finding the relics of the Niflheim Empire waiting for them in undiscovered dungeons. Land that had been vacant in the past became a base of transportation, adventure or production and a village was instantly created.

From Weed’s perspective, the Arpen Kingdom was like a growing piggy bank. It felt like owning a chicken farm that lay golden eggs.

“One day I will get a huge amount of funds...my retirement depends on this.”

A rice bowl that contained his retirement funds!

Just like most people, he was anxious about his retirement funds. This acted as his pension so he was worried about the Arpen Kingdom.

“If I can’t stop the Haven Empire then my comfortable retirement will end.”

Weed didn't immediately rush onto the battlefield. The Haven Empire was waiting to strike but he didn't bother going to see them. Furthermore, Pavo and the architects already started a task to block their route.

"The guests will have a hard time before coming. Military Status information!"

-Arpen Kingdom's Military

Knights: 32,998

Average Level: 367

Soldiers: 187,390

Average Level: 194

Loyalty: 99%

Training: 89%

The King of the Arpen Kingdom is referred to as the 'Hero who Saved the Continent.'

Free knights will respond to his righteous call. The knight have

great pride and high morale despite running into danger.

The knights have decent equipment and ride tame horses to assault the opponent.

Soldiers have absolute loyalty. They will do anything for the king.

Soldiers will become more experienced by fighting against monsters and exploring dungeons.

The sky island Lavias is roaming the Arpen Kingdom.

They refuse to bow to humans but are willing to become members of the Arpen Kingdom due to the special ties.

They will participate in a war breaks out.

There are a number of military strongholds. Many military fortress that used to belong to the Niflheim Empire, including Vent Castle require repair.

The walls are too weak. It will easily fall if a large scale battle takes place.

“Hrmm, the territory and population as increased a lot. Although the military power is almost useless compared to the Haven Empire.”

Weed had started with Morata in the north.

At the time, he had received protection from the Freya Church so he had decreased spending in the military in favour of faster economic development. As a result, the number of trained elite soldiers was low and there weren't many knights.

Even if a war broke out, troops were needed to prevent the invasion of monsters so only half the forces could be mobilized.

“But the new territory of Lavias has value.”

The Arpen Kingdom had expanded over a large territory in the north but there wasn't much profit. Many villages and cities had been left in ruins after the fall of the Niflheim Empire.

The monsters ran wild and the small population that survived waited a long time for development. Money was required to secure the roads and walls, construction and urban renewal.

But the sky island of Lavias didn't have to worry about monster invasions and could safely develop. It was a small kingdom itself with numerous dungeons.

“If the sky population joins then the possibilities are endless.”

The humans and avians had significantly different appearances.

It was a complete likeness of a bird.

Humans, elves and dwarves had 2nd and 3rd areas of expertise but the avians had an amazing attribute.

Once they reached a certain level through hunting prey, they would make a breakthrough. Those that abandoned their old bodies could get the flesh of a new species. In addition, physical attributes like speed and height would increase.

Many people dreamed of becoming an avian and making a huge breakthrough but Weed didn't miss an important part.

“Every time a body is shed, new equipment is needed so it will cost a lot of money. Those with a hobby of keeping their equipment shouldn't become an avian.”

In Royal Road, people wanted to wear the best equipment possible that suited them. Functional and aesthetically pleasing equipment would instil more confidence on the adventures. The markets and shops in the cities were always crowded with people buying better goods.

Avians had a collective way of living and also paid attention to their appearance. Just like humans, they wore a variety of clothing designed for the beaks and claws, in addition to combat gear and accessories. The overall atmosphere could change just by wearing a new crown or necklace.

Some wore shoes while others like sparrows enjoyed walking on the land and feeling the soil and twigs. Avians who liked a cute or strong appearance were conscious of what equipment they chose.

Most of the equipment for avians were found in Lavias. They could fly so no matter how far away it was, the avians would head to Lavias to purchase goods.

The avians had private restaurants, inns and training centres on Lavias. Some restaurants even had grilled earthworm steaks with butter.

Some bird tribes had a natural homing instinct and would only come back to Lavias once or twice a year.

Lavias was the hometown of the avians so it would continue to evolve in the future, making it a reliable place to obtain taxes from. Having the new territory of Lavias would certainly increase the tax revenue of the Arpen Kingdom.

“A positive financial resource. Good. Very good.”

Ddirring!

-The Arpen Kingdom is being invaded.

Knights and soldiers will actively fight against the enemies trying to occupy the territory.

The sky island Lavias has joined and the avians are burning with fighting spirit.

If you don't allow them to fight then there might be decrease in loyalty and morale.

Do you want to allow the avians to fight the enemy?

“Phew. These guys are better than nothing. I accept.”

-The kingdom's army is being lined up.

The avians and soldiers have high loyalty and treason is unlikely to occur.

Please select a place to gather the army.

“Earth Palace.”

-The army will move to that location.

The sky island Lavias will move.

Your Majesty the King must choose a knight to command the troops.

The knights and soldiers that make enormous contributions in the battle can be upgraded to a noble rank.

Or the king can directly conduct the army.

“I can’t trust anyone. I will direct them.”

-The king will command the army directly.

Soldiers will have incredibly high morale.

“The people of the north will also help the army. And the key to defeating them might be Time Sculpting.”

His act to save the world had left an intense impression on everyone. The level of this quest was unprecedented in Royal Road and he showed off a strong fighting ability. However, that was only in the warring period.

In fact, Weed’s level had been reduced after the quest and he was only level 419. Maybe making the sculptural lifeforms in the desert had a fatal impact.

Among the users active in the north, many had higher levels than Weed. The only thing they didn’t have was Time Sculpting.

But that was only one skill. After collecting all the secret sculpting techniques and many adventures, he had finally learned

Time Sculpting! This was the first time someone in Royal Road had obtained the final secret technique so it was unlikely for anyone else to have a similar skill.

It was Weed’s only absolutely irreplaceable weapon.

He was looking forward to when intermediate Time Sculpting could stop the world. An infinite imaginative power and possibilities!

“It will be really special when that time comes. Time stopping will be a beautiful sight and it is a work of art that can destroy the natural order of the world. The best sculptor....ah, no. These useless art skills!”



The commanders of the Haven Empire’s army in the north gathered in a tent.

The commanders strong enough to cause an uproar anywhere they went on the Versailles Continent and they were ranked based on their combat capabilities.

In particular, Draka who was the commander in chief of the northern invasion had achieved numerous battle victories in Royal Road.

He received generous support from the Hermes Guild and was

evaluated as one of the elite knights. Of course, Draka had a notorious reputation that caused any residents who heard the name to flee from their house.

“According to the news, Weed has appeared at the Earth Palace.”

“If we march at full speed then we can reach the Earth Palace in 3 days from here.”

“Those Grass Porridge fellows are slowing down our advance. Whether we reach the Earth Palace in three days or five days, everyone there will be slaughtered.

“Time isn’t a problem. Weed has appeared but he needs longer than a week to prepare for the war.”

“How about we wait for a week and see? The northern user at the Earth Palace have higher skills than those we’ve faced so far. If we finish them then we can truly defeat Weed and the north.”

The northern invasion army were already sick of facing the northern users. The users had large numbers but weren’t very strong so they were reminiscent of an ant swarm.

Once the northern users were hit by arrows and magic, they would then be smashed by knights and infantry.

This simple approach took time but had a definite effect. Their overwhelming strength led to continuous victories but the

problem was that the enemy kept coming.

The Hermes Guild realized how deeply the north felt about this place.

‘It is like a mother bird defending its nest of young from a snake.’

The Haven Empire were the big snake while the northern users were the soft mother bird.

The reason that the users desperately sacrificed their lives wasn’t just because of Weed’s popularity.

The Arpen Kingdom was the last bastion left on the continent. Those who wanted the freedom to enjoy their lives were clear that they could only do it in the north.

‘In order to have their freedom, they can’t leave this area.’

‘The last refuge will be swept away. In doing so, the unity of the continent will be achieved.’

‘We need to subdue them perfectly in order to ensure long term control over the north.’

Despite the fierce resistance from the north, the commanders were convinced that they would win.

Looting and land acquisition. They were waiting to enjoy the benefits of occupying a territory. A good number of the users and knights had participated in wars of conquest before.

“Have the leaders decided on a countermeasure for Weed?”

“I don’t care what command the guild leaders give. We will continue to march towards the Earth Palace.”

“If Weed has appeared then shouldn’t Bardray come like originally planned?”

“You know that the Abyss Knight has appeared in the Haven Empire.... Weed is in the Earth Palace so there is a slim chance that he can get away. Currently they are more concerned about inside the empire.”

“Indeed...Weed can’t attack our invincible army without a lot of preparations.”

The Hermes Guild didn’t think that Weed and the north could defeat the current Haven Empire. The northern users had been overwhelmingly smashed so far.

Despite Weed’s personal ability, there was no way he could deal with the collective strength of the army.

“The forces of the Arpen Kingdom are limited...it might be possible to defeat them with just one of our units. Observe the

movement of the troops for more information.”

“A lot of people are gathering at the Earth Palace. They will fight against us with Weed.”

“We can handle them. Weed might have great leadership abilities but he is used to directing NPCs, not users.”

“The Hermes Guild has conquered the Central Continent and are used to the organization and operation of an army.”

“Those who are scared or try to escape.... For the majority of the users, this is their first time at war. The north might be eagerly jumping at us now but they will start fleeing once there is a disadvantage.”

“We also have the ability to make public opinion move for us.”

“Well, isn’t there a possibility they will run the moment they see the full force of the Haven Empire’s army?”

War was on an entirely different scale from adventures.

The current Imperial Army contained users of the Hermes Guild and experienced NPCs. The Hermes Guild had secured the Haven Kingdom in the early days so the members were used to war.

When looking at the scale of a war, being able to command the

army to move efficiently was important. The users with strong personalities found it hard to follow the battle tactics and strict discipline in an army.

The commanders needed to give commands that overrode individual thoughts and judgements. Sometimes general users without war experience would cause a defeat when victory was close.

On the other hand, an army configured with NPCs could maximize the effectiveness of battle tactics. It was difficult for even famous and strong users to withstand the concentrated attack of an army.

There were many other advantages to NPC troops. Despite needing to mobilize for dozens of days on missions to subjugate bandits, their loyalty would be maintained. Good commanders would maintain high morale and loyalty through training.

In the process of unifying the Central Continent, the consolidating of the Haven Empire's military power meant it was difficult for any kingdom to face them. The huge investment early on meant they were easily mobilized for war.

This was half the core forces of the Haven Empire so they were confident about beating the Arpen Kingdom in the north. The current power of the Haven Empire's army was close to invincible.

This was the analysis for the north as well as the entire Versailles Continent. They wouldn't be able to stand up to the Haven

Empire’s enormous army.

“We will continue to keep an eye on Weed. And we will finish him up at the Earth Palace.”

“It will be fine.”



“Robin-nim, the Hermes Guild wants a talent like you.”

“Well, I am with my colleagues so it is a difficult decision to make.”

The hunter Robin was formally invited to the Hermes Guild. The tall, handsome and rich Robin who pursued Seo-yoon

In Royal Road, his level was beyond 400 and he wore the best equipment. The armour and weapon had splendid options by default and magic effects were always activated against monsters.

If anything was lacking then he would have blacksmiths and tailors add more diamonds. The gazes of other people would be filled with astonishment and envy when he walked through villages.

But unlike the actual power of his level and equipment, he was afraid every time he entered a dark and sombre dungeon.

Despite his profession as a hunter, Robin was never alone. He was always accompanied by at least 5 mercenaries consisting of knights and priests.

The hunting efficiency was good and they would receive compensation from famous dungeon quests! If there were dangerous situations with monsters then the mercenaries would take care of it. Therefore, Robin hardly ever died.

“Wouldn’t it be an honour for the Hermes Guild if Robin-nim joins? Of course, your other friends are also invited.”

“Hmmm, the offer is good.”

Robin thought deeply about his future.

The Nice Guys Guild was famous in Royal Road. The children of wealthy families gathered in the Versailles Guild operated the guild as a hobby.

Despite the fight for supremacy among the prestigious guilds, the Nice Guys Guild were never involved. Just like Robin, they were overflowing with money and power so touching them would cause problems.

They had wide connections in Royal Road and could request retaliation against any slights. They sprinkled money recklessly and no one else could imitate them.

Actually, Robin and the Nice Guys had made quite a lot of requests to the Hermes Guild.

“I need a bow. The restriction is level 340.”

“The rating? And tell me if you have any specific options you want.”

“I would be satisfied with a legend rating. At the very least, it should be the best bow for my level.”

“You know that items like that aren’t common.”

“I don’t care about the price. Having an option to freeze monsters would be fine as well.”

They asked for weapons and armour regardless of the price or players and NPCs to act as guides.

Active users working as merchants were asked to deliver or trade goods. If there was a conflict with other users then they would pay money to have them killed.

The Hermes Guild didn’t need to be hostile or stop them. If they did the requests then there would be a huge financial gain.

Currently the Nice Guys had a unique power on the continent so

the Hermes Guild wanted to recruit them. By accepting the funds of those who were wealthy in reality, there would be mutually beneficial transactions.

“Recently I’ve been wanting to become a lord. If you give me a city then I will join the Hermes Guild.”

Robin recently had aspirations of becoming a lord.

Being a lord required a lot of effort to build up fame and achievements but the Hermes Guild’s PR members readily nodded.

“Of course it is possible.”

There were many areas in the territory that the Haven Empire snatched that didn’t have lords. The Empire controlled the city and they begrudgingly paid the taxes. Lords could become nobles in the Empire and were generously treated.

Robin was the son of a rich family so there was no question about his money. From the perspective of the Hermes Guild, Robin would use his money on the city if he was awarded a lordship. Therefore, there were many long-term benefits.

“I thought this was a big favour to ask but the Hermes Guild agreed.”

“The guild will actively help if Robin-nim has a request. Where we you like the land?”

“My dream is to become the lord of a city in the northern frontier.

“The north? But the occupation operation isn’t over yet so it will be hard to maintain peace and order. Wouldn’t it be better to develop a commercial free city?”

“The north has large potential sleeping. I am the oldest son of an entrepreneur so I prefer a place with potential rather than one that is already developed. My friends also prefer the north.”

“I understand. However, currently the area we’ve occupied in the north is only at the standards of a small village.”

“That makes it more attractive. I can completely renovate it from the ground up to make my own city.”

“Oh, I see that your perspective is different from mine. If you think you will be satisfied then we have a few areas.”

The Hermes Guild’s PR crew nodded. There were many areas in the occupied north where a large city could be built.

Rather than a city already finished, Robin would need to supply materials to build up the city so it would only benefit the Hermes Guild.

Due to the myth of Morata, many users wanted to be lords in the north. This was extra income for the Hermes Guild.



In Morata, there was a user called Seventh Rabbit that had an addiction to reading.

He liked to read any articles.

In reality, he was a 17 year old that read most of the published comics and novels.

The obsessed Seventh Rabbit was stuck in the library.

“Huhuhu, something like this happened. A fabulous quest. I can sell the information for 300 gold.”

He read books about history, geography, plants, quest events and anything that caught his eye. The combination of some information could be sold for money, to fulfil unresolved quests or to luckily find a treasure.

“Huh? Heroes in the Warring Period. This book wasn’t here a few days ago.”

Seventh Rabbit looked at a bookshelf.

[Heroes in the Warring Period #3

Countless heroes lived in the warring period. Local heroes lost their lives while stronger warriors would emerge on the Central Continent.

Many ambitious kings tried to seize power until the invasion of the Pallos Empire from the south put an end to their lives.

During this time, the name of heroes could be counted on one hand. I can assure you that it includes Hestiger.

A warrior and well-mannered gentleman, he has no defects and is a perfect specimen. During the warring period, countless women who were nobles or commoners would soak their pillows with tears while thinking of him.

There are rumours that Hestiger handled any crime in the warring period. Hestiger didn't seek honour and power and only lived for discipline and justice. His strong mind was unshakable by cowardice, greedy or hedonism.

If it wasn't for Hestiger then the establishment of the Pallos Empire might not have been possible. Hestiger can be called a true hero that represents this era.

Other notable heroes include the absolute swordsman, Zahab.

He had exceptional art skills and wandered the continent. It is

possible that there isn't one person alive today who can match his skills.

In the case of the emperor that emerged from the rough sands to establish the Pallos Empire, he is only a legend as many rumours spread about him.

These things aren't verified. He killed all knights against him and destroyed cities.

His cruelty transcended human limits so the academic community have presented a confident evaluation that this is just an exaggeration.

The Pallos Emperor didn't return after leaving on an adventure with the hero Hestiger so those rumours are lacking in objectivity.

Anyway, these are the heroes of that era.]

Chapter 2: Kill Without Asking Porridge Unit

Lee Hyun sprinkled the seeds for lettuce in the field at his house.

“I can wrap pork belly in it later to eat.”

He could easily buy lettuce but then money would be wasted. Eating lettuce, sweet potato, potatoes etc. grown in his field felt good.

The Haven Empire was coming to invade in Royal Road so he didn't have a lot of time to spend in reality. He needed to establish countermeasures to stop them, raise Time Sculpting and recover the levels he lost in the quest.

Despite being busy, he made sure to spend 30 minutes taking care of the house. All the stress that built up would be cleared by cleaning.

Despite the stations depositing a large sum into his account, Lee Hyun's life didn't change.

“The most important thing is to earn money. A job like mine is unstable so I need to collect a lot.”

He didn't drink, go to a coffee shop or have any expensive

hobbies like watching home shopping.

He saved his income. Once a lump sum was gathered, then he would invest it in land.

“In the future....I need to give my condolences. All the money spent on education and hospital bills.”

In South Korea, a lot of money was used to raise their children.

If they didn't want to fall behind others in this harsh world then it was important to be educated in maths, science and at least two foreign languages from a young age. Instruments such as the violin or piano should also be learned. In order to allow them to see the world, parents might send them abroad to study. There was also skating, shooting, horseback riding and golf.

The potential of children in South Korea was developed to its fullest! If the 24 hours in a day were divided into 10 minute units, most of their lives would be going back and forth to school.

Then there was the intense competition for university admissions and employment.

“Well, I'm afraid of the future. When looking at the television, it is getting hard to hear good news.”

Lee Hyun felt a tremendous sense of responsibility.

At first he thought a family was more of a burden than a happiness. Meeting someone was something that wasn't possible in his situation.

His ideal type was a strong woman with vitality. A woman who could take care of business at the market as well as fry a crispy chicken!

Lee Hyun muttered under his breath.

“But I'm already in a relationship so I should take responsibility until the end.”

In the opposite garden, Seo-yoon was holding a rake and planting pepper seedlings.

A few days ago, he went hiking with her and then shared a deep kiss with her in front of the house. It was a sudden event but the kiss lasted for quite a long time.

In fact, for some reason all the street lights had turned off so there was no need to stop early. The background music playing in the background made it a very good atmosphere.

He intended to release her lips when the song ended. But after a brief hesitation, the next song started playing.

‘Eh, I don’t know. It feels good so I will continue.’

At least 6 minutes!

Lee Hyun’s thoughts became clear after he kissed her.

‘I have to take responsibility for the rest of my life. I finally have a good woman so I should marry her.’

These days the world was different. Kissing occurred after meeting for a few days and there was even further progress.

Lee Hyun was old-fashioned in this aspect.

‘My love life is over. Well...it is better to fall in love early since there are a lot of expenses in dating.’

He heard Seo-yoon’s clear voice.

“Should I plant more?”

“There are enough peppers...change to planting carrots and cucumbers. It should be enough for 5 people to eat.”

“Yes, I understand.”

“After planting, mix it well with the fertilizer. Farming is

fertilizer.”

Seo-yoon was wearing comfortable sportswear while working in the field.

Lee Hyun was also clad in sportswear but he looked scruffy compared to Seo-yoon’s brightness. She wore sportswear from a luxurious Italian brand.

If Lee Hyun knew the price of the expensive product then he would lose consciousness and be rushed off by the ambulance.

‘It is good that she can wear sportswear. In the future, we will live a frugal life together.’

Lee Hyun and Seo-yoon lived next door so it was natural to eat meals together. Right now Lee Hyun was busy concentrating on Royal Road so she prepared the meals.

She naturally assisted at home and warmly raised Lee Hyun’s animals. Dogmeat would wag its tail every time she came over to Lee Hyun’s house. Half Seasoned Half Fried and the baby chickens also had their crest perk up. The puppies that Dogmeat gave birth to were wallowing in the sun.

He was enjoying a happy life but the slightest slip meant it might disappear.

‘I have to prepare methods to defeat those guys.’

Lee Hyun contemplated ways to stop the Haven Empire.

The users of the Arpen Kingdom would help but he couldn't rely on them. The Alkazar Bridge would block the Haven Empire's army for a few days but they would eventually reach the Earth Palace.

"A disaster is necessary and I should use Sculpture Resurrection. The best person to revive...damn, I really don't like him."

He thought about the skills that could be used.

He had fought the Immortal Legion as the orc Karichwi. The terrain and aggressive subordinates meant they followed his commands without any doubts. Furthermore, there was time to prepare.

However, it was close to impossible to configure a strong chain of command with users. Even if the users made large scale preparations for war, there was no guarantee there weren't any spies from the Hermes Guild.

"Those fellows from the Hermes Guild won't be noticed. And I need to predict what actions they might take."

Lee Hyun thought about the things that might occur in the future.

Strategies and tactics weren't a big deal. There were tips and tricks that could be used to solve a problem. In the case of a quest, a quick mind and using various skills were important.

Sculpture Transformation was a skill he used in many adventures. Blending into a crowd of opponents or changing species to maximize strength! However, Sculpture Transformation wouldn't be useful against the army of the Haven Empire.

In fact, the Hermes Guild was the worst opponent for him. They had a thorough plan and used their moment to quickly dominate the Versailles Continent.

Usually fictional villains would make a mistake by going slowly and giving the hero time to grow. But the Hermes Guild quickly secured important victories in the war.

Lee Hyun caused damage to them but when looking at the overall plan, it was only minor damage that didn't cause them any disruptions.

"Completely unexpected...well, there aren't any large changes to the army. And there are large plains in front of the Earth Palace."

Lee Hyun was currently lying down in the yard with the warm sun shining down on him.

"Hrmm, a tactic that can be connected to a disaster...I should buy some things. They can be used."

He decided to do a bulk purchase through Mapan. Of course, there were still some gaps. The Haven Empire was capable of massive ranged attacks so suitable tactics needed to be prepared.

It was necessary to change his battle approach.

“If I cause a large disaster while the northern craftsmen prepare rafts...no, many users would need to participate and the Hermes Guild would certainly notice. Well, hopefully I can obtain some things for free.”

Lee Hyun steadily built up battle plans for the area in front of the Earth Palace. He questioned how much progress there would be but he had to try it anyway.

“I just settled a long quest and now there is a war. Will it be easier once the war is finished? Honestly, I don’t have high expectations.”

Later that night, Lee Hyun assembled old parts and turned on the computer. There was the sound of the old fan blowing as the computer started operating.

Lee Hyun wrote a post on the Dark Gamers bulletin boards.

It was understandable that the Dark Gamers took a neutral stance in the war between users. Even if Lee Hyun asked them for help, they would only become mercenaries if there was enough

profit.

It was useless at the moment. The Dark Gamers would judge what was profitable based on information from the bulletin board.

“Well, I don’t know how many will appear but there is a dining table prepared for them.”

It was a post that only the top rated Dark Gamers could see.

And after that, he went to the homepage of Royal Road and sent an email to a user.

The architect users of the north. Pavo was on his friends list but he also needed to commission other renowned architects.

“In the worst case scenario, I can’t hand the Earth Palace over to them.”

He would break it before giving it away!

“It would be a tremendous spectacle.”

He was determined to win the war against the Haven Empire but contingencies were necessary. He could only hope they weren’t needed. He would rather destroy the castle then lose it.

“And what about the forces that were defeated by the Hermes Guild?”

Lee Hyun also sent mail to the leaders of the 5 prestigious guilds. It was a brief suggestion to join forces. In order to get rid of the juggernaut that swept through them.

A few responded but it was unknown if anything would come from it.



Hwaryeong, Bellot, Maylon, Irene, Romuna and Surka were tired.

Normal people wouldn't believe it. The girls had tired bodies because they had been shovelling at the earth!

Romuna's shovel hit something firm.

-Uhihihihihi! Human, thanks for freeing me. In return, your flesh....

“Noisy. Fire Time!”

-Keeek!

Romuna used fire magic to get rid of the ghost.

Bellot dug at the ground with both hands. Her face was a mess as it was covered in mud.

“What is it?”

“Nothing big. Just rusted armour.”

Weed’s hidden treasures from the Pallos Empire were buried in a lake. They thought it would be piled up in a cave and shining bright and gold. Of course, it would be good if there were relics from the Pallos Empire as well.

But the reality was that the treasures were hidden in a lake that dried up and became a mudflat.

Ddirring!

-You have excavated old relics and fame has increased by 450.

If the relics are restored then additional fame can be gained.

-The title ‘Excavator of Hidden Land’ has been obtained.

A rare title that can be obtained by digging the ground for 15 days.

Digging speed will become 3% faster.

Affinity to the earth has increased.

Romuna wiped the sweat from her forehead and spoke to Bellot.

“Phew, now I have the title Excavator of Hidden Land.”

“We are being rewarded after acting as human moles.”

Only girls had been digging but there was already a pile of treasures in the corner.

The treasures of the Pallos Empire had been buried for a long time so the sword and armours were rusty and needed to go through a purification ritual.

Therefore Irene used her divine power to purify the items while digging.

-Kyahahahah! I’m finally free! Being chained to this infernal sword for all these years....

“Bubi bubi dance!”

“The ghost is moderately strong. Yahap!, beating!”

Hwaryeong and Surka also participated in the ghost hunting. The beauty with a perfect body did the bubi bubi dance while Surka continuously used her punch attacks.

“Iyahahap! Heavy Blow Vortex!”

Surka’s fists of lights dealt a powerful blow to the body of the ghost.

-Ohuhuhu, it hurts. The ghosts that had been waiting a long time for revenge on the humans disappeared in vain....

Most of the treasures of the Pallos Empire had grudges attached to them. They had changed owners many times in the warring period. The ghosts had become stuck due to that environment.

Rowdy ghosts! The ghosts were dangerous but they just died after being excavated. The group dug all day for treasure but sometimes the ones that emerged were a failure.

But they recalled Weed’s words of encouragement before going to find the treasure.

-In the old days, our ancestors were absolutely brilliant. They eventually left this earth behind. But look.

There are many rich people in our country. There are a variety of

treasures from the Pallos Empire to be discovered.

The hardest swords and armour. If they can be well restored then they can be sold for an expensive price.



“Ahem, the army of the Haven Empire is definitely strong. The taste of a fight, Geomchi-5.”

“The taste of wielding my sword after a long time, Teacher-nim!”

Geomchi organized his disciples in the northern areas occupied by the Haven Empire.

[Kill Without Asking Porridge Unit]

They worried for one day and night before narrowly deciding on the name.

“This is unusual and nice.”

“It suits us perfectly Teacher-nim.”

“Life shouldn’t be complicated. Or my head will hurt.”

“Being simple and ignorant is the best!”

A name that meant they would unconditionally kill without asking!

The Haven Empire placed soldiers in the occupied northern territories for long term governance.

Originally, the traffic in this area was slow so the villages weren't as developed. It was easy for the Haven Empire to expel the northern users and conquer the villages.

“What type of rubbish village is this?”

“The urban planning is a mess. Just burn it and take away the residents.”

“There are many mines nearby in the surrounding area. The slaves can quickly increase productivity. The development would turn it into a gold mine.”

The lords that settled in that area brought a large number of slaves from the Central Continent. The slaves were residents of the kingdoms conquered by the Haven Empire.

After having all their possessions on the continent taken away, they officially became slaves. Among the slaves were professional merchants, artists, blacksmiths, magicians and even combat professions like gladiators. The low management and slave engineers that managed to run away meant there actually weren't

that many slaves in the war between kingdoms.

However, the Haven Empire had a strong military force and turned many residents into slaves. The slaves were brought to the north to develop the area.

“Let’s go, everyone.”

“We will punish and kill them all. Hiyah!”

Geomchi-3 rode a bull in the front. And the reliable Sahyungs followed. Geomchi and Geomchi-2 each led troops comprised of 150 students. Geomchi-3, Geomchi-4 and Geomchi-5 led the remaining 200 students.

“Ambush from the enemy!”

“Ring the emergency bell!”

The enemy inside the wooden fence hurriedly rung the bell in order to signify there was a surprise attack.

“Shake them off!”

“Fight without asking questions. Smash everything!”

Ummooooooooo!

Geomchi-3 rushed towards the wooden barrier while shouting. And the troops of the Haven Empire hastily fired arrows above the barrier. More than 100 arrows headed towards Geomchi-3 in the front.

“Times like these are the most interesting. Go!”

Geomchi-3 wielded a sword in both hands like a windmill. It was an amazing technique that caused the swords to rotate and hit the arrows.

The swords struck the arrow.

It was originally a warrior's skill but Geomchi-3's troops all learned it. If they learned it until master level then the pair of swords would be raised one level higher.

A martial artist could easily learn combat techniques or created different combinations themselves.

If the skill level of individual weapons reached master level then a skill could be created and their attacks would steadily increase. A myriad of master combat skills for the sword, spear, bow, axe, club, hammer, mace, shield and armour! It could produce a blow similar to Black Knight's Strike or Power of Birth.

These master skills could then be bestowed to their disciples. Of course, that was only possible if they had a complete

understanding of the technique. In other words, they could only pass it onto others after fully mastering the skill.

“Uhahahaha! This taste is really delicious!”

Geomchi-3 laughed as the arrows bounced off his body. His strength would weaken when he got older but right now, he demonstrated his exceptional fighting skills.

“Sahyung, let’s go together.”

“Good!”

Geomchi-3, Geomchi-4 and Geomchi-5 rode their bulls together in the front. Stray arrows passed by their ears and a large dust cloud rose up.

The archers were scared and hid their bodies behind the barrier.

They were now 10 metres away from the barrier.

“Smash into them. Heavy Strike!”

“Hmm, this much....one point attack!”

“There is no need for anything else. It is just crashing against wood. Take this!”

The instructors strongly struck the barrier with their weapons. Then the barrier was shattered and torn. The residents and even the knights and soldiers were in a state of panic.

“The knights are mine!”

“Sahyung, the owner will be the first person to catch them.”

“We should handle the soldiers before it is too late.”

Geomchi-3, Geomchi-4 and Geomchi-5 attacked after penetrating through the barrier.

The knights of the Haven Empire. The knights were loyal to Emperor Bardray but now they were just tasty prey. The students also found the soldiers enjoyable.

“It is too quick.”

“I don’t want this taste to end too early.”

“Let’s clean this up quickly and go somewhere else.”

Geomchi and the students had continued working on their class quest.

The Weapons Mastery quest still wasn't over. They could choose to become a truth seeker or martial arts teacher.

A martial arts teacher had an unmatched ability to teach their disciples. Teachers could transfer their skills to NPCs or users.

On the other hand, a truth seeker didn't teach anyone. They also couldn't get honour. A human body could become strong so they used martial arts to cultivate their strength in nature and remove any fear of death.

And a merchant user of the Haven Empire surrendered.

“If you spare me then you absolutely won't regret it.”

“.....”

It was rumoured that merchants became more talkative when surrendering!

“I have a total of 4,298 gold bullions so I will give it all to you and leave the north if you spare me.”

“.....”

Even a non-combatant merchant user would find their lives precious. If they lost their lives then their trading and accounting skills would fall. A high level would receive really big damage so

they didn't want to die in a place like this.

Geomchi-101 examined the merchant in silence.

“In fact, I have 3 more gold bullions in the business fund. I will give everything.”

“.....”

“Whatever you want to trade....”

“.....”

“I really have no more.”

Seokeok!

-The unscrupulous merchant Donjulle has died.

Fame has been obtained among the slaves exploited by Donjulle.

The merchant was executed by Geomchi-101.

“.....”

He was able to loot an additional 5 gold bullions from the

merchant. People always prayed that merchants would drop expensive items but such cases were rare. The only items attached to merchants were ones they wouldn't mind losing in death.

Geomchi said towards his students.

“I'll tell you this. There better not be anyone here willing to accept wealth in exchange for those cowards lives. You will forever carry a shameful face.”

“Of course we can't do that, Teacher-nim!”

“We just need to kill everything.”

“Truly wise.”

“This is justice. It is a perfect morality, Teacher-nim.”

The policy of the Kill Without Asking Porridge unit was determined. No soldiers of the Haven Empire were left behind as the slaves tied with rope shed tears.

“The ones who harassed us finally died.”

“Even so, we can't go back home. We can only live by following a new owner.”

“Our kingdom has already disappeared. We will live according to the will of the rulers.”

-2,609 slaves have been acquired.

You must determine how to handle them.

If you own the prisoners then you can increase wealth through hard labour.

Or you can give the prisoners freedom.

Including Geomchi-3, all members of the Kill Without Asking Porridge unit were knights of the Arpen Kingdom.

It wasn't their occupation but they were knighted. Knights of the Arpen Kingdom could lead soldiers, carry out wars, conquer and absorb enemy territory and even dispose of prisoners of war.

Geomchi-3 nodded and said.

“Just take care of your own lives.

-Do you want to free the prisoners?

The decision cannot be reversed.

Those who are freed will strongly oppose going back into captivity.

“Eat if you are hungry and sleep if you are sleepy. Take care of the money you earned. It is hard on the body of the prisoners of war....”

-2,609 people have been freed.

1, 920 fame has been acquired.

Intimacy will the freed people will rise to the highest level.

“Thank you very much. We were brought here without any consideration so thank you very much. We will become residents of the Arpen Kingdom and be loyal to His Majesty the King and all the knights.”

“Come! We are heading to the next place.”

Geomchi-3 climbed onto his bull.

“Sahyung, there are 5 villages in the area so today will be very busy.”

“Teacher-nim doesn’t like being idle. Go quickly!”

Geomchi-3 and the students rode towards another settlement of the Haven Empire.



The leaders of the Hermes Guild in the norther occupied territories had serious concerns about the actions of the Kill Without Asking Porridge unit.

“We can’t afford to leave those fellows alone. It isn’t on a large scale yet but it will be difficult once more join them.”

“The guild leaders should quickly quell this. But the leaders in the Haven Empire will just consider them a funny story.”

“But so far they’ve only caused minor damage. Will the core leaders really worry about this?”

“The terrain characteristics are very different from the Central Continent.”

“Yes, I’ve also had that problem.”

In the Central Continent, there were many fortresses so they could stabilize the area.

The prestigious guilds were composed of users so once a defeat occurred, there were serious internal splits. Who was good or bad

and who was behind the defeat. The complaints piled up until they exploded.

The Hermes Guild would target the important people at that time and the guild would dissolve. The ability to resist would disappear and the Haven Empire could firmly conquer the territory.

In comparison, the north had large meadows where horses could run for hours. Even after the conquest, the settlements weren't cities so they were difficult to keep.

In other words, the resistance army could move around on horses, other users would actively join and security would worsen. The occupied territory needed to be secured so they felt the need to respond to it strongly.

“We will dig pitfalls in the settlements.”

“That is insufficient. We need to annihilate their mobility with one strike. Their numbers are small but it will be difficult.”

“Should we direct the knights from the 5th army division to the occupied territories? The remainder of the army will continue marching towards the Earth Palace. They can return quickly and aid in the battle at the Earth Palace.”

“Good. I was getting bored.”

The commander in charge of the 5th knights division was

Banrommel. He was determined to destroy the Kill Without Asking Porridge unit.

Chapter 3: Abyss Knight And The Hermes Guild

“Huhuhuhut, I am the number one archer in the north, Pale!”

Pale looked towards the cloud of dust where the Haven Empire’s army was gathered.

A group of high level users in the north had gathered to face the invincible army trying to take over the entire Versailles Continent.

“We won’t stand a chance with a frontal attack. We can kill a few fellows one on one but there is no chance against an army.”

“Then let’s stick to the outskirts.”

“Don’t the Hermes Guild have many people just as strong as us?”

“A huge army like that won’t have a perfect defense. We can see some gaps. They will become larger in the eyes of a ranger.”

“I agree. This will be a fun hunt.”

The best rangers, archers and magicians in the north had ventured out for combat. The news wasn’t widespread so only 200 people had joined

They waited quietly on top of the hills as the Haven Empire's army passed by. The scouting troops had passed and now it was the central group of the army.

If the northern users' location was discovered then it would be instant death. The whole area would be devastated by the huge magician units riding in carriages.

There were many soldiers in the Haven army. There was also a variety of monsters, beasts and special forces.

It was mainly magicians and archers that participated in the battle against the north but troops were fully mobilized in order to occupy the area.

There were a variety of kingdoms in the Central Continent where many species lived but they also had the ambition to suffocate the north.

“Please, please. This life will be saved today. Kill for the dignity of the Grass Porridge Cult.”

Some of the Grass Porridge Cult members were also there.

“Now.”

And finally, the troops composed of ordinary soldiers moved into

their view. Many of them were elite soldiers of the Haven Empire that had experienced a lot of war.

“Then load your weapons.”

The archers pulled out their bows and arrows. They loaded the arrows without protesting and waited.

“Fiery Pebble elemental summon!”

“Xing xing, I am here.”

“Let’s bury the enemy.”

The elementalists summoned the spirits and attached them to the arrows. Once the help of the spirits was received, the power and characteristics of the arrows would increase.

“Shoot all at once. Fire!”

Syu syu syu syu syuk!

The archers shot from the hills as the arrows penetrated the troops of the Haven Empire. Skill, arrows flying on the wind!

A skill that increased the distance of ranged attacks by 50%.

“An ambush by the enemy!”

“From the direction of the hills back there!”

The archers from the Haven Empire identified the enemy positions and counterattacked but their arrows didn't reach the hill.

There were differences in the skills and equipment but the Haven Empire's archers were firing against the wind towards the northern users who were on a higher terrain.

“A great opportunity. Shoot as much as possible!”

“I don't have time to talk right now. Pour out the steel arrows....”

The archers moved their hands as quickly as possible. They utilized their rapid fire and penetrating skills.

Normally the accuracy would decrease for long range attacks.

The long range attacks were mainly useless but now the archers could use them energetically. Now they didn't need to worry about being hit by anyone in the vicinity.

Unfortunately, the soldiers had armour and shields so they didn't lose their lives from one or two long range arrows.

The wide area archer skills such as burning, freezing or exploding weren't used. However, the effects of the elemental spirits meant the arrows could exert a similar power.

The soldiers of the Haven Empire were hit by multiple shots and lost their lives. The users of the Hermes Guild leisurely advancing gave an order.

“The soldiers are taking care of those guys too slowly. Knights, control them immediately!”

“Eagle Knights, march!”

Dust rose as the knights of the Haven Empire sped into action. The Hermes Guild users with tremendous skill were among them.

“Hurry up and shoot. Don't let them come closer.”

At this point, the arrows fired by the north targeted the knights.

“This isn't causing enough damage so we need to increase our power.”

Penetration, poison and whirlwind. The arrows fired from the bow were so strong that half of the knights fell from their horses.

The knights' strong defense meant they weren't easy to kill but they would be unable to fight for a while.

“Those guys are coming closer.”

“Enough damage has been caused so let’s go.”

“Good!”

The northern archers completed their mission so they carried their bows and quickly withdrew. The knights chasing found armoured knights among the northern users.

“Who do those guys belong to?”

“They seem to be the knights of Miyaba. Before Miyaba Principality fell, the minimum level of the knights was 400.”

“I didn’t realize they moved up to the north.”

The northern users had felt the terrible power of the Haven Empire’s magician units. If they came closer then it would be death. However, if the knights chased after them then they could fight.

“Like thorns stuck between the teeth. It will just be a burden if we go too far away from the main army.... We will wipe them out at the next opportunity. Withdraw.”

The knights of the Haven Empire eventually chose to retreat.

“Hooray!”.

“Kuh, this taste!”

“We did it!”

It was small damage as only 1,000 people were killed but the northern users rejoiced. So far, millions of people had died in the north but the Haven Empire only received small damage as 100,000 were killed.

A constant losing streak!

However, more users in the north were scrambling to participate. Moreover, many users that had been living in the depths of the dungeon started to emerge.

“That is...if my eyes are mistaken, that is the red skirt worn by the bard Skolla-nim!”

“Eh, that man is the one who kept on hitting wind monsters...he appeared on a broadcast 2 years ago!”

In the early days of Royal Road, there were many well-known users who experienced death at the hand of the Haven Empire and wandered around.

They developed unique hunting styles or techniques in Royal Road and quietly migrated to the north. They were already disillusioned by the fierce power struggle in the Central Continent. Quests and hunting were all tied up by the Haven Empire.

They migrated to the north where they could live freely. Anger towards the Haven Empire boiled up inside them as they finally started to make a move.

They joined the norther users and set out to fight for Weed's Arpen Kingdom.

Haven Empire and Weed.

If it was just a matter between those two then the residents wouldn't participate. Morata was only one city that had too many users living there.

But the Haven Empire had already conquered the Central Continent so if they captured the north, there would be no place on the continent to live freely.

To them, Weed and the Arpen Kingdom had become a great focal point.

“Our hope is the archer Pale-nim.”

“If he hadn't shown us....”

“I saw him shooting a bow. Almost a 100 metres back and it pierced two or three times.”

“Amazing skills.”

Pale was praised by the northern users.

‘I suffered through a proud life but now people are looking at me with proud eyes.’

Although he started Royal Road a little late, he suffered while accompanying Weed around. The skills, stats, and japtem acquired during the encounters made everyone admire his skills.

-No, I am no different from a dog....! Wasn't I strong when I started in Rosenheim Kingdom?

-I grew conventionally just like everyone else.

-I can't believe I've been using a plain arrowhead until today! If poison is used on the arrowhead then hunting efficiency will increase. I should at least fire some poison arrows.

-Weed-nim told me. Hunting isn't something for the head. It needs to be repeated with the body. Don't just use my head to catch monsters and fight comfortably. And it is good to spend money to buy a better item.

-The level of skill is terrific.

-It can be called grinding the basics. This is also something I learned from Weed-nim.

Pale had appeared on previous broadcasts with Weed so he was famous in the north.

All eyes turned towards him whenever he entered the city carrying an elves' bow. Pale didn't know what the people watching him were thinking.

‘An influential person.’

‘I can recognize him with one glance. I can see the glory of Pale-nim directly.’

‘Good looking. Tall.’

‘Kyah, the stylish way he is carrying that bow!’

Pale led the northern users in the fight. He didn't join his colleagues in finding the treasures of the Pallos Empire as he thought this was more rewarding.

He demonstrated excellent skills in battle and was recognized by the people he led.

‘This is a man’s romance.’

A rotten smile that resembled Weed’s appeared on his face. And all of a sudden, he received a whisper.

-Pale-nim.

-Ah, Weed-nim!

Pale was startled and replied.

“What, he is receiving a whisper from the God of War Weed-nim?”

“Iyah, an answer! As expected, Weed-nim frequently sends whispers to his colleagues.”

The users over level 430 greatly admired him. No matter how high their level was, it wasn’t easy to become friendly with Weed.

The news about Weed’s whisper quickly spread through the surprised crowd. Weed’s reputation was enough to make a river out of soju in the north.

-Where are you now?

Pale replied in a manly tone.

-I've fighting the army of the Haven Empire near Nur Plains. I'm using arrows for ranged attacks. The knights were very dangerous so it was quite suspenseful.

He expected Weed to give some form of thanks or praise.

-Hrmm, so you're not particularly busy. I will send Yurin towards you. Can you wait a short moment?

-Of course. Weed-nim has returned from a long quest so there must be a celebration. I'll pay!

-We're going hunting instead of celebrating.

-Huh? Already? Talking about hunting as soon as he returned.....

Weed had a wide range of view and could identify the characteristics and actions of monsters. When fighting with difficult monsters, there were moments when they almost lost their lives.

Instead, his colleagues felt glad.

'It won't be too bad if I die.'

‘I-I want to rest.’

‘This is hell hunting. This place is hell.... I won’t do bad things anymore and will live a good life.’

He got goose bumps after receiving the hunting invitation.

-Well, I’m quite busy....after next day or two.

-It is quite fast so it was only take a few days.

-I’d like to fight the Haven Empire when they arrive at the Earth Palace. If we come back a little bit late...they might come sooner.

-There is no way I can hold them. It is possible that we might come back late.

-Well, I hope so. No matter what my mind thought of, it didn’t work.

The devastating whisper ended and Yurin showed up. Pale’s activities were being broadcasted so she didn’t need to have the surroundings explained to her.

“Hello. I will quickly take you to Oppa.”

“Yes, I’m off.”

Pale’s shoulders slumped as he left together with Yurin.

And the people who remained behind.

“Is the story he told about suffering with Weed-nim real?”

“Somehow I don’t envy him.”

“Even if I had the abilities, I don’t want to live like that.”

“We can just act comfortably.”



Weed’s hunt for members!

All of his colleagues were looking for the treasure of the Pallos Empire except for Pale.

And he needed to pick up a man from the Freya Church. His first slave apart from Van Hawk.

“Ohhh, it is great to see you after such a long time. Other people don’t know but I heard about Weed’s special adventure through Goddess Freya.”

“Let’s go.”

“Huh?”

“Time is precious.”

Weed used his accumulated contribution to the Freya Church to kidnap Alveron. And he was introduced to some new people through Mapan’s wide network of contacts.

“Um, I am Python.”

Python had a huge bulk like a bear and swung his sword. He was famous for surviving in Averian Forest for his Warrior Master Quest.

Weed had met him in the past at the training centre but they both didn’t remember.

‘He must eat a lot of rice.’

‘He doesn’t look unusual. The atmosphere is normal, just like the rumours about the King of the Arpen Kingdom.’

And a mysterious man also joined.

“My name...it is difficult to tell you but the merchant Mapan can

guarantee that I am trustworthy.”

The man that Mapan introduced was wearing a hood that made it difficult to even see his face. Weed shook hands with him first.

“It is a pleasure.”

“I’ll work hard.”

The man had a naturally cool voice like an actor. Weed met the man’s eye.

‘I can’t believe this guy. He looks much better than me.’

‘I know he is a sculptor but I don’t feel anything special.’ Perhaps he seems stronger on the broadcasts? But I can completely win over him. I am the shadow of death, Seasoned....no.’

Weed, Pale, Alveron, Python and the man of death. The party was formed and then Python asked.

“But where are we going? A normal hunting ground wouldn’t need to gather all these people. Do you have some quest to finish?”

They heard that hunting with Weed the God of War was amazing and decided to join without any information.

The Haven Empire's army was approaching so they wondered why he wanted to hunt now. He would only be able to gain 1~2 levels in the next few days.

From Weed's perspective, he was in a hurry to restore his levels.

"Let's go south."

"South? Huh, really surprising. Are you referring to the battlefield of the Haven Empire?"

"Not the southern area of the north. We are going to the southern region of the Versailles Continent."

"That is just desert.... Ah! The quest on the television. You want to hunt based on information obtained from your time in the desert. But won't it take too long to move there? It would be better to take care of some of the surrounding dungeons."

Python disagreed with the travel plans. There were many dungeons near the Earth Palace.

The higher level a user was, the more careful they had to be. They had to carefully collect information about dungeons, quests and hunting. Losing their lives would cause a huge loss so they needed to make rational judgements. So they needed to prepare places to run away in the dungeon when they were at risk from dying.

Weed the God of War might have power but he couldn't just go into dungeons unprepared. But Weed had a rotten smile on his face that was closer to derision after hearing Python's words.

“What is the meaning in achieving an insignificant goal? It should be larger.”

“That is fine but what can you achieve in a day of hunting? Of course, the story would change if there was a long distance teleport gate to the dungeon.”

“I will take care of the travel time. And more important, you should have a goal in life or it will be like eating roasted buns instead of sweet and sour pork for the rest of your life.”

The shadow of death felt deeply sympathetic towards Python. Because they both disliked roasted buns..

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“I...will...kill...this...place...is...originally...Kallamore's...land...”

Van Hawk and the 600 Imperial Doom Knights occupied cities and two fortresses.

“Kikilkil!”

“Uhehehehe!”

The thick walls of the fort found it difficult to stop the rush of the undead. Angry ghosts and Doom Knights passed through the gates or jumped high over the walls.

“Constantly shoot at their feet!”

“Generously sprinkle with holy water, priests pray for God’s power!”

The soldiers of the Haven Empire used flaming arrows. Arrows flew across the dark sky and fell onto the enemy. Lights momentarily flared everywhere and the bodies of skeletons and zombies could be seen.

“Really fun. Shouldn’t I express this fun?”

“Attack, attack, uhehehehe!”

“Ah, it is frustrating. I am a skeleton with no left leg. Are there any leg bones nearby?”

The users participating in the event advanced towards the fortress as undead. There were at least 40,000 undead users participating. Including the bodies of the Versailles Continent’s residents wrapped in the power of the Abyss Knight, there was a total of 100,000 undead!

It was enough troops to form a kingdom in the Central Continent that had been unified by the Haven Empire.

“Skeletons, climb the walls!”

“Kikilkil!”

The skeletons climbed the steep walls with their bony fingers and fought the soldiers. Unless the undead users lost their lives to divine magic or holy water, they would be restored immediately.

The users participating as Doom Knights laughed pleasantly. The users could relieve their stress against the Haven Empire in this event so they were happy!

However, the elite troops of the Haven Empire were prepared to respond to the undead. The Hermes Guild had 30,000 users, 6,000 Imperial knights and the support of the paladins and priests of the Central Continent.

Due to the exclusive quests and funds, they were able to mobilize the troops of the religions on the continent.

“The undead will continue to revive unless we completely remove their roots. The low grade undead don’t matter but we need to address the Abyss Knight Van Hawk and the Doom Knights.

An Abyss Knight was terrifying. Its power was supported by the

Doom Knights.

Time was running out since the Abyss Knight appeared in the Kallamore area. While the Hermes Guild was mobilizing their forces, the undead were getting stronger as more soldiers from the Kallamore Kingdom joined them.

Fortunately, it was relatively easy to deal with the undead using light and divine power. Except for the Hermes Guild users, the soldiers and knights were entirely composed of NPCs.

All the users involved in the battle had their weapons and armour blessed. Silver weapons, armour and supplies piled up in the warehouses were all released.

As the Abyss Knight Van Hawk and the Doom Knights arrived near Hepenia Fortress, the teleport gate there activated.

Pushushuk!

There was an intense light as Bardray arrived at Hepenia Fortress.

“His Majesty the Emperor who rules over a vast territory.”

“The Sword of the Empire and the largest sponsor of the church.”

The NPC knights were respectful as soon as Bardray appeared. The ordinary soldiers and residents of Hepenia Fortress bowed low on the ground

Bardray nodded his head towards the Imperial Knights and paladins.

‘A lot of troops.’

Hepenia was a very large fortress that used to belong to the Kallamore Kingdom. The Hermes Guild had to sacrifice a lot in order to occupy this place.

It wasn't just the height of Hepenia Fortress. It was built against high mountains and cliffs so it was difficult to penetrate. It was equipped with basic defenses like an archers' tower, catapult launchers, a moat and small, narrow windows to prevent the intrusion of enemies.

In many ways, it was difficult to conquer Hepenia Fortress so those who owned it would feel proud. Of course, it still wasn't completely repaired from the damage of the last battle.

‘Those who started in the Haven Empire won't know the difference but this used to belong to the Kallamore Kingdom. There is no time so many things are insufficient. I miss those days a little bit.’

The Hermes Guild users gathered at the fortress once they heard

Bardray come through the teleport gate.

“Is that Bardray?”

“It is the first time I’m seeing him directly and his equipment is really great.”

“The power that dominated the Versailles Continent. How strong is he?”

“Based on the broadcast, he is the strongest in the continent. Even Carlise lost his life. He didn’t just obtain the name of God. Even Weed the God of War couldn’t survive against him.”

Bardray heard a lot of chatter around him. Most of it was praise but some words were filled with envy.

The users belonging to Hermes Guild were proud to be in the presence of Bardray.

‘Yes, this reaction. Soon all of the people on the continent will be showing this reaction!’



Despite the undead’s first attacks, the Hermes Guild waited calmly.

Losing fortresses or cities was a loss for the Haven Empire but they willingly submitted to it. The economic power of the Empire meant that cities could grow in 1~2 days.

Lafaye and the leaders of the Hermes Guild were concerned about the big picture of the Empire. The centre of the area was the Haven Kingdom that promoted production, technology development and trade for the entire central area.

In the early days of Royal Road, each kingdom were held firmly to their area. The continents in the centre flourished economically compared to the undeveloped areas.

There was a long period of time where the prestigious guilds had disputes over those areas. The whole continent was in turmoil until the Haven Empire was established.

Once the continent was unified, the Imperial Palace would start the systematic management. Stable and endless prosperity.

The Hermes Guild's leaders gathered at the Imperial Palace had already thought of a long term plan for ruling.

Of course, most of the east was still recovering from the influence of the Embinyu Church and they were also preparing the army to occupy the southern deserts. In the process, they would accept the knights and soldiers of the kingdoms they conquered.

The leaders of the Haven Empire didn't need to worry about

conquering the east or the south. Despite the war in the north lasting longer than expected, it was being handled perfectly.

“We need a complete victory.”

Bardray and the Royal Guards were going to fight against the Abyss Knight. The top 300 users in the Hermes Guild belonged to the Royal Guards.

The Royal Guards were supported with the best weapons, armour, hunting grounds, skills and research.

“Those guys flocking towards Hepenia Fortress...there are places where the walls of the fortress are crumbled and it will be hard to respond in the darkness.”

They decided to intercept the undead outside the fortress. There was no need to fight the enemy at a fortress that wasn't suitable. The Hermes Guild were filled with pride so that didn't want to be beaten by the undead on these walls.

“Cocoon Valley. If we block all sides then none of the undead will be able to survive.”

Cocoon Valley was an area with tremendous height. It was a wide valley in between beautiful, breathtaking rugged mountains.

The rainy season would cause a river to flow through it. Flowers bloomed among green trees in spring and the scenery would

enough to have hundreds and thousands of visitors. Currently, the water and growth was low so it was a place suitable for large scale combat.

“This place will be the grave of the undead. That is the only value the scenery has.”

The forcers were mobilized after noon and waited for night to arrive. The Hermes Guild arranged their weapons and waited for night time.

Abyss Knight Van Hawk and the undead would appear at night. Soon it was twilight and night fell.

-Wuhihihit.

The ghosts made whining sounds and emerged from the ground. The undead that had been sleeping deep in the ground rose again.

Abyss Knight Van Hawk and the Doom Knights of the Kallamore Kingdom. The undead users actively participating!

-Night is the time of the undead.

Abyss Knight Van Hawk led his undead troops to regain the territory of the Kallamore Kingdom. Today 4,302 new undead users had joined.

“Heh, this will be fun.”

“They are only beggar skeletons.”

“Trample the rebellion. Shatter all their bones.”

This was the Kallamore Kingdom in the Central Continent and the levels of the users in the Hermes Guild were far superior.

They were composed of strong people that had gone through all types of hardships. In the past, the strong players had gathered under the banner of the Hermes Guild. They thought that they were the strongest as they waited for the upcoming battle.

The Abyss Knight invading the Haven Empire was a big issue so the broadcasters decided to play it live.

The worst monster, the Abyss Knight! The strongest Empire on the continent! Many high level users like clouds!

There were already enough elements for success!



Bardray stood at the top of the valley with the Royal Guards. It was a good location to look over the whole battlefield.

Abyss Knight Van Hawk had to break through layers of troops in order to reach him.

He was always escorted by the Royal Guards but now there were an additional unit of Imperial Knights and 5,000 Hermes Guild users acting as protection.

‘Funny. This is a quirky and fresh situation. I had been feeling a bit bored from all the conquest and ruling. Weed must have felt this way after experience numerous quests and events.’

Bardray could feel the tension of the exciting battle.

‘I’ve been looking forward to a battle like this.’

He had pride in defeated numerous strong monsters. He was recognized as the undisputed strongest user on the continent.;

Weed was the symbol of a great battle by using one point attacks but the Black Knight had special skills to stop rebellions. The effort of the Hermes Guild meant that his sword techniques were continuing to evolve.

Bardray was inwardly surprised. His armed forces were growing with increasing speed. One individual had piled up such a military force in Royal Road.

Unfortunately, he was restricted in quests so Weed had stepped up to the level of Warrior Saving the World first. However, if he

was given the opportunity in the future then there was no doubt he would obtain it.

‘My fame will go up if I fight the Abyss Knight.’

Bardray waited for the battle. He wanted to fight but needed to wait for the proper timing. A man should appear in the most important moments of the fight. He would appear with dramatic timing and clear up the situation like Weed.

“They are coming.”

“Prepare to carry out the plan.”

Bardray watched the users busy taking action. The undead were expected to enter through the entrance of the valley below. They couldn't bypass Cocoon Valley.

‘They are a stupid and easy opponent. The attributes of the undead are crucial.’

The undead were widely known as the incarnations of revenge. NPCs were capable of moderately complex thought processes.

For example, a magician would have a lot more knowledge than a merchant. They cherished their own lives, academic goals or gave out certain quests. But the undead didn't think and simple wanted the destruction of the Hermes Guild.

The details of Van Hawk’s past meant they knew his nature. He was a hero of the mighty Kallamore Empire. After somehow becoming lost in darkness, he was appointed by Barkhan as a commander of his Immortal Legion.

Van Hawk’s true ability was his power to exert leadership over the skeletons! A great knight could double the abilities of their soldiers. There were several variables such as loyalty or intimacy but the knights could increase the abilities depending on the situation.

Van Hawk and the Doom Knights were fully trained in that regard. The undead with their capabilities strengthened could crash through the enemies.

Despite being undead, the leaders had considerable intellect. Even if they knew it was a trap, their tendencies to break through meant they would come into the valley.

“This will be a good opportunity.”

Bardray rode a white horse with dignity as he waited for the battle to start.



“Let’s start the operation.”

“Carry out the 1st wave of attacks!”

Kurururung!

Large rocks started to roll down the valley. The Haven Empire had prepared rocks in order to deal with the undead. The rocks quickly rolled down the steep valley and broke through the formation of the undead.

“Kkuek.”

“Aigoo!”

The limbs of the skeletons were broken. Hundreds of skeletons went rolling as they were crushed by the rocks.. Don't read on pirated sites

-Ambushhhh!

The users participating in the event as ghost cried out.

“Kilkil!”

“Is that how you should meet us?”

The skeletons, zombies, dullahans, death knights, ghosts, doom knights and users watched the rocks coming without any tension.

Even if they died, they would be revived with the power of the Abyss Knight! In addition, they welcomed an ambush. The Doom Knights would become stronger from suffering.

It was common to find Doom Knights in the dungeons of the Central Continent. The Abyss Knight Van Hawk's ability was enough to smash walls and gates. The level of the undead users varied and some were senior monsters like Doom Knights.

However, they looked down on the response of the Haven Empire.

The Hermes Guild had the capacity to build an empire and their knowledge of tactics from ancient books was excellent. Even though their opponent was the worst Abyss Knight, they had prepared to respond accordingly.

“Purify this land according to God's will...Proclamation of Holy Land!

“All the wicked and evil can't return to this place, Judgement of the Wicked!”

The priests shouted and aimed their divine magic at the undead. The bodies made of dark mana returned to the earth as the souls were perfectly destroyed.

The priests' divine magic struck down on the valley filled with

undead like pure, white lightning.

“The archers will begin their mission.”

The Haven Empire’s skilled archers launched a barrage of silver arrows. The specialized magician and archer units had helped in their conquest operations.

No matter how excellent the users, they couldn’t escape the intensive attacks hitting the battlefield. The commanders of the ranged troops aimed them at the proper place for active suppression.

The archers of the Haven Empire had the best equipment and received special training so they could shot arrows ten times per minute.

5,000 archers fired silver arrows, causing a huge commotion among the crowd of zombies and skeletons.

There was no armour or shields so it hit the body. The dullahans and death knights didn’t die but the arrows greatly reduced their health.

“Kehehe, not enough. I will have rice porridge with abalone!”

A skeleton hit the arrows with rusty swords.

‘A hero needs this much suffering!’

Jighart started in the Central Continent and joined an ordinary guild. His guild didn't have a fortress so he didn't participate in any wars. But there was a war between the Haven Empire and prestigious guilds so the persecution in the Central Continent became deeper.

Then he had migrated to the north. After a distressful trip, he finally lived a life of happiness in the north.

In the distant past, he had died in the vicinity of Reinstadem and the Abyss Knight revived him to participate in the fight.

Due to the fact that he lost his life in the old days, he only became a skeleton. But he skillfully handled the sword and hit the flying arrows.

The aura of the Abyss Knight made him more powerful.

“Their huge conceitedness! I will show them the power of a skeleton!”

Jighart moved like he was possessed but his body was soon hit by arrows.

-Health has decreased by 2,349.

A holy silver arrow.

This is a critical hit against those with dark inclinations.

Attack power has been reduced by 12%.

Once hit with three or four arrows in a row, his body burned into grey ash and soon disappeared.

The Abyss Knight had control over darkness and could raise the undead again. But the Proclamation of Holy Land and silver arrows meant it took more time than usual.

“My bones are melting so I can’t advance.”

“I only have my pelvis and ankle bone left. I won’t be able to fight.”

“Show those humans the taste of death.”

The undead started to climb the valley without hesitation. Rocks rolled down but they were somewhat safe from the arrows on the steep cliffs.

“Chew on living flesh.”

“Revenge on the Haven Empire!”

The undead players and residents of the Kallamore Kingdom climbed the cliff. The users mixed in with the undead found it interesting and fun.

“A terrible smell is coming!”

“The severe smell of something rotten. Stop the undead from reaching here!”

The army of the Haven Empire screamed.

A strong odour was drifting from the body of the undead. The undead didn't have a nose so they couldn't smell it. However, it was seriously painful for the humans.

“Kilkilkil!”

The undead climbed up bit by bit.

Chapter 4: Emperor Of The Haven Empire

“This is classic and boring.”

Bardray frowned from above the valley.

“It would be nice if the undead weren’t so weak.”

The Haven Empire had prepared excessively for the Abyss Knight and Doom Knights. The 100,000 undead army melted in vain from the divine magic and silver arrows.

Their idea to climb the cliff was stupid. The rocks, arrows and magic meant they couldn’t even climb half of it before rolling back down. The Imperial Knights of the Haven Empire were guarding the cliffs so they undead would just die even if they reached the top.

The Hermes Guild moved at an amazing speed and encircled them. They could easily succeed in cleaning up the undead troops.

This undead army was significantly weaker than the armies of the other guilds and kingdoms that the Haven Empire had faced.

“The levels are too far off. I didn’t want this type of battle.”

He wanted the undead army to be stronger in order to create an amazing scene. The Haven Empire's army could overcome the disadvantage, but they didn't want to take the risk. He just wanted the best scenario to show off his power.

However, Bardray was watching the undead collapse in vain.

Ghosts could fly in the air but were too afraid of the divine magic to approach the cliff.

However, the priests' mana wasn't infinite and half of the silver arrows had been consumed.

“Imperial Knights, charge!”

“Return all the undead to dust.”

“Ohhhh!”

The Imperial Knights rode down the steep slope on horseback as planned. The horses running down the steep slope was like magic. The Imperial Knights of the Haven Empire had excellent horses with special magic.

The knights heading down the cliff burned the undead with their magic swords.

“I will finish them all off.”

“Let the undead know the strength of the Hermes Guild!”

The Hermes Guild users also hurriedly ran down the cliff.

The high level users enjoyed enormous privileges from the Hermes Guild so they never refused any commands to mobilize. Bardray easily gathered users with the highest levels and largest power.

The Abyss Knight was damaging the Central Continent that they conquered so the Hermes Guild gathered their power..

“Come, Hermes villains!”

“I will just revive even if you kill me!”

The undead users cried out as the undead users headed down the cliff.

“Just kicking the undead with my foot would cause the skeleton to decay....! This is a high class swordsmanship skill!”

“Emanation of fierce power, Axe Assault!”

The Hermes Guild used their excellent skills to sweep through the undead like leaves.

“Uhh, unbelievable....”

The skeletons’ hopes and dreams were destroyed in vain. Some were lucky but the undead killed by swords imbued with magic power couldn’t even dream of resurrection.

The gap between the Hermes Guild and the skeletons was too large so they were little help in battle. The death knights, dullahans and soul trackers reinforced by the dark aura withstood several attacks before being destroyed.

Then a low, gloomy voice rang out through the valley.

“Steel knights of the Kallamore Kingdom! Destroy the enemy for the glory of the empire!”

“This...place...take...back... ...But...blessing...part...take...
breathe...that...way...straight...”

“Ha...ven...straight...chew...them...all...!”

The Abyss Knight Van Hawk was marching at the head of the Doom Knights. There was an immediate change to the battlefield.

The dark aura spread out from Van Hawk. His left hand was holding a spear and his right hand a sword as he wielded the weapons against the Hermes Guild.

“The spread of the abyss.”

Before they knew it, the dark aura split into many branches and hit hundreds of users in the Hermes Guild.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

“This much is nothing!”

“Cough!”

The users hit by the dark aura lost their lives. The whole front was devastated. Shields and armour were broken and those that didn't die received serious damage to their health. In their current state, they couldn't even resist the skeletons.

“Strong....”

“This is the real appearance of the legendary monster Abyss Knight!”

The Hermes Guild far away watched with horror as their peers were killed.

“Abyss Knight. I acknowledge that he is moderately strong. But a shallow attack like this, Tirbing is impervious to it!”

A user in the Hermes Guild called Tirbing! A warrior who always came to the front in the battlefield.

-Incomplete Body Wave

All physical damage caused by the enemy will be reduced by 20% and a serious injury can increase defense up to 9 times, depending on the level.

This will affect resilience and other defense skills.

However, there will be a severe loss of skill proficiency if you die.

Restrictions: Restricted to warriors.

600 Resilience or more.

Experience clearing more than 206 dungeons.

A warrior who usually didn't die in battle. He would survive even on battlefields when many people lost their lives.

He dashed hundreds of metres in a straight line towards the enemy as he entered battle mode.

“Abyss Knight, this will be your end!”

Tirbing shouted loudly as he approached the Abyss Knight Van Hawk. Van Hawk stopped emitting the dark aura for a moment.

Tirbing ran towards him wielding a long spear. Once he was roughly 50 metres away from Van Hawk.

All the light was absorbed into the darkness and it was pushed out. A dark spear containing the aura of despair hit Tirbing's chest.

“Keheok! But I don't mind the pain. I can endure it!”

Tirbing was slightly over level 400 while Van Hawk was in the mid-600s.

He was always been compared to Weed but Van Hawk's power was enough to make him one of the boss class monsters on the Versailles Continent. The so-called invisible state!

Nevertheless, Tirbing was able to survive thanks to Incomplete Body Wave.

“This dirty Abyss Knight! I won't be surprised by just this!”

Tirbing's health had declined by 16%. In addition, he had sore legs from running but he didn't show it at all. But that wasn't the extent of Van Hawk's power as he didn't withdraw the spear from Tirbing.

“Uhh?”

Tirbing’s body floated into the air like it was possessed. Van Hawk tied him up with the power of darkness..

-You have been taken captive by the abyss.

Resistance has failed.

You lack faith and concentration.

Strength is low.

Unable to move for 16 seconds.

“Eh? This isn’t....”

From then on, Van Hawk’s spear started to show dazzling movements.

Pabababak! Kwa kwa kwa kwak! Peok! Jjik! Kuuung!

Tirbing fell down into the dirt. And he neatly died!

The difference in levels and being unable to defend meant he

died. It was a shocking sight.

The Hermes Guild panicked in front of the Abyss Knight. The high level users backed by the Hermes Guild had never seen a situation like this before.

“It is time to get revenge for Kallamore. March of the Dead!”

Van Hawk used a collective assault skill. The Doom Knights escorted him towards the Hermes Guild.

“Endure! Soon the priests will support us with the divine magic....”

Seokeok!

“Block their assault!”

Kwajijijik!

“I can’t endure.....”

Kwa kwa kwang!

The users of the Hermes Guild lost their lives to the assault of Van Hawk and the Doom Knights. The Abyss Knight had a level over 600!

And the aura coming from the Abyss Knight focused on the Imperial Knights of the Kallamore Kingdom. The strongest assault troops in the history of the Versailles Continent pierced through the Hermes Guild users.

Even high level monsters couldn't exert this much havoc. The species characteristics and weakness in the flesh meant there were always one or two places for effective attacks.

But the Abyss Knight had returned for the sake of combat.

-The deep despair and anger sleeping in the abyss has burst out.

Humans have their morale reduced by 24%.

Luck has been reduced by 66%.

Mental confusion will decrease the probability of a spell or skill succeeding.

Health recovery rate has slowed.

“Kuwaaaaaah!”

The overall morale was diminished every time a famous user of the Hermes Guild lost their lives. The nature of the knights meant they had higher power than their allies but their loss would shatter

the rest.

Van Hawk and the Doom Knights wiped out the Hermes Guild users descending into the valley.

“Uh, it is staggering. This is the first real assault.”

“In the front. Priests, scatter and avoid them while giving support!”

“Stop them no matter what! If you retreat then the damage will be bigger!”

So far, the Hermes Guild users were slaughtered but the undead assault hadn't slowed down at all. The users lost their lives to Van Hawk in the lead!

The knights at the peak of the Kallamore Empire had been revived as Doom Knights.

In fact, Van Hawk hadn't reached the pinnacle of power as an Abyss Knight. Combat experience would give him more room to grow and his newly acquired Abyss Knight skills hadn't reached the mature state yet. It wasn't a situation where he could strengthen all of the Doom Knights and the undead.

Even so, he was like a surging God of Death to the users. The charge of the Doom Knights that demonstrated explosive speed and destructive power couldn't be stopped.

“They have appeared as planned. Well as expected, they have serious assault abilities.”

“Start the 2nd wave of attacks.”

The Hermes Guild had fought countless battles in the process of conquering the Central Continent. There was also the experience of breaking through dungeons.

The successes and failures had been recorded in the guild's information. They prepared tactics to use against monsters.

A head on confrontation with the Abyss Knight and Doom Knights would be a burden. This wasn't a narrow dungeon where they couldn't avoid the opponent. They needed to decide a target to concentrate the attacks on.

“Carry out the attack!”

Buuuuuuuuh!

An uninterrupted horn sound echoed through the valley. From this point onwards, the target of all the ranged attacks from the Hermes Guild users were aimed towards Van Hawk and the Doom Knights.

Unless the undead were killed with holy magic or silver arrows,

they would just continue to revive again. In order to fully subdue the undead army, they had to take care of Van Hawk.

A heavy shower of attacks fell towards Van Hawk and the Doom Knights.

“That won’t be enough. Have the priests be prepared.”

“I understand.”

The senior priests chanted divine magic in order to give support.

“God, give us permission to liberate all the evil here...free those steeped in darkness and pain!”

-This land has been declared the sanctuary of the god Atrock.

All those fighting the darkness will feel the effect of divine power.

The effect of combat skills will be enhanced by 32%.

Maximum health will increase up to 150% according to faith.

The effect of divine magic will increase and the amount of mana used will be halved.

All the undead will receive a blow to their health from 20% up to 65%!

A sanctuary declaration!

It was a spell that distorted all dark magic in the area.

“Good.”

“A clean and perfect preparation.”

“We will make the Abyss Knight cry.”

The high level users of the Hermes Guild were waiting for this moment. They had promised to yield the Abyss Knight to Bardray in advance. But it wouldn't be bad to play an active role in the broadcast.

“2nd and 3rd attack troops, march!”

An fierce struggle broke out between the Imperial Knights and the users of the Hermes Guild. The dispatched troops were supported with divine magic and ranged attacks but knew they had to look after their bodies to survive.

Bardray and his specifically selected high level Royal Guards waited quietly for the Abyss Knight. 10 minutes passed and the number of general undead was reduced by half.

The undead were vulnerable to the divine magic entering the valley. Despite the valley being a Hermes Guild combat outpost, the users had a minimum of level 300 and quite a significant amount were over level 400.

Van Hawk and his Doom Knights survived longer.

“Why are they so strong?”

“Damn. There is really no answer to that assault.”

The users of the Hermes Guild realized the strength of the legendary monster, the Abyss Knight.

In fact, they had been contemptuous of the Abyss Knight while watching Weed’s adventures. During the warring people, Van Hawk obediently followed orders or else he was beaten. Weed was sweeping through the Central Continent on a special quest so they didn’t realize it.

However, they finally felt the presence of the Abyss Knight and Doom Knights after facing the assault.

But the Hermes Guild had only 30,000 users gathered here! Knights , warriors, martial artists, rangers and magicians all continued their attacks against the Abyss Knight.

“Push them back!”

“Unconditionally attack. Move quickly to lower their health instead of encircling them!”

Nearly 100,000 undead had been destroyed since the battle started. The undead users had played heartily but this stage was too big for them. Most of them were melted by divine magic and forbidden from being resurrected.

The Abyss Knight Van Hawk and Hermes Guild were the only undead still actively moving in the valley.

Both sides of the valley were blocked with priests and paladins and there were dozens of layers of obstacles and troops.

However, the undead had the stamina to fight all day. But the loss of energy would make the special dark skills unusable.

“Armoured troops move forward!”

“Shield troopers, start your assault.”

The Hermes Guild users gathered together according to their profession and started small formations. The Doom Knights were devastated by the enemy and lost their lives one by one.

“The...spi...rit...of...Kall...a...more...won't...die...”

“Van...Haw...k...sec...ond...life...turn...ed...out...like...this....”

Doom Knights in the assault formation were turned to grey ash. If the Abyss Knight gathered enough power of darkness then they could be fully revived again. But the Hermes Guild called the priests to cleanse the area, delaying the revival time.

They couldn't completely block the Abyss Knight's power source. But it was enough if they could delay the revival of his subordinates for a few hours.

Van Hawk struggled as the Hermes Guild users swarmed him. He swung a dark spear at least 10 metres long.

“Come. I will destroy the Haven Kingdom! I'll show you what a Kallamore knight is!”

The energy of the abyss tore through the Hermes Guild users near it. The priests spread shields made out of divine magic that could reduce the damage.

20,000 Hermes Guild users were concentrating their attacks on Van Hawk. Despite being a favourable situation for the high level users, 10,000 people had already died due to the Abyss Knight and Doom Knights.

“Uh...a really awful monster.”

“Is it still not dead?”

They were shocked as 1,000 people collapsed like straw under the Abyss Knight’s assault. If it wasn’t for the help of the divine power, more people would have died.

‘How the hell did Weed win against the Immortal Legion?’

‘This guy is at a similar level to Barkhan. Then we are weak. Or is Weed more powerful than us?’

The best players among the Hermes Guild heavily questioned it. However, there was a very big difference between Van Hawk and Barkhan.

Barkhan could raise high ranking undead legions equipped to fight the entire Haven Empire. Barkhan’s ability to summon a near unlimited number of undead would shine in a big war. Weed had betrayed from the inside while Geomchi decreased his health. The undead army was weakened and shattered.

On the other hand, Van Hawk could make the most of his subordinates’ abilities in combat. The enemy picked a good place to deal with him but many of them were sacrificed in a short time.

Van Hawk’s amazing military force made the heart of the Hermes Guild members who were certain of victory sink down in their chests. Despite being certain of victory, they couldn’t help feeling scared of the Abyss Knight.

The users gradually withdrew.

“Finish him!”

“Show the continent the power of the Haven Empire!”

Van Hawk brandished his spear at the remaining Imperial Knights and destroyed them. The majesty of the worst undead, the Abyss Knight!

“Now who will attack?”

“How quickly can he recover?”

“Damn, I don’t know. But I don’t want to fight him.”

The Hermes Guild users that counted among the top 100 on the Versailles Continent had gathered in this place. But none of them could fight against Van Hawk.

Of course, that was also true for Bardray.

‘Now it is the turn of my group.’

The low ranking undead that he wasn’t interested in had already disappeared. He had watched while trying to find a gap in the

Abyss Knight and Doom Knight troops.

Bardray could effortlessly take care of the Doom Knights and deal significant damage to Van Hawk. He had the best blessing spells on him, wore undead focused equipment and mobilized the Royal Guards so he didn't need to fight alone.

However, he had seen Van Hawk take care of 100 people alone.

‘I will wait a little more.’

A persistent amount of arrows and magic were pouring towards Van Hawk. There were no other undead or Doom Knights so the magicians and archers concentrated their attacks on Van Hawk.

However, it was hard to tell if Van Hawk was damaged. The dark aura moved like a ghost and hid the body so it was difficult to tell. Van Hawk was fighting alone but 800 Hermes Guild users had already died.

‘I will wait until he slows down. Anyway, this battle is already won.’

Bardray folded his arms while riding the white horse and looked up at the sky. The stars in the night sky were dazzling but the world was still dark. Van Hawk would be finished by the time sun came up.

‘The group needs to hunt more to avoid the same thing

happening again today.'

Bardray was level 510. He could attempt to resist the Abyss Knight.

But it would be humiliating if he lost his life. The damage to his level and skill proficiency would be huge and the scene would also appear on broadcast.

The Abyss Knight was a strong monster but he was the Emperor that united the Central Continent. Losing his life wasn't a very pleasant experience.

'It will be silly to take unnecessary risks just to look courageous. It would be truly ridiculous if the Emperor of the Haven Empire dies while dealing with the undead. Just a little more.'

Bardray was a little disappointed and annoyed that he couldn't have a more perfect victory.

“.....”

“What will happen in this battle? Should we start acting?”

The high level users of the Hermes Guild and the Royal Guards noticed where Bardray was looking.

Meanwhile, the battle was continuing! Van Hawk had killed

more than 1,000 Imperial Knights and Hermes Guild users.

Van Hawk was weakened by the divine power and was in the worst state. The divine magic reduced the health of the undead as well as their strength and energy.

-A sacred aura has surrounded your body.

The powers of darkness can't be used until the next night.

Van Hawk no longer received the power of darkness that rose up from the abyss. The body's protective abilities weakened and they could see that the armour had turned into rags.

The summoning of a black horse was canceled.

"I am tired. But it is still enough to handle the Haven dogs."

The Abyss Knight Van Hawk leaned his body against the spear.

The enemies looking down on the valley.

"Ohhhh."

None of the Hermes Guild users stood a chance against him. The previous attacks had proven that the first person to go against Van Hawk would die!

Most of the damage came from successful ranged attacks. The users who attempted close combat lost their lives to Van Hawk's spear.

Van Hawk couldn't attack randomly anymore as he only had 10% health left. The Abyss Knight was gradually approaching his end.

“.....”

Eyes gradually turned towards Bardray.

The combat commanders and high level users of the Hermes Guild knew that Bardray wanted to finish off the Abyss Knight. Even if Bardray had nothing to do with the victory, the users had promised him in advance.

Soon the atmosphere changed to all of the Hermes Guild staring at him.

‘It can't be helped.’

Bardray checked his status before riding down the valley.

“Waaaaaah!”

The Hermes Guild members cried out. It was a cry of surprise at the sight of the white horse coming down the cliff.

Of course, this situation was deliberately directed by Bardray.

“We must win.”

“It was very dangerous.”

The Royal Guards following Bardray whispered among themselves. In their eyes, they couldn't allow Bardray to be beaten.

The strongest warrior Bardray. His individual ability played a role in conquering the continent but he was also the symbol of the Hermes Guild.

Bardray was the solid roots of the Haven Empire so he couldn't lose his life. The Hermes Guild users split apart as Bardray and the Royal Guards headed towards the Abyss Knight.

“Hrmm.”

The tension heightened as they neared the Abyss Knight.

Van Hawk said towards the incoming Bardray.

“King of the Fools, you've finally set out.”

Bardray smiled without any apparent concern. This moment

would ring in the chest of the people viewing the broadcast.

“The undead blinded by revenge, I will show you the might of the Emperor that dominated the continent.”

“An emperor. Someone who uses force to trample on the weak, aren’t you deluding yourself?”

“I am the right person to end the war on the chaotic continent. Undead, you have forgotten about human laws.”

“I know. I know it very well. You are not qualified to compete with me.”

Bardray clenched his teeth. It was true that the Hermes Guild had done some vile things while extending the Haven Empire. They deliberately betrayed their guild alliances and destroyed any non-aggression treaties.

However, there was no one that could stop the behaviour of their guild. Van Hawk was questioning Bardray’s qualifications as an Emperor was the problem.

The Black Knight was a profession with outstanding leadership skills. It was hard to find a combat profession better than this but he had abandoned chivalry when he betrayed a lord.

Despite climbing to the seat of Emperor, his legitimacy was questionable. There was a special emperor’s quest to overcome this

but Bardray hadn't performed it yet. The quest would take too much time and he believed he could show his true force through hunting.

No matter how strong his army was, the effect on his fame could be seen by Van Hawk's reaction.

"I will prove my qualifications by getting rid of you."

"That is impossible."

"You won't know until we fight. Emperor Bardray of the Haven Empire, I challenge the Abyss Knight."

"You are entitled to ask for an honourable fight. Bring it on."

Van Hawk rushed towards Bardray on a white horse. And the battle between the two of them! Bardray violently struck downwards with his sword and it impacted with Van Hawk's spear.

Chaeeng!

It was to the extent that a huge shockwave passed through the earth. And the Abyss Knight was pushed back slightly.

This was because he had lost the power of darkness from the abyss.

‘It is possible. The overwhelming resistance is gone.’

There was a smile on Bardray’s face. He quickly stabbed his sword three times.

Van Hawk blocked it with his spear every time.

“Give me your neck.”

Van Hawk also struck back but his attack bounced off Bardray’s sword. It was a fierce and quick exchange of offense and defense. Bardray brandished his sword at least twenty times.

“Sword Awakening, Strong Will, Summon Another Sword and Power of Birth!”

When any other opponent, he would originally pretend to fall back. But now he was greedy to kill the Abyss Knight.

The Abyss Knight had clearly been weakened.

“Be careful. From now on, my attacks won’t be so simple.”

“Wicked and rude person, be careful what you say to an Abyss Knight. Soon the sun will rise and those words will be meaningless.”

This was what Bardray had hoped for. Once the sun rose, Van Hawk would disappear and then reappear in the evening.

“Golden Lion Sword!”

Van Hawk’s health was gradually reduced during the duel. There was a 150 level difference between them but Van Hawk was already seriously weakened.

Bardray’s sword emitted a brilliant light like the rays of the sun, causing Van Hawk’s body to shake violently. He was holding Lugh’s Sword!

Weed had returned it to the Church of Lugh after removing it from Barkhan’s body. The original divine power of the sword had been restored in Argoldia and the Hermes Guild used their contributions to borrow it.

“This sword...this sword!”

“Today is the day you will rest in peace.”

Bardray continued wielding Lugh’s Sword. The spear of the Abyss Knight didn’t have the power of darkness anymore so he could withstand the damage. Furthermore, Lugh’s Sword had the power to recover his health.

‘It is stable. I will thoroughly finish this. There won’t be any mistakes.’

The undead couldn’t resist Lugh’s Sword. Bardray paid attention to any tight gaps in the defense and counterattacked when possible.

The Abyss Knight’s health was already reduced so there was no need to be greedy. Considering Van Hawk’s actions so far, he was assured of his success.

The Hermes Guild had witnessed their members being massacred so the scene was even more breathtaking to them. Everyone was surprised when he would unleash an explosive attack against Van Hawk.

Bardray was committed to doing his best so he had no need to create more tension on purpose.

The battle lasted 10 minutes before Van Hawk’s health was depleted. Finally, the spear dropped and Bardray was assured of his victory.

“The Kallamore Kingdom shall forever belong to the Haven Empire. Undead, return to the abyss and disappear!”

“I might have failed but Kallamore will return some day. Ahh...it is a shame!”

Bardray stabbed Lugh's Sword into Van Hawk's chest. And the divine light that shone brightly!

Ddiring!

-Your level has risen.

-Your level has risen.

-The Abyss Knight Van Hawk born from the deep despair and anger of the abyss has been destroyed.

The power of darkness in the abyss will spread.

After the Abyss Knight has fallen, Doom Knights will randomly appear in the Haven Empire for sporadic resistance for 1 month.

-Fame has increased by 5,402 due to the great achievement.

-Charisma has increased by 6.

-Fighting Spirit has increased by 5.

-You have experienced a great victory.

The proficiencies of the skills used in the fight against the Abyss Knight will increase by a minimum of 3% up to 15%.

-This glorious battle has been recorded in the Haven Empire's records and all those who participated in the battle will gain 6 stats.

-You have achieved victory against the Abyss Knight Van Hawk.

Bards on the Versailles Continent will sing songs of admiration about your amazing battle.

The loyalty of the residents will climb every time the song is spread and crime rates will reduce.

Honour has increased by 35.

The nobles of the Haven Empire will no dream of revolting.

-Resistance in the Kallamore and Britten Alliance areas of the Haven Empire has been reduced.

Rebels that emerge will be suppressed.

-Title! Emperor on the Battlefield has been obtained.

Morals aren't necessary when establishing a large empire.

Knowing when to take advantage of fear and oppression is an

important virtue.

Before the empire fell into chaos, you stood directly on the battlefield and removed the dangerous elements.

The strong determination will increase the morale of the soldiers up to 13% and residents will be forced to obey.

The ability of your subordinates in battle will increase by 6%.

-The Breastplate of Bitterness has been acquired.

-Helmet of the Abyss has been acquired.

-Gloves with a Poignant Grudge has been acquired.

Bardray stood idly for a moment.

So far, he had hunted many strong monsters on the Versailles Continent. Nevertheless, he have never felt any thrill like when he had killed the Abyss Knight.

Soon the sound of the Hermes Guild users cheering echoed through Cocoon Valley.

“Hooray His Majesty!”

“Bardray-nim chopped up the Abyss Knight!”

“The Hermes Guild is unbeatable!”

Their battle had ended with a complete victory. Those who were involved in the battle also gained stats as a bonus.

The members of the Hermes Guild cheered. They received significant damage but it was worth it to take care of the Abyss Knight.

Bardray also had a satisfied smile on his face.

Chapter 5: Encounter With Subordinates

-We must fight. If we lose the north then we won't have anywhere to go!

-Struggle until the end. We shouldn't give up.

The users flocked to the Earth Palace to fight against the Haven Empire. Weed the God of War had returned but they weren't sure of victory.

Of course, there were so many people that room ran out.

"I lost my shack. Should I build another shack?"

"I'm not going to bother with a shack. The other day I just slept in the alley."

"Was the sunshine good?"

"I think it would be better in the hills. But it has been raining since dawn."

"The Arpen Kingdom is good to us. We can't have it taken away by those Hermes guys."

"Shall we eat grass porridge?"

“I’ve never tasted anything better.”

“That’s right. I ate a toadstool porridge and almost died.”

Whether they were beginners or had a high level, the northern users headed towards the Earth Palace.

“This is for Weed.”

“The Arpen Kingdom is where we live.”

The northern users gathered after Weed returned. As shown through the broadcast, the Earth Palace would be the front line between the Haven Empire.

“His Majesty has entered the Earth Palace grounds. But a lot of supplies are necessary. Perhaps he is thinking of doing business?”

“Of course. I want to sell a bunch of weapons cheaply.”

“Then I’ll buy some of them. It would be nice to be a small help to His Majesty.”

-General Store’s Favour

Peka, a resident of the Arpen Kingdom is worried about his

future due to the Haven Empire's invasion.

Monsters have chased him in the past as his family wandered after the kingdom collapsed.

But they overcame all the difficulties and found a king who loves art and adventure.

Transport this material to the Earth Palace for Peka.

Level of Difficulty: E

Quest Restrictions: General store owner Peka's faith.

After Weed called the army to the Earth palace, quests were generated everywhere to transport materials!

"His Majesty has called. I will polish my sword and go fight at this moment!"

"I, the Horad Clan's third son will go and defend the Arpen Kingdom despite only being an apprentice knight!"

Many residents voluntarily headed towards the Earth Palace in large quantities.

Weed was the centre of the Arpen Kingdom and the residents

found it a pleasure to follow the true king. This was evidence that his influence had spread all over the kingdom.

In addition, the king's art related profession played a large role.

“Haven Kingdom, they are the bad guys.”

“Ya! Make Bardray's statue have larger nostrils!”

Painters and sculptors were mobilized to incite patriotism with works against the Haven Empire. While culture might seem weak, it was the driving force behind their tenacity when fighting the invaders.

Thus numerous people headed to the Earth Palace when something gleamed like jewels in the sky. Sunlight reflected off huge, oversized wings, causing numerous colours to shine.

“Huh, what is that?”

“Look at that. There are even wyverns following.”

“Then...Bingryong made out of cold ice!”

“Hooray the Arpen Kingdom!”

The users and residents walking towards the Earth Palace raised

their hands and cheered.

Bingryong and the wyverns were flying in the sky.

Among the users in the north, there was no one who didn't know Weed's origin story! He developed Morata from a small village to the Arpen Kingdom with the help of the sculptural lifeforms.

Bingryong and the wyverns were heading into the Earth Palace. Riding the wyverns were sculptural lifeforms like the high elf Eltin, the barbarian Gernika and the swordswoman Vindex. In particular, there was those that rode the first class Wy-3 like Goldman, Cerberus and Seville.

And following behind them was Phoenix with a long stream of fire. A giant piece of flame. A warm aura spread through the sky as they flew.

Due to their nature, the users had never had close contact with some of the sculptural lifeforms.

“Kuoooooh!”

After that, the King Hydra with 9 heads was crushing the forest. The King Hydra was tired from defending the frontier of the Arpen Kingdom alone.

“Hey, second head. What are your hobbies?”

“Swallowing monsters whole.”

“Huh, that hobby is like mine.”

“I’m the seventh head, same here.”

“Stop talking about food. Now I am hungry.”

“I’m also hungry.”

The 9 heads of the King Hydra became friends with each other. And now they were playing among themselves as they headed to the Earth Palace.

Dududududu!

This time, the users saw an enormous cloud of dust from far away.

“Now what is it?”

“I don’t know. But the scale is enormous.”

The cloud of dust was heading towards the Earth Palace. There were a countless number of cattle.

Ummoooooooo!

“Who is your father?”

“I don’t know. My mother was hanging around Yellowy.”

“My mother also spent the night with Yellowy and give birth to me and my sisters.”

Yellowy caused a boom in the number of cattle in the Arpen Kingdom. The perfect musculature and energy, Yellowy was the envy of all cows. Herds of cattle with good pedigree wandered the meadows and hills and grew up.

The calves that Yellowy gave birth to headed towards the Earth Palace. Then the cattle were darkened by the shadow of the Sky Island Laviyas over them.

The avians were moving the entire island in the direction of the Earth Palace. The avians were cute, had excellent combat power and could easily travel long distances so they were the species that many preferred.

Millions of users in the vicinity of Laviyas flew around and tweeted. The avians flying through the countryside could be seen even when the lights were turned on at night.

“We are the Arpen Kingdom.”

“Amazing.”



Weed created some sculptures while his companions finished their preparations for a hunt.

“Time Sculpting!”

-Time Sculpting Beginner Level 3(79%).

Age Sculpting.

This skill will add a long amount of time to a sculpture. Sometimes this time will add value to the sculpture.

It will also stop the sculpture from being naturally damaged over time.

“I could only raise the proficiency of sculpting by one level in this short amount of time.”

He didn’t want to make Masterpieces of Magnum Opus. Once he finished a piece, he would apply Time Sculpting! Sculptures would become more valuable over time.

He started with a wooden duck, a jade bowl and a gold doll of a girl.

There were several warehouses in the Earth Palace filled with materials that the king could freely access. He had to worry about property and the loyalty of the residents but this level of luxury and pleasure was the privilege of the king!

“Inspect!”

-New Short Beak

A statue of a violently angry bird.

A piece made by the most famous sculptor in the history of the continent.

For some reason, the production year can't be determined.

The piece seems to have lasted for a long time but it seems to be quite popular among antique collectors.

Artistic Value: 17

“Hrmm.”

Weed discovered the benefits of Time Sculpting.

“I can sell them as antiques.”

The best skill to produce fake antiques! He could mass produce and distribute fake antiques that seemed to be from the Niflheim Empire or the warring period.

“This is a delicious, minor piece.”

Familiar visitors arrived while he was making the sculptures.

“Master-nim, I knew you would return safely. I polished my sword skills while loyally waiting for Master-nim. Let’s go chop up the enemy. The enemies won’t be able to escape in front of my sword!”

It was the knight Seville who he gave life to in Jigolaths.

“Uh, yes.”

Weed couldn’t help being reminded of Hestiger as he looked at Seville’s handsome appearance. A well behaved subordinate was excellent to command.

But unfortunately, Seville was just like the human Hestiger. A handsome, competent and knowledgeable type that was popular among girls!

“Ummoooooooo!”

“It has been a long time, gol gol gol. I wanted to see you so much. Don’t leave us again. ”

“Bark bark!”

Yellowy, Goldman and even Cerberus came in. Goldman shone brightly and he had Golden Bird and Silver Bird perched on his shoulders.

It was nostalgic meeting with his sculptural lifeforms again.

“You....”

One side of Weed’s mouth rose. He missed them but he also felt a surge of annoyance when looking at them.

“You ate well.”

“Of course. I ate well, gol gol!”

The sculptural lifeforms truly believed he was impressed. They hadn’t met in a long time so they believed Weed would feed them.

They felt like Weed had changed a lot from the past. It meant their master also missed them.

“I thought so. You ate the rice I cooked without thinking!”

“.....’

“Yellowy, I told you to take care of your body but look at your hind legs and ribs that have turned greasy.”

He crushed Yellowy’s spirit in one go!

“Ummoooooooo.”

Yellowy’s eyes became wide as he blinked.

“Goldman, have you been hunting to become stronger?”

“Of course, gol gol. I lived in the hunting grounds.”

Goldman confidently replied. He had experienced death in the past so he fought hard so that he wouldn’t suffer that again. New skills were developed so he wanted to be praised.

“I’ve learned some new skills in the meantime. Gol gol.”

“What is it?”

“Eating a gold pill will make me stronger for a short period of time. It also increases my health, gol gol gol.”

“D-don’t tell me you really used it?”

“It is completely good. I use it all the time while hunting.”

“You really want to die!”

Weed was in severe despair from his sculptural lifeforms.

“Where are Bingryong and the wyverns?”

“They are out there.”

Bingryong and the wyverns were flying in the vicinity of the palace. They often broke windows and buildings from their large size in Morata and had heard a lot of nagging about it.

Weed laid his hands on his forehead.

“These guys really aren’t reliable. They are causing plenty of trouble early on. Fortunately, none of them died in my absence.”

Then the warrior Gernika said.

“Not long ago, a steed was found in the kingdom. I got motion

sickness while hanging on from the white horns because it moves very quickly when it spreads its wings.”

“So? Are you saying the value is incredibly expensive?”

“Wy-1 ate it.”

“The whole thing?”

“Wy-1 even burped after eating it perfectly.”

“.....How about Bingryong?”

The high elf Eltin spoke shyly.

“Bingryong’s body made a mess out of the herb garden. All of them became useless.”

“All?”

“Everything.”

Weed’s hand was on his forehead.

It was like a scene from a drama where the president of a company suffered from high blood pressure and seemed to be collapsing. It was due to a family member or employee. This drama

was reflected in reality.

Then there was a dark aura and the Death Knight Van Hawk appeared.

“Master!”

“You...how are you here? Weren’t you supposed to be attacking the Haven Empire as an Abyss Knight?”

Weed was puzzled. He had been so busy creating sculptures that he hadn’t listened to the news of the Versailles Continent in real time.

“I lost.”

“No, why did you lose so quickly?”

“I wanted to restore the glory of the Kallamore Empire but was defeated by the Emperor of the other side.”

Weed’s body started shaking.

“An Abyss Knight could be called a strong existence in this time. Does it make sense that you are already defeated?”

“There were too many enemies.”

“If there are many enemies then use guerrilla tactics. Use the speed and breakthrough abilities of the Abyss Knight and Doom Knights! Sweep everything away. Don’t tell me it was just a frontal confrontation? What type of battlefield were you in that you couldn’t break away?”

“I was in a valley with the opponents above me. However, I wanted to show them the bravery of the Kallamore Knights.”

“.....”

“Many knights of the Kallamore Empire were killed in vain. I brought them all back.”

“So you died?”

“You don’t understand my words. Once again, there were too many enemies.”

“Your subordinates?”

“Wiped out. The few left behind in occupied territories can’t hold out for long.”

Van Hawk who was the commander of the dark army scratched his skull with embarrassment. And Weed didn’t say anything for a while.

He had a special relationship with his sculptural lifeforms and Van Hawk. It was beyond that of subordinates. In other words, it was more like parent and child.

“The world has completely changed. That is the truth, you brat.”

Weed’s sense of loss was very big. Only complaints came pouring out.

Yellowy watched his master mourning and said.

“Umooooo, I had a lot of calves. I’m not just saying this, but my calves are very manly.”

“They are bulls from head to tail. Well done.”

“But they eat a lot.”

“Yellowy, calves have to eat a lot in order to grow larger. Grow up quickly so that they can be used.”

“They are eating from Morata’s grain fields....”

“.....”



Although there were a few twists and turns, Weed concentrated on mass production of antique sculptures and barely managed to raise Time Sculpting to beginner level 4.

It was the final secret sculpting technique so the proficiency wasn't rising that quickly. Then he took his hunting companions and moved them to the vicinity of the Desert of Tranquility.

He could take his sculptural lifeforms but he was pressed for time and needed colleagues that he could hunt quickly with.

“This isn't the desert.”

Python had a surprised expression as he looked around

“I heard there was a desert in the north but it was really close to the Earth Palace. I didn't expect to go there.

“We are going to the south of the Versailles Continent. Near the Desert of Tranquility.”

“What? Then we have to move completely across the continent. Really?”

“Trust me.”

Yurin drew a picture on a piece of paper and used Picture

Teleportation, giving Python a completely novel experience. But the instant he arrive, his breath clogged up and he was appalled by the heat.

“This is really hot. I can only take small breaths.”

The man who didn't reveal his name laboriously said.

At first, they thought it was just the hot sun shining down but soon the sand started to feel like a boiling hotplate.

‘This is the entrance to hell. And I can probably endure. Weed-nim will make us suffer until we are on the verge of death.’

Pale was already quietly stringing his bow without any protests. Weed was the senior adventurer and said.

“Well, it is better than the cold.”

“.....”

He had been through a lot and concluded that the cold was worse! There was a rapid reduction in vitality due to the heat penalty but his perseverance and resilience rose in the desert.

The nameless man turned around and asked.

“Then where are the hunting grounds? Are we catching monsters passing through here?”

“In the desert, constellations and unusual terrain will identify the location of things like oases. There is a dungeon that way. It isn’t too far.”

Weed pointed in the direction of the floating, intense sun.

“This isn’t the exact direction. A lot could have changed.”

“When did you last see it?”

“I don’t have the exact date but it should be between 500~700 years ago on the Versailles Continent....”

“Wouldn’t time have completely changed the terrain?”

“This is a rich place. There are plenty of dungeons in the field.”

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

“Rapid gait, summoning the lion that runs on sand!”

Thanks to Alveron’s divine magic, they arrived at the hunting grounds in just 5 minutes. There was the opening to a cave in the sand covered hills.

There were many strong existences in the desert so it was a good hunting ground. It was because they had to overcome the environment in order to survive. “We will enter here.”

Python, the nameless man, Pale, Alveron and Weed moved into the cave without thinking.

Kurururung!

At that moment, the soil collapsed and covered the dungeon entrance.

Ddirring!

-The Hot Underground Dungeon has been discovered.

This is a very old dungeon. This dungeon no longer remains in people's memories or books.

It has been a very long time since human traces have come here. Or have any prey come along.

Benefits: Fame has increased by 698.

Experience and item drops will double for a week.

The first monster killed of each type will drop the rarest item.

“It is a trap!”

Python pulled out his sword with surprise and Weed said calmly.

“Desert dungeons are originally like this. The entrances are blocked so we can’t go out that way. The paths aren’t complicated and we just have to go in a straight line to fight the monsters.

Pale calmly asked a question.

“How will the monsters come out?”

“Well, we just need to get rid of them or else they will stack up.”

Weed had come here during his days as ruler of the desert. At that time, he had found the dungeon but no one discovered it for a long time so the entrance had changed.

Now he could benefit from x2 experience from the monsters.

In the past, giant poisonous scorpions appeared so it was a fairly decent hunting ground. They were level 500 so it wouldn’t have any effect on the high levelled desert king. But right now, the hunting party’s level was in the 400s so it was a perfect hunting ground.

They were human companions, not sculptural lifeforms so they could take care of themselves.

Weed told his colleagues.

“This is a battle for survival while we drill our way out. If anyone slacks off or is in severe danger then I won’t help you. At a minimum, decent proficiency in your skills are required.”

“What would happen if I did during it?”

“I will bring a new colleague.”

“I like this attitude!”

“I will go first. Follow me and take care of it.”

And the battle began!

Weed was familiar with the monsters due to their encounters in the desert but the others weren’t.

The giant poisonous scorpion had a hard shell as armour. It quickly alternated between attacks with its two sharp claws and stinging tail. If they were hit by the stinger then their health would decrease by 20,000~30,000. The solid body and fast attack speed made it a dangerous and tricky monster.

On the other hand, they also had weaknesses. If the joints or connection between shells were attacked then it was surprisingly easy for them to lose their lives.

“Radiant Sword!”

Weed fought using a sword of light.

‘Accurately. There should be no mistakes. My level means that I stray attack can kill me.’

He needed to concentrate against the strong attacks of the giant poisonous scorpions. He had already used Sculptural Destruction to increase his vitality.

He purposely didn’t increase his strength or agility. Thanks to vitality increasing by at least 20 times, he wouldn’t become tired no matter how much he fought.

-The 8th continuous attack has succeeded.

The giant poisonous scorpion has been destroyed.

An incredible victory has been recorded.

Fame has increased by 1.

Due to handling the giant poisonous scorpion in the shortest amount of time, agility has increased by 1.

He saw the prey and ate it!

“Lululu!”

Weed’s battles were fast and accurate. It was much easier doing this again.

Although his attack power wasn’t comparable to when he was in the desert, he used his experience to skillfully take advantage of their weaknesses.

Alveron and Pale were close behind Weed.

“Divine will, block the poison.”

Alveron used divine magic towards to attack the scorpion or used protection magic on his colleagues.

Alveron was the pope candidate of the Freya Church. Although his power couldn’t be compared to Saint Ahellun, he was much stronger than general users.

Alveron’s divine magic was used continuously and the effect was several-fold because of its purity. In addition, his sincerity meant he never slacked off.

“Piercing Ice Arrow!”

Pale fired an arrow at the mouth of the poisonous scorpion and it pierced through.

Tutututung!

It went through the bodies of 5 giant poisonous scorpions in a row.

“Weed-nim!”

“I know.”

Weed smashed his sword against the frozen bodies of the giant poisonous scorpions. He wore the Daemon Sword instead of the sword made by the red dragon, the Red Star. In the case of the Red Star, its nature meant that he needed to minimize its use while taking advantage of the weak points during hunting.

Kwajajang!

-The critical hit was successful.

The frozen monsters have received full damage.

12 times the damage has been shown.

The monster has been removed.

1 combat fame has been acquired.

Arrows with ice magic were quite expensive but it ensured there was the effect of ice magic.

Weed, Alveron and Pale quickly passed through a cave of giant poisonous scorpions. The scorpions dug out from the ground, through walls or repelled down from the ceiling.

Van Hawk and Torido were also summoned in order to help.

“Hrmm, I like this. I’ll take care of it!”

Python belatedly pulled out a greatsword and followed. He didn’t use any sophisticated techniques on the giant poisonous scorpions. He just used a tremendous amount of power to smash the poisonous scorpion.

An ordinary monster wouldn’t be able to deal with the power of his greatsword. Despite the hard shell being intact, there was still cumulative damage.

“The health of the monster is lower than it seems. Well, perhaps I just fought really well?”

“Don’t eat ramyun without drinking the soup. It will be starting from now on.”

Python was surprised to see the giant poisonous scorpions in the area. The scorpions covered the walls, ceiling and floor.

‘You really can’t go back in this dungeon. In the worst situation, we will be trapped.’

Python controlled his spirit. He attacked any scorpions running or jumping towards him. If he didn’t properly hit the giant poisonous scorpion then he would pay the price.

The nameless man melted into the shadows. He showed up behind a red scorpion and accurately stuck a dagger into the underbelly.

It was an assassin’s typical attack pattern so none of his hunting colleagues were surprised. An assassin was a profession that tried to hide themselves as much as possible. By wearing casual clothes inside a dungeon, it couldn’t be determined if they were magicians, priests, thieves or assassins.

Weed’s movement speed didn’t acknowledge the people who accompanied him for the first time.

“Slow. A second yawn is already emerging so move more quickly.”

‘Then...’

‘Right now this is considered slow?’

They were walking fast enough to be called a run in the dungeon. There was no time for scouting, let alone a break or leisurely chat.

They just ran into the middle of a monster infested place being moving on. Python and the nameless man followed behind while managing their health, vitality and mana.

If they drained their mana using a wide area skill then it would take longer dealing with a group of giant poisonous scorpions.

Whenever Weed slowed down, Pale would support him by shooting arrows. The monsters were overflowing and they had no time to linger. Loot and experience points were acquired from the fights.

It was a huge performance with the best results but Alveron’s divine magic was also incredible. Their hands and feet quickened and hunting speed improved. They started cooperating and soon passed through the dungeon.

‘I am dumbfounded. Originally I didn’t believe in my colleagues.... Normally their bodies would stiffen in a dangerous place like this with so many monsters. If they are only concerned about being safe then hunting speed would lower.’

Python had experienced many such cases in other hunting parties. Due to the sudden emergence of strong monsters, they couldn't exert their skills. But in this place, there was no one who had a problem with fighting spirit.

Despite the completely dangerous dungeon, everyone did their share.

‘At this rate, I can get stronger really quickly. If I had such good teammates in the early days of Royal Road then I would be 40 levels higher than I am now. It would have been possible to make a breakthrough in the dungeon.’

He was trying to understand Weed's hunting speed. Weed entered a dangerous area and just hunted through everything.

Python didn't even have a brief moment of space during the battle as he paid attention to Weed in the corner of his eyes.

Weed stabbed the head of the giant poisonous scorpion with his sword. The giant poisonous scorpions in the depths of the cave were intimidated by the continuous attacks. Three or four continuous attacks aiming for the critical points resulted in the scorpions being defeated.

While fighting the dangerous enemies in the lead, Weed also grasped the movement of his colleagues.

The party leader was maximizing hunting efficiency so he just believed that that they would follow him.

‘I don’t think that he is particularly stronger than me but his stats are brilliantly placed and well trained. Various skills are utilized depending on the situation.’

Python was someone doing the Warrior Master Quest on the Versailles Continent and had faced many enemies.

He couldn’t believe a sculptor had such great strength and vitality. Weed used the secret sword technique Sword-cloning, Radiant Sword or Heriam Fencing depending on the situation.

‘This is the electrifying strength of the ruler of the desert. And he has demonstrated the ability to make improvised and instantaneous decisions. Can I also fight like that?’

It was hard for Python to draw a conclusion. He also needed to consider the effects of Alveron’s divine magic.

But he had to finish some of the monsters. He had confidence that he could get rid of the monsters.

However, he couldn’t help feeling suspicious of Weed.

‘He is much tougher than other high level users. My level is 465 so perhaps he is a bit higher than that. A sculptor is sure to have some weak stats. Though not all of his skills have been revealed....

Well, my combat capabilities are also beyond my level. I would love to watch him fight more.'

He used every opportunity to look at Weed. The Versailles Continent's top ranked players like Bardray and Weed were his competitors.

Of course he had to use this opportunity to closely watch Weed's combat.

'I am capable of killing him in a surprise ambush. My hands itch. But is this really the power of Weed the God of War? The charismatic figure I saw in the videos of his battles hasn't appeared yet.'

The two men thought like that. They thought they could take him. Weed was currently exerting the biggest attack power.

He couldn't hunt properly for a long time due to the final secret sculpting technique quest. He neglected his skills and his level also dropped.

He had overwhelming strength during his days ruling the desert but the weakness he felt after coming back to reality gave him a bittersweet feeling.

"We will start hunting more quickly. There is a bigger risk so please take care of your health. There will be more monsters."

“That....when is break time?”

“We will rest after clearing the dungeon and going towards the next hunting ground.”

“Dinner?”

“Eat grain bread while moving.”

The man lurking in the shadows showed up.

“How long is the travel time?”

“3 minutes.”

“.....”

After 2 hours, they reached the mid-point of the dungeon and said.

“Oh, I realized that I didn’t tell you something important. Please note. There is a boss monster level 500 that is near here.”

“Shouldn’t we avoid a monster like this?”

The nameless man asked the question. A level 500 monster was normally hunted with a guild.

“Its balance isn’t good. It is like the rice cake for ancestral rites. It is something to eat before the main dish. In particular, its skin is quite useful.”

“But if we make one mistake then our lives will be at risk. How should we prepare for the fight?”

“Don’t make any mistakes. You aren’t children so each one of you should take care of your own lives.”

Pale was already firmly prepared. He knew from hunting with Weed that he had to be alert every minute.

Pale also felt a tremendous sense of accomplishment from the incredible speed of the hunt. Achieving an unreasonable goal caused him a sense of joy.

‘Weed the God of War. Hrmm, as amazing as the rumours. Weed finishes the hunt with great efficiency. I am probably benefiting from Weed.’

‘Heh, a shadow of death that kills that huge monsters. Normally I would need to get rid of it with a small, elite group of assassins.... Anyway, I am achieving this level of success with Weed.’

But soon they heard Weed muttering in a frustrated voice.

“The first place I chose was too easy.”

“.....”

“Well, the monsters in the next dungeon are twice as strong and their most difficult attribute is their high health. Endure the boredom a little more since the next place is likely to be fun.”

“What type of difficult does the next hunting ground have?”

“It is similar to the level of kimchi fried rice.”

Great Emperor Weed!

The biggest driving force behind his success in the final secret sculpting technique quest was the hunting abilities of Weed and his subordinates.

Python and the nameless man could understand why the desert warriors were so strong.

‘Heh, he is bluffing. It is probably only a little bit trickier.’

‘He is just making noise in advance. He is just trying to make us worry.’

And Pale’s thoughts.

‘I will be dead for a few days. It would be nice if I lose consciousness and wake up after the hunt is over!’

Chapter 6: Alkazar Bridge

United Kingdom, London.

Senior executives of international investment companies, property managers and wealthy people were gathered in one place.

They had put together an astronomical amount of funds. The royal family of the Middle East, European aristocrats, oil and conglomerates were some of the sources of the money for their operation.

“The next thing is to expand our influence in Unicorn Headquarters. First of all, the last attempt failed.”

“How many shares do we currently have?”

“We mobilized several accounts and companies and obtained 4%.”

“Only that much.....”

The executives of the international investment companies sighed. They didn't need more money. If they wanted to cause a war, a financial crisis or cause remarkable economic development in a country, all of it was possible.

Nevertheless, it was impossible to get a hold on Unicorn Corporation.

Unicorn was dominating and obtaining money from virtual reality. The current stock value of the company was steadily rising and its affiliates were sparking a ridiculous revolution in other industries.

The shipbuilding industry was in an overall recession but Unicorn had pushed inventory forward 15 years. Ships that had fuel economy and speed beyond those currently existing. It would be worth it in 3~4 years.

The competitiveness of marine plants and oil drilling could be considered the highest in the world. Chemicals, pharmaceuticals, new materials, robots, precision machinery, etc. They caused winds of interest to blow in all those areas.

The affiliates raised the market capitalization of Unicorn Corporation who serviced Royal Road. That's why interest increased in Unicorn Corporation.

“The shares for Unicorn are at such an exorbitant price that it is impossible to secure ownership through market trading.”

“What about corporate bonds?”

“It isn't planned and they don't need it in the future. Even if we identify Unicorn's core affiliates, the amount of money we have

isn't enough to eat them.”

“That can't be.”

“J.K.I. in the past. We have to take the financial group's failure as a lesson. We can't touch it carelessly.”

“The amount of funds used for that operation is amazing.”

Capitalists wanted to touch Unicorn Corporation.

If necessary, politics could be used to place pressure on companies but Unicorn's vast social network meant it wasn't possible. In addition, representatives of Unicorn were secretly lurking in leading banks around the world.

The first time they noticed such movement was 1 year ago.

J.K.I. The financial group had obtained 20% of Unicorn's shares and tried to threaten them. In order to buy the shares, the amount of funds necessary was equivalent to a country's budget. After securing 20% of the shares, they combined with other equity funds and investment banks in order to threaten the funds.

They fought hard but Unicorn didn't consider it a serious crisis. However, Unicorn Corporation had started the full-scale counterattack.

J.K.I. The corporate customers of the financial group started to depart in a chain reaction. Stories about the financial groups corruption and accounting manipulation was released to the media and management was punished.

They could no longer afford to fight Unicorn, let alone recover to their original state. The media continued to attack and the investors withdrew their funds until they were on the very of bankruptcy!

J.K.I who had a 105 year history accumulated losses in real estate and business. The financial group shattered and was dismantled.

The international investment breaks investigated and revealed Unicorn's deep interest. As it turns out, Unicorn had invested many secret funds into the investigation.

They internally took control of major banks and was also influential in politics and journalism. A large number of multinational companies were directly or indirectly controlled by Unicorn Corporation.

Even if there were no formal agreements with Unicorn Corporation, they would under their control. Companies and individuals. Many of the actual shareholders were hidden through an artful concealment process.

Since then, most of the international investment banks gave up on their desire to buy Unicorn Corporation.

The more dangerous the fruit was, the tastier it would be. But they learned that money wouldn't penetrate the company.

J.K.I. The financial group was thoroughly dismantled and became a tight cage for them. Since then, several companies were smashed by Unicorn Corporation. No matter how much money they had, it was impossible in front of such power.

All hostile movements were discovered by Unicorn's information network. They couldn't trust their colleagues.

The capitalists in Chicago thought a little differently. 'There is no point digging at the company. If so, what about inside Royal Road?'

It was an established fact that the Hermes Guild would conquer the continent. They would manage the territories according to merit and ability. They could gain huge taxes and exert power going forward.

Royal Road was made with superior technology as a resort where humanity could feel fun. Currently the number of users was exponentially increasing so there would be more value in the Emperor of the Haven Empire and Royal Road.

'Then should we invest in the Hermes Guild?'

The strong Hermes Guild!

Capitalists invested money in the Hermes Guild and allocated them a number of shares. The Hermes Guild now had control over the large Haven Empire so it wasn't a loss. They had already secretly earned a large amount of funds.

They recognized how profitable it was and invested a large sum to help the Hermes Guild dominate the Versailles Continent. Some major investors welcomed this plan.

Once the Hermes Guild unified the Versailles Continent and achieved a steady income then the future prospects would be very bright. Moreover, some investors could see the additional effects of the Haven Empire having power on the Versailles Continent.

Money would help to raise their standing in Royal Road.

Although the leaders of the Hermes Guild showed a positive response, the Hermes Guild had certain conditions.

From the very beginning, their goal to conquer the Versailles Continent had always been closely related to money.

The Hermes Guild predicted that Royal Road would have vast popularity across all ages and countries. They started earlier than others and prepared a lot of achieve the unification of the continent.

Individuals in the guild that received a lot of investment could easily obtain a fortune. Even after the unification, they still needed

to continue ruling the continent.



Geomchi, Geomchi-2 and Geomchi-3.

They led their respective troops and met at Pato Castle.

Pato Castle had been built by the Haven Empire after invading the Rupoi Plains. By mobilizing slaves, they finished construction of a stone castle where they could monitor the Rupoi river and plains.

Geomchi sat on a black bull on a hill as the sun set.

“Our goal is that place.”

“Well, that’s great.”

Geomchi-2, Geomchi-3, Geomchi-4 and Geomchi-5 also rode the bulls.

The broad shoulders, thick neck and excellent abs! The students behind them gave off a menacing sight. Users could often be seen running away from them screaming on mountain trails or dark paths.

“Today we will take care of this. Let’s go, everyone!”

“Yes! Follow Teacher-nim!”

They spoke as knights of the Arpen Kingdom.

In fact, they had been finding it boring fighting monsters.

“Kkiyahu!”

“Uryaryarya!”

Geomchi led the assault with 505 bulls following behind him!

They weren’t stupid in fights. Despite dying of hunger in Royal Road due to barely bread or recklessly fighting a dragon.

‘They will be prepared for us.’

‘Those guys will start moving soon.’

They learned by studying strategies and tactics. From an early age, they had been called many names by their parents and teachers.

‘They have noticed.’

Geomchi who was in the lead felt something.

“The enemy has appeared!”

“Get ready for crossfire!”

And not surprisingly, 2,000 archers got up from Pato Castle’s walls and simultaneously aimed their bows!

“Just rush.”

Geomchi said to the bulls behind him. They were rushing so it was already too late to avoid the arrows.

Therefore, the students made the bulls run even more vigorously.

“Fire!”

Syu syu syu syu syuk!

Reinforced steel arrows flew from Pato Castle’s walls.

Among the archers were those with ‘sniper’ as a secondary profession. Their destructive power in times of war was huge since they could penetrate armour and shields.

General users sometimes didn't like body armour or shields. Those who didn't have a knight profession didn't wear body armour due to discomfort and physical strength.

Full body armour was expensive and difficult to manage. A few thousand gold went into armour so they would cost a lot to repair if damaged during combat.

Therefore, light weight armour or leather armour was the favourite target of the snipers.

“Everyone use Sword-cloning!”

Geomchi gave a command as the bulls ran.

“Sword-cloning!”

A secret sword technique. It was a skill that could produce up to 40 clones.

“Iyahahap!”

Geomchi, the instructions and the students each produced between 10~30 clones each.

The clones didn't ride bulls and ran using the power of their two feet so there was a momentarily large army!

The arrows that came flying mainly hit the clones.

“Unbelievable!”

“Monsters!”

The snipers panicked and just fired their arrows. The students that were hit fell to the ground. But the remainder continued forward.

“Those guys have arrived at the 2nd defense line. Open the gate and dispatch the knights!”

The wooden gates temporarily installed at Pato Castle opened wide. And 3,000 elite knights emerged.

They were regular knights of the Haven Empire waiting for the 500 members of the Kill Without Asking porridge unit.

Bbuuuuuuuh!

The knights started to accelerate out the gates as the horn blew. The knights wore full body armour.

They charged towards the Kill Without Asking porridge unit.

“These unknown bastards. We’ll show them what happens when they resist the Hermes Guild.”

The Barit Knights were elite troops that had won many battles. They had played a major role during the conquest of the Kallamore Kingdom. Their power increased while sprinting.

The knights that belonged to the Hermes Guild had a rough idea of the situation going forward. Normally enemies would be scared at the emergence of the Barit Knights and turn to flee. During that vulnerable moment, they would use their power to trample and slash at the enemy.

Geomchi said calmly.

“Hey everyone.”

“Yes, Teacher-nim.”

“Extend yourself!”

At the same time, Geomchi pulled out a bow. He just ignored the archers from Pato Castle firing arrows towards them. The arrows would be dangerous if they hit the body but this was the fun thing about battles! After Geomchi’s instructions, the instructors and students all took out a bow.

While hunting and adventuring, they had acquired a variety of bows ranging from crossbows to longbows. Unfortunately, their

increase clones could only hold swords.

“Fire!”

They indiscriminately fired towards the knights! The arrows were launched rapidly without consulting each anyone. In rare cases, there were a few ice, fire or wind arrows mixed in.

“Kueok!”

“Shield!”

The Barit Knights blocked the arrows with their shields. The horses collapsed and some knights were stunned by the impact of falling.

“Raise your spears in preparation for the clash...euaack!”

A user of the Barit Knight giving a command was surprised.

Once the arrow attack was over, the Kill Without Asking porridge unit was only a short distance away. They had removed the shield protecting their body but this time axes flying could be seen.

Axes, arrows and spears.

Geomchi, the instructors and the students interchangeable threw

their weapons depending on their mood!

It was a proficient style of combat that desert warriors used. Heavy armour was inconvenient and the effect would fall when attacked with many types of weapons.

In fact, the nobles knights respected the sword and spear and didn't like using other weapons.

“S-stop them!”

The Barit Knights were troubled by the axe and spear attacks. They had a completely different weight from arrows. If the axe bounced off the shield then it would just damage a knight nearby.

The formation was a mess when the Kill Without Asking porridge unit arrived in front of the knights.

“Slice and drop them!”

“Yeet!”

Geomchi-2, Geomchi-3, etc., followed behind Geomchi.

“Sword that Cuts Anything!”

Horses, people, shields and armour would be cut every time they

wielded their sword. If the strike was successful then it would do 55 times more damage to the enemy. It was an unbeatable technology when used properly and broke weapons or dealt serious injuries.

The attack skill was risky by Geomchi and the instructors boldly used it.

The knights that didn't know the circumstances just felt a tremendous assault force and lost their lives.

“Kilkilkil, meat!”

“Should I have a meal or sleep?”

“W-women. Take a look. How cool!”

“This is life. All the attacks, bring it on!”

The clones also rushed towards the knights. The clones also had sword skill proficiency. Geomchi, the instructors and the students brandished their swords against the knights.

“These guys.....”

The knights were quasi-nobility of the Haven Empire. The Barit Knights' great honour and pride failed in front of the Kill Without Asking porridge unit.

On the walls of Pato Castle, the commander Banrommel and users of the Hermes Guild weren't laughing.

"These guys have considerable power. The Barit Knights are a little bit inferior to them."

"We should move before it becomes more dangerous for the Barit Knights."

"Mobilize immediately."

8 knight units appeared on the Rupoi Plains. They were part of the 5th knights division of the Imperial Knights.

They couldn't allow the Barit Knights to be completely annihilated by the Kill Without Asking porridge unit.

"Fight!"

The assault of the knights began. Banrommel's knights were wearing red armour with flames on it. Due to the magical effect of the armour, the flames would last forever.

Armour infantry exited from the gates and joined the Barit Knights. More snipers were placed on the wall. In the beginning, they had regarded the opponents as easy and allowed them to go close.

Geomchi, the instructors and students were surrounded by knights! It consisted of the elite armed forces of the Haven Empire. They feared that the Kill Without Asking porridge unit would flee so they hurriedly surrounded them.

The snipers on the wall fired straight shots towards the Kill Without Asking porridge unit.

“Kueok!”

A arrow became stuck in Geomchi-2’s shoulders.

“No. 2.”

“Teacher-nim, I am okay.”

“You’re not hurt?”

“Teacher-nim would be mad if I was hurt by something like this.”

Geomchi felt the pleasure of the sword.

This was the battlefield. It was a place where his wishes could come alive. The Haven Empire had encircled them to stop any escape but he had no intention of fleeing.

“Everyone listen.”

“Yes!”

“Let’s heartily enjoy this.”

“Of course!”

Geomchi, the instructors and the students struggled against the constantly surging knights and enemies.

Arrows were shot in their backs as they charged into the midst of the heavy infantry and knights. Despite the fact that they had the worst position, they willingly fought on this battlefield.

10~20 trainees died quickly. They couldn’t withstand being battered from all sides.

And eventually, the only one who survived was Geomchi-5! He lived the longest thanks to the sacrifice of the other instructors and students.

An enormous 6,000 knights of the Haven Empire had been killed wiping out the Kill Without Asking porridge unit. They had a hard time due to the ruthless attacks by Geomchi, the other instructors and students.

Banrommel appeared above the walls.

The snipers and knights carrying spears aimed at the final survivor, Geomchi-5.

“Last survivor, do you want to say some final words?”

Banrommel said from the wall. He had wanted to avoid a frontal confrontation against the Kill Without Asking porridge unit.

Nevertheless, he wanted a cool ending for Geomchi-5.

Geomchi-5 just laughed brightly, revealing his buck teeth.

“How funny. We will fight again later!”



Hermes Guild users in the major cities of the Haven Empire gathered together for dinner.

“The glory of the Haven Empire will continue forever!”

“Hooray Haven Empire!”

The guild mobilizing half of its power against the Abyss Knight Van Hawk was a great event. The general users were easily

mobilized at a great capacity and showed their power in Cocoon Valley.

Weed’s adventures showed him struggling along but the Hermes Guild showed the strong power of their high level users in a landslide victory. The performance of the Hermes Guild was broadcasted so no one could doubt it.

Due to the defeat of the Abyss Knight, the rebel activity in the Haven Empire was suddenly withdrawn.

“Every corner of this land must accept the Haven Empire.”

“The Kallamore Kingdom is no more. They will completely adapt to the reign of the Haven Empire. This is a good business opportunity.”

The attitude of the residents in the conquered area towards the Haven Empire completely changed.

The Abyss Knight crisis had been overcome so the Hermes Guild thought this was the perfect opportunity.



High level users in the Haven Empire were called for a banquet at the Imperial Palace. There was an unlimited amount of the finest brandy from Ipia Island.

Even the lords of the Hermes Guild who weren't over level 440 weren't allowed to attend the banquet.

“Now only the north is left.”

“There is also the east and the south. The Embinyu Church has declined significantly so I am quite greedy for the east and the south.”

“Having said that. After the north surrenders, the east and south will come into our hands more easily.”

The Rosenheim Kingdom and Brent Kingdom had been revived after the Embinyu Church was destroyed. The collapsed palace was rebuilt and the original residents returned.

Serabourg Castle that had previously been occupied by the Embinyu Church was used for many users to move between the north and the east.

The Embinyu Church hadn't even entered the south. The religion of the desert warriors was the blazing sun and sand.

Thanks to Weed's adventure in the southern desert, the oasis cities were now the target of the Haven Empire. The desert warriors were tough but they wouldn't be able to resist an army.

The Hermes Guild had a tremendous appetite and wanted to expand their territory into the forest of elves and the dwarf territory in the Central Continent.

The kingdom of humanity was going to reign everywhere.

This result was achieved by spending an astronomical amount of the taxes they reaped. The Haven Empire's Imperial Palace had the jewels and golden decoration increased every day.

A handful of high level users watched as Bardray and Lafaye quietly talked to each other.

“But will we definitely win the war in the north? We don't have room to send any more power to the north.”

“Weed's reputation isn't groundless. If there is an unexpected counterattack then the Hermes Guild might receive some damage.”

“The incident at Jigolaths caused a huge headache.”

People nodded. They couldn't take Weed lightly. Of course, he was annoying but they didn't think he was scary.

Weed might revive like a weed but the Hermes Guild would crush him. Like an egg was unable to break an impregnable fortress, he couldn't catch up to feats done but the Haven Empire who had a strong economic and military power.

One of the high level users laughed.

Penatul! He was ranked in the top 300 people on the Versailles Continent.

“Lafaye said something after the battle against the Abyss Knight ended. There is no way we can lose the war in the north.”

“That means.....”

“I don’t know what he is planning but Lafaye must be confident to speak such words.”

The Hermes Guild recognized that Bardray was their focal point. However, there were no doubts when it came to Lafaye’s ability to lead the guild.

Lafaye must have prepared some things in order to be confident of their victory in the north. And if the Earth Palace was conquered then Weed no longer had the forces to oppose them.

The Versailles Continent would perfectly enter the hands of the nobles of the Haven Empire.



The Northern Expeditionary Force of the Haven Empire.

The army was advancing towards the Earth Palace. The Peshil River was shrouded in early morning fog. A bridge of a massive scale was connecting both sides of the river.

This piece of architecture was the greatest thing that surprised the Hermes Guild since entering the north.

The Central Continent was economically richer but it would be hard for them to create something like this. It was because it required a lot of money, manpower and time.

“If we cross this river then the Earth Palace will be visible.”

“Once the preparations for war are finished...there is high morale. Especially after the victories in the southern part.”

“The soldiers should have a sufficient amount of rest.”

The Hermes Guild commanders had thoroughly prepared the army after Weed appeared at the Earth Palace.

The soldiers were given a break to release the accumulated fatigue while new supplies were imported.

The cavalry and knights even used mana stones to buy one time magical items. They weren't frequently used because it was an expensive price for an item that could only be used once.

Despite wanting to march immediately, this task consumed half a day. However, they were perfectly ready for an overwhelming victory against Weed and the Earth Palace.

Any commanding officer in an army would dream of leading a huge and powerful army. Excellent knights in Royal Road could lead their men to fight the enemy without a hitch.

Of course, it wasn't easy for individuals to affect the outcome once the scale of the battles increased to a war between kingdoms. Even so, there were occasions when people would become widely known through the battlefield.

Being a commander or a knight appearing on broadcast would increase their fame. But any skilled commander wouldn't just rely on the power of the army.

Wonderful tactics could give assurances in wars. A commander could clearly overpower a small troop with larger numbers.

"Besides, this fight with Weed isn't like the one against the Abyss Knight. "The leaders have considerable interest in this battle."

"This time it is our turn to be heroes."

After the battle with the Abyss Knight was settled, the northern conquest army quickly advanced. They killed the Grass Porridge Cult members swarming like flies until they reached the Alkazar

Bridge.

“If it wasn’t for this bridge then we would have to go back. I’m glad. This is the virtue of the north’s transportation network that was developed.”

“Tell the soldiers to move faster. We will reach the vicinity of the Earth Palace tomorrow evening and then a full-fledged siege would start in the morning.”

“The siege weapons need to be assembled and the soldier should have a lot of rest at night. Given Weed’s leadership skills, the soldiers need to have the maximum morale.”

“A few days later, we will have a toast inside the Earth Palace.”

The commanders sent troops onto the Alkazar Bridge. The bridge was wide enough to allow carriages to pass by in both directions.

The scouting unit rode until the end of the bridge and came back to report.

“There are none. I don’t see any enemies at all.”

“In the river?”

There was a chance that the northern users had planned an ambush in the river.

“It is clean and clear. The only things visible are the pretty fish.”

“Good. Then the 2nd division will enter first.”

“I will go ahead and clean the place.”

The 2nd division was composed of infantry and magicians and were configured for defense. They would cross to the other side of the river and secure the area for the rest of the army.

Soon after the 2nd division, the main army started moving across the bridge.

“The 1st division will carry the battle materials.”

“The supply carriages will pass through the bridge first.”

An incalculable amount of materials required for the northern conquest was moved to the other side of the bridge. The goods were preparation for the war against Weed so the 1st division took a fairly long time to move them across.

Dozens of troops sat on the carriages or walked alongside them. The users of the Hermes guild sitting on horses or the carriages admired the view of the river from the Alkazar Bridge.

“This bridge is crossing a great river. Something not possible in

the Haven Empire is present in the Arpen Kingdom.”

“I think so as well. This bridge is quite comfortable, durable and well made. Without this bridge, people travelling to and from the north would go through a lot of suffering.”

“It is good that we can use it. No matter how good the roads or infrastructure is, the weak don’t have the right to benefit from it. If the military power is too weak then they will be deprived of it.”

“Kukuku, we sure are lucky to be in the Hermes Guild.”

The Hermes Guild users naturally enjoyed the benefits that came from being stronger than everyone else. That power would eventually be used to capture and reign over the entire Versailles Continent.

“There are even excellent decorations carved on the pillars. They just caught my eyes.”

“Later I should buy land in the vicinity. The trade between the Central Continent and the North Continent means that this area would quickly grow.”

“I’m going to use the money earned from plundering in order to open a dress shop.”

The users watched the lights of Yusellin Village and imagined a sweet future after the conquest.

Ddirring!

-You have crossed Alkazar Bridge.

Alkazar Bridge connects the Peshil River and was completed by the Arpen Kingdom.

All accumulated fatigue during the move is fully recovered.

Vitality has increased by 30%, you can continue to fight for a long time and the possibility of fatigue during hard work will decrease for a day.

The skill Quick Step has been applied.

Movement speed won't reduce for 3 days.

Horses will be able to exert a maximum effect for a week.

Due to experiencing a special place, agility has permanently increased by 2.

Alkazar Bridge is one of the Northern Continent's specialties.

If you go to another kingdom then you can obtain for reporting this amazing place to nobles.

“Ohh, really?”

“Completely excellent.”

The Hermes Guild users were filled with great admiration.

Alkazar Bridge was a Grand Building. The total construction cost was 8.5 million gold and architects hammered at it for 4 months in order to create it.

“We will control this bridge later.”

“I really like taking away someone else’s hard work by force.”

The users of the Hermes Guild that had crossed the bridge hesitantly sat down on the ground. The main body of the army hadn’t come across yet. A considerable amount of time was required in order to cross the river.

“But it would be amazing if the bridge collapsed.”

“You idiot, there is no way it will collapse. This is a Grand Building.”

“I suppose so.”

Kukukukukung.

At that moment, a large irritating sound came from the bridge.

“W-what?”

The attention of the chatting Hermes Guild users headed towards the Alkazar Bridge. They were shocked by the sound but nothing happened.

“Did I hear wrong?”

“No, I’m sure that I heard it.”

“I heard. It is like the sound of stones rubbing together.”

“Did some fool crash a carriage?”

“It is no big deal. I’m going to take a nap so wake me up if something happens.”

The users started talking again but the deafening noise was heard for more than 1 minute.

“It sounds like it comes from the bridge.”

“Is the bridge singing?”

“This is fascinating. A Grand Building is capable of such a thing.”

The users watched the Alkazar Bridge. And the same scene appeared in all their eyes.

Usually a huge building absolutely wouldn't move. It was solid and grand like a hill or mountain. But there was no common sense in it being destroyed now.

Cracks started in the pillars standing in the middle of the river and the steel strands that connected it started to break.

The Peshil River started sloshing with large waves. The troops watched with horror at Alkazar Bridge started severely shaking. High waves hit the pillar of the bridge and it started crumbling.

“Aaack! Help!”

The carriages carrying the material as well as the troops holding weapons fell down into the water. And after a while, the entire Alkazar Bridge crumbled into the river.

“That...”

“.....”

The users of the Hermes Guild who had crossed the bridge safely

or had yet to cross watched with disbelief and couldn't accept the reality.

“Why did it collapse all at once?”

“Was this a bad bridge construction?”

The users couldn't understand how this had happened in such a short amount of time.

The commanders that didn't cross the river received reports of the damage.

“The 7th knights division fell into the river, 38,000 archers and approximately 6 days' worth of combat materials....”

“Enormous damage.”

“But it isn't an insurmountable one. There are plenty of battle supplies.”

The Haven Empire marched more than 2 million troops over the Poros River into the north. Despite the strong resistance of the north, the damage from the bridge collapsing could be handled.

The Hermes Guild users that fell in the river would drift downstream before making their way back.

Nevertheless, this was enough to put pressure on the battle commanders.

“I don’t know how to report it to the guild.”

“It is only a matter of time before the damage we suffered is known. We must emphasize that we couldn’t predict the damage in advance.”

“If we want to be recognized then we have to hurry and destroy the Earth Palace.”

Despite only losing 150,000 of the Haven Empire’s army and 2,000 Hermes Guild users, the atmosphere was heavy and serious.

-You have been cut off from the main body of the northern conquest army.

The soldiers watching the disaster are severely shaken.

Morale has decreased by 45%.

The value of training is temporarily reduced by 22%.

Training and morale were key factors in a war.

If training was low then they wouldn’t follow commands well

and low morale would decrease the fighting power.

“This is how it is. How will the main army cross here now?”

“Then should we cross over there?”

The Hermes Guild users who crossed the bridge and were lazily watching the scenery suddenly stood up.

Since coming to the north, they had only achieved overwhelming victories. They massacred those in the villages regardless of who they were.

In fact, if it wasn't for the fact that the guild leaders wanted to rule the north then they would have thoroughly destroyed everything.

“Ya, I'm feeling anxious.”

“Surely the enemies won't appear now? Perhaps they will.”

“But perhaps.....”

The users were having uneasy conversations.

The distant plains starting shaking.

“Waaaaaah! The bridge really collapsed.”

“Let’s get revenge on the Hermes Guild.”

“Let’s go! They’re not moving! I am Tokkung of the Toadstool Porridge unit. I will fight as long as I have the strength!”

“Tokkung has already died 7 times yet he is back!”

“Tokkung-nim, please be careful of everyone. Last time I almost died!”

The Grass Porridge Cult members that kept dying! Despite their losing streak, they persisted in fighting.

They weren’t disappointed by not having the power to defeat the invaders. The Hermes Guild and Haven Empire were strong but the northern users weren’t discouraged.

There were various sayings in the Grass Porridge Cult.

-Don’t eat if you are defeated, eat if victory is achieved when you die.

-Life is like a bowl of Toadstool Porridge. If you don’t eat it today then eat it tomorrow.

-Courage comes from the challenge itself. You can't eat if you lose and you can eat if victory is achieved when you die.

-Don't leave without cleaning this up.

The Toadstool Porridge unit served as the focal point of the Grass Porridge Cult. Their annihilation signaled the beginning of the battle!

In addition, the norther users ate grass porridge for their three meals a day as they worshipped the Arpen Kingdom and Weed. Naturally they were hostile towards the Hermes Guild.

“Those guys are coming here. They are weak but this situation isn't good.”

“Then was the collapse of the bridge planned?”

“Surely not... No, did it really happen by chance?”

The faces of the Toadstool Porridge unit and Arpen Kingdom users standing in the vanguard told a different story.

“We've finally arrived.”

“The moment we've been waiting for has come. Today is the day of vengeance!”

The knight users of the Arpen Kingdom had high honour and intimacy with the residents. It was easy to get quests related to the country and obtain a chance to build public achievements.

Many enjoyed preferential treatment and grew along with the soldiers of the Arpen Kingdom. The larger the kingdom, the more benefits that were attached to the knights. But if they lost all their honour, there would be a huge penalty and fighting spirit would be reduced.

Apart from participating in monster subjugation and war, there were other constraints.

Trade, production or other combat professions could migrate but knights that swore allegiance to a kingdom needed to stay loyal. In short, the knights had a duty of obedience to the king and the kingdom.

Despite the invasion of the Arpen Kingdom, Weed hadn't allowed them to participate in the war. Weed had the final authority for all military power so the knights didn't go out to fight for their kingdom.

Although the knight users took their own personal initiative to fight, the soldiers could only swallow their resentment.

1 knight entering a dungeon with 100 soldiers to subdue the monsters could have their power grow quickly. Improving the Arpen Kingdom's vulnerable military power was essential.

But some knights couldn't tolerate it anymore and came out.

“Those bugs are looking at us? Their fate is to be stepped on.

“Their skills can't even touch my feet.”

The Hermes Guild laughed as their enemies appeared. Morale had fallen but they had defeated such opponents so far.

But dust was constantly growing on the plains!

“Let's defeat the Haven Empire!”

Yusellin was emptied as users started to pour out. It was a tactic that never ended. It was at a level to defeat the enemies.

The sea of moving Grass Porridge Cult started to attack.

Seo-yoon was also among the knights and the Toadstool Porridge unit.

“Unni, unni hide behind me.”

“Is there a need to fight? You can't kill them anyway.”

“I just want to contribute. So my friends can be proud of me.”

Seo-yoon joined the Bamboo Shoots Porridge unit to fight against the Haven Empire.

‘This situation seems to be against us.’

‘This isn’t a battle. I just need to kill 1,000 of them.’

‘Their formations aren’t polished. But I can’t deal with all these guys.’

Some of the Hermes Guild users experienced in war quietly went to the riverside. They took their armour off and swam across the river.

But they weren’t aware that there were also members of the Grass Porridge Cult in the deep river.

Cockle Porridge and Seaweed Porridge diving units! They held harpoons in their hands and waited for the prey.

A bunch of users were also waiting downstream of the Peshil River.

“A lot of those guys are going to come here right?”

“Of course. That person’s information can’t be doubted.”

Dark Gamers.

The Dark Gamers had flocked after receiving information from a post on the website.

A person had posted anonymously to go to Peshil River today. If they waited then they could easily hunt users of the Hermes Guild.

Usually anonymous posts couldn't be believed but this time was different.

The anonymous user who wrote the post had a long period of activity with the Dark Gamers and had a separate nickname.

Gold Bug.

He always left comments hunting expensive weapons or jewelry.

-I have a story about a good hunting ground. At the current market price...and there will be a gang of youths complaining. I am very jealous.

-It can be served with a large pizza.

-I need to buy some pottery. Don't go come back with weapons. Bring pottery as well. If you go to the market in the back alley then someone will buy it from you. However, the owner will pay

attention to those trying to attempt dirty bargains.

There was be a steady stream of money and items for the people who were interested.

He answered any comments left by others with the market price. Every once in a while, he would correct the wrong information with an explanation.

In particular, he was quite sensitive to the price difference of a few copper. He knew the detailed prices of equipment, precious metal and pieces of artwork.

He stopped some users from being ripped off. Therefore, the person's rating in the Dark Gamers Union continued to climb and there was high confidence in him.

-If you don't go downstream of the Peshil River today then you will regret it for a year.

It was among the secret Dark Gamers post that only 10% of the highest ranking members could read.

“We can believe it if it is from Gold Bug. Even if he deceived us, there will only be minimal damage.”

“When it comes to money, that guy is more reliable than my mother.”

Thus, 600 of the highest levelled Dark Gamers were waiting for their prey downstream.

“Coming!”

“There are many people. It is indeed a jackpot!”

Chapter 7: Sky Porridge Unit

Weed had been hunting for the last two hours.

‘This is somehow different from what I imagined. There is little battle sense?’

‘There really are a lot of monsters. Finding a place like this, he really has encyclopedic knowledge of hunting grounds.’

After 5 hours of hunting.

‘Euah, that was really dangerous. I bravely jumped at the enemies and only survived thanks to the priest. Isn’t this too much?’

‘It is dangerous due to the nature of the monster...an assassin really can live anywhere.’

9 hours since hunting started.

‘I almost died two times in a row. The hunting grounds aren’t on a train route so how is he leading us to successive ones? I want to rest. Fatigue has risen dramatically. My greatsword is too heavy. Isn’t it long past time for a break?’

‘This is the first time that I dedicated such a long time to

hunting. My head is dizzy. Assassin? I'm sick of it. I'd rather wave a dagger around roughly in a fight.'

13 hours after hunting started.

'The composition of this hunting party. Each person will carry out their mission like a machine. Machine. Until now, I lived really comfortably and happily.'

'What is hunting? An assassin is a profession that is really helpful to society and is worthy of respect. Who am I? Where am I?'

They moved from dungeon to dungeon while fighting monsters. Fighting with monsters felt like a simple labour job.

Python and the nameless man both said.

"Let's have a short break."

"We should relax and talk to deepen our bonds."

Weed said casually every time.

"We will find a comfortable place after cleaning up the dungeon."

"So?"

“Well, let’s raise the speed a little bit.”

“...But that side looked good.”

They hunted for another 2 hours. They were exhausted after killing the monsters.

Until now, vitality and fatigue had only fallen slightly due to Alveron’s divine magic. Once 20% of their vitality was filled up, they would be dragged along on another hunt. The refreshing divine magic started to feel hateful for the first time.

Python and the nameless man sat on the ground with their faces soaking with sweat.

“Now I really have no choice but to rest. My health is almost gone.”

“You have suffered. And barely survived. If you don’t do this then you won’t be able to study at a prestigious university or win a nobel prize.”

“It’s not a joke. We have overcome the limitations of a human.”

Weed didn’t sit down on the ground. He still had plenty of vitality remaining due to Sculptural Destruction.

Humans would feel mentally tired after a long battle. But that didn't apply to Weed. Carving sculptures would recover his health and mana quicker.

“This is moist and dark. The next dungeon is very pleasant. You can rest there.”

Python and the nameless man didn't want to stand up. They were busy thinking of excuses in their heads.

“Don't you want to have a meal and sleep in a comfortable place? The hard earned rest will be like honey after arduous hunting.”

“Kkuung.”

The two men forcibly moved their bodies at the thought of a long rest. And they arrived at an underground dungeon.

In some places, the desert sunlight entered and caused a bright place with a cool energy flowing. Like going to the bank during a hot summer.

Python and the nameless man sat on some flat rocks.

“Ah, I forgot to tell you an important fact..... I will say it now.”

“What is it?”

“This dungeon has monsters that live together. There are abundant water sources and prey in any form.”

“But?”

Python didn't want to talk. They would handle them after resting and sleeping properly! They were sick of Weed's useless talk about monsters.

“But they have an exclusive nature.”

“Exclusive?”

“They really hate intruders. And because of their intelligence.....”

Kaang! Kaang! Kaang!

Loud sounds were coming from the dungeon.

“The whole tribe will gather to go and repel the invaders.”

Python and the man could see many blue monsters filling the dungeon. The break ended and the battle began!

After this dungeon, they continued hunting, hunting and hunting monsters.

‘I was tricked.’

‘He is the devil.’

There was no possibility of lying down until all the monsters were finished. After a battle that lasted several hours, they didn’t hesitate to flop down on the ground.

“I can’t do it anymore!”

“I need a break. We are humans!”

The two men declared a strike. Even though it was Weed, they were determined not to hunt any longer.

“It is regretful. The next hunting ground isn’t that busy.”

“Whether it is true or not. I will take a break and then leave.”

Python was tired of hunting. No matter how interesting it was, he felt tired. Weed hunted with extreme efficiency and mechanical repetition.

“Then I will see you later in Morata.”

“Farewell. Later in Mora...huh?”

Python was speaking when he noticed something strange. This place was somewhere in the southern desert. And Morata was in the centre of the north.

The two men gazed at Weed who seemed to be laughing. It looked perfectly like a devil's laugh.

“Do you know the path back to Morata?”

“I don't know. Regrettably, I don't even know where this place is.”

“The nearest town should be approximately a 10 days walk through the desert in that direction. There won't be any water in the middle so you will have to walk diligently while conserving your water.”

“Will I die of thirst if I don't get there within 10 days?”

“The sun is very strong. It is easy to feel like your ankles are burning when walking in the hot desert sand. The monsters wandering around...will continue to pounce.”

“.....”

“And it was several hundred years ago so I can't guarantee the city is still there. Anyway, if you are lucky enough to find a city

and cross the desert then you will eventually get to Morata. So I will say goodbye here. I'll see you later in Morata.”

The devil's threat!

They couldn't leave and had to continue participating in the hunt. Just like a mother dealing with unruly children, Weed's threat was simple.

“Cruel and cowardly.....”

Python wondered if this whole idea of bringing them to the southern desert was a way to trap them. The devious plan to bring them to a remote desert area caused goose-bumps to form on his body.

“Isn't it easier to keep on hunting? Hunting will raise your skill and experience. You can also acquire loot.”

They didn't feel much empathy but they didn't want to walk through the hot desert. So those that were mentally and physically tired toured the hunting grounds. Their eyes kept closing and mouth dripped saliva but they hung in there.

Python had thought that he wasn't the type to receive commands from others.

‘He's not a human. He keeps moving.’

‘My body is gradually adapting to it.’

They finally started to understand why people raved about Weed’s leadership. Whether it was colleagues or subordinates, he squeezed everything from them as they adapted and grew. They continued the extremely sad hunting as Weed recklessly moved forward.

‘I know that Alveron the priest candidate followed Weed because of his contribution and past ties but why is Pale? Why is he so calm?’

‘Pale is an archer in the same position as us. Why didn’t he protest once while hunting?’

Python and the nameless man wanted Pale to join them in a mass protest. Pale was an archer with spectacular skills.

From the beginning Pale acted disinterested so they wanted to form a group with him to resist Weed. However, they both shook their heads the moment they saw Pale’s face.

‘Wrong. He already had a taste of it.’

‘Perhaps that person’s dry eyes....’



“Victory!”

“Grass porridge, grass porridge, grass porridge!”

“All northern users, cheers!”

“Kyaa! We gave those Haven Empire guys a taste of what it has been like.”

An overwhelming victory at Peshil River!

Thanks to their internal network, the Grass Porridge Cult members cheered from every corner of the north.

“This might be premature but can we really beat back the Haven Empire’s invasion?”

“If the entire north units then of course we can stop them.”

The regular users felt gratitude to the Arpen Kingdom and participated in the war.

After the consecutive victories, the Grass Porridge Cult determined that the Haven Empire was truly strong.

In the case of the users who moved from the Central Continent,

they were directly or indirectly aware of the power of the Haven Empire. Despite the whole north being shaken by the war, half of the users were still living as normal.

But now novices that freshly joined Royal Road, those with non-combat professions and Grass Porridge Cult members could participate in the war.

And.....

“Piyak! I guess I should move properly.”

“Ssajakjak!”

“Split up at regular intervals, kukuku!”

Sky Island Lavias.

The avians also joined the Grass Porridge Cult. Although many general users visited Lavias, the users who were avians had serious worries.

-Even if the avians join the Grass Porridge Cult, what unit will we join?

-The structure of the avians' beaks makes eating difficult so is there a solution? The unit the avians would want to join...crazy.

-Do the avians need to sign up for a branch when joining the Grass Porridge Cult? Isn't it the same as killing earthworms?

The avians lived above the continent. They lived freely on the continent and weren't constrained by the sea.

In the early days, many people flying over the sea would lose their power and fall into the sea. There was such a big attraction in flying that they didn't like landing on the ground.

They happily flew around as the morning sun came up and also watched the night sky. If they found an island or reef then there was also the freedom of eating fish.

However, those without any support could experience death on the seas. While the youths died, the seniors found a stable flight path or rested on the bows of ships. The sailors would throw fish to them while sailing.

The avian users happily living in the north were willing to join the war with the Haven Empire. The culture and spirit of the Grass Porridge Cult in the Arpen Kingdom was like a fairy tale to them.

Thousands of avians sat on branches around Lavias' main square. And there were those in the air. Due to the nature of the avians, they could use their wings to remain in the air for a while.

“We are the proud avians of Lavias, tweet tweet!”

“Grass porridge!”

“We fight for justice and take care of the weak.”

“Grass porridge!”

“We will attack the enemy with our hard claws and sharp beaks, our marvelous wings will bring us to victory.”

“Grass porridge!”

“Now, we have established a new combat group. Our name will be the Sky Porridge unit!”

“Grass porridge! Grass porridge!”

The creation of the Sky Porridge unit! They were a new combat unit that could dominate the ground and the sky.

The avians could move quickly over long distances and won't be affected by the features of a fortress. Their wings made structures obsolete and they could annoy the archers and magicians in the rear.

But the avians also knew their inherent limitations. The avians that were capable of sky combat were extremely beneficial in a war. They flew through the air so quickly that random attacks were difficult to hit.

However, arrows hitting the avians meant their deaths. They had a crucial weakness in fights. Since the species couldn't wear armour, their defense was really weak.

The avians' beaks couldn't penetrate human shields so armoured soldiers were significant against them. Even though they could peck the opponent several times, simply half a second would compromise them.

Of course, it was easy for avians to use bows during a war.

But in order to get in range to fire arrows at the enemy, they would be exposing themselves to the magicians' ranged attacks.

Ranged attacks like firebolt, thunderbolt and ice bolt were very effective long distance attacks against the avians.

Flying in the sky was a very delicate operation so receiving an injury on their wing would cause them to crash to the ground.

-I'm only level 40...the snakes are too scary that I haven't eaten.

-I haven't even gone outside the nest yet. My connection rate is low so I'm barely out of the egg.

-I picked the avian species to overcome my fear of heights. I'm afraid I will go crazy flying in the sky.

Those who just joined the avians were worried about doing well in the war. However, these weaknesses were soon overcome as the human users joined.

“You don’t need to fight. You can simply drop us in the enemy camp!”

“We will charge towards the enemy. It will be much easier for you to fight in a crowded place.”

“Well, I don’t care if I live. It is sufficient if I die. I am part of the Toadstool Porridge Cult.”

The northern users joined hands with the avians.

Despite being constrained by distance and enemy magicians, the avians were very strong and could deal significant damage. In addition, they could go beyond the enemy defenses.

The armed with bravery, Sky Porridge unit was created.



The incident that took place at Peshil River had a considerable psychological impact on the Hermes Guild.

The news was broken during the Haven Empire’s banquet

celebrating their victory against the Abyss Knight.

The incident caused damage to the absolute dignity of the Haven Empire.

“It is difficult. A bad incident has happened at this time.”

Lafaye said softly towards the leaders of the guild. Lafaye hadn't made a single mistake so far while leading the Hermes Guild.

Of course, it was impossible to predict the results of all humans in the future. Even if there was some damage, the guild would ultimately emerge successfully with many benefits.

Lafaye's influence over the guild was absolute. Bardray was at the centre of the guild's military power but Lafaye was the one who led them.

It was a concern because many people were divided between Bardray and Lafaye. If there was ever friction between the two leaders then the Hermes Guild would fragment.

But Bardray and Lafaye knew too well.

Bardray was like a blazing sun. Without darkness, the sun wouldn't shine for a long time. Lafaye led their group to obtain more power. They needed each other so a great split would never happen.

Of course, there was always an unforeseen possibility that two people could become hostile to each other.

But it was a fact that Royal Road was too large for one person to eat. There could only be one Emperor of Royal Road.

However, the influx of users would raise their value into the sky. A premature split would weaken the power of the Hermes Guild's Haven Empire, rather than bring about a more stable reign.

Lafaye and Bardray formed a consensus with each other and respected each other.

‘He’s not stupid. There are benefits in pushing him to the top. Once he is positioned as an Emperor.....’

‘He’s smarter than me. The Hermes Guild wouldn’t have risen so quickly without Lafaye. The guild will weaken if Lafaye leaves. He knows the weaknesses of the guild so if he joins someone else... dangerous.’

In this world, it wasn’t possible to blindly believe in people. The briefest temptation might make them feel like the other side was better. The two people knew each other’s minds so they wouldn’t betray each other.

And the current Hermes Guild had become huge. The amount of investment couldn’t even be imagined!

The Hermes Guild would obtain an absurd amount of money in the future from Royal Road and investment offers.

“But is that really their proposal?”

“Of course.”

“I never thought about it. So much money...it is rather unbelievable.”

“I thought there would be a similar offer once the Hermes Guild grew. I expected up to this amount.”

“Will you accept?”

“I have no complaints about the amount of money. But it isn't necessary to grab their outstretched hands. It is better to talk to make it more favourable for us.”

“It is good to accept the proposal before it breaks.”

“I have considered that point.”

Bardray, Lafaye and the core leaders couldn't refuse the offer.

The lure of money. They knew the value of 1 billion, 2 billion

won but couldn't imagine it. It was on a completely different level. Their situation could be changed with money so they were nervous regarding the negotiations.

The amount and terms of agreement were all areas that Lafaye, Bardray and the core leaders paid attention to.

“But the architects are a big deal.”

“We won't be defeated in this war. Well, it wasn't defeat but...”

The general users of the Hermes Guild were only paying attention to the unexpected incident. There was a discussion about sending additional troops to the north.

However, the leaders convened a meeting to determine what the policies.

An unexpected incident had taken place. Vast amounts of personnel and supplies had been poured towards the north.

They wanted a perfect victory but Lafaye and the leaders were too proud to send further troops. If they sent more troops to the north then the Hermes Guild users might feel more uneasy.

In addition, it would only take a few more days for the army to cross the Peshil River.

“It is normal to grasp the movements of the enemies so the other side obtained this type of information.

“Information is the pride of the Hermes Guild but our personnel is scattered through the north. Therefore, it is possible for some details to slip through our net.”

“I am interested in information about the architects.”

“The architects...they are useless in a war. If they dare invade the Haven Empire then they would be unsuccessful against our fortresses.”

The leaders reviewed their plan for the northern war and concluded that it was a sure victory. Weed was a difficult to predict variable but the gap between their power was too big.

Adventuring and war was certainly different. It wouldn't be that easy to defeat their powerful army. The leaders had also prepared a method to weaken the real power of the north.

Lafaye came to a conclusion about the war in the north.

“The war with Weed will take place in the next few days. And we can't be defeated. There will be a complete victory in the war as the Arpen Kingdom is destroyed. Then the Norther Continent will come under our reign.”



“So far, we’ve killed 890 people in the Bamboo Shoots Porridge unit.”

“Aren’t the members of the Bamboo Shoots useless?”

“Their levels are low but they have a special influence, especially those with non-combat professions like miners and traders.”

“Then it will come in handy. What about the situation with the Toadstool unit?”

“The request to kill the individuals over level 350 has been completed. The preliminary success rate is high as 2,000 people were killed.”

“The Jujube and Acorn Porridge units are still a work in progress as they are maintaining their security towards those introduced.”

The Haven Empire had succeeded in spreading their information network through the north.

They continued to gather information and work from the shadows. Information could be used to enhance the reputation of the user, to progress in quests and to allow the Hermes Guild to know about other people. In many ways, it was a profession as the guilds promised them goods and money.

The Haven Empire had obtained detailed information about key figures in the north in order to assist in the conquest.

“But why is something like this necessary to win the war in the north?”

“The leaders seem to be considering the future reign after it is conquered. There might be severe resistance if the Haven Empire’s subordinates are directly placed to rule.”

“But that still won’t stop a revolt.”

“They will be immediately repressed by the army. First of all, it is important to gain as much information as possible about the key leaders at the Earth Palace.”

“If Weed is at the Earth Palace.....”

“We already have assassination squads from the Hermes Guild placed at the Earth Palace. Once the war starts, their goal will be Weed.”

The Hermes Guild were planning to take Weed’s life once the battle at the Earth Palace started. Whether the war was won or lost, it was best to make sure that Weed didn’t escape.

Everyone was well aware of Weed’s superior survival skills. Weed had succeeded in his final secret sculpting quest and was now a nuisance to their plan for the north.

The Hermes Guild had decided to commit some major assassins in order to take care of Weed during the war.

The Haven Empire determined that Weed’s death was sealed.



“Huhuhu.”

While Weed was hunting in the dungeons, he received the news that the Peshil River operation was a success.

Mapan watched the river from a tavern in Yusellin and notified him with a whisper.

“Listen, I just heard some good news.”

“What?”

Python who was sitting on the ground asked. He didn’t have Weed’s indomitable vitality and was completely exhausted.

They were so weary that they were almost wiped out a few times against the monsters if it wasn’t for Weed.

Sculptural Destruction had pushed his vitality stat so that he

wasn't even tired. In order to save his colleagues, he fought fiercely while being surrounded by monsters.

Python and the nameless man felt sick as they saw Weed's devilish smile.

"The Haven Empire's army has suffered a huge blow at Peshil River."

"Oh, congratulations."

"Good news."

Python and the nameless man replied carelessly. They didn't care for the Hermes Guild and the Haven Empire. They experienced some friction with them on the Central Continent.

But they weren't sure why their guts twisted as they saw Weed's face.

Weed said with a bright smile.

"They won't have an easy time crossing the Peshil River. Now we can hunt for a few more days."

The tired complexion of three people became whiter.

Python, the nameless man and Pale weren't ready for such a situation. Pale barely managed to speak.

“Then there should be time to rest.....”

“I've been looking for this opportunity. It is possible to wipe out all the dungeons in the desert.”

“.....”

Weed then dragged his colleagues to conquer the rest of the dungeons. The dungeons in the desert surpassed a meat buffet!

Van Hawk and Torido were also summoned in slightly tricky dungeons and Summon Sculpture was used to bring Yellowy and Goldman. Their power was customized according to the attributes of the dungeon.

But from now on, there was a generous amount of time between hunts to rest. Alveron's divine magic and eating delicious food meant that vitality could endure it. It was especially important in desert areas to control vitality and fatigue.

“Eat well. We will take a break for 3 hours. Eat your meals and comfortably lie down.”

They all flopped down on the spot at Weed's words. In no time at all, Pale had joined Python and the nameless man's miserable company.

“We can finally relax for 3 hours.”

“I’ll say this. I don’t know whether it is a trick or a treat.”

“Maybe he needs some sleep. He is human.”

While the 3 people were chatting, Weed took out his Sculpting Knife. The necessary ingredients were in the sand around him.

He used the desert sand to made a solid sculpture before aging it. The sand sculpture collapsed slightly as it felt the effects of Time Sculpting.

-Absolute King

A sculpture of the great king of the desert area.

All tribes living in the desert can worship in front of the sculpture.

Artistic Value: 54

“Well, this place should be sufficient to create my sculptures I can continue to consecutively make sculptures. But what do my subordinates look like?”

He tried to remember the faces of Warrior-1, Warrior-2, etc., but he couldn't. He had already used them to the full extent!

Weed would use Sculptural Destruction on the pieces after the break ended. He didn't stop carving and trimming the sculptures during the break. Those forced workers watching were astonished.

Thus one day, two days passed.

Except for meals, toilet access and sleeping for 4 hours in reality, he spent the whole time in Royal Road hunting, sculpting and raising his skill proficiencies.

Even if his hunting partners weren't connected, there was no reason for him to rest. Time Sculpting could make a crucial difference in the war so it was important to raise it as much as possible.

But the rating of the final secret sculpting technique only climbed up little by little.

“Let's do what I can. Labour is necessary to make art bloom! Today's labour could reduce the time it takes to achieve my goal.”

The Haven Empire's army in the north struggled to cross the Peshil River. If they wanted to bypass the Peshil River then they would need to go back quite a distance.

“We will send thousands of extra-large rafts across

simultaneously. It should take a day for all the troops to cross to the other side of the river.”

The army commanders made the decision. In order to make rafts to cross the river, troops were dispatched to chop them thick trees. They thought it wouldn't be hard for the powerful knights to chop down the trees to make rafts.

“I thought there was a forest here.....”

“No, where are the trees on the mountains?”

The knights that came out to cut the trees were confused. The numerous forests they marched through were all gone. There were only ghostly traces of where the trees were planted.

“It is strange...let's take a look around.”

The knights conducted a search. And after a long time, they could finally find the trees. The trees were walking away on their roots that looked like legs.

It was the work of the elves! The elf users in the north moved the trees away.

“This! Kill the elves and report it to the main army!”

The northern conquest army spent more time than expected

cutting down the trees. In the end, they had to transport the wood and it took them five days to assemble the raft.

However, they couldn't cross the river immediately.

The rain and wind caused the river to swell and they had to wait half a day.

“This is really....”

“We have bad luck.”

The Hermes Guild users watched the sky with resentment. They hadn't thought of packing waterproof tents so the soldiers were exposed to the elements.

“The morale of the soldiers will fall.”

“I am more concerned about any sicknesses.”

The feeling of leading an army of soldiers was amazing for a commander. Commanding thousands of soldiers in an attempt to conquer a kingdom. Not to mention the pride and honour of conquering the north.

After the Alkazar Bridge collapsed and minor problems tied up the army, the patience of the commanders decreased.

The rain stopped and the sky became completely clear of any clouds.

The rafts of the Haven Empire crossed the Peshil River. The northern users desperately tried to stop them but the elite archers and magicians meant they could cross safely.

After 2~3 battles, the landing operation was stabilized and succeeded.

Due to the adverse terrain, they suffered a loss of 80,000 troops but the army and supplies all crossed the river.

Chapter 8: Great Emperor's Quest

Weed raised his level to 422 through hunting in the desert.

It was unbelievable quick growth but he benefited from the dungeons' double experience and diligent hunting.

Time Sculpting reached beginner level 6. He didn't get this result until 3 Magnum Opus emerged.

"Hmm, the skill really doesn't climb quickly."

It wasn't easy dedicated himself to the sculptures while recovering his lost levels.

"It would be good if there was a big reward at the end of the quest."

Occasionally they would visit the thriving cities around the oases and rivers in order to sell the loot.

"You've brought a lot of good items. It is my pleasure to transfer it over to warriors."

"How much are you willing to buy that necklace made of ivory for?"

“It is ivory so it will be at least 800 gold.”

“In this situation, it is worth an extra 200 gold. I have already processed it.”

“It is really great handiwork. I admit that the price is correct. Let’s continue to trade in the future.”

Weed was friendly with the merchants in the desert cities. The prosperous desert city had a completely different culture from cities in the Central and Northern Continent.

The strong warriors walked around showing their naked upper bodies. Water, cigarettes and art were luxury goods at the market.

Weed had left several sculptures in the desert cities that still remained intact. Traces of the Pallos Empire still remained. Various valuables looted on the Central Continent had been traded for precious metals.

“The population is increasing but there is a limitation to economic growth.”

Weed sighed as he walked around the desert city. He had been looking forward to the continued development of the desert areas.

However, the nature of the desert meant it wasn’t convenient for farm or mine development. The cities also had to be built along oases and rivers.

In the past, the falling rain had made the desert area fertile but a lot of that water had dried up. There were the infested ruins of many abandoned land and cities.

Specialty crops were grown while food like rice, wheat and barley were brought to them. Nomads wandered around raising sheep and camels.

Traces of the Pallos Empire could be seen at the market but goods weren't very expensive.

"It is hard to live. The typical problem of youth unemployment hasn't been overcome. The desert warriors need to hunt in order to return the money. Only the mercenary industry remains."

He could hear countless stories as he walked around the desert city.

"Are you interested in the treasures of the Pallos Empire? You can hear the information for 2,000 gold."

Treasures of the empire!

Python and the nameless man were tempted but Weed and Pale didn't care. They knew that the treasures of the Pallos Empire were buried somewhere in the north. The problem was finding the treasure and determining its value. There were people excavating the treasure in the north right now.

“Uhh, Great Emperor Weed of the desert. The children of the desert grew up hearing his legend every day. My mother talked about him every night.”

“About what?”

Weed wondered if his reputation had changed.

“The Great Emperor of the desert is a person who causes blood to flow. He left after advancing the desert into the continent. He founded the Pallos Empire during what we call the golden age of the desert.”

“A really brilliant person.”

Weed had a smile of satisfaction as he walked through the desert city. Hearing praise about himself wasn't that bad. It was rare for users to visit the desert city.

The new history meant the southern desert was prosperous compared to other areas. Even so, the area next to it was the Central Continent here the weather was less hot.

It was a place where users with a lower level than Weed's hunting party couldn't be seen. But every once in a while, they would see other users.

It wasn't easy to reach a city near the Desert of Tranquility. The difficulties meant that only high level adventurers and warriors came here.

“You look like a fairly experienced adventurer. Wouldn't you like to find a hidden legacy sleeping in the desert? There isn't anything difficult. It won't risk your life.”

The senior citizens of the city would occasionally say to Weed. It was a quest to find Weed's legacy from his past life in the desert.

“That's okay.”

“I won't be the only one talking about it. There are various tribes scattered across the vast desert. If one of them finds the trail of the Great Emperor then all the wealth, honour and power.....”

“I have no interest!”

The quest would be a long challenge. There was a high chance of something scary happening while completing the quest. He had some outstanding achievements during the final secret sculpting technique quest.

The secrets of the desert. Valuable assets like information about monsters, traces of cities and burial places of warriors could be bought.

However, he needed to concentrate on raising his level because

the fight against the Haven Empire was coming.

- The Haven Empire's army has crossed the Peshil River.

- The northern users tried some ambushes but couldn't cause any damage.

- The Haven Empire's army is like a poisonous gas. They devastated an entire area of the north with magic.

- They are 10 kilometres away from the Earth Palace. If the soldiers move quickly then they can arrive within 2~3 hours.

- Those guys have stopped advancing and are assembling siege weapons. There are 400 large siege weapons. It is enough to be seen with one glance. A grand sight!

Mapan gave regular reports about the current situation.

The threat of the army towards the Earth Palace was becoming increasingly serious.

After a few days, it was time to leave the desert.

“The day has finally come.”

Weed lightly sighed.

He had a huge grudge against the Hermes Guild.

“This world is becoming increasingly tougher. The value of pork, fruit and electricity is all increasing.”

He blamed the apple and pear prices rising on the Hermes Guild!

“It is a pity but I have to go to the Earth Palace.”

Weed finally declared the termination of the hunt.

‘It finally ended.’

‘This time it is truly over. I don’t believe it.’

‘Yes.’

Python, the nameless man and Pale’s expression stiffened even though they wanted to cheer. If they were too joyful then they might be forced to hunt again.

The first day was like hell but the next day was slightly better as Weed made his sculptures. Nevertheless, wandering between dungeons through the sand was one of their worst experiences.

The oldest person, Python cleared his throat and said.

“If you are busy then go. Now, let’s quickly return.”

“Yurin will come in a moment. Be ready to leave before that.”

They wandered the desert city and invested the money earned through hunting. They didn’t want to carry a lot.

That’s why they sold loot for jewellery, land, a house and even a shop. The housing prices in the desert cities were still affordable.

There weren’t a lot of people coming here currently so the profit was limited. But it contained the best hunting grounds. If they invested here then someday they would come back for hunting.

‘Never again.’

‘I won’t go with him again.’

‘I won’t live in the earth house.’

Yurin arrived and they headed towards the Earth Palace.



Earth Shadow.

Unring, Ben and Elliks who made up the Versailles Continent's top adventurer party started a quest at Valhalla Temple.

In the process, they exposed the Embinyu Church and gained great contribution.

The Embinyu Church was exposed to the world before they were completely ready and the various religions found and destroyed them.

Of course, the residents and other users were kept in the dark.

Finally, they found the fifth arm of the God Embinyu in Metapeia and destroyed it by throwing it in boiling lava.

“The Embinyu Church? What about them? Are they a poor group like us?”

“Uhh, the Embinyu Church Buy some bread before talking about them. They sound like a group that loves fish.”

“The names Unring, Ben and Elliks? I've heard of them a long time ago. I don't know what they are doing these days. Are they digging at the ground somewhere?”

Most signs of the Embinyu Church on the continent had disappeared. Adventurers who now had their adventures unknown felt severe frustration and injustice.

“Aigoo. We wasted a year for nothing.”

“I’m glad that the Embinyu Church disappeared but it is like we did nothing.”

“There will be other adventures so let’s have a good night’s sleep.”

Earth Shadow decided to relax.

All the hunting and exploration during the Valhalla quest had made them sick. They wanted to spend some time relaxing and recharging.

“Do you want a camel?”

“Yes. Strong and fast ones would be good.”

“The Bactrian Camel is the best in desert areas. The price is a bit expensive but they can go anywhere.”

“Give it to me.”

After completing the quest at Metapeia, the Earth Shadow were in the desert area. They tried to obtain camels to get out of the desert area.

“It is regretful that you are leaving. Well, do you want to listen to a story before you go?”

The feeling of an intense quest!

Unring was tired but he still had the habit of an adventurer. It wouldn't hurt to hear the information. Even if it wasn't important, they could trade it at other stores for cheaper goods.

“The people of the desert hasn't forgotten one person. Sometimes I don't know how we could live if it wasn't for the Great Emperor Weed-nim.”

“Ah, Weed-nim.”

Unring said with disinterest.

Other users honoured Weed as an adventurer. He solved impossible quests and broke through any adversity.

The Arpen Kingdom might be pushed into a crisis due to Bardray but his personal combat skills on quests were recognized as the best.

Earth Shadow specialized in adventures so they thought about him bitterly.

They didn't lack skills and believed they could attain a significantly higher achievement through the Vahalla quest. But the local residents were praising Weed everywhere.

Unring turned around.

“A waste of time. Come on.”

Elliks and Ben's expression wasn't good.

They came to the desert in vain and now they had to listen to these words!

The camel trader said behind their backs.

“The Great Emperor's greatest achievement was founding the Pallos Empire but those in the desert were more grateful for his creation of oases and rivers. Thanks to that, our parents and children living in the desert never ran out of water to drink.

“Yes yes, but we are busy so...”

“It was our lifeline. The Great Emperor's legacy. That's why the desert is now gripped in a very huge crisis. The oases and rivers are drying up. The desert tribes that were united have started to hate each other again. Soon the whole desert will be filled with blood.”

Unring, Elliks and Ben stopped moving.

The feeling of an intense quest. The adventurer's instinct meant they couldn't leave without listening.

Unring turned around and said carefully.

“Will there be a big fight over the lack of water?”

A fight between the desert tribes meant there might be a war in the entire area. The population of the desert had increased quite a lot thanks to Weed's adventure.

It was dangerous for users to act in the desert right now and the price of the commodities would rise.

“The camel's footprints will eventually be completely erased by sandstorms. After the sun rises a few times, we will eventually be covered in sand.”

“It would be nice if someone concedes.”

“We aren't fools. We are well aware that this fight will destroy all of us. It is difficult to abandon the cities and civilization will be wiped out. But we will be eliminated without any water. The resolve of the other tribes means there will now be war.”

The experienced residents could hear the meaning behind their words.

‘A large scale.’

‘Euum, this is a quest.’

‘Is it a peace quest to stop the war and revive the desert tribes? It is simple yet difficult.’

And they waited for the next words.

“There is only one way to prevent the war among the desert tribes. In the legend, the Great Emperor would appear again to unify the entire desert.”

“Yes?”

“The Great Emperor left his legacy behind for the descendants to find.”

Ben seemed to notice something and said.

“Those words are quite difficult. The value of the Great Emperor’s legacy must be enormous.”

It was difficult to convert the value of the equipment Weed left behind in the warring period to money.

“The Great Emperor’s equipment and power was left in a very dangerous place. I heard a rumour that you shouldn’t go there unless you are willing to bet your life.”

“.....”

“In an effort to prevent the war, many desert warriors are attempting the challenge to obtain the Great Emperor’s legacy. If they can obtain the knowledge and power of the Great Emperor, they can rule the desert. But this is a mission that only a pure and prestigious desert warrior can do.”

“It is a little difficult.”

The Earth Shadow group was puzzled.

A Weed related quest was a little worrisome in terms of difficulty but it was tempting. Finding special relics or money would be satisfying but the desert was a very large place for an adventure. But it seemed like this quest was only available to desert warriors.

Elliks asked.

“What is a desert warrior?”

He had no intention of switching professions but he wanted to know the information.

“Only men who grew up in the desert feeling the sun on their skin are qualified.”

“So you aren’t looking for desert warriors to find the legacy.”

“No. There are numerous desert warriors looking for a guide.”

“By guide, do you mean a person who gives directions?”

“Right. The warriors have a lot of respect towards the Great Emperor. They are hoping for the rebirth of the Great Emperor to lead the desert tribes.. Will you help the desert warriors achieve their goal?”

Ddirring!

-Desert Warriors’ Assistant

There is a legend of a young warrior sleeping in the desert who woke up and ran into a mountain of sand and skeletons.

Long ago, the Great Emperor Weed led the desert warriors.

Help the desert warriors fight against the monsters in the sand mountain to pursue the achievements of a hero.

Warriors will follow a guide in dangerous situations.

Level of Difficulty: A

Compensation: Desert Warrior's faith.

Can lead a large number of desert warriors depending on your performance.

Quest Restrictions: No limit on fame or level.

Must be completed within ten days.

Discovered the Great Emperor's quest.

"It is a little tricky and long. We have to proceed on the quest while taking care of the desert warriors."

Elliks muttered a complaint but everyone felt like it was intriguing. A quest that would allow them to command desert warriors felt like fun.

Curious adventurers would never give up something like this.

"Let's do it."

"Try it."

-You have accepted the quest.

Thus the desert warriors quest began.

Earth Shadow accepted the Desert Warriors' Assistant quest and went to meet the desert warriors.

'They are still young warriors. If I take care of them well then they can be the pillar of the desert.'

However, the reality was a lot different from what they imagined. The desert warriors spat at them.

"What are you looking at? Keep your eyes away from me."

Tough and arrogant warriors filled with the spirit of the desert!

The desert warriors wouldn't obey unless they showed off an overwhelming power so their true suffering began.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

"It's really cold."

-This is today's weather. The current temperature is 6 degrees Celsius, the rain and wind speed of 4 metres per second makes the temperature feel lower.....

“Shut up. Don’t answer unless I ask a question.”

Yoo Byung-jin’s body was shaking from the cold.

Sitting on a bench with his hands in his pocket was the richest and most influential scientist in the world. The cold wind meant he couldn’t take his hands out of his pocket.

He sat on the wet, wooden bench as his bottom started to feel damp.

Yoo Byung-jin was currently in a park in New York to meet up with Bardray who was likely to be the first person to unify Royal Road.

Bardray was a French American. He regularly ran in the park at 5 a.m.

Yoo Byung-jin aligned their schedules so that they could meet by coincidence.

“Why the hell hasn’t he appeared yet?”

Yoo Byung-jin felt the cold seep into his bones. His head might think faster than any young person but his body was old.

The park was damp due to the rain falling at night, people were

doing exercises and birds were chirping. He had endless thoughts as he sat on the bench in the park.

“I’m too old.”

He devoted most of his life to Royal Road. Most of the world had mocked his childhood plan. Creating his own virtual reality that would give an individual enormous wealth and power.

Getting over loneliness had been the driving force behind the plan and he created a new technology from scratch.

It might be reckless but his tremendous plan was at its final stage. Meeting Bardray away from Royal Road was immensely important to Yoo Byung-jin.

He sat on the bench for a couple of hours. Bardray didn’t appear even after the sun rose.

Yoo Byung-jin shivered from the cold and asked.

“When is Bardray coming?”

-Is Doctor-nim asking a question?

“That’s right.”

-Bardray isn't exercising this morning. Currently he is on a plane to Las Vegas in order to meet with investors of the Hermes Guild in 1 hour and 20 minutes.

“.....”

He had been suffering several hours in the cold for nothing.

“Why didn't you say anything if you knew?”

-Doctor-nim told me not to say anything until you ask a question.

Yoo Byung-jin lowered his head. He criticized himself for blaming the AI.

“When is Bardray coming back?”

-According to schedule, it should be 3 days later.

“Then I will come back.

—

Yoo Byung-jin felt uneasy as the AI didn't answer.

“Are you sure that Bardray is coming back?”

-The consultation to build the Hermes Company is almost over. They just need the final steps to seal the agreement so there is a 98.7% chance that he will return in 3 days.

“Well, it is like that.”

Yoo Byung-jin was impressed every time by the convenience of the AI. It relieved human discomfort and instantly answered any questions.

But then Yoo Byung-jin suddenly felt a strange premonition.

“What aren’t you saying?”

—

“You can talk even if there are no questions.”

-It is about today’s weather. Currently a cloud is forming about the Mediterranean and is expected to bring about 60 millimetres more rain.

Chapter 9: Resurrection Of A Hateful Subordinate

Weed arrived at the Earth Palace.

The hunting party was officially disbanded and each person would scatter. But the Earth Palace was filled with an unimaginable amount of people.

“Move a little out of the way.”

“Please get some of the people to work in my weapons store!”

“Inform the merchant union. All items are out of stock at the grocery stores. In the future, please use the merchants outside the palace.”

All the buildings on the road to the Earth Palace were busy due to the users.

“What is this?”

Python was confused.

The grounds of the Earth Palace were filled with people. It was like a swarm of ants covering the plains.

The island of Lavias was floating in the blue sky as hundreds of avians could be seen. Sparrows were toddling along on the stone walls and trees.

Having this many people gathered was unprecedented. The Island of Lavias in the Arpen Kingdom was moved and northern users came to the Earth Palace for the decisive battle.

Weed was also sincerely impressed.

“This world is rotten. The gathered crowd has showed me. To fight against the lies and hypocrisy!

It was an objective attitude to face reality.

“Where is the Haven Empire?”

“Approximately 3 hours away. Is that important now?”

“Yes?”

“Grass porridge, grass porridge, grass porridge!”

“Hooray Grass Porridge Cult!”

Numerous users gathered at the Earth Palace weren't scared of

dying in the upcoming war. It was the same atmosphere as a frenzied festival.

Weed calmly nodded.

“Modern people receive severe stress so this is a scene of mass hysteria.”

He didn't do anything specifically. It was evidence that people's hearts were with the Arpen Kingdom.

“Selling bean porridge. Bean porridge with plenty of sugar! If you drink it then you will feel reassured when you die.”

“This torch is useful when hunting in dungeons. It is useful when serving roasted meat, a long burning torch that is only 4 copper.”

“I'd like to travel after the war. Risking my life to go to the frontier. I will buy 3 cows.”

In this situation, the northern users were looking for colleagues. It was a troublesome situation but they enjoyed the atmosphere.

“Kwaaaaack!”

Sometimes while watching the scenery, users would be pushed off the cliffs by the crowd of users but they didn't care. Those that fell off a cliff were rescued by avians or magicians with flying

magic.

“Let us fly. Aaaack!”

Some users aimed for a disaster and jumped off a cliff together.

Weed was very concerned about the future of the Arpen Kingdom.

“Short and bold. The Arpen Kingdom doesn’t have a long history.”

The Haven Empire had invaded the relatively weak Arpen Kingdom that stretched across a huge amount of land.

Even though the Haven Empire occupied some territory, the Arpen Kingdom was still expanding their economy, adventuring spirit and culture into the area. The expansion inland was almost finished and the potential of the sea area was terrific.

After the collapse of the Niflheim Empire, many people had avoided the cold and monsters by escaping to sea. Every once in a while, adventures would find large islands and this increased the influence of the Arpen Kingdom.

Architects in the north would build infrastructure in a short amount of time that link them to the transportation network. Without the invasion of the Haven Empire, the north would look completely different in 1~2 years.

Many users cherished the Arpen Kingdom that Weed built.

Pale looked at the south with a troubled face.

“Weed-nim, I can see the Haven Empire.”

The archer’s excellent eyesight meant he could clearly see the Haven Empire’s army that was far away.

The Haven Empire was slowly advancing while dragging the siege weapons. The flags carried by the knights in the lead and the endless amount of infantry wearing armour was magnificent. The sight of the incoming elite troops was enough to make him lose his mind.

Weed could also dimly see them.

“They came all this way to eat but they are just going to step on dog poo.”

The users were chatting loudly while looking in the direction of the Haven Empire’s army. There was evidence that quite a few high level users were mixed in this place.

The extent that they would cooperate depended entirely on Weed. They came to the Earth Palace grounds to fight but the chances were good that they would lose the battle. If Weed led

them then there was a chance of a miracle upset.

But the northern users who bravely stormed against the Haven Empire was smashed apart and fled.

“Weed-nim, what are you going to do?”

Pale asked but Weed didn’t have an apparent answer.

“Well, I’ll see.”

“Have you prepared some exceptional tactics?”

“Well, just fight bravely.”

“Really?”

“I’ll bet 1 gold.”

“.....”

Weed willing to take out 1 gold meant he was telling the truth. The war would take place soon but he didn’t reveal himself to command the crowd. Too many users had concentrated in the Earth Palace.

The Haven Empire were being slowed by the siege weapons so he

had time to relax and organize a chain of command.

If King Weed appeared then things were sure to become messier. In addition, he couldn't use complex commands in a war.

Weed muttered to himself.

“Commanding people on a battlefield of this scale...the knights in present time. There is only one good guy...but I don't want to see his face again. Then I'll have to enter the palace.”

Python left first.

“I understand. I'm not going to fall in this place. I need to warm up my body before facing the army.”

“I will go too. I sense some prey here.”

The nameless man quietly disappeared into the darkness.

Pale pulled out his bow and said.

“I will grab a good spot for the fight after visiting the store. Then I will meet our other colleagues.”

“I understand. I'll see you at the battle.”

After everyone left, Weed ignored the Haven Empire and entered the interior of the palace to make a sculpture.

★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★★

-Where are you? Search teams respond.

-This is search team 1. Not found yet.

-This is search team 2. He hasn't appeared at all.

-This is search team 3. He doesn't appear.

The Hermes Guild had dispatched some assassins to the Earth Palace. They were 700 elites.

The final command from the leaders of the Hermes Guild hadn't come down yet. The leaders were worried in many ways.

‘Can we really assassinate Weed at the start of the battle?’

‘No, the effect on the victory. Mobilize the army to fight properly. Experiencing a nasty defeat would be better.’

‘If we killed Weed then we can easily win the big battle..... Once the palace is destroyed, the entire kingdom will see us as serious villains.’

‘In many ways, running away is annoying. In order to subdue the north, we have to kill Weed. And this is the best opportunity.’

The leaders also had this opinion.

Weed the God of War was a key figure. If he was assassinated then they didn’t have to worry about being defeated in an all-out war.

-Wait. First we need to find out if Weed is at the Earth Palace.

-The chance is high that he just successfully finished a reckless adventure.

The assassinations squads decided to watch the situation after finding out information about Weed.

The assassins were placed in different areas of the Earth Palace while dressed as beginners or merchants. It was an impersonation as an ordinary person.

Once the war began, they would assassinate Weed and other important figures. It would be much easier to attack thanks to the assassination squads.

“Keook!”

“Ugh!”

“Ah, I am.....”

People collapsed in the street and changed into a grey light. The Earth Palace was bustling with users so they were quickly discovered.

“A person died!”

“What is happening?”

“There seems to be some assassins!”

The members panicked in the guild channel.

-What happened? The battle hasn't started yet someone is already acting.

-People are being killed on the boundaries. Moreover, it seems to be a merchant that was killed.....

The information scouts were reprimanding them when one of the assassins hastily said.

-We're not doing anything. We are the ones being targeted...ugh!

-What?

The assassins of the Hermes Guild. They were all at least level 380 and went through various training to learn skills.

The nature of a level 380 assassins was to use disguises to approach with a poison dagger or crossbow. They would run lightly and surprise the target with an ambush.

Notorious assassins on the Versailles Continent were collapsing.

-What happened? The enemy's location and identity?

-I don't know. My colleagues were killed by someone stabbing them who then instantly disappeared into the shadows.....

-Does that make sense?

-We are proud to be elite stealth assassins but this is the first time we've suffered from such a first, fatal attack. The person's strong attacks means instant death.

-The enemy seems to be aiming at us.

The assassination crew were disguised as ordinary beginners. They were dressed as beginners below level 50 or non-combat professions like painter, sculptor or merchant.

They were defenseless.

‘Hmm, is it that easy?’

An assassin attacking the Hermes Guild was the man who went hunting with Weed.

He had the skill ‘Eyes of Truth.’ It allowed his eyes to see any stealth or camouflage skills.

The assassins of the Hermes Guild had tremendous infamy so their names flashed red. But they covered it with camouflage and blended in as an ordinary person.

The man came out of the shadows and stabbed with his dagger. The assassin had a very fast processing speed after hunting with Weed.

‘Huhuhu, it is fun for an assassin to hunt other assassins.’

He gained quite a few experience and skill levels. Infamous assassins gave a different type of experience from normal monsters.

-We are still being attacked.

-Our colleague disguised as a merchant selling flowers is now being attacked.

-Pounce altogether. We have to quickly take care of it.

-The shadow disappeared between the pillars.

-Search that area thoroughly...keok!

-Buranos-nim has died.

The assassins of the Hermes Guild quickly changed their outfits. They firmly grasped poisoned daggers in their hands in order to fight the enemy. Some took out a portable crossbow.

It was a strange sight for the users on the grounds of the Earth Palace.

“What the, what is happening? Only those with a very high level can wear that equipment.”

“People are just dying out.”

“Are they fighting each other in the Earth Palace? Look. Fight outside.”

“Isn’t that the assassin equipment?”

The situation suddenly changed and the assassins of the Hermes

Guild made the wrong decision.

Assassins were covert and adept in the darkness. They camouflaged their identities and freely acted in the enemy camp. But that advantage disappeared once they were exposed to the enemy.

Assassins hid like a ghost before suddenly attacking. The camouflage disappearing meant their identities were revealed!

The northern users were in an uproar.

“Who are they?”

“Well, they must be high level assassins who wore the costume of the north.”

“Then what, the Hermes Guild?”

“It must be them. Those sneaky bastards. They must have penetrated in order to cause damage.”

The northern users pulled out their weapons and prepared spells. Now it was the worst situation for the Hermes Guild assassins.

-I don't know. Look around and attack all enemies!

-Kill all of them!

The assassins caused havoc in the Earth Palace.

However, the Hermes Guild assassins had to deal with all the users gathered at the Earth Palace. All types of dazzling attacks were poured towards the assassins.

In the end, they didn't even last 5 minutes before being wiped out.

-The assassins have been wiped out.

-How did this.....

The leaders of the Hermes Guild fell into a state of panic after receiving the report.

The assassination that had a high utility rate due to its uniqueness was completely destroyed. Their infamy was high due to murder, destruction and graffiti so the damage was huge.

-What do we do now about the Earth Palace?

-Terminate the search operation. Take note of the information and withdraw. Order the assassins to give the information. We can't lose such precious information.

And shortly after, the residents started to tell a story.

“You, did you hear the story? The God of Death appeared at the Earth Palace.”

“Ah, the shadow of death?”

“That’s right, I heard he is called Seasoned Crab.”



“It really doesn’t make sense.”

Weed muttered while diligently moving his Sculpting Knife.

“These guys!”

“The Haven Empire’s army is coming!”

He could hear the sound of users shouting outside the palace.

“Well, it can’t be helped even if he is an ugly bastard. Life is filthy and you don’t always get what you want. I need to make it.”

Weed felt melancholy while making the sculpture.

Twelve bright chunks of natural stone were placed in front of him. They were stones specifically set aside for the king to sculpt a person.

The straight eyebrows, high nose, clear blue eyes and soft, upright mouth. Needless to say, it was a very handsome face with a body and legs that matched it.

A tall person that would have no choice but to stand out on the streets. Maybe wearing clothes would allow even designers to feel pride in their profession. The colourful hues and natural texture of the stone made it feel like jewels.

“Hmm, a human like this can’t actually exist. A ridiculous lie and cheat.”

Weed didn’t stop complaining as he moved onto the next part. Compared to the ordinary body proportions of Korean people, the sculpture had long legs, broad shoulders and a superior physical condition.

It felt like the world’s top model was standing in front of Weed. The perfect body and handsome face was just a nuisance to humanity.

He would rather not remember but his mind actually easily recalled many details.

“I thought I would meet him again someday. But to encounter

him this early.”

Weed was working on a sculpture of Hestiger who gave an outstanding performance in the warring period. Fortunately, he was a subordinate but Hestiger almost pushed him to a bridesmaid role.

“If it wasn’t for those guys threatening my rice bowl then I wouldn’t have to do this. Hmm, I have to nag him properly.”

He received news about the Hermes Guild’s assassins outside but Weed didn’t care. If he wasn’t attacked directly then Weed was indifferent.

When it came to living in the complex modern society, a virtue like this was essential for mental health.

“Kukukuku!”

“Tweet tweet!”

Silver Bird and Golden Bird chattered next to Weed in the Earth Palace. Silver Bird and Golden Bird were also jealous.

A statue of Hestiger was completed.

“Well, it is perfect. I made it really well, huhuhu. It is purely because of my excellent sculpting skills. Isn’t it made well?”

He scanned the sculpture but couldn't find any flaws. If there was even a small mistake then 200% of the skills couldn't be demonstrated.

Weed watched Hestiger with jealousy and envy but that allowed him to painstakingly give birth to a perfect sculpture.

“My subordinate has been completed.”

-Please set the name of the new sculpture.

“Let's say Hestiger. No, there is no meaning in the name of the sculpture after I give him life. If so...Cheeky Subordinate.”

-Cheeky Subordinate is correct?

“That's right.”

Weed expressed some of his anger towards Hestiger.

Ddirring!

-Masterpiece! Cheeky Subordinate has been completed.

In the long history of the Versailles Continent, many figures have disappeared.

However, the hero Hestiger in the warring period was a shining star who was never greedy or betrayed anyone.

He was a knight but respected and looked after the weak. A genius talent who overcame any limits with his scimitar. The wind and sun gods blessed him while the religion of the war god worshipped him.

A warrior who fought against the cruel oppression of the rulers on the immoral and disorderly continent. An individual with outstanding achievements who surpassed the limits of chivalry.

Now a human statue with the most perfect appearance is created.

Artistic Value: 7,985

Special Options: Cheeky Subordinate will increase health and mana regeneration will increase by 42% for a day.

Knights and warriors with the right mentality can learn skills.

The skills will help with the knight's leadership abilities.

Honour +120.

The ability to study sword skills and magic skills will improve by 7% for a week.

All stats will increase by 41.

Hunting with subordinates will increase all abilities by 4%.

The morale of all soldiers in the vicinity of Cheeky Subordinate will be maintained at the maximum.

The effect doesn't overlap with other sculptures.

Current number of Masterpieces created: 26

- The skill proficiency of Sculpting has improved.

- The skill proficiency of Handicraft has improved.

- Fame has increased by 1,320.

- Art has increased by 12.

- Fighting Spirit has increased by 3.

- Charm increased by 7.

-All stats will gain an additional 3 points for making a Masterpiece sculpture.

“This world that only cares about appearance! The materials are nice but this isn’t worthy of being a Masterpiece! Well, I’m in a bad mood but it is already finished.”

He felt a new emotion after creating the sculpture of Hestiger. He had felt jealousy during the warring period but that wasn’t the entire truth.

‘I was in a lot of danger.’

The final secret sculpting technique quest. It was disadvantageous because of the need to grow within a limited time in the desert.

He had encountered a few dangerous situations while exploring the dungeons. Weed and even his sculptural lifeforms were in danger until Hestiger exerted his skills. The loyalty meant he took care of monsters and boss monsters.

Hestiger might have intercepted Weed’s share but he also helped in creating the legend of the Great Emperor. Hestiger was a hero that made even Weed jealous!

“Come, you ugly subordinate. Sculpture Resurrection!”

-Sculpture Resurrection has been used.

The desert warrior Hestiger has been called back to this land through art.

45 Art stats have permanently disappeared.

Faith stat has been permanently reduced by 100.

Level has fallen by 3.

18,000 Health and Mana has been consumed.

The person revived by Sculpture Resurrection will retain their knowledge and ability.

It is only a fixed short time but they are thankful for being able to move in this world again.

-The skill proficiency of Sculpture Resurrection has improved.

The natural stone sculpture started to change. The statue's hair turned into a noble blonde and the eyes became more blue. The strong muscles of the upper body started moving from gentle breathing and the legs firmly attached to the ground started moving.

It was only one person but the atmosphere changed dramatically.

A straight nose and masculine jaw line. A handsome appearance with overflowing charm. His appearance felt much more like a king than Weed's and he looked around with curiosity.

‘Hestiger has survived.’

Weed tensely looked at him.

The muscles of Hestiger's naked upper body was like a beautiful work of art. A mysterious force was exerted by those muscles that seemed enough to destroy the current Weed!

‘I can't be too reckless.’

Hestiger had a firm resolve.

He was brought back with Sculpture Resurrection but there was no guarantee he would cooperate with Weed. In spite of the miracle of resurrection, the person would move according to their own will.

‘He might use this chance to get revenge. He has all types of accusations such as bullying.....! He might be a more dangerous enemy than the Haven Empire.’

Weed belatedly realized his mistake and regretted it.

Hestiger looked around and politely said to Weed.

“Master is here.....! I can’t believe it. Are you really him?”

“T-that’s right.”

Hestiger’s expression was briefly surprised until he gave a gentle smile that would melt the heart of women.

“You are alive. And you seem younger than you did in the past.”

The low voice was enough to make a woman’s mind fly to a distant galaxy. Hestiger’s one glance seemed to see Weed’s sin as his heart dropped in his chest..

However, Hestiger just politely kneeled down and extended his neck.

“I was worried about not seeing Master after you defeated the Embinyu Church. Since then, I’ve been wandering around the continent searching for news of Master. I didn’t find you so please punish me.”

“Ah, no. Rise.”

Weed asked cautiously.

“Right now I am weaker than you. Do you know?”

“Yes. I can see it.”

In accordance with their rules, the desert warriors had a habit of obeying the strong.

Weed swallowed his saliva.

“Yet your allegiance to me is still the same?”

“My life is yours. Even though I’ve risen again after losing my life, my heart beating and blood flowing is still the same.”

Despite the cool answer, Weed’s doubts didn’t disappear. He couldn’t help having nasty thoughts after all his sins.

“I have to be careful about being stabbed in the back. I’ll ask you again, can I really trust you?”

“I pledged my allegiance to you in the desert sands and despite a long time passing, nothing has changed. My pledge of allegiance made in the desert sands will last until the day I disappear.”

“As expected from my subordinate.”

Hestiger’s strong tone of speech made him seem like a hero from a weekend drama. Of course, there was no one that could match up with him.

“You were reliable in the past so I will believe you now.”

“You believed in me and entrusted me with important tasks. I thank you for giving me the chance to participate in a noble mission to save the world.”

“But why are you dead?”

Weed was curious about what happened.

After defeating the Embinyu Church, there didn't seem to be anyone on the continent who could challenge him.

“I took the elves home and wandered the world searching for Master and seeing all types of places. Past the south and west, through the Desert of Tranquility and past some swamp lands before boarding a boat made of nails.”

“A boat made of nails? You really have ridden anything. Continue to speak.”

“After finding traces of the gods, I ended up fighting in the land of the giants.....”

“Stop. I don't want to know anymore.”

Weed thought it was sufficient.

The story of crossing the Desert of Tranquility was interesting but then he felt a cold feeling. He had an ominous feeling that he might encounter Hestiger's adventure someday.

“The magicians are chanting some spells!”

“Slay the bastards from the Haven Empire!”

“Go out and fight, Grass Porridge warriors!”

Loud noises continued outside due to the war. The Haven Empire's army was lining up on the plains. It was just before the war started.

Hestiger's eyes flashed.

“What are these sounds? It seems like a battle will take place soon.”

“This.....”

Weed thought about what he should say.

Warrior-1, Warrior-2 and Warrior-3. The sculptural lifeforms were simple and didn't need a reason to fight.

On the other hand, Hestiger would brandish his scimitar to protect the poor. Weed needed to say something that would make Hestiger willingly jump in the fire. Weed needed him to swing his sword for justice so that there wouldn't be any chance of betrayal.

‘Good guys are difficult to handle. But I have to praise his loyal spirit.’

The calculations were over in an instant. Somehow Weed needed to actively convince him to fight the Haven Empire.

Hestiger needed justification to fight aggressively.

“They have come to crush my kingdom. You know that I wasn't merciful when creating the Pallos Empire in the past. I destroyed the Embinyu Church while obtaining more land and cities for the sake of the desert tribes. Many people were suffering but it couldn't be helped.”

Weed criticized himself.

In the warring period, he didn't have any special responsibility as ruler of the desert so he just smashed things as he went along.

“The sins that I committed are still fresh in my mind. When I get up in the morning, I remember countless incidents in the warring period. I conquered them without putting down my sword and talking but I told myself that it was for the important purpose of defeating the Embinyu Church. I have to live with the guilt of

that.”

“Master, at that time all the other kingdoms were more vicious than the Pallos Empire. We tried but things couldn’t be resolved with persuasion and compromise so the sword needed to be used. And thanks to Master, the desert tribes could find a new life. You can’t blame yourself for the lives that became uncomfortable under the reign of the empire.”

Hestiger was naive enough to snap up the rice cakes. It was like an elementary school student snatching a phone to play a game.

Weed bowed his head and used red pepper flakes to make his eyes moist with tears. Actually, his eyes could become like that quickly even without any red pepper flakes.

“The current time is different from the warring period. Everyone is happy as I pioneered the northern frontier to form the Arpen Kingdom where individual rights are maintained. It wasn’t easy but I worked hard to achieve my dream.”

“I see.”

“The Arpen Kingdom is like a flower that I carefully planted in the wilderness.”

Weed recalled the past. Having the territory of Morata slowly expand was like discovering wild ginseng on the mountain. Other people wouldn’t know the anger and frustration it could cause.

“The kingdom really fills me with pride and joy. All of this is the fruit of my sweat and effort. But the Haven Empire is invading it. In the past, I tried to settle it but their hearts are filled with hate and they are just trampling on the weak.

“Umm.”

“It is fine if I lose the Arpen Kingdom. I will dedicate my life to try and keep the kingdom. It is the only honourable thing to do. However, the residents believe in me and this is a huge burden.”

Tears welled up in Hestiger’s eyes. They were tears that sympathized with the common people.

“I will stop them.”

“No. I will use all my strength until the end. There are two reasons why I called you. The first is to rally the loyal warriors who want to see you again and the second thing is to protect the women and young children of the kingdom.”

“Master!”

‘I got him.’

Hestiger would help if it involved women and young children.

He didn't want to regret using Sculpture Resurrection.

“Master, I learned from you the pride of the desert warriors. There is no defeat. Obliterate all of them.”

“Hestiger!”

At the moment, Weed felt a small amount of remorse. The King of the Arpen Kingdom and ruler of the desert.

‘It is a good life experience. I will continue to live while dreaming of becoming a vice-president.’